

**A continuation of the Complete history of England: containing the lives and reigns of Edward I, II & III and Richard the Second / [Robert Brady].**

**Contributors**

Brady, Robert, 1627?-1700.

**Publication/Creation**

[London] : In the Savoy, Printed by E. Jones for S. Lowndes & A. & J. Churchill, 1700.

**Persistent URL**

<https://wellcomecollection.org/works/evc94t65>

**License and attribution**

This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.



Wellcome Collection  
183 Euston Road  
London NW1 2BE UK  
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722  
E [library@wellcomecollection.org](mailto:library@wellcomecollection.org)  
<https://wellcomecollection.org>



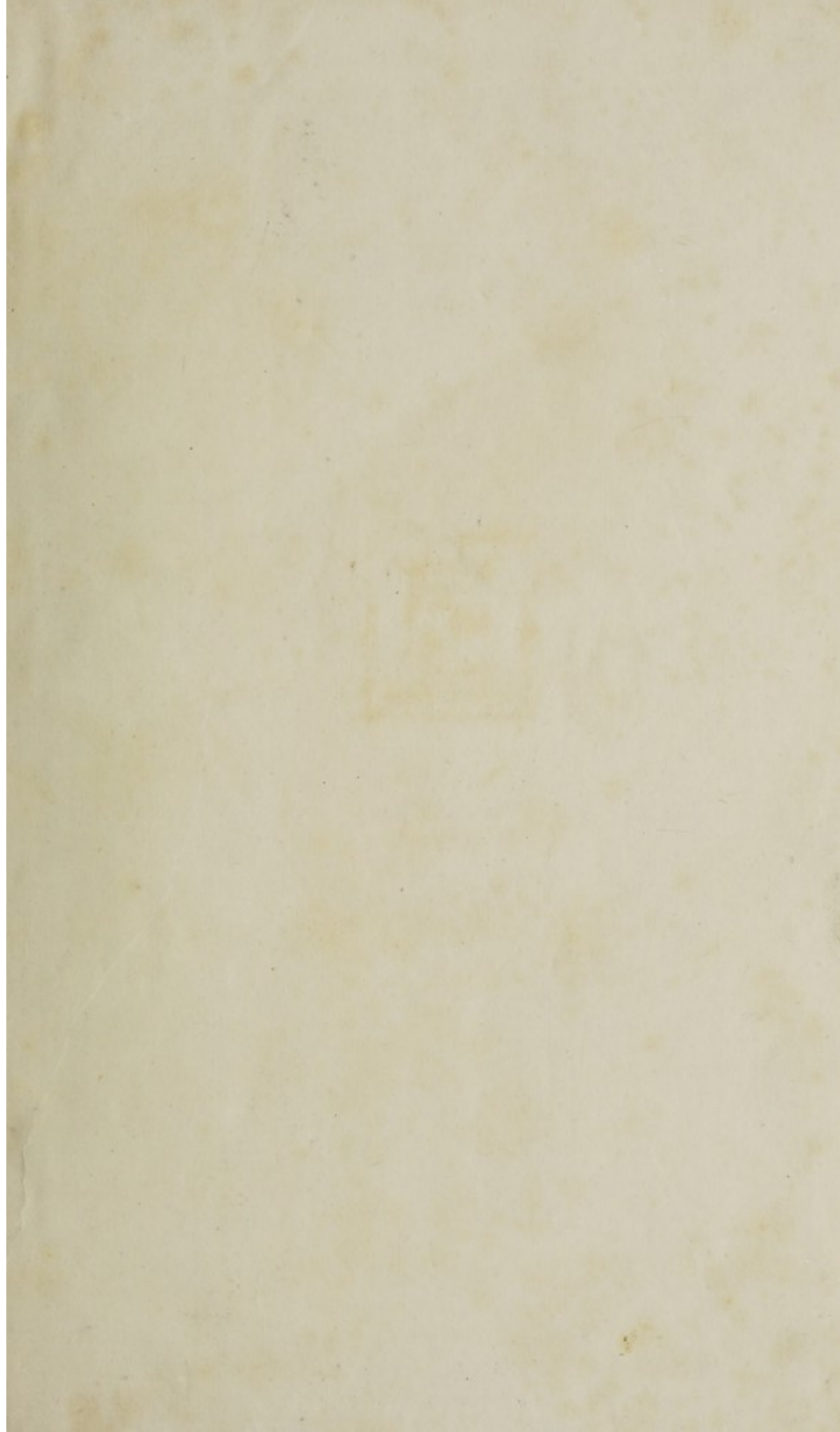



6. 10 12  
A-6.



X-X  
H-6.

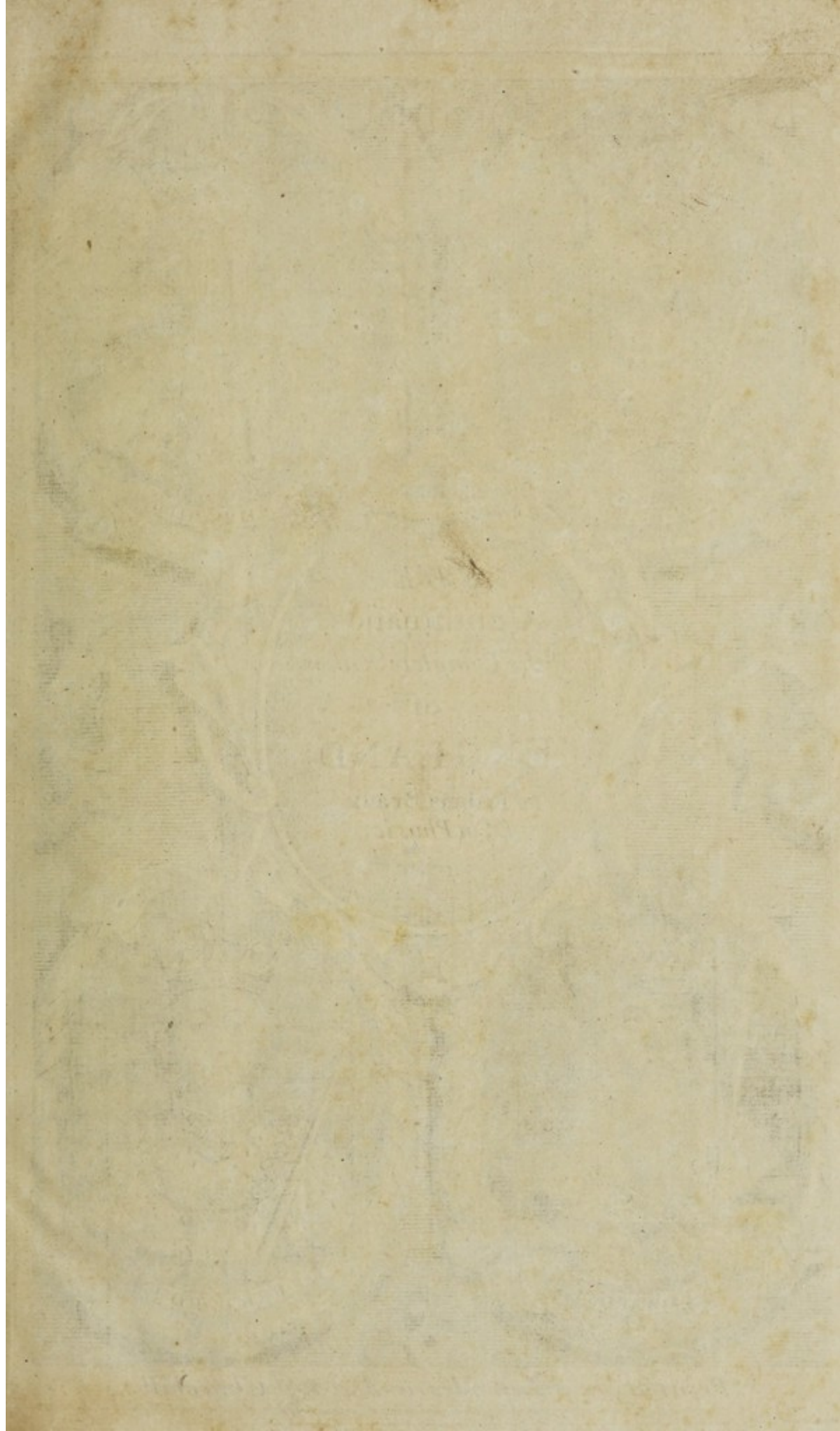






Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2018 with funding from  
Wellcome Library

<https://archive.org/details/b30450184>







Printed for S. Lowndes, and A. & J. Churchill.



8872

A  
CONTINUATION  
OF THE  
Complete History  
OF  
ENGLAND:  
CONTAINING  
*The LIVES and REIGNS*  
OF  
Edward I. II. & III.  
AND  
Richard the Second.

---

By **ROBERT BRADY**, *Doctor in Physic.*

---

*In the SAVOY,*

Printed by *Edward Jones*, for *Sam. Lowndes*, over-against  
*Exeter-Exchange* in the Strand; and *Awnsham* and  
*John Churchil*, at the *Black Swan* in *Pater-Noster-*  
*Row*, 1700.

A  
CONTINUATION  
OF THE  
Complete History  
OF  
ENGLAND:  
CONTAINING  
THE LIVES and REIGNS  
OF  
Edward I. II. & III.  
AND  
Richard the Second.



By ROBERT BRADY, Doctor in Physic.

In the STAVOY.

Printed by Richard Jones for James Stansfeld over against  
St. James's Church in the Strand and near the  
Royal Exchange, at the Black Swan in Fleet Street.  
1790.



# The Authors and Records from whence the Materials are taken.

A **N**icholas Trivet, a Monk of *Bridlington*, wrote the Life of *Edward the First*, and lived in or about the time, a Manuscript in the *Norfolk* or *Arundell* Library in *Gresham-College*, *London*, N. 220. the second Treatise, pag. 52. This is Transcribed by *Walsingham*.

B *Adam Murimoth* was a Canon of *London*, and as he writes of himself, was of sufficient Age to consider what Authors wrote, and to write himself; he begins his History in A. D. 1303. and the first Three years Story he had out of the Chronicles of *Westminster*; The residue he wrote was, what he saw and heard in his own time, which was to the Twenty first of *Edward the Third*, in the Custody of Dr. *Covell* Master of *Christ's College* in *Cambridge*; Much of him also Transcribed by *Walsingham*.

C *Robert of Avesbury* wrote the Life of *Edward the Third*, and as he Reports of himself, was Keeper of the Registry of the Court of *Canterbury*, he lived in the time of *Edward the Third*; a Manuscript in Sir *Simmonds Dewes's* Library at *Stow Lanthorn* in *Suffolk*.

*Thomas de la More* Kt. Servant to *Edward Second*, and out-lived him, Printed at *Francfort*, A. D. 1603.

Frier *John Trokelow's* *Annals* of *Edward the Second*, a Manuscript in the *Cotton* Library, *Claudius* D. 6.

D *Puteanus*, or Monsieur *Dupuy*, Counsellor and Library Keeper to the King of *France*, wrote the History of the Condemnation of the *Templars*, from the great Register of the Process against them, in the *French King's* Treasury of Records, from Page 113, to Page 222; and out of the Inventory of the King's Papers and Instruments concerning the same Matters, from Page 70, to Pag. III.

*Froysard* was a Clerk in King *Edward's* Court, and Servant to Queen *Philip*, and often in King *Richard's* Court, as he says of himself in the last Chapter of his Second Volume.

E *Ranulph Higden*, or the Monk of *Chester*, *Mathew of Westminster*, and *Walsingham*, are known Authors, and mentioned before in my First Volume of this History.

The Close, and Patent Rolls, the Rolls of *Rome*, *France*, *Gascogn*, *Scotland*, the *Parlement* Rolls, and others in the Tower of *London*.

F

A Manuscript in the Prologue to his History.

P. 76. in the Rubrick to the first Chapter.

*Piscent*, p. 899.



## Advertisements to the Candid R E A D E R.

**T**HE Church-Affairs are mostly such as happened, and were Contested inter Regnum & Sacerdotium, between the Ecclesiastic and Secular Government, relating to the Politic State of the Kingdom, or indeed between our Kings and the Popes: For certainly all our Intestin Troubles, Com-motions, and Wars, in some of the Former Reigns, and in These, were Fomented, Managed, and Car-ried on, in a great measure, by the then Clergy, and even those called the Barons Wars; who to make their Own Advantage, and repair their For-tunes, when reduced to a low Condition by their own Vanity and Profuseness, were their great Assistants, with Religion and Holy Church in the Front of their Designs.

That the Translations of the Latin and French are Literal and Verbal, as near as might be, according to the very Meaning of the Words.

And, That some particular Parts of the Cita-tions in Latin and French, are more frequent than they might have been; because many Men, without the Words of the Authors themselves, are loth to understand or believe such things as are delivered by them.



A  
CONTINUATION

Of the Compleat

History of England, &c.

King EDWARD the First.

**K**ing Henry the Third died on the 16th of November, 1272. and was buried at *Westminster* the 20th of the same Month; and so soon as he was buried, *John* Earl of *Warren*, and [1] *Gilbert* Earl of *Glocester*, with the *Clergy* and *Laity*, went to the great Altar, and swore Fealty to his First-born Son *Edward*, who was then in the Holy Land, not knowing whether he was living; afterward the Nobility of the Nation met at the New Temple, London, and a new Seal having been made, they appointed faithful Ministers and Guardians that might keep the King's Treasure, and the Peace of the Kingdom. *Postmodum ad novum Templum Londini nobiliores Regni pariter convenerunt, & facto sigillo novo constituerunt fideles ministros & custodes qui Thesaurum Regis, &c.*

These Guardians were, *Walter Giffard* Arch-Bishop of *York*, *Edmond Plantagenet*, Son to *Richard Plantagenet* Brother to King Henry the Third Earl of *Cornwal*, and *Gilbert de Clare* Earl of *Gloucester*, who entred upon the Exercise of the Government, by the Advice and Appointment of the Nobility, without any possible Privy or Knowledge of the King; yet all the Writs, Proclamations, and Instruments concerning the Government were Issued in the King's Name; as appears by the [2] Writ directed to all the Sheriffs in England, to proclaim the King's Peace throughout their whole Counties in all Cities, Burghs, Fairs, Mercates, and other Places: Which was in this Form; *Edward* by the Grace of God King of England, Lord of Ireland, and Duke of Aquitan, &c. Whereas our Father King Henry of Famous Memory being Dead, the Government of the Kingdom is come to us by Hereditary Succession, &c. We command the, &c. *Witness*, *W.* Arch-Bishop of *York*; *Ed.* of *Cornwall*, and *G.* of *Glocester*, Earls, at *Westminster* the 23d of November, in the First Year of Our Reign: But three Days after the Interrment of his Father.

There was also a Writ of almost the same Tenor in the King's Name, directed to the Abbats of *Dore* and *Hagenham* to Receive the Oath of Fidelity from [3] *Leulin* Son of *Griffin* Prince of *Wales*: Dated by the Hand of *Walter de Merton*, then Chancellor,

[1] *Mat. Westm*  
fol. 401. n. 40.  
50. A.D. 1272.

The Nobility and Clergy swear Fealty to *Edw. I.* when beyond Sea, after the Death of his Father, and appoint Guardians of the Kingdom.

The Guardians Names.

They enter upon the Government; all Writs and Instruments issued by them in the King's Name.

[2] *Append. n. 1.*  
A Writ to proclaim the King's Peace.

[3] *Append. n. 2.*  
*Leulin*, Prince of *Wales* summoned to take the Oath of Fealty.



(and at least a great *Assistant* to the *Guardians*) on the 29th of *November*, in the First Year of Our Reign; but he appeared not, nor sent any answer to the *Abbats*, as by the Return from them, and the *Constable* of *Montgomery* Castle annexed to the Writ it self, is manifest.

*Writs* likewise for keeping the Peace in *Ireland*, were Directed [4] to *Maurice Fitz-Maurice*, Justiciary of that Nation, *inhibiting* all under the Pain of Life and Member, and *Disheriting*, That they presumed not to infringe the Publick, or King's Peace, with *Promise* to *Maintain* all People of that Land in their *Rights*, *Goods*, and *Estates*, and do them full Justice against great and small; [5] With Command to the *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, *Abbats*, *Priors*, *Earls*, *Barons*, *Knights*, and *Freemen* of *Ireland*, to take the *Oath* of *Faalty* before Commissioners there appointed. Both these Records Dated by the Hand of *Walter de Merton*, *Chancellor*, on the 7th day of *December*, at *Westminster*.

Besides these, they Issued other *Writs* in the King's Name, one for *Assessing* of [6] *Tallage*, dated *Jan. 27.* and to the [6] *Sheriff* of *Surry* and *Sussex*; another to raise the *Posse Comitatus*, for *suppressing* the *Rabble*, who were up there, *Plundering*, *Robbing*, and *Murdering* the King's Subjects, dated the 6th of *June*, both in his First Year; so that they took upon them the *Whole Administration* of the *Government* in his absence: and he was so far pleased with the *Proceedings* of his *Chancellor*, (especially against the *Bishop* of *Carlisle* for *Excommunicating* the *Sheriff* of *Cumberland*, because he [7] *Distreined* the *Goods* of an *Abbat* in his *Diocese* for the King's Debt, prohibiting him to put in *Execution* the *Excommunication*, or *Prosecute* him in Court *Christian*, for that the *Correccion* and *Pleas* concerning the *Transgression* of the King's Officers belonged to himself, according to the Custom of the Kingdom) that he wrote him a *Letter* of [8] *Thanks* when he was acquainted with them, for his *Diligence* in the *Dispatch* of his, and the Kingdom's *Business*, *Directing* and *Incouraging* him to go on as he had begun, promising to *Ratifie* whatever he should do in *Ways* of *Justice*, *Commanding* him not to spare any of what *State* or *Condition* soever, but to proceed against them by *Rigor* of *Justice*, if otherwise he could not restrain their *Excesses*. This *Letter* is dated *August* the 9th, in the First Year of his Reign, at *Melun*, upon the *River Seyn* in *France*.

Upon the News of his Father's Death he set all things in order, and disposed them as well as he could, and came from the *Holy Land* into *Sicily*, and was received by the [9] King thereof with great *Honour*, who Conducted him to the *Roman Court*, where he spent some time with *Pope Gregory* the Tenth, his *Friend*, *Familiar*, and *Acquaintance* in the *Holy Land*; From thence he passed into *Burgundy*, where at the foot of the Mountains, some *English Bishops*, *Abbats*, *Earls*, and *Barons* met him, from whence he came into *France*, where he was Honourably received by King *Philip* the Hardy his Cousin German, and did *Homage* to him for the *Hereditary Lands* he held of him, who thereupon granted him the possession of them.

After

[4] Pat. 1 Ed. I.  
Part. 2. M. 20.  
*De Conserva-  
tione pacis in  
Hibernia.*

A Writ for  
the Conserva-  
tion of the  
Peace in Ire-  
land.

[5] Ib. M. 20.  
*De fidelitate,  
Archiepiscoporum,  
Episcoporum, &c.  
Regi facienda.*

[6] Append.  
n. 3. 4.

A Writ to the  
Sheriff of  
*Surry* and *Sus-*  
*sex*, to Sup-  
press the  
Rabble, and  
Plunderers.

[7] *Bundel*  
*Brev. 1 Ed. I.*  
n. 14. in the  
*Tower.*

[8] Append.  
n. 5.

[9] *Mat. West.*  
f. 402. n. 10,  
20, 30, 40, 50.  
The King  
came from the  
*Holy Land* into  
*Sicily*, from  
thence to  
*Rome*, and so  
into *France*,  
where he did  
*Homage* to  
that King for  
*Aquitain*.



A After this he took his Leave of the King and Peers of France, [1] and went into Aquitan to Receive the Homage and Service of his Vassals there, in which he found much difficulty from several that Refused to do their Fendal Duties to him, but chiefly from [2] Gaston Monaco Viscount of Bearn, who because a Predecessor or two had done Homage and Sworn Fealty to the King of Aragon, and he had been much obliged to Alphonso the Second then King, denied his Homage; King Edward seized upon his Person, and kept him Prisoner among his Retinue, from whence making his Escape, he was driven out of his Country; And upon an Appeal to King Philip, as Sovereign Lord of Aquitan or Guyenne, in favour of King Edward, He compelled Gaston to hold his Lands of him.

[1] Ibm. f. 403. n. 10. A. D. 1273. He receives the Homage and Service of his Vassals there.  
[2] Ibm. n. 26. and Mezer. Fr. Hist. f. 313. A. D. 1273. The Viscount of Bearn denies his Homage. He is forced to do it.

B In the Second year of his Reign, having settled his Affairs beyond Sea, [3] he took Ship at Bologn in Picardy, and landed in England on the 25th of July; At his landing Gilbert Earl of Gloucester, and John Earl of Warren, received him more Honourably than other Nobility, conducting him to their Castles of Tonebridge in Kent, and Rigate in Surrey, where they Treated and Feasted him with great Jollity many days. On the 19th of August he and his Queen Elianor were [4] Crowned at Westminster by Robert Kilwarby Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, Alexander King of Scots, and John Duke of Britan, being present.

[3] Mat. West. f. 407. n. 20. A. D. 1274. The King comes for England.

[4] Ibm. n. 30. He and his Queen Crowned at Westminster.

D Toward the middle of October following, he issued out [5] Writs of Inquiry by the Oaths of Twelve Legal Men, to Two Commissioners in every County, to Inquire what his Royalties, and the Liberties and Prerogatives of his Crown were, who were his Tenants in Capite, and Military Service, and how many, and what Fees they held of him; Of his Tenants in Antient Demeasne, how they had behaved themselves, and in what Condition their Farms were; Of Sheriffs, Coroners, Escheators, Bayliffs, and their Clerks, whether they had Extorted Money from any Man, by reason of their Office, had Wronged any Man, or Received Bribes for Neglecting, or being Remiss in their Offices, &c. The whole Inquiry containing 34 Articles.

[5] Pat. 2 Ed. I. M. 6. He makes inquiry after the Rights of his Crown, his Military Tenants, and Civil Officers, &c. whether they had done their Duties.

E About the beginning of November the King of France sent to the King of England, to [\*] appear in his Parlement to be holden on the Morrow of the Quindene of the Feast of St. Martin in Winter (that is November 26.) to be at the Tryal of a Case between Robert Duke of Burgundy on the one part, and Robert Earl of Nevers, and Yobend his Wife on the other part, concerning the Dukedom of Burgundy, and the Appurtenants. Who by reason of his Weighty Affairs in his own Kingdom, sent Maurice de Credome, Otto de Grandison, and Roger de Cliff, to make his Excuse, with his Commission or Letter of Credence, dated at Westminster, November 11. He was summoned as a Peer or great Vassal of France.

[\*] Append. n. 6. A. D. 1275. The King summoned as a Peer of France.

He sends his Excuse.

[6] Cl. 3. Ed. I. M. 21. Dorf. A. D. 1275. The Parlement Pro-rogued before meeting.

By his Writ dated at [6] Woodstock the 27th of December following, he Prorogues his General Parlement he propounded to



have holden 15 days after the Purification, to the Morrow of the Octaves of Easter. *Quia Generale Parliamentum nostrum, Quod cum Prelatis & Magnatibus Regni proposuimus habere London, ad Quindenam Purificationis Beate Marie Virginis proximo futur. Quibusdam certis de causis prorogavimus usque in Crastinum claus. Pasche proxim. sequent. &c. Teste Rege apud Woodstock 27 die Decemb.* Directed to Robert Arch-Bishop of Canterbury.

[7] Stat. at Large, 3 Ed. I. A. D. 1276.

Excellent Laws made both for Church and State.

In which Parlement holden upon the Monday after Easter in the year 1276, he made Excellent Laws both for Church and State, and for the Ease and Benefit of both. The Preamble whereof here follows. [7] These be the Acts (in French, the Establishments) of King Edward, Son to King Henry, made at Westminster, at his first Parlement General, after his Coronation on the Monday of Easter Utas, (in French, on the Morrow of the Close of Easter, which was the same day) the 3d year of his Reign, By his Council, and by the Assent of Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Abbats, Priors, Earls, Barons, and all the Commonalty of the Realm, being thither summoned, because our Sovereign Lord the King had great Zeal (in the French, Will) and Desire to Redress the State of the Realm, in such things as required Amendment, for the common Profit of Holy Church and the Realm, and because the State of the Realm, (so in the French) and of Holy Church, had been evil kept, and the Prelates and Religious People of the Land, grieved many ways, and the People otherwise Intreated then they ought to be, and the Peace less kept, and the Laws less used, and the Offenders less punished then they ought to be, by reason whereof the People of the Land feared the less to offend; The King hath Ordained and Established these Acts, (in the French, Things) underwritten, which he intendeth (in the French, understandeth) to be necessary, and profitable for the whole Realm.

With a saving to the King of the Rights of the Crown.

[8] In Tottel's Magna Charta 'tis Chap. 49. in Mag. Charta Printed 1602, 'tis Chap. 50. [9] Chronic. f. 102.

[1] Ib. f. 103. Gasto de Bearn submits himself.

First, the King Willeth and Commandeth, That the Peace of Holy Church, and of the Land, be well kept and maintained in all Points, and that common Right be done to all, as well Poor as Rich, without Respect of Persons. This Statute is called Westminster the First, and contains 51 Chapters, and the 50th was, A [8] saving to the King of the Rights of his Crown, notwithstanding these Grants were made, to the Honour of God, and Holy Church, for the common Good of the People, and the Ease of such as were Grieved. Thomas Wickes says, this Statute was made by the Advice of the Lawyers, *Jurisperitorum* [9] Regni sui co-operante Consilio, by which he gained the Hearts and Affections of the Plebians, *Quo corda plebeie multitudinis, inestimabili sibi Dilectionis sinceritate conjunxit.*

Toward the latter end of July [1] Gasto de Bearn (before-mentioned) was sent to the King, by the King of France, who submitting himself, and giving Security, after a short Imprisonment, was permitted to go into his own Country.

About



About [2] *Candlemas* this year, *Ælionora*, Daughter to *Simon Montfort*, who had been Contracted to *Lewellin*, Prince of Wales, in her Father's Life-time, was sent from France to be Married unto him, and taken in the *Severn* not far from *Bristol*, and imprisoned.

[2] *Ib.* f. 104.  
*Simon Montfort's* Daughter, and Prince *Lewellin's* Mistress made Prisoner.

- A Nothing of Moment to be found from this time until after *Michaelmas* following, when there was a *Parlement* [4] holden, in which the *Constitutions*, called the *Statute of Bigamy*, that had been recited in the presence of certain Bishops of *England*, and other of the King's Council; at which time all the King's Council, as well Justices, as others, did agree they should be put in Writing, and published for perpetual Memory, and that they should be firmly observed, [5] were confirmed, or, as 'tis said in the Close of this Statute, were made. The Fifth Constitution, or Chapter of this Statute, from whence it hath its Name, was an Interpretation of the Sixteenth Canon of the *Second Council of Lyons*, holden on the First of *May* 1274, and the Second of this King under *Pope Gregory X.* in these Words; [6] *Altercationis antiquæ Dubium, presentis Dubitationis Oraculo Decidentes. Bigamos omni privilegio Clericali Declaramus nudatos, & coercioni fori secularis addictos, consuetudine contraria non obstante. Ipsis quoque sub anathemate prohibemus Deferre Tonsuram vel habitum Clericalem.*
- B That is, in determining the old wrangling Question, we declare, that such as have been twice Married, are deprived of all the Privileges of Clercs, and left to Secular Jurisdiction or Coertion, any Custom to the contrary notwithstanding, and we forbid them under a Curse, either to be Shaven, or wear a Clerc's Habit.
- C

[4] *Totell's Mag. Charta*, Printed 1576. p. 39. B. d. O. 1276. The Statute of Bigamy.

[5] *Ib.* in fine Statut.

[6] *Labbe*, Tom. 11. Part. 1.

- D Certain Prelates or Ordinaries, did take the meaning of this Canon to extend only to such as were *Bigami*, or had been twice Married after the making of it; and they claimed such as had been twice Married before that time, when they were Arraigned for Felony, and required to have them delivered to them, as such as ought to have the Benefit of Clergy. This Challenge produced the following Interpretation of the Canon concerning [7] *Bigamists*, whom the Pope in his Council of *Lyons*, deprived of all Privilege of Clercs, by a Canon therein made, seeing certain Prelates demanded such as had been so, before that Constitution, and were accused of Felony, to be delivered unto them as Clercs; It is Agreed and Declared before the King and his Council, that the Constitution be so understood, That those who were *Bigamists* as well before as after the making of it, for the time coming, should not be delivered to the Prelates, but should have Justice done them as Laymen.
- E

[7] *Totell's Mag. Charta* ut sup. p. 40. a. b. The Reason of the Statute.

- F In this *Parlement*, the Clergy and Laity Granted to the King a Fifteenth of all their Goods, but seeing [8] the Pope had ordained in the Council of *Lyons*, That the Tenth of all Ecclesiastic Revenues should be paid to the support of the Holy Land, and that the Clergy, had courteously given him and his Brother Two years Tenths since his Father's Death, he urged them not to pay this Fifteenth, but Treated with the Bishops, and greatest of them,

[8] *The Wike's Chron.* f. 103.



them, for a Voluntary Contribution as they should think fit ; What this Contribution or Aid was, 'tis not said, but it was not to be drawn into Example or Custom, as appears by the King's Protestation in his Letters.

[9] Pat. 4.  
Ed. I. M. 6.  
A. D. 1276.

*Rex omnibus, &c. salutem* [9] *Licet Comites, Barones, ac alii Magnates, & Communitas, regni nostri Quintam-decimam omnium Bonorum suorum, & etiam Venerabilis pater R. Cantuar. Archiepiscopus, & sui Suffraganei propter urgentia negotia nostra subsidium de Bonis suis nobis sponte & gratiose concesserunt, &c.* That is, the King to all, &c. Greeting. Whereas the Earls, Barons, other great Men, and the Community of our Kingdom, Granted us a Fifteenth of all their Goods, and the Venerable Father the Archbishop of Canterbury, and his Suffragans, for our urgent Occasions, on their own free Will and Courtesie, granted us an Aid of their Goods. We by these our Letters do *Protest*, *That this Gift proceeded only from their free Good Will, and not in the Name of a Fifteenth, and that it shall not be urged as an Example, or as a Due, or Drawn into Custom by us, or our Heirs.* Witness the King at Westminster the First of November.

A

B

[1] Mat. West.  
f. 408. n. 10.  
Leolin Prince  
of Wales re-  
fuseth to come  
to the Parle-  
ment at West-  
minster.

*Leolin Prince of Wales* was [1] called to this Parlement, as he had been to others, but would not appear ; yet sent Messengers that he might have Peace, and for the Daughter of the Earl of Leicester, whom he intended to Marry, and to obtain this, offered a great Sum of Money. Which the King Refused, neither would he Consent to the Matrimony, unless he would Restore the Lands which he had seized and invaded in the Marches, to the just Proprietors, and Repair the Castles in England which he had destroyed. But the Prince not Complying with these Terms, he sent Forces to secure the Marches and English Borders from the Irruptions, Rapin, and Devastations of the Welsh, which proved not sufficient to restrain them, they still continuing their Invasions and Depredations upon the English. And therefore the King, in the Fifth year of his Reign, issued out his Writs, to all the Noblemen and others that held of him by Military Service, dated at [2] Windsor, December the 12th, for the Summoning his Army to meet at Worcester 8 days after St. John Baptist next coming, which were to this Effect.

C

D

[2] Rot. Sent.  
5. Ed. I. M. 8.  
A. D. 1277.

[3] Ibm.  
The King  
summons his  
Army against  
him.

A. D. 1278.

*Whereas* [3] *Lewelin the Son of Griffin, Prince of Wales, and his Complices, our Rebels, have invaded our Lands, and the Lands of our Subjects in the Marches, and do daily invade them, and commit Murders and other Wickednesses, and the same Lewelin refuseth to obey us as he ought, to the great Prejudice and Contempt of us, and to the manifest Disinheritance and great Damage of you (the Person to whom the Writ was directed) and other of our Subjects, for which we have now caused our Army (Exercitum Nostrum) to be summoned, that it be at Worcester Eight days after St. John Baptist, to Repress the Rebellion of the said Lewelin and his Assistants. We Command you, to be ready with your Horses and Arms, and with your Service due to us, to go with us from thence against the foresaid Lewelin, &c.*

E

F

With



With this Army the King marched from [4] *Chester* towards *Wales*; in his way there was a great Wood, and so thick as his Army could not pass it; part of which was cut down, and a very large and wide Way made into *Levelin's* Country, where he Built the two Castles of *Flint* and *Borbelan*; seized the *Welshmen's* Lands, and Goods, and wasted their Country, drave them into their usual place of Retreat, the Mountains of *Snowdon*; and with the assistance of the Men of the Five Ports took the Isle of *Anglesey*.

[4] *The Wikes*,  
Chron. f. 105.  
*Flint* and *Re-*  
*thelan* Castles  
built.

*Anglesey* taken

The Prince of *Wales* finding himself not able to resist the Force of the *English*, desired Peace, which was [5] Granted unto him upon the following Articles.

[5] *Walsing-*  
*ham*, f. 48. n.  
10, 20.

1. That all English Prisoners should be Released freely, without claiming any thing from them.

Peace granted  
to the Prince  
of *Wales*, and  
the Articles.

2. That for this Peace, and the King's Good Will, he should pay at the King's pleasure, 50000 l. Sterling.

3. That Four Cantreds, and all the Lands Conquered by the English, (except *Anglesey*) should be and remain to the King and his Heirs for ever. And for *Anglesey*, the Prince was to pay to the King 1000 Marks every year. The first Payment to begin at Michaelmas then at hand; and for his Ingress or Entry upon it 5000 Marks; and if the Prince died without Heirs, the King to have the Possession of it.

4. That he should come into England to the King at Christmas to do his Homage.

5. That all the Homages in *Wales*, should be to the King, except of Five Barons that lived in the Confines of *Snowdon*, because he could not be called Prince unless he had some Barons under him, for his Life, but after his Death, the Homages of those Five Barons, should remain to the King and his Heirs for ever.

For the Security and Observation of these Articles, he delivered to the King [6] Ten Hostages of the best Persons in *Wales*, without being restrained, or disinherited. And the best Men of every Cantred, and of *Snowdon*, by Consent of the Prince, were to Swear upon the Holy Reliques, That whensoever the Prince broke any of these Articles, unless upon Admonition he corrected himself, they would Estrange themselves, (*abalienarent se ab eo*) and become his Enemies in all things they could.

[6] *Ibm.*  
Security for  
the perform-  
ance of Ar-  
ticles.

Also, besides these things, [7] he was to satisfy his Brothers for the Injuries he had done them, they were Three, *Owen*, and *Roderic*, whom he had put into Prison, and *David*, whom he had forced to fly into England. The Laity as an Aid towards this War, [8] gave the King the 20th part of their Goods.

[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Ibm.* n.  
20, 30.

If the Reader desires to be better informed, or to see this *Welsh* Affair in a clearer light, let him look back into the Life of *Hen. III.* fol. 578, 579, 580. and fol. 663. D. E. F. &c.

Upon this Peace [9] *Eleanor*, the Daughter of *Simon Montfort*, was given in Marriage to *Levelin* by the King, whose Prisoner

[9] *Ibm.* n. 30.  
*Levelin* Marries  
the Daughter  
of *Simon*  
*Montfort*.



soner she had been : The Solemnity was performed at his Charge, and He with his Queen was present at it.

[1] *Ibm.* n. 40.  
A. D. 1279.

The Earldom  
of *Pontieu* the  
Inheritance  
of the Queen  
of *England*.

[2] *Mexer.* f.  
319. A. D.  
1279.

The King and  
Queen do Ho-  
mage for se-  
veral Coun-  
treys in  
*France*.

The King  
gives up his  
Right in  
*Normandy*.

[3] *E.* 409.  
n. 20.

Jews Hanged  
for Clipping  
and Counter-  
feiting the  
King's Coyn.

A. D. 1279.

[4] *Ibm.*

Preachers to  
Convert the  
Jews.

[5] *Pat.* 8.  
*Ed.* I. M. 27.  
A. D. 1280.

[6] *Ibm.* Part.  
I. M. 15.  
Dorf or intus.  
Maintenance  
granted to the  
Converted  
Jews.

About this time [1] the *Countess* of *Pontieu*, the Queen's Mother, died, who had been Queen of *Castile*; whose Inheritance, the Earldom of *Pontieu*, descended to her Daughter; with whom the King passed the Seas about the Feast of *Ascension*, and was Honourably Received by his Cousin *Philip* King of *France*, and the most Powerful of his Kingdom, at *Amiens*, [2] who there received the Homages of the King and Queen of *England*, for the Countries of *Aginois*, *Limosin*, *Perigord*, *Xantoin* in *Aquitan*, and the Earldom of *Pontieu* in *Picardy*, and other Lands, and delivered unto them the Perpetual Possession of them. For this King Edward gave up all his Right in the Dutchy of *Normandy*, only reserving 30 *Livers* of *Paris*, to be paid Annually out of the *Exchequer*.

It was in this year, that so great a number of Jews were Hanged and Fined for Clipping and Falsifying the King's Coin, as appears by some Writs about this Matter; tho' the Story is placed by *Math. Westminster* in the year before. He says [3] in the Month of *November* all the Jews in *England* were taken and imprisoned in one day for Clipping and Counterfeiting the King's Money, who accused many Christians as guilty of the same Crime; They were Legally Tried and Convicted before Special Justices appointed for this Service, (*viz.* *Walter Heliun* and *John Cobham*) as the Writs inform us, as *Pat. Roll.* 7. *Ed.* I. M. I. *de domibus Judeorum suspensorum vendendis*, for the Sale of the Jews Houses that were Hanged, as Escheated; and *Pat.* 7. *Ed.* I. M. II. *de potestate vendendi Domus & Redditus Judeorum Dampnatorum*, Power given to sell the Houses and Rents of the Condemned Jews. Also *Pat.* 7. *Ed.* I. M. I. *de finibus a Judeis recipiendis*, for the Receiving Fines of the Jews, such as Compounded for their Felonies and Faults. [4] There were no less then 280 of both Sexes Hanged in *London*, and in other Cities of *England*, (*Maxima multitudo*) a very great number, besides such as were Fined.

The *Friers Preachers* in *England*, who desired to Preach to the *Obstinate Jews*, thereby to Convert them to the Christian Faith, and turn them from their Wicked Practices and Unbelief; applying themselves to the King, obtained a [5] Writ to all *Sheriffs*, *Bayliffs*, and other Liege People, to admonish and induce the Jews in all Places to come and hear their Preaching without Blasphemy or Disturbance, at such times as the *Friers Preachers* should direct. The Title of the Writ in the Margin of the Roll *De predicando Judeis*, about Preaching to the Jews. And to promote their Conversion, and for their Support when Converted, [6] the King granted, that toward their Maintenance they should have half the forfeited Estates of the Jews distributed for their Maintenance, and the other half should go to the House of *Converts*, (now the *Rolls* in *Chancery-Lane*, *London*) for the Support of *Converts* there; and further, that the Moiety of the forfeited Estates of the Jews, and all *Deodands*, be distributed in *Alms* according to the Patent *pro sustentatione Judeorum Conversorum*, for the Sustentation of the Converted Jews.

Yet



A Yet for all this Incouragement the Preachers made no Work of it, the Jews remained so still, they were the same Usurers, and Brokers, (accounted then Wicked People) as before, and the same Infidels; Only some Poor Jews, rather to get a Livelihood, then out of Affection to Christ or Christianity, pretended to be Converts; for about Ten years after they were all Banished the Kingdom, as appears by these Writs, *De Judeis Regno Anglie Exeuntibus*, Of the Jews going out of England. *Claus. 18 Ed. I. M. 6.* And *De passagio & conductu Judeorum Anglie*, for the Passage and Conduct of the Jews of England. *Pat. 18 Ed. I. M. 14.*

They remain obstinate and unconverted.

B In the Tenth of this King, [7] *Lewelin* Prince of Wales, and his Brother *David*, on Palm-Sunday night, surpris'd the Lord *Roger de Clifford*, the King's Justiciary there, killed many of his Servants, wounded, bound, and sent him Prisoner to the Mountain of *Snowdon*, committing great Ravages, killing the People, and destroying a great part of the Marches.

[7] *Mat. West.*  
f. 410. n. 50.  
A. D. 1282.

The Welsh surpris'd the King's Justiciary.

C The King scarce believing the News at first, upon better Information, sent the Barons of the Exchequer, and Justices of the Bench, (*Justiciarios de Banco*) to *Shrewsbury*, to put the Laws in Execution, and followed them with an Army, built a large Bridge over the River *Conwy* of Boats, or, as the Historian says, Ships, and possessed himself of the Country about *Snowdon*, and gave many Shares of those Lands to his Barons, and others that had faithfully assisted him. Over this Bridge many of the Nobles of the King's Army passed out of *Anglesey* to view and observe the Country, who affrighted with the Multitude and Clamour of the Welsh coming upon them, hasting to return from whence they came, were drowned in their Passage. The Welsh encouraged by this Accident, which they would have a Miracle, (*non infortunio sed miraculo ascribentes*) pressed their Prince to Act like a Man of Courage, and it would not be long, e're, according to *Merlin's* Prophecy, he should wear the Crown of Brute. Whereupon, with a great Army, he descended into the Plains, and left his Brother *David* to defend the Mountains. Where *Edmund*, the Son of the Famous *Roger Mortimer*, then dead, with some other Marchers, set upon them, and without considerable damage to themselves, slew a great number of the Welsh, in which Conflict *Lewelin's* Head was struck off, presented to the King, and sent to London, and set upon the Tower.

The Welsh routed, *Lewelin's* Head struck off.

F *Walsingham* [8] Relates this Story in the year 1283, the 11th of *Edward I.* and that this Battle was six days before the Feast of *St. Lucy* that year; and says, that the Welsh besieged *Rothelan* Castle (now *Rudland*) in *Flintshire*, and that upon King *Edward's* coming towards them, they quitted the Siege, and retired. *Tho. Wikes* Reports it in the year 1281, and varies also from the others in the Story it self, and whether any of them be true in that, or not, certain it is, they are all false in the time, as is evident from the Records hereafter cited.

[8] *F. 50. n.*  
10, 20.  
A. D. 1283.



[9] Append.  
n. 7.

Four Knights  
summoned to  
meet for eve-  
ry County.  
For every Ci-  
ty, Burgh, and  
Mercat Town  
two Men.

\* Rot. Wall.  
11 Ed. I. M. 4.

[1] Rot. Wallie.  
11 Ed. I. M. 4.  
*De potestate  
data petendi  
& procurandi  
subsidiis Regis  
in Expeditione  
Regis Wallie.*  
The King de-  
mands a Sub-  
sidy, and in-  
joins the form  
of it.  
Pope Nich.  
died, Aug. 22.  
1280, and  
Martin IV.  
succeeded  
Febr. 22. the  
same year.  
Walsingham  
says it was in  
the year 1281,  
and according  
to Truth.

The King, [9] to the Sheriff of Norf. and Suff. Greeting; Where-  
as Lewelin the Son of Griffin, and other Welshmen, his Accom-  
plices, and our Enemies and Rebels, have so often in the times of us  
and our Progenitors disturbed the Peace of England, and do still  
continue in the same Course; And, for that by the Advice of our Great  
Men, and the whole Community of the Land, we propound finally  
to repress their Rebellion and Instability, so as it shall not be in their  
power to disturb the Peace of the Nation when they please, altho it seems  
to be a very great Charge and Difficult Undertaking. We Command  
you, that you cause to come before us on the Octaves of St. Hillary,  
(i. e. Jan. 20.) at Northampton, or before our Commissioners, all  
those of your Bayliwick that have 20 l. a year and upwards, who are able  
and fit to bear Arms, who are not at present with us in our Expedition  
against the Welsh. And Four Knights of each County for the  
Community of the same Counties, having full power from them, and  
also of every City, Burgh, and Mercat Town, Two Men,  
(*Duo homines*) for the Communities of the same, to hear and  
do those things, which on our behalf we shall cause to be shewn unto  
them, &c. Witness the King at Rothelan the 24th day of Novem-  
ber, in the 11th year of his Reign. The like Precept was to the  
Sheriffs of all Counties in England, to cause to meet, &c. at  
Northampton, except, to the Sheriffs of Northshire, Cumber-  
land, Westmerland, Northumberland, and Lancashire, who  
were Commanded to cause, &c. to meet at York. The like Pre-  
cept was to the \* Archbishop of Canterbury, to cause all his Suf-  
fragans, Abbats, Priors, and other Prebends of Religious Houses,  
Procurators of Deans and Chapters of Collegiate Churches, to  
come before the King or his Commissioners at the same time and  
place, to hear and do as before, and further to give their Coun-  
sel and Assistance, happily to finish what he had begun, to the  
Praise and Honour of God, the Magnificence of his Fame, (*&  
ad magnificentiam nostre fame*) to the perpetual Peace and Tran-  
quility of the whole Kingdom, Witness as before. The like  
was to the Arch-Bishop of York, for the Meeting of the Clergy  
of that Province at York.

After this the King wrote [1] to the Venerable Fathers in  
Christ, the Bishops, Abbats, Priors, Deans, Chapters of the Cathedral  
and Collegiate Churches of the Province of York, and their  
Proctors. To the Knights, Freemen, Communities, and all others  
of every County beyond Trent, that were to meet on the Octaves  
of Hillary or 20th of January then near at hand, That for the  
Suppressing of the Welsh, &c. and Establishing a perpetual Peace  
in England, which he intended with his whole Heart, he had  
given Power to the Arch-Bishop of York, and Anthony Bek, Arch-  
Deacon of Duresm, his Secretary, to ask and procure, in his  
Name, according to the Form to them, by him delivered and  
injoined, a Subsidy to his Use, of his Subjects of every Bishop-  
rick, and County beyond Trent, (*plenam damus potestatem petendi  
& procurandi nomine nostro juxta formam per nos eis inde Traditam,  
& injunctam, subsidium ad opus nostrum, &c.*) Commanding and  
Requiring them to give Credit to what the Arch-Bishop, and  
Anthony, should say about the Premises, and to perform what they  
should



should *propound* to them on his behalf (*Ex parte nostra.*) Witness the King at *Rothelan* the 6th day of *January*, in the 11th of his Reign.

A The *Welsh* affrighted at the Death of their Prince, [2] delivered all their *Castles* in *Snowdon*, and the very middle of *Wales*; and the Clergy and Laity (*Clerus & Populus*) granted first a *Fifteenth*, and afterwards a *Thirtieth* part of all their Goods, to the King for an *Ayd*.

B David, the Brother of *Lewelin*, [3] was taken by the King's Spies, and such as he had appointed for that Business, who refused to see him when brought to *Rothelan* Castle, altho with great importunity he desired to be brought before him, was sent to *Shrewsbury*, and there *Judicially* *Condemned*, *Hanged*, *Drawn*, and *Quartered*. From this time *Wales* became Subject to *England*, received it's Laws, and the King placed his *Sheriffs* in it.

C King *Edward* having undertaken the *Croisade* for the Holy-Land, and by reason of these *Welsh* Wars, and other things he was about to settle in his own Kingdom, not being able in his own Person to perform it, intended his Brother *Edmund*, Earl of *Cornwall*, for that Service; and there being Six years *Tenths* Collected from the Clergy, according to the *Canon* and *Grant* of the Second *Council* of *Lions*, laid up and secured in several *Monasteries*, and other Places, for *Aid* of the Holy Land; *Pope Martin* the Fourth sent Two *Preaching Friars* into *England*, for the *Exportation* and *Return* of this Money by his Agents and *Forreign* Merchants, issued the following *Writ* to hinder it.

D The King to *Edmund* Earl of *Cornwall*, *Greeting*: [4] Because for certain Causes we will not, that the Six years *Tenths* Granted by the Clergy of Our Kingdom for the *Aid* of the Holy Land, and now Collected, be carried out of the Kingdom; We Command, that you cause to come before you all the Merchants of *London*, as well those of Companies as others, and *Injoin* and *Inhibit* them on Our behalf, under the Peril of *Losing* *Life*, *Member*, and all their Goods, that they no manner of ways Carry, Cause, or Permit to be Carried, the Money arising from the said *Tenths* out of the Kingdom; and if you find any Merchants or others doing so, That you cause them and the Money to be Arrested, and safely kept, until you receive other Commands from Us. Witness the King at *Hertlebury* the 24th of *May*, in the 10th of Our Reign. The like Command was to the *Major* and *Sheriffs* of *London*, and to *Stephen* *Pencestre* *Warden* of the Five Ports.

F And he did not only Issue this *Prohibition*, but sent *Commissioners* to the Places where it was laid up, to see how much there was, and to order the safe keeping of it for the right Use. [9] The *Priors* of *Ely* and *Norwich* refused to let the King's Officers see or secure the Money in their *Monasteries*, whereupon he commanded [6] the *Sheriffs* of *Norfolk* and *Cambridgeshire*, to cause them, with 3 or 4 of their *Discreet* Monks, to come to him wherever he was, to answer the *Contempt*. Witness the King at *Aberconvey* in *Snowdon* the 15th day of *June*.

[2] *Mat. Westm.*  
fol. 411. n. 29.  
The *Welsh* deliver up their Castles in *Snowdon*.

[3] *Ibm.*  
And *Walsingham*, f. 51. n. 20, 30. f. 52. lin. 6. A. D. 1284.  
David, Prince *Lewelin's* Brother, *Judicially* *Condemned*, &c.  
*Wales* wholly subdued.

Six years  
*Tenths* granted for the *Aid* of the Holy Land.

[4] *Append.*  
n. 8.  
The King forbids the Carrying of Money out of the Land to the Pope, who sent for it.

[5] *Cl. 11 Ed. I.*  
*M. 7. Dors. de Decima.*

[6] *Ibm.*



[7] *Claus. 10. Ed. I. M. 5. Dorf. littera directa Papæ de cruce assumenda.*

The Pope writes to the King about his Voyage to the Holy Land.

[8] *Claus. 11. of Ed. I. M. 7. Dorf. Bulla directa Regis super D. cima.*

The King sends Answer by his own Messengers.

[9] *Ibm.*

[1] *Registrum Peccham. f. 66.*  
The King and Pope disagree about the Tenths and Business of the Holy Land.

The Pope sends the Arch-Bishop to Admonish the King.

[2] *Ibm.*

The Arch-Bishop's Account to the Pope concerning the King and the Tenths granted for the Holy Land.

The Two Friars, (viz. *Garnerius*, and *Ramerius de Florentia, ordinis Prædicatorum*) that brought the Pope's Orders for the Return or Transportation of these Tenths, brought also his [7] Letters to the King for the taking upon him the Cross, and assigning the time of the General Passage of the Christians of all Nations into the Holy Land; They pressed the King for an Answer, who commended their Prudence very much to the Pope, and only wrote back by them, That his Holiness should receive Answer by Messengers of his own from Chester the 10th of June.

By these Messengers, [8] who were *Robert Dean of York*, and *John Clazel* his Chaplain, (as we are informed by the Pope's Bull to the King about this Matter) he desired, That the Tenths that were gathered in his Kingdom, might be assigned to his Brother *Edmund*, Earl of *Campaign* and *Britany*, (as the Pope there stiles him) who was ready to undertake the Cross for the Succour of the Holy Land, at the time of the General Passage. But the Pope excusing the Delay of his Return to his Petition, [9] refused to Grant his Request, and giving both him and his Brother great Encomiums, and many fine Words, earnestly moved him to go in his own Person, as was expected, for the Glory of GOD, and his Own Honour. This Bull is Dated *apud Urbem Veterem*, (now *Orvieto*) on the 8th of January, in the Second year of his Pope-dome, 1283.

After this, according to the [1] Relation in the Pope's Letter, or Bull, directed to *John Peccham*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, recited in his Answer to it, directed to the Pope; The King is Charged, with Breaking open the Locks, and Seals of the Places where this Money was kept, and removing of it whither he pleased, to the great Offence of the Divine Majesty, and much Contempt of the Apostolick See, whereas he ought not to have done it without his License, having sent (as 'tis there said) frivolous Letters for his Excuse. In which Bull or Letter, he Commands him, by virtue of his Obedience, to go to the King, and admonish and induce him on his behalf, (*ex parte nostra moneas & inducas*) to restore and send the Money back from whence it was taken, without any defalcation, within the space of a Month, and to tell him he would not, nor ought to suffer the Holy Land to sustain such a great Loss, and that unless he complied with the Admonition, he would proceed against him and the Nation, according to the Quality of the Fact, and as he should think fit. Enjoining the Arch-Bishop to give him an Account what he did in this Affair, and what the King's Answer was. Dated at the same Place as before, the 5th of July, in the Third year of his Pontificate.

The Arch-Bishop's Return [2] to the Pope was this. *Hinc igitur Sanctitatis vestre Mandato vires & vota subjiciens reverenter, &c.* In Obedience to your Holiness's Commands, I went immediately to the King in the Marches of *Wales*, and delivered your Letters into his own Hands; and having openly and plainly Expounded your Letters and Command to me, and shewn



shewn the Authority of it, before him and his Great Men, I admonished the King to the performance of Three Things.

1. That he should restore, and cause to be carried to the Places from whence it was taken, the whole Money of the Tents, with such readiness and alacrity, as might expiate the Crime of taking it away.

A

2. That for the future he should forbear such Actions, adjoining, That tho the Apostolic Clemency retained him in the number of her Dearest Sons, yet if he should be afterwards found in such Offences, she neither could nor would withhold from him the Rod of Correction. (*Non posse eam, nec velle virgam ei Correctionis subtrahere*) lest sparing the Man, it should assent to those Divine Affronts or Injuries it had not Corrected. (*Ne parcendo homini Divinis Injuriis quas non corrigeret, assentiret.*)

B

3. That he should not trouble or prosecute those that had the Money in keeping.

*Quibus silenter & Reverenter auditis, &c.* To which, he having patiently, and reverently heard them, and having deliberated with those about him, he thus answered.

C

To the First, That there was no necessity of the Pope's sending his Letters, or the Arch-Bishop to him in this Case, when as he had Two Months since commanded the Money to be restored.

To the Second, That he intended no undue thing (*nihil indebitum intendebat*) against the Church for the future.

D

To the Third, He said he wondred, why it should be put upon him not to Molest the Guardians of the Money, when it was always his firm purpose, not to do injury to any Innocent Person.

When he sent this Account of his Proceeding to the Pope, he also advertised him, That it was affirmed by such Testimony as ought to be believed, that the King had restored the Money; but of that he could not write him the precise Truth, unless from those that knew the Weight, Number, and Measure of it, (*Nisi per illos qui ipsius noverunt Pondus, Numerum, & Mensuram.*) This Answer of the Arch-Bishop to the Pope is dated the 29th of November.

E

While the King [3] remained in Wales, for the Establishing and Settling his own, and the Nation's Affairs there, his Son Edward (who succeeded him) was born at Caernarvon on St. Mark's-Day; where he continued until toward the latter end of April the year following, and then having finished his Work, [4] he came into England, and was received at London in great Triumph the last day of that Month.

F

[3] *Mat. West.*  
f. 411. n. 50,  
A. D. 1284.  
King Ed. II.  
Born.

[4] *Ib. f. 412.*  
n. 30.  
A. D. 1285.



[5] *Ibm.* n. 40,  
50.

A. D. 1286.

*Matthew of Westminster* Reports, That the King of [5] *France*, *Philip IV.* called the *Fair*, not long after his Father's Death, sent his Ambassadors to King *Edward*, to come over into *France*, and employ his Mediation for a Peace between himself, and the Kings of *Aragon* and *Spain*. He complied with his desire, and on the 24th of *June* passed the Sea, and was attended with many Bishops, Earls, and Barons, and was received Honourably by the King and Nobles of *France*, and Conducted to *St. Germans*, where he staid some time, and demanded the Lands which his Grandfather King *John* had lost, and obtained Ten thousand Pounds *Sterling* of the King of *France*, to be yearly paid at the Tower of *London*, together with some Arrears for *Normandy*, which was his Inheritance.

A

[6] *F.* 322.  
A. D. 1286.

*Mezeray's* Story is otherwise, he [6] says ever since the Death of *Philip III.* *Edward* King of *England* had omitted no Endeavour to confirm the Treaties with his Successor. In the year 1286, landing in *France* about *Pontieu*, he was received at *Amiens* by several Lords sent from the King to meet him; from thence he came to *Paris*, where he was Magnificently Treated, and was present at the Parlement, which was held after *Easter*, and went from thence to *Bordeaux*. The apparent Cause of his Voyage, was the Desire he had to compose the Business of the King of *Aragon* with the King of *France*, because *Alphonso*, the Eldest Son and Successor of *Peter*, had Married or Espoused his Daughter *Elianor*; He forgot not likewise then to press earnestly he might have some Consideration for *Normandy*, and those other Countreys, which both his Father and himself had Renounced, but could obtain nothing in either of these Points. Being at *Bordeaux*, he solemnly Received the Ambassadors of the Kings of *Aragon*, *Castile*, and *Sicily*, all Enemies to *France*, which gave no little Jealousie to King *Philip*; Thus the *French* Historian. And there is nothing to be found of his Mediation, or what Effect it had.

B

C

D

[7] *Mat West.*  
f. 414. n. 10.  
A. D. 1289.  
King *Edward*  
punished his  
Justices for  
Bribery.

He staid in *France* above Three years, without doubt to Transact his own Affairs; And at his [7] Return, *Aug.* the 4th, he made a Progress through *England*, and punished his Justices that had taken Bribes in his absence, perverted Judgment, and committed Errors, according to the quantity of their Faults.

E

[8] *Buchan.*  
*rev. Scot. lib.* 7.  
f. 85. a. n. 10.  
Printed at  
*Edinburgh*,  
A. D. 1582.  
*Alexander K.*  
of *Scots* dies.

*Alexander III.* King of *Scotland*, died [8] by a fall off his Horse on the 19th of *March* 1285; and before himself all his Children died: his Daughter *Margaret* was Married to *Eric* King of *Norway*, who by him left one only Daughter named *Margaret*, called the *Maid of Norway*, Heiress to the Crown of *Scotland*. *Alexander* thus dead without Issue, except this Grandchild, and she then in *Norway* with her Father, there was a Convention of the States of the Kingdom at *Scone*, in which they Treated of creating a new King, and settling the State of the Kingdom, [9] *in quo conventu de novo Rege creando, & Statu Regni componendo ageretur*, which King's creation (as the Author expresseth it) was only providing a Husband for the *Maid of Norway*,

F

[9] *Ib.* lib. 3.  
*in initio*, f. 86.  
a. n. 10.

as



as appears by the following Story, where were chosen Six Guardians or Governors of the Kingdom, to Rule it in the Name of Margaret the Maid of Norway, as will presently appear: To whom King Edward, knowing the Grandchild of his Sister, (King Alexander's Queen) the only Child of the King of Norway, and sole Survivor of Alexander's Posterity, to be the Lawful Heir of the Kingdom of Scotland, sent Messengers thither to require her for a Wife for his Son. [1] *Edwardus Anglorum Rex gnarus suæ sororis neptem Regis Norwegiæ filiam unam ex Alexandri posteris esse superstitem, eandemque Regni Scotorum legitimam hæredem, legatos ad eam deposcendam filio suo uxorem in Scotiam misit.*

Six Guardians or Governors of the Kingdom chosen.

Margaret the Maid of Norway his Grandchild and Heir.

[1] *Ibm. n. 20.*  
A Match propounded between her, and Edw. II.

To proceed in this Match the Popes [2] Dispensation was procured, they being Cousin Germans, to legitimate the Marriage. This obtained, King Edward writes to Eric King of Norway [3] about this Affair, assuring him, That the Guardians, the Great Men, Prelates, and the whole Community of the Kingdom of Scotland, had unanimously consented to it. And the King of Norway [4] wrote to King Edward, and sent Commissioners there named, to Transact with him, That by his Advice and Assistance his Niece might be obeyed as Queen and Heir of Scotland, and that she might Govern as Kings do in other Kingdoms, *Ut ipse apponeret auxilium & consilium, qualiter prædictæ Reginæ nepti suæ obediretur, ut Domina, Regina, & hæres, Regni Scotiæ, & quod ipsa inde Ordinare possit pariter & Gaudere prout aliis faciunt Reges Regnis.* [5] King Edward wrote also to the Guardians of Scotland, to send Commissioners to Treat with those of Norway about the Emendation, Peace and Quiet of that Kingdom, and ordering the State of the Queen, (*& reformatione Status Reginæ*) who sent them accordingly, with whom he joined Commissioners of his own. All these Commissioners named in this Instrument, met at Salisbury on the 26th of October, where and when it was agreed:

[2] *Pat. 17. Ed. I. M. 3. Cedula intus de facto Norwegiæ.*  
[3] *Ib. M. 4. Cedula.*

[4] *Ib. M. 3. 4.*  
A Treaty about that Match.

[5] *Ibm.*

First, That the Queen and Heir [6] (*Regina & Hæres*) should come into England or Scotland before the Feast of All-Saints next coming, if she had no reasonable Excuse, free from any Contract of Marriage or Espousals, for which the Commissioners of Norway did undertake.

[6] *Ibm.*  
The Articles of that Treaty.

Secondly, That if she came so into England, King Edward promised, That when Scotland was so secured in Peace and Quiet, as she might safely go thither, and stay there, if the Scots required, he would send her thither free from all Contracts of Marriage and Espousals, so as the Scots before they should receive her, gave good Security to him, and the King of Norway, they would not Marry her without their Consents.

Thirdly, The Scots Commissioners likewise promised, for themselves and the Nation, they would secure it before she came thither. [7] *Quod inibi ut in suum Regnum venire poterit, & pro suæ voluntatis libito Commorari, prout ipsius Terræ vera Domina, Regina & Hæres; Quodque de premissis omnes securitates præstabunt, quæ rationabiles fuerint, & quas dicti Runtii Norwegiæ ipsos facere*

[7] *Ibm.*



*cere posse dicunt.* That she might come and remain there at her pleasure, as true Lady, Queen, and Heir, and that concerning the Premises, they would give all Rational Security, that the Commissioners of *Norway* should say they might give.

[8] *Ibm.*

Fourthly, If any of the *Guardians* or *Officers* of *Scotland* were suspected, they should be Removed, [8] and new ones put in their Places by the *Commissioners* of *Norway*, and *Scotland*, and such as the *King* of *England* should appoint for that purpose, and if the *Scots* and *Norwegians* could not agree in this Matter, then the *English* Commissioners were to determine what was to be done, and not only in this, but in all Matters whatsoever, that should happen in settling the State and Reformation of *Scotland*.

A

[9] *Ibm.*

For the performance of all this it was [9] agreed there should be a great Meeting of the *English* and *Scots* at and near *Rokesburgh*, at *Midlent* next following, where the *Scots* were to give Security for the Performance of these things, and for the *Emendation* of *Scotland* before such as the *King* of *England* sent thither. [1] To this Agreement in Three Parts, Two in *French* for the *English* and *Scots*, and a Third in *Latin* for the Commissioners of *Norway*. The Respective Commissioners set to their Seals, and it was Dated at *Salisbury* on *Sunday* the Feast of *St. Leonard*, (i. e. *November* 6.) 1289.

B

[1] *Ibm.*[2] *Append.*  
n. 9.

King *Edward* writes to the Nobility of *Scotland* to assist the *Guardians*.

By his Letters [2] dated the same day at *Clarendon*, directed to the Prelates, Great Men, and the whole Community of *Scotland*, *King Edward* Requires them to obey and be assisting to the *Guardians*, who were appointed in the Name of his Kinswoman *Queen Margaret*, to Govern that Kingdom.

C

The meaning of *Buchanan's* King-Creation.

This securing *Scotland* to the Right Heir, and making it in so quiet a Condition, as it might receive her with safety, and providing her an Husband, was the ordering of the State of the Kingdom, and King-Creation, as *Buchanan* artificially insinuates in his Republican Expressions.

D

[3] *Pat. 18 Ed.*  
*I. M. 8, 9.*  
*A. D. 1290.*

Concessions of *King Edward* for promoting the Match between his Son and the Heiress of *Scotland*.

For further facilitating of this intended Marriage, and that it might proceed, with the Assent and Approbation of the *Guardians*, *Bishops*, *Abbats*, *Earls*, *Barons*, and whole Community of *Scotland*, *King Edward* [3] confirmed to them certain Articles agreed on, by special Commissioners on both Parts. The *English* Commissioners on behalf of the King and his Heirs Granted:

E

First, That they should Have, Use, and Enjoy, their Laws, Liberties, and Customs, they had before Enjoyed.

Secondly, That if *Edward* and *Margaret* should die without Heirs, the Crown should Revert to the next Heir of the Kingdom.

F

Thirdly, That the Kingdom of *Scotland* might remain separated, divided, and free in it self, from the Kingdom of *England*, without subjection, by its true Bounds and Limits, as it had been before time. This was Granted with a saving of the King's Right before this Treaty.

Fourthly,



A Fourthly, That the Chapters of Cathedral, Collegiate, or Conventual Churches, might not be compelled to go out of the Kingdom to ask Leave to Elect or Present their Elects, or to do Fealty to the King of Scotland, nor any Tenents in Capite, or other Persons forced out of the Kingdom, to do their Homage, Fealty, and Services, or prosecute any Suits, or other things which were used to be done there, but that they might be done in their usual Places, before the Chancellor of Scotland or Vice-Roy.

Fifthly, That the Parlements for what concerned Scotland, might be holden within that Kingdom.

B The King was to [4] Swear to the Observation of these Things; And the Commissioners promised further, That he should oblige himself and Heirs to make Restitution of the Kingdom in the Case aforesaid in 100000 l. Sterl. to be paid to the Church of Rome in Aid of the Holy Land; and, That he should Consent, the Pope might constrain him and his Heirs, by Excommunicating them, and interdicting the Kingdom, as well to the Restitution, as Payment of the Money, if he did not.

C It was lastly [5] Agreed and Promised by the English Commissioners, That King Edward at his own Charges should procure the Pope to confirm these Articles within a year after the Marriage of Edward and Margaret, and that within the same time, & *infra idem Tempus* Communitati Regni Scotie liberari, to be delivered to the Community of the Kingdom of Scotland, who could be no other then the Nobility and Military Tenents.

D These Articles and Concessions were Sealed by the Commissioners on Tuesday before the Feast of \* St. Margaret, on the 15th of the Kalends of August, (that is July 18.) A. D. 1290; and the Letters Patents of Confirmation of this Agreement were Sealed with the King's Seal at Northampton, August 28.

E On the same day the King appointed [6] the Bishop of Durham to be Lieutenant to Queen Margaret, and his Son Prince Edward, in Scotland, for Preserving the Peace and Government thereof, with the Advice of the Guardians, Prelates, and Great Men, according to the Laws and Customs of the Kingdom. And the Guardians and Noblemen of Scotland, with the Governors and Captains of the Castles and Forts, ingaged themselves [7] to deliver them up, when their Queen and her Husband should come into that Kingdom. This whole Transaction at large is to be found in the Patent Rolls of the 17th, M. 3, 4. and of the 18th of Ed. I. M. 8, 9. in the Tower of London, in the Record Office there.

F But before this intended Marriage could be consummated, in her Voyage towards England or Scotland, the Queen died, [8] after whose Death there arose a Contention between several Pretenders to the Right of the Crown and Kingdom of Scotland, which put that Nation into Confusion; King [9] Edward, as

C

Superior

[4] *Ibm.*[5] *Ibm.*

\* July 20.

[6] Append.  
n. 10.

King Edward appointed a Lieutenant in Scotland, to Queen Margaret and his Son.

[7] Pat. 18 Ed. I. M. 8.

Queen Margaret dies.

[8] *Ros. de superi-  
rioritate Regis  
Anglia in Reg-  
no Scotia, &c.**Anis 19, 20,  
21, 22, 23,  
Ed. I. in Tur. i  
Lond.*Several Com-  
petitors for  
the Crown.[9] *Ibm.*



[1] *Ibm.*

Superior and direct Lord thereof, called his Parlement at *Norham* in the Confines of *Scotland*, [1] (*Indictio apud Norham in confinibus Regni Scotia suo Parlamento*) and went thither to determine the Controversie about the Right of Succession between the Competitors.

[2] *Ibm.*  
A. D. 1291.  
King Edward  
claims the Su-  
periority and  
Direct Domi-  
nion over  
*Scotland*.

On the 10th of [2] *May*, A. D. 1291, and Nineteenth of *Ed. I.* by the King's Command, the Nobility, Prelates, Knights, and many others of both Kingdoms, met at that place; (*Congregatis apud Norham ad Regis Mandatum utriusque Regni Nobilibus, & Prelatis, Militibus, & per pluribus aliis in Multitudine Copiosa*) where *Roger Brabancon*, the King's Justiciary, in the presence of a Public Notary, and Witnesses purposely called thither, (*in presentia mei Notarii publici & Testium vocatorum ad hoc specialiter & rogatorum*) in the King's Name told them the Reason of his coming, and of their being there called together, which was, *That he taking notice in what Confusion the Nation had been since the Death of Alexander their last King, and his Children, for the Affection he had for them, and all the Inhabitants thereof, whose Protection and Safeguard was well known to belong to him, for the doing right to all that claimed the Kingdom, and Preservation of the Peace: To shew them his Superiority, and Direct Dominion, out of divers Chronicles and Monuments preserved in several Monasteries, to use his Right; to do Justice to all, without Usurpation or Diminution of their Liberties, and to demand their Assent to, and Recognition of his Superiority and Direct Dominion.*

[3] *Ibm.*  
The Nobility  
of *Scotland* re-  
quire time to  
Consider of  
his Claim.

The Justiciary having thus spoken in the King's Name, and the Bishops, and other Ecclesiastick Prelates, Earls, Barons, Great Men, and other Nobles of the Communalty of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, there present, having understood his Meaning, (*Quibus [3] per prefatum Dominum Rogerum, nomine Regis Angliæ, peroratis, & a prefatis Episcopis, & aliis Prælatibus Ecclesiasticis, Comitibus, Baronibus, aliisque Nobilibus, de Communitate dicti Regni Scotia ibidem presentibus plenius intellectis*) they required time to Consult with such of their Orders as were absent, which the King granted until the next day only.

[4] *Ibm.*

He giveth them  
time, and di-  
rects them to  
produce Evi-  
dence against  
his Claim.

When, [4] it being the 11th of *May*, they met again in the Church of *Norham*, and then they earnestly press the King to give them longer time to Answer, with such as were absent, to his Demands concerning their Recognition of his Superiority and Direct Dominion over the Kingdom of *Scotland*, which he said was his Right, (*Quod dicebat esse suum jus.*) Upon Deliberation he gave them time until the Second of *June* next coming; and on that day precisely they were to Answer his Demand, and if they had any Evidence, Writings, or Antiquities, which might exclude him from the Right, and Exercise of his Superiority and Direct Dominion, or overthrow his Reasons and Arguments for it, they were then to exhibit, and shew them, protesting he was ready to allow them what the Law permitted, and to do what was just.

And



And that they might the better understand his Title, and make their Objections against it, the [5] Bishop of *Durham* was appointed to Declare it to the Nobility, and Prelates there present : *The Declaration he made, and Arguments he used were Historical, and taken from the* [6] *Manuscripts of Marianus Scotus, William of Malmesbury, Roger de Hoveden, Henry de Huntingdon, Ralph de Diceto, and the Chronicle of St. Albans, That is, Math. Paris ; That the Scots had been Conquered by several of our Saxon Kings ; That several of their Kings had submitted to them, sworn Fealty, done Homage, and received the Crown and Kingdom from them ; and that the Scots had also submitted and been Governed by such Kings, as the English Saxon Kings had given that Kingdom to, and placed over them ; That after the Conquest the very same things had been done, submitted to, and complied with, in the Reigns of William the First, Second ; Henry the First, Stephen, Henry the Second, Richard the First, King John, and Henry the Third.*

His Title.

[5] *Ibm.*

[6] *Ibm.*

Most of which Authorities Cited as Matter of Fact in this long Deduction, are to be found in the Historians above-mentioned now in Print, according to their several Years and Dates. Except that in the Year 1189. in the Month of *December*, 'tis only said in *Hoveden*, That *William* King of *Scots* came to *Canterbury*, and did Homage to *Richard* the First, for what he held of him in *England* ; and 'tis omitted in the same Deduction, [7] That he Released for the Consideration of 10000 Marks Sterling, all what his Father *Henry* the Second, by Bargains, Agreements, New Charters, and Imprisonment had Extorted from him, Reserving only the Homage due to him for the Lands he held in *England* : So as he was to be in the State and Condition with King *Richard*, as his Brother *Malcolm* King of *Scotland* had in been the time of his Progenitors. And also, That *Alexander* his Son, upon the Marriage of *Henry* the Third's Daughter, did his Homage to him as his Liege-Lord, for the Lands he held of him in *England* ; but being demanded to do the like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and acknowledge his Superiority according to the Practice of his Predecessors, Modestly [8] refused it, and was not earnestly urged to do it, lest it might disturb the Jollity of the Marriage Entertainment.

[7] *Hoveden.*  
f. 377. a. b.

[8] *Mat. Paris*  
f. 819. N. 50.

After the King's Title to the Dominion of *Scotland* had been Declared and Published, on the [9] Second of *June*, the Bishops, and other Ecclesiastick Prelates, together with the Earls, Barons, and other Nobles of the Community of the said Kingdom of *Scotland*, met right against *Norham* Castle, (where King *Edward* then was) in a Green Plain on the other side of the River *Tweed*, as also the Noble Men that claimed the Kingdom. [1] *Congregatis Ex opposito castris de Norham, ex alia parte fluminis de Tweeda in quadam area viridi, Episcopis Prelatisque aliis Ecclesiasticis Regni Scotie, una cum Comitibus, Baronibus, aliisque Nobilibus de Communitate dicti Regni. Necnon & Nobilibus Civibus Jus ad dictum Regnum vendicantibus, &c.* The Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells* was sent to Demand in the King's Name, What they had done since the last Meeting, [2] and whether they would Say, Exhibit, Propound, or shew any thing that could or ought to exclude

[9] *Rot. de Superioritate Regis Anglia, &c.*

[1] The Scots Nobility meet about King *Edward's* Title.

[2] *Ibm.*



They do not  
say or pro-  
duce any  
thing against  
it.

He resolves to  
proceed in  
Hearing and  
Deciding the  
Titles of the  
Competitors  
to the Crown.  
[3] *Ibm.*

All the Com-  
petitors ac-  
knowledge  
Edward I. to  
have the Su-  
periority and  
direct Domi-  
nion over the  
Kingdom of  
Scotland, and  
that they  
would receive  
Justice from  
him.

[4] *Ibm.*

clude the King of *England* from the Right and Exercise of the Superiority and direct Dominion of the Kingdom of *Scotland*; and that they would Produce and Exhibit it, if they believed it Expedient for them, *si sibi crederent Expedire*, protesting in the Name of the King of *England*, he would favourably hear them, and allow what was Just, or Report what they said to him, and his Council. That upon Deliberation they might do what Justice required. They tho' often required, answered Nothing, propounded or exhibited Nothing; wherefore the Bishop recapitulating what had been said and urged for the King's Title, and what had been done in these several Meetings in which they offered nothing against it, declared to them, the King would make use of his Right of Superiority and direct Dominion in *Scotland*, in Deciding the Controversie between the several Competitors for that Kingdom, which according to the Notary's Form and Method is thus tediously Expressed; [3] *Idcirco vobis omnibus & singulis tam Episcopis, Prelatisque aliis Ecclesiasticis, quam Comitibus, Baronibus, Nobilibus, & Bagnatibus aliis de Communitate dicti Regni Scotie hic Congregatis, Idem Dominus noster Rex Anglie, per nos Robertum Bathoniensem & Wellensem Episcopum insinuat & Denuntiat, Quod cum ex parte vestra per vos & vestrum aliquem, nihil sit propositum, exhibitum, vel ostensum, quod jus, Executionem, seu Exercitium juris sui, hujusmodi Superioritatis & Directi sui Domini predicti debeat aliquantulum impedire; Intentionis sue est Jure suo predicto uti, & in ipso negotio inter contendentes de Jure Successionis Regni Scotie procedere.*

Then beginning with *Robert de Brus* Lord of *Anandale*, and one of those that Claimed the Right of Succession to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, he ask'd him in the Presence of all the Bishops, Prelates, Earls, Barons, &c. Whether in Demanding the said Right, he would Demand, Answer, and Receive Justice, before the King of *England*, as Superior and Direct Lord of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, who presently, publicly, openly, and expressly, in the Presence of all and every one of them, and the Publick Notary, no body Contradicting or Gainsaying, answered, That he did acknowledge the King of *England*, Superior and Direct Lord of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and that he would from and before him, as his Superior and Direct Lord of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, Demand, Answer, and receive Justice. [4] *Idcirco ex parte dicti Domini Regis Anglie & de ipsius mandato speciali, incipiendo a vobis Domino Roberto de Brus, Domino Vallis Anandie, &c. interrogando querimus, hic in presentia istorum Prelatorum, Comitum, Baronum, & aliorum Nobilium utriusque Regni hic Existentium, an super Petitione Juris vobis Competentis ad dictum Regnum velitis coram ipso Rege Anglie utpote Superiori Domino vestro Regni Scotie, stare juri, & ab eo petere, Respondere, & Recipere Justicie Complementum. Qui statim, publice, palam, & Expresse, in presentia omnium & singulorum ibidem presentium, & mei Notarii infra scripti, respondens dixit, Quod Dominum Regem Anglie recognovit Superiorem & Directum Dominum dicti Regni Scotie, & concessit se velle &c. ab ipso, & coram ipso, utpote Superiori & Directo Domino suo Regni Scotie, Petere, Respondere, & Recipere Justicie Complementum.*



All the other Competitors there present, viz. [5] *Florence Earl of Holland, Lord John Hastings, Patrick of Dunbar Earl of March, William Vesey, William de Ros, Robert de Pinkney, and Nicolas de Soules,* had the same Question put to them, and made the same Answer.

[5] *Ibm.*  
The Competitors who they were.

A John Baliol was absent, and upon his [6] *Proctor's* Request, the Meeting was continued untill the next Day, the Third of June, to be in the Parish Church of Norham; When he gave the same Answer to the same Questions.

[6] *Ibm.*  
*John Baliol* submitted as the other Competitors.

B And they did not only make this Recognition publicly in this great Assembly; but they made the following Letters-Patents thereof to the King. [7] *To all those that shall see or hear this Letter.* Florence Earl of Holland, Robert de Brus Lord of Anandale, John Baliol Lord of Galloway, John Hastings Lord of Abergavenny, John Comyn Lord of Badenaugh, Patrick de Dunbar Earl of March, John Vesey for his Father, Nicholas de Soules, and William de Ros, Greeting in the Lord: Whereas we intend to pursue our Right to the Kingdom of Scotland, and to Declare, Challenge, and A-  
C verr the same, before him that hath most Power, Jurisdiction, and Reason to Try it; and the Noble Prince Edward, by the Grace of God King of England, having informed us by Good and sufficient Reasons, That to him belongs the Sovereign Seignurie of the Kingdom of Scotland, and the Cognizance of Hearing, Trying, and Determining our Right. We of our own Good Will, without all manner of Force, do Grant to Receive right from him as Sovereign Lord of the Land; and we Will also and Promise, That we will have and hold firm and stable his Act, and he shall Enjoy the Realm, to whom it shall be adjudged before him: In  
D Witness whereof we have set our Seals to this Writing, Made and Granted at Norham the Tuesday after the Ascension, in the Year of Grace, 1291.

[7] *Append.*  
N. 11.  
The Instrument by which the Competitors made their Submission.

E This done [8] The King and his Council treated with the Prelates, Noblemen, and Competitors for the Crown of Scotland, how this Business might be best proceeded in; and also the Reformation of the State of the Nation. It was agreed by the Unanimous Consent of the Noblemen and Prelates of both Nations, (*Nemine Contradicente*) That John Baliol and John Comyn should chuse Forty Persons, and Robert de Brus should chuse other Forty fit Persons, whose Names should be delivered to the King three Days after, viz. on the Fifth of June, to whom he was to add Twenty Four, or more or less, who should Hear and Discuss the Rights of all the Pretenders, to make a Faithful Report thereof to him, That he might give the Definitive Sentence.

[8] *Rot. de Superioritate Regis Anglie in Regno Scotia ut Supra.*  
The Rights of the Pretenders to the Crown of Scotland how to be tried.

F All this was done on the Second and Third of June; but because by the Letters-Patents of Recognition, or Instrument above, he had not sufficient Power to put in Execution his Sentence to whomsoever the Kingdom should be adjudged, unless he were in actual Possession thereof. [9] The Competitors came before him on the 4th of June, and very many of the Bishops, Earls, Barons, Knights, and Noblemen of both the Kingdoms, when he had Possession given him of the Kingdom and Castles of Scotland, by the Competitors, with the Consent of the Community of the same Kingdom,

[9] *Ibm.*



Kingdom, *Nemine Contradicente*, according to the following Instrument or Writing :

[1] *Ibm.*  
The King had the Possession of Scotland given him, in order to the Declaring who had most Right, and putting him in Possession.

To all those who shall see or hear this present Letter, [1] We Florence Earl of Holland, &c. as before, Greeting in GOD, Whereas we have Given and Granted with one assent of our own Good Will, without Force, to the Noble Lord Edward King of England, That he as Sovereign Lord of the Land of Scotland, should Judge, Try, and Determine the Claims and Demands, we intend to propound, and aver for our Right in the Kingdom of Scotland, and to Receive Right before him as Sovereign Lord of the Land, promising to have and hold his Act firm and stable ; and that he should Enjoy the Kingdom, to whom he should give it ; But for that the said King of England cannot make any manner of Cognisance or accomplish his Judgment, nor put his Judgment in Execution, nor the Execution take Effect without the Possession or Seisin of the same Land, or the Castles thereof, we Will, Grant, and Assent, That he as Sovereign Lord, to perform the Things aforesaid, shall have Seisin of all the Land and Castles in Scotland, until Right be done to the Demandants, upon Condition, That before he be put in Possession he shall give sufficient Security to the Demandants, to the Guardians and Community of the Kingdom of Scotland, to Restore it, and the Castles, with all the Royalty, Dignity, Seignories, Franchises, Customs, Rights, Laws, Usages, and Possessions, and all manner of Appurtenances in the same State and Condition they were when he received them, saving to the King of England the Homage of Him that shall be King : So as they may be Restored within two Months, after the Day the Right shall be Determined and Affirmed ; and that the Profits of the Nation which shall be Received in the mean time, may be kept in the Hands of the Chamberlain of Scotland that now is, and one to be joined with him by the King of England, so as the Charge of the Government, Castles, and Officers of the Realm might be deducted. In Witness whereof, we have set our Seals to this Writing, Made and Granted at Norham, on Wednesday after Ascension, in the Year of Grace, 1291.

[2] *Ibm.*  
The Names of the Examiners of the Titles of the Competitors delivered to the King.

[3] *Ibm.*  
Berwick the Place of Meeting for that Purpose.

On the Fifth of June, [2] the Names of the Eighty elected to Examine, Hear, and Report the Rights of the Competitors, were delivered to the King, on the Sixth they were ordered to appoint the Place and Day for their Examination, and Hearing the Petitions of the Demandants, (*Petitiones Petentium*) and Discussing their Right ; [3] Berwick upon Tweed was appointed for the Place, which the King accepted ; but not agreeing on the Time the King as Superior and Direct Lord of the Kingdom by the Unanimous Consent of the Prelates and Noblemen of both Kingdoms there present, appointed the Second of August a Peremptory Day for the Competitors to propound their Titles.

[4] *Ibm.*  
The Guardians of Scotland deliver their Guardianships to the King, &c.

On the 11th of June [4] the Bishops of St. Andrews and Glasco, John Comyn Lord of Badenagh, and James Seneschal or Stewart of Scotland, the then Guardians of the Kingdom, and all the Castellans, or Constables of Castles, delivered up their Guardianships and Baylivicks to the King as Superior Lord, *Suas Custodias, & Balivas Domino Regi, &c. reddiderunt* ; and when he had received them



them, he committed the Guardianship of the Kingdom to the same Persons, to Govern it under him, and in his Name; [5] and presently the Bishops and Noblemen of Scotland, by the King's Command, chose Alan Bishop of Cathnes their Chancellor, and presented him to the King, who allowed him, and adjoined Walter of Agmundesham, his Clerk, to him, as an Associate; and on the next day they were both Sworn.

He makes the same Persons Guardians.  
[5] *Ibm.*

A These things done, [6] the Guardians, and Pretenders to the Crown, and all and singular the Bishops, and other Ecclesiastick Prelates, Earls, Barons, Great Men, and the Communities of Cities and Burghs there present, that were bound to do and Swear Fealty to the King, had notice to do it on the Morrow to the King of England, as Superior and Direct Lord of Scotland, in the same place where they were then assembled, in the Green Plain beyond the River Tweede, in the Bounds of Scotland, [7] which was done and Sworn accordingly, and then the King caused his Peace to be proclaimed publicly. From this 13th of June to the 3d or 4th of August, all the Bishops, Earls, Barons, Noblemen, Free-Tenents, or Tenents in Military Service, Communities, and all others that were bound to do and Swear Fealty to the King of Scotland, (*Qui fidelitatem Domino Regi Scotie facere tenebantur*) were (to save Expences and Labour) Sworn by Commissioners in all parts of the Kingdom, and a very great number of their Names Recorded in this Roll; and in every place, when they had Sworn, the King's Peace or Pardon was proclaimed. The Form for taking the Oaths and Fealties of Absents, was made by the Agreement and Express Consent of all the Bishops, Earls, Barons, and other Noblemen of Scotland there present.

[6] *Ibm.*  
Fealty Sworn by the Guardians, and Pretenders to the Crown.

[7] *Ibm.*

And whole Kingdom of Scotland.

D While the King was thus employed in Deciding this Controversy, his Mother Queen [8] Elienor died about Midsummer, and he returned into England to see her Interred, and the Funeral solemnized with all due Honour; When that was over, he returned toward Scotland.

[8] *Walsingh.* f. 57 n. 40.  
Queen Elienor, Queen Edward's Mother, dies.

E And was at Berwick [9] on the 3d of August, which day being continued with the day preceding, according to his Assignment, the Competitors appeared before him and his Council, in the Assembly of the Prelates and Noblemen of both Nations, and with them the Twenty four English Auditors and Examiners of their Titles chosen by the King, and the Fourscore chosen by Robert de Brus, and John Baliol, and such others as would Consent to the Election made by them, to Discuss their particular Rights, and make Report thereof to the King.

[9] *Rot. Supplicat. Regis Anglie, &c.* ut *supra*.

The Competitors appear before the King.

F There appeared no less then Twelve Demandants that put in their Pleas for the Crown of Scotland, all entred in this Roll, and Petitioned to have the Kingdom delivered to them; besides, the King of Norway, who by his Proctors and Messengers, demanded it, as Heir to his Daughter Margaret: [1] The others were Florence Earl of Holland, Patrick de Dunbar Earl of March, William de Vesey, William de Ros, Robert de Pinkny, Nicholas de Soules, Patrick Galightly, Roger de Mundevill, John Comyn, John de Hastings, John de Balioli, and Robert de Brus.

[1] *Ibm.*  
The Twelve Competitors Names.

The



[2] *Ibm.*

The Competitors Petitions, with their Reasons, Reported to the King.

The Petitions, [2] with the Reasons of their Claims having been propounded and shewn to the Auditors, they Reported them to the King, before the Prelates and Noblemen of both Kingdoms, in the presence of all and every of the Demandants, and of the Publick Notary; The King assigned them by their own Consent, Monday next after the Feast of the Holy Trinity, which would be on the Second day of June, in the year 1292, for the further Proceeding in this Controversy.

A

[3] *Ibm.*

Robert de Brus, and John Baliel's Titles to be first Discussed.

The King [3] being that day at Berwick upon Tweede, and the Prelates and Noblemen of both Kingdoms there assembled, with the Auditors that had been Elected, and those appointed by the King to discuss and hear the Rights of the Parties claiming, after an Attentive Hearing came to the King and related what had been done; who with the Prelates and Noblemen of both Kingdoms strictly Examined them, and for that he found there would be great delay, and much time spent, to the peril and danger of the Kingdom, it was ordered by the Express Consent of all Pretenders, and by the Assent of Prelates and Noblemen aforesaid, That the Rights and Titles of Robert de Brus, and John Baliel, should be first Examined and Discussed, and that afterwards all others might prosecute their Claims, if they thought fit.

B

[4] *Ibm.*

The Eighty Auditors Sworn to Advise the King how to proceed in this Judgment.

The King, [4] tho he might have Judged the Case without them, as Superior Lord of Scotland, yet that he might do it with more Security and Prudence, he caused the Eighty Auditors to take an Oath, that they would advise him how, and by what Laws and Customs he was to proceed to Judgment in this Case. These Eighty pretended great Difficulties, and desired the Twenty four English the King had appointed, might be added to them. These Twenty four pretended as great, or greater Difficulties; and therefore I dare not undertake the Charge, or Consult upon the Business before them, without the Advice of the Prelates, Noble, Great, and Wise-men of England, that were absent; wherefore by the unanimous Assent of all present, the King assigned the Morrow of the Feast of the Translation of St. Edward the Confessor, (that is the 14th of October) for the further Proceeding in this Business, in his Parlement in the same place, in Parlamento suo loco eodem.

C

D

They desire the Advice of the Prelates and Noblemen of England.

[5] *Ibm.*

The Prelates and Noblemen of both Kingdoms meet at Berwick. The King asked their further Advice. How the Right of Succession was to be determined in Scotland.

At [5] that day the Prelates and Noblemen of both Kingdoms appeared at Berwick, as also the Auditors; the King asked them as he had done before, by what Laws and Customs, Judgment was to be given in the present Case; and if there were found no Laws or Customs to proceed by, how it was to be given; and whether otherwise concerning the Kingdom of Scotland, than concerning Earldoms, Baronies, and other Tenures. They all Answered with one Voice, (*Nemine Contradicente*) That Judgment was to be made by the Laws of the Kingdom, if any; If not, the King might and ought by Advice of his Prelates, Noble, and other Great Men of his Kingdom, make a new one. And that as to the Right of Succession in the Kingdom of Scotland, Judgment was to be given as concerning Earldoms, Baronies, and other indivisible or impartible Tenures.

E

F

The



A The King having Received these Answers, [6] he ordered the Auditors to Repair to the Church of the Friars Preachers in Berwick, and favourably to hear John de Baliol, and Robert de Brus, from day to day what they had to say or propound; Robert de Brus began first, shewing the Reasons and Arguments for his Claim, and then John Baliol set forth his, in a long Plea, and answered all what Robert de Brus had said. The Auditors Related what had been urged on both sides to the King; They both personally appeared before him, who asked them if they would speak any thing further; they answered, No; Whereupon the King openly and publickly before the Prelates, and Noblemen of both Kingdom, his whole Council, and the Auditors, asked what Advice they would give him; which of the two, according to what they had shewn, and set forth, had Right of Succession in the Kingdom of Scotland; and the force of all their Arguments on both parts, was drawn into this Question.

[6] *Ibni.*  
The Titles of Robert Brus and John Baliol Examined.

C An [7] *remotior in uno Gradu in successione, exiens de primogenita, debeat secundum leges, & consuetudines, utriusque Regni, excludere proximior in Gradu exeuntem de secundogenita? Vel proximior in Gradu exiens de secundogenita, debeat secundum leges & consuetudines ipsorum Regnorum excludere remotior in uno gradu exeuntem de primogenita? Ad que unanimiter Responderunt, nullo Reclamante vel contradicente, Quod Remotior uno Gradu linealiter descendens de primogenita, secundum leges & consuetudines utriusque regni præferendus est proximiori in Gradu exeunti de secundogenita, in qualibet hereditaria successione.* That is, Whether the more remote by one Degree in Succession, coming from the Eldest Sister, ought, according to the Laws and Customs of both Kingdoms, to Exclude the nearer by a Degree coming from the Second Sister? Or, Whether the nearer by a Degree coming from the Second Sister, ought by the Laws and Customs of those Kingdoms, to Exclude the more remote by a Degree, coming from the Eldest Sister? To which they unanimously answered without a Negative, The more remote by one Degree lineally descending from the Eldest Sister, according to the Laws and Customs of both Kingdoms, is to be preferred to the nearer by one Degree coming from the Second Sister, in every Hereditary Succession.

[7] *Ibni.*  
The main Question between them.

E That the Reader may more clearly understand this Question and Answer, it will be necessary to leave the Record a while, and set forth the Pedigree of both these Noble Persons. Henry Prince of Scotland, Son to David I. who died before his Father, left Three Sons; William called the Lyon, Malcolm called the Maiden, (because never Married) and David Earl of Huntington.

The Pedigrees of Robert Brus and John Baliol.

F William the Lyon had Alexander the Second, his only Son and Child; and he had Alexander the Third, his only Son and Child, who Married Margaret, Daughter to Henry the Third, King of England, and Sister to Edward the First; by her he had Two Sons, Alexander and David, who died without Issue, and one Daughter named Margaret, Married to Eric King of Norway, by whom



whom she had *one only Daughter* named also *Margaret*, and called the *Maid of Norway*, and was *Queen of Scotland*; who dying without Issue, (as was said before) the whole Line of *William the Lyon* failed, and the *Crown* reverted to *David Earl of Huntington*, Heir to *Margaret*.

*David Earl of Huntington* had Three Sons, *Henry* and *Robert*, who both died young, and *John*, Surnamed *Scot*, Earl of *Chester*, who died without Issue; and three Daughters, *Margaret* the Eldest Married to *Alan Lord of Galloway*, by him she had one only Daughter; *Mergobilla*, Married to *John Baliol*, by whom she had *John Baliol*, one of the Competitors for the Crown, in this Record so often mentioned.

His Second Daughter was *Isabel*, Married to *Robert Bruce*, by whom she had *Robert* her Son, the other of the Two Competitors here also mentioned.

And *Adama*, a Third Daughter, Married to *Henry Hastings*, from whence the *Earls of Huntington*.

By this Pedegree it appears, That *Robert Bruce*, Son to *Isabel* the Second Sister, was a Degree nearer to his Mother, and so in a Collateral Line to the Crown, than *John Baliol*, who was Grandchild to *Margaret* the first begotten or Eldest Daughter, in a Direct or Right Line to the Crown; Which gives the meaning of the Question and Answer; The Ground of which was a Controverted Point amongst the Fendists, Whether the next in Blood, tho of a Collateral Line (especially if a Male) should not succeed, before one more remote in the Right Line, some holding one way, some the other.

The meaning of the foregoing main Question.

[8] Rot. de superioritate Regis anglie, &c. ut supra.

The Titles of *John de Baliol* and *Robert de Brus* Re-examined.

*Robert de Brus* Excluded.

*John Baliol's* Sentence deferred.

[9] Ibid. *John Hastings* pretended the Kingdom of Scotland to be Partible, and claimed a Third Part.

Upon the Answer above-mentioned, [8] as 'tis in the Record, the King caused the Matter to be exactly Re-examined before the Prelates and Noblemen of both Kingdoms, and Assigned to *Robert de Brus* and *John de Baliol* the 6th day of November, to hear their Sentence; Which was pronounced by the King Judicially, by the Advice of the Noblemen and Prelates of both Kingdoms, the Auditors aforesaid, and others of the Council. That *Robert* by his Petition should receive nothing concerning the Kingdom of Scotland; *Quod predictus Robertus per Petitionem predictam nihil capiat de Regno Scotie*. And as to *John Baliol*, there could nothing be done upon his Petition until the other Competitors were heard. When the King commanded *John Baliol*, the other Demandants and the Auditors, to go to the same place for the dispatch of their Petitions. Amongst whom *Robert de Brus* personally appeared, and protested he would prosecute his Claim to the Kingdom of Scotland, or a Third Part of it, after another Form and Manner then he had done before.

Then also came [9] *John Hastings*, Son to *Henry Hastings*, and claimed his Third part of the Kingdom of Scotland as of a Partible Inheritance; because, as he said, the Right of the Inheritance descended to *Margaret*, *Isabel*, and *Adama*, Daughters of *David Earl*

A

B

C

D

E

F



A Earl of Huntington, as to one Heir, and from them it ought to descend to John Baliol, Robert de Brus, and John Hastings, as Heirs, to the said Margaret, Isabel, and Adam; and gave this Reason, because all the Lands, Tenements, Fees, Liberties, Demeasns, and Honours that were holden of the Crown of England in Capite, were Partible. Then that the Homage and Service due from the King of Scotland to the King and Crown of England, shew it to be under the Common Law, and so Partible.

His Reasons why it was a Partible Inheritance.

Robert Brus [1] his Arguments and Reasons were the same; And he said further, he claimed to hold his Third Part in Capite, of his Lord the King of England, Superior Lord of Scotland, by Homage; and Requests of his said Lord, he may receive Justice according to the Common Law of England.

[1] Ibid.  
Robert Bruce made the same Claim, and used the same Reasons.

B And altho their [2] Arguments and Reasons had been sufficiently answered in the Defence of John Baliol before the Auditors, and related to the King, yet willing to deliberate with his Council, and the Auditors, upon these things, he Inquired of them, Whether the Kingdom of Scotland was Partible, who all answered it was not; Upon which Answer, the King appointed Monday next after the Feast of St. Martin as a peremptory day, for all the Competitors to hear their Judgments, in his Parlement at Berwick, intending in the mean time to Deliberate and Examine things with Knowing Men of Both Kingdoms, the Auditors, and others of his Council, that he might be fully informed what with Justice ought to be done.

[2] Ibid.  
The King's great Care before he gave Sentence.

C On the 7th [3] of November 1292, which was the Monday after the Feast aforesaid, the Nobles and Prelates of both Kingdoms, the Auditors, other great Men, and a great Multitude of the Populacy, in the Hall of the Castle of Berwick, the Publick Notary, who signed these Acts of Court, with other Witnesses, *Congregatis coram Edwardo Rege Angliæ, superiori & Domino Regni Scotiæ, in Aula Castri de Berewico super Twedam, utriusque Regni Nobilibus & Prælati, ac Auditoribus memoratis, aliis Magnatibus, & Popularibus in Multitudine copiosa, præsentibus ibidem me Notario infra-scripto, cum Testibus subscriptis, &c.* The Competitors claiming the Kingdom, having had notice and summons to be there, viz. D Eric King of Norway, Florence Earl of Holland, William de Vescy, Patric Earl of March, William de Ros, Robert de Pinkny, Nicholas de Soules, and Patrick Galightly, not having appeared, but withdrawing themselves, as not having prosecuted their Petitions, it was adjudged, and Judicially pronounced by the King, with the Consent of the Noblemen and Prelates of Both Kingdoms, That they should obtain nothing by their Petitions; *Consideratum est per idem Dominum Regem, & judicialiter pronunciatum, de consensu utriusque Regni Nobilium & Prælatorum quod per Petitiones suas nihil consequantur.* E F

[3] Ibid.  
A. D. 1292.  
20th of Edw.  
the First.

Judgment given against Eight of the Competitors.

And because [4] John Comyn, and Roger de Mundevile, did not prosecute their Petitions, they had the same Judgment.

[4] Ibid.  
And against Two others.



[5] *Ibm.*Robert de Brus  
his Second  
Petition cast  
out.

But as to the last [5] Petition of *Robert de Brus*, whereby he claimed the *Third* part of the Kingdom for his Share, as of a *Partible Inheritance*, because it appeared by his first Petition before the King, That he demanded the whole Kingdom of Scotland, he thereby acknowledged and granted, That the Kingdom was *Impartible*, and one intire Inheritance. Which Recognition and Concession he could not then deny; and for that it had been agreed and adjudged by the Prelates, Earls, Barons, Noble and Great Men, and the whole Council of both Kingdoms, That the Kingdom ought to be possessed by one Heir only, because of its own Nature it was impartible, as other Kingdoms, therefore it was *Adjudged* and *Judicially Declared* by the King, That he should gain nothing by what was said in his Petition. *Et quia per Prelatos, Comites, Barones, Proceres, & Magnates, totumque Consilium utriusque Regni concordatum est & consideratum, quod prædictum Regnum uni heredi debeat remanere, pro eo quod de sui natura est impartibile, sicut & alia Regna. Idcirco per eundem Dominum Regem consideratum est & judicialiter pronunciatum, quod dictus Robertus ex his que in dicta sua Petitione continentur, nihil consequatur omnino.*

A

B

[6] *Ibm.*  
*John Hastings*  
his Petition  
not allowed.

The same [6] Judgment had *John Hastings*, and for the same Reasons, That he should get nothing by his Petition, *Quod nihil capiat per Petitionem suam.*

C

[7] *Ibm.*  
The Reasons  
why the King-  
dom of Scot-  
land was ad-  
judged to  
*John Baliol*.

As to the Petition of [7] *John Baliol*, who demanded the whole Kingdom as his Right, the King caused it again to be Examined many days by the Council of both Kingdoms, and after a full Discussion, it was found, adjudged, and agreed, by all the Noblemen, Prelates, Auditors, and Wisemen, of both Nations, (*Comperit manifestè, & per omnes utriusque Regni Nobiles, Prelatos, Auditores, & Sapientes Consideratum & Concordatum est, &c.*) That the Kingdom of Scotland was impartible, and ought to remain to one Heir, and because the King was Judge of the Right of his Subjects, by the Laws and Customs of the Kingdoms, which was approved, agreed, and affirmed by all the Noblemen and Prelates of both Kingdoms, (*Quod ab omnibus Regni utriusque Nobilibus & Prelatis est approbatum, concordatum & dictum,*) And by the same Laws and Customs, in the Case before them, it was Agreed and Judicially Declared, That the more remote by Descent in the first Line, was to be preferred to a nearer in the second Line, in the succession of an impartible Inheritance. And also, That none of the Competitors denied him to be Heir of the first Line, and therefore was to be preferred before all others as next Heir to the Kingdom of Scotland by Hereditary Succession. And therefore the King of England, as Superior and Direct Lord of Scotland, Adjudged, (*consideravit*) That the said *John Baliol*, should Recover and have Seisin of that Kingdom, with all its Appurtenances according to the Form of his Petition, upon Condition, That he should rightly and justly Govern the People subject to him, that none might have occasion to Complain for want of Justice, nor the King as Superior Lord of that Kingdom, upon the Suit of the Parties, to interpose his Authority and Direction. The Right of the King of

D

E

F



of England and his Heirs always Reserved in such Cases, when he would make use of it.

A And accordingly [8] King Edward gave him his Writ of Seisin for the Kingdom of Scotland, directed to William and Robert Bishops of St. Andrews and Glasco, John Comyn, James Seneschal or Stewart of Scotland, and Brian Fitz Alan his Guardians of the Kingdom of Scotland, to deliver him seisin thereof, with its Pertinencies, saving the Right of him, and his Heirs, dated at Berwick the 19th of November, in the 20th year of his Reign, Anno Regni nostri vicesimo; Which was a mistake of the Clerk, it should have been the 21st, he beginning his Reign November the 16th.

B With this [9] there were also Writs of the same Date directed to the several Castellans, and Governors of Castles in Scotland, to give him possession of them.

C The next [1] day, being the 20th of November, A. D. 1292, and in the year of the Reign of King Edward, ending the 20th, and beginning the 21st, (Et Anno Regni Regis Anglie Edwardi vicesimo finiente, & vicesimo primo incipiente) at Norham, he swore fealty to him, as his Liege and Superior Lord of the Kingdom of Scotland. In Testimony whereof he made to King Edward his Letters Patents of the same Date. His Oath of Fealty, and these Letters Patents are to be found both in Latin and French in this Record.

D Afterwards he was put into [2] Corporal possession of the Kingdom at the Monastery of Scone near St. Johnstown or Perth, and placed in his Royal Seat according to the Custom of Scotland. Duncan Earl of Fife ought to have placed him in his Throne, but being under Age John St. John was deputed by King Edward, [3] in Nova Creatione Regis, to do it for him.

E On St. Stephens-Day, A. D. 1293, and the 21st of King Edward's Reign, [4] Anno a Nativitate Domini 1293, incipiente, Die Festi Stephani protomartyris, Anno Regni Regis Anglie vicesimo primo, ipso apud Novum Castrum super Tinam Existente, &c. He did Homage to him at Newcastle in this Form in French; [5] My Lord Edward, King of England, Superior Lord of the Kingdom of Scotland, I, John King of Scotland, become your Liege-man (or Vassal) for the whole Kingdom of Scotland, with its Pertinencies, and all what belongs to it; which Kingdom, I claim and hold, and ought of right to hold for me and my Heirs Kings of Scotland, Hereditarily of you and your Heirs Kings of England, and shall bear Faith to you and your Heirs Kings of England, of Life and Limb, and Tenant Honor, against all Men that may live and die; And of this Homage he made his Letters Patents of the same Date, Witnessed by Sixteen Bishops, Judges, and the greatest Men of England, and Twenty of the same Quality of Scotland, who at his Request put to their Seals.

[8] Ibm. & Appetit n. 13. King Edw. directs his Writ to the Guardians of Scotland, to give John Baliol possession of the Kingdom.

[9] Rot. Scotie, 20 & 21 Ed. I. M. 7. This is the same Roll de superioritat. &c. [1] Ibm. Rot. superioritat. &c. He Swears Fealty to K. Edward.

And was placed in his Throne at the Monastery of Scone.

[3] Rot. Scot. ut supra, M. 33. The same Roll.

[4] Rot. superioritat. &c. ut supra. The same Roll. A. D. 1293, 21 Ed. I. [5] Ibm. The Form of John Baliol's Homage.



[6] *Ibm.*

A Petition  
exhibited,  
that King  
Edw. would  
observe his  
Promises.

\* In the 18th  
of his Reign,  
in the Treaty  
of Marriage  
between his  
Son Edward,  
and the Maid  
of Norway  
Queen of  
Scotland.

[7] *Ibm.*  
The Petition  
answered.

[8] *Ibm.*  
The King's  
Protestation  
concerning  
the Petition  
and his Pro-  
mises.

Within four [6] days after Homage done in this manner to King Edward, on the last of December, upon a Complaint made to him by Roger Bartholomew, Burgess of Berwick, against some of his Auditors, or Judges, by him deputed in Scotland. He presently appointed his Justices there present Auditors of the Complaint. *Justiciarios ibidem presentes hujusmodi Querelæ constituit Auditores*, (whereof Roger Brabazon, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, was one) strictly commanding them they should do quick Justice according to the Laws and Customs of his Kingdom; before whom, and others of the King's Council, there was a Petition Exhibited on behalf of the King of Scotland, and by his Advice and Direction, by William Bishop of St. Andrews, John Earl of Boghan, Patrick de Graham, Thomas Randolph, and other Great Men of Scotland. That whereas the King of England, and Superior Lord of Scotland, had lately \* promised to the Noblemen and Prelates of that Kingdom, That he would observe the Laws and Customs thereof, and that Pleas of things done there might not be drawn out of it. They beseeched the King of England, and his Council there present, in the Name of the King of Scotland, That he would please to observe his Promise, and Command his Officers firmly to do the same.

Roger Brabazon [7] answered this Petition, *Quod dicta petitio videbatur frustratoria, &c.* That it seemed idle and not to the purpose, for that it was manifest, and ought to be so to all the Noblemen and Prelates of the Kingdom, That the King had performed all his Promises, and not acted contrary to any of them; and as to the Complaints concerning his Judges and Officers, lately deputed by him as Superior and Direct Lord of that Kingdom, who then did Represent his Person, the Cognisance of Complaints concerning them belonged only to him, and no other, and he had especially reserved it to himself; and also, that because in Judgments of the very Superior Lord, or of those that Represented his Person, no Subjects could pretend to it; and further said, That if the King of England had made any Temporary Promises when there was no King in Scotland, he had performed them, and that by such Promises he would not now be restrained or bound.

And the King of England made Protestation [8] before all the Noblemen and Prelates of both Kingdoms, then present, That notwithstanding his Temporary Promises and Concessions, he did not take himself to be bound, his Protestations otherwise publicly made, remaining in force, and that he intended, and would admit, and hear all Complainants whatsoever, and all other Business touching the Kingdom of Scotland, and its Inhabitants, by reason of his Superiority and Direct Dominion which he had, and of right ought to have, in that Kingdom, as his Progenitors in their times had, if they Lawfully, and for Just Causes came before him; and upon those Complaints every where, and at all times, if he pleased, to do them Justice; and to Use and Exercise his Superiority, and Direct Dominion, and to call the King of Scotland himself, if it were necessary, and the Quality of the Cause required it, to appear before him in his Kingdom of England.

Upon



A Upon this [9] Resolution of King Edward, and the Answer of the Justices to the Petition, John King of Scotland acquitted him of all Promises, Bargains, Agreements, and Obligations he had made to the Guardians and others of the Kingdom, *Custodibus & Probis hominibus Regni*, while by reason of the Superiority of his Dominion, he held the Kingdom of Scotland in his hands, until he had done Justice to such as Demanded the Kingdom, and especially the Grant and Instrument made at Northampton, the 28th Day of August in the 18th Year of his Reign, in which the Promises and Grants set forth in the Petition were contained. With Confession that they had been all performed, when he had adjudged and fully Delivered the Kingdom to him, [1] which Release or Acquittance was Sealed with his own Seal, and confirmed with the Seals of the Bishops, Earls, Barons, and other Noblemen of his Kingdom; and Dated the Second of January 1293. in the Twenty First year of King Edward's Reign, and the First of King John of Scotland.

[9] Ibm. John King of Scotland, &c. acquaints K. Edward of all his Promises, &c.

And Confesseth they had been performed.

[1] Ibm.

C Within a short time after this Protestation, and Release, there happened a great Case in Scotland, which was brought by way of Appeal unto King Edward, by [2] Magdolph Earl of Fife, against John King of Scotland. To whom he Directed his Writ to appear [3] before him on the Morrow of Holy Trinity, where-ever he should be in England, to answer what Magdolph had to say against him: But then not appearing, the King directed another Writ to Summon him to appear before him Fifteen Days after Michaelmas, to answer as before. [4] The Earl of Fife's Complaint was, That when King Edward was last at Berwick, he commanded William Bishop of St. Andrews, and his Fellow Guardians of the Kingdom of Scotland, That they should do Right to Magdolph concerning his Lands and Tenements of Rerys and Crey, of which he had been Disseised by the said Bishop as Guardian of Fife, *Tunc Custodem Comitatus de Fife*. Of which according to the Precept he had recovered Seisin by the Judgment of the Guardians: When John King of Scotland disseised him again of the same Lands and Tenements; and that he might not further prosecute his Right, imprison'd him, and caused an unjust Judgment to be given against him, in Contempt of the King of England and Superior Lord of Scotland, and to his own great Damage.

[2] Ibm. The E. of Fife Appeals the K. of Scotland, before the K. of England.

[3] Ryley Placita Parl. f. 154, 155. He appears not, and a Second Writ is directed to him.

[4] Ibm. f. 157. The E. of Fife's Complaint.

E The King of Scots [5] appeared before the King and his Council in his Parliament after Michaelmas, and denied all Contempt of the Lord his King, and said he had not Day to Answer the said Magdolph; who Replied, He had that very Day appointed him to Answer, by the King's [6] Writ delivered to him by the Sheriff of Northumberland at Strivelin, on the morrow after St. Peter, in Bonds (that is the 2d of August) which sufficiently appeared by the Return of the Sheriff; and the King of Scots being asked, whether he had the Writ delivered to him by the Sheriff, confessed it, and was then urged to answer [7] when, He said he was King of Scotland, and that he dare not Answer to Magdolph's Complaint, or any thing that concerned his Kingdom, without the Advice of his Subjects, *sine Consilio* \* *proborum hominum Regni sui*; and Magdolph demanded Judgment against him as saying nothing. [8] Then he was told by the King he was his Liege-Man, and did

[5] Ibm. f. 158. The King of Scots appears.

[6] Ibm. fol. 154, 155. the Writ it self. The Particulars of the Pleadings on both sides.

[7] Ibm. f. 158.

\* These *Probi homines* could not be the Common or Ordinary People.

[8] Ibm. f. 159.



The K. of Scots dare not Answer without advice of his People.

[9] *Ibm.*

[1] *Ibm.* f. 159, 160. He Petitions K. Edward for leave to advise with them, and for longer time.

King Edward grants his Request.

[2] *Rot. de Superioritate Regis Anglia, &c. ut supra.* The K. at War with France and Wales. Parlement at St. Edmunds-Bury. A. D. 1295. 23 Ed. 1. The Publick Notary that Drew up this Record, always begins the Year at Christmas.

[3] *Ibm.*

Magdolph prosecutes his Plea in that Parlement. The King of Scots appears not, but sends his Excuse.

did unto him *Homage* and *Fealty* for the Kingdom of Scotland, and was ordered to come thither to answer, or say why he would not or ought not to answer before him; and he said as before, That he *Could* not, nor *Dare* answer to any thing that concerned his Kingdom, without consulting his People, *inconsultis probis hominibus Regni sui.* Upon this he was told he might require another Day, he answered, He would require none. It was then agreed, That the *Principal Plea* belonged to the King, and that he made no Defence against *Magdolph*; [9] and because he would not require Day, or shew Cause why he ought not to Answer, in *Elusion* of the King's *Jurisdiction* and *Superiority*, it was Judged a *Contempt* and *Disobedience* to him; and that *Three* of his *Principal Castles* of Scotland should be Seized into his Hands, and so remain till he had given Satisfaction for his *Contempt* and *Disobedience*. But before the *Pronunciation* of the Sentence, he came before the King and his Council, and made *Supplication* to the King with his own Mouth, *ore suo proprio*, and *Delivered* it unto him with his own hand in *Writing*, in [1] French, to this purpose. *Sire jeo suy vostre home du Royalme de Escoce, &c.* Sir, I am your Man of the Realm of Scotland, and pray you for what I am come hither, for which concerns the People of my Kingdom, as well as my self, That you would forbear me while I speak with them, that I may not be surprized for want of Advice, for that those that are with me, will not, nor ought to advise me without others of the Realm; and when I have advice from them, I will answer at your first Parlement after Easter, and will behave my self towards you as I ought to do. The King advising hereupon at the Instance of the Great Men of his Council, and with the Consent of *Magdolph* granted his Prayer, and gave him Day until his Parlement after Easter, on the Morrow of the Holy Trinity. This is what is to be found in *Ryley's Parliament Pleas*, about this Case; and now we return to the Record again.

Which [2] tells us, That on that Day the Parlement ceased, or was not holden, (*Parliamentum cessavit, sive non tenebatur*) for that the King was Engaged in War lately raised against him in divers Countreys, as with the King of France in Gascony, and with the Welsh in Wales. Yet the suit between the King of Scots and *Magdolph*, which had begun before the Justices of the King's Bench in Parlement, was Continued and Prorogued, (*Loquela, &c. Continuita fuit & Prorogata.*) To the Parlement next to be holden, which was afterwards Summoned to be at St. Edmunds-Bury, on the Feast of St. Martin in Winter, (that is November 11.) which was in the 23d Year of King Edward, and in the Year from the \*Nativity of the Lord, 1295.

The King of England [3] was at St. Edmunds-Bury that day, and there held his Parlement, where *Magdolph* strenuously prosecuted his Plea. But the King of Scots instead of appearing in Person, sent the Abbot of *Abirbrothok* with other Noblemen of that Kingdom, to King Edward, with Letters, to Excuse him that neither then or before he appeared in his Court in the Parliaments by passed, at the Day given, or appointed him. *Quod nec tunc, nec prius juxta quod Diem habuerat, ad Curiam suam, in præteritis Parliamentis, accesserat Excusavit*, pretending certain Causes of Excuse that he could not come in his own Person.

This



A This Abbot [4] and those that came with him, brought not only an Excuse, but a Quarrel, and Demanded of King Edward Satisfaction for many and great Injuries, Oppressions, and Grievances, sustained by the Scots from his Subjects. To whom after deliberation, this Answer was given, That the King of England for certain Causes was coming toward the North parts, and that the King of Scots should then have sufficient Recompence to his own Content, for all Injuries could be proved done to the Scots, by his Subjects of England; and then appointed him a Day in the same Parlement, by the Continuation and Prorogation of the Justices representing his Person, against Magdolph, the First Day of March next following at Newcastle upon Tyne. Then expecting his being there, enjoyn the Abbot, and those with him, to give Notice to their King he should then Personally appear, to Treat with the King of England about the Premises, and other Things touching the State and Tranquility of both Kingdoms, and their Inhabitants.

[4] Ibm.  
The Abbot and others that came to Excuse the K. of Scots, Demand Satisfaction for Injuries done them.  
The Answer to their Demands.

The King of Scots summoned to appear at a Parlement at Newcastle.

C While the King was intent upon this Business, [5] he had certain Information, That the King of Scots, with his Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Noblemen, Communities of Cities, and Towns, and others of the Chief Inhabitants of the Kingdom, had made a Confederacy and League with the King of France against him, Seated with both their Seals, and Counter-changed. [6] For Dispatch whereof, the King of Scots at the Instance of his Bishops, Earls, &c. sent four Procurators or Commissioners, William, Bishop of St. Andrews; Matthew, Bishop of Dunkeld, John de Soules, and Ingram de Umfreville, the Sum of the League was,

[5] Ibm.  
The King of Scots Confederates with the K. of France.

[6] Ibm.

D First, That, Edward King John's Son, should Marry the Daughter of Charles of Valois, Earl of Anjou, the King of France his Brother.

The Articles of the Confederacy.

Secondly, That the King of Scotland in the present War, should assist the King of France, against the King of England, and all Confederates as well by Sea as Land, against the Emperor of Germany, and others.

E Thirdly, That he should at his own Charges make War against the King of England, when he was Employed in, or Diverted by War in other Places.

Fourthly, That as well the Earls, [6] Barons, Prelates, and other Noblemen, as far as of right they might, and also the Communities of this Kingdom of Scotland, should as soon as they could, send him their Letters-Patents, under their Seals, of their Consent to these Things.

[6] Ibm.

F Fifthly, That if the King of England Invaded Scotland, the King of France was to make War upon him in other Parts, to divert him, or if required, to send Forces into Scotland at his own Charges until they came there.

Sixthly, That if the King of England went out of his Kingdom, or sent many Forces abroad, the Commissioners promised, that especially in this Case, the King of Scotland should enter England with his



whole Power, as far as he could, making War in the Field, besieging Towns, wasting the Countries, and by all possible ways Destroying England.

Seventhly, That they should not make Peace on either side, without the Consent of the other.

The League it self, and the Procuratory-Letters are to be found in this Record, and in *Hen. de Knighton Col. 2473.*

[7] *Ibm.*  
King Edward  
goes to New-  
castle.

Toward the [7] time appointed, the King of England prepared for his Journey to Newcastle, and sent before him the Abbots of Newminster and Wellebeck to the King of Scots, to give him notice of the Adjournment, and time of his coming, by whom he also Demanded certain Castles in the Marches to be Delivered to him, for his own and Subjects security, from the present Dangers, which when past, he should Receive again; and that he might so Receive them, without Difficulty, he sent by the Abbots his Obligatory-Letters for the Performance of his Promise.

[8] *Ibm.*  
The King of  
Scots came not.

On the First of [8] March 1296, and the 24th of his Reign, the King was at Newcastle and staid there many Days, Expecting the King of Scots, he came not; the King of England moved nearer Scotland, to Banburgh and War, where he also Summoned and Expected him for some time, yet he neither came, nor sent to Excuse himself; but Returned the Homage and Fealty for himself, and all others of the Kingdom, to King Edward, and Defied him, by the Following Instrument or Writing.

After a second  
Summons he  
Defies him.

[9] *Ibm. Hen.*  
*de Knighton*  
*Col. 2477.*  
The Instru-  
ment by  
which he re-  
turned King  
Edward his  
Homage, and  
Defied him.

TO the [9] Magnificent Prince Edward by the Grace of GOD, King of England, John by the same Grace, King of Scotland; Whereas you and others of your Kingdom, you not being Ignorant, or having cause of Ignorance, by your violent Power, have Notoriously and Frequently done grievous and intolerable Injuries, Contempts, Grievances, and strange Damages against us, the Liberties of our Kingdom, and against God and Justice, Citing us at your pleasure upon every slight Suggestion out of our Kingdom, unduly Vexing us, seising our Castles, Lands, and Possessions in your Kingdom unjustly, and for no fault of ours, taking the Goods of our Subjects as well by Sea as Land, and carrying them into your Kingdom; Killing our Merchants, and others of our Kingdom, carrying away our Subjects and Imprisoning them: For the Reformation of which things we sent our Messengers to you, which remain not only unredressed, but there is every Day an addition of worse things to them; For now you are come with a great Army upon the Borders, for the Disinheriting us, and the Inhabitants of our Kingdom, and proceeding have inhumanely committed Slaughter, Burnings, and violent Invasions as well by Sea as Land. We not being able to sustain the said Injuries, Grievances, and Damages any longer, nor to remain in your Fealty or Homage, extorted by your violent Oppression, we Restore them to you for our Self, and all the Inhabitants of our Kingdom as well for the Lands we hold of you in your Kingdom, as for your pretended Government over us.



[1] *Knighton* says this Letter was without Date; [2] *Walsingham* says it was sent about the beginning of *April*, when the Guardian, and Lecter of the Frior Minors of *Roxburgh*, brought it to the King. Before this *Restitution of Homage and Fealty*, the Scots sent [3] to *Rome*, to have Absolution from their Oaths and Homage; and upon false Suggestions made to Pope *Celestin*, they were absolved by his Bull. *Deinde Scoti miserunt ad Curiam Romanam, pro absolutione habenda de Juramento suo præstito Regi Angliæ, & de Homagio suo illi facto, & per falsam suggestionem factam Celestino Papæ, sunt absoluti per Bullam Papalem.*

A

This is a true *Abstract* of the [4] Roll or Record of the Superiority of the Kings of *England* over the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and of the Homages, and Fealties of the King and Kingdom of *Scotland* in the 19th, 20th, 21st, 22d, 23d, of *Edward the First*, A. D. 1291, 1292, 1293, 1294, 1295, containing 34 Membranes or Skins of Parchment drawn up by *Andrew*, sometimes Clerk to *William de Tang*, and Publick Notary by the Popes Authority, who was present with the Witnesses to every Act, (who were the best Men of both Kingdoms) heard, and saw the things done, and signed every Membrane, with his usual Mark or Sign; now remaining in the Tower of *London*, and Printed at large from the Roll, in Mr. *Pryn's* Second Volume of the History of King *John*, *Henry III.* and *Edward I.* Not known to any of our Historians, and therefore the Truth of these Transactions not understood, which makes a considerable part of the History of his Reign. And this Record doth convince *Buchanan* of Partiality and Falshood, of what he hath written in the latter end of his Seventh, and beginning or most part of his Eighth Book of the History of *Scotland*, and likewise *Arch-Bishop Spotswood*, and Sir *Richard Baker*, of great Errors and Mistakes in following him.

B

C

D

The Scots pursue their Designs of [5] freeing themselves from subjection to the *English*, and Command, That all the *English* that had Lands and Possessions in *Scotland*, should without delay quit the Nation, or come forth with all the Strength they had to Defend it against the *English*.

E

The King again [6] summoned the King of Scots to come to him, and with Force to assist him according to his Oath: The Scots answered unanimously, That neither they nor their King was any ways bound to him, or to obey his Commands, because they were absolved by Pope *Celestin* from their Oath, and from all Subjection he had extorted from them.

F

From *Restitution of Homage and Fealty*, and *Defiance*, they proceed to Arms, [7] enter *England*, Plunder, Burn, Wast, Kill, and Destroy where-ever they come.

To obviate these Insolencies, and Chastise them according to their Deserts, King *Edward* entered [8] *Scotland* on Wednesday in Easter-week, besieged and took *Berwick* Castle with a great Slaugh-

[1] *Ibm.*  
[1] *Ib. 2. f. 66.*  
n. 20.

[3] *Knighton*,  
ut supra, col.  
2477. n. 20.

[4] In fine Rotuli. Vide Rot. Scotia 19 Ed I. usque 24. and with Chamberlains of the Exchequer in the 3d Treasury at Westminster, in a long Painted Box, in a great Wooden Chest the Original.

[5] *Knighon*,  
col. 2478. n.  
10, 20.

The *English* commanded to quit *Scotland*.

[6] *Ib. col.*  
2478. n. 20.  
The King again summons the King of Scots.

He and they deny Subjection, pretending the Pope's Absolution.

[7] *Walsingh.*  
f. 66. n. 50.  
Mat. W. lib.  
f. 27. n. 40.

The Scots  
A. m. &c.

[8] *Knighon*,  
col. 2286.  
2281. A. D.  
1296.

King *Edward* enters *Scotland*.



Beats the  
Scots.

[9] *Ibm.*  
They Beg.  
and submit to  
Mercy.

[1] *Hist. Angl.*  
f. 67. n. 40, 50.

The Tenor  
and Form of  
the King of  
Scots Submis-  
sion.

A. D. 1296.

[2] *Rot. Scot.*  
24, &c. Ed. I.  
Petra 8.

He renoun-  
ceth all Con-  
federacies a-  
gainst King  
Edward, and  
rendered to  
him his King-  
dom, and all  
Homages and  
other Rights  
of that and  
his People,  
&c.

ter of the Scots; From thence he sent part of his Army to Reduce the Castle of *Dunbar* lately Revolted, which was done, by the Death and Destruction of a great many Scots; *Ten thousand*, says my Author, *Seven Barons, an Hundred Knights, and Thirty one Esquires*, were taken in the Castle; The Scots Army coming to Relieve it, Twenty two thousand of them were slain. From thence King *Edward* marched to *Edinburgh*, which Castle he took in Eight days; From thence he marched to *Sterlin*, where the *Earl of Ulster* came to him out of *Ireland* with a great Body of Men; and hither the King of Scots, and many of his great Men, sent to beg his Mercy; [9] King *Edward* appointed them to meet him at *Brechin* some few days after, where they submitted to his Mercy and Favour, without making any Terms, or Conditions whatever.

The King's [1] *Submission* runs thus, as 'tis Translated from *Walsingham's Latin Version* of the French Original.

**J**ohn, by the Grace of God, King of Scotland, to all that shall hear or see these present Letters, Greeting: Whereas we by Evil and False Counsel, and our Simplicity, have greatly offended and provoked our Lord *Edward*, by the Grace of God, King of England, &c. To wit, for that being in his Faith, and Homage, we have Allied our self to the King of France, who then was and is now his Enemy, propounding Marriage between our Son and the Daughter of his Brother *Charles*, and assisting him by War and otherways with all our Power. Furthermore by our Perverse Counsel aforesaid, we Desired our Lord the King of England, and put our self out of his Faith and Homage, and sent our People into England, to Burn, Spoil, Plunder, Murder, and commit other Mischiefs, fortifying the Kingdom of Scotland, that was his Fee, against him, putting Garrisons into Towns, Castles, and other Places. For which Transgressions our Lord the King of England, entred Scotland by force, Conquered and took it notwithstanding all we could do against him, as of right he might do, as Lord of the Fee, seeing after we had done Homage to him, we Rebelled against him. We therefore being yet free, and in our own Power, do render unto him the Land of Scotland, and the whole Nation with its Homages: In Witness whereof, we have caused to be made these our Letters-Patents, Dated at *Brechin* the 10th Day of July, in the Fourth Year of our Reign.

This Acknowledgment is also Recorded in the Roll of the Oaths of Homage and Fealty of the Scots a second time, made on several days, and in several places, [2] where he Renounceth all Confederacies, and unlawful Contracts, made in the Name of himself, his Son, and the Inhabitants of Scotland, against his due Homage and Fealty, he had done to the King of England for his own Kingdom. And further rendred to him his Kingdom, and all Homages, and all other his Rights, with their Pertinencies, *suamque Regiam Dignitatem, necnon omnes Terras & Possessiones, &c.* and his Royal Dignity, and also his Lands and Possessions, with all his Goods moveable and immoveable, *gratanti animo & spontanea voluntate, pure & absolute*, with a Gratefull Mind, and free Will, purely and absolutely, into the Hands of *Antony Bishop of Dunelm*,

A

B

C

D

E

F



A *resm*, receiving them in the place, and Name of the King, *Vice & nomine Regis Angliæ Recipientis*. These things were done at Brechin the same day, before a Publick Notary, whom he commanded to publish, and make an Instrument of them, in *perpetuam rei memoriam*. The Bishop of Duresm, John Comyn of Badenaugh the Elder, Bryan Fitz-Alan, Knights, and Alexander Kenedy, Clerk, Chancellor to the King of Scotland, being specially called as Witnesses.

B The Submission of James Stewart of Scotland is first Recorded in this [3] Roll, which was, That neither by force or fear, but on his own free Will, as he said, he came to the Faith and Will of the King of England, and renounced for him and his Heirs, all Confederacies, Contracts, and Agreements whatsoever made in his Name with the King of France, or his Adherents, against his Lord the King of England, if any such were freely, purely, and absolutely, *spontè, pure, & absolute*; and then took his Oath of Fealty in the Form following, and made thereof, and sealed his Letters Patents.

C *T*O all those that shall see or hear these Letters, [4] James Seneschal or Steward of Scotland, Greeting: For that we are come to the Faith and Will of the most Noble Prince, our Dear Lord Edward, by the Grace of God King of England, Lord of Ireland, and Duke of Aquitain: We promise for us and our Heirs upon the pain of Body and Estate, and whatsoever we can incur, That we will Assist and Serve him well and Loyally against all Persons that may live and dye, at all times when Required or Summoned by our Lord the King of England, or his Heirs; and we shall not know of any Damage done to them, but we will hinder it, to the utmost of our Power, and shall Discover it to them: And for the performance of this, we bind us and our Heirs and all our Goods, and further have Sworn it upon the Holy Gospels. In Witness whereof we have caused these Letters Patents to be made, and sealed with our Seal. Given at Roxburgh the 13th day of May, in the 24th year of the Reign of our Lord the King of England.

E All the Bishops, and other Ecclesiastick Prelates, Abbats, and Convents, Priors, Friars, Parsons, Vicars, Abbesses, Nuns, Earls, Barons, Knights, Citizens, Burgeses, Aldermen, Communalities of Cities, and Burghs, and other Commoners, or Inhabitants in Scotland, Recorded and Named in four [5] large Rolls in the Tower of London with this Title, *De Juramentis homagii & fidelitatis Edwardo Regi Angliæ nominatim prestitis, per unamquamque individuum personam Regni Scotiæ*; Of the Oaths of Homage and Fealty made to Edward King of England, by every individual Person of the Kingdom of Scotland by Name) made the same Submission, Renuntiation, and Oath, at several Places, and several Times, and made their Letters Patents of it, especially in the Parlement holden [6] at Berwick on the Octaves of the Assumption of the Virgin Mary, or 22d of August, in the year from the Nativity of our Lord 1296, by the Consent of the Noblemen and Prelates of both Kingdoms. These Rolls were not delivered unto the Kings Keeper of his Rolls, [7] until the 34th of his Reign; and they were

[3] Rot. Scot.  
24, 25, 26 Ed.  
I. *Peccia prima*.  
Append.  
n. 14.

The Submission and Renuntiation of James Stewart of Scotland.

[4] *Ibm*.  
The Form of it.

The same Submission and Renuntiation of the whole Kingdom of Scotland.

[5] Rot. Scot.  
24 Ed. I.  
A. D. 1294.  
24 Ed. I.

[6] *Ib*. *Peccia*,  
20, 21, &c.  
Append.  
n. 15.

[7] *Clans*. 34.  
Ed. I. *Dor*. 91



were drawn up by the same Notary, *Andrew* before-mentioned, who was present, heard, and saw what was done, as 'tis Recorded at the end of the Roll, *Pecia* 35; And the same Instrument of Homage and Fealty with the Chamberlains of the Exchequer in the 3d Treasury at *Westminster*, with other Things and Instruments in small Boxes in great Wooden Chests.

[9] *Walsingh.*  
f. 68. n. 10.  
& n. 30, 40.  
King Edward  
appoints a  
Governor of  
Scotland, and  
other Officers  
there.  
He sends  
John Baliol to  
the Tower, &c.

This done, [9] King Edward caused the Stone used by the Kings of Scotland as a Throne, to be brought to *Westminster*, appointed John Warrren Earl of Surrey and Sussex, Governor of Scotland, Hugh de Cressingham Treasurer, and William Ormesby Justiciary, sent King John Baliol to the Tower of London, where he was decently attended; and the Noblemen of Scotland, which he brought into England, were forbidden to pass the River Trent under forfeiture of their Heads.

[1] *Mat. West.*  
f. 419, 420,  
421, &c.  
*Walsingham*,  
f. 57. n. 50.  
&c.  
A. D. 1291,  
1292, 1293,  
1294, &c.  
Peace broken  
between  
France and  
England.

From Scotland we are to return to England and France, where we find the Peace between them, which had continued for some time, broken: The Quarrel at first began between the [1] English and French Seamen, who plundered one anothers Ships, and seized them where-ever they met at Sea, or in Harbour; from single Ships, they brought Fleet against Fleet, each side complained to their Kings, and Satisfaction was demanded on both sides; Several Endeavours were used to Compose these Differences, the Two Queens of France, Consort and Dowager, mediated a Peace, and were forward in it.

The Charge  
against King  
Edward.

[2] *Mat. West.*  
f. 419. n. 40.  
the Writ or  
Citation it  
self, which is  
very long.  
He is Cited to  
appear at  
*Paris*.  
And upon  
non-appear-  
ance adjudged  
to have for-  
feited his  
Lands in  
France.

The Pope sent Two Cardinals to the Two Kings to the same purpose, divers Means were contrived for Satisfaction on both parts, but none took effect; The King of England offered an Interview, or a Reference to Commissioners to end all Controversies, and adjust the Losses and Damages of the Subjects of both Nations, but neither was accepted; The King of France charged him, That his Subjects and Merchants were Robbed, spoiled of their Goods, and imprisoned by his Consent, and also with Contempt and Rebellion, in denying his Superiority and Dominion in Aquitain; For which he peremptorily [2] cited him to appear at Paris Twenty days after Christmas-Day, to answer what should be objected against him, to stand to the Law, and bear Judgment: King Edward neglected the Citation or Summons, and was by the Universal Sentence of the Peers adjudged to have forfeited all his Lands in France, and the Constable was sent with an Army to take possession of that Dukedom.

[3] *Ib.* f. 421.  
n. 20. A. D.  
1294. 22 Ed. I.  
\* *Ib.* n. 50.

Upon this seising of Gascony, King Edward [3] called a Parliament after Whitsunday next following, in which it was Resolved to Recover Aquitain or Gascony by Force and Arms; whereupon \* he sent the Arch-Bishop of Dublin, and the Bishop of Durham, with other Great Men, to the Emperor of Germany, (called then King of Almain) to make an Alliance with him against France, and for 100000 l. Sterling paid unto him, (a good Sum in those days) the King and Emperor became acquainted, who were scarce known to one another before; all Difficulties between them were overcome, and great Things were expected from this Alliance. The King intending to pass into France with an Army, was detained



tained at *Portsmouth* by \* contrary Winds from *Midsummer-day*, to the *Exaltation* of Holy Cross (*i. e.* the 14th of *September*.) On the Vigil of *St. Mathew* the Apostle, he called another [4] Parle- ment, (or happily this might be the same) wherein to support the War the *Clergy* granted a *Moyety* of their *Benefices* and *Goods*, at three Payments, whereof the first to be at the Feast of *All-Saints* next coming, the second Fifteen days after *Easter*, and the third Fifteen days after *Midsummer*, the *Writ* appointing the Col- lectors in the *Diocese* of *Canterbury* bears Date *Septemb. 30*, and is to be found amongst the *Records* of *Trinity-Term*, 22 *Ed. I. Rot.* 68, with the *King's Remembrancer* in the *Exchequer*.

On the [5] *Morrow* after *St. Martin*, or the 12th of *November* next following, the *Earls*, *Barons*, *Knights*, &c. gave a *Tenth* part of their *Goods* on this very first day of the Parle- ment, and the *Commissions* to the [6] *Taxors* and *Collectors* of it, are Dated the same day.

The *Citizens*, *Burgeses*, and *Tenents* of the *King's Demeasns* paid a sixth part of their *Goods*, but not granted in Parle- ment, there were *Commissioners* sent unto every *City*, *Burgh*, and *Town* of his *Demeasns*, [7] to *Require* and *Induce* them, to pay a certain Sum charged upon, or demanded of them toward the War, which at this time was a sixth part of their *Goods*, which was required first, and granted in *London*, as an *Example* to other *Places*; The *Commissions* for all *Counties* in *England* bear Date the 21st of *Novemb. 23d* of *Ed. I.*

The *King* wanting more *Money* to carry on the War against *France*, in his [7] *Writ* of *Summons*, directed to *Robert Win- chelsea* *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, to a Parle- ment to be holden on the *Sunday* next after *St. Martin*, or the 10th of *November*, told him, That he could not but sufficiently understand, since it was known all the *World* over, That the *King* of *France* had frau- dulently surpris'd *Gascony*, and not content therewith had provided a *Navy* and *Army* to invade *England*, and destroy the *Nation* and *Language*, if his *Power* were answerable to his De- testable Purpose; To prevent these *Dangers* and *Designed* Mis- chiefs this Parle- ment was called, but it sat not on that day, the *King* being busied at *Winchelsea* in *Equipping* his *Fleet* for the De- fence of the *Kingdom*, and so could not be there, and for this cause, as 'tis said in the [8] *Writ* it self, it was *Prorogued* be- fore meeting, unto the *Sunday* next before *St. Andrew*, which was in the 24th of his *Reign*, the 23d ending *November 16th*. In a short time the *Clergy* gave the *King* a *Tenth* of all their *Moveable* *Goods*, toward *Maintaining* the War; The *Earls*, *Barons*, and *Knights*, and others of the *Kingdom*, *Comites*, *Barones*, *Milites*, & omnes alii de Regno in subsidium Guerra nostra, gave an *Eleventh* part of their *Moveable* *Goods*, *Nobis* [9] *undecimam fecerunt*, &c. And the *Citizens*, *Burgeses*, and good Men of his *Demeasns* *Cities* and *Burghs*, granted him a *Seventh* part, &c. Et Civēs & Burgenses, & alii probi homines de Dominicis nostris Civitatibus & Burgis, septimam nobis concesserint, &c. The *Writ* for *Levying* and *Collecting* this *Seventh* and *Eleventh* is dated *Decemb. 4.* very few days after their meeting, in the 24th of his *Reign*. The

\* *Ibm. f. 422.*  
*n. 10.*

[4] *Ib. f. 422.*  
*n. 30.*

[5] *Clauſ. 22.*  
*Ed. I. M. 6.*  
*Do. f.*

A *Tenth* granted by the Laity the first day of the Parle- ment.

[6] *Pat. 22.*  
*Ed. I. M. 2.*  
*in cedula*  
The *Citizens*, &c. pay a *Sixth* part.

[7] *Inter Re- corda 23 Ed. I.*  
*n. vel. Rot.*  
73 *penes Re- mem. Regis*  
*in ſecur.*

[7] *Clauſ. 23.*  
*Ed. I. M. 3.*  
*Dors. Dated,*  
*Sept. 30. Sum- mons to Par- lement.*

The *King* of *France* pro- vides a *Fleet* and *Army* to *Invade Eng- land.*

[8] *Ib. M. 2.*  
*Dors. de parla- mento provo- gando.*

[9] *Pat. 24.*  
*Ed. I. M. 22.*  
*De undecima & septima le- vand. & Col- ligend.*



The Scots take advantage by this War with France.

The King of Scots by the Instigation of his People, taking advantage of this Rupture between *England* and *France*, obstructed the Vigorous Prosecution of the War against the *French*, and thinking to Disingage himself and them from the Power of King *Edward*, behaved himself, and suffered as hath been related before in its due place.

[1] *Walsingh.*  
f. 62, 63, &c.  
And also the  
*Welsh*.

The [1] *Welsh* these two or three last Years, having, as they thought, opportunities by King *Edward's* being Diverted by his Wars with *France* and *Scotland*, attempted several times under divers Leaders, to Free themselves from Subjection to the English, were at length reduced to perfect Obedience. \* *Mezery* the *French* Historian says, both these Nations put themselves in Arms against King *Edward*, by the Instigation and Procurement of the King of *France*.

\* Fol. 325.  
A. D. 1295.

[2] *Walsingh.*  
f. 68. N. 30, 40.

Immediately [2] after the King and whole Kingdom of *Scotland* upon their Defections, were reduced to obedience, and had the second Time done Homage, and sworn Fealty to King *Edward* (as we have heard before) he issued his Writs for a Parlement to be holden at *St. Edmunds-Bury* on the Morrow of *All-Souls*, or Third of *November*, Dated the 26th of *August*, in the 24th of his Reign, at *Berwick upon Tweed*. [3] In that directed to the Archbishop, he tells him, That he, the other Prelates, and Clergy, late assembled at *Westminster*, when they Granted the Tenth of their Rents and Benefices, for the Defence of the Kingdom, until the Feast of *St. Michael* then next coming; which Grant was accepted by him, in hopes of a more plentiful Aid for the future, from him, and others, which they promised should be sufficient for the same Cause, unless in the mean time there was a Peace or Truce made between him and the King of *France*: Therefore he enjoined him to be with his Prior, Archdeacon, and Procurators of the Clergy, at *Bury* at the time appointed, to order the Quantity and Manner of the Subsidy. The Writs to the other Bishops, the Abbots, &c. were like to this. Those to the Noblemen and Sheriffs, were only to Treat about the Dangers impending upon the whole Kingdom, and Remedies to prevent them.

Parlement at  
*St. Edmunds-  
Bury*.  
A. D. 1296.  
[3] Append.  
N. 16.

[4] *Walsingh.*  
U<sup>t</sup> supra, N. 40, 50.  
The Clergy  
deny the King  
a Subsidy.

In this Parlement the Citizens and Burgesses gave an Eighth Part of their Goods, the rest of the Laity granted a Twelfth Part, the Clergy Nothing, by reason of a Constitution made that Year and Published by Pope *Boniface*. [4] *A quo Parlamento a Civitatibus & Burgis concessa est Regi octava, a populo vero reliquo (i.e. a Comitibus, Baronibus, & Militibus) Duodecima pars bonorum, Clerus ob constitutionem Bonifacii Papæ hoc Anno editam, &c. Regi pro Guerra sua subsidium petenti Denegavit.* The King in hopes of a better Answer, deferred this Business, to be treated on in another Parliamtent to be holden at *London* on the morrow of *St. Hilary*, *January* the 14th.

\* *Mat. West.*  
fol. 428. N. 30.  
The King shuts  
up the Barns  
and Granaries  
of the Clergy.

In the mean time, \* the King caused to be shut up and secured all the Barns, Granaries, and Store-houses of the Clergy, and the Archbishop sent the Pope's Bull to be published in all Cathedrals,



drals, forbidding, under the Pain of Excommunication, any thing to be paid to Secular Princes, out of Ecclesiastick Revenues. The Bull or Constitution runs thus: Boniface, &c. For the Perpetual Memory of the Matter, &c. 'tis often delivered from Antiquity, that Lay-men are spiteful to Clergy-men, and the Experience of the present Times manifestly declares it, while not content with their own Bounds, they strive after what is forbidden, and let themselves loose to do Evil, not wisely attending, that for them to have any power over Clercs, or Ecclesiastick Persons, and their Goods is prohibited, yet they impose grievous Burthens upon Prelates, and Ecclesiastics, Regular, and Secular, they Tax them, and Exact and Extort from them a half Part, a Tenth, a Twentieth, or some other part of their Revenues and Goods, endeavouring many ways to bring them into Servitude and under their Power. And with Grief we relate, some Prelates and Ecclesiastics fearing where no fear is, seeking transitory Peace, fearing more to offend Temporal, than Eternal Majesty, they acquiesce in such Abuses, without Authority from the Apostolic See. We therefore desiring to obviate such Acts, with Advice of our Brethren, by Apostolic Authority do Ordain, That those Prelates, Ecclesiastics, Religious or Secular, of what State, Order, or Condition soever they be, who shall Pay, or grant to Pay, any Taxes, or Impositions, an Half, a Tenth, Twentieth, an Hundredth, or any other Part or Portion whatever, of the Revenues of their Churches or Goods, to Lay-men, under the Name of an Aid, Assistance, Lending, or Gift, or under any other Pretence or Colour whatsoever, without the Authority of the same See. Also those Emperors, Kings, Princes, Dukes, Earls, Barons, Great Men, Captains, Officers, and Governors, by what Names soever they are known, or any other of what State or Condition soever, that shall Impose, Exact, or Receive such things, or shall Arrest, Seize, or presume to take the Goods of Ecclesiastics, deposited and secured in Churches, or that shall Command them to be Arrested, Seized, or Taken; likewise all who Knowingly shall give any Advice, Assistance, or Favour in these Matters, for that very Thing, and in that Moment, shall incur the Sentence of Excommunication. The Communities or Universities, or Bodies-Politick, that shall be Guilty of these things, we put under Ecclesiastic Interdict, strictly commanding the Prelates, and Church-men, by Virtue of their Obedience, and under pain of being Deposed, that they acquiesce not in these things, without Express Licence of the said See. And that under Pretence of any manner of Obligation, Promise, or Concession now made, before this Constitution, Prohibition, or Precept shall come to their Knowledge, or afterwards they shall not Pay, or the foresaid Seculars Receive any thing any manner of way. And if they do Pay, or the others Receive, that very Moment in doing it they shall fall under the Sentence of Excommunication, nor shall they be absolved from Excommunication or Interdict, without special Licence, and Authority from the Apostolic See, unless at point of Death: For we intend not by Dissimulation to pass by such an horrid Abuse of the Secular Powers; Notwithstanding any Privileges under any Tenor, Form, or Conception of Words whatever, Granted to Emperors, Kings, and others abovesaid, which we will not shall any way help, him or them against the Premises: Therefore no Man may lawfully Dare to do any thing contrary to this Constitution, Prohibition, or Precept. Dated at St. Peter's in Rome the 6th of the Kalends of March, in the Second Year of our Pontificate; That is, February 24th 1296, in the 24th of Ed. I.

[5] Append.  
N. 17.

Pope Boniface  
his Bull, Pro-  
hibiting the  
Clergy to pay  
Taxes to Se-  
cular Princes.



[6] *Confederatio inter Regem & Comitum Flandrie. pat. 25 Ed. I. Part. 1 M. 18.*

The Confederacy between K. Ed. and the E. of Flanders.

The Articles.

Notwithstanding the Clergy denied the King an Aid according to this Papal Prohibition; yet he proceeded in his War, and made [6] a *Confederacy* with the *Earl of Flanders* against the *King of France*; Complaining, That he being a *Peer of France*, and in *Homage* to the High and Puissant *King Philip*, he oppressed and used him according to his own Will, contrary to Reason, Justice, and his own Desert; and therefore, because he was so Strong and Powerful, not acknowledging any Superior, by Advice of his Prelates, Earls, and Barons, he made *Alliances and Covenants*, with his Friends, to endure from that time forward for Ever, (*a touz jours perpetuelement*) and particularly with the *Earl of Flanders*.

First, That if the *King of France*, or his Heirs, should make War upon him or his Heirs, then the *King of England* should Aid and Assist him against the *King of France*, and all his Assistants, by his Allies beyond Sea, and by his own Subjects, Faithfully and according to his Power.

Secondly, That the *Earl of Flanders*, and his Heirs, Earls of Flanders, and their Allies, should Aid the *King of England*, his Heirs, and Allies, in the same manner, and that within two Months after notice from the *King of England*, in this present War, he was to make upon the *King of France*.

Thirdly, That neither the *King of England*, nor his Heirs, nor the *Earl of Flanders* and his Heirs, should make Peace, Truce, or Sufferance, (i.e. Cessation of Arms) with the *King of France* and his Heirs, without the Assent, Grant, and Consent of each other.

Fourthly, That the *Earl of Flanders* might better and more surely sustain and undergo so great an Affair, and so great a War, as he had Covenanted to do, against the *King of France*, his Allies, and Assistants. Et pur ceo que cuens de Flandres, peust mieuz & plus surement, sustenir & endurer si grant benfoign, & si grant fais de Guerre come il convendra contre le Roy de France & ses Alliez, & ses Aidantz. King Edward granted for him and his Heirs, to the *Earl of Flanders*, and his Heirs, every Year during the War, Sixty Thousand \*Livres of Black Turnois, or other Current Money at Two Payments, within the Earldom of Flanders, (Chescun an Durant le susdit Guerre seiffante Mile Livres de Turnois Noirs, &c.) at every Payment Thirty thousand Livres; the First to begin at Christmas, 1297. (an Noel qui ferra l'an de Nostre Seigneur Mil deux centz quatre vintz & Diseseptz) and the Second at the Nativity of St. John Baptist following. These Payments were to endure so long as the War should endure.

Fifthly, That these Alliances made between them might no ways be defeated, neither by the Command of, or Purchase from the Pope, or any other, nor for any thing that might be any ways Obtained or Granted without their joint Consent. Ne par Commandement, ne par purchaz D'Apostolle, ne d'autri, ne pur choise qui fait impetree, ne ottrogee, &c.) and if any thing was obtain'd it was agreed on both Parts to Rejeet, and not use it.

\* Four of these Livres made a Pound Sterling; so that this was the value of 15000 l. Sterling.

For



A For the Faithful Performance of this Agreement, King Edward solemnly Swore to the Earl of Flanders by his Proxies *Monsieur Hugh le Despenser*, and *Monsieur Walter Beauchamp*, Steward of his Household. And by that Oath he further Agreed and Covenanted with the Earl of Flanders, That his Son Edward when he was of Age should Grant, Agree to, and Confirm this Form of Alliance and Confederacy: Which was Dated at Ipswich, and Sealed with his Seal, on the Morrow of Epiphany, or the 7th of January, 1296. in the 25th of his Reign. *Et pur ce totes ces choses soient plus seurez tenuz, & Gardez mieuze, & plus fermement, nous en donn de sovenance, & de Tesmoignage avons cestes presentes Letters fait sealer de nostre Seal; Les queles jurent faites & Donees a Gippewiz lendemain de la Epephany l'an de Grace, Mil deux centz quatre vintz & jesse; & de nostre Regne vintisme quint.* The Record is long and Tautological, but this is the very Substance of it.

B Besides [7] the Annual Sum here granted, for the further Support of Guy Earl of Flanders, and Marquis of Namur in this great Undertaking against the King of France, in another Instrument in the same Roll and Membrane, and in Respect of the Alliance he had made with him, and the Covenants and Alliances mentioned in his Letters aforesaid, King Edward gave him Three hundred thousand Livres Turnois Noirs, (That is Seventy five thousand Pound Sterling) to be Received by his own People, without any Deduction, That is to say, 200000 Livres upon his Assent to the Covenants; 6000 Livres at Christmas following; 24000 at Candlemas following; and 70000 Livres at Easter, or Fifteen days after, or at the farthest at Whitsunday: This Sum is obscurely hinted in the preceding Confederacy, and this Grant is Dated at Ipswich the same Day and Year.

[7] Ibid

C Yet farther, as Part of this Alliance in another Record in the same Roll and Membrane, 'tis agreed, That Edward the King's Eldest Son, so soon as he was of Age should Marry Philippe Daughter of the Earl of Flanders, if the Match was not † hindered by the King of France, her Death, or any other occasion that might happen, *si le dit Marriage naloit este accomplir par lempeechement du Roy de France, ou par la mort de la dite Phelippe, ou par autre occasion, quele que Ele avenist;* but if so, then he was to Marry his other Daughter Isabel. And this was to be performed without any hindrance of King Edward, or any other; to which, he was not to consent, nor to any Absolution of the Pope or others, against these things, *Nene consentiones a la absolucion Encontee ces chose, ne autre Empeechment d'Apostolle, ne d'autrui.* Dated at Ipswich the same Day and Year.

F † Guy Earl of Flanders, with his Wife and Daughter Philippe, had been allured to Paris above a Year before, by seemingly very kind Letters from the King of France, where they were all made Prisoners; the Father and Mother were Released about Twelve Months after, but the Daughter was kept with Design to prevent this Match, which would have been very Disadvantageous to France; *Muzeray Hist. Fol. 325. A. D. 1294.*



\* *Walsingham*,  
F. 69. N. 30.  
The Clergy  
meet at *Lon-*  
*don*, and deny  
the King Aid  
a Second time.  
\* *Ibm.* F. 69.  
N. 30.

The Reasons  
of this Deni-  
al.

The Clergy \* met the Second time at *London*, according to the King's Appointment, on the morrow of *St. Hilary*, that is, the 14th of *January*, when they continued their Resolution, and Denied to give him an Aid or Subsidy for the Carrying on his War against *France*, according to the Pope's Inhibition \* procured by the Archbishop, with the Consent of the Clergy.

All our Historians report the Refusal of the Clergy, but none of them is so Express in giving the Reasons for it as *Knigh-ton*, Col. 2491. N. 10. 20. where he tells us, That after the Clergy had refused to give the King an Aid, *Robert Winchelsey* Archbishop of *Canterbury* spake thus to the Bishops, *Satis vobis constat Domini mei, nec latere potest, quod sub Omnipotenti Deo duos etiam Dominos habemus, Spiritualem & Temporalem; Spiritualem vero Dominum Papam, & Temporalem Dominum nostrum Regem, & quamvis utriq; obedientiam debeamus, Majorem tamen Spirituali, quam Temporali, &c.* My Lords, You know well, that under Almighty GOD we have two Lords, a Spiritual and Temporal Lord; the Spiritual the Pope, and Temporal our King; and altho' we owe Obedience to both, yet greater to the Spiritual than Temporal; but that we may please both, we will send special Messengers at our own Charge to our Spiritual Father the Pope, to have leave to Grant something, or at least Direction what we ought to do in this Case. *Ut Licentiam aliquid concedendi habere possimus, vel saltem Responsum habeamus ab ipso, quid facere Debeamus. Credimus, &c.* for we believe the King, as well as our Selves, doth Fear, and would avoid the Sentence of *Excommunication*.

[8] *Ibm.* f. 44.  
lin. 8.  
The King goes  
on Pilgrimage.  
[9] See a particular Instru-  
ment about  
this Matter in  
the Record  
above.

Procurators  
to swear to  
the Articles  
of Confederacy,  
on behalf  
of the King.

[1] *Ibm.* in  
another In-  
strument.

The King's  
Proctors  
sworn to the  
Covenants of  
Marriage, &c.

After this Denial, he went on Progress or Pilgrimage, to visit his Tutelar [8] Saint, or Protectress in Dangers or Adversity, the Lady of *Walsingham* in *Norfolk*, where his Procurators, [9] *Hugh le Dispenser*, and *Walter de Beauchamp* Steward of his Household, at his Command and in his Presence, (it not being the Usage for him any ways to Swear in his own Person) did Swear (*en la Chapelle de nostre Dame a Walsingham*) in the Chapel of the Lady of *Walsingham*, for him and his Heirs, Kings of *England*, and in his Name, according to the Power given them, (which he acknowledged) That they should Perform and Fulfill all Matters and Things contained in the Instrument of Alliance between him and the Earl of *Flanders*, *Nous qui de usage avoms, que nous en propre Personne ne jurromy, reconissons que le dit Monsieur Hue & Monsieur Wantier sesoms nous Procureurs, & leur donans poer e mandement, &c. par le testmoign de cestes presentes Lettres, &c.* by Witness of these present Letters, Dated at *Walsingham*, (*le jour de la Chandeleur*) on the *Candlemas-Day*, in the Year of Grace, 1296, and of our Reign the 25th.

*Anthony* [1] Bishop of *Duresm*, *Walter* Bishop of *Chester*, and *Hugh le Dispenser* (*pur ceo que en sa propre Personne le Roy nad mie use a jurer*) for that the King uses not to Swear in his proper Person, did in like manner, by the Power and Authority given them by the King, Swear, That he should Fulfill and Keep all the Articles of the Covenants of Marriage between his Son and the Earl of



of *Flanders* Daughters; This Instrument is also dated at the same place, on *Tuesday* after *Candlemas*, *Le Mardy apres le Chandeleur*.

A A few days after the *Confirmation* of this *Confederacy*, the King being much moved at the *Backwardness*, *Unkindness*, and *Stiffness*, of the *Clergy* to assist him in this War against *France*, gave Command, [2] That all the *Lay Fees* of the whole *Clergy*, as well *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, and *Religious*, as of other *Clerics* whatever, and of whatever *State* or *Condition* they were, together with their *Goods* and *Chattels* found upon the same, should be *seised* into his hands, until the *Sheriffs* should receive other Commands from him; Which *Writs* or *Warrants* to all the *Sheriffs* of *England* were dated at *Ely* in his return from *Walsingham*, *February* the 12th.

B This *Writ* was rigidly *Executed*, as appears by the *Protections* hereafter mentioned, and the *Report* of all *Historians*; and as the *Monk* of [3] *Westminster* says, the *Clergy* were also put out of the King's *Protection*, and so as the *Lawyers* were prohibited to plead for them before the *Barons* of the *Exchequer*, or any *Temporal Judge*; and that all in *Orders* were commanded freely to pay to the King the *Fifth* part of their *Revenue*, or quit their *Estates*; *Sponte offerre sibi suorum proventuum quintam partem, aut invito cedere omnibus Bonis suis*. The first that complied and obeyed this Command, were some *Shaveling Prelates* in *Court*, but in the *Cure* of *Souls* manifest *Pirates*, that they might bring in others to the like *Compliance*. The *Monk* thinks he *Latines* this very sharply and wittily, [4] *Huic mandato primitus obtemperaverunt quidam Tonforati in Curia Regali Prelati, in Cura vero animarum Pilati manifesti, ut inducerent pari modo animos ceterorum*.

D However it was, before this *Writ* issued, the *Clergy* especially of the *Province* of *York*, and more particularly of the *Dioceses* of *York* and *Carlisle*, having great *Apprehensions* of the King's *Anger*, and their own *Condition*, by early application, and granting the *Fifth* of their *Benefices* and *Goods*, for the *Defence* of themselves and their *Churches*, against the *Invasion* and Attempts of the *Enemies* of the *Kingdom*, obtained his *Protection* [5] for themselves, *Tenents*, *Lands*, *Rents*, *Goods*, and all their *Possessions* whatever, which were to be *protected*, *maintained*, and *defended*, from all *Injury*, *Trouble*, and *Damage*, until the *Feast* of *All-Saints* next. This *Writ* of *Protection* bears *Date* at *Walsingham*, *Febr.* 6. in the 25th of his *Reign*, and only by *Privy Seal*, but on the 18th of the same [6] month passed the *Great Seal*, by *Warrant* from the King.

F The same [7] *Protection* was given to the King's beloved *Clerk* *Iterius de Ingolifine*, *Arch-Deacon* of *Bath*, his *Tenents*, *Lands*, *Rents*, and *Possessions*, and for the same time, that is, unto the *Feast* of *All-Saints*. Dated at *Kings-Langley* in *Hertfordshire* the 18th of *February*; and the same was granted [8] to *John de Melingham*, *Lambert de Trikingham*, *John de Lacy*, *Radulph*

The King moved at the unkindness of the Clergy.

[2] Append. n. 18.

Ordered the Lay-fees, &c. of the Clergy to be seised.

[3] Fol. 429. n. 30.

The Clergy put out of Protection.

[4] *Ibm.*

The Clergy of the Province of York comply with the King, and receive his Protection.

[5] Append. n. 19.

[6] *Ibm.*

[7] Append. n. 20.

Many others submit, and receive the King's Protection.

[8] *Ibm.*



*dulph de Staunford, John de Drokenford, and an Hundred and twenty others, dated at the same time and place ; and to as many as would submit, and seek for them.*

Writs of Restitution granted to the Clergy. [9] Append. n. 21.

Besides these *Writs of Security and Protection*, to such whose Lands were not seised, nor Goods taken, he also granted *Writs of Restitution* to those whose Lands and Possessions had been seised, and their Goods taken. As for Example, take one [9] for many, which was granted to the Prior and Brethren of the Hospital of St. John's of Jerusalem in England. Dated at Ambresbury in Wiltshire the 25th of February, in the 25th of his Reign. Great Numbers of other *Writs of Protection and Restitution*, granted to Bishops, Parsons, Vicars, Abbats, Abesses, Priors, Friars, and other Ecclesiastick or Religious Persons, may be seen and perused in the Close Roll 25 Ed. I. M. 22. to M. 26.

They enter into Recognisances to save their Estates.

Many there were that through Negligence, or want of Satisfaction concerning the King's Proceedings, or to avoid Trouble, or some other Cause, had not complied, and taken out their Protections, these the King by his especial Favour (as he says in the Writ) admitted to enter into Recognisance, to pay the Fines or Composition set upon them, by one Knight, and the Sheriff of the County, his Commissioners, and so their Estates and Goods were free from seizure.

[1] Append. n. 22.

Others there were that *invented and spread* News amongst the People, by which *Discord* might happen between the King and his Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, to the Disturbance of the Peace, and Subversion of the Kingdom, who also publish *Admonitions*, and *Excommunications* against the King's Officers for seising and taking the Lands and Goods of those as refused to pay Taxes, and such as had *Complied and Received* the King's Protection. The Writs or Commissions themselves Translated from the French [1] Record, with the Proceedings thereupon, do here follow.

The Writs or Commissions for taking Recognisances of the Clergy.

Edward by the Grace of God, &c. To Monsieur Adam de Wells, and the Sheriff of Lincoln, Greeting : Whereas of late we have conceived Displeasure and Indignation against some Clerks of holy Church, not without their desert, who being within our Realm, and under our Protection, wholly refused to give an Aid for the Defence of the whole Realm, and the English Church ; We knowing they are not sufficiently mindful, or knowing of the Perils which may happen to the whole Realm and Church of England through their default, willing to do them special favour at this time, tho they deserve it not, have assigned you both, or one of you, (if both cannot meet together) to receive in our Name Recognisances of Prelates and others of holy Church, whatever they be, in the County aforesaid, according to their Estates, who will have our Protection, in the Form that is sent, and enjoined you by us ; and to certifie our Chancellor of the Names of those that have made such Recognisances, and to certifie also the Treasurer and Barons of the Exchequer of such Recognisances having been received ; so as nevertheless the Recognisances be made between this and Easter next, and not after. And hereby we Command you to do the things aforesaid,



said, according to the Form here-under directed. In Witness whereof we have caused to be made these our Letters Patents to be in force for the time aforesaid. Given at Clarendon the first day of March, in the 25th of our Reign.

The Second Writ or Commission.

A Edward, &c. To Monsieur Adam de Wells, and the Sheriff of Lincoln, Greeting; We perceiving that Inventers of News, by which Discord may arise between us and our Prelates, our Earls, or Barons, and our other Great Men, tending to the Disturbance of our Peace and Subversion of the Kingdom, making themselves ready with mortal Enmity, and force of Arms to assault the Realm, not willing to let such Malice pass without Restraint, We assign you to enquire and search by all ways you can, for Malefactors, and Disturbers of our Peace, and Dispersers of News, or such as do or would hinder the execution of our Commands, or give or publish Sentence of Excommunication, privately or openly against our Ministers, and Subjects, or Adherents, for Executing our Commands for the Profit of our Realm, or against Persons of holy Church, that have put themselves under our Protection for to save themselves, and their Churches; and we hereby Command you, That you take and imprison such, of what Estate or Condition soever they be, that you find guilty of any of these things, until you receive other Commands from us: And We Will, That if both cannot intend this Business, then one of you that shall be nearest the places, where any of these things may happen, may Execute the Matters aforesaid.

The second Writ or Warrant for the apprehension of Inventors, or Dispersers of News.

And Publishers of Excommunication against the King's Ministers and Subjects.

And 'tis to be remembred, that the Knights and Sheriffs under written, are assigned in the same Form above written, in the Counties under-written; That is to say,

Commissioners assigned for the Execution of the Writs or Warrants in all Counties.

D Aleyn Plokenet, and the Sheriff of Somerset, and Dorset, in those Counties.

Bueges de Knovill, and the Sheriff of Stafford, and Shropshire, in those Counties.

John Tregoz, and the Sheriff of Hereford, in that County.

Thomas de Berkeley, and the Sheriff of Gloucester, and Worcester-shire, in those Counties.

E John de Segrave, and the Sheriff of Warwick, and Leicestershires, in the same Counties.

Robert Fitz-Payn, and the Sheriff of Wiltshire, in that County.

Ralph Pipard, and the Sheriff of Bedford and Bucks, in those Counties.

John Lovel, and the Sheriff of Oxford and Berks, in those Counties.

F Thomas de Furnival, and the Sheriff of Derbyshire, in that County.

John le Bretun, and the Sheriff of Middlesex, in that County.

Robert de Fatehale, and the Sheriff of Norfolk, and Suffolk, in those Counties.

John Engayn, and the Sheriff of Northampton, and Rutland, in those Counties.

Henry



Henry Tregoz, and the Sheriff of Surrey, and Suffex, in those Counties.

Robert Fitz Roger, and the Sheriff of Essex, and Hertford, in those Counties.

Reynald de Argentem, and the Sheriff of Cambridge, and Huntingdon, in those Counties.

William de Leyburne, and the Sheriff of Kent, in that County.

Henry Teys, and the Sheriff of Southampton, in that County.

Gefrey de Camvill, and the Sheriffs of Cornwall, and Devonshire, in those Counties.

John de Lancaster, and the Sheriff of Lancaster, for that County.

Reynold de Grey, in the County of Chester, with the Four Cantreds.

John de Havering, in North-Wales.

William de Brehnse, and Walter de Pederton, in West-Wales.

*Instructions, and Proceedings upon the first Writ or Commission.*

Instructions  
for these  
Commissioners,  
and  
Sheriffs.

It is to be Remembred, That the Knights and Sheriffs shall do the things above-written, according to the Articles following.

It is ordained, That the Banerets and Sheriffs, shall take Pledges of the Lay People, such as shall be sufficient to answer the Sums they engage for, and that the Clergy that cannot find Lay Sureties, shall bring to the Sheriff Goods to the value of what they are to pay, to remain with him until they have paid it.

And the Thing demanded or taken in this Form shall be for themselves and their Churches, for the common Profit of the Realm, and for to have their Protections; That is to say, of every Prelate, or Parson of a Church, or Clerk Beneficed, the double of the last Aid paid to the King, for that the Business and Necessity is now much greater then at that time.

And the Banerets and Sheriffs shall cause to be Enrolled the Sums Recognised, and every Man's Name, with the Names of the Pledges or Sureties, and send the Roll to the Exchequer that the Money may be Levied.

A Commission  
on to the Coroners in  
every County  
to Swear  
them.

And the Banerets and Sheriffs shall give to every Clerk that shall have entred into Recognisance as aforesaid, a Certificate under their Seals to the Chancellor, to obtain the King's Protection; Then follows a Commission to the Coroners in every County to Swear the Commissioners.

The King to his Coroners in the County of Surrey, Greeting; We send you Two pair of our Letters Patents, with the Form inclosed in these Presents, to be delivered to Henry Tregoz, and our Sheriff of Surrey and Suffex, commanding you, That you deliver to them the said Letters with the Form, and that you receive an Oath of them, That they shall faithfully do and perform those things for which they were by those Letters assigned by us according to the said Form. The like Letters were directed to the Coroners of the Counties under-written, &c.

These



These Commissioners and Sheriffs acted according to their Commissions and Instructions, as appears by many of the Original Recognisances, and Certificates, with the Seals annexed to them, yet remaining amongst the Records in the Tower, upon which the Ecclesiasticks and Clerks had Protections granted them, and Writs for the Restitution of their Temporalities, Goods, and Chattels.

A The Certificates were in divers Forms: For Example,

They acted according to their Instructions.

To the Noble Peer, and our King's Discreet [2] Chancellor, or his Deputy Gilbert de Knovil, Sheriff of Devon, if it pleased him, Health or Greeting, and as much of Reverence and Honour as he could: Know, Sir, That the Abbat of St. Dogmael by his Proctors or Substitutes, Robert de la Pitt, and William de Culecumbe, came to me the first day of April, and granted to the King double the Aid he last paid, for the Defence of himself, his Churches, and the Common Profit of the Realm, and to have his Protection, and for this he found a Surety. In Witness whereof, I have sent my Letter Patent and Close.

[2] Append. n. 22.

The Forms of the Certificates of such as Fine to the King to have his Protection.

To Sir John de Langeton, the King's Chancellor, John de Segrave, and the Sheriff of Warwick, and Leicester, Greeting; Know we have Received Master Robert de Craft Parson of Bedeworth, and Eylmerthorp, into the King's Protection. In Witness whereof we have sent this Bill sealed with our Seals.

William de Plympton Parson of West Bedeford, before Sir Aleyn Plokenet, and the Sheriff of Somerset, made a Fine of Eight Shillings, which is the Double of his Tenth according to his Recognisance, for to have the King's Protection, and for the Defence of himself and Churches, and the Common Profit of the Realm. Pleges for the Fine Thomas de Kynhammer, and Adam Vincen, Lay-men. In Witness whereof the said Sir Aleyn hath set his Seal to this Bill.

To the Venerable and Discreet John de Langeton, the King's Chancellor, Adam de Welle, and R. le Vener, Sheriff of Lincoln, deputed to take the Recognisances of the Clergy of that County, Greeting; Know that William de Brumton made Fine with the King to have his Protection and his Lay-fee restored, and this we signifie to you.

To Sir John de Langeton, the King's Chancellor, Henry de Thistelden, Sheriff of Oxford, Greeting; Whereas William, Vicar of the Church of Wyteny, came before me at Oxford, and made Fine xvii s. iiiii d. which is the Double of the Tenth of his Vicarage, as he saith. I have given him this Bill or Certificate, sealed with my Seal, to obtain the King's Protection. Given at Oxford the 12th day of March, in the 25th year of the Reign of King Edward.

Where the Fines and Sums are not mentioned in the Certificates, they are noted in an Account of them, at the end of the Bundles of Certificates, in this manner.



Henry de Gudeford gives the King to have his Protection x 1.

Philip de Willugby entred into Recognisance to satisfie the King for his Lands and Tenements, and Chattels found upon them, and hath Protection for himself and Tenents.

Hugh Parson of Kingston, before Sir Aleyn Plokenet, and the Sheriff of Somerset, made Fine of viii s. which is the Double, &c. And so the Certificates of very great numbers of others are contained, and to be seen in the Bundles in the Tower.

A

What was done upon the second Commission appears by the Writs directed to the Sheriffs for Discharging and setting at Liberty such Rectors, Vicars, Priests and Clerks, as had been imprisoned for publishing of the Popes Bull and Sentence of Excommunication, and other Misdemeanors against the King and his Crown.

B

While the Execution of this first Commission was in Agitation, there was an Assembly of the Clergy to be in Mid-Lent at London, to which Assembly the King directs this Writ.

[3] Append.  
n. 23

The Clergy  
forbidden to  
ordain any  
thing in pre-  
judice to the  
King or his  
Affairs, in  
their Synod.

EDward, [3] by the Grace of God, King of England, &c. To the Honourable Fathers in God the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, and other Prelates, and to all those of the Clergy who at Mid-Lent next coming are to meet at London, Greeting; We forbid you all, and every one of you, upon as much as you can forfeit to us, That you, or none of you, do ordain, or cause to be ordained, or assent to any Ordinance in that Assembly, that may turn to the prejudice or grievance of us, or any of our Ministers, or those that are in our Peace or Allegiance, and in our Protection, or Adherents, or any of them. Given at Sturminster the 21st day of March, in the 25th of our Reign.

C

D

And Hugh le Despenser had a Commission of the same Date, to go in his own Person, and take such with him of the Council as he thought fit, to publish this Prohibition at the day of their meeting, Pat. 25. Ed. I. p. 1. M. 9.

[4] Fol. 430.  
lin. 4 A. D.  
1297.

The Result of  
that Synod.

The Result of this Synod we have in [4] Matthew of Westminster, who tells us, That the Archbishop, and certain other Bishops, his Suffragans, meeting at St. Paul's, London, on the 26th of March, to consult of the State of the Church; Two Lawyers, and Two Frier Preachers stood up, and in hopes of gaining Royal, and Temporal Favour, argued and endeavoured to prove, that the Clergy in time of War, notwithstanding the Pope's Prohibition, might Lawfully give and pay Taxes to the King. And furthermore, it being forbidden any one, under Pain of Imprisonment, to publish the Sentence of Excommunication against the King himself, or those which lately sought his Protection, they all departed; The Arch-Bishop having first charged their Consciences with this saying, *Salvet suam animam unusquisque*. Let every Man save his Soul.

E

F

What



What was done upon the second Commission appears by the Writs directed to the Sheriffs for Discharging and setting at Liberty, upon Security given, such Rectors, Vicars, Priests, and Clerks, as had been imprisoned for publishing of the Pope's Bull, and Sentence of Excommunication, and for other Misdemeanors against the King and his Crown.

What was done upon this second Commission.

A The King to the Sheriff [5] of Devon, Greeting; We Command thee, That thou settest at Liberty, first taking Security, that they give us Satisfaction when we demand it, those Chapellanes which thou didst lately take and imprison, for publishing a certain Sentence, and other Transgressions against us and our Crown, according to what we more fully enjoined thee by Word of Mouth. Witness the King at Plimpton the 11th day of April, in the 25th of his Reign.

[5] Append. n. 24.

B This Writ was followed by another, directed to the Sheriff of Cornwall, to the same purpose, but more particularly for the delivery of such as were named in the Writ.

The King to the Sheriff of Cornwall, Greeting; [6] We Command thee, That if our beloved in Christ William Bodrugan, Archdeacon of Cornwall, will undertake to have before thee Master Clement de Rupe, Master Ralph de Tredeneke, William Vicar of the Church of St. Sevara, (and Thirty three others) which were taken and detained in Prison at Launceston for publishing of a certain Papal Letter, (i. e. the Bull) as 'twas said, so as they may appear before us at our Pleasure to make Satisfaction for their Faults, if they have committed any of this Kind; Then that you cause without delay to be delivered from the Prison aforesaid those Rectors, Vicars, Priests, and Clerks, which upon that occasion, and no other, were detained in the same; Witness the King at Plympton the 17th of April, in the 25th of his Reign.

[6] Append. n. 25.

E King Edward's Engagements to the Earl of Flanders, and his other Confederates, required his going over Sea, and about Ten days after, at this place, he directs his Warrants [7] to the Barons and Goodmen of his Ports of Hastings, Faversham, Sandwich, Hethe, Winchelse, Romenhale, Dover, and Rye, commanding them to have the whole Service of their several Ports that was due to him, ready Armed and Equipped at Winchelse, on the Morrow of St. John the Baptist next coming, to go whither he should command them. And he Required them further, That besides their Service, they should fit out and arm all other Ships of Forty Tuns Burthen or above, to be ready at the same day and place, to go with their other Ships into his Service; but that he would not this should be made an Example for the future. Witness the King at Plympton the 27th of April, in the 25th of his Reign.

[7] Append. n. 26.

The King gives Command to his Fleet to be ready to pass beyond Sea.

All Ships of Forty Tuns Burthen commanded to be ready.

F On the same day, and at the same place, he directs his Warrants [8] to the Bayliffs and Good-men of Yarmouth, and to the Mayors and Bayliffs of all Ports in England, the Occasion being Extraordinary, to arm and set out all the Ships of 40 Tuns, and above, of their several Ports, so as they might be at Winchelsey on the Morrow of St. John Baptist, as before.

[8] Claus. 25. Ed. I. M. 19. Dors.



[9] *Ibm.* M.  
19, 20.

He sent also his Warrants and Orders of the same Date [9] to the Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and the Sheriffs of all Counties in which there were Sea-Ports, to repair to them, and take care the Ships should be Armed and Equipped, and ready at *Winchelsey* at the time he had Commanded.

[1] *Claus.* 25.  
*Ed. I. M.* 17.  
*Cedul.*

Summons to  
all that had  
20 l. per An-  
num to go  
with the  
King.

Soon after [1] the King wrote to all the *Sheriffs* of *England*, and *Reginald de Grey*, *Justiciary* of *Chester*, to give notice to all those in their several *Bailiwicks* or *Counties*, that had 20 l. per *Annum* or above, as well within *Liberties*, as without, whether they held of him *in Capite*, or not, to provide themselves with *Horse* and *Arms*, and to be ready to go with his own *Person*, for the *Defence* of themselves, and whole *Kingdom*, whensoever he should send for them. Witness the King at *Plympton* the 5th day of *May*, in the 25th of his Reign.

[2] *Append.*  
n. 27.

Of whomso-  
ever they held  
to pass with  
his Body be-  
yond Sea.

On the 15th of *May* for the *Dangers* and *Perils* that might happen to him, and his *Kingdom*, by the *Treachery* of his *Enemies*, reciting the former *Warrant*, and having appointed the time of his passage beyond Sea, he [2] commanded all the *Sheriffs* of *England*, and *Reginald de Grey*, to summon all that had 20 l. per *Annum*, of whomsoever they should hold the same, to be with him at *London*, provided with *Horse* and *Arms* as they ought to be, on *Sunday* next after the *Ostaves*, or Eight days after *St. John Baptist*, to pass with his *Body* beyond Sea, to the *Honour* of *God*, of himself, and their selves, for the *safety* and *common Profit* of the *Kingdom*. Witness the King at *Loders* (in *Dorsetshire*) the 15th of *May*, in the 25th of his Reign.

[3] *Ibm.*

He summons  
his whole Mi-  
litary Service  
to go with  
him.

At the same time he sent his [3] *Warrants* to the same Persons, to summon the *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, *Abbats*, *Priors*, and other *Ecclesiastick* Persons, and also *Widows*, and other *Women*, within their *Counties*, that held of him *in Capite* by *Military Service*, or *Serjanty*, or of *Wards* in his Hand, or *Tuition*, to be at the same time and place with their whole *Service* of *Horse* and *Arms*, to pass with his *Body*, &c. Witness as above.

[4] *Ibm.*

And writes  
to all the  
Earls, Barons,  
and Bishops,  
particularly  
to be ready.

Then also he wrote [4] to *Edmund Earl* of *Cornwall*, reciting his first *Writ*, &c. to be ready with *Horse* and *Arms*, at the same time and place, to pass with his *Body*, &c. Witness as above. In like manner he wrote to *Roger le Bygod Earl* of *Norff.* and *Marshall* of *England*; To *Humfry Bohun Earl* of *Hereford* and *Essex*, *Constable* of *England*; To *William Beauchamp Earl* of *Warwick*, *Richard Fitz-Alan Earl* of *Arundel*, *Robert de Ver Earl* of *Oxford*, *John de Warena Earl* of *Surry*, *Gilbert de Hunfranvil Earl* of *Anegos*, and 122 Barons, and great Men there named; And after the same manner he wrote to all the *Bishops* particularly.

[5] *Ibm.*  
n. 28.

The Sheriffs  
to certify all  
that had 20 l.  
per Annum in  
their Coun-  
ties.

On the 24th of this month the King wrote [5] again to all the *Sheriffs* of *England*, and *Reginald de Grey*, *Justiciary* of *Chester*, to Execute his former *Writ* of *Summons*, and to certify under their *Seals* the *Names* of all such as had 20 l. per *Annum* or above, of whomsoever they held it, in their *Bailiwicks* or *Counties*. Witness the



the King at *Portsmouth* the 24th of *May*, in the 25th of his Reign.

A While the King was thus preparing for his Voyage, [6] the Scots by the Instigation of *William Waleys* whom they chose their Leader, in this Month of *May*, (upon the King's Justiciary *William de Ormesby's* Banishing many of them that refused to do Homage, and Fealty to King *Edward*) armed themselves, and Killed all the *English* they met with, practising strange Cruelties upon them; which he having notice of, laying to Heart the Affliction of his Friends in *Flanders* for want of his Assistance, directed *William Waren* Earl of *Surrey* with the *Militia* beyond *Trent*, to march into *Scotland*, to suppress this Insurrection. The Earl raising an Army in the North Parts, sent his Nephew *Henry de Percy* with it into *Scotland*, who marching toward the Scots found the Heads of them, the Bishop of *Glasgow*, the Steward of *Scotland*, *Andrew de Mornia*, and *William Walleys*, inclineable to Peace; upon Condition of the Safety of their Lives and Limbs, Lands and Goods, so as all things might be Pardoned to that time. *Henry de Percy* admitted the Peace, upon promise of Hostages, and Articles in Writing, if it should please the King, who, made acquainted with the Terms, Consented to it, that his Voyage might not be hindered. When the Earl of *Surrey* went into *Scotland* to see the Performance of these things, the Scots shifted from time to time, delaying to deliver Hostages; whereupon the Bishop of *Glasgow*, and *William Douglas*, lest they might be thought Traitors, yielded themselves, the Bishop was secured in *Roxburgh Castle*, and *Douglas* in *Berwick*.

D In order to the King's Voyage into *Flanders*, as hath been noted before, the *Militia* was Summoned to meet at *London* on the Sunday after the Octaves of *St. John Baptist*, which are July the First. *Mat. Westminster* [7] says, They were summoned to meet on the Morrow of the Translation of *Thomas the Martyr*, (i.e. *Becket*) which is July the 8th, and may agree with the Record, (if the First of July that year fell on a Sunday) when the Earls of *Norfolk* and *Hereford*, the Marshal and Constable, being Required by the King, Refused to do their Duty, and Request him to appoint some other of his Household to that Service, and retired; and on the 25th of July [8] he wrote again to all his Ports, to send their Ships to *Winchelsey*, with what speed they could.

F The King, no doubt, in hopes of a perfect Reconciliation before he went over Sea, [9] wrote to the Sheriffs of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Middlesex*, *Sussex*, and *Essex*, upon the earnest Request and Mediation of the Prelates of that Province, and out of Special favour, to Restore to the Archbishop of *Canterbury* all his Lay-Fees, together with his Oxen, Carts, or Waggon, and all other his Goods and Chattels being upon the same, in the state they were then in: Witness the King at *Westminster*, July the 11th, in the 25th of his Reign.

And that he might extend his further favour to all the Clergy that had submitted, and were reconciled, he gave a general Protection

[6] *Walsingb.*  
t. 70. N. 10, 20,  
30, 40.

The Scots arm  
under *William*  
*Waleys* their  
Leader.

Kill the Eng-  
lish.

The Earl of  
*Surrey* sent to  
Suppress them  
He sent *Henry*  
*de Percy*.

Who accepts  
from them  
Terms of  
Peace.

[7] *Fol.* 430.  
N. 20, 30, 40.  
A. D. 1297.

The Earls of  
*Norfolk* and  
*Hereford*, Con-  
stable and  
Marshal, re-  
fuse to do  
their Duty  
and Service.

[8] *Claus.* 25.  
E. 1. M. 9. Dors

[9] *Append.*  
N. 16.  
The King re-  
stores to the  
Archbishop of  
*Canterbury* all  
his Lands and  
Goods.



[1] *Ibm.* N. 30.  
He grants a  
General Pro-  
tection to all  
the Clergy.

tection to them, that had not received it before, and [1] wrote to the *Sheriffs of London* and *others*, at the *Request* and *Prayer* of the *Archbishop of Canterbury*, and other *Bishops* and *Prelates* of his Kingdom, *Supplicating* him in *behalf* of the *Clergy*, That they should *Maintain*, *Protect*, and *Defend* all the *Clergy* in their *Bayliwicks*, their *Tenements*, *Lands*, *Goods*, *Rents*, and all their *Possessions*; not *permitting* them to receive any *Injury* or *Molestation* in their *Persons* or *otherwise*, though they had not his *Protection*. Witness the King at *St. Pauls, London*, 31st of *July*, in the 25th of his Reign.

A

The King of  
France Remon-  
strates against  
the Pope's  
Bull prohibi-  
ting Taxes.

The Clergy  
of France join  
with him.

The Pope ex-  
plains his Bull  
for the ease of  
the King, No-  
bility, &c.

It ought not to be omitted here, That notwithstanding the *Mortal Enmity* and *War* between the two *Kings of England* and *France*, yet King *Philip* the 4th Published a *sharp Remonstrance* against the *Pope's Bull*, which caused this *Trouble* and *Contention* between the *King* and *Clergy* in this *Nation*, in which he strenuously asserted the *Rights* of his *Crown*, and the *Liberties* of the *Gallican Church*, which were the very same with those of *England*. The *Archbishop of Rhemes* with the *Suffragans* and *Abbots* of his *Province*, seconded their King's *Remonstrance* with a *Supplication* to the *Pope*, to recal his *Bull*, lest it might break the *Peace* and *Unity* of the *Gallican Church* and *Kingdom*, as being very *Injurious* and *Grievous* to the *King*, and *Temporal Nobility*, and as bringing *Scandals*, nay perhaps *Ruine* and *Destruction* to the *Nation*; whereupon *Pope Boniface* the 8th, sent an *Explanatory Bull* to King *Philip*, by which he *Declared*, That his former *Bull* extended not to *voluntary Grants* and *Aids* made by the *Clergy*, nor to *Cases* of *Necessity*, when *Taxes* and *Contributions* were necessary for the *Defence* of the *Kingdom*, then they might be *Raised* without *consulting* the *Pope*. That the *King* and his *Successors* (provided they were *Twenty years* of *Age*) might be *Judges* of the *Necessity*, if not of that *Age*, then their *Council*; and Lastly, He *Declared*, that by this *Bull*, or *Constitution*, it was not intended to take away or diminish any *Rights*, *Liberties*, *Franchises*, or *Customs* of the *King*, *Kingdom*, *Dukes*, *Earls*, *Barons*, or *Temporal Nobility*, whereof they were in *Possession* before he *Emitted* that *Bull*. The *Remonstrance*, *Supplication*, and last *Bull*, Dated at *Orvieto* or the *Old City* *July 22*. in the *Third year* of his *Pontificate*, *A. D. 1297*. are to be found in *Peter Pithous Proofs* of the *Liberties* of the *Gallican Church*. Printed 1639. Chap. Sect. or Numb. 8, 9, 10. Fol. 1085. 1088, 1089.

B

C

D

E

[2] *Knigh-ton*,  
Col. 2492.  
N. 60.  
The K. forced  
upon Unwar-  
rantable cour-  
ses to raise  
Money.

By reason of the *Clergies Denial* to *Grant* the *King* a *Seasonable* and *Timely Aid* to carry on his *Wars*, he was forced upon *Unwarrantable Courses* against the *Laws* of the *Realm*, [2] by *Raising* the *Custom* upon *Wool* from a *Noble*, to *Forty Shillings* the *Sack*, and ordering the *Owners* should sell their *Wool* within a *Month*, at certain *Places* assigned, or they should be forfeited. For the *Viſtualling* his *Army* and *Ships*, he took *Wheat*, *Oates*, *Malt*, *Salt-Fish*, and *Flesh*, as *Pork*, *Beef*, *Mutton*, without paying for them, as well from *Lay-men*, as the *Clergy*; by which *Oppressions* the *People* were very much *Grieved* and *Disturbed*, being hereby *prepared* to follow the *Dictates* of any *Projectors* against the *King*.

F

It



It cannot be thought, but by this time the *Archbishop* and his Friends, the *Constable* and *Marshal* and their Friends understood one another, and carried on a joint Design. The Causes of the Controversie (but just now only mentioned) between the *King*, *Constable*, and *Marshal*, and the Reasons of their Refusing to do their Duty, their withdrawing from his Presence, and from Court, with their Denial to return when sent to, will best appear from the *King's Declaration* upon Record, sent to all the *Sheriffs* in England.

Whereas the *King* [3] always desiring the Peace, Quiet, and good Estate of his People and Kingdom, after his Voyage which he is now making, &c. All occasions by which the said Peace and Quiet may be Disturbed shall be wholly taken away. But because at this time there may be such Reports raised amongst the People, that may cause them to behave themselves otherwise toward their Sovereign Lord, then they ought especially since the *Earl of Hereford*, and *Earl Marshal* have lately withdrawn themselves from him, or for other Matters; hereupon, for that he would have the Affairs of his Realm Uniform and Quiet, he makes known, and would that all should know the Truth of what follows. Lately, when a great Part of the Men of Arms of England, some upon Request, others by Summons of the *King* came to London, the *King* willing to provide for their Discharge, the settling of their Expences, and that they might know what they were to do, sent to the said *Earls* as *Constable* and *Marshal* of England, to come to him for that purpose. The *Earl of Hereford* came, and *Monfieur John Segrave* to Excuse the *Earl Marshal*, that by reason of Sicknes he could not come, and therefore had sent him in his stead. Presently by their assent they were ordered to make Proclamation in the City of London, That all those that were come thither, either by Summons or Request, should on the Morrow appear before the *Constable* and *Marshal*, to know and be \* Enrolled, in what manner, and how many of them would serve the *King* in that Voyage beyond Sea. They told the *King* they would perform the Order as they had received it in Writing. But the same day toward Night the *Earls* sent the *King* a Message in Writing by *Sir John Esturnis Knight*, in this Form. For that, Dear Sir, You commanded the *Marshal* by the *Constable*, and by order in Writing, that he should cause it to be published in the City, That all such as were come by your Summons or Request, should be on the Morrow by One of the Clock before the *Constable* and *Marshal* at *St. Pauls*, and that they should Enroll so many Horse of one, and the other, and then to inform you of it. Your *Constable* and *Marshal* do pray you to Command some other of your Household to do it. And for that Sir, you know well, that tho' some are come upon Request, and not Summons, yet if they do this, they should enter upon their Office, and do Service: Wherefore they pray you to Command others. Upon receipt of this Message, and Counsel taken thereupon, the *King* thinking they might have done it unadvisedly, sent *Monfieur Geofrey de Genevill*, *Monfieur Thomas de Berkeley*, *Monfieur John Tregoz* *Constable* of the Tower, and *Guardian* of London, *Roger Brabazon*, and *Monfieur William de Bereford*, to advise them Better, and that they might so order things, as they might not turn to the Prejudice of the *King*, nor their own Estate; and if they would not be otherwise advised,

[3] Append N. 31.  
The *King's Declaration* of the Causes of the *Constable* and *Marshal's* refusing to do their Duty, and retiring from Court.

\* This was the proper Business of these two great Officers, and without this Ordering and Enrolment, the Men at Arms were not assigned the Quantity of their Service.



seed, then they should ask them if they would avow the Letter sent, and  
 the Words contained in it, which they did; and the King being ac-  
 quainted with it, advising with his Council, put in the Place of the  
 Earl of Hereford, Constable, Monsieur Thomas de Berkeley, and  
 in the Place of the Earl-Marshal, Monsieur Geofrey de Geneville,  
 as they desired; whereupon they withdrew themselves from the King and  
 Court; and soon after the Archbishop of Canterbury, and many other  
 Bishops, came to the King, beseeching him they might speak with the  
 Earls, which the King Granted; they sent to them to know where they might  
 come to speak with them, they let them know by Letters they should be  
 at Waltham the Friday on the Morrow of St. James. They went thi-  
 ther, the Earls came not, but sent Monsieur Robert Fitz-Roger, and  
 Monsieur John de Segrave, Knights, who said the Earls could not  
 then come for some Reasons. On Sunday following the Bishops and  
 two Knights came to the King at St. Albans, and at their Requests,  
 the Knights had Letters of safe Conduct given them for the Earls to  
 come to, stay with, and return from the King, yet they never came;  
 and now 'tis given out the Earls offered to the King certain Articles  
 for the common Profit of the People, and that he utterly refused them,  
 of which the King knows nothing, for they never propounded, or caused  
 to be propounded any thing to him, nor doth he know, why they are  
 retired; amongst which Articles 'tis reported, there were certain Grie-  
 vances, which the King understands well, as the Aids which he often  
 demanded of the People, by reason of his Wars in Gascony, Wales,  
 Scotland, and other where, which could not be Maintain'd, or his  
 Kingdom Defended, without the Assistance of his People, of which he  
 thinks often, that he should so much grieve, and burthen them, and  
 prays they would have him Excused; and if it please GOD he returns  
 from this Voyage, he would have all Men know, That according to his  
 great Desire, according to the Will of GOD, and to the Satisfaction  
 of his People, he will amend all things whatever, where he ought: And  
 if he doth not return, he will order his Heir to do it as well as if he  
 had Returned; for he knows well, that no Man is so much bound to  
 the Kingdom, or to love the People, as he himself. On the other side,  
 there is great necessity of his going to assist his Ally the Earl of Flan-  
 ders, and his Passage is so hasty for the Peril his Friends beyond Sea  
 are in, which if he should lose, the Kingdom might be in great Dan-  
 ger; And therefore they should have the Confirmation of the great Char-  
 ter of the Liberties of England, and of the Charter of the Forest,  
 if they would Grant him an Aid or Gift, such as was Necessary for  
 him at this time; and the rather for that upon his going over, a last-  
 ing Peace might ensue; and if he had Refused Articles, or any thing  
 else in Hatred, and Destruction of his People, contrary to the Com-  
 mon Profit of the Realm, or that he hath done otherwise against the  
 Earls then is here said, he desires no Man to believe him; for these  
 are the true Proceedings, and the very Truth of things to this time.  
 Afterwards he put them in mind what Dangers and Wars may arise  
 from Rumours, Stories, and Reports, raised between the King and  
 his People, &c. concluding his Declaration, That all his good People  
 would pray, That his Voyage might have a good End, to the Honour  
 of GOD, of himself, of them, and his Kingdom, and that a Dura-  
 ble Peace might follow. Given at Odymer (near Winchelsey) the  
 12th day of August, in the 25th of his Reign.



A The King being informed there were *Excommunications* ready to be Pronounced and Published against his Officers, &c. sent a *Prohibition* [4] to the Archbishop and all other Bishops to forbear it. The King to the Venerable Father in Christ, Robert, &c. Whereas we have been forced by inevitable Necessity for the Defence of our Kingdom and Hereditary Right invaded by the King of France, and other Enemies, and for the Preservation and Safety of the English Church, and of the Persons of Ecclesiastics, and others, we have taken from them Grain, and other Goods, and the same necessity yet compels us to do the like, for which Corn and Goods we are resolved to make full Satisfaction; and now we understand that you intend to promulge, and cause to be published, Sentence of Excommunication against our Officers that took them by our Command, which if you should do, it would manifestly redound to the great and immeasurable Michief of our Crown and Dignity, the Scandal of the People, and as it may happen, the Consequence of it may prove the Destruction of the Church, and Subversion of the whole Kingdom. We forbid you, upon Observation of the Oath of Fidelity by which you are bound to us, and upon forfeiture of all you hold of us, to publish any such Sentence against our Officers, Clercs, or Laics, or to do any Injury to them, especially when we are ready to make Satisfaction. Witness the King at Winchelsey the 19th Day of August, in the 25th of his Reign.

[4] Append.  
N. 32.

The K. forbids the Bishops to publish Sentence of Excommunication against his Officers, &c.

C King Edward being so far engaged to assist the Earl of Flanders in Person, as he could not recede from his Promise, and resolved beyond persuation to do it with what speed he could, the Earl now much pressed by the King of France, having lost some Towns, and being in fear of the Revolt of his People; [5] while he was thus at Winchelsey, or Odymer, with all possible Expedition providing for his Passage, the Earls sent him the following Petitions of his Kingdom in Writing, and with this Title.

[5] Walsingh.  
Hist. Angl. f.  
71. N. 30, 40.  
50. f. 72. N.  
10, 20.

D These are the Injuries and Grievances, which the Archbishops, Bishops, Abbots, Priors, Earls, and Barons, and the whole Community of the Land, do shew unto our Lord the King, Humbly beseeching him, That for his own Honour, and the Safety of his People he would correct and amend them.

The Grievances of the whole Kingdom presented to the King.

E First, It seemeth to the Community of the Land, That the Summons sent them by the King's Writ, was not sufficient, because the Place whither they were to go was not named; for according to that, they were to prepare themselves, and make Provision of Money.

F Secondly, Whether they ought to perform Service or not, because 'tis said in general words, the King would pass over into Flanders: It seems to the Community, that there they ought to do no Service, because neither they, nor their Predecessors, or Progenitors, ever performed their Service in that Land. And tho' it was so that they ought to do it, yet they were not able, being so oppressed with Tallages, Aids, and Takings, or Prizes, as of Wheat, Oates, Malt, Wool, Leather, Oxen, Cowes, Powdered Meat, without paying for them, by which they were supported.

H

Thirdly,



Thirdly, They say they cannot pay Taxes, by reason of their Poverty proceeding from the Tallages and Takings aforesaid, because they had scarce wherewithal to support themselves, and many were in such Condition, as they had not wherewith to Till their Lands.

Fourthly, The whole Community of the Land thinks it self very much grieved, That they are not used according to the Laws and Customs of the Land, as their Predecessors have been. A

Fifthly, They were Grieved and Oppressed, that Magna Charta, or the Great Charter was not observed, and that the Charter and Assize of Forests was not observed according to Custom.

[6] Ibm. f. 72.  
lin. 5.

Sixthly, The whole Community thought it self grieved, by the Imposition upon Wool, which was too Burthensome at 40s. per Sack, and of Wool for common Use seven Marks for the same Quantity, [6] for that the Wool of England, amounted to almost half the value of the whole Land, and this Imposition amounted to the Fifth part of the value of it. Then they conclude, That because the Community wished the King Honour and Safety, as they were bound to do, it seemed to them it was not good for him to pass into Flanders, unless he were assured That People were true to him and his People; and also in regard of Scotland, which now began to Rebel, and would do so much more when they knew he was beyond Sea. B C

[7] Ibm.  
N. 10, 20.

The K. could not answer the Petitions of the Community without Advice of his Council.

When the King received these Petitions he [7] told the Messengers, he could not Answer them without his Council, some part whereof was gone into Flanders, and some part left at London; and sent to intreat the Earls by the Messengers, That if they would not go over Sea with him, They would at least do no Mischief to the Kingdom in his absence, for that he thought by the Favour of God to return, and have it in due Order. D

[8] Claus. 25  
Ed. 1. M. 7.  
Durf.

[9] Fol. 430.  
N. 50.

The Earls and Barons prohibit the Levying of Taxes granted to the King.

[1] Ut Supra.  
F. 72. N. 40.

They prevail with the Citizens of London to stand with them for their Liberties.

[2] Ibm. F. 72.  
N. 10.

It is Recorded in the Close Roll of this Year, that the King passed into Flanders on the 22d of August, [8] Memorandum quod Die Jovis vicesimo secundo Die Augusti Transfretavit Rex in Flandriam. Mat. Westminster [9] says it was the Day following, on the Vigil or Eve of St. Bartholomew, and that the same Day the Earls and Barons came to the Exchequer, and forbade the Barons thereof, to cause the Sheriffs to Levy the Eighth Penny of the Laity, telling them, They knew nothing of it, and that Taxes could neither be Imposed or Exacted without their Assent. Walsingham [1] says, That the Earl of Hereford, and Earl-Marshal, with their Confederates or Complices, prohibited the Treasurer and Barons of the Exchequer to cause to be Levied the Eighth Penny of the Laity, that was granted to the King at Bury-St.-Edmunds, and that they prevailed with the Citizens of London to stand with them for the Recovery of their Liberties. E F

The Scots taking the Opportunity of these Commotions in England, still delayed to give Hostages and Pledges for the Peace made with Henry de Percy, tho' demanded by Earl Warren; and toward the End of [2] August took Arms again under the Leading

of



of *Waleys*, and in a short time drove almost all the *English* out of *Scotland*: *William de Warren* aforesaid, the Guardian of *Scotland*, fled from *Berwick* into *England*, and the *English* that were there after him, and quitted the Town, yet the Castle was kept, and well Defended by those that were in it.

The Scots again take Arms, and drive the English out of Scotland.

A Upon this News from *Scotland*, the [3] Council that the King left with the Prince whom he had constituted Guardian of *England* in his absence, to assist and advise him, persuaded him to send for the two Great Earls, and if by any ways he could reconcile them to his Father. On the 9th of *September* [4] he wrote to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Six other Bishops, Twenty three Abbots and Priors, these Two, and Eight others, to meet on the morrow after *St. Michael* at *London*, to confer with him, and those of his Council there present, about urgent and difficult Affairs. When they came together, [5] they would not consent to any other Form of Peace than that which is now called the Statute de Tallagio non Concedendo, or of not Granting Tallage; which is the same in [6] *Walsingham*, with that of Sir *Ed. Coke's* Second Institutes, Fol. 532. taken out of the Old Statutes, Printed by *Rich. Totel*, 1556. Part 2. p. 73. a.

[3] *Ibm.* N. 30. The Prince, Guardian of England.

[4] Append. N. 33. He Writes to the Constable and Marshal to meet him at London.

[5] *Walsing.* Ut Supra. l. 73. N. 40, 50.

[6] *Ibm.*

C Henry de Knighton [7] tells us, They came guarded with 500 Horse, a great Number of choice Foot, and that they would not enter into the City before they had Liberty to place their own Guards in every Gate; and then says, That by the Mediation of the Venerable Father Robert Archbishop of *Canterbury*, (*Cujus memoria in Benedictione sit*) whose Name be blessed, as the Historian, there was no Agreement to be made, unless the King would confirm the Charter of the Forest, and the Great Charter with some Articles added to it, which were the Statute before-mentioned, then put in Writing by them, and were the Grievances sent to the King at *Winchelsey*, drawn into the Form of a Charter or Statute. This was done by the King, as \**Walsingham* says, (*Tanquam ab eo, qui in arcto positus erat, cedendum Malitie temporis censuit,*) as by one in streight, thinking it best to give way to the Iniquity of the time: And \*for this the Laity gave an Eighth Part of their Goods; the Clergy of the Province of *Canterbury* a Tenth, and the Clergy of the Province of *York* a Fifth Part.

[7] *Col.* 2523. N. 10, 20, &c. They come Armed and take Possession of the City Gates.

\* F. 74. N. 10.

\* *Ibm.*

E On the 15th of *September* before this Meeting or Great Council, the Prince had Issued Writs for a Parlemtent to be holden on the Octaves of *St. Michael*, or 7th of *October*, for the Confirmation of the Charters, as his Father had before propounded in his Declaration; and for that Confirmation \*the Laity regranted the Eighth Part of their Goods they had given before at *Bury*, and the Clergy gave a Tenth; and the whole Business was dispatch'd in three Days; for this Statute or Charter, which in *Coke's* Second Institutes, and our Statute-Books goes by the Title of *Confirmatione Chartarum*, was Sealed and Dated the 10th of *October*; and is to be found upon the Statute Roll 25 *Ed. I.* M. 38. with this Memorandum at the End of it, that this very Charter or Confirmation, word for word, was Sealed in *Flanders* with the King's Great Seal at *Gaunt*, the 5th Day of *November* in the 25th year of his

to Claus. 25 *Ed. I.* M. 6 Dors. A Parlemtent called.

\* *Ibm.*

The Chartres confirm'd.

The Confirmation of them Sealed in Flanders.



Reign, and sent into *England*; a sure Sign Sir *Edward Coke* never saw the Original of this, nor of the *Statute de Tallagio non Concedendo*, who placeth them in the 34th of this King.

[8] Append.  
N. 34.

The Earl-  
Marshal, the  
Constable, and  
Lord *Ferrers*  
Pardoned, and  
by what Me-  
diation.

[9] *Registrum*  
*Winchelsey* in  
*Dollars-Cem-*  
*monis*, fol. 227.  
a. b. and 228.  
a. b.

A Truce be-  
tween the two  
Kings and  
their Allies  
for a short  
time.

[1] See Bundle  
of Writs of  
Privy-Seal in  
the Tower.  
And *Pryn*  
*Hist. Ed. 1.*  
f. 757.

The King of  
*England's* Al-  
lies or Confe-  
derates.

[2] *Ibm.* and  
*Pryn Hist. f.*  
758.

The Truce  
sent into *Eng-*  
*land*.

[3] *Claus. 25*  
*Ed. 1. M. 26.*  
*Dors. in cedula.*

The Scots de-  
spise their  
Oaths of Ho-  
mage and  
Fealty.

On the [8] Statute-Roll there is a *Destinal Pardon* for the two Earls, the Lord *Ferrers*, &c. somewhat differing from that in the Printed Statutes. Dated at *Gaunt* on the same Day, procured at the special Prayer and Request of his Son Prince *Edward* his Lieutenant in *England*, *William Bishop* of *Ely*, *William Bishop* of *Bath* and *Wells*, *Richard Bishop* of *London*, *Walter Bishop* of *Litchfield* and *Coventry*, *Henry Elec*t of *York*, *Edmund Earl* of *Cornwall*, *John Warren Earl* of *Surrey* and *Sussex*, *William Beauchamp Earl* of *Warwick*, and the others of his Council, with his Son in *England*. [9] This Pardon had been doubly granted before by the Prince, and by his Council, in two Instruments, or as they are called, Letters-Patents, one of the Prince, the other of his Council, Dated *October 10.* and Sealed with their own Seals, because the Great Seal of *England* was with the King: At the same time also they Undertook, and Bound themselves, to secure them from any Damage which might happen to them, from the King, and procure them this very Pardon.

Things thus compos'd in *England*, there was a Truce, or as 'tis called in the Instrument it self, A [1] Sufferance or Forbearing all Acts of Hostility by Sea and Land, between the King of *England*, and his Allies, on the one Part, and the King of *France* and his Allies on the other, until the Feast of Epiphany, for the Duchy of *Aquitain*, and for the Earldom of *Flanders*, and all other Parts, until the Octaves of St. Andrew (or the 7th of December.) Dated on the Feast of St. Denis, (that is *October 9th.*) in the Year of Grace, 1297. in which there are the Names of the English Confederates; That is to say, the King of *Almayn* or Emperor; the Earl of *Flanders*, the Earl of *Savoy*, the Earl of *Bar*, the Duke of *Brabant*, the Earl of *Holland*, the Earl of *Montbeliard*, *John de Cholon*, *Seigneur Darly*, *John de Burgonig*, *John Lord* of *Moamtfacon*, *Walter his Brother*, the Lord of *Newcastle*, the Lord *Dosselier*, the Lord of *Fayconby*, the Lord of *Jour*, the Lord of *Conkendary*, *Simon de Montbeliard*, Lord of *Montron*, *Stephen Doissler Lord* of *New-Town*, (*de Ville Neove*) and many others, of *Burgoinge*, *Almaigne*, *Brabant*, *Holland*, *Gascoinge*, and *Arragon*, and others, of which the Names were not known: And by this Sufferance all Trade or Commerce was to be Exercised as at other times.

This was inclosed in Letters [2] under Privy-Seal, dated at *Gaunt* the 15th of *October*, in the 25th of his Reign, and sent to his Son, enjoining him to see it kept in all points, through the Realm; and [3] to that purpose, on the 20th of *October* he sent it to all Ports in *England*, to be Proclaimed, and strictly Observed in all its Articles.

On the next Day, setting forth that the Scots despising their Oaths of Homage and Fealty, and not content to have Broken the Peace before, to have Killed his Subjects, and done many other great



great Mischiefs, [4] had then Entered England, Burning and Wasting the Country, slaying his People, and destroying all before them, sent his Summons to 200 Earls, Barons, Knights, Abbats, and others, to be ready at Newcastle upon Tyne, on St. Nicholas-Day, or 6th of December, with their Service of Horse and Arms, to go with his Son against the Scots, to suppress their Rebellion, and defend his own Kingdom.

[4] *Ibm.*  
They enter England, burn, and waste all before them. The King summons the Service of Earls, Barons, &c. to suppress them.

A

By Commissioners on both sides the Sufferance or forbearance of Hostility was prolonged and continued until Lent then next coming, the [5] Instrument whereof was sealed with their Seals, and dated at Grolingues Abby near Courtray in Flanders, Nov. 23. 1297. In this Instrument also are contained the Names of King Edward's Confederates, as before.

[5] Bundle of Writs, & *Pryn ut supra*, f. 756, 757. The Truce between the Two Kings prolonged. [6] *Walsingh.* Hist. f. 64. l. 5, &c. n. 10.

B

In the 24th of this [6] King, in the year 1296, the Cardinals of Albanum and Præneste, had been sent by the Pope, first into France, then into England, (whether they came about *Whitsuntide*) to make Peace between the Two Kings, and expected the King's coming out of Wales until the first of August, when they delivered their Message, and persuaded to Peace, or a Truce for Two years; The King answered he could agree to neither, without the Consent of the King of the Romans, by reason of the League between them confirmed by Oath; They Request the King to obtain his Consent, which in Reverence to the Court of Rome he granted, and they returned into France.

Two Cardinals sent to persuade Peace, or make a Truce for two years.

C

The King, as they desired, [7] wrote to the King of Almain or Romans, to send his Commissioners to Cambray to the Cardinals, with Power before them to Treat of and Conclude a Truce Honourable and Beneficial for them both. Many Commissions were granted, and Commissioners [8] appointed on both sides at several times, and References made to the Pope. But when all these Ways proved ineffectual, the Pope by his own Authority took upon him to denounce and declare a Truce for Two years under pain of Excommunication, to such as should not submit to it; [9] This the Cardinals published without success; as appears by their Letter or Manifesto published for the knowledge of all People, in which are contained the Minutes or Heads of this Truce, and the King of France his Protestation against it, and the Pope's pretended Power to make it.

[7] Bundle of Letters and Writs in *Jurie London*, 24 & 25 Ed. I. and *Pryn Hist.* Ed. I. from fol. 748, 10 fol. 764.

D

E

F

*Universis [1] presentes literas inspecturis miseratione divina, B. Albanensis, & S. Penestrinensis Episcopi salutem in Domino, Notum facimus, &c.* To all that shall see these present Letters, B. by Divine Mercy Bishop of Albano; and S. Bishop of do make it known, &c. Then giving a short Account of the Truce, and that it was to have continued for Two years from the Feast of St. John Baptist last past. They say, That when they presented to the King of France the Popes Letters Patents, containing the Truce, to be read, *cumque dictas literas presentaremus dicto Regi Francie legendas, &c.* He forthwith before they were read, caused in his own and their presence these Protestations to be made, That the Temporal Government of his Realm belonged to himself alone,

[8] *Ibm.*  
A l ways pronounced for a Peace or Truce prove ineffectual. [9] *Walsingh.* ut supra, f. 69. n. 50. The Pope by his own Authority declares a Truce for two years. [1] *Proves des loix de l'Eglise Gallicane*, Printed 1651, chap. 7. n. 12. f. 96.

The King of France protests against the Pope's Power to make a Truce.



And denies  
his superiority  
in Tempo-  
rals.

25th of Ed. I.

\* *Walsingb.*  
*Hist. Angl.*  
f. 74. n. 30.

The Pope as  
a Mediator,  
not as a Judge  
offers to make  
Peace.

And publish-  
ed to that  
purpose a  
Two years  
Truce.

\* *Ib.* n. 40.  
Both Kings  
submit all  
Differences to  
the Pope as a  
Private Per-  
son only.

[2] *Fol.* 43 r.  
n. 10, 20.  
Both Kings  
accept and  
agree to a  
Truce for two  
years.  
[3] *Append.*  
n. 35.

The King to  
make good his  
Promise, sends  
out Commis-  
sions of In-  
quiry, what  
Goods had  
been taken  
from his Sub-  
jects.

alone, and no other; That he would acknowledge no Superior in it, nor subject himself any way, to any Person living, in things of his Temporal Government, but would maintain his Fees, (*Sed se intendere feoda sua Justiciare*) and Defend his Kingdom, and the Rights of it in all things, as God should enable him, by the help of his Subjects, Friends, and Assistants; Nor, that he took himself or Kingdom to be affected by the Popes Declaration of the Truce in his Letters Patents directed to him, nor the Sentence of Excommunication therein contained; And further added, That he would not recede in Word or Deed from these Protestations; yet as to what concerned his Soul, and Spiritual Government, as his Predecessors had done before, he was ready to obey the Precepts of the Holy See, as much as he was bound and ought to do, as a Devout Son of Holy Mother Church. These things premised, the Cardinals proceeded to the publication of the Truce and Sentence, and caused the Pope's Letters to be read before the King. Done at Creil in *Beauvaisis* on the 19th of April, 1297. *Datum Credulii Bellovacensis Diacesis, &c.*

After this, \* on *Innocent's-Day*, or 28th of December, and 26th of Edward I. there came to him then at Gaunt the Master of the Order of Preachers, and the General of Friars Minors, who had been with the King of France about the same Business, and beseeched on behalf of the Pope, That they would send their Commissioners to Rome with full Power to Treat of Peace, the Pope promising, not as a Judge, but Kind Mediator, and in prejudice to neither, to endeavour to settle Peace and Tranquillity in both Nations, and restore the former Friendship between the Two Kings. And because that could not be accomplished without a Truce, therefore the Pope by these Messengers, published again a Two years Truce, as he had desired before by the Cardinals, under pain of Excommunication, and Interdict of both the Nations.

The King of England \* considering it was dangerous staying in Flanders, and that he had been imprudently brought thither by the Contrivance of the Earl, that his own Kingdom was unsettled by Intestin Sedition, and that he could have no Confidence in the King of the Romans, the Pope not being his Friend, consented to the Truce. And both Kings sent their Commissioners to Rome, and Compromitted and Referred all Differences whatever between them to Boniface VIII. as *Vener. Gaitan*, or a Private Person, but not as Pope, as will appear by his own Instrument of the Terms of Peace hereafter mentioned.

*Mat.* [2] *Westminster* says, both Kings accepted and agreed to a Truce for Two years, to begin at the Feast of Epiphany or beginning of Lent, when the above-mentioned short Truce ended, for themselves, and Confederates, and when King Edward came for England, and landed at Sandwich on the 21st of March.

And within few days after, to make good the Promise he had made not long before his going into Flanders, Instructions and Commissions were sent forth to [3] Two Knights, one sent by the King, and the other taken out of the Country, one Clerk, and one Religious Person to be assigned by the Bishop of the Diocese, to in-  
quire

A

B

C

D

E

F



quire by the Oaths of Lawful Men of every County, in what manner and how much Wooll, Woollfells, Leather, Grain, Beasts, Flesh, Fish, or other Goods, had been wrongfully and illegally taken from the Clergy and Laity, for Victualling and setting forth his Fleet, or for other Matters, since the War between himself, and the King of France. Witness the King at Westminster the 4th of April, in the 26th of his Reign.

A. D. 1298.

A

After the Notable Protestation of the King of France against the Pope, says Peter [4] Pithou, desiring to make Peace with the Emperor Elect, and the King of England, compromised that whole Affair in the Person of Pope Boniface as a Private Person, and Benedict Cajetan by his Family Name, and not as Pope, on purpose, that he might not usurp upon the Authority of the Kings.

[4] *Preuves des Libertez, ut supra, f. 97.* The Compromise made to Benedict Cajetan, not Pope Boniface, &c.

B

In this year, and about this time, Adolph the Emperor (or as the old Historians call him, King of Almain, or of the Romans) was deposed by the Electors and German Princes, and as [5] Mezeray Stories, was first detained in Germany by private Dissentions raised by the French, or the Sums of Money King Philip gave him underhand, so as he did not afford the Earl of Flanders that Relief he expected; and at the same time debauched Albert Duke of Austria, by the all powerful Influence of Money from the Party, who brought over with him the Duke of Brabant, the Earls of Luxemburgh, Guelders, and Beaumont.

[5] *Hist. of France, f. 327.* A. D. 1297. Adolph the Emperor deposed. The King of France his Money prevails with the German Princes.

C

The same Historian also gives this Account of his Deposition, [6] the Money that Adolph had received on both hands was the cause of his Ruin, and on the contrary what Albertus had received for the same end served to raise his Fortune; for this last having made use of some of it to corrupt the Princes of Germany, who were displeased for that Adolphus had given him no share of his, it happened, that in an Assembly they had at Prague for the Coronation of King Winchestlaus, they easily suffered themselves to be persuaded, the Pope was consenting to the Deposition of Adolphus, as being useless to the Empire; and in effect, the Cabal was so strong, that they Deposed him, and Elected Albert Duke of Austria. The Two Competitors came to Blows about it near Spire the 2d of July, Adolph fighting valiantly, but betrayed, or at least forsaken by his Men, there lost his Life.

[6] *Ibm.* A. D. 1298. Adolph the Emperor deposed. And how.

D

E

The Abbat of Ursperg, an old German Writer of this time, says thus, [7] Whereas there was great confusion in the Empire, and there was necessity to have a more powerful Emperor, the Electors met at Ments, and Deposed him, for when Adolph had received 75000 Marks to assist the King of England against the King of France, he kept it all to himself, and divided none amongst the German Princes, he could neither raise Soldiers, nor help the English. This Charge in the Empire, and the Embroilment of his Affairs at home, caused King Edward to accept the Popes Mediation, as above.

[7] *Paralip. fol. 341.* Printed at Basil, 1559. The occasion of his being Deposed.

F

The King before this time had summoned the [8] Militia of the Nation to meet him at Carlisle on Whitfun-Eve, with their Horse

[8] *Cl. 46 Ed. I. M. 5. Dors.*



The King summons the Militia of the Nation against the Scots.

[9] *Ibm.*  
*M. 12. Gedula.*  
*Dorf.*

A Parlement or great Council summoned.

[1] *Walsingb.*  
*f. 75 n. 20.*  
The Charters Reconfirmed.

[2] *Ib. n. 30,*  
*40, 50. and*  
*f. 76 n. 10.*  
The Scots beaten at Falkirk.

The King returns into England.

[3] *Cl. 27.*  
*Ed. I. M. 18.*  
*Dorf.*

Summons a Parlement.

[4] *Walsingb.*  
*f. 76 n. 20.*  
The Pope's Award read in it.

[5] This Instrument is intitled, *Pronuntiatio Beneficii*, in *Juric London*, 25 *Ed. I.* & *Pryn*, *Ed. I.* f. 758.

The Articles of his Award, as *Benedict Caetan*, not as Pope.

*Horse and Arms*, to go against the Scots, whose Power was now formidable, and their Forces numerous; yet on the 10th of April [9] he summoned the Earls and Barons, Two Knights of every Shire, Two Citizens of every City, and Two Burgeffes of every Burgh, to meet and Treat with him, about certain Matters that concerned him, and the whole Kingdom; [1] Here the Constable and Marshall demanded, that because the Charters had been confirmed beyond Sea, for the greater security they might be confirmed again. The Bishop of Durham, the Earls of Surrey, Warwick, and Gloucester, promised the King should do it, upon his Return with Victory. The King then commanded his Army to be ready at Roxburg upon Tweed on the Feast of St. John Baptist. The King going aside to Visit St. John of Beverly, found his Army at the time and place appointed; [2] He marched on into Scotland; The Scots meet him with a mighty Army under the Conduct of Waleys; On St. Mary Magdalen's-Day, or 22d of July, both Armies drew up in a large Field near Falkirk; upon the Signal given by the King, the English boldly attacked the Scots, their Horse soon gave ground, the English pursuing and killing great numbers, my Author says Sixty thousand. Waleys and the Great Men of Scotland fled into the Woods. After some stay in Scotland, where he used some severity, in his Return at Carlisle, he gave the Constable and Marshall Leave to go home, and stayed himself in the North Parts until after Christmas; when he returned into the South, and in [3] February summoned a Parlement to meet on the first Sunday in Lent, [4] where was Read the Pope's Instrument of Award between the Two Kings, which is long, but the Effect thereof was, [5] That whereas they by their special Messengers and Proctors, had compromitted into him as a Private Person and Benedict Caetan, and as an Amicable Composer and Arbiter of all Wars, Controversies, Differences, and Causes whatever moved between them; He did Award and Pronounce;

1. That there should be a firm and stable Peace between the Two Kings.

2. That the voluntary forbearing of Hostility, and the Truce lately made and confirmed between the Two Kings, &c. should be inviolably observed.

3. That the King of England should Marry Margaret the King of France his Sister, and Endow her with 15000 l. Turnois (i. e. 3750 l. Sterling) per Annum.

4. That Isabel, the Daughter of the King of France, not then 7 years old, should at convenient time, be Married to Edward the King of England's Son, then 13 years of Age, with the Dower of 18000 l. Turnois per Annum.

5. That all Goods on either side, Ships especially, taken before the War, and then not imbeziled or destroyed, should be restored; and if destroyed and not to be found, then either King to make Satisfaction at the Request of each other.

6. That



6. That all the Lands, Vassals, and Goods, which the King of England had in France before the War, which he may have restored to him by virtue of this Compromise, he should have and enjoy under such Conditions and Security as shall be awarded.

A 7. That all the Lands, Vassals, and Goods, which the King of France was then possessed of, that were the King of England's before the War, and those the King of England was then possessed of, should be put into the Hands and Possession of the Pope, and so to remain until the Kings themselves agreed about them, or he should order what was therein to be done, without prejudice to the Lands, Vassals, and Goods, or the King's, as to the Possession, Detention or Propriety of them. This Pronunciation or Award was Dated at the Pope's Palace in Rome on the 20th of June, 1298. 26th of Edw. I.

A. D. 1298.

B To which Award when it was read in Parlement, all the Clergy and Laity gave their Consent, [6] *Cui assensum præbuit Plebs omnis, & Clerus.*

[6] *Mat. West.*  
f. 431. n. 50.  
The whole  
Parlement  
confirm the  
Pope's A-  
ward.

C This done the [7] Earls, Barons, and Prelates, demanded the Confirmation of the Charter of Liberties, and of the Forest, with the Deforestation then made; He confirmed the Charters, but refused to confirm the Deforestation, or parting with so much Land out of his Forests as they demanded.

[7] *Ibm.*  
The Charters  
confirmed.  
The King re-  
fused to con-  
firm the Dis-  
foresting.  
[8] *Fol. 76.*  
n. 40.

D *Walsingham* [8] Reports, That in this Parlement, the King being desired to confirm the Charters as he had promised in Scotland, after some delay, consented, with a *Salvo jure Coronæ*, saving the Rights of his Crown, which the Earls hearing returned home; but calling another [9] Parlement to meet 15 days after Easter, he granted what they desired.

[9] *Claus.*  
27 Ed. I. M.  
18. *Dors.* Writ  
dated Apr. 10.

E The Execution of the Pope's Award was delayed, neither of the Kings being forward to deliver their Possessions, &c. in Gascoign into his Hands; but being resolved to make Peace if he could, [1] he sent the Bishop of Vicenza to the King of France, before whom, and with the Consent of the King of England's Commissioners, it was Agreed, That both the Kings should perform that Article; and King Edward Authorized several Commissioners, to deliver the Possession of his Lands, Vassals, and Goods, into the hands of the Bishop, who was to receive them in the Name of the Pope as a Private Person, and Benedict Gaitan. This Instrument bears Date at Westminster, April 22. 1299, the 27th of Ed. I. In May following Prince Edward [2] made the Earl of Lincoln his Proxy to Contract the Esponsals with Isabel, the King of France his Daughter.

[1] *Rot. Alm.*  
27 Ed. I. M.  
11. *intro.*

The King of  
England per-  
forms the 7th  
Article of the  
Pope's Award.

[2] *Ibm.*  
Prince Ed-  
ward Con-  
tracted to  
Isabel, the King  
of France his  
Daughter.

F While the Bishop of Vicenza was in France, he solicited the Release of John Baliol King of Scots, by the King of France his Mediation to the Pope, to give it in Charge to the Bishop his Legate, who obtained it, [3] and he was delivered to him at Whitsand in France, by Robert de Bourghersb, Kt. Constable of Dover Castle, the King's Proxy, upon Saturday before St. Mary Magdalen's Day,

[3] *Append.*  
1296 and  
*Phy's.* Ed. I.  
f. 797. A. D.  
1299. 27 Ed. I.



King John Baliol delivered to the Pope's Proxy.

or 22d of July, upon Condition, That the Pope might Direct and Order what he pleased, only as to his Person, and the Estate he had in England, as King Edward might have done, if he had been personally with him in England, saving to him and his Heirs, Kings of England, the Kingdom of Scotland, the Men, and Inhabitants, and all the Appurtenances to that Kingdom; It being there Read and Rehearsed before his Delivery, and in his own presence, and the presence of the Bishop of Vicenza, That he had committed many Inhuman Trespasses and Treasons against his Sovereign Prince King Edward, contrary to his Homage and Fealty, &c. And that the Pope should not Ordain or Direct any thing in the Kingdom of Scotland concerning the Men or Inhabitants, or Appurtenances of the same Kingdom, for John Baliol, or his Heirs which are, or may be, or any other Cause whatsoever. And upon these Terms, the Bishop in Name and Stead of the Pope, received him from the King's Proxy, on the said Saturday before the Feast of St. Margaret, A. D. 1299. and 27th of Ed. I. Certainly at this time the Pope understood not that Scotland was his Fee, as he claimed it two years after.

His Character of the Scots.

It may be supposed, that King John Baliol was willing to go any whither rather than into his own Country, he having voluntarily, and of his own accord, without the privy of King Edward, by an [4] Instrument drawn by a Publick Notary the year before, Renounced Scotland, and Resolved never to come there more, or have to do with it, because he had found such Malice, Fraud, Treason, and Deceit in the Scots, that they had designed to poison him.

[5] Mat. W. B. f. 431. n. 50.

This year [5] died Two very great Men, Humfry de Bohun, Earl of Essex and Hertfordshire, and Constable of England, and William Beauchamp Earl of Warwick.

[6] Brevia Regia in Jure Lond. 27 Ed. I. and Pryus, Ed. I. f. 809. The King summons the Militia to go with him into Scotland. The Pope sends a Nuncio to compleat his Award.

The Scots were this year Troublesome, and the King had summoned the Militia of the Kingdom [6] to meet him at Carlisle on the Vigil of Pentecost, to go with him into Scotland upon his own Wages, against his Enemies, and to settle such English as he had there given Lands unto, in them; in the mean time, he received a Message from the Pope, that he was sending his Nuncio to Mounstrenit in Picardy, where should be a Treaty, to end all Differences in pursuance of his former Award; This Message was communicated to the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, other Bishops, Earls, and Barons, who advised him to remain in the South while this Treaty was over, by reason of Debates that might happen in it, which might require speedy Advice, and Resolution, and therefore wrote to all the Sheriffs of England to make Proclamation the Militia should not meet at Carlisle until the first of August. Given at Stabenbeth the 7th of May, 27th of Ed. I.

A. D. 1299. 27 Ed. I.

[7] Brevia ib. & Pryus, f. 810. The People dissatisfied at the delay of the Perambulations of the Forests.

Many of the Nobility and People not being satisfied, or seemed not to be so, that the Perambulations, and setting out the Bounds of the Forests, were not done so speedily as they desired, the King sent [7] Writs to the Sheriffs of all Counties to proclaim and give notice, That the Commissioners for these Perambulations should meet



meet at Northampton at Michaelmas next, with full power to proceed in that Business without delay. Dated at Lewis the 25th of June, in the 27th of his Reign.

Special Commissioners appointed to dispatch that Business.

The People yet not satisfied.

A But this was not thought sufficient, for it was reported and noised abroad, that the King intended not to observe Magna Charta, or the Charter of the Forest, nor would ever suffer the Perambulations to be made, and the Bounds of the Forests to be set out, and therefore the same day he issued a [8] further Proclamation to give the Causes and Reasons why the Perambulations, &c. could not be made sooner, and to let the World know he was pressed too hard, and not in due manner to do these things, and that those who raised these Reports were malicious People, and desired to cause Differences between him and his Subjects, and to disturb the Peace of the Nation. Dated on the same day, and at the same place.

[8] Ibm. and f. 811.

The King issues a Second Proclamation to quiet them.

B

In the beginning of September [9] Margaret, Sister to the King of France, was Conducted into England by the Duke of Burgundy, and Earl of Britan, to whom King Edward was Married on the 12th of this month, in the Cathedral of Canterbury, by the Archbishop. The Wedding was very splendid, and much Foreign Nobility attended the Solemnity. The King's Expectations were every way great from this Match, but it answered them not.

[9] Walsingham. f. 77. n. 10. Mat. Westm. f. 432. n. 10. 20. A.D. 1299. 27th of Ed. I. King Edward Married to Margaret, the King of France his Sister.

[1] Fol. 77. n. 30.

C On the Feast of St. Martin, or 11th of November, says [1] Walsingham, the King held a Parlement at York, and from thence went to Berwick, intending to proceed further into Scotland, to Relieve Sterling Castle, then besieged by the Scots; but the Noblemen then with the King, informing and pressing him, the boggy and low Grounds were impassable in the Winter Season, diverted his Intention, and so as he sent to the Besieged, wanting Victuals, to yield the Castle, saving their Lives and Limbs.

Sterling Castle delivered to the Scots.

D

At Berwick the King remained until after Christmas, and the Queen at Windsor, but what he did there I find not, other than that he issued his [2] Writs dated at this place December 29th, for the calling of a Parlement at London, to meet on the Second Sunday in Lent.

A Parlement to begin the Second Sunday in Lent.

E

In which the Charter of the Forest, and Magna Charta, with the Statute of Winchester, were Renewed and Confirmed, and a new Statute made called Articles upon the Charters, Printed in the Statutes at Large, Coke's Second Institutes, and Totel's Magna Charta, and then it was ordered they should be published by the Sheriffs four times in the year; For the observation whereof, where there was no Remedy at Common Law, there were Three Knights chosen in every County, summarily to hear and determine from day to day, all Complaints concerning such as had offended against them (the King's Ministers not excepted) without allowing any delays, allowable by the Common Law, who had power to punish Offenders, by Imprisonment, Ransom, or Amerciament, according as the Fault required.

A. D. 1300. 28 Ed. I. Artic. supra Charters in the Preamble. In which the Charters, &c. were confirmed, and a new Statute made.

F



[2] *Clauſ.*  
28 Ed. I. M.  
11. *Dorſ.*  
Three  
Knights  
choſen in  
every County  
to ſee the new  
Statute ob-  
ſerved.  
[3] *Ibm.* M.  
8. *Dorſ.*  
Which was to  
be read and  
published four  
times in the  
year.

[4] *Ib.* M. 7.  
*Dorſ.*  
The Reaſon  
why the King  
granted the  
Statute called  
Articles upon  
the Charters.

[5] *Ib.* M. 8.  
*Dorſ.*  
He appoints  
Commiſſio-  
ners to make  
Perambula-  
tions of the  
Foreſts.

The Earls and  
Barons not ſa-  
tisfied with  
theſe things.

[6] *Fol.* 80.  
n. 10, 20.  
He calls a  
Parlement at  
Stanford.  
The Earls and  
Barons came  
with Horſe  
and Arms.  
The King  
grants their  
Demands.

[7] *Clauſ.*  
28 Ed. I. M.  
7. *Dorſ.*  
The Statute  
of Wincheſter  
to be pro-  
claimed, &c.

To this purpoſe the King [2] iſſued his *Writs* to all the *Sheriffs*, *Coroners*, and *Communities* of Counties in England, to chooſe Three Knights, to be at York on the Morrow of *Aſcention*, to receive *Inſtructions* accordingly; Witneſs the King at *Westminster*, March 27th, in the 28th of his Reign. And likewiſe ſent out other [3] *Writs* to all the *Sheriffs* in England, by which he Commanded them to Read the *Charters*, and publiſh them four times in the year, on the firſt County days after *Eaſter*, *St. John Baptiſt*, *Michaelmaſs*, and *Chriſtmaſs*, and as much as in them was to ſee them firmly holden and kept in all their Articles. Witneſs the King at *Westminster*, March 28. in the 28th of his Reign.

Within leſs then three weeks after, he alſo directed [4] *Writs* to all the *Sheriffs* in England, to let them know, That the People might be more ready for his Service, and willing to aſſiſt him with Subſidies upon Occaſion, he had upon ſpecial Grace and Favour granted the Articles upon the Charters, ſo much to their advantage; and Commanded them to proclaim them in the County Court, and all *Burghs*, and *Mercate Towns*, within their Counties or Bayliwicks, and to cauſe them to be firmly obſerved and performed. Witneſs the King at *St. Albans*, the 15th of April, in the 28th of his Reign.

And a fortnight before, he had directed his [5] *Writs* to ſe-  
veral *Commiſſioners* in all Counties, where there were *Foreſts*, to  
make *Perambulations*, and to receive *Inſtructions* about them on  
the Morrow of the Feaſt of *Aſcention*, with a Charge, that thro'  
their neglect, they might not remain undone. Witneſs the King  
at *Westminster*, April 1. in the 28th of his Reign.

Yet all theſe *Writs* and *Commiſſions* ſatiſfied not the *Earls*,  
*Barons*, and others, they ſtill murmured, and pretended, that the  
*Perambulations* would not be really made, or ſpeedily performed;  
Whereupon, as *Walsingham* ſaith [6], the King held a *Parle-*  
*ment* at *Stanford*, to which the *Earls* and *Barons* came with Force,  
with intention, as 'twas ſaid, to extort the full Execution of the  
Charter of the *Forest* then delayed; *Ad quod Parliamentum con-*  
*venerunt Comites & Barones cum equis & armis, eo prout dicebatur*  
*propoſito, ut executionem Chartæ de Foresta hætenus dilatam, extor-*  
*querent ad plenum.* To whoſe Will the King condeſcended, (*eo-*  
*rum voluntati in omnibus Rex condeſcendit*) and granted what they  
demanded.

At this time he ſent the Statute of [7] *Wincheſter* incloſed to all  
the *Sheriffs* in England, as it had been *Confirmed* and *Renewed*,  
(See Articles upon the Charters, Cap. 17th) to be Proclaimed, and  
with Command they ſhould ſee it firmly Obſerved and Kept, in  
all and ſingular its Articles. Witneſs the King at *Stanford*, May  
the Second, in the 28th of his Reign.

Then



A Then Eight Days after, [8] the King being at St. Edmunds-Bury, at the Request of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and others, to Quiet (tho' perhaps not Please or Satisfie) them, he renewed his Commission to three Knights and others Elected in each County, to see the Articles of the Great Charter, the Charter of the Forest, and Statute of Winchester observed; and to punish all Offences against them, not punishable by the Common Law of the Realm. And this by speedy Justice and quick Proceedings, upon Complaints from Day to Day, without allowance of such Delays as the Common Law admitted: Yet with a Saving to the Common Law, that it might not hereby receive Prejudice, or any Plea to be holden by these Commissions that might be Determined by it. Witness the King at St. Edmunds-Bury, May 10. in the 28th of his Reign.

B There are two Writs upon the same Roll and Membrane, dated on the same Day, and at the same Place, to the Sheriffs of every County, to be Assistant to these Commissioners, so often as they should give them Notice, and to empower them to Swear the Commissioners in full County, well and faithfully to Execute their Office.

C For the Receiving of the Returns of the Perambulations of the Forests, and Hearing and Determining all just Exceptions against them, the King Summoned a Parlement to meet at Lincoln, eight Days after St. Hilary, or 20th of January. [9] The Writ to the Sheriff of Cumberland, containing, That whereas of late for the common Profit of the People of the Kingdom, he had granted that the Charter of the Forest should be observed in all its Articles, and had assigned Commissioners in every County of England where there were Forests, to make Perambulations, and to make Report to him, before any Execution was done thereon. And for that his Oath, the Right of the Crown of England, his Reasons and Claims, as also the Right, Reasons, and Claims of all others might be safe. He, tho' the Commissioners had brought to him what they had done, yet because the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and all other Great Men of the Kingdom, in whose presence he would have his own, and the Reasons of others propounded and heard, according to whose Advice he intended to proceed, especially for that they were bound with him by Oath to Observe and Maintain the Laws or Rights of the Kingdom and his Crown, (Jura Regni & Coronæ Nostræ) were not then present with him. And for that likewise, those who were to propound their Reasons concerning this Matter, had no notice of it, without whom a good End could not be put to it; and because this Business might be Dispatched without further Delay, willing to have Conference and Treaty with the Prelates, Earls, Barons and Gentlemen aforesaid, and with others of the Community of the Kingdom upon this Affair, and other arduous Matters touching himself, and the state of the Kingdom, he Commanded firmly, enjoining him to cause to come before him at his Parlement at Lincoln, in the Octaves of St. Hilary next coming, two Knights of his Country or Baylywick; That is to say, those which came for the Community of the County by his Precept to the last Parlement, and also the same Citizens, and the same Burgeses, for all the Cities and Burghs within his Bayliwic; and if any of them were Dead, or Infirm, then

D  
E  
F

[8] Pat. 28  
Ed. 1. M. 14.  
The Commission to three Knights, &c. renewed at the Request of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons.

The Sheriffs to assist these Commissioners. And to Swear them faithfully to Execute their Office.

A Parlement called for the receiving the Returns of the Perambulations of the Forest.  
[9] Claus. 25.  
E. 1. M. 9. Dors.  
To meet at Lincoln Eight days after St. Hilary.

The Sheriffs commanded to send to this Parlement the same Knights, Citizens, and Burgeses that were in the last.



to cause others to be chosen, and come in their stead, so as that they might be present at the Day and Place aforesaid, with full Power to hear and do, what should be then ordained for the common Profit of the Kingdom: And to cause to be allowed to the same Knights, Citizens, and Burgeses, their reasonable Expences, in coming to, staying at, and going from the Parlement; and further, he commanded the Sheriff publickly to make Proclamation in the County, That all those who would put in any Exceptions against the Perambulations, should appear before him in Parlement, to shew them. Witness the King at the Rose, September 26. in the 28th Year of his Reign.

A

This is the Full of the Writ of Summons in English, wherein the Reasons are given why the Perambulations, could not be Received and Considered sooner. The Writs to the Bishops, Earls, and Barons, were in the same Form and Words as to the Reasons, &c.

B

[1] *Ibm.*

In like manner he [1] wrote to the Sheriffs of all Counties there particularly named, as well those that had Forests in them, as others, except *Cheshire*, which then sent no Members to Parlement.

[2] *Ibm.* M. 2.

He [2] wrote also to the Commissioners that made the Perambulations, to be at this Parlement, and bring with them those Perambulations, and all things that concerned them.

C

[3] *Walsingh.* f. 78. N. 20. The King marcheth into Scotland with an Army. The Scots demand their King John Baliol, and to Redeem their Lands. Both their Requests denied. They appear in a mighty Body, yet fly before the King.

Amidst these importune Pressures of the Nobility, [3] the King marched with an Army into Scotland, and coming into Galloway, the Great Men of the Scots desired him to permit John Baliol peaceably to Reign over them, and that he would suffer them to Redeem their Estates of such English as he had given them to, declaring, if he would not, they would themselves as well as they could: But he granted neither of their Petitions. Within few Days after, the Scots with their Leaders appeared in a mighty Body, thinking to Surprise the King, and his Army; but he, and his Son marching toward them, they fled to the Hills and Woods.

D

[4] *Ibm.* N. 30, 40.

The Scots apply themselves to the Pope for Advice and Assistance against K. Ed. [5] *Ibm.* and *Mat. West.* f. 435, 346, 437. He makes the A.B. of Canterbury his Legate to the King, and by his Letter claims Scotland as the Right of the Church of Rome.

About this Time, the Scots knowing all things Saleable at Rome, richly Present, or Bribe the Pope, moving him for his Advice and Assistance against their Lord the King of England. *Scoti cognoscentes*, [4] *Romæ omnia venalia, Donis Dominum Papam uberimis ditaverunt, petentes ab eo Consilium, pariter ac auxilium, contra Dominum suum Regem Angliæ.* The Pope complies, makes the Archbishop of Canterbury his Legat, sends him Letters to deliver to the King, with order to shew him his Commands. In [5] which he Claims the Kingdom of Scotland as belonging to the Church of Rome by full Right, (*pleno jure*;) Requires and Exhorts him in the Name of God, to Discharge out of Prison, and Restore to their former Liberty, all Bishops, Clercs, and Ecclesiastic Persons, and to remove all his Officers, whom by Force and Fear, he had appointed to Govern that Nation under him, and Willed him, if he pretended any Right to the Kingdom of Scotland, or any Part of it, not to omit to send Commissioners fully instructed, within six Months after the receipt of his Letters, to his presence, he being ready to

E

F



A to do him Justice as his beloved Son, and inviolably to observe his Right, if he had any: Bringing back and reserving by the Tenor of these Letters, all Questions, Strifes, Controversies whatsoever, between him, the Kingdom of Scotland, the Prelates, Clercs, and Secular Persons, which then had been, were, or might be for the future, to the Cognisance, and Determination of the Roman See; Decreeing it void, if any thing should be attempted to the contrary. Dated at *Anagni* the 5th of the Calends of July, or 27th of June, A. D. 1300. in the 28th of Ed. 1.

B The Archbishop was full of Obedience, and very quick in repairing to the King, who was then in Scotland; [6] preparing for his Journey immediately upon the Receipt of the Pope's Commands, and came to him August 25th, being then at Dinner in the midst of his Army, who appointed him the next Day for the Delivery of the Message, which was done, and the Pope's Letters presented to the King, before Edward his Son, the Earls, Barons, and Knights of his Army in great Multitude; who causing them to be Read publickly, were patiently heard of all; when the Archbishop (a sure Friend to the Scots) Encouraged the King, and Persuaded him ([7] as he says himself) by all Ways and Means he could, or knew, to Obey and Comply with all things in those Letters. Then [8] withdrawing by the King's Command, while he Deliberated with his Noblemen, he was called again, and had this Answer, [9] That having received the Pope's Admonition, concerning the State of the Kingdom of Scotland, it was the Custom of England, That in such Affairs, all whom these concerned ought to be advised with: And the present Business of Scotland, having Relation to the State and Right of the Kingdom of England, there were many Prelates, Earls, Barons, and Great Men not then with him in the Army, concerned in it, without whose Advice, he could not Answer fully: Yet that he intended as soon as could, to Consult and Deliberate with the Absent as well as Present, and by their common and joint Determination send the Pope an Answer.

E And for this Reason, at the same Time and Place, when he issued his Writs for the Calling of a Parlement to meet on the Octaves of St. Hilary, for Receiving of the Perambulations of the Forests, the King wrote also, [1] to some of his own Clercs, several Deans of Cathedral Churches, several Archdeacons, Officials, and others, that had the Best Reputation for Lawyers in those times, to come to this Parlement, for that he would then have special Conference and Treaty with Lawyers, and others of his Council, about the Right and Dominion he and his Ancestors had in the Kingdom of Scotland; and to the same Purpose he [2] wrote to the Chancellors, and both Universities, to send to this Parlement the most Expert and Knowing Men in the Written Law, which were sent accordingly. And further he sent his Writs [3] to several Deans and Chapters, to several Abbots, Priors, and their Convents, (the Chiefest of the Nation) to search their Archieves, and send to this Parlement all their Chronicles, in which was to be found any thing concerning the Kingdom of Scotland to make good his Title to it.

Upon

He readily obeys the Pope's Commands.

[6] *Ibm* Fol. 438. l. 2. in the A Bishop's Letter to the Pope, or Certificate, what he had done in this Affair. And persuades the King to comply with the Pope's Letter.

[7] *Ibm*. N. 50. in the same Letter.

[8] *Ibm*.

[9] Fol. 439. N. 10.

The King's Answer to the Pope's Letter.

[1] *Claus.* 28 Ed. 1. M. 3. *Drf.*

H: Sumons many Clergy-men, Lawyers to the Parlement at Lincoln.

[2] *Ibm*. And sends to the Universities for their best Lawyers.

[3] *Ibm*. & M. 3. *Drf.*

To advise about his Title to Scotland.



The Resolution of the Barons; with their Letter to the Pope, concerning his Pretences to the Kingdom of Scotland.

\* See this Letter in *M. W. f. 443. N. 30, 40, &c. Wals. f. 85. N. 10, 20, 30, &c. Dugdale's Summons to Parliaments. f. 31, 32, 33, 34.* from the Record in the Exchequer; with all the Barons Names, Printed at Oxford in Latin and English 1678. with the Names of the Earls and Barons, the Cuts of their Seals of Arms.

A. D. 1301.  
29 Ed. 1.

[4] Rot. Perambulationum Forestar. 29 Ed. 1. in Turre. A. D. 1301. 29 Ed. 1. The Perambulations of the Forests Settled and Confirmed. See the Ordinance of the Forest made the 33d year of this King, in the Statutes at Large.

Upon Reading the Pope's Bull by the King's Order, and truly Interpreting of it to the Barons in Parlement, there was much Debate amongst the Lawyers, whether, how, or after what manner this Bull or Letter should be answered, as appears by an old Parlement Roll in the Tower, in the 29th of this King, and truly Printed in Mr. Pryn's Ed. 1. what of it remains, Fol. 885. whereupon it was Resolved by the Barons \* to write to the Pope, and let him know, That in Temporals the Kingdom of Scotland by no manner of Right whatever belonged to the Church of Rome at any time; That it was an ancient Fee, or Feudal Right of the Crown and Kings of England, and that the Kingdom and Kings of Scotland, have been Subject only to the Kings of England, and no other; and further, That the Kings of England concerning their Rights in that Kingdom, or other Temporalities have never answered, or ought to answer, before any Ecclesiastic or Secular Judge, by reason of his Royal Dignity, and Custom to the contrary in all Ages. And to signifie to him, That having diligently considered his Letters, it was, and for the future should be, the common, unanimous, and unshaken Resolution of all and every one of them, That their Lord the King, concerning his Rights in Scotland, or other his Temporal Rights, should in nowise answer judicially before him, or send Proxys or Commissioners to him, especially when it would manifestly tend to the Disinheritance of the Crown of England, and Dignity Royal, and the Notorious Subversion of the State of the Kingdom; to the Prejudice of their Liberties, Customs, and Paternal Laws, which by their Oaths they were bound to Observe and Defend, and by the help of God, would maintain them with their whole Force or Power; nor would they permit the King to do such strange and unheard of things, if he should attempt it: Wherefore they Reverently, and Humbly beseech his Holiness, favourably to permit the King peaceably to possess his Rights, Liberties, Customs, and Laws aforesaid, without Diminution or Disturbance. In Testimony whereof they put to their Seals (104) for themselves and the whole Community of the Kingdom. Dated at Lincoln the 12th of February, A. D. 1301. in the 29th of Ed. 1.

This Business was first Dispatch'd, That as soon as might be, when the six Months after the King had received the Pope's Bull should be Elapsed, in which he had appointed the King to send Commissioners to him, the Pope might receive Satisfaction why they did not come.

At the same time the Perambulations of the Forests, the main Business for which this Parlement was called, according to the purport of the preceding Writ, were Exhibited therein; and as 'tis contained in the [4] Record, the Community of the Kingdom Granted the King a Fifteenth Part of their Moveables, they should have at Michaelmas next coming; and he Confirmed them with this Clause, *Quod quicquid per istas Perambulationes ponitur extra Forestam, Remaneat extra Forestam; & Residuum remaneat Foresta, secundam metas & bundas in perpetuum*; That is, whatever by these Perambulations was Deforested, should remain so, and what was then allowed to be Forest, according to the Metes and Bounds then set out, should be so for ever. These Letters Patents, or Confirmations of all the Perambulations, bear date at Lincoln, Feb. 14.

in



in the 29th of his Reign. Thus were the two Charters, and the Great Business of the Perambulations of the Forest fully Settled and Confirmed.

A When the Laity gave this Fifteenth, Robert Archbishop of Canterbury would grant Nothing for the Clergy, not of the Temporalities annexed to the Church, without the Pope's special Licence. *Pro hoc confirmationis effectu, concesserunt Comites & Barones Regi quintam decimam partem bonorum suorum mobilium, in Festo Sancti Michaelis proximo tunc futuro; sed Robertus Archiepiscopus Cantuariensis pro Clero nihil voluit concedere, neque de Temporalitate annexa Ecclesiæ, sine Licentia Summi Pontificis speciali*, as the Record hath it.

The Laity gave a xvth for this Confirmation. The Arch-Bp. for the Clergy would not do any thing without the Pope's Licence.

B After the Transaction and Settling of these Two great Affairs, those whom the King employed had time from the Chronicles sent to this Parlement from the Monasteries, to make a \* Deduction of his Right and Title to Scotland, which was Historical, and almost the same, but more full and particular than that which was delivered to the Scots when he claimed the Superiority, and direct Dominion over Scotland, in the 19th of his Reign. This was sent in a Letter from the King to the Pope, with a Narrative of the whole Nation of Scotland, having done Homage and sworn Fealty to him, and owned and acknowledged him to be their King and Supreme Lord several times; and what they had done against their Oaths, invading, burning, spoiling, and wasting England when they thought fit; and also cautioning the Pope against the false Insinuations and Suggestions of the Scots; concluding with a Petition, That he would have a Paternal Care and Affection to his Royal Rights. Dated at Kemsley, or Kynardesey, the 7th of May, A. D. 1301. if the Year began at Christmas; if on Lady-day, or 25th of March, then 1302. in the 29th of his Reign.

\* See Mar. Westm. f. 439. n. 20, 30, &c. Wals. f. 81, &c. Rot. Claus. 29. Ed. I. M. 10. Dors. Printed in Ryley's Placita Parliamentaria, Append. f. 596. The King's Title to Scotland sent to the Pope, with a Narrative of the Perfidiousness of the Scots.

E The King at the Request of the King of France, had granted the Scots a Truce, which was to end at Whitsunday next coming, as says the [5] Writ, by which he Summoned the Earls, Barons, and Knights, (such as he pleased) to meet him at Berwic, in the Feast of St. John Baptist, with their Horse and Arms, and to go with him against the Scots, His Rebels, and notorious Traytors, to Repress their Rebellion and Pride; so the Record, *Contra Scotos, Rebelles nostros, & notorie proditores, ad ipsorum Rebellionem, & Proterviam reprimendam*. This Summons was dated at Lincoln, Feb. 14. in the 29th of Ed. I. on the same Day he confirmed the Perambulations.

[5] Claus. 29. Ed. I. Dors. M. --- Dagd. Summons to Parl. f. 35.

F This Year, the King made his Eldest Son Edward, [6] Prince of Wales, and Earl of Chester; with which the Welshmen were well pleased, as being born at Caernarvon in their own Country.

[6] Wals. f. 79. n. 10. Matsh. West. f. 433. n. 50. Prince of Wales & Earl of Chester.

In Scotland he makes his [7] Procurators or Proxies to the Pope, Walter Bishop of Litchfield and Coventry, Amadeus Earl of Savoy, Otto de Grandison Kt. and Gerrard Arch-Deacon of Lichfield, to desire him speedily to put an end to all Differences between him

[7] Pat. 29. Edw. I. M. 2. intus & Claus. 29. Ed. I. M. 3. Dors.



K. Edw. sends Procurators to the Pope to complete the Treaty of Peace between him & the K. of Fran.

[8] *Wals.* f. 85. n. 50. A. D. 1301. 30. Ed. I. [9] *Ib.* t. 86. lin. 3. He grants the Scots a Truce.

[1] *Claus.* 30. Ed. I. M. 15. *Dors.* Two of the King's Procurators to the Pope refuse the Employment. [2] *Ibm.* The other two proceed. [3] *Ibm.*

30. Ed. I.

[4] *Rot. Claus.* 30. Ed. I. M. 14. *Dors.* The Earl-Marshal grants his Lands, &c. to the King and his Heirs.

[5] *Ibm.* Also his Goods.

[6] *Ibm.*

and the French King, and to complete the long-deferred Treaty of Peace, according to the Form of his Pronunciation, or Decree, made by virtue of the Compromise unto him; but the Pope was not at leisure. The Commissions, or Procuratory Letters, are dated at Glasco, Aug. 24. in the 29th of his Reign.

The King staid all Winter in Scotland, [8] where many of his Military Men lost their Horses for want of Forage. After Christmas he again, at the Instance of the King of France, [9] Granted the Scots a Truce until the Feast of All-Saints next coming; and toward the Spring having settled things in Scotland, returned into England.

All the Arguments the King used by Letters and Messages to the Earl of Savoy and Otto de Grandison [1], who were best acquainted with the State of his Affairs, and Differences between him and the King of France, could not persuade them to undertake this Embassy, or Procuration to the Pope; and therefore he [2] committed the whole Affair to the Bishop and Arch-Deacon, to hear for him and in his Name the Pope's Pronunciation, Will, and Pleasure, in those things that then were not declared and determined between them, by virtue of the Compromise made by both into his Person. [3] *Ad audiendum pro nobis & nostro nomine, Pronunciationem vestram, Voluntatem, & Beneplacitum super his quæ inter Regem Franciæ, & nos per vos (i. e. the Pope) virtute Compromissi, &c. restant pronuncianda & facienda.* This Letter and new Commission was directed to the Pope, to give him notice of the Refusal of the First two, the Earl and Knight, and dated at Darlington in the Bishoprick of Duresm, March 5. in the 30th of Edw. I.

In April following Roger le Bigod, Earl of Norfolk and Marshal of England, granted and quiet claimed for his Heirs, [4] to the King and his Heirs for ever, All his Castles, Towns, Mannors, Lands, and Tenements in England and Wales, except the Mannors of Sterington, Wylton, Thornton, and Leverham; with the Advousons of the Churches, and all other their Appurtenances in the County of York; and the Mannors of Acle and Castre, with their Appurtenances; and the Advouson of the Church of Geldeston in the County of Norfolk, with the Knights Fees, Advousons of Religious Houses and Churches, Hundreds, Honours, Liberties, and all their Appurtenances, by what Name soever they should be called; so as neither he nor his Heirs, nor any one in his Name, should have any Right or Claim in them. Which Grant was Dated at the Abby of St. John's in Colchester the 12th of April, in the 30th of Ed. I.

He also made a Grant [5] to the King, of all his Goods and Chattels, upon and in those Castles, Mannors, Towns, &c. except upon the Mannors and Lands before excepted. Dated at the same Time and Place: And made Letters of Attorney of the same Date, to several Persons in every [6] County where he had Lands, to give Livery and Seisin accordingly.



Further, at the same Place, and on the same Day, he restored, remitted, and quiet claimed for him and his Heirs, to the King and his Heirs for ever, all the [7] Right, Honour, and Dominion he had by the Name of Earl in the County of Norfolk and the Marshalcie of England, with every thing thereunto belonging.

[7] *Ibm.*  
He Releases  
and gives up  
his Earldom  
and Marshal-  
ship.

A

Lastly, he restored, remitted and quiet claimed the [8] Castles of Bristol and Nottingham, which he was to have held for Life by the Grant of the King, so as he, nor any one in his Name, should claim any Right therein. Dated at Fulham, May 15. in the 30th Year of Ed. I.

[8] *Ibm.*

B

The Reasons of these Grants and Restorings might be what *Mat. Westminster* reports, (tho' he mistakes the Year) in the 33d of this King he says he then had a time of Speaking, and that he warily convicted the Earl-Marshal, upon a Conspiracy, which the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and many Earls and Barons had contrived against him while he was in Flanders; who not being able to contradict what the King said, begged his Pardon. For obtaining of which, he made the King Heir of all Things he had: By which means he saved his Life; and the King, as a Reward, added to

The Reasons  
why the Earl-  
Marshal gave  
the King his  
Lands, and  
parted with  
his Office and  
Honour.

C

his Life a Thousand Pounds Land by the Year. Which might be the Mannors and Lands he had liberty to except. [9] *Et aderat tempus loquendi, Rex convenit cante Comitem Marescallum super quodam Dedecore, & Conspiratione quam Archiepiscopus Cantuariensis, & plures Comites & Barones contra eum Machinaverant, ipso tunc agente in Flandria, qui nequaquam valens ista contradicere, Gratiam Regis petiit. Pro qua obtinenda, constituit Regem heredem suum universorum quæ habuit, & sic mortem perdidit, & vitam invenit, & Rex Remunerans eum, vitæ Comitis mille libratas Terræ adaugendo concessit.* In like manner the King convicted all the others, one by one, that were in this Conspiracy, and fined or punished them in Sums of Money. [1] *Similiter Rex singulim singulos conveniens, qui huic facto consenserant, pecuniaria pœna multavit.*

[9] *Mat. West.*  
f. 452. lin. 2.  
He with the  
A. Bp. and o-  
thers had con-  
spired against  
the King.

D

Yet within this very Year of his Reign, the King [2] re-granted the Earldom and Marescalcié of England, with all his Castles, Mannors, and Lands in England and Wales, to him and his Issue lawfully to be begotten upon the Body of his Wife Alice; and for want of such Issue, to return to the King and his Heirs [3]. He died without Issue in the 35th of this King, and the Honour and Estate came into his hands.

[1] *Ibm.* lin. 8.

E

Some great Business the King had at this time, that he had fixed in his Mind, and laid much to Heart, for which he sent Peter de Dene Canon of London, and Roger le Sauvage Knight, to the Pope. [4] *Dilectos & Fideles nostros Petrum de Dene Canonicum Londinensem, & Rogerum le Sauvage Militem, pro quibusdam negotiis nostris quæ multum insident Cordi nostro & Domini summi Pontificis præsentiam destinantes, &c.* Joining with them [5] William de Geynburgh his Lieger at the Court of Rome, and [6] writing to M. Cardinal Deacon of New St. Mary in the Porch or Gallery

[2] *Rot. Cart.*  
30 Ed. I. n. 24.  
28, 29. *Dugd.*  
*Baron.* vol. i. f.  
136. col. 1.  
The King re-  
grants his  
Lands, Honor  
and Office to  
the Marshal.

[3] *Dugd. Bar.*  
ib.

[4] *Pat.* 30.  
Ed. I. M. 12.  
*in ut. Præf.*

Ed I. f. 93C.  
The King

sends Messen-  
gers to Rome  
upon secret  
Service.

[5] *It. r.*

[6] *It. m.*

F

Some great Business the King had at this time, that he had fixed in his Mind, and laid much to Heart, for which he sent Peter de Dene Canon of London, and Roger le Sauvage Knight, to the Pope. [4] *Dilectos & Fideles nostros Petrum de Dene Canonicum Londinensem, & Rogerum le Sauvage Militem, pro quibusdam negotiis nostris quæ multum insident Cordi nostro & Domini summi Pontificis præsentiam destinantes, &c.* Joining with them [5] William de Geynburgh his Lieger at the Court of Rome, and [6] writing to M. Cardinal Deacon of New St. Mary in the Porch or Gallery



[7] *Ibm.*[1] *Pat. 30.  
Ed. I. M. 12.  
intus.*Cardinals the  
King's Pensioners.[4] *Ibm.*[3] *Claus. 30.  
Ed. I. M. 6.  
Dors.  
New Procurators sent to the Pope for a final Concussion of the Peace between the two Kingdoms.*[4] *Pat. 30.  
Ed. I. M. 9.  
intus.  
Without effect.*[5] *Dugd. Bar.  
f. 183. col. 1.  
& Rot. fin. 27.  
Ed. I. M. 23.  
The Constable grants all his Lands, Honours, and Office to the King.*[6] *Rot. Claus.  
30 Ed. I. M. 5.  
Dors.*[7] *Ibm.*

The King re-grants them upon Marriage with his Daughter.

[8] *Dugd. ut  
supra. Claus. 32  
Ed. I. M. 16.  
Cart. 32 Ed. I.  
n. 48.*

John de Seagrave made Guardian of Scotland.

[9] *Walf. f. 86.  
n. 30.*[1] *Pat. 30.  
Ed. I. M. 15.*[2] *Walf. f. 87.  
lin. 3.*

[7] (*Sanctæ Mariæ novæ in Porticu Diacono Cardinali*) to assist them, and effectually promote his Business with the Pope, and for so doing he should always find him ready [1] to do those things which were grateful to him. The same Letters were wrote and directed to Six Cardinals more, Four Deacon and Two Priest Cardinals. This Letter is Dated June 13. at *Chartham*. The Four Deacon Cardinals were his Pensioners *Luke de Flisco*, Deacon Cardinal of *St. Mary in the Broad way*, *Sanctæ Mariæ in via lata Cardinalis Diaconus*. *Peter Piperne*, Deacon Cardinal of *New St. Mary*, *Sanctæ Mariæ novæ* (not in Porticu) *Diaconus Cardinalis*. *William of Pergamus*, Deacon Cardinal of *St. Nicholas in the Tullian Prison* (a Parish in Rome, as they all were) *Sancti Nicholai in Carcere Tulliano Diaconus Cardinalis*. *Francis* Deacon Cardinal of *St. Mary in Cosmedyn*, *Sanctæ Mariæ in Cosmedyn Diaconus Cardinalis* [4]. Who had every one 50 Marks Sterling yearly paid out of the Exchequer by equal Portions at *Easter* and *Michaelmas*, for their Diligence and Sincerity in Transacting his Business.

The King's former Proctors having not done any thing concerning the Peace between the Two Kingdoms, he sends others to the Pope, viz. [3] *William de Gainsburgh* and *H. de Hertpole*, Two Friars Minors, and Two of his own Clerks. *John de St. Clare*, Cannon of *London*, and *Philip Martell*, Professor of the Civil Laws, with *William de Dene Knight*, or any Four or Three of them, with full Power to give a final Dispatch to this Business, according to the Form of his former Pronunciation or Decree [4]. Giving them also in their Commission, or Letters Procuratory, full and free Power, to Demand, Hear, and Receive a total Consummation of his Decree, and the Peace to ensue thereupon. Both these Records are Dated at *Arundel*, Septemb. 9. A. D. 1302. in the 33th of this King. Their Negotiation proved also ineffectual.

As the Earl Marshal, so *Humphry de Bobun*, Son and Heir to that *Humphry* who opposed King *Edward* in the 25th of his Reign, and doing Homage, had [5] Livery of his Father's Lands, in the 27th: This Year also granted all his Castles, Towns, Mannors, Lands and Tenements, Knights Fees, Advousons of Religious Houses and Churches, Hundreds, Honors, Liberties, and all their Appurtenances in *England* and *Wales*, to the [6] King and his Heirs for ever, without any Exception or Reservation of any thing to himself. [7.] And all his Right, Honour, and Dominion he had as Earl in the Counties of *Hereford* and *Essex*, and the Constableship of *England*. The Grant is dated at *London*, the 8th of *October*, in the 30th of *Edw. I.* Which upon the Marriage of *Elizabeth* 7th Daughter of *Edward I.* Widow of *John* Earl of *Holland*, *Zeland*, and Lord of *Friseland*, were [8] Regranted to him about two years after.

After the Feast of *All-Saints*, when the Truce with the Scots was expired, the King sent [9] *John de Seagrave* with an Army into *Scotland*, [1] making him Governour of *Berwick* and Guardian of the Kingdom; who marching [2] with a small Party towards *Edinburgh*, the Scots, who lay in Ambuscado, wounded and took

A

B

C

D

E

F



took him with several others ; but a fresh Party coming up, rescued and took him from those that had him Prisoner.

Taken Prisoner, and rescued.

Next Year, on the 10th of *January*, A. D. 1303. beginning the Year at *Christmas* (as *Walsingham* always doth) [3] the King of *France*, willing to leave the *Scots* out of the *Treaty*, and conclude a Peace with *England*, King *Edward* gave his Letters Patents, or Commissions, to *Amadeus* Earl of *Savoy*, *Henry de Lacy* Earl of *Lincoln*, and *Otto de Grandison*, or any Two of them, dated at *Odyham*, *January* 10. [3] to Prorogue the Truce between him and the King of *France*, their Kingdoms and Subjects, and to settle a firm and perpetual Peace between them, their Heirs and Successors, against all Persons but the Pope and Church of *Rome* ; and also to the same Persons and Bishop of *Worcester* gave Commission on the 2d of *March* in the same Year to the same purpose, who Treating with the Dukes of *Burgoine* and *Britan*, and other Commissioners of the King of *France*, concluded a firm Peace between the Two Kings and their Realms, [4] leaving the *Scots* out of the *Treaty*. For the Confirmation whereof, the King made his Letters Patents, and Sealed them at the Town of *St. John's* or *Perth* in *Scotland*, *June* 10. A. D. 1303. in the 31st of his Reign. All the *Procurations*, *Patents*, and other things concerning this Peace, and the *Articles* themselves, are in a special Roll in the *Tower*, which at the writing hereof I could have no opportunity to peruse.

A. D. 1303.  
Pryn's Ed. I.  
1020

[3] Pryn's Ed. I.  
f. 1020.  
The Truce with the King of France prolonged.

31 Ed. I.  
A Peace between the two Kings.

[4] Ibid.  
The Scots left out of it.

Upon this *Treaty* and *Peace*, [5] *Gascoigne* was restored to King *Edward*, with all its Rights and Liberties, as he possessed it before the beginning of the War. The Revolt of *Flanders* from the Subjection of *France* (which had been subdued when King *Edward*, by reason of the Domestick Troubles, and Confusion of his own Affairs at home, was not able to assist the *Flemmings*) [6] contributed much to the advancement of this Peace ; for the *French* attempting to regain *Flanders*, were every where beaten, and their Armies routed, and in all their Attempts had ill Success.

[5] Mat. West.  
f. 446. n. 20.  
*Gascoigne* restored to King *Edward*.

The Revolt of *Flanders* the cause of this Peace.

[6] Ibid. n. 30.  
& *Mezeray's*  
Hist. Fr. f. 330.

This Year the *Scots* armed again, under the [7] Conduct of *William Waleys*, and the King summoned his *Militia* to be at *Roxburgh* in *Scotland* on *Whitsunday*, from whence by small Marches he went through the whole Kingdom to *Cathness*, no Force opposing him. The *Scots* finding they were not able to resist, sent Mediators, and humbly craved his Peace, and that they might be permitted to compound for their Estates with them to whom they had been given ; both which the King granted. In his Return from the North, passing it by as he went, he besieged *Sterling-Castle*, which was defended against him, and staid all Winter at *Dumfermling* not far from thence. *Mat. Westminster* says, the Great Men of *Scotland*, as well Earls as Barons [8] *Magnates Regni Scotie, tam Comites, quam Barones*, being wholly reduced and overcome, submitted themselves to the Will of the King of *England*, who admitted them to his Grace and Mercy, imposing upon them a pecuniary Mulct, appointing them Days and Years, and certain Times for the payment of it.

[7] Wals. f. 86.  
n. 40. f. 87.  
n. 10. 20. 31  
Ed. I.

The Scots arm again under *W. Waleys*.

They crave Peace, and have their Terms granted.

*Sterling-Castle* besieged.

[8] f. 446. n. 40. 50.



[9] Ibm. f. 447.  
N. 30.

Pope Boniface  
the 8th dies.

[1] *Walsing.*  
F. 87. N. 20. f.  
89. n. 10.

Benedict the  
11th Chosen.

[2] Ibm. f. 89.  
N. 40.

*Sterling Castle*  
yielded upon  
Discretion.

A. D. 1304.  
32 Ed. 1.

[3] Ibm. N. 50.  
*John Segrave*  
appointed  
Guardian of  
Scotland.

[4] Ibm.  
The Kings-  
Bench and Ex-  
chequer remo-  
ved to London.

[5] *Mat. W. fl.*  
f. 448. lin. 7.  
A. D. 1304. 32  
Edw. 1.

The Cardinals  
Nine Months  
in choosing a  
Pope.

[6] Ibm. f. 451.  
N. 10.

*Ryleys Pla-  
cita Parlia-  
mentar* f. 369.  
from the  
French Re-  
cord there.

The Terms of  
Peace given  
to, and ac-  
cepted by the  
Scots.

This Year on the [9] 12th of *Octob.* died with Grief and Anguish of Mind, Pope Boniface VIII. after he had been [1] accused by the King of France of Heresy, Simony, and Murder, imprisoned, and plundered of all his Goods; and the Bishop of Ostia was chosen Pope, by the Name of Benedict XI.

After Winter the [2] King went in Person to the Siege of *Sterling Castle*, when it was briskly plyed with Engines, yet they within made a good Defence; but being very hard pressed by the Besiegers, the King being there all the time, the Castle was yielded upon Discretion on St. Magaret's Day, or 20th of July, the Governor whereof *William Olifard* who had surprized it, was sent to the Tower of London, and others to divers Castles.

The King [3] having thus subdued Scotland, according to his Mind, returned into England, appointing *John de Segrave* Guardian of it, and when he came to *Tork* [4] removed the Courts of Kings-Bench and Exchequer, which had been there seven Years, to their old Place at London.

On the Seventh of July this Year died [5] Pope Benedict, and in nine Months the Cardinals could not agree about the Choice of another; at length, they unanimously chose the [6] Archbishop of *Burdeaux*, *Bertram de Angeous*, upon *Whitsunday* the Year following, by the Name of Clement the Fifth.

Toward the latter End of the Year of the Lord 1304. and within three Months after the Beginning of the 33d year of the Reign of the King, we find it Recorded upon what Terms the Scots made their Submission after their last Insurrection, the Title of the Record is, The Terms given to, and accepted by *John Comyn*, his Aydants and Assistants, were these following in this Form.

These are the Things agreed on \*with Monsieur *Richard de Burgh* Earl of Ulster, Monsieur *Aymer de Valence*, Seigneur de Montignak, Monsieur *Henry de Percy*, Knights, and *John Benstede*, Clerk, on the Part of King Edward, and *John Comyn* of *Badenagh*, for Himself and his Aydants of Scotland, as well those that were out of it, as within it. For the Faithful Keeping and Observing whereof, the said Earl, Aymer, Henry, and John de Benstede, in the Name of the King, and the said John Comyn, Monsieur *Edmund Comyn de Kilbride*, Monsieur *John de Graham*, Monsieur *John de Vaux*, Monsieur *Godfry de Roos*, Monsieur *John de Maxwell* the Elder, Monsieur *Peter de Prendregyst*, Monsieur *Walter de Berkeley de Kerdaan*, Monsieur *Hugh de Erth*, Monsieur *William de Erth*, Monsieur *James de Roos*, and Monsieur *Walter de Rothevan*, Knights, for themselves, and all their Scots assistants, who would be in the Peace and Faith of the King, were Sworn.

First, It was agreed, That all Manner of People of Scotland, who came to the Peace of the King with the said John Comyn, except the Persons after named, should be received to the Conditions following, to wit, Their Lives and Limbs or Members were saved, They were

A

B

C

D

E

F



were to be Free from Imprisonment, and not to be Disherited, except for their Ransom or Fine, and the Amends for their Faults only committed against the King.

Secondly, Those under Age ought to have the same Conditions, as to their Lives, Limbs, Imprisonment, and Disheritance.

A Thirdly, For their Ransom, and all other Things, it should be as the King should order in his next Parlement, which was on the Sunday after the Feast of St. Mathew next ensuing, and the Establishment of Scotland was to be as it should be then ordained.

B Fourthly, All the strong Holds now in the King's or his Friends Hands, should Remain so, and the Charge of keeping them, should be Defrayed out of what belonged to them, or in other Convenient manner, by those who had the Custody of them, or to whom they were Delivered.

Fifthly, The Prisoners on both sides were to be set Free, except Monsieur Peter de Morham, and his Father.

Sixthly, That the Hostages for the Payment of the Ransoms of Prisoners on both sides, should be Released.

C The Persons Excepted, were Robert Bishop of Glascow, Monsieur James the Steward of Scotland, John Soules, Monsieur David de Graham, Monsieur Alexander de Lindesey, Monsieur Simon Fraser, Thomas Du Boys, and Monsieur William de Waleys, concerning whom it was agreed, That the Bishop as to his Body and Temporality, the Seneschal or Steward, and John Soules, should have the same Conditions with the Commons (That is, have their Lives and Limbs safe, be free from Imprisonment, and not Disinherited) but with two Years Banishment out of Scotland beyond the River Trent; That the Steward's Castle should be in the King's Possession during his Exile, and he to be at the Charge of keeping them.

E Concerning Monsieur David de Graham, and Monsieur Alexander de Lindesey, it was agreed, They should have the same Conditions, and be Banished Scotland for half a Year, David beyond the River Tweed, and Alexander beyond Trent. As to Monsieur Simon Fraser, and Thomas Du Boys, it was agreed also, That they should have the same Conditions, but be Banished the King's Dominions for three Years, and also out of the Dominions of the King of France, unless in the mean time they could find Favour; and as to William Waleys he was to submit himself wholly to the Mercy of the King.

F Further it was agreed, That the Bishops of St. Andrews and Dunkeldin, the Earl of Boughan, (i.e. John Comyn,) the Seneschal, or Steward of Scotland, Monsieur John de Soules, Monsieur Ingelram de Humfravill, and the other Persons of Scotland, which were abroad, and the Confederates of John Comyn, should come to the King's Peace within Fifteen Days after Easter next, every one according to his Quality, at Dumfermling, to do Homage, and swear Fealty.

And



And be it known, That the foresaid *Earl of Ulster, Aymer, Henry and John Benstede*, promised in Good Faith, to use their best Endeavour with the King, to Ratifie in all points this Accord by his Letters Patents, so soon as *John Comyn* and others, that should come with him, had done their Homage, and sworn Fealty in due manner. In Witness whereof, one Part of the Indenture which was to remain with the King was Sealed by *John Comyn, Edmund Comyn, John de Graham, John Vaux*, and others, and the other Part was Sealed by the *Earl of Ulster, Aymer, Henry and John Benstede*. Dated at *Strathbord* the 9th day of February, in the 33d year of the King; the Title of the Record is, *Forma Pacis Scotie in Adventu Johannis le Comyn, & aliorum*: The Form of Peace of Scotland upon the Submission of *John Comyn*, and others.

In the [8] Parlement at Westminster, on the Sunday after St. Mathew the Apostle, the King enjoined the Bishop of Glasgow, (how it came to be so at this time I find not) the *Earl of Carrick* (i.e. *Robert Brus*) and *John de Moubray*, [9] That they would treat amongst themselves, and agree upon a Day and Place for a Parlement to be called concerning the State of the Kingdom, and People of Scotland, the Number and Quality of the Scots who should come to it, and others who should stay in the Kingdom, and have the Care of it.

Their Advice and Agreement [1] was, That the Parlement could not be well assembled before *Midsummer*, and the Place to be where the King pleased; That as to the Persons *Two Bishops, Two Abbots, Two Earls, Two Barons*, and *Two* for the Commons, (*& Dieux pur la Commune*) were a sufficient Number, if the King thought so. And concerning the Persons that were to take care of the Kingdom, they thought, the present Guardians, and King's Ministers with the Community were sufficient for that; [2] which things being Read before the King and Council, on the 26th of March, the King Answered, Willed, and Granted, (*Vult & Concedit*) the Day of the Parlement should be three Weeks after *Midsummer*; and that it should be at London. That Ten who should be chosen by the whole Community, might come to the Parlement for the whole Community of Scotland, and that the Keeping of the Nation should be as they had said.

They three Petitioned the King, That those which were Elected to come to this Parlement for the Community, might have their Charges and Expences born by them. His Answer was, [3] *Rex vult, &c.* The King Wills, That those Ten who shall be chosen to come to the Parlement for the whole Community of Scotland, shall have their Expences of that Community, &c.

This Parlement was [4] Prorogued from three Weeks after the Feast of St. John Baptist, to the Feast of the Assumption of the Virgin Mary, or 15th of August, and from thence to the Octaves of the Nativity of the same Virgin, or 15th of September, [5] at which time came the Scots Commissioners chosen by the Commonalty of Scotland, \* who met for that Purpose at Perth, on the Morrow of Ascension; the Bishops of St. Andrews and Dunkeldin; the Abbots of Comper and Menros; the Earl of Bohgan; Monsieur John de Moubray; Monf. Robert de Keith; Monf. Adam de Gurdan; Monf. John de Inchemartin; Earl Patrick, who was chosen by the Commonalty to be the Tenth, came not, and therefore by Command of the

King,

[8] Ryley's Placit. Parliamen. f. 240. A.D. 1304. Ed. 1. 33 d.

[9] Ibm. f. 243 Three Scots, a Bishop, Earl, and another, to agree upon the Number and Quantity of the Scots to come to an English Parlement.

[1] Ibm. They agree upon the Number and Quality of those Persons.

[2] Ibm. A.D. 1305. 33 Ed. 1. The King appoints the Time of the Parlement, and consents to the Number of Commissioners to be chosen by the Scots.

[3] Ibm. f. 244. Those Commissioners to have their Expences born.

[4] Ibm. f. 503 & Claus. 33 Ed. 1. M. 13. Dors. in eod. n.

[5] Ibm. \* Ibm. f. 279.

The Names of those Scots Commissioners.



A King Monsieur John de Monteith was assigned in his stead; [6] These with Twenty English there named, Treated about the Establishment of Scotland, and settled the King's Lieutenant, or Guardian, the Chancellor, Chamberlain, Judges and Sheriffs, all by Name, as well of those that were born in Scotland, as English; They likewise settled the Coroners, the Castles, and Constables of Castles; They also ordered all things concerning the Laws and Usages of Scotland, concerning the Peace, and Disturbers of the Peace, and concerning the whole Government. And the Title to this Record is, *Ordinatio facta per Dominum Regem, super stabilitate Terræ Scotiæ*; The Ordinance made by the King for the Establishment of Scotland.

B King Edward thinking himself safe by this Establishment, thought he had now a time to speak with the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, [7] whom he accused of a Confederacy with certain Earls, and Noblemen, to Dethrone him, and keep him in Prison, and Crown his Son Edward, which when he could not deny, being severely rebuked by the King, he fell down at his Feet with great howling, and much weeping, beseeching Pardon, calling the King his Lord, which he never did before in Speech or Writing; [8] So this Proud Man, hated of God and Men, who with his Pride had Blackened the Priesthood, and Clergy of all England, (*Sacerdotium & Clerum per totam Angliam sua superbia deturpavit*) and Exercised an unheard of Tyranny over the People, now taken by the King in his own Wickedness, conscious of it, and affrighted with the fear of Punishment, as he lay prostrate on the Ground before the King, committed himself and his Goods to his Mercy.

D The King [9] Complains of him to the Pope, and prosecutes him before him, for disturbing the Peace of the Kingdom, and causing often Commotions in it, defending and incouraging Rebels, and intending to Disinherit him; for which Crimes, at the Instance of the King, he was cited by the Pope to his Court, and was there suspended from the Execution of his Office, (*ab executione, officii sui & temporalium atque spiritualium administratione suspensus est*) whilst he should purge himself of what was objected to him by the King.

E Upon this Suspension the [1] Pope deputed certain Persons to administer the Spiritualities and Temporalities of the Archbishoprick, and receive the Profits to his Use. As to the last the King [2] wrote to him, it was to the manifest prejudice of his Crown and Dignity, and therefore he had caused them to be seised, as he might lawfully, and was bound to do, by his Royal Right, and according to the Custom of the Kingdom. Yet tho' the Profits of the Temporalities belonged to the Crown during the Suspension, for the particular Affection he had to his Person, he was willing, and granted, that the Guardian thereof, should pay them to such as he should assign to receive them.

F Not long after the last Parlement, and the Establishment of Scotland made therein, and agreed unto by the Scots Commissioners, the King made these his Letters Patents, according to the former

[6] *Ibm.*  
The Settlement of Scotland by those Commissioners, and 26 Engl. sh.

The King accuseth the Arch-Bishop, &c. of Treason.  
[7] *Chron. Will. Thorn. c. 2004. n. 50, 60, &c. and Antiqu. Eccles. Britan. from the Annals of St. Augustin in Canterbury, f. 207. n. 10, 20.*  
[8] *Ibm* in both.

[9] *Rot. Rom. 34 Ed. I. M. 10. Walsingh. f. 91. n. 50. Mat. W. Jim. f. 454. n. 10. A. L. 1306.*  
The King prosecutes him before the Pope, who suspendshim, &c.

[1] *Rot. Rom. 34 Ed. I. M. 5. n. 9.*

[2] *Ibm.* The same Letter dated at Brundele in Marchia Scotia, Sept. 7. The King would not permit the Pope to re-appoint Receivers of his Temporalities, during the Suspension of the Arch-Bishop.



*Covenants and Agreements made between Richard Earl of Ulster, Aymer de Valence, Henry de Percy, John Benstede, and John Comyn, &c. in February preceding.*

Reyley's Placita Parliam.  
f. 366.

Letters Patents for the  
Establishment  
of Scotland.

EDward by the Grace of God, King of England, Lord of Ireland, and Duke of Aquitain, to all those that shall see or hear these Letters, Greeting; For the perpetual Memory of things underwritten we let you understand, That the People of Scotland, after they were in our Homage and Ligeance, and bound to us by Oath of Fealty, and by their Charts, or Writings, as strongly as we or our Council knew how to order and direct, by evil Counsel rose, and made War against us, committing Robberies, Burnings, Murders, Felonies, and many other Evils and Mischiefs according to their Power in Scotland, and in England, contrary to their Homages, Fealties, and Ligeances aforesaid. And afterwards many of them returned to our Faith and Obedience, and were received to our Peace and Will; and at last John Comyn, Lord of Badenagh, and the others of his Party, came also, and were received (a nostre pees a nostre foi) to our Peace and Faith, so as for their Ransoms, and Amends, for their Trespasses, and Outrages, only against us, and for the Establishment of Scotland, (esteueissent a nostre ordinance & a nostre volunte) they should be at our Ordinance and Pleasure; We notwithstanding these Contempts, Trespasses, Outrages, and Disobediences of the People of Scotland towards us, have been so great and heavy, as there cannot sufficient Amends or due Satisfaction be made for them at any time, as they themselves acknowledge, tho we cannot suffer such Crimes to pass without some Punishment, yet seeing those People have behaved themselves well and loyally since our last being in those Parts, and for the Hopes we have of their good Behaviour and Service for the future, willing to do them special Grace, Have granted, and do grant their Lives and Limbs shall be safe, and that they shall be free from Imprisonment, and not Disinherited; saving to us always the Lands, Tenements, and Lordships, the Demeasns and Appurtenances of the Royalty of Scotland, which John Baliol, late King thereof, gave away, and alienated, to do our Pleasure with them; And we Pardon and Release to the People aforesaid, that have submitted and received our Peace and our Faith, the Crimes committed against us, the Anger, Rancour, and all manner of ill Will we any ways had against them, so as they shall be bound to pay what is ordered by us, and our Council (solonc nostre dit dictum) & nostre pronounciation que sensuent en cest form) according to our Decree and Determination, which follow in this Form.

The Articles  
of that Establishment.

\* The Covenants made  
with John Comyn.

First, We Order and Decree, that John Comyn, and the others with him which shall come to our Peace and Faith, upon the Covenants granted them, (Qui ove lui vindrent a nostre pees & a nostre foi, par mi les covenances qui leur feurent grantez) shall pay for their Ransom, (paent pur Ranzon & amends des trespas par eux faitz, &c.) and Amends of the Crimes by them committed, Three years value of their Lands and Rents, toward the building of new Castles in Scotland, for security of the Nation, and preserving the Peace, or to other Uses as we shall think fit. And we Pardon the said John Comyn and David Graham their Exiles, and remaining out of Scotland according to the \* Covenants aforesaid.

Further



Further 'tis Ordained by us and our Council, That the People of Scotland which submitted to us before John de Baliol, shall pay only the Rents of Two years of their Lands, except those that can shew themselves acquitted by our special Grant or Deed.

A The same Order and Decree was made concerning Adam de Gourdon, and Simon de Frazer Kt.

Further we Decree and Determine, That the Bishops, Abbats, Priors, and the Clergy of the Kingdom of Scotland, except the Bishop of Glasco, shall pay for their Ransom, and their Crimes, the value of their Rents and Lands for one year, except those that can shew by special Deed, or other manner, they ought to be discharged.

B The Bishop of Glasco was to be upon the same Terms with John Comyn in all respects, and also as to his Banishment, which was remitted.

Further, That Ingelram de Umfrevil, because he made his Submission but a little while before these Letters were granted, should pay Five years value, &c. And that William de Baliol, and John Wychard, should pay for the same Reason Four years Rent.

C Further, That Hugh de Adrossan, John de Gourley, John de Naper, and John de Makilgoigny, who were of the Retinue of the said William Ingelram, and John, should pay Three years value.

D Further, For the time and manner of payment of these Compositions or Fines, the King's Lientenant and Chamberlain of Scotland should make a reasonable and just Extent of the Lands of the Offenders, according to the present value of the Lands, and according to that Extent the Composition or Fine was to be levied and paid every year, at the usual time of Payment, half the value; and so from year to year till the whole was paid, and the other half of their Lands and Rents should remain to them for their support and maintenance.

E And 'tis to be known, That our Will is not, that this Determination should extend to, and be understood of such Persons of the Scots as were Prisoners upon this Occasion, nor of such as have not submitted to our Peace or Faith. In Witness whereof we have caused these our Letters Patents to be sealed at Westminster the 15th of October, in the 33d of our Reign. The Title of this Patent is, *Forma pacis Scotiæ*; The Form of Peace of Scotland.

F William Waleys could not be mentioned in this Record, having been taken about the Feast of the Assumption of the Virgin Mary, or 15th of August, two months before the Date of it, and brought to London, where on the Eve of St. Bartholomew, he was Condemned to be Hanged, Drawn, and Quartered, his Head to be fixed upon a Pole on London-Bridge, and his four Quarters to be sent into Scotland, and set up in four parts of the Kingdom.

William Waleys taken, Hung'd, Drawn, and Quartered.



A. D. 1306.

34 Ed. I.

[5] *Mat. West.*  
f. 453. n. 10,  
20, 30.The Scots, Bi-  
shops, Noble-  
men, and o-  
thers Perjur-  
ed twice or  
thrice.They Con-  
spire against  
King  
Edward, and  
set up Robert  
Bruce.John Comyn  
Murdered,  
because he  
would not be  
Perjured.

A. D. 1306.

34 Ed. I.

[6] *Ib. f. 454.*  
n. 10.The Pope Ab-  
solves the  
King from his  
Oath con-  
cerning the  
Perambula-  
tions of the  
Forests.[7] 34 Ed. I.  
M. 13 & 14.The King  
troubled at  
the Actions of  
his Officers.[8] *Ib. Rot.*  
*Stat. 34 Ed. I.*  
M. 13 & 14.[9] *Mat. West.*  
f. 454. n. 30,  
40, 50. and  
f. 455.The King  
sends an Ar-  
my into Scot-  
land.[1] *Ibm.*  
And Knighted  
300 Sons  
of Nobles-  
men, &c.

Notwithstanding this *Establishment*, the *Agreement* and *Forms* of *Peace* by *Consent* of the *Scots*, and their *Commissioners*, when the King expected nothing but *Peace*, and fair *Compliance*, [5] in *January* following the *same Scots* that had *twice* or *thrice* done *Ho-mage*, and sworn *Fealty* to King *Edward*, and the *Bishops* them-selves that had sworn *Faith* and *Truth* to him as heartily as other *Men*, joined with *Robert Bruce* Earl of *Carrick*, in setting up his *Title*, and especially the *Bishops* of *St. Andrews*, and *Glasco*, and *Abbat of Schone*, who were the great *Contrivers* of his *De-sign*, and *Assistants* in it, and begun a *War* more troublesome and lasting then any before; and because *John Comyn* was very resolute in keeping his *Oath*, and would not join with them, being a *Man* of great *Power* and *Interest* in *Scotland*, and much pressed to do it by *Robert Bruce*, he with his *Followers* killed him in the *Church* of the *Friers Minors* of *Dunfres*, on the 29th of *January*, and upon the *Annunciation* of the *Blessed Virgin* next following, he was *Crowned* at *Scone* in the presence of the *Two Bishops*, the *Abbat*, and many other *Earls*, *Barons*, and *Knights*.

In *Easter* [6] *Week* ensuing, the *Pope's Bull* was published, absolving the *King* from the *Oath* of *Deforesting*, or laying out of his *Forests*, such *Lands* as were, or ought not truly to be con-tained in them, and abolishing and punishing all *Ill Practices*, and *Usages*, *Tricks* and *Deceits* of his *Officers*, within and belong-ing to them, *Excommunicating* such as *observed* it, and *absolving* such as broke it.

In the *Historians* it appears not what use he made of this Ab-solution, but in a *Writ* or *Letters* upon the [7] *Statute Roll*, with the *Ordinance* he then made, Dated *May 28*. he *Expressed* himself much troubled in *Mind* for the *Clamours* of the *People*, who, as he there *says*, were much *oppressed*, *impoverished*, and *injured* by the *Officers* of his *Forests*, and therefore desiring to *obviate* these *Oppressions*, and *Grievances*, which he could not pass by without great *Scandal* or *Offence*, (*Quæ absque gravi scandalo diutius sub dissimulatione præteriræ non possumus*) and to provide for the *Peace* and *Tranquillity* of the *Kingdom*, he *Emitted* the fore-said *Ordinance* of the *Forest*, Dated *May 28*. in the 34th year of his *Reign*, Printed in *Totell's Magna Charta*, 1556. *Part. 2.* p. 67. a. but with this *Writ*, or these *Letters*, which were [8] sent into every *County* in *England*, with *Command* to the *Sheriffs* to cause them to be read, and the *Ordinance* contained in them, to be *proclaimed* in full *County*.

The *King* being fully informed of the *Insurrection* and *Pro-ceedings* of *Robert Bruce*, and his *Confederates*, [9] sent *Aymer de Valentia* Earl of *Pembroke*, *Robert Clifford*, and *Henry Percy*, into *Scotland*, with a good *Force* against the new *Crowned King*; and the *King* intending to follow them, summoned his *Army* to *Rendezvous* at *Carlisle* 15 days after *Midsummer*, and to make the *Expedition* more great and glorious, he *Knighted*, [1] with his *Son*, on *Whitsunday* at *Westminster*, *Three hundred* young *Gentle-men*,



men, the *Sons of Earls, Barons, and Knights*, that had *wherewithall* to maintain their Honour, and gave them their *Military Garments* out of his *own Wardrobe*; [2] These, with the Prince, were to march with him into *Scotland* against his Enemies; They set forward on the *morrow of Holy Trinity*, but before they came there, the *Earl of Pembroke* had fought with, and routed the *Scots*, and put their *King* to flight at *Metfen* near *St. John's Town*, or *Perth*, 2 or 3 days after *Midsummer*. In this Battel many were killed, and many of Note taken; [3] most of which were Tried and Hanged for *Perjury* and *Rebellion*. Afterwards, the *King, Prince, and many Great Men*, went into *Scotland*, when some received them Honourably, others left their *Habitations* and fled. The *Army* roving up and down after the Fight pursued the *Fugitives*, some they killed, others they took alive, amongst whom were the Two [4] *Bishops*, and the *Abbat*, armed under their *Surcoates*; These were sent into *England*, and imprisoned. The *Bishop* of *St. Andrews* was sent to the *Sheriff* of *Hampshire*, to be kept in *Winchester Castle*, as the *King's Enemy, Rebel and Traytor*, and by the [5] *Mittimus* or *Warrant* he was to be kept in the strongest Tower of the Castle, and safely, and securely put in *Iron Fetters*, under Penalty of the *Sheriffs* forfeiting all his *Goods, Lands, and Tenements*, if he made his *Escape*; By the *Warrant* no Man was to see, or speak with him, but such as the *Sheriff* should appoint to attend him; And for further Security, the *Sheriff* was to take as many *Landed Men* of the *Vicinage* as he thought fit, to assist him and the *Custos* or *Warden* of the Castle, as his Guard, under the same Penalty with the *Sheriff*, if he Escaped.

The *Bishop* of *Glasco* was sent to the Castle of *Porcester* in the same County, by a *Mittimus* or [6] *Warrant* in the same Form, and Words; as also was the *Abbat* of *Schone* sent to the [7] Castle of *Mere* in *Wiltshire*, by the like *Mittimus* directed to the *Sheriff* of that County.

The *Pope* being informed of the *Murder* of *John Comyn*, by his [8] *Bull* directed to the *Arch-Bishop* of *Tork*, and *Bishop* of *Carlisle*, ordered them to *Excommunicate Robert Brus*, and all his *Complices*, until they made Satisfaction, and deserved Absolution. And the *King* made *Inquisition* [9] in *Scotland* by Men of Credit, (*per fide dignos homines*) who, and what Persons committed the *Murder*, and were present at the *Coronation* of *Robert Brus*, and took them almost all, and put them to death.

And for the greater \* Security of the Peace of *Scotland*, it was agreed by the *King* and his Council, That the *Guardian* of *Scotland* should cause to be proclaimed in all *Cities, Burghs, and Mercate Towns*, and in other Places where he thought fit; That all such who were against the *King* in the last War, and were not come to his Peace, and others who committed *Felonies, and other Crimes*, for which they ought to lose *Life or Member*, and were not taken, should be apprehended by any Persons where ever they came, and to that purpose to Levy Hue and Cry, with Horn and Mouth, and pursue them with force, from Town to Town, Country to Country, County to County, until they rendred themselves, or were taken dead or alive,

[2] *Ibm.*

The Scots Routed and put to Flight. Many of the Scots Tried for Perjury and Rebellion, and Hanged.

[3] *Ib. f. 455. n. 40, 50. and f. 456. n. 10, 20, 30.*

The two Bishops, and Abbat, the Contrivers of the Rebellion taken.

[4] *Ib. f. 455. n. 30.*

The Bishop of St. Andrews sent Prisoner to Winchester Castle.

[5] *Append. n. 38.*

The Sheriff of Hampshire charged with him.

[6] *Claus.*34 Ed. I. M. 6 *intus.*

The Bishop of Glasco sent to Porcester Castle.

[7] *Ibm.*[8] *In Turri Lond. 34 Ed. I. and Pryus, Ed. I. f. 1122.*

The Pope Excommunicates the Murderers of John Comyn.

[9] *Mat. West. t. 456. n. 10.*\* *Claus. 34 Ed. I. M. 3. Dors. in French, and Riley's Appen. f. 510.*

Ordinances made by King and Council, for the security of the Peace of Scotland.



and that those who neglected to do this, should lose all their Goods, and be imprisoned during the King's Pleasure. The Guardian was likewise to inquire after the Receivers of such Persons, that they might have such Justice as they deserved.

It was then also Accorded, That all those who were Guilty, and Abettors of the Death of John Comyn, should be Drawn and Hang'd, and those that advised, and assented to it, and those who after the Fact knowingly and willingly, or freely received them, should have the same Judgment.

And those that were guilty of his Death, that were, or should be taken by force in this War against the King, should be Hanged, or have their Heads cut off, and their Receivers to have the same Judgment.

And all that were against the King in the War at any time, as well before, as in, and after the Battel of Metfen, those who were the most notorious and dangerous of them, should be put in Prison where the King should appoint, and not to be released but by his Order.

And those who willingly were of the Party of Robert Brus, or were aiding, advising, procuring or persuading the People to Rise contrary to Law, and were thereof Convicted, whether Clerks or others, were to be imprisoned during the King's Pleasure.

And it was Agreed, That the People of Scotland who were forced to rise against the King in this War, should be Fined as the Guardian should see cause, and according to their Offence; and for the greater Authority, and Execution of this Agreement, the King caused it to pass under his Seal of Scotland.

The Senesch.  
or Steward of  
Scotland his  
acknowledg-  
ment of his  
Crimes a-  
gainst King  
Edward.

He renews his  
Homage and  
Fealty.

How, and in  
what manner  
he bound  
himself to be  
true and faith-  
ful to him,  
and his Heirs.

In the same Roll and Membrane, there is the Acknowledgment made by himself of the Heinous Crimes and Offences of James the Steward of Scotland against his Liege Lord King Edward, against the Homage and Fealty he did, and sware to him, and against his Ligeance, whereupon he rendred and submitted high and low and in all things, his Body, Lands, and Tenements, and all he had or might have, to his Will, who of his special Grace Restored to him all he held in Scotland, for which being free, delivered out of Prison, and in his own full Power, he again did Homage, and made Oath of Fealty, as he had done in the 24th of his Reign; and for the sure keeping and performing his Homage and Oath in all Points, he bound his Body, his Heirs, Lands, Tenements, all he had or could have high and low, and in all things, to the Will of the King and his Heirs; And Willed and Granted for him and his Heirs, That if he or they, should ever be in War against him or them, or Ayding or Advising any of their Enemies secretly or openly, that then their Bodies, Lands, Tenements, and all they had or could have, should from that time be forfeited to the King and his Heirs, in such manner as neither he, nor his Heirs, might claim them at any time. And further he Granted for him and Heirs, That if at any time it should happen they should be against the King or his Heirs, as aforesaid, That the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, or any other Prelates of England, or Scotland, as many, and such as the King or Heirs

A

B

C

D

E

F



Heirs would, without Cognisance of the Cause, or any manner of Admonition, Warning, or Contradiction of any one, might give the Sentence of Excommunication against him and his Heirs, and put all his Lands under Interdict. In Witness whereof he Sealed these Letters Patents, in the Priory of Canons at Lanercost, 23d of October, A.D. 1306. and of the King's Reign the 34th. Done in the presence of five Barons, two Knights, and four Clerks, with Two Publick Notaries allowed by the Pope, to attest it.

A

B

C

D

E

F

On the 3d of [1] November, being then at the Priory of Lanercost in the County of Cumberland, near Carlisle, the King issued his Writs of Summons for a Parlement to meet at that City on the Octaves of St. Hillary, or 20th of January. This Parlement was called for the Settling, and Establishment of Scotland, and for other Business concerning the King, and the State of the Kingdom, as appears by the Writ; What was done concerning Scotland I find not, the Business of the Kingdom was (besides the hearing many Petitions and dispatch of much private Business) the great Oppression of Churches and Monasteries. [2] The Oppression of Monasteries, as was shewed by the grievous Complaints of the Great and Noblemen, arose from the imposition of Tribute, by their Superiors, (as then called) from beyond the Seas, as especially by the Abbats of the Orders of Cisteaux, Cluny, Premonstratum, of St. Augustin, and Benedict, who under pretence of visiting them here in England, as being the Heads of their Orders, imposed upon them divers grievous and importable Tallages, Rents, and Tributes, contrary to the Laws and Customs of the Kingdom; by which means, what had been Charitably given to Pious Uses, and for the increase of Divine Worship, was turned into a Wicked Tribute, not pleasing to God, (*in censum Reprobum est conversum*) wherefore by the Advice of the Earls, Barons, Great Men, Chief Men, and other Noblemen, and the Communities of his Kingdom, in his Parlement at Westminster, in the 33d year of his Reign, he Ordained and Determined, That no Abbat, Prior, Master or Guardian, or any other Religious Person of what State, Condition, or Order soever he was, under his Power and Dominion, should pay any Rent, Tallage, Tribute, or Impositions, charged upon them by their Superiors the Abbats, Priors, Masters, Wardens, of Religious Houses or Places, or agreed between themselves; Nor that they should go beyond Sea to visit such Monasteries, or under any pretence whatsoever, so as the Goods or Revenue of their Monasteries, might any way by Exchange or Merchandize be conveyed out of the Kingdom, upon pain of grievous Punishment to such as should do contrary to this Statute in contempt of the King's Prohibition.

Further the King inhibited all and singular Foreign Abbats, Priors, Masters, and Wardens of Religious Houses, under whose Subjection and Obedience, the Houses of the same Order were in his Dominions, that they should not impose any Payments, or Burthens upon them, under forfeiture of all they had in his Dominions, or could forfeit for the future.

A. A. 1306.  
34 Ed. 1.

[1] Claus  
34 Ed. 1. M. 2.  
Dors.

A Parlement  
for the settling  
of Scotland,  
and Business  
concerning  
the State of  
the King-  
dom.

[2] Stat. of  
Carl. Riley's  
Placita Parl.  
f. 312. Col. 2.  
Instit. f. 580.  
The chief Bu-  
siness of the  
Kingdom was  
to prevent the  
Tallage and  
Tribute im-  
posed upon  
English Mo-  
nasteries by  
Foreign Ab-  
bats.

Ordained in  
that Parle-  
ment, That  
no English Ab-  
bats, &c.  
should pay  
Taxes or Tal-  
lages to For-  
eign Houses  
or Abbats.

The King's  
Inhibition to  
Foreign Ab-  
bats, &c. to  
Exact such  
Contributi-  
ons.

Yet



[3] *Riley ut supra*, f. 314. The King intended not by that Institution to extinguish the Visitation of those Monasteries, &c.

[4] *Ibm.*

The King Ordains and Determines in making a Law.

[5] *Ibm.*

35 *Ed. I.*

[6] *Append. n. 39.*

Petitions of the Nobility against the Exactions of the Pope.

And his Clerk *William de Testa.*

The Articles of the Petitions.

Yet by these Statutes and Ordinances it was not the King's [3] intention, to exclude the Abbats, Priors, and other *Forreign Religioſe*, from the Office of Visiting only in those things which belonged to *Regular Observance*, and the *Discipline* of their Order, provided that such *Visitors* took nothing from the *Monasteries*, *Priories*, or *Houſes* they Visited, or carried any thing out of the Kingdom, but their *moderate*, and *reasonable* Expences.

These Ordinances and Statutes, [4] tho they were made in the 33d of *Edw. I.* as abovesaid, yet the Publication of them was suspended until this Parlemt at *Carlisle*, that they might proceed with more Mature Deliberation, after which, and a full Debate with the *Earls*, *Barons*, (& *alijs Nobilibus*, & *Communitatibus Regni ſui*) and other Nobles, and the Communities of his Kingdom, by their Unanimous Consent (*Ordinavit & Statuit*) he Ordained and Determined, this Statute should take place from the First day of *May* next coming; And sent it to all the Sheriffs in *England*, to be published [5] as a *Law* made for the *common Benefit* of the People, and *Melioration* of the *State* of the whole Kingdom, *Ad Communem populi utilitatem, & totius Domini nostri meliorationem.* Witness the King at *Carlisle* the 20th of *March*, in the 35th of his Reign.

The other great Business was the Consideration of the [6] *Petitions* exhibited by the *Earls*, *Barons*, *Great Men*, and *Community* of the whole Kingdom of *England*, for the *State* of the Crown, of the *Lands* of *Scotland*, *Wales*, and *Ireland*, and the whole *Community* aforesaid, concerning divers new intolerable *Grievances*, *Oppressions*, *Injuries*, and *Extortions*, done to, and brought upon the *Earls*, *Barons*, *Great Men*, and *Community*, by the *Authority*, and *Command* of the *Pope*, and by *Mr. William Testa*, his Clerk or *Nuncio*, or by his *Commissaries*, *Ministers*, or *Vicegerents* in his Name.

The Articles or Heads [7] of the *Petitions* were; *First*, 'The 'Extravagant Number of Provisions of the best Spiritual Preferments given to *Italians*, other *Forreigners*, and *Non-Residents*, 'to the great prejudice and disinheritance of the *Founders*, *Benefactors*, and their *Successors*, and to such as had the Right of 'Advowson, and the Gifts of such Preferments.

*Secondly*, 'The Rents and Revenues of Religious Houses, which 'the Pope intended to apply to the use of divers Cardinals.

*Thirdly*, 'Concerning First Fruits of vacant Benefices reserved 'to the Pope, a thing never heard of before, concerning the 'Collection whereof, he had lately put forth hard Interpretations, much prejudicial to the King, Kingdom, and whole 'English Church.

*Fourthly*, 'About the *Peter-Pence*, that they were not taken 'according to the first Grant, but exacted to Treble the value.

*Fifthly*,



*Fifthly*, 'Concerning Legacies given to Pious Uses, they were 'wickedly demanded and exacted by Authority of the Apostolick 'See, and converted to other Uses than the Testator or Donor 'intended.

A *Sixthly*, 'Concerning Debts the Creditors went to the Pope's 'Clerk, and offered them half the Debt, more or less, to get the 'rest, who presently caused the Debtors to be Summoned and 'Distreined to answer before them, in open Disheritance of the 'King and his Crown.

B *Seventhly*, 'Concerning indistinct Legacies, (such as were given 'in general, and not in particular Words) approved by the 'Canon and Civil Law, the Pope's Clerks impiously appropriated 'to themselves, (*Clerici Domini Papæ impie sibi appropriare nituntur*, ' &c.) and to convert them to Uses contrary to the Design of the 'Dead.

C There are Two Copies of these Petitions, one in [7] *French*, the most full and large; The other in [8] *Latin*, which concludes thus, *That all these things tended to draw the Money out of the Kingdom, the manifest Stripping of the Church, the Enriching of Strangers, and Impoverishing the Natives, unless [9] God would arise and dissipate his Enemies, so as by the Secular Prince, and his Council, with the Consent of the Noble, and Great Men, so great Wickedness might be repressed.*

D Upon which Articles of Oppressions, Grievances, Extortions, and Injuries, William Testa was [1] called into full Parlement, and Convicted, nor could he any ways Excuse himself, but by saying he did these things by Authority of the Pope. And because these Practices, if suffered, manifestly tended to the diminution of Divine Worship, the Robbing of the English Church, the prejudice, hurt, and Disberition of the Crown, Power, Jurisdiction, and Dignity Royal of England, the destruction of the whole Community, and perpetual Subversion of the State of the Kingdom, the Laws and Customs of the same; from whence greater Dangers in process of time might ensue.

E At length having considered these Mischiefs, by Assent of the King and whole Council of Parlement, [2] it was Provided, Agreed, Ordained, and Judged, That the Premised Grievances, Oppressions, Injuries, and Extortions, ought not to be permitted in the Kingdom and Lands aforesaid. And Master William was in the same Parlement forbidden to do any thing contrary to this Provision, Agreement, and Judgment, by himself or any other whatsoever. And he was enjoined to revoke and make void whatever had been done by him, his Commissaries, Ministers, Vicegerents, Adherents, and Assistants, and safely to keep within the Kingdom the Money Levied upon this Account, until the King by Advice of the Council aforesaid, should otherwise direct.

[7] Riley's  
Placita Parl.  
f. 376.  
[8] Ib. f. 379.  
The Mischiefs  
of Money  
sent out of  
the Kingdom.  
[9] Append.  
n. 40.

William Testa,  
the Pope's  
Agent.  
[9] Ib.

Convicted in  
Parlement of  
great Crimes  
against the  
Crown and  
Church.

[2] Ib.  
Oppressions,  
Grievances,  
and Extortion  
from and by  
the Pope pro-  
hibited.  
And William  
Testa ordered  
to revoke  
what he had  
done.



[3] Ibm.  
The Clergy  
and Laity  
write to the  
Pope, com-  
plaining of his  
Oppressions  
and Extorti-  
ons.

[4] Riley ut  
supra. f. 355.  
l. 3. of the Let-  
ter.

[5] Ibm.

[6] Ibm. f. 382.  
383.

William Testa's  
Officers Que-  
stioned.

35 Ed. 1.

[7] Ibm. f. 382.  
The Prince of  
Wales ordered  
to do Justice.

[8] After the  
Recess of the  
Parlement, the  
King gives  
William Testa,  
&c. Protection  
to go thro' the

[9] Ibm. f. 383.  
& Pat. 35  
Ed. 1. M. 10.  
intus.  
Kingdom, to  
Dispatch the  
Pope's Busi-  
ness.

[1] Append.  
N. 41.

And gave him  
Liberty to  
take the first  
Fruits of Va-  
cant Benefices  
to the use of  
the Pope.

And for the greater [3] Evidence of the Matter, it was ordained and agreed by the King and Council afore said, That Experienced Messengers should be sent to the Pope from the King, and whole Community, to Notifie and Expound to him these Grievances, Oppressions, Extortions, and Injuries: And a Letter was drawn up accordingly on the Name and Behalf of the Clergy and Laity, full of Sharpness and Reflection upon the Pope, his Ministers, and Nuncio's; [4] *Nos Clerus & Populus dicti Regni, &c.* with this [5] Title in the Margin, *Litera a Regno Angliæ ad Papam*, the Letter from the Kingdom of England to the Pope.

At the same time Writs were ordered to be directed [6] to all the Sheriffs of England, to Enquire by the Oaths of Lawful Men of the County, after the Names of the Ministers and Commissaries of William Testa, who had committed these Grievances, Extortions, &c. And the Names of such as had caused any one to be cited before himself, or Commissaries, &c. And to attack them by their Bodies, so as they might appear before the King, eight Days after Holy Trinity where ever he was in England, to answer to him or any others that would complain, and to do and receive what the King's Court, (the Court of Kings-Bench now, which then was always with the King) should adjudge and ordain. Witness the King at Carlisle, March 22d. in the 35th of his Reign.

The Prince of [7] Wales, Guardian of Scotland, and Justice of Ireland, had also command to see this Provision, Agreement, Ordinance, and Judgment, inviolably observed in those Lands or Countreys.

But after the [8] Recess of the Parlement, the King at the Request of the Bishop of Sabin and Cardinal, (who came from the Pope into England, for the Consummation of the Peace with France, and the Marriage of the Prince of Wales, with that King's Daughter) and was then at Carlisle, commanded the Chancellor not to Seal their Writs to the Sheriffs, &c. [9] And for the Reverence he had to the Apostolic See, and Affection he bore to Pope Clement, gave William Testa and Peter Amalmeni, the Pope's Clerks and Nuncio's, their Commissaries and Ministers, a Protection to go through the whole Kingdom for the Dispatch of the Business of the Church of Rome. Witness the King at Carlisle, April the 4th, in the 35th of his Reign.

He also [1] granted to them in as much as he might or could, (*Quantum in nobis est*) to Collect or Keep to the Use of the Pope, the Fruits of the first Year, of all Vacant Ecclesiastic Benefices with Cure and without Cure, in the Kingdom for three years, reserved by the Pope to himself, (*Non obstantibus quibuscunq; prohibitionibus in Parlamento nostro inde factis*) Notwithstanding the Prohibitions made in Parlement, so as they meddle not with the Revenues of Abbies, or Priories, nor carried the Money out of the Kingdom, but by way of Exchange. Dated the same Day at Carlisle.

And



And further he gave them a [2] Dispensation to use their Offices, as Pope's Clercs and Nuncios, as the Clercs and Nuncios of former Popes had done in former times, notwithstanding any former Prohibition by him made; Provided they did nothing against his Crown or Dignity, or any of his Subjects, any manner of way. Dated the same Day and at the same Place.

[2] Pat. 35 E. 1. M. 19. intus & Riley ut supra. f. 384. With a Dispensation to use their Offices, &c.

Lastly, He gave [3] them leave by way of Exchange, and by assistance of Merchants, to send all the Money Collected, which reasonably belonged to the Church of Rome, or to the Pope, so as they Transported not any Coined Money, or Silver in the Mass, by themselves, or others. Dated at the same Place and Time.

[3] Ibid. in Utreq; loc. And Transport their Money by way of Exchange.

Under pretence [4] of these Letters, Grants, and Dispensations, the Pope's Clercs aforesaid, (*pretextu quarum literarum, prefati Clerici, Domini Papæ, &c.*) not having respect to the Prohibitions in Parliament, returned to their former Practices; and being opposed in their Proceedings, by many of the Kingdom, by reason of those Prohibitions, they Petitioned the King's Council holden at Westminster, in the Feast of Holy Trinity next following, and Exhibited their Letters, &c. And because it was found, That by them the King had revoked nothing of the Ordinance made in Parlement (*Et quia compertum fuit per easdem quod Dominus Rex nihil Revocavit de prædicta Ordinatione in Parlamento facta,*) nor Granted any thing to the same Clercs, by the said Letters, but that they might have and receive the first Fruits of vacant Benefices, as far as he could Grant them, (*Quantum in Rege fuit*) and hereupon forbad them to do or attempt any thing that might turn to the prejudice of his Crown and Royal Dignity, or any other of his Subjects: And it being found also, That every of the Grievances aforesaid were

[4] Append. N. 42.

By reason of these Indulgences, the Pope's Clerks return to their former Practices.

They Petition the King and Council for allowance of them.

Their Petition was rejected, and they commanded to desist from any such Practices.

in prejudice of the King, and his Subjects. By Command of the King being then at Carlisle, it was agreed in the same Council, That the Clercs should not do them, nor have the first Fruits of Benefices of the Patronage of the King, because it would turn to the prejudice of him, his Crown, and others. The Clercs understanding this Agreement, would not any further prosecute their Petitions, or appear to receive their Answer: And therefore there was a further Prohibition made, That whereas there had not been a full Deliberation had upon their Petitions, they should not attempt any thing any way prejudicial to Him, his Crown, and Dignity, the Noblemen, and People of his Realm. Witness the King at Carlisle, the 27th day of June, in his 35th year.

And for doing any thing against the King, his Crown, and Dignity, &c.

This Prohibition was served [5] upon them by the Mayor, Aldermen, and Sheriffs of London; and afterwards, if the said Clercs had presumed to have been Relieved against this Prohibition, before they could attempt it, the King died, so as nothing further was done in this Matter.

[5] Riley ut supra. f. 385.

In the time of this [6] Parlement at Carlisle, either the King himself, or the Lords took notice of the great Familiarity there was between the Prince, and Piers de Gaveston, and what Influence he had upon, and Power over the Prince; but whethor upon the

[6] Append. N. 43.



*Piers de Gaveston Banished England.*

\*Easter-Day was this Year 1307. on the 26 of March, so that the day of his Departure was the First of May.

[7] *Mst. West.* f. 458.  
Robert Brus put to flight the Es. of Pembroke and Gloucester.

[8] *Ibm.*  
Robert Brus flies into the Woods and Mountains.

The Prince sent into England.

[9] *Ibm.*

The King Dies.

King's own Observation, or their pressing him to it, (I find not) nor for what particular Reasons, on the 26th of February at Lanercost by the King's Order and Command (not on his Death-Bed as commonly storied) he was Banished England, and to be ready to quit it at Dover, three Weeks after the Turnament or Justs, which should be Fifteen days after \*Easter next coming, and not to return without the King's Leave, and Calling him back; and for the Performance of this Order, Monsieur Piers at the Day and Place afore said, made Oath upon the Body of God, (i.e. The Consecrated Host) the Old Cross, and the King's other Reliques, and the Prince of Wales made Oath in like manner, That he would not Receive, Retain, or Permit the said Piers to be with him contrary to this Order, unless he was Recalled by, and had leave from his Father to return; and for his Subsistence beyond Sea, so long as he staid there, Monsieur Piers had allowed him an hundred Marks Sterling by the Year.

After Easter this Year, in the Heat of the Controversie and Quarrel between the King, Nobility, and Pope's Nuncios, as before related, [7] Robert Brus having increased his Army, engaged Aymer de Valence Earl of Pembroke, and put him to flight, killing few of his Men; Three Days after he also put to flight the Earl of Gloucester, with the Slaughter of many on both sides, and afterwards besieged him in the Castle of Ayr, until by the King's Army the Siege was Raised, when with his Men he fled into the Woods and Mountains; [8] yet King Edward sent into England, and under great Penalty Commanded all that ought him Service to be ready at Carlisle, three Weeks after the Feast of St. John Baptist, and there sent his Son into England also, to prosecute his Match with the King of France his Daughter, by the assistance of the Spanish Cardinal, Bishop of Sabin. [9] After the Departure of his Son, the King fell ill of a Dysenterie or Bloody-Flux, yet by small Journeys he moved toward Scotland from Carlisle, and at Burgh upon Sands his Disease increasing, he Died the 7th of July, A.D. 1307.

Church-



## Church-Affairs.

**A** **N**OT long before the Death of Henry III. the Monks of Canterbury by his License [1] had chosen William de Chilenden their Sub-Prior, for their Archbishop; the Pope persuaded him, as a Person not fit for that Place, to wave the Election, and make way for Robert Kilwardby a Friar-Minor, (who for Eleven years had been the Collector of the Pope's Moneys, or Revenues in England) to be Archbishop by his Provision, without the King's License, the Monks Election, and his Approbation afterwards, contrary to the King's Prerogative, the ancient Rights of his Crown, the Laws of the Realm, and Liberties of the Church.

[1] *Antiquit. Brit. f. 189. n. 10, 20. God. de preful. Angl. p. 137. A. D. 1272.*

**B** But to prevent, if it might be, for the Future the like Practices of the Pope, within less than a Month after the Death of Henry the Third, King Edward being in the Holy-Land, the Guardians of the Kingdom, and Council in his Name, by their Proctors made publick [2] Protestation for the Vindication of the Prerogative and Rights of his Crown against these Provisions, before they Granted the Temporalities; [3] shewing, That Cathedral Churches when void, ought of Right and Custom, and were wont to be filled, by the Canonical Election of the Chapter, the King's Leave having been first asked and obtained. And that after the Election, the Elect ought to be presented to the King, That he might object against him if he had any thing reasonable to propound against him; and that it seemed to the King and his Council, a great Prejudice to him, and the Church of Canterbury, whose Patron and Defender he was, especially if this should be made an Example in other Churches, That the Pope omitted these Usages, where there could not be found any Fault either in the Matter or Form of the Election, nor so expressed in his Letters of Provision, yet should assume a Power of Supplying Vacancies with Bishops: Whence lest for the future the Roman Church should proceed to do the like, or if it should do it, That the King might not receive Prejudice, or be bound to restore the Temporalities of the Churches, the King of his especial Grace granted them to this Man; and then Gerard Bernard his Procurator and Cleric made Protestation in his Name and stead, That this Grant of the Temporalities, should not be drawn into Example for the future. This Protestation was made, and Read at Westminster in St. Stephen's Chapel, on the Vigil of St. Lucy the Virgin, (i.e. December 12th,) in the presence of Friar Robert de Kilwardby the Elect, (by the Monks afterwards in compliance with the Pope, or under a Pretence to Preserve their own Right) and of the Bishop of Excester, Walter de Merton Chancellor of England, John de Chisal Dean of St. Pauls, R. Burnel Arch-Deacon of York, and many others. A. D. 1272.

[2] *Append. N. 44.*

[3] *Ibm.*

And on the same Day the [4] Temporalities, having had sufficient Testimony of his affection to the King, and taken the Oath of Fealty

[4] *Pat. 2. Ed. 1. M. 20. intus.*



Fealty to him, for that Time out of his especial Grace were Granted by his Lieutenant, or Guardians of the Kingdom.

[5] *Antiqu. Brit.* f. 192.  
n. 20, 30.  
A.D. 1279.

After six years, [5] this Archbishop was made Bishop of Porto in Italy, and Cardinal, and then Abdicated his Archbishopric, upon whose Cession pretending it was his Right so to do, notwithstanding the Monks had Elected the Bishop of Bath and Wells, then Chancellor of England, and the former Protestation; The Pope made John Peckham another Preaching Friar-Minor Archbishop, and Consecrated him at Rome; He was born in Suffex of Obscure Parents, and had his first Institution in the Monastery of Lewis.

[6] *Compleat Hist. of Engl.* f. 668.

[7] *Spelm. Concil.* Vol. 2. f. 305.

[8] *Ibm.* f. 320. & 323.

[9] *Append.* N. 45.

The Archbishops, Bishops, and Clergy, endeavouring to put in practice the Canons of Boniface made at [6] *Werton* 42 Hen. 3. A.D. 1258. and the Provincial Constitutions of the same Boniface at [7] *Lambeth* 45 of Hen. 3. A.D. 1261. This Archbishop, in the 7th of this King, on the Third of the Calends of August, or 30th of July, A.D. 1279. [8] called a Council of his Suffragans at Reading, in which several Sentences of Excommunication were enjoined to be Published, [9] which so Troubled the King, that he convened the Archbishop in his Parlement at St. Michael next following, wherein he made an open Revocation of such as pleased him not, and were against the Rights of his Crown.

\* *Spelm.* Vol. 2. f. 327.

[1] *Append.* N. 46.

In the 8th of King Edward, this Archbishop and his Suffragans intending to hold a \* Council at London, the King fearing by their late Canons and Proceedings at Reding, they might presume to Constitute something therein against his Crown and Dignity, [1] appointed Roger le Strange, and Hugh Fitz-Otto Steward of his Household, his Commissioners, to go to them, and appeal against such Proceedings.

[2] *Spelm.* *U. supra.* f. 328

[3] *Append.* N. 47.

Next Year he called a [2] Council at Lambeth, but the King suspecting the Loyalty of the Archbishop and Bishops, directed his [3] Writ to them, Commanding them upon their Oaths of Fealty they had all taken to be Faithful to him, and Defend his Rights, and the Rights of his Kingdom, as much as they could, and enjoined them by Virtue of their Oath, and under pain of losing the Temporals they held of him, that they should in that Council do nothing against him, his Kingdom, and the Rights or Laws, which his Predecessors and he had used by ancient and approved Custom, nor to do, assent to, or attempt any thing against them.

[4] See *Church Affairs* in time of Hen. 3. & *Spelm. Conc.* Tom. 2. f. 329.

[5] *Ibm.* f. 334. & *Linwood Constitutiones Provinciales* in fine, f. 30.

Notwithstanding this Inhibition, the Review the Council of [4] Lambeth, holden under Boniface the then Archbishop, to see how far it was suspended by the King's Appeal to the Pope about it; and notwithstanding his Revocation (of some of the Canons and Sentences of Excommunication made at Lambeth, and renewed at Reding) about two years before in open Parlement, he renewed them again in this Council, as [5] That, against such as procured or obtained Prohibitions, against Proceedings in Spiritual Courts; That, against the Infringers and Opposers of Ecclesiastic Liberty; That, against such as took any thing out of or from the Houses, Mannors, or Lands of Ecclesiastic Persons against their Wills; That,



That, against such as took or removed any Persons, or Goods out of Sanctuary, and hindered any Victuals to be brought to such Persons; and Lastly, against such as Denied to execute the King's Writs for taking the Excommunicates, or hindered the taking of them, or unjustly procured their Liberty.

A This Council ended [6] on the Sixth of the Ides, or 10th of October, and he wrote the King a Letter about [7] Church-Liberty not long after, wherein he tells him, That for a long time and very anciently, there had been great Dissention between the King and Great Men of England, and the Archbishops, Bishops, and Clergy of the same, concerning the Oppression of the Church against the Decrees of Popes, the Constitutions of Councils, and Sanctions of Orthodox Fathers, in which the highest Authority, the greatest Truths, and Sanctity did consist; and therefore beseeched the King there might be an End put to those Dissentions, which could not otherwise be, then by his being inclined to close with those three things, from which the Canons were Collected, and to submit his Crown to the Crown of Christ, for that the Ecclesiastic or Church-Liberties were the Jewels of his Spouse; He tells him further, That by the Express Precept of the Law, he was bound to obey the Pope. That the Determination of every Controversie that could not be Determined by inferior Judges belonged to him; That Catholic Emperors submitted all their Laws to the Holy Canons, and therefore he ought to submit his Laws, and abolish all such as were contrary to to them. Lastly he told him, no Oath could bind to the Keeping or Performance of such things as were Repugnant to Ecclesiastic Liberty; and if he had taken any that might any way excite his Conscience against the Church, he would absolve him from it; and concludes, That he firmly believed he could not provide for the safety of his Soul, or the stability of his Kingdom, unless he closed with what he Propounded. The Epistle is Dated at Lambeth, the 4th of the Nones, or Second of November, 1281. in the 9th of Edw. I.

B

C

D

But this Epistle prevailed not upon the King, nor ended the Controversies about the Regalia, or Royal Rights of the Crown, and Liberties of the People, between the Secular and Ecclesiastic Powers, whatever the Pretences of the Archbishops, Bishops, and Clergy, were for the Advancement of Holiness, and Religion; the Design was Dominion, whether the King or They should have most Power. For from the first to the last Year of his Reign, they endeavoured to Incroach and Usurp upon the Temporal Jurisdiction, notwithstanding all Prohibitions, Attachments, Informations, and Suits against them, the Records of which would swell into a Volume, if they were all Collected from those in the Tower only of this King's Reign; and always when the King's Necessities urged him, or that he was Fatigu'd with, or Disappointed in his Wars, they took the Advantage of promoting Ecclesiastic Liberty, (which was any thing they called so) against the Rights, Royalties, and Prerogative of the Crown, (and never wanted Ambitious, Designing, Discontented, and Poor Noble, and other Military Men, or Gentlemen, who had made themselves so, by their own Luxury and Debauchery, and pretended to what was then

E

F

[6] *Spelm.*  
*Cencil. Tom. 2.*  
f. 341.  
[7] *Ibm.*



then called *Sanctity*, and seemed to be more *Holy* and *Religious* than others) to join with, and assist them, in hopes to make themselves Great, and repair their Broken Fortunes, or succeed in the Places of others, and become *Governours* and *Regulators* of the *Nation*, and *Ministers* of State under the *Church-Power*.

### Taxes in this KING's Reign.

Pat. 4. Ed. I.  
M. 6. A. D.  
1276.

IN the 4th of his Reign the King in Parlemt had a Fifteenth Granted him by the Earls, Barons, Great Men, and Community of the Kingdom, and by the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* and his Suffragan, a Subsidy of their Goods (not said how much) as a Free Gift only, not to be urged or drawn into Example.

Walf. Hist. Angl.  
f. 48. n. 20.

In the 5th of his Reign the Laity Gave him the 12th Part of their Goods toward the War in *Wales*.

Ib. f. 51. n. 40.  
Communia de  
Term. Trin. 12  
E. I. Rot. 6.  
Dors. penes Re-  
membrator The-  
saurii.  
Inter Commu-  
nia de Terminis  
S. Mich. Rot. or.  
n. 5.

In the 11th of his Reign again, toward the War against the *Welsh*, the Laity Gave him a 30th Part, and the Clergy a 20th Part of their Goods. *Conceditur a Populo in Subsidium Werræ sue Tricesima, & à Clero Vicesima pars Bonorum suorum.*

In the 18th of his Reign, he had a 15th of all their moveable Goods Granted by the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Abbats, Priors, Earls, Barons, and all others of the Kingdom, or Government, as appears by the Chequer-Roll in the 19th of *Edward I.* with the King's Remembrancer.

Inter Recorda  
de Trin. Term.  
22 Ed. 1. Rot.  
vel. n. 68.  
with the  
King's Re-  
membrancer.

In the 22d of his Reign, the Prelates and Clergy Granted the Mediety or half of their Benefices and Goods, to be taken a 3d Part at the Fast of *All-Saints* next coming, a second 3d Part 15 Days after *Easter*, and the third 3d Part 15 Days after *St. John Baptist* then next coming.

Claus. 22 Ed. I.  
M. 6. Dors. de  
millibus Eli-  
gendis, & Mit-  
tendis ad Conci-  
lium.

In the same Year, at a Parlemt or Council holden on the 12th of *November*, or (*Crastino S. Martini*) at *Westminster*, when Four Knights were summoned from every County, to consult and consent to such things as the Earls, Barons, and Great Men should Ordain, for themselves and whole Communities of the Counties. Upon the same day they met, viz. *Novemb. 12.* they gave the King a 10th Part of all their moveable Goods, &c. as appears by the Writ or Commission for Appointing Assessors, Taxors, and Collectors for the same Tenth; *Teste Rege apud Westmonast. 12 die Novemb. Anno Regni sui 22.*

Hat. 22 Ed. I.  
M. 2. in Ce-  
dula.

Inter Record.  
de An. 23 Ed. I.  
n. vel Rot. 73.  
de sexta parte  
Regi Concessa  
in Laud. with  
the King's  
Remembran-  
cer.

And in the same Month, after the 16th Day thereof, the Guardian, Sheriffs, Aldermen, and whole Community of the City of *London*, Granted a 6th Part of their moveable Goods, as a Subsidy toward his War. The Writ or Commission by which the Taxors



Taxors and Collectors were appointed, bears Date *Novemb. 26. 23 Ed. I.*

In the same Month, and about the same time of it, there were Commissioners appointed to ask, require, and effectually induce in Person the Men of all his Demefne Cities and Towns in all the Counties of *England*, by all ways they should, see expedient, to grant a 6th Part, as *London* had done, that it might shew Example to others of his Demeafn Towns.

A Parlement summoned to meet the *Sunday* after *St. Martin*, or 11th of *November*; the Writ bears Date *Tertio die Octobris*. It met not then, but was Prorogued before meeting to the *Sunday* before *St. Andrew*, or 30th of *November*, by Writ dated *Novemb. 2. at Odmer*. The Clergy in this Parlement Gave the King a Tenth; the Earls, Barons, Knights, & alii de Regno nostro, others of Our Kingdom, or Government, Gave an Eleventh, and the Citizens and Burgesſes, and other Good Men of his Demeafns, Gave him a Seventh of their moveable Goods: And the Warrant for the appointment of the Taxors and Collectors, bears date *Decemb. 4.*

C In the 24th, the Earls, Barons, Knights, et alii de Regno, gave a 12th Part; the Citizens, Burgesſes, and Tenants of his Demeafns gave an 8th Part.

The Clergy gave nothing, by reason of an Inhibition the Arch-Bishop had obtained from Pope *Boniface*, which Inhibition, or Bull, he caused to be published at this time in all the Cathedrals. See more of this matter in the History.

D In his 25th Year, he had an Eighth of all the Laity, and a Tenth of the Clergy, for the Confirmation of the Great Charter, and the Charter of the Forest. *Walsingham* in his History says, the Laity gave a Ninth (which agrees not with the Close Roll, which says an Eighth) the Clergy of the Province of *Canterbury* gave a Tenth, and the Clergy of the Province of *York* a Fifth.

E In the 29th of his Reign, upon his Confirmation of the Perambulations of the Forests, the Laity gave them a Fifteenth of their Moveables, in the Parlement held at *Lincoln*, which they should have at *Michaelmas* next coming. *Robert* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* would grant nothing for the Clergy, without the special Licence of the Pope.

F In the 32d of his Reign, being then in *Scotland*, as appears by the Dates of the Commissions at *Dunfermlyn* and *Strivelin*, to several Commissioners to Tax or Talliate, or assess Tallage in Cities, Burghs, and his Demeafns in Cities and Burghs, either Capitation by Poll, or in Common, according to their Faculties and Wealth, as it might turn most to his Advantage. And in the 33d Year, the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Tenants of his Demeafns, petitioned in the Par-

N lement

ib. in the same Year and Roll.

*Claus. 23 Ed. I. M. 4. Dors. de Parlamento tenendo. Ib. M. 2. Dors. de Parlamento prorogando. Pat. 24. Ed. I. p. 1. M. 22 de undecima & septima Regi Conces. Levand. & Colligend.*

*Inter Comitia de term. S. Mic. An. 25 Ed. I. Rot. vel. n. 5. pater Remem. Regis in Scaccario. Mat. West. f. 428. n. 20. 30. This Parlement was held at Cro. animarum 24 Ed. I. St. Edmunds-Bury. Claus. 25 Ed. I. M. 6. Dors. f. 74. n. 10.*

*Rot. Peramb. Forest. 29 Ed. I. in Turre.*

*Pat. 32 Ed. I. in Cedula.*

*Ryley's Placita Parliament. f. 246. 264, 265.*



lement holden on *Sunday* next after the Feast of *St. Matthew* the Apostle, at *Westminster*, that they might have leave to Talliate their Tenants of the same Demeasns, as he Talliated them, and it was granted.

Ibm. f. 260.

About this time he had a Fifteenth granted to him.

*Inter Communia  
Brevia de  
Term. S. Trin.  
Anno R. R. Ed. I.  
34. Rot. vel n.  
40. penes Re-  
mum. Regis  
in Scaccar.*

In the 34th Year, the King intending to Knight his Son, summoned the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Abbats, Priors, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men to be before him and his Council on the morrow of *Holy Trinity*, to Treat of, and Grant an Aid upon that Occasion. He also sent to all the Sheriffs of *England*, to cause to come before him and his Council Two Knights of every County, and of every City Two Citizens, and of every Burgh One or Two Burgeses, as the Burgh was greater or lesser, &c. These same Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, and also the Knights of Shires, Treating deliberately upon this Matter, and considering there was an Aid due as aforesaid, and that many Burthens were incumbent upon the King, by reason of his War in *Scotland*, unanimously Granted to the King for themselves and whole Community of the Kingdom, a 30th Part of all their Temporal moveable Goods, &c. for a competent Aid toward the Knighthood of his Son, and also for an Aid toward his Expences which he was to be at in the War.

Ibm.

Ibm.

Also the Citizens and Burgeses of Cities and Burghs, and others of the King's Demeasns assembling together, and treating about the Premises, considering the Burthens incumbent upon the King, &c. unanimously Granted unto him, for the Causes aforesaid, a 20th Part of their moveable Goods, &c.

### The Issue of Edward I.

[1] Sandford's  
General. Hist.  
f. 130. & 138.  
[2] Wals. f. 48.  
n. 40. Meze-  
ray, f. 319.  
A. D. 1279.  
[3] Wals. Hy-  
podigma Nu-  
stria, f. 499 n.  
20.  
Sandf. ut supra,  
f. 138.

BY his First Wife [1] *Eliana*, Sister to *Alphonso* King of *Castile*, and Daughter of *Ferdinand III.* and only Child by *Joan* his Second Wife, Daughter [2] and Heir of *John* Earl of *Pontive*, or *Ponthien*, he had *John* his Eldest Son, who died young.

By her also he had [3] *Henry* and *Alphonso*, who both died young, and before their Father.

[4] Wals. Hist.  
52. n. 10.

His Fourth Son by her was *Edward* born at *Caernarvon* in *Wales* (called therefore *Edward of Caernarvon*) on *St. Mark's Day*, *April 25.* in the 12th Year of his Reign, *A. D. 1284.* who succeeded him by the Name of *Edward II.*

[5] Sandf. ut  
supra, f. 139,  
140, 141, &c.  
Wals. Hypod.  
Nestl. 499.

By this Queen [5] he had Nine Daughters; *Eliana* married to the Earl of *Barr* in *France*; *Johan* of *Acres*, or *Acon*, in the *Holy Land*, so called because there born; first married to *Gilbert* of *Clare* Earl of *Glocester*, and afterwards to *Ralph Monthermer*, with-



without her Father's Consent : The Third *Margaret*, married to *John Duke of Brabant*; *Berenger* and *Alice*, the Fourth and Fifth, died in their Childhoods; the Sixth, *Mary* a Nun at *Amesbury*; the Seventh, *Elizabeth*, married to *John Earl of Holland, Zealand, and Lord of Friesland*, who died without Issue, and she was afterwards married to *Humphry de Bohun Earl of Hereford*: *Beatrix* and *Blanch*\*, the Eighth and Ninth, died in their Childhoods.

\* *Sandf. ut supra*, f. 144.

Issue by his Second Wife *Margaret*, Sister to the King of France, Daughter to *Philip III. Surnamed the Hardy*.

*Thomas de Brotherton* [6] born at a small Village of that Name in *Yorkshire* (from whence he was so called) on the 1st of *June*, A.D. 1300. he was created [7] *Earl of Norfolk* by his Half-Brother King *Edward II. Decemb. 16.* in the 6th Year of his Reign, and had then Granted unto him all the Castles, Mannors, and Lands in *England, Wales, and Ireland*, which *Roger Bigod* lately possessed, except those his Widow had in Dower; and in the 9th of the same King was [8] made *Earl-Marshal of England*.

[6] *Sandf. ut supra*, f. 205.  
[7] *Dugd. Bar. Part 2. f. 63.* from *Chart. 6. Ed. 21. n. 30, 31, 32.*

[8] *Ibm. from Cart. 9. Ed. II. n. 32.*

*Edmond* [9] of *Woodstock*, born there on the 25th of *August*, A.D. 1301. and was created *Earl of Kent* in the 15th of *Edw. II.*

[9] *Ibm. f. 92.*

*Elianor* his [1] Tenth, and only Daughter by this Queen, died in her Childhood.

[1] *Sandf. ut supra.*



A

# CONTINUATION

Of the Compleat

## History of England, &c.

### King EDWARD the Second.

**A**fter the Death of *Edward* the First on the 7th of *July*, 1307, his Son *Edward* the Second succeeded him, being about the Age of Twenty three years; and Seven Weeks after his accession to the Crown, he summoned a Parlemtent by his [1] *Writs* dated *August* 26th, to meet at *Northampton* on the Quinden of *St. Michael*, or 13th of *October*, [2] concerning the Burial of his Father, his own Marriage and Coronation, and other Arduous Business touching the State of the Kingdom; but what was done in this Parlemtent more [3] *Walsingham* tells us, That the Money which would scarcely pass amongst the People in his Father's Life-time, was made current after his decease, under the Pain of Losing Life and Member; and that the \* *Clergy*, *Citizens*, and *Burgesses* gave their new King a Fifteenth part of their Goods; and the other Laicks a Twentieth. I find not what was further done here in *England* in the first Five months of his Reign, other than, That his great Favourite *Peirs de Gaveston* returned into *England*, his [4] *Exile* and the Obligation of his Oath not to come over, unless recalled by, or had Leave to come from King *Edward* the First, having been both determined by his Death. And also the Oath which King *Edward* made when Prince of *Wales*, at the same [6] time, That he would not Receive or Retain him without the Leave of his Father.

How long he had been in *England*, and how long Earl of *Cornwall*, before the 26th of *December*, in the first year of King *Edward*'s Reign, I have not seen. On that day being at *Westminster*, he made him by the Name and Title of *Peter de Gaveston* Earl of *Cornwall*, his [7] *Guardian* and *Lieutenant* of the Kingdom, for the better Conservation of the Peace and Quiet thereof, while he should be beyond the Seas, or during his Pleasure. And on the 18th of *January* following, being then at *Dover*, [8] he gave him Power to grant Licences of choosing Pastors of Cathedral and Conventual Churches, to take their Fealties when Elected and Confirmed, and restore the Temporalities, to give Prebends and vacant Benefices, which were of his Collation or Presentation, and dispose of Wardships and Marriages which might happen in his absence. On the 19th of *January* he [9] summoned a Parlemtent to meet at *Westminster* on the

[1] Cl. 1 Ed. II.  
M. 19. Dors.  
A. D. 1307.  
[2] Ibid.  
A Parlemtent  
summoned.

[3] Fol. 96.  
n. 10.  
Not well  
known what  
it did.  
\* Cl. 1 Ed. II.  
M. 12. intus.

[4 & 5] App.  
n. 43.  
*Peirs de Gaveston*  
returned  
into *England*.

[6] Ibid.

He is made  
Earl of *Cornwall*  
and  
Guardian, and  
Lieutenant of  
the Kingdom.  
[7] Append.  
n. 48.

[8] Ib. n. 49.  
The great  
Power given  
to him.

[9] Cl. 1 Ed. II.  
M. 11. Dors.



A the first Sunday in Lent, being then at Dover, but of it there are no Memoires in the Tower, or other-where, that I have seen. Then the King passing over Sea on the 28th of the same month, was [1] Married to Isabel, Daughter of Philip the Fair King of France, at Bologne, with wonderful Pomp and Celebrity, there being at the Solemnity Four Kings and Three Queens, besides the Bride; and returning into England, they were both [2] Crowned at Westminster on the 24th of February, where the Earl of Cornwall excelled all the Company in rich Cloaths and Ornaments, and carried the Royal Crown [3] before the King, which much increased the Envy of the Nobility against him.

[1] *Tho. de la Moor*, f. 593. n. 10.

[2] *Cl. 1 Ed II.* M. 10. Dors.

[3] *Ib. & de la Moor*, n. supra, n. 20.

B He was the [4] Son of a Gasconian Knight, who had done Edward the First great Service in the Wars of that Country, and in respect thereof he ordered him to be Educated with his Son the Prince; which made the great familiarity between them. Sir *Tho. de la Moor*, Servant to Edward the Second, gives him this Character; [5] That he had a fine Body, was of a quick and sharp Wit, curious in his Behaviour, and sufficiently Skilful in Military Affairs, which appeared (as he says) by his Management of, and keeping in due Subjection the Scots, when he commanded the English Forces in that Kingdom, for which he was envied by those who saw his happy Success.

Who *Peirs Gaveston* was.  
[4] *Frier John Trakelov's Annals of Ed. II.* f. 192. col. 2. a. in *Biblioth. Cotton. Claudine*, D. 6.  
[5] *Ut supra.*

C By reason of the King's extravagant Favours toward, and in conferring Honours and Lands upon him, especially after he had Married his Niece Margaret, Sister to the Earl of Gloucester, with his receiving him into so great Intimacy, and making him Chief Minister, (as may be supposed according to the Report of all our Historians) the Nobility were much moved, who pressed and advised the King he might avoid the Realm, which not being done so soon as was expected, the King declared [6] to all such as should see or hear his Letters Patents, That for no cause whatever he should be permitted to stay in England, longer than the Morrow of St. John Baptist, according as it had been advised by the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, and agreed to by himself. Given at Westminster the 18th day of May.

The Nobility much moved by the King's favour to him.

E Accordingly he was sent into Ireland, and made the King's [7] Lieutenant there, to Direct and Act in all things in his Name, as if he had been himself there present. Witness the King at Reding, 16 die Junii.

He is made the King's Lieutenant in Ireland.

[7] *Pat. 1 Ed. II. M. 3.* in *Cedula.*

F But long he stayed not there, for in the Second year of the King he procured a Tournament to be proclaimed at [8] Walsingham, and called thither so many Military Men out of Foreign Parts, that he insulted over the English Nobility, who came to meet them, amongst whom the chief were Thomas Earl of Lancaster, Humphrey de Bohun Earl of Hereford, Aymer de Valence Earl of Pembroke, and John Earl of Warren and Surry, who being much displeased, and hardly bearing the Pride of Gaveston, and the Reproach they received, every day considered and contrived how they might destroy him, De die in diem quomodo Petrum perderent cogitabant.

*An. D. 1308.*

[8] *Walsingh.* f. 96. n. 50. *A. D. 1309.*

The Nobility contrive how to destroy him.

The



They press the King to give them a Commission to choose Ordainers to make Ordinances for the Government of his Household and Kingdom.

[9] Append.  
n. 50.  
A. D. 1309.  
3 Ed. II.

The Commission for that purpose.

The Prelates, Earls, and Barons, taking advantage of the King's continued Exorbitant Kindness to him, and heaping upon him so great Riches and Estates, to the disadvantage of the Crown, and lessening the Revenues thereof, and the great Power he had with him, and being thereby (as may probably be concluded) the great Obstacle to the Execution of their Designs formed against the King's Father, and himself, were impatient till they had removed him never to return again; and to do this, they daily pressed the King to give them Authority to choose such amongst them, that might have Power to make Ordinances for the Government of his Household and Kingdom, which at length they obtained, and had this Grant or Commission for the making of them.

A

**THE** [9] King to all those who shall see or hear these Letters, Greeting; Whereas to the Honour of God, and for the good of us and our Realm, we have of our free Will granted to the Prelates, Earls, and Barons of our Realm, that they may choose certain Persons of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, and others whom they think fit to call to them, during the time of their Power, that is, to the Feast of St. Michael next coming, and from that Feast for a year next following, to Ordain and Establish the Estate of our Household, and of our Kingdom, according to Right and Reason. We Grant by these our Letters, to such as may be chosen by the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, whoever they shall be, full Power to Ordain the State of our Household, and of our Kingdom abovesaid, in such manner as their Ordinances be made to the Honour of God, to the Honour and Profit of Holy Church, and to the Honour of us, and our Profit, and to the Profit of our People, according to Right and Reason, and the Oath which we made at our Coronation. And we Will, that those which are chosen, and all under our Dominion, and of our Ligeance, shall observe and keep the Ordinances to be made, in all Points, and that they may secure the Observation of them, they may Bind themselves, and Swear to one another, without being questioned by us or our Friends; and if peradventure it shall happen, that part of those which shall be chosen to make the said Ordinances, shall be hindered by Death, Sickness, or other reasonable Cause, which (God forbid) so as they cannot perfect the said Ordinances, then it shall be lawful for such as are present to Proceed by themselves, or call such other to their Assistance, as shall be most for the Honour of us, the Profit of us and our People. In Witness of these things, we have caused to be made these our Letters Patents. Given at Westminster the 16th day of March.

B

C

D

E

[1] Append.  
n. 51.  
An Instrument made by the Nobility to the King concerning the Commission above.

The very day following the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, or at least as many of them as might then be in London, [1] made an Instrument to the King, wherein after they had repeated this Grant and Commission, they grant and promise for them, their Successors and Heirs, That the Grant which their most Dear Lord their King, had made as abovesaid, should not at any other time be drawn into Custom or Usage, nor turn to the prejudice of the King or his Heirs, or of them, their Successors or Heirs, nor to the damage of any one against Right and Reason; nor, That the Grant aforesaid may in other manner be intended or claimed, but

F



properly from his Courtesie and Free Will or Pleasure, and that the Power of the said Ordainers, as to making the Ordinances, should not indure longer than the Time limited. In Witnes whereof, they put their Seals to these their Letters Patents. Given at London the 17th Day of March, in the Year of Grace 1309. and the Reign of their Lord the King the Third.

A They lost no time after they had their Commission; for within three days the Ordainers were chosen and sworn. They were these [2] under-written :

[2] *Claud. D. 2. f. 295. a. in Biblioth. Cotton.*

The Arch-Bishop of Canterbury.

Bishops of	Earls of	Barons.
London,	Gloucester,	Hugh de Ver.
Salisbury,	Lancaster,	William le Marshall.
Chichester,	Lincoln,	Robert Fitz-Roger.
Norwich,	Hereford,	Hugh Courtenay.
St. David's,	Pembroke,	William Martin.
Landasse,	Richmond,	John de Grey.
	Warwick,	
	Arondell.	

B

C

The Oath was this, [3] as 'tis translated from the Old French:

[3] *Ibni.*

*I will make such Ordinance as shall be to the Honour of God, the Honour and Profit of Holy Church, and to the Honour of our Lord the King, and to the Profit of him and of his People, according to Right and Reason, and according to the Oath which our Lord the King sware at his Coronation; And that I will not forbear for any Man Rich or Poor, nor for Love or Hatred, nor any other thing: But will make such Ordinance in Form aforesaid. [4] And then after the Form of taking of it, 'tis noted in Latin, That,*

The Ordainers Oath.

[4] *Ibni.*

*Factum fuit, & Receptum prædictum Juramentum, &c. The said Oath was made and taken in the Form aforesaid, according to the King's Will and special Command, on Friday the 20th of March, in the Year of our Lord 1309. in the Third Year of the Reign of King Edward, the Son of King Edward, at Westminster, in the Great Painted Chamber of the said King.*

[5] *N. 52.*

E

The Ordinances themselves are transcribed from the Parliament-Roll, and Printed in the Appendix, and were to this Effect, and according to this Sense and Tenour:

F

*For that the King was Deceived by Evil Counsel, and the Nations of Gascoigne, Ireland, and Scotland in danger to be lost, and the Realm of England to be ruined, by Oppressions, Prizes, Takings, and Destructions; therefore Robert Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, the Bishops, Earls, and Barons, Chosen according to the King's Commission, did Ordain, to the Honour of God and Holy Church, and the Honour of the King and his Realm, in manner following :*

1. 'That



The Ordinances.

1. ' That Holy Church have all its Franchises, as it had before, and ought to have.

2. ' That the King's Peace be kept throughout the Realm, so as any Man may safely go, come, and stay any where, according to the Law and Usage of the Realm.

3. ' It is Ordained for the Payment of the King's Debts, the Bettering and more Honourable Maintenance of his Estate, That nothing of Lands, Rents, Franchise, Escheat, Ward, Marriage, Office, or Bailiwick, be given to any of the Ordainers during the time of their making Ordinances, nor to any other Person without the Advice and Assent of the Ordainers, or the greater Part, or Six of them at least, but that all things may be improved to the Honour and Profit of the King, and Advancement of his Estate.

4. ' That the Customs be Received by Persons of the Realm, and not by Strangers, that the Issues and Profits of them, and all other things, do come entirely into the Exchequer, and be delivered thence by the Treasurer and Chamberlains for to maintain his House or Court, and otherwise to his Profit, that the King may live of his own, without taking any other things than anciently due and accustomed.

5. ' That the Merchants, Aliens, and their Goods, be Arrested, while they have given Account of the Customs, and other Profits and Issues of the Realm, they received since the Death of King *Edward*, the Father of this present King, before the Treasurer and Barons of the Exchequer, and others to be joined with them by the Ordainers.

6. ' That the Great Charter be kept in all its Points; and that the Ordainers, and such as they shall call to their Assistance during their Power, shall declare all obscure and doubtful Points in it.

7. ' For that the Crown was so abased and dismembred by divers Gifts, it was Ordained, That all the Gifts Granted to the Damage of the King, and Distress of the Crown, after the Commission to them made, of Castles, Towns, Lands, Tenements, Offices, or Bailiwicks, Wards, Marriages, Escheats, and Releases whatsoever, as well in *Gascoigne, Ireland, Wales*, and *Scotland*, as in *England*, should be Repealed, and were declared Repealed, without any Regranting to those that had them, unless by common Consent in Parlement; or if any such Gifts or Releases were afterwards made, without Assent of his Barons in Parlement, until his Debts were paid, and his Estate advanced, they should be null, and the Procurer punished in Parlement by award of the Baronage.

8. ' For that it had been at other times Ordained, That the Customs, Issues, and Profits of the Crown, should be received,

A

B

C

D

E

F



ved by the People of the Realm, and not by Strangers, and paid into the Exchequer, for the Maintenance of the King's Household, &c. and it had not been done as Ordained ; therefore it was Ordained again it should be so.

A 9. ' And for that the King ought not to undertake to make War against any one, or go out of the Realm without the common Assent of his Baronage, for many Dangers that might happen to him and his Realm, it was Ordained, That afterwards the King should not go out of his Kingdom, or make War against any, without the common Assent of his Baronage ; and if he should do otherwise, and cause his Service to be summoned, the Summons should be null and void : And if it should happen the King should make War against any, or go out of the Kingdom by Assent of his said Baronage, and that it should be necessary to appoint a Guardian of the Realm, he ought to be appointed by common Assent of his Baronage in Parlement.

C 10. ' That there be no Prises or Takings for the King, but such as are due of ancient Right, that none under colour of Purveyance take to the use of the King, or other, any Corn, Goods, or Merchandise of any one, against his Will, or with his Will, according to \* *Magna Charta*, without paying the true Value for it, under pain of being pursued by *Hue-and-cry* ; and if taken, committed to the next Gaol, and undergoing the Common Law as a Thief and Robber.

\* Cap. 19.

D 11. ' That no new Customs or Maletolts levied since the Coronation of *Edward I.* or Inhancement of the old, be taken of Merchants, notwithstanding the Charter made by him to the Merchant Strangers against the Great Charter, the Franchises of the City of *London*, and without the Assent of the Baronage, &c.

E 12. ' To the Honour of God and of Holy Church, it was Ordained against such as should maliciously procure Prohibitions and Attachments against the Ordinaries of Holy Church, in case of Correction of Sin, and other things purely Spiritual, which belonged not to the Lay Court, That the Justices should award Damages to the Ordinaries ; and if the Plaintiffs had not wherewith to pay them, they should be committed to Prison, so long as the Grievance maliciously procured should require, saving the Estate of the King and Crown and other Right.

F 13. ' That because the King had been Guided and Counsellled by Evil Counsellors, therefore it was Ordained all Evil Counsellors should be removed from the King, that neither they nor any such should be near him, or hold any Office under him, and that other fit Persons should be put in their Places ; and in like manner it should be done to his Menial Servants, and the Officers of his Household.

O

14. ' For



14. ' For that many Evils happened by such Counsellors and Ministers, it was Ordained, That the King should make the Chancellor, Chief Justice of one Bench, and the other Treasurer, Chancellor, and Chief Baron of the Exchequer, Steward of his Household, Guardian of the Wardrobe, Comptroller, and a fit Clerk to keep the Privy Seal, the Justices of the Forest on this side and beyond *Trent*, the Escheators on this side and beyond *Trent*, and the Chief Clerk of the Common Bench, be the Advice of his Baronage in Parliament; and if it should happen and be necessary to chuse any such Officers when there was no Parliament, then the King should do it by the Advice he had about him, until there should be a Parliament: And so it should be for the future, concerning such Ministers when need required.

A

15. ' That all Governours of Ports and Castles upon the Sea, be placed and made according to the Form above-said.

B

16. ' And for that the Nations of *Gascoigne*, *Ireland*, and *Scotland*, were in danger to be lost for want of Good Ministers, it was ordained, That Good and Sufficient Officers should be placed there according to the Form of the 2d Article next above, that is the 14th.

C

17. ' That Sheriffs be from thenceforth made, by the Chancellor and Treasurer, and such of the Council as shall be present; and if the Chancellor be not present, then by the Treasurer, Barons of the Exchequer, and Justices of the King's Bench, that such should be chosen only as had Lands to answer the King and People for their Doings, and no others to have Commissions under the Great Seal.

D

18. ' That the Guardians and Officers of Forests receive just Trials for their Grieving the People, Oppressions and Misdemeanours, and be removed from their Offices, notwithstanding they have Grants for their Lives.

19. ' Directs the manner of Trial of Trespases of Vert and Venison, &c. in the Forests, according to the Charter of the Forest, and Declaration of King *Edward I.* which is there recited.

E

20. ' For that by the Examination of Prelates, Earls, Barons, Knights, and other Good People of the Realm, it was found that *Peirs de Gaveston* had evilly Counsell'd the King, and had inticed him to do ill in divers manners; That he cheated the King of his Treasure, and sent it beyond Sea; That he accroached to himself Royal Power and Dignity, in making Alliances with People upon Oath, to live and die with him against all Men; That he put from the King Good Officers, and placed about him those of his Covin and Party, as well Strangers as others; That he estranged the King's Heart from his

F



his Liege People, so as he despised their Counsels; That he caused the King to grant Lands, Tenements, and Offices to himself and his Heirs, and divers other People, to the great Damage and Injury of the King and his Crown; That he caused Blank Charters to be sealed with the Great Seal, in deceit and disinheritation of the King and Crown; That he maintained Robbers and Murderers, causing the King to pardon them; That King Edward, the Father of the present King, ordered him to forswear the Realm of England, and directed that his Son the present King should for ever forswear his Company; and for several other Reasons, as the Nourishing of Concord between the King and his People, and the Eschewing of many Perils and Discords, it was Ordained the said Peirs should for ever be exiled out of England, Scotland, Wales, and Ireland, and all the King's Dominions either on this side or beyond the Sea, between that time and the Feast of All-Saints next following (having Dover assigned him for his Port to pass from, and no other) and if he should be found in England, or any other part of the King's Dominions beyond that Day, then he should be treated as an Enemy to the King, Kingdom, and People.

21. That \* Emery, and those of his Company of Friscomband, should render an Account of the Treasure he had received, as he was ordered within the Quinden or 15 days after St. Michael, or the Bodies and Goods of that Company which were found in the Power of the King, should be arrested, and Emery declared and holden the King's Enemy, and used as such, if he was found in the King's Power on this side or beyond the Sea.

22. For that Monsieur Henry de Beaumont, to the Damage and Dishonour of the King, had received of him the Kingdom of Man, after it had been Ordained otherwise by the Ordainers, and other Rents, Lands, Franchises, and Offices, and procured for others Lands, Rents, Tenements, Franchises, and Offices against such Ordinance; And for that he gave evil Counsel, contrary to his Oath, it was Ordained he should be outed the King's Council for ever, and not to come near the King, unless he were summoned to Parlement, or in War, if the King would have him, or by common Assent of Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Earls, and Barons in full Parliament; and that all his other Lands should be seized into the King's hands, until he should be satisfied the full Value of what he had received of those Lands given him by the King, contrary to their Ordinance; and if he contended against this Ordinance, then for ever to be Disinherited of all Lands of the King's Gift.

23. That it was found by the Examination of Prelates, Earls, and Barons, That the Dame de Verscy had procured the King to give to Sir Henry Beaumont her Brother, and others, Lands, Franchises, and Offices, to the Damage and Dishonour of the King, and open Disherision of the Crown; Et ausint procure Demander hors Lettres Desus la Targe contre ley, & l'entention du Roy;

\* This Emery, and those of his Company, were a Society of Merchants by the name of the Society of Merchants of Friscomband's of Florence, who Rented the King's Customs of Wooll, Woollen, fells, and Leather, and had done so in the Ed. I. Par. 35. Ed. I. M. 17. Durs.



Roy; It was Ordained she should go to her House within 15 days after St. Michael next coming, without ever returning to Court to stay there, and for all these things aforesaid, and for that the Castle of *Bamburgh* was Parcel of the Crown, it was Ordained it should be re-taken into the King's Hands, and should not be given to her or any other without the Pleasure and good Will of the King.

24. 'That Acquittances should be allowed for Debts paid, and Accounts made in the Exchequer, and if the Treasurer and Barons of the Exchequer allowed them not, or made them not in due form, the Plaintiffs should have Remedy upon Petition in Parlement.

25. 'For that common Merchants and many other People are received to Plead in the Exchequer Pleas of Debt and Trespass, by reason they are avowed by Officers of the place more than before, which ought not to be, whereby Accounts and other things touching the King are often delayed, and the People much grieved, it was Ordained, That for the future no Pleas should be holden in the Exchequer, but such as concerned the King, and the Officers of the Exchequer, and their Menial Servants; And if any be received by Avowry of the Place to Plead therein contrary to the Form aforesaid, such as are Empleaded shall have their Recovery in Parlement.

26. 'Also, For that the People are much grieved, that the Marshal and Steward hold many Pleas which belong not to their Office, it was Ordained, they should not hold Plea of Frank Tenement or Debt, or Covenant or Contract, nor the Common Pleas of the People, but only Debts and Trespasses of the Court or King's House within the Verge, and Contracts and Covenants of such as belong to the Court, and no others; and that they should be speedily Pleaded from day to day, and ended before the King passed out of the Limits of the Verge where the Trespass was done; and if Pleas were held otherwise, they should be null, and such as were grieved might have Redress by Recovery of Damages in the Kings-Bench by Writ out of Chancery.

27. 'For that before that time many Felonies had been committed within the Verge, which were not punished, because the Coroners of the Country were not permitted to Enquire of such Felonies, but only the Coroners of the Household who were Partial; The Country Coroners without the Verge were to be joined with them in the Case of Murder especially, &c.

28. 'For that the People were much grieved, that some Persons Banded together to Kill and Rob them, by reason the King, by Evil Counsel, gave them their Pardons against the Law; It was Ordained, That for the future no Charters of Pardon should be granted for any manner of Felony, but in Case where the King might do it by his Oath, Process of Law, and the Custom of the Land, and if any other were granted it should be void.

29. 'For



A 29. 'For that many People are delayed of their Demands in  
'the King's Court (*i. e.* Bench) because the Parties alledge they  
'ought not to Answer the Demandants without the King, and  
'also many of the People grieved by the King's Officers against  
'Right, of which Grievances Men can have no Remedy but by  
'frequent Parlements, it was Ordained, That the King hold a  
'Parlement once every year, or twice if there be need, and in  
'convenient place; and in those Parlements, those Pleas which  
'were so delayed, and those where the Justices should be of di-  
'vers Opinions, Recorded and Determined; and in the same  
'manner Bills (*i. e.* Petitions) should be delivered and ended in  
'Parlement according to Law and Reason.

B 30. 'That Money shall not be altered without great occasion,  
'and then by common Advice of the Baronage in Parlement.

31. 'All Statutes made in Amendment of the Law, and for  
'the Profit of the People by the King's Ancestors, shall be kept  
'and maintained as before, and ought to be according to Law  
'and Reason, if they were not contrary to the great Charter,  
'the Charter of the Forest, or these Ordinances, and if so then to  
'be null and void.

C 32. 'That the Law or Common Right be not delayed by Let-  
'ters of Privy Seal, and such Letters to be void if procured.

33. 'Contains an Interpretation of the Statute of *Acton*  
'Burnel.

D 34. 'Concerns the Case of Appellants or Appealors, and the  
'Sheriffs and Gaolers Practices thereupon, now almost anti-  
'quated.

35. 'That no Man be appealed of Felonies maliciously, or  
'Outlawed in the Country where he hath no Land or Tenements,  
'nor put to Death or Disherited by such Suit, or Outlawry, he  
'rendring himself to the King's Prison, &c.

E 36. 'For the abatement of Appeals in Suits and Slight Cases,  
'in Murder and Robbery, if the Appellees were acquitted, they  
'should recover against the Abettors and Appellors according to  
'the Statute.

F 37. 'Against Protections for the Delay of Suits, as well in  
'Pleas of Land, as of Debts and Trespasses, by such as feigned  
'themselves in the King's Service; That the Plaintiff or Deman-  
'dant discovering the Deceit, to have Damages awarded him at  
'the Discretion of the Justices, and the Tenent of the Land to  
'be adjudged to Prison a year and day for Cheating the King  
'and Court; and if the Deceit be found in a Plea of Debt or  
'Trespass, upon Attaint, the Defendant shall be punished to the  
'King, and pay Damages to the Plaintiff.

38. 'Also



38. 'Also it was Ordained the great Charter of Franchises, and the Charter of the Forest of King Henry, the Son of King John, should be holden in all Points, and if there were any Points doubtful in them, they were to be declared next Parlement after this by the Baronage, Justices, and other Sages of the Law; and this was to be done after this manner, because it was not in their power for want of time.

A

39. 'That the Chancellor, Treasurer, Chief Justices, of one Bench and the other, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Treasurer of the Wardrobe, Steward of the Household, all Justices, Sheriffs, Escheators, Constables, Inquirers into any Matter whatsoever it was, and all other Bayliffs, or Officers of the King, should be Sworn when they received their Offices to keep and observe all the Ordinances made by the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, chosen and assigned for that purpose, and every one of them, without doing any thing to the contrary.

B

40. 'Also it was Ordained, That in every Parlement there should be assigned One Bishop, Two Earls, and Two Barons, to hear and determine all the Complaints of those that would impeach the King's Ministers whosoever they were, for doing any thing contrary to these Ordinances, and if all the Parties assigned could not attend to hear and determine these Plaints, then Three or Two of them might, and punish such as should be found to have acted contrary to these Ordinances, to the King, and to the Complainants, according to their Discretions.

C

41. 'Also they Ordained, That the Ordinances abovesaid should be maintained and kept in all their Points, and that the King should cause them to be put under his great Seal, and sent into every County of England, to be published, and firmly observed as well within Franchises as without, and in like manner the Warden of the Cinque-Ports should be sent to, that he should publish them to be kept through his whole Jurisdiction.

D

Then follows the King's Confirmation.

E

*WE these same Ordinances shewed to us, and published on Monday next before the Feast of St. Michael last past, do Agree unto, Accept, Confirm, Will and Grant for us and our Heirs, That all the said Ordinances, and every one of them made according to the Form of our Letters Patents, shall be published, and hereafter firmly observed and kept. In Witness whereof we have caused to be made these our Letters Patents. Given at London the 5th day of October, in the 5th year of our Reign.*

F

In the Parlement Roll 'tis not entered, or any mention made of the Protestation the King made when he confirmed these Ordinances; [6] That is to say, That if they contained any thing to his Damage or Prejudice, or contrary to the Commission granted to the Ordainers, *Et p[er] non concessis & non confirmatis habet.*

The Ordinances confirmed by the King.

[6] *Pat. 6 Ed. II. part. a. M. 20. intro. Ril. Plac. Parl. f. 541.*



haberentur, those things were not granted or confirmed, reserving to himself in that Protestation Power, by good Advice of the Ordainers, and others, to correct and amend the same, as was more fully contained in a Publick Instrument made of this Protestation.

The King's Protestation, that if the Ordinances contained any thing to his damage it should be void.

A The Summons to this Parlement, wherein these Ordinances were confirmed, were Dated at [7] *Berwick upon Tweede*, the 16th day of *June*, in the 4th of *Ed. II.* for it to meet the *Sunday* before *St. Lawrence*, or the 10th of *August*, which was in the 5th year of his Reign, at *London*.

[7] *Cl. 4 Ed. II. M. 1. D. 1. A Parlement summoned to confirm these Ordinances.*

B In the mean time there [8] happened divers Debates, and a Quarrel between Two Barons, *Nich. de Segrave*, and *William Marshall*, who took Arms on both sides, and engaged their Friends and Confederates so to do, intending to come to this Parlement with a Multitude of Armed Men; [9] The King taking notice it would be in Contempt of him, the Hindering of the Dispatch of Business, to the Terror of the People, and Disturbance of the Peace, sent his Prohibition to them, Commanding them upon their Faith and Homage, and forfeiture of their Lands and Tenements, and all they could forfeit, they should not come to the Parlement so Armed, or in any other manner than they and others use to come in the time of his Father. Witness the King at *Berwick upon Tweede*, *July 20th*.

[8] *Cl. 5 Ed. II. M. 31. D. 1. A Quarrel between two Barons.*

[9] *Ibm.* They intend to come to the Parlement with a number of Armed Men on either side. The King forbids them.

D After the Articles had been confirmed, several of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, thought it had been a long Session, and made it their [1] Request to the King, they might retire into their own Countries, by whose Advice or Assent he continued the Parlement unto the *Friday* next after the Feast of *All-Saints* at *Westminster*, (*Parliamentum illud usque in diem Veneris proximum post festum omnium sanctorum celebrandum, duximus continuandum*) and gave Leave to some of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, in the mean time, to go home, (*Et quibusdam de Prelatis, Comitibus & Baronibus, licentiam concessimus, se interim ad propria divertendi*) commanding [2] them to be at the time and place aforesaid; and further commanding the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, That he should give notice to the Deans and Priors of [3] Cathedral Churches, also the Abbots, and Arch-Deacons, in their own Persons, and the Clergy of the whole Province by their Proctors, to be in that Parlement 8 days after *St. Martin*. Witness the King at *London* the 8th day of *October*.

[1] *Cl. 5 Ed. II. M. 25. D. 1. The Continuation or Prorogation of this Parlement.*

[2] *Ibm.*

[3] *Ibm.*

F But this short time (as he thought) for the Summons of his Clergy [4] pleased not the Arch-Bishop, and therefore the King, if there might be any Words in that Writ [5] prejudicial to him and his Church, promised they should be amended in Parlement, and gave him Leave to Direct his Clergy to be at the Parlement Fifteen days or Three weeks after *St. Martin*, according to his Discretion. Witness the King at *Eltham* the 24th day of *October*.

[4] *Ibm.*

[5] *Ibm.*



[6] Cl. 5 Ed. II.  
M. 22. Dors.

The great  
Earls intend-  
ed to come to  
Parlement  
with Horſe  
and Arms.

The King  
Commands  
them not to  
come in ſuch  
manner.

The Parle-  
ment Diſſol-  
ved.

Another Par-  
lement ſum-  
moned.

[7] Ib. M. 17.

Dors.  
Which never  
met

[8] Ibem.  
M. 15. Dors.

Piers Gaveston  
quitted the  
Nation ac-  
cording to the  
Orlinances.  
[9] Append.  
n. 53.  
Was recalled  
by the King.

[1] Cl. 5 Ed. II.  
M. 15. Dors.

The Lords  
make advan-  
tage of the  
recalling Piers  
Gaveston.

The Arch-Bishop without doubt took the longest time, and accordingly others of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, delayed their coming until the Clergy should meet, unless there were a further continuance of the Parlement, which I find not; for on the 28th of November the King issued his [6] Writs to Gilbert of Clare Earl of Gloucester and Hertford, Thomas Earl of Lancaster, Hunfrid de Bohun Earl of Hereford and Essex, Adomar de Valencia Earl of Pembroke, Guy Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, and Edmund Earl of Arundel, [7] to signify to them, he was informed they were coming to his present Parlement, which was continued at Westminster, with Horſe and Arms, after an undue manner, which would hinder the Dispatch of Buſineſs in Parlement, which concerned him and the State of the Kingdom, affright the People, and disturb his Peace, wherefore he Commanded them upon their Faith and Homage, not to come in ſuch manner, but only as they uſed to come in his Father's time without Horſe and Arms, nor should attempt any other thing that might disturb the Peace.

By reason of the Solemnity of Christmas this Parlement was Dissolved, and much Buſineſs was left undiſpatched, and therefore there was another Parlement ſummoned to meet concerning that Buſineſs at [7] Westminster, on the first Sunday in Lent; Witneſs the King at Westminster the 19th of December. This Parlement never met, the Sheriffs in all Counties had [8] Command to make Proclamation, That the Knights, Citizens, and Burgeſſes, or others, should not come at the time, and to the place appointed, because the King could not be there, without any continuation of their meeting at other time and place; Witneſs the King at York the 20th day of January.

Piers Gaveston quitted the Nation according to the 20th Article of the Ordinances, but long he ſtayed not beyond the Seas, for on the 18th of January we find him in England with the King at York, and recalled by him, [9] as having been Banished contrary to the Laws and Uſages of the Kingdom, which he was bound to maintain by the Oath he made at his Coronation; and he farther wrote to the Sheriff of Yorkſhire, and all Sheriffs in England, That ſeeing he had in the Inſtrument of Exile no other Appellations but of good and Loyal, he returned at his Commandment, and was ready to ſtand to Right before him, and answer to all ſuch as would accuſe him, every thing that should be objected against him, according to the Laws and Uſages aforeſaid; Wherefore he should always eſteem him good and Loyal, and commanded them to repute him ſo, and publiſh this Matter through their whole Counties; Given at York the 18th day of January; And [1] two days after, writes to the Sheriffs of thoſe Counties where he had Lands, to reſtore them, with the Profits they had received, ſince they had ſeized them into his Hands.

The Lords neglected not this opportunity offered them by this Indulgence of the King, Declaring the Laws and Cuſtomes of the Kingdom were not obſerved, nor the late made Ordinances regarded.

The



The King to obviate the Effects of such Reports, issued a Declaration, which he commanded and firmly enjoined the Sheriffs of all Counties to proclaim in full County, in all Cities, Burghs, and Mercate Towns, and other Places they should think expedient, *That it [2] was his great Care, and chief Desire, his Peace should every where be observed, and that all the Laws and Customs of the Kingdom used and approved in the time of his Progenitors, and also all the Ordinances lately made to the Honour of God, and Holy Church, and his own, to the profit of him and the People, which were not to the Damage or Prejudice of him, or his Crown, or contrary to the Laws and Customs abovesaid, should be maintained and kept.* Witness the King at York, the 26th of January.

The K. issues a Proclamation and Declaration to satisfy them and others.  
[2] Append. N. 54.

And not long after, fearing Disturbance from the Lords, he wrote \*to the Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of London, to secure the City, so as by the Meetings of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, or any others, there might happen no Hurt or Danger to him, or the City. Witness the King at York, the 8th of February.

\* Pat. 5 Ed. 2. Part 2. M. 22.  
The K. writes to the Mayor of London, &c. to secure the City, &c.

This Declaration and Order, availed not, and therefore the King (as he said) resolved to Preserve the Rights of his Crown and Dignity Royal, the Peace and Tranquillity of Holy Church, and the whole People committed to his Charge in all things. And to this Purpose [3] wrote to all Sheriffs (the nearest to the Place where he was) to signify his Pleasure to all People, as soon as might be, lest by contrary Reports, it might be suspected he would not do it, and commanded them to make Proclamation thereof by themselves and Deputies, once a Week, in all Cities, Burghs, Mercat-Towns, and other Places in their Counties, and that his Intention might be more plainly known, he directed, That the Sheriffs should come to him, and every one bring with him a Person of Credit, whom he could Trust, to hear what he should further say to them, that they might publish it to the People, as he should then openly Enjoin them. Witness the King at York, the 24th Day of February.

The Declaration avails not

[3] Clauf. 5 Ed. 2. M. 13. Dors.

This way also proving ineffectual, he intended to proceed amicably with the dissatisfied Bishops and Barons, and according to the Power reserved in the Protestation he made, when he confirmed the Ordinances, he appointed [4] Commissioners, the Bishop of Norwich, Guy Terre, John de Crumbewell, Hugh de Audeley, William Deyncourt, Henry Spigurnell, Henry le Scroop, Knights, (the two last Justices) and Thomas de Cobham, Robert de Pikering, Walter de Thorp, Gilbert de Middleton, John Fraunceys, and Andrew Briggs, Clerks, or as many of them as could be present, to Treat with the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, who made the Ordinances, (upon which were grounded all the Pretences of Discontent and Quarrelling with the King) to Correct and Reform by their good Advice, all such Things in them as were Prejudicial and Injurious to him, or contrary to the Form of the Commission granted to them, if any such were. Witness the King at York, the 8th Day of March.

[4] Append. N. 55.  
A. D. 1311.  
5 Ed. 2.  
The King appoints Commissioners to Treat with the Ordainers about correcting the Ordinances, according to his Protestation.



[5] *Pat. 6 Ed.*  
2. Part 1. M.  
20. *intus. Ry-*  
*Plac. Parl. f.*

541  
[6] *Ibm.*  
The Ordainers at present decline a Treaty with the King's Commissioners in his absence.

[7] *Trotklow,*  
f. 194 b. Col. 2.  
& f. 195. a.  
Col. 1. *Walf.*  
f. 100. n. 20, 30  
The Speech of Henry E. of Lincoln before his Death.

How Holy Church was oppressed, &c.

[8] *Ue supra.*  
N. 50. 40.  
Thomas Earl of Lancaster and his Adherents resolve to Relieve Holy Church, &c.

[9] *Ibm.*  
The Earl of Lancaster chosen General of the Party.

[1] *Ibm. f.*  
101. l. 1. a.  
Who demand of the King to deliver Gaveston to them, &c. He took little notice of their Request.  
[2] *Ibm. n. 10.*  
The Lords Arm.  
The K. goes to Newcastle with Gaveston.

Those Prelates, Earls, and Barons, were then at [5] London, and excusing themselves for Treating concerning the Ordinances, in the absence of the King, sent him this Answer, [6] That in his presence, whenever he pleased to call them together, they would Treat upon the Ordinances. and should be ready to do all things according to the Protestation he made, and also according to the Protestation they made, at the time of publishing those Ordinances.

In the mean time, these Ordainers pursued their Designs, both open and secret, which were much promoted by a [7] Speech our Historians report to be made by Henry Earl of Lincoln on his Death-Bed, to Thomas Earl of Lancaster, who had married Alice his Daughter and Heir, That God had blessed him with greater Riches than any Nobleman in England, and that therefore he was bound before others to honour him; and told him, *He saw the Church of England that was wont to be free, now brought into Servitude by the Oppressions of the Romans, and unjust Exactions so often Extorted by Kings; (Cernis jam oculata fide, Quod Ecclesia Anglicana quæ solebat esse libera, per oppressiones Romanorum, & injustas Exactiones a Regibus toties Extortas nunc facta est ancilla)* and the People also which were wont to enjoy many Liberties, were brought into the same Condition, by divers Tallages and Vexations imposed on them by Kings, *Adjuring him by the Blessing of God and his own, That when he had an Opportunity, he should Free and Defend the Church and People from such Oppressions, for the Honour of God, That he should pay all due Honour and Reverence to the King that was his Lord, yet cause him to remove from his Court Evil Counsellors and Strangers, (& ut malos Consiliarios & Alienigenas à Curia sua amoveat)* and effectually to observe the Tenor of Magna Charta, and other Articles, (i.e. the Ordinances) Demanded by, and Granted to the Clergy and Laity; and that in order to the accomplishing these things, he should contract a strict Alliance with Guy Earl of Warwick, who better understood them than any other. Having ended his Speech, says [8] *Walsingham*, he took his Leave of the World, and after his Funeral, Thomas Earl of Lancaster with his Adherents, Humfrid de Bohun Earl of Hereford, Aymer or Adomar de Valentia Earl of Pembroke, Guy Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, and the Earl of Arundel, and other Barons which the Historian thought too many to name, with the Earl of Warren and Surry, who inclining toward the King, was brought off to the Party by the Archbishop of Canterbury, undertook to Relieve Holy Mother Church from Oppression, and recover the due Liberty of the Kingdom.

Thomas Earl of Lancaster [9] was chosen their Captain or General, who by common Agreement sent to the King then at York, Beseeching him either to Deliver Piers Gaveston to them, or as it had been Ordained, command him to avoid the Kingdom; [1] The King took small notice of their Supplications, left York, and went to Newcastle upon Tyne, where he continued until the Feast of the Ascension, the Queen being at Tinmouth. The Lords [2] Arm, raise an Army, and with all speed march towards Newcastle, not that they would offer Injury, or create Trouble to their Lord

A

B

C

D

E

F



Lord the King, but only take *Piers Gaveston*, and judge him according to the Laws made by common Agreement, (*ut ipsum petrum captum, secundum leges communiter editas* (i.e. the Ordinances) *judicarent*. When the King heard the *Barons* [3] were coming with an Army, he with *Peter* fled swiftly to *Tinmouth*; and when they had possessed themselves of *Newcastle*, forthwith he again with *Gaveston* went into a Ship; and though the Queen then great with Child, beseeched him with Tears to stay, he took no Pity of her, but sailed to *Scardeburgh*, commanding the Soldiers in the Castle to Victual it forthwith, and protect him, while he went toward *Warwickshire*. [4] *Trokelow* writes, That the Earl of *Lancaster*, before he left *Newcastle* to pursue the King and *Piers de Gaveston*, sent to the Queen then at *Tinemouth-Castle*, (and in great Passion that the King would not stay with her) by Trusty Messengers to comfort her, *Faithfully promising*, That he would not give over his pursuit until he had removed *Peter* from the King, and made his Excuse for not coming to her in Person, lest for her sake, he should incur the King's Indignation, *Ne forte indignationem Regis causa ipsius incurreret*.

The Lords [5] having notice of his being Shipped off, seized upon his Horses, and other Goods he had left at *Newcastle*, causing them to be valued, and kept secure, and then marched with what speed they could to *Scardeburgh*, and besieged it; [6] but the Earl of *Lancaster* finding no Opposition from the Country, retired with his Forces, that he might not be burthensom to the adjacent Parts, and left the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Warren* to take in the Castle, who in a short time so wearied the Guards within by Assaults, that they were not able to Defend it. [7] Then *Piers* seeing no remedy render'd himself upon condition to stand to the Judgment of the *Barons*, and that he might once more speak with the King. [8] The King hearing *Peter* was taken, desired he might speak with him, and prayed his Life might be saved; promising if it might be so, he would satisfy the Desires of the *Great Men* in all things. [9] The Earl of *Pembroke* laying hold of this Promise, persuaded the *Barons* to grant the King's Request, promising under pain of losing all his Lands to keep him safe, while he had spoken with the King, and then to restore him to the *Barons* at a Day and Place prefixed, [1] intending to have carried him to *Wallingford*; in his way thither at *Dadington*, (now *Deddington* in *Oxfordshire*, four or five Miles from *Banbury*) the Earl left him to the Care of his Servants, while he went to lodge with his Lady at a Neighbouring Place, [2] which the Earl of *Warwick* having notice of, came with a great Multitude, and noise of Armed Men that Night, and took him from the Servants, and carried him to his Castle. It being then doubtful what to do with him, whether they should carry him to the King, or put him to Death, a certain [3] Cunning Man, and of great Advice, answered, (*Quidem vir astutus & profundi Consilii respondit*) That it was to no purpose, having been at such Charge and Trouble to take him, to hazard the losing of him, or to seek him again, [4] adding, That it were much better that he should suffer Death, then a War should be raised in the Kingdom; when all assenting to this Advice, they took him out of Prison, and carried him to

[3] *Ibm.*  
The Barons march thither with an Army. The K. goes to *Tinmouth*. From thence to *Scardeburgh* by Ship.

[4] *Fol. 195. b. Col. 2.*

The Earl of *Lancaster* sends to Comfort the Queen, whom the K. had left at *Tinmouth*.

[5] *Walsingh. f. 101. n. 10.*  
The Lords besiege *Scardeburgh* Castle.  
[6] *Ibm. N. 20.*

[7] *Ibm.*  
*Piers Gaveston* renders himself.  
Upon condition to stand to the Judgment of the *Barons*.

[8] *Ibm.*  
The K. desired *Piers* his Life might be saved.  
[9] *Ibm. N. 30.*  
[1] *Ibm.*

[2] *Ibm. N. 40.*

[3] *Ibm.*

[4] *Ibm. N. 50.*



The Lords put  
*Piers Gaveston*  
to Death with-  
out Judgment.  
[5] *Knighen*,  
Col. 2533.  
lin. 5.  
[6] *Baronage*,  
Tom. 2. f. 44  
Col. 1.

[7] *Append.*  
N. 56.  
A. D. 1312.

*Piers Gaveston*  
not truly  
dealt with up-  
on his Sur-  
render.

[8] *Walſing.*  
P. 101. N. 50.  
& f. 102. l. 1.  
&c.  
The Lords de-  
manded the  
Confirmation  
and Executi-  
on of the Or-  
dinances.  
[9] lbm.  
[1] lbm.

[2] *Append.*  
N. 57.  
The K. ſent  
to the Chief  
Ordainers to  
come to his  
Preſence, and  
treat about re-  
forming the  
Ordinances.

They came  
not, but  
marched a-  
bout the  
Country.  
[3] *Append.*  
N. 58.  
Encouraging  
the People to  
join with  
them.

The K. forbids  
the Earls to  
come near  
him with  
Horſe and  
Arms.

an Aſcent or Hill about a Mile North-Eaſt of *Warwick*, called *Black-Low*, and there cut off his Head, on the [5] day of *Ger-vaſe* and *Protaſius*, the Martyrs, or 19th of *June*. Sir *William Dugdale* [6] from the MSS. K. 84.96. b. in the *Bodleian Library*, reports the Earls of *Lancaſter*, *Hereford*, and *Arundel* being at this Conſultation. Thus *Walſingham*; But Part of this Story is otherwiſe upon Record.

The King [7] wrote to *John de Moubray*, Guardian of the County and City of *York*, That *Henry de Percy* late by his Writing or Inſtrument, before him in his Preſence, upon Forfeiture of Life and Limb, Lands and Tenements, and all he could forfeit, undertook to preſerve and keep ſafe from Damage *Peter de Gaveston* then Earl of *Cornwall*, for a certain time, according to certain Terms and Conditions, upon which he render'd himſelf to the ſaid *Henry*, and others, without the *Caſtle of Scardeburgh*, and that the ſame *Henry* after the ſaid *Peter* had been Killed before the Time, and contrary to the Terms and Conditions aforeſaid, came not to him, but withdrew himſelf, by which he made himſelf ſuſpected, and therefore commanded him to take him without Delay, and bring him to him wherever he was. Witneſs the King at *London*, the 31ſt Day of *July*, in the 6th of his Reign.

The [8] Great Men having obtained their Purpoſe, againſt *Gaveston*, ſent to the King, proudly Demanding (*Proterve Poſtulant*) their Ordinances to be Confirmed, and put in Execution, Threatning, That if it was not done ſpeedily, they would come and force him to do it; [9] and forthwith they united their Forces, and Quartered themſelves in the Country about *Dunſtable*, he being then [1] at *London*.

Upon this Occaſion undoubtedly it was, as alſo upon occaſion of an Answer to the like Meſſage about Five Months before, as above related, that the King ſent [2] *John de Benſtede*, one of his Juſtices, to the Earls of *Lancaſter*, *Hereford*, and *Warwick*, who were at the making of thoſe Ordinances, to be with him at *London* or *Weſtminſter*, on the Sunday next after *St. Bartholomew*, to Treat in his Preſence about Correcting and Reforming the Ordinances, if any thing ſhould be found in them Injurious or Prejudicial to him; and that he ſhould enjoin them by their Faith and Homage, that they ſhould not come with Horſe and Arms. Witneſs the King, the 4th of *Auguſt*, at *Canterbury*.

Notwithſtanding this Notice and Inhibition, they came not, but marched about the Country with Horſe and Arms, Encouraging the People to join with them, and therefore the King enjoined [3] certain Commiſſioners, (reciting the moſt Material Part of his Precept, as above, to *John de Benſtede*.) And ſeeing they had not come to him as then Ordered and Enjoined, or ſent any one to answer for them; and underſtanding the ſaid Earls, with Horſe and Arms, and a great Multitude of Armed Men to be coming toward him, to the great Terror of the People, he aſſigned the ſame Commiſſioners, to forbid the Earls, and every one of them, by the Faith and Homage they ought him, That they ſhould not with Horſe and Arms come nearer to him, and if the Earls would not obey the Prohibition, then to forbid all and every one coming

A

B

C

D

E

F



coming with them, to proceed further, under the same Forfeiture. Witness the King at Westminster, the Third Day of September.

A The Bishops with the Earl of Gloucester, perceiving this [4] Dis-  
sentation would be dangerous to the Church and Kingdom, used  
all their Endeavours for a Peace: [5] They met at St. Albans with  
the Pope's Nuncios, sent by him as Mediators between the King  
and Lords. These Nuncios, [6] says Walsingham, sent certain  
Clerks from St. Albans to Whethemsted three or four Miles distant,  
where the Barons then lay with their Army, with the Pope's Let-  
ters, persuading them to Peace; and that they would not receive  
them, saying, They were not Learned, but bred up to Arms, and  
therefore cared not to see them: Then the Messengers desired to  
know if they would speak with the Nuncios, who would willingly  
come to them to Propound and Discourse with them about a Pro-  
ject of Peace; This says the Historian, they utterly refused, send-  
ing for Answer, That there were many learned Bishops in the  
Kingdom whose Advice they would take, and not the Advice of  
Strangers, who knew nothing of the Cause of Dissention. [7]  
The Nuncios affrighted at this Return, Early in the Morning made  
haste to London, after they had been at St. Albans above a Month,  
and that then the Bishops and Earl of Gloucester, by great Industry  
made the Peace. But this cannot be true; for the Record of the  
C Articles of Peace is in this Form.

D *Ceo est le* [8] *Tretiz de la Pees, &c.* This is the Treaty of Peace  
upon certain Displeasures the King hath conceived against the  
Earls of Lancaster, Hereford, and Warwick, and other Barons and  
Great Men of his Realm, made and accorded, before the Honora-  
ble Father, Monsieur Ernald by the Grace of GOD, by the Title  
of St. Prisca Priest-Cardinal, Monsieur Arnold Bishop of Poitiers,  
sent into England by our Holy Father the Pope, Monsieur \*Lewis  
of France Earl of Eureux, the Earls of Gloucester and Richmond;  
By the Earl of Hereford, Monsieur Robert de Clifford, and Mon-  
sieur John Botetorte, sent to London, with sufficient power to Do,  
Treat and Agree on the Part of the Earls, &c, and by the Earl  
of Pembroke, Monsieur Hugh le Despencer, and Monsieur Nicholas  
de Segrave, Deputed by the King, to hear the said Treaty, and Re-  
port it to him in the manner following.

E 1. First, That the Earls and Barons shall come before the King  
in Westminster-Hall, and with great Humility on their Knees make  
their Submission, and Swear if he will have them, That what they  
did, for which he thought ill of, and intended to punish them, was not  
done in Despight of him, and they shall humbly pray his Forgiveness,  
and receive it with a good Will, and shall restore all that was taken  
at Newcastle upon Tine, or other where, from Pier de Gaveston what-  
ever it was, viz. all his Jewels, Horses, and other things whatever  
F they were, &c.

2. The Second Article contains the Statute for the Security of  
the Earls and Barons, their Adherents and Allies, which was to  
have been passed in the next Parlement to be holden on the Third  
Sunday in Lent, with this Title, [9] *Ne quis occasionetur pro Morte*  
Petri

[4] Walsingh.  
F. 102. N. 10.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid.  
Walsingham's  
false Report of  
the Treaty  
between the  
K. and Barons.

[7] Ibid. n. 20.

[8] Claus. 6.  
E. 2. M. 8. Dorf.  
Riley's Placit.  
Parl. f. 538.  
A. D. 1312.  
The Treaty  
of Peace be-  
tween the K.  
and Barons.  
\* King Philips  
Son, and Bro-  
ther to Queen  
Isabel.

The Articles  
of Peace be-  
tween the K.  
and Barons.

[9] Old Sta-  
tures printed.  
A. D. 1540.



*Petri de Gaveston : That no Man be prosecuted for the Death of Peter Gaveston ; and further, That the King should Release and Quit the Earls, Barons, their Adherents, Friends and Allies, all Rancor, Displeasure, Actions, Obligations, Complaints, and Accusations, which arose by the Occasion of Peter Gaveston, since he married his Dear Companion Isabel Queen of England, whether it were for the Taking, Detaining, or Death of him, or the Seizing any Town or Castle, or Besieging of them, or for bearing Arms, or imprisoning any Persons.*

A

3. *Also it was agreed, That if this Security pleased the Earls and Barons, and that they would not come to Parlement in their proper Persons, they should send their Proxeys, with sufficient Power to receive and consent to that Security, and also with sufficient Power to consent to a Security to be made in that Parlement, for the Adherents to, and Receivers of Peter Gaveston, which security was treated of and agreed, and there recited, being the same with the [1] Statute having this Title, Ne quis occasionetur pro Reditu Petri de Gaveston : That no Man be prosecuted for the Return of Peter de Gaveston.*

[1] Ibid.

B

4. *Also the Treaters agree, That in the next Parlement there should be Provision made by the common Assent of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, that in all Parlements, Treaties, and other Assemblies in England, from that time forward for ever, Men should come without Force, and without Arms, peaceably to the Honour of the King, and the Peace of him and the Realm ; and the three Treaters promised to use their utmost Endeavour with the Earls of Lancaster and Warwick, by themselves or Proxeys, to consent to this Provision : And further it was ordered, That no Business should be propounded in this Parlement, but the Security's, and this Provision, nor any come with Arms, before the Submission was made, (which was certainly Done, or the Acts of Security had never passed) and then they might Treat of other Parlement Matters, as there might be occasion.*

C

D

5. *Also the Treaters promised, That after this Reconciliation was made, they would do what in them lay, with their whole Endeavour with their Peers, That the King should have an agreeable Aid of the whole Realm, for his War with Scotland.*

6. *Also the three Treaters complained, That the King since the Conduct given for this Treaty to the Lords and their Adherents, had caused the Lands and Goods of Monsieur Griffin de la Pole, to be seized, and also of Monsieur Fouk Lestrangle ; There were to be two Justices not suspected of Partiality, appointed by the King, to Examine the Matter, and do them right.*

E

7. *Also that the Goods of Monsieur Henry de Percy, which were seized by the King, be restored by Pledges or Sureties until the next Parlement.*

F

8. *Also it was agreed on behalf of the King, That all Men might safely Pass and Repass through the Kingdom of England, or elsewhere, for the Dispatch of their Business under his Protection, they doing or receiving no Wrong : This Conduct and Security to continue until Pentecost*

tecost



tecoft next coming, and of this, the King to grant Letters under the Great Seal, To the Earls, Barons, and their Adherents.

A The Collation of this Indenture was Made and Read in the Year of Grace 1312. on the *Wednesday* next before *Christmas*, in the Cardinal's Chamber at *London*, in the Presence of the *Cardinal*, the *Bishop* of *Poicters*, the *Bishop* of *Worcester*, the *Earl* of *Pembroke*, and many others: In Witness whereof one Part of the Indenture remained with the King, and the other Part was given to Master *John Waleweyn*, and *Michael de Meldon*, to be carried to the Earls and Barons.

B The two *Securities* mentioned in this Treaty, were not passed into Statutes, as was agreed in the Second Article in the Parliament summoned on the 20th of *January*, in the Sixth of this King, to meet on the Third *Sunday* in *Lent*, nor in the next, summoned on the 23d of *May* next following, to meet Fifteen days after the Nativity of *St. John Baptist*, but in that which was summoned on the 26th of *July*, in the Seventh of his Reign, to meet on *Sunday* next after the Feast of *St. Mathew* the Apostle, as may be seen in the Old Statutes Printed 1540.

C *Robert Winchelsey*, *Archbishop* of *Canterbury*, lived to see the Articles of this Treaty finished, but Dying on the [2] 11th of *May* preceding, lived not to the passing of these Statutes, by whose *Persuasion* and *Encouragement* the *Earl* of *Lancaster* and *Adherents* opposed the King in his Folly. [3] *Thomas Lancastrie ipsius Roberti* (speaking of this Archbishop) *animatus hortatu, cum sibi adherentibus per plures annos conatus est Regiis obsistere ineptiis.*

D The great Opinion the *Earl* had of this *Archbishop*, or thinking it a great Advantage for a Miracle-worker and Saint, to have been a Patron of the Cause, he wrote to the [4] *Prior* and *Convent* of *Canterbury*, praying them as he had done before, to give Testimony some notorious Way, and by their Letters Patents, what *Miracles God had wrought* by *Robert Archbishop* of *Canterbury* that last was; and what he had wrought as well in his Life-time, as after his Death, and to inform him of the *Miracles*, which were hanged up in writing before his Tomb.

E Taking advantage of these Dissentions and Controversies in England, *Robert Brus* [5] reduced the most Part of *Scotland* to his Obedience, and took in most of the *English* Garrisons, some by Force, others upon Terms, some one Year, some another. Having taken *Edinburgh*, he sent his Brother *Edward* to besiege *Sterling* Castle, in which was *Philip Mowbray* a Stout and Provident Governor, who taking notice of the Success of the *Scots*, had exceedingly Fortify'd and Victualed it. *Edward Brus* after some time lying before it, despaired of taking it by Force, and both sides agreed on these Conditions; [6] *That if the English did not Relieve the Castle within a Year from the Day of the Treaty, it should be Delivered to the Scots; and that the Garrison should have safe Conduct, to go whither they would, with all their Goods.*

A. D. 1313.

*Robert Winchelsey* A Bishop of *Canterbury* dies [2] *Hist. Sacra. f. 17.* By whose Persuasion the *E. of Lancaster* opposed the King. [3] *Ran. Higden. Lib. 7. Cap. 41.*

[4] *Append. N. 59.* The *Earl* of *Lancaster* wrote to the *Prior* and *Convent* of *Canterbury* for a Particular of the *Miracles* wrought by *Winchelsey*.

[5] *Buchan. Hist. f. 80. b.* A. D. 1313. *Robert Bruce* taking advantage of the Dissentions in England, reduceth a great Part of *Scotland* to his Obedience.

[6] *Ibm. n. 80.*



A. D. 1314.  
7. Ed. II.

[7] *Claus.* 7.  
Ed. II. M. 8.  
*Dors.*  
The Earls of  
Lancaster,  
[8] *Trekelow*, f.  
198. a. col. 2. &  
*Walsf.* 104. n.  
50.  
Warwick and  
Arundel, refuse  
[9] *Ib.* f. 105.  
lin. 1, &c.  
to serve the  
King against  
the Scots.  
The Battel of  
Bannocks-bourn.

[1] *Freyf.* vol. 1.  
c. 6. f. 2. a.  
col. 2.

[2] *Rot. Parl.*  
n. 35, 36.  
A. D. 1314.

[3] *Append.*  
n. 60.  
The People  
in Stafford &  
Shropshire re-  
fuse to pay a  
20th part  
Granted by  
Parlement.  
[4] *Ibm.*  
The Preten-  
ces of their  
Denial.  
[5] *Ibm.*

The next Spring, the Scots came into the Marches or Borders, and made great Ravages and Slaughters there; and to suppress their Insolencies, secure the Borders from their Cruelties, and drive them back, the King summoned the Militia to [7] meet him at Newcastle upon Tyne 3 Weeks after Easter, and march from thence against his Enemies; and all that ought him Service came: But the [8] Earls of Lancaster, Warwick, Warren, and Arundel, who refused their Service, because the King had not effectually observed, or put the Ordinances in due execution without them. The King [9] marched with a numerous and glorious Army to the Relief of Sterlin-Castle, where he received a mighty Overthrow on the Eve and Day of St. John Baptist, or 24th of June. In this Battel (which is called the Battel of Strivelin, or Bannocks-Bourn, because Fought near Sterlin, and by the Brook or River Bannock) was slain Gilbert Earl of Clare, and several other Noble-men, many Knights and Banerets, and a great number of ordinary Men, and many of all sorts taken Prisoners, the King hardly escaping. The Particulars of this Fatal Fight may be seen in most of our Historians. [1] There was great murmuring after this Defeat, the Barons, whereof the Earl of Lancaster was Chief, put it upon Hugh Spenser the Younger, that by his Advice the Field was lost, and that he was favourable to the King of Scots.

In the Parlement holden at Westminster, eight days after St. Hilary, or 20th of January, in the 8th of his Reign (per *Petitionem Archiepiscoporum, Episcoporum, Comitum, Baronum, & aliorum de Communitate Regni coram nobis & consilio nostro exhibitam, &c.*) by a Petition of the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Earls, Barons, and others of the Community of the Kingdom, exhibited to the King and his Council, That Oxen, Cows, Muttons, Hogs, Geese, Hens, Capons, Chickens, Pigeons, and Eggs, were intolerably dear; it was enacted and proclaimed in every County, That the best Ox not fed with Grain, should be sold for 16 s. and no more; and if he were fed with Corn, then for 24 s. at most. The best live fat Cow for 12 s. a fat Hog of two Years old for 3 s. 4 d. a fat Wether or Mutton unshorn for 20 d. and shorn for 14 d. a fat Goose for 2 d. ob. a good and fat Capon for 2 d. a fat Hen for 1 d. two Chickens for 1 d. four Pigeons for 1 d. and twenty four Eggs for 1 d. And those that would not sell these Things at these Rates, should forfeit them to the King.

This Parlement [3] gave the King a 20th Part of their Goods, or Moveables, which in Stafford and Shropshire some dissatisfied People refused to pay, and hindred the Collectors appointed by the King from gathering of it, [4] pretending it was granted upon certain Conditions, to wit, That he should cause the Great Charter of the Liberties of England, the Charter of the Forest, the Ordinances made by the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, and the Perambulation of the Forests to be observed, which had not then been duly put in execution. At which the King was much surprized and displeased, seeing he had commanded them to be observed, and had assigned Commissioners in all Counties to make the Perambulations: [5] Therefore that he might be thoroughly satisfied about the Nature of the Action, and have the Names of the

A

B

C

D

E

F



the Actors, he appointed one of his Clerks, with the Collectors, to make enquiry by themselves, and if it were needful by the Oaths of lawful Men of those Parts, of all Particulars concerning the same, and certifie him distinctly of them.

A In the 9th of his Reign, in the Parlement at *Lincoln* [6], holden 15 Days after *St. Hilary*, the King deferred the declaring the Business of the Parlement, because *Thomas Earl of Lancaster* and other Great Men were not then come; according to whose Advice he intended to proceed; yet on [7] *Wednesday* next after the *Quinden* of *Hilary*, the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Justices of both Benches, were enjoined to bring in Briefs of such Matters depending before them in their several Places, which out of Parlement could not be determined, that here in this Session they might do in such Cases what ought to be done.

B On the 12th of *February*, being *Thursday*, the *Earl of Lancaster* and other Great Men being present, the cause of Calling the Parlement was declared, being for their Advice and Assistance against the King's Enemies the *Scots*, who had possessed themselves of the greatest part of that Nation, and disowned their Obedience, [8] beseeching and enjoining the Prelates, Noblemen, and other his Liege Subjects being there, to advise and assist him: *Supplicans & injungens Prelatis, Proceribus, & ceteris Fidelibus, & Subditis suis ibidem existentibus, ut sibi in premissis consulerent, & facerent sibi auxilium opportunum.*

C After this it was agreed [9], That the Prelates and Noblemen (*Prelati & Proceres*) should meet on the morrow being *Friday*, to treat of Parlement Business, they met that Day, and discoursed of many things; and it was agreed and commanded by the King (*Concordatum fuit & per Regem preceptum*) they should meet the next day, to treat of the same Matter, [1] when they agreed the Proclamation about the Prices of Oxen, Cows, Sheep, Geese, Hens, and other Victuals set the last Parlement, should be revoked, and that they should be sold as formerly at reasonable Rates. The reason of this, says *Walsingham*, was [2] because after the Price set in Parlement, they were much dearer.

E On *Tuesday* following the King, by the *Bishop of Norwich*, promised to [3] observe all the Ordinances formerly made by the Prelates and Great Men (*per Prelatos & Proceres*) and also the *Perambulations* of the Forest made in his Father's time, saving to the King his Reasons against them (*salvis Regi Rationibus suis contra Perambulationes*) and thereof Writs were made accordingly.

F On the *Friday* next coming [4] the Great Men and Community of the Kingdom (*Magnates & Communitas Regni*) Granted to the King in Aid of his War with *Scotland*, of every Town in the Kingdom one Stout Footman, except in Cities and Burghs, and the King's Demesnes; and these Footmen were to be armed, and furnished with Swords, Bows, Arrows, Slings, Lances, and other Armour fit for Footmen, at the Charge of the Towns, and their Expences to be paid until they came at the Place of Rendezvous,

Q

Commissioners appointed to enquire about their Pretences.

[6] Rot. Parl. n. 1. A. 6.

1315.

The cause of Summons to Parlement deferred to be declared, because the Earl of Lancaster and other Great Men nor come.

[7] Ibid.

The Chancellor and Justices of both Benches enjoined to bring in their Briefs of such Causes as could not be determined out of Parlement.

The Scots disobedient to K. Ed. II.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[1] Ibid. The Prices of Victuals revoked.

[2] Hist. f. 107. n. 20.

[3] Rot. Parl. n. 1. The King promiseth to observe the Ordinances.

[4] Ibid. Soldiers how raised and paid against the Scots.

and



and their *Wages* for 60 Days after and no longer, if the King's Service required it, at 4 *d. the day*; and Market-Towns that were further able to be charged with Men, were so to be charged, the King promising to give his Letters to the Great Men and Community of the Kingdom (*Magnatibus & Communitati Regni*) and to their Heirs, That this Grant should be no Precedent, nor drawn into Example for the future.

[5] *Ibm.*

The same Day the King, by Advice of the Prelates and Great Men (*Consilio Prælatorum & Procerum*) ordered the [5] whole Service due to him, *i. e.* all the Horse of England, to be Summoned for this cause, to be at Newcastle upon Tyne 15 Days after Midsummer.

[6] *Ibm. n. 2.*

The Citizens, Burgeſſes, and Knights [6] (*Cives, Burgenses, & Milites de Comitatus qui venerunt ad Parlamentum*) then Granted the King in Aid of this War and Expedition, a 15th Part of all the moveable Goods, [7] *Civium, Burgensium, & Hominum de Civitatibus, Burgis, & de Dominicis Regis*) of Citizens, Burgeſſes, and Men of Cities, Burghs, and the King's Demeſns, which they had at Michaelmas then last past.

[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Ibm. n. 3.*  
The King had a sincere good will toward the Earl of Lancaster and other Great Men.

On Shrove-Tuesday in the Parlemt, [8] the Bishop of Norwich on behalf of the King, moved the Earl of Lancaster to put away all Doubting he might have of him, for that he had a sincere Goodwill towards him, and the other Great Men (*erga ipsum & alios Proceres Regni sui*) and held them to be his Faithful Liege-men, and told him the King desired to have him the Chief of his Council, requesting him [9] (*ex parte Domini Regis & Prælatorum ac Procerum Regni ibidem existentium*) on behalf of the King, Prelates, and Great Men there present, to take upon him to assist and advise in the Affairs of King and Kingdom. The Earl thanked the King, and and humbly requested time to deliberate (*humiliter supplicavit quod ipse possit deliberare*) and then answer. Which he did in a very short time, and was Sworn of the King's Council in the Form following :

[9] *Ibm.*

[1] *Ibm. n. 4.*  
[2] *Ibm.* this number only in French upon the Roll.

He requested the Earl to be Chief of his Council.

[3] *Ibm.*  
The Earl complies upon such Terms as he might Govern the Kingdom.

Whereas our Lord [1] King Edward, by the Grace of God King of England, hath, with the Prelates, Earls, and Barons of the Land, [2] *aveſques Prelates, Countes, e Barons de son Terre*) in full Parlemt requested his dear Cousin, Monsieur Thomas Earl of Lancaster, that he would be Chief of his Council, in all Great and Weighty Affairs touching himself and his Realm, with other Prelates, Earls, and Barons, which may between the King and himself take care, that he may be for the Profit of him and the Realm; The said Earl, for the great Love he had for his Lord the King, and for the Common Profit of the Kingdom, and the Ordinances [3] (*qil ad ſur merci enterement Grante a teniz*) which he had upon favour entirely granted to observe, and the right Laws to maintain in all Points, and in hope to make Amendments in such things as had been ill done in his Court and the Estate of his Realm, did grant to be of the King's Council, with the Prelates, Earls, Barons; so as at the Hour the King shall not do according to his Directions, and others of his Council concerning the Matters of his Court and Kingdom; after such things have been shown him, and

A

B

C

D

E

F



and he will not be Governed by the Council of him and others, the Earl, without Evil Will, Challenge, or Discontent, may be discharged from the Council; and that the Business of the Realm concerning him, shall not be done or performed, without the Assent of him and the other Prelates, Earls, and Barons, which shall be ordained, or appointed to advise him, [4] (saunz Assent de luy & des autres Prelatz, Countes, & Barous qi de luy Conseiller ferront ordenetz) And if any of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, shall advise the King or do other thing which shall not be for the Profit of him and his Realm, then at the next Parlement, by the Advisement of the King and his Friends, [5] (solone lavisement nostres Seigneur le Roy & le seon) they shall be removed; and so it shall be from Parlement to Parlement, as to them and every of them, according to the Faults found in them. In Witness whereof, this Bill was to be entred on the Parlement-Roll; ceste Bille entre en Rouelle de Parlement. And then it follows,

[4] *Ibm.*[5] *Ibm.*

**B** Billa [6] *predicta formam continens supra scriptam, liberata fuit Willicmo de Ayremin Clerico, &c.* The foresaid Bill containing the Form above written, was delivered to William Ayremin Clerc, by the hands of the Lords Walter of Norwich, and Bartholomew de Badlesmer, commanding the said William, by Order of the King, to inroll it Word for Word.

[6] *Ibm.*

The Instru-  
ment by  
which he was  
made Chief of  
the Council,  
entred upon  
the Parlia-  
ment-Roll

[7] *Rot. Scot.*  
*Ed. 2. M. 6.*  
The Earl of  
Lancaster  
made General  
of the Army  
against the  
Scots, and  
Lieutenant of  
Scotland.

[8] *Rot. Cl. u.*  
*10 Edw. II.*  
*M. 2. A. D.*  
*1317.*

Two Cardi-  
nals sent to  
make Peace  
between Engl.  
and Scotland,

[1] *59 4 r. 50*  
and the King  
an *E. of Lanc.*

[2] *f. 110. n*  
*20*

[3] *Walsf. 105.*  
*n. co.*

*& f. 111. n. 40.*  
*d. la Moor, ut*  
*supra.*

They Excom-  
municate Rob.  
Brus, and put  
Scotland under  
Interdict.

[4] *Ibm.*

[5] *f. 111. n. 50.*  
*A. D. 1318.*

**C** Over the Army above-mentioned, raised by the Parlement against the Scots, the Earl of Lancaster was made [7] General, and the King's Lieutenant in Scotland; but what great things he did with this Army, or by his Lieutenancy, it appears not in any History I have met with.

**D** Next Year the Pope sent two [8] Cardinals into England, Garse-  
lin by the Title of the Saints Marcellin, and Peter Priest Cardinal, and  
Lucas by the Title of St. Mary in the Broad-way, Deacon Cardinal  
[9] to make Peace between the Two Kingdoms of England and Scot-  
land, and reconcile the Earl of Lancaster to the King. [1] Sir Tho.  
de la Moor says, they were made Friends in a Plain near Leicester,  
and that they embraced and kissed each other. [2] Walsingham  
says, Peace was made between them upon certain Conditions;  
and that not long after the King unjustly brake them. They [3]  
both say, these Cardinals brought with them the Pope's Bulls, by  
which they Excommunicated Robert Brus, and put the King-  
dom of Scotland under Interdict, for their Defection from, and  
Disobedience to the King of England, unless he and they submit-  
ed to him.

**E** This Year [4] de la Moor says Robert Brus manfully and by force  
took Berwick, killing none that would yield. [5] Walsingham re-  
ports it was betrayed by the Governour Peter Spalding, and sold  
to the Scots, to the great Disturbance of the King.

**F** Neither King nor Kingdom of Scotland valued much this Ex-  
communication and Interdict, or at least Robert Brus's Friends,  
or those of his Party, never considered or regarded it; for in  
the 11th of this King, the Year following, he summoned a Parle-  
ment to meet on the morrow of Holy Trinity at Lincoln,

Neither Rob  
Brus nor the  
Kingdom of  
Scotland va-  
lued the Ex-  
communicati-  
on or Inter-  
dict.



[6] *Ras. Claus.*  
11 Ed. II. M.  
3. *Dar[.]*  
The Scots invade England.

[6] which he revoked for this reason, That his Enemies and Rebels the Scots had invaded England, and come into Yorkshire, committing many Murders, Plundering, Wasting, and Burning the Country, so as he resolved suddenly to march against them with an Army to restrain their Incursions, and bring them to a Submission; and therefore the Parlement not to meet.

[7] *De la Moor,*  
f. 595. l. 1. *Sec.*  
The King besieged Berwick.  
[8] *Ibm. and*  
*Walsingh. Hist.*  
f. 112. n. 20,  
30.  
A Truce with  
the Scots for  
Two years.  
[9] *Append.*  
n. 61.

According to this Resolution, in Autumn this year [7] the King marched with a great Army to besiege Berwick, the Scots on the other side of the Country invaded England, spoiling, wasting, and burning, as far as York, [8] which caused the King to raise the Siege of Berwick, and consented to a Truce for Two years.

In the Twelfth of this King, the Earl of Lancaster Governed and Directed all things; [9] To him certain Prelates, Earls, and Barons, by the Will of the King, and Assent of many Great Men of the Realm, and others of the King's Council, being then at Northampton, went to Discourse, and Treat about the Honour and Profit of the King, and Realm; and it was agreed between them, That Bishops, Earls, and Barons should remain with him, to Advise him in such Matters as concerned him until his next Parlement; and concerning this and other Matters an Indenture was made in the Form following.

[1] *Ibm.*  
The Indenture of Agreement between the King, the Earl of Lancaster, and other Great Men.

This [1] Indenture Witnesseeth, That the Honourable Fathers, the Arch-Bishop of Dublin, the Bishops of Ely, Norwich, and Chichester, the Earls of Pembroke, and Arundel, Monsieur Roger de Mortimer, Monsieur John Somery, Sir Bartholomew de Badlesmere, Monsieur Ralph Basset, and Monsieur John Botetourt, by the Will and Assent of the King, have Discoursed with the Earl of Lancaster concerning the things touching the Profit of himself and the Realm in the Form following; To wit, That the Bishops of Norwich, Chichester, Ely, Salisbury, St. Davids, Carlisle, Hereford, and Worcester, the Earls of Pembroke, Richmond, Hereford, and Arundel, Sir Hugh de Courteny, Sir Roger de Mortimer, Sir John de Segrave, Sir John de Grey, and one of the Banerets of the Earl of Lancaster, which he shall Name, should remain with the King for one quarter of a year until the next Parlement, and that Two Bishops, One Earl, One Baron, and One Baneret of the Earl of Lancaster, at least, should always be with him, and that all considerable Matters that might or ought to be done out of Parlement, should be done by their Assent, otherwise to be void, and amended in Parlement by the Award of the Peers; and such as should remain with the King Quarterly, shall be chosen and assigned out of them, and others in Parlement, to Act, and Advise the King as aforesaid. And the above-said Prelates, Earls, and Barons, by the Will and Assent of the King, undertook, That he should Release and Acquit the Earl of Lancaster, (ses gentz, & ses meignees) his People, Followers, or Retinue, or as now those of his Party, of all manner of Felonies and Trespasses against the Peace, until the day of St. James this year; and that the Charters of Release and Acquittance should be plain and absolute without Condition, and if better Security for them might be found at the next Parlement, they should have it, and there Confirmed by the King and his Baronage. And the Earl of Lancaster granted, That he would

A

B

C

D

E

F



would make Releases and Acquittances to all those that on behalf of the King should demand them, of Trespasses done to his Person, as soon as the things aforesaid should be Confirmed; nor that he would bring Suit of Felony against any one, from the time they had his Letters, saving to him all Plaints, Actions, and Suits, which he had against the Earl of Warren, and all those that were assenting and aiding to the Felonies and Trespasses which the Earl had committed against him, against the King's Peace. And that the Ordinances be kept and observed, as they are under the King's Great Seal. And that these things aforesaid should be performed, and kept in all Points. The Honourable Fathers in God the Arch-Bishops of Canterbury and Dublin, the Bishops of Norwich, Ely, Chichester, Salisbury, Chester or Litchfield, Hereford, and Worcester, the Earls Marshal, Edmond his Brother, the Earls of Richmond, Hereford, Ulster, Arondel and Anegos, Sir Roger de Mortimer, Sir John de Somery, Sir John de Hastings, Sir John de Segrave, Sir Henry de Beaumont, Sir Hugh le Dispenser le fuiz, Sir John de Grey, Sir Richard de Grey, Sir Bartholomew de Badlesmere, Sir Robert de Mohant, Sir Ralph Bassel, Sir Walter de Norwich, have undertaken by the Will and Assent of the King. In Witness whereof the Prelates, Earls, and Barons aforesaid, have put their Seals to one part of this Indenture, and the Earl of Lancaster hath put his Seal to the other; Written at Leek (whether in Staffordshire, Warwickshire, or Yorkshire, it appears not) the 9th day of August, in the 12th of King Edward. After this Indenture, in the same Record, we have an Account what was done in the succeeding Parliament concerning the Contents of it.

And now at the [2] beginning of this Parlement [3] summoned on the 25th of August to meet at York three weeks after Michaelmas, this Indenture was read, in the presence of all assembled in the Parlement, and all things in it diligently considered, the Prelates, Earls, and Barons agreed to Pray and Request the King for the Honour of himself, and the Profit of him and the Realm, That for the great Business that concern him, and do happen from day to day, he would please to assent, That Two Bishops, One Earl, One Baron, and One Baron or Baneret, of the family of the Earl of Lancaster, in his Name, and for him, should be present and remain with him by Quarters of the year, to Deliberate with, and Advise him in due manner, and that they might Deliberate and Advise about all considerable Matters out of Parlement, until a Parlement should otherwise Determine concerning them; and so as nothing of these things should be Debated without the Counsel and Assent of the Prelates, Earls, and others which remained with the King according to the Form of the said Indenture; and if any thing was done otherwise, it should be void, according to the same Indenture.

The King understanding this Request, and desiring to be Advised, by all ways which may or ought to make for the Honour and Profit of him and his Realm, and considering that when he received the Government, he found Scotland in War against him, and since that there hath been War in Ireland, and many other Disturbances have happened in his Dominions, for which he

A. D. 1319.

[2] *Ibm.*  
[3] *Rot. Claus.*  
12 *Edw. II.*  
M. 28. in *secunda.*

The Request of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, made to the King in Parlement.

The Parlement is for Proceeding according to the Indenture.

The King alloweth it.



he thought it necessary to have with him the greatest and most sufficient Advice, he did agree, and willed to have Prelates, Earls, and Barons, to advise him in the Form afore said; and so as his Ministers should always perform their Offices, according to the Law and Usage of the Kingdom.

And whereas it was contained in the Indenture, That the Prelates, Earls, and Barons there named, had undertaken, by the Assent of the King, That he should make, to the Earl of Lancaster, his People or Party and Followers, Releases and Acquittances of all manner of Felonies, and Trespasses against his Peace, until the day of St. James this year, and that the Charters of Release and Acquittances should be absolute, without Condition, and if better Security could be found for them in the next Parlement, they should have it, and also confirmed by the King and his Baronage.

He Pardons  
the Earl of  
Lancaster, &c.

The King by Assent of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and Commonalty of his Realm in his said Parlement, granted Pardon to the Earl of Lancaster, and his Followers, of the Suit of his Peace, and whatever belonged to him by reason thereof, of all manner of Felonies, and Trespasses committed against the Peace unto the 7th day of August last past, and Pardon of Outlawry to those that should demand it, if any had been pronounced against them, before the making of their Charters; And Commanded the Bishop of Ely, then his Chancellor, That he should make Charters under his great Seal absolute, and without Condition, for for the Earl of Lancaster, and such as he should by his Letters Name to the Chancellor.

And granted  
the Ordina-  
nces should  
be kept.

Also, whereas in the same Indenture it was contained, That the Ordinances should be Holden and Kept as they had passed the Great Seal, the King Willed and Granted, that they should be so kept, and that all these things should be written upon the Parlement Roll, and sent to the Chancery to be inrolled there, and from thence to both Benches to be inrolled there.

[4] *Clans.*  
15 *Edw. II.*  
M. 14. *Durf.*  
*in cedula.*  
Hugh Despenser  
the Son, the  
King's Cham-  
berlain.

By the [4] Award against the *Despensers* it appears, that Hugh the Son, was named and agreed to be the King's Chamberlain in this Parlement; *De la Moor* says, in the same year, (*i. e.* 12th of *Edw. II.*) he was made Chamberlain by the Consent of the Prelates, and others, because they knew the King hated him, yet he by Prudence and Obsequiousness, soon changed his mind, and obtained his Affection, when they prosecuted him with the greatest Hatred. [5] *Anno igitur sequenti, Prælatorum consensu & aliorum quorundam Hugo Despenser filius constitutus est Regis Camerarius, quem eo libentius in hunc locum promoverunt, quia cum Regi Exosum Cognoverunt. At vero & prudentia & obsequio, haud multo post dirempto Regis animo, eum in sui amorem facile Commutavit, unde & illi odio eum vel maximo persecuti sunt.* Then [6] speaking of his Father, he Reports him to be a Person of great Integrity, Wise in Counsel, Stout in Arms, whose Confusion and Ignominious End was caused by his Inordinate Love towards his Son, a Person of a Brave Presence, Proud Spirit, and Wicked Life, causing by

[5] F. 594.  
lin. 5.

The Cha-  
racter of the  
Spenser's, Fa-  
ther and Son.

[6] *Ibm.* and  
n. 10.

A

B

C

D

E

F



by his Ambition and Covetousness, Widows and Orphans to be Disinherited, and Noblemen to be put to Death, by which he hastened his own, and his Father's Destruction. These are the short Characters given of both the *Dispensers*, by this Historian, and a brief Account how the Son came to be Chamberlain. In the year following, I have not read or seen any thing worth noting.

A

In the 14th of this King, *William de Braiosā*, a Baron in the Marches of *Wales*, and a Spend-thrift, who propounded to sell part of his Estate called *Gowerland*, that descended to him by Inheritance, to several Lords; The Earl of [7] *Hereford*, because it was nigh his Lands, agreed with him for it; The Two *Roger* [8] *Mortimers*, because it lay near their Lands, thought it convenient for them, and knowing nothing of his former Bargain,

B

agreed with him also for the Land; The Lord *John* [9] *Mowbray*, who had Married his only Daughter and Heir, thought himself sure of it by Inheritance. [1] This Land held of the King *in Capite*, and could not be sold without the King's License, and lying on every side next the Lands of *Hugh Despensers the Son*, then his Chamberlain, he obtained Leave of the King to Purchase it; and then bought it of the Owner. [2] This so provoked these Barons, and especially the Earl of *Hereford*, that he

C

Complained of the Injury done him to *Thomas Earl of Lancaster*; and they Two drawing a great number of the Barons to them, made a Confederacy to live and dye for Justice, and destroy Traytors, and especially both the *Hugh Despensers, Father and Son*.

D

In pursuance of this Confederacy, the Earl of *Hereford*, the Barons there named, Monsieur *Roger de Mortimer*, the Nephew and the Uncle, Monsieur *Roger Damory*, Monsieur *John de Mowbray*, Monsieur *Hugh de Audeley*, the Father and the Son, Monsieur *Roger de Clifford*, Monsieur *John Giffard de Brimmesfield*, Monsieur *Morice de Berkeley*, Monsieur *Hen. de Tyes*, Monsieur *John Maltravers*, and many others of that Alliance, on the Feast of the Invention of Holy Cross, or 3d of *May*, entred into the Lands of *Hugh the Younger in Wales* (while he was with the King doing his Office as Chamberlain) by Force and Arms, and killed [3] some of his Servants and Tenants, others they kept in

E

Prison, and some they suffered to be Ransomed; burnt, pulled down, destroyed, or defaced all his Houses, and Castles, and took and carried away the Goods of all forts which they found upon his Lands, or in his Houses and Castles, to a very great value. [4] From hence they rambled up and down the Country, and went into *Glostershire, Wiltshire, Hampshire*, and all Counties, where *Hugh the Father* had Lands, and begun their Work on *Barnaby-day*, or 11th of *June*, at his Mannor of *Fa- stern in Wiltshire*, and in all his Lands, Houses, and Castles, and in all things behaved themselves as they had done in those of the Son.

F

When they had done these Mischiefs, they marched to *Sherborn in Dorsetshire*, where was at that time *Thomas Earl of Lancaster*, whose the Castle was, and others, and on Sunday after

*Wal singh. Hist.*  
f. 113. n. 20.

The reason of  
the Discon-  
tent of some  
Barons.

[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Ib. n. 30.*

[9] *Ibm.*

[1] *Ib. n. 40.*

[2] *Ib. n. 40,*  
50.

A Confederacy  
between  
the Earl of  
*Lancaster*, and  
a great num-  
ber of Barons  
against the  
*Despensers*.  
See the Revo-  
cation and  
Adnullation  
of the Process  
and Award  
against the  
Two *Spencers*,  
here follow-  
ing.

The Barons  
Kill and Im-  
prison the Te-  
nants and Ser-  
vants of the  
*Spencers*.

[3] *Ibm.*

They burn,  
pull down,  
and destroy  
their Houses  
and Castles.

[4] *Ibm.*

They carry  
away their  
Goods of all  
forts.

And enter  
into a Con-  
federacy.

*Mid-*



Midsummer-day they entred into a new, or confirmed the old Confederacy.

A. D. 1320.

The Confederacy of the Earls and Barons against *Hugh* and *Hugh le Despenser*.

From the French Copy in the Register of Christ Church, Canterbury, f. 242.

Note, That the Addition of *Monsieur* is put before every of these Names.

Here also the same Addition is put before every of their Names in the French Copy.

*This Indenture Witnesseth, That on the Sunday next after the Feast of St. John Baptist, in the 14th Year of the King at Sherborn in Elemede, in the presence of the Arch-Bishop of York, the Bishops of Durham and Carlisle, the Earls of Lancaster and Aenegos, it was considered, That Hugh le Despenser, the Father and the Son, had ill counselled and moved the King, to the Dishonour and Damage of him and of his Kingdom; and having heard and understood the Reasons of the Earl of Hereford, Roger de Mortimer the Nephew and Unkle, Hugh de Audely the Father and Son, Roger Dammory, John de Mowbray, Maurice de Berkeley, Roger de Clifford, Henry de Teys, John Giffard, Thomas Mauduit, Gilbert Talbot, and other Great Men, and others of the Marches (i. e. of Wales) And notice of Information having been given to the Earls of Lancaster and Aenegos, Monsieur Robert de Holland, Fonk de Estrange, Stephen de Segrave, William le Latimer, John Devery, John de Harrington, Adam de Swinington, William de Kyme, Marmaduke de Tweng, Richard Walleys, Robert Pierpoint, Ranulph Dacre, Edmund Deyncourt, Thomas Willeby, Willham de Penington, Ralph de Nevill, Giles de Trumpyton, John de Beker, Adam de Hodeleston, Michael de Haverington, Adam de Everingham, William Truffel, Robert de Rigate, Robert de Richer, John de Clifford, Henry de Bradbourn, Nicholas de Langford, John de Brekeworth, Thomas Wycher, John de Cliff, Thomas de Longuevillers, Edmund de Nevill, Gasselin Daniel: That the Earl of Hereford, Monsieur Roger de Mortimer, and other Great Men of the Marches, and others above-named, have begun Quarrels and Complaints against Monsieur Hugh the Father and Son; and that 'tis done to the Honour of God, the Honour and Profit of the King and of his Kingdom. And it seemed to them all, that the Oppressions could not be taken off from the People, until they had Hugh the Father and Son in their possession, or they were banished: And it was with one Assent of them all there, whoever they were, That the Quarrels or Complaints before named, should be maintained to the Honour of God and of Holy Church, to the Profit of the King, the Queen, and their Children, and the Safety of the Crown and People. And so as the Earl of Lancaster and other Great Men which began this Quarrel will maintain it, so the Earl of Aenegos, and all named after him, with them will maintain it with all their Power. And whenever the Earl of Lancaster and other Great Men shall leave the Quarrel, the Earl of Aenegos, and all those named after him, may leave it, without being accused or questioned for it. And to maintain these things, the Earls of Aenegos and all others after him, put to their Seals. This was the part of the Indenture Agreed and Sealed to by the Earl of Aenegos.*

[8] Wals. Hist. f. 114. n. 10, 20, 30, 40.

From whence they march to *St. Albans*, plundering Victuals every where in their March, and oppressing the Poor. [5] *Per viam diripientes ubique Victualia & Pauperes Terræ Gravantes; from whence they sent the Bishops of London, Salisbury, Ely, Hereford,*  
and



and Chichester (then at *St. Albans* to make Peace) to the King at *London*; not only to send *Hugh* and *Hugh* the Two Traitors from his Court, but also out of the Kingdom. The King's Answer was, That *Hugh* the Father was beyond Sea in his Service, and *Hugh* the Son was at Sea for the Guarding of the Cinque-Ports according to his Duty; and that according to Right and Custom, they ought not to be Banished without answering for themselves.

The Barons come to *St. Albans*, and send 5 Bishops to the King to Banish the 2 *Spencers*. The King's Answer to the Bishops.

The King had [6] summoned a Parlement on the 15th of May, to meet three Weeks after *Midsummer*, or the 15th of July, at *Westminster*. The Barons, upon the receipt of the King's Answer, go to *London* with Horse and Arms, notwithstanding the King had commanded them to come to the Parlement in due manner; there they held a Council by themselves, and came not to *Westminster* as they were summoned, but remained in *London* with Horse and Arms 15 days after the King had begun and holden his Parlement, when they made the Award against the Two *Spencers*, and concealed it from the King, who knew nothing of it, until the Hour they came with it to *Westminster* with Force and Arms, so as the King could not hinder the passing of it, which was to this effect:

[6] Rot. Claus. M. 5. Dof. 14. Ed. II. He summons a Parlement. The Barons came to *London* with Horse and Arms; And keep a Council by themselves, & come not to the Parlement at *Westminster*. And then made the Award against the *Despensers*, as appears by the Revocation, as above. The Award made by the Barons against the *Spencers*. [7] 3 Weeks after *Michaelmas*. Claus. 12 Ed. II. M. 28. in cedula.

' To the Honour of God and Holy Church, and of our Lord  
' the King, for the Profit of him and his Realm, and to main-  
' tain Peace amongst his People and the Estate of the Crown,  
' the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Peers of the Land and  
' Communes of the Realm, do shew against Sir *Hugh le Despenser*,  
' Father and Son, That whereas Sir *Hugh* the Son at the Parlement  
' at *York* [7] was Named, and it was there Agreed he should be  
' Chamberlain to the King; in which Parlement it was Agreed,  
' That certain Prelates and other Great Men should be with the  
' King by turns, at several Seasons of the Year, the better to ad-  
' vise him, without whom no great Business ought to pass. The  
' said Sir *Hugh* the Son, drawing to him his Father, who was  
' not by Order of Parlement to be near the King, or to be one  
' of those Counsellors, between them both have usurped Royal  
' Power over the King and his Ministers, and the Government  
' of the Kingdom, to the Dishonour of the King, the Injury of  
' the Crown, and Destruction of the Kingdom, Great Men, and  
' People; and have done the Wickednesses under-written, in  
' contriving to turn the Heart of the King from the Peers of  
' the Land, that they may have the sole Government there-  
' of.

1. ' That Sir *Hugh* the Son made a Bill or Writing, whereby  
' he would have had Sir *John Gifford* of *Brimmesfield*, Sir *Richard*  
' *de Greye*, and others, entred into a Confederacy to have forced  
' the King to do what he would have him; and had almost done  
' it. The Tenour of the Bill is under written.

2. ' Homage and the Oath of Allegiance is more by reason of  
' the Crown than of the Person of the King, and bound him  
' more to the Crown than the Person; and this appeared, for  
' that before the Crown descends, there is no Allegiance due



‘ to the Person Expectant. Wherefore in case the King carries  
 ‘ not himself by Reason, in Right of the Crown, his Lieges are  
 ‘ bound by Oath made to the Crown to remove the King and the  
 ‘ State of the Crown by Reason; and otherwise the Oath ought  
 ‘ not to be kept. Then it was demanded, whether the King was  
 ‘ to be dealt with by Suit of Law, or by Rigour (*par Suit de Loy*  
 ‘ *ou par Aspertee*;) By Suit of Law it could not be, for he had no  
 ‘ Judge. In which case, if the King’s will be not according to  
 ‘ Reason, and that he maintains nothing but Errour; therefore  
 ‘ to save their Oath, and when the King will not redress what  
 ‘ is injurious to the People, they must proceed with Rigour;  
 ‘ for he is bound by Oath to Govern his Lieges, and his  
 ‘ Lieges are bound to Govern in Aid of him, and in Default  
 ‘ of him.

A

3. ‘ Also upon the Application of the Great Men and People  
 ‘ unto him, his Answer was according to the Pleasure of these  
 ‘ Two, in turning the King from his Duty against his Oath,  
 ‘ and the Hearts of the Great Men and People against their  
 ‘ Liege Lord.

B

4. ‘ Also by their evil Contrivance, they will not suffer the  
 ‘ Great Men of the Realm nor Good Counsellors to speak with,  
 ‘ or come near the King to advise him, nor the King to speak  
 ‘ to them, unless in their presence and hearing, or of one of  
 ‘ them, and when they please; they usurping Royal Power and  
 ‘ Sovereignty over the Person of the King, to the great Disho-  
 ‘ nour and Peril of him, the Crown, and the Kingdom.

C

5. ‘ Also to attain to their Wickedness, Covetousness, and  
 ‘ Disinheriting the Great Men, and Destruction of the People,  
 ‘ they put out Good and Agreeable Ministers placed by Assent,  
 ‘ and put in others False and Wicked of their Party, who will  
 ‘ not suffer Right to be done as Sheriffs, Escheators, Constables  
 ‘ of Castles, and make Justices not understanding the Law, as  
 ‘ Sir Hugh the Father, Sir Ralph Bassett, Sir Ralph Camois, and Sir  
 ‘ John Inge, and others their Friends; who caused to be in-  
 ‘ dicted, by false Jurors of their Alliance, the Peers of the Land,  
 ‘ as the Earl of Hereford, Monsieur Giffard of Brimmesfield, and  
 ‘ Monsieur Robert de Monshall, and other good People, to get their  
 ‘ Lands.

D

6. ‘ Also they falsely and maliciously advised the King to raise  
 ‘ Arms against his People in Gloucestershire, contrary to the Great  
 ‘ Charter, and the Award of the Peers of the Land, and by their  
 ‘ false and evil Counsel, would have made War in the Land for  
 ‘ their own proper Quarrel, to the Destruction of Holy Church  
 ‘ and the People.

F

7. ‘ Also whereas the Earl of Hereford, and the Lord of Wigmor  
 ‘ (*i.e. Mortimer*) by the King’s Command were assigned to make  
 ‘ War upon Llewelin Bren, who had levied War against him in  
 ‘ Glamorganshire, when the Earl of Gloucester’s Lands, by reason of  
 ‘ his Death, were in the King’s hand; and Llewelin had rendred  
 ‘ him-



himself into the Lords hands to the King's Grace and Pleasure, and upon that Condition delivered him to the King, who received him accordingly; but when these Lords were out of the Country, these Two, the Father and Son, usurping Royal Power, took *Llewelin*, and carried him to *Cardiff*, after that Sir *Hugh* the Younger was seized thereof (as of his Share of the Earl of *Glocester's* Estate, one of whose Daughters and Heirs he had married) pretending to a Jurisdiction, where none was in this case; and there caused him to be Drawn, Hanged, Beheaded, and Quartered, feloniously for things done in the time of King *Henry*: And also took upon them Royal Power and Jurisdiction, which was appendant to the Crown, in Disinheritance of the Crown, and Dishonour of the King, the said Lords of *Hereford* and *Mortimer*, and in ill Example and great Peril in the like case in time to come.

8. Also they ill advised the King to take into his hands the Lands and Goods of Sir *Hugh Audely* the Son, who was forejudged without due Process, contrary to the Law of the Land, by the Covetousness of the said *Hugh* to get some of those Lands; and by other false Compassiments contrived to have the Lands of Sir *Roger Dammory*, and for having him attainted for entering into *Glocestershire*, in Disinheritance of the Peers of the Land.

9. Also that whereas the King had granted by his Letters Patents to the Earl of *Warwick* in full Parlement at *Westminster*, That after his Death his Executors should have his Lands until his Heir was of Age; which Grant, after the Earl's Death, was confirmed by the King at *Lincoln*, at the Request and Assent of the Peers of the Land in Parlement, the said Sir *Hugh* the Father procured his Son to cause the King to repeal this Grant without cause, and to give to the said *Hugh* the Father, for his own Profit, the Guard of those Lands; and also had defeated by evil Counsel what the King had granted in his Parlements by good Advice, and by Assent of the Peers of the Land, to the Dishonour of the King, and against Right and Reason.

10. Also, that they would not suffer the King to take reasonable Fines of the Peers of the Land and others, when they entered and received their Fees, as it had been used before that time: But by Covetousness, to get such Lands by the Royal Power they had gained, they caused undue Impeachments to be brought, surmising the Land was forfeit, as of Sir *John de Mowbray* for the Lands of *Gower*, and of others, to the Damage and Dishonour of the King, and contrary to the Law of the Land, in Disinheritance of the Great Men and others. Also making the King do against his Oath in Parlement.

11. Also by wicked Covetousness and Power Royal they will not suffer the King to hear or do Right to the Great Men, upon what they presented to him, for himself and themselves touching the Disheriting the Crown and them touching the Lands which were the *Templers*. Also by Usurped Power Royal they



Or 13. if the first Paragraph be an Article, as it seems to be in the Statute.

Old Stat. printed by Berthollet, 1540. Part 2d. p. 55. a.

\* Ibm. After the Award obtained by force, the Barons desire Security for what they had done by necessity without Law, as in the printed Statutes.

‘ Governed the King, *his Council, and his Prelates*, that in Matters concerning them and their Friends, or which they undertook, no Right could be obtained but according to their Pleasure; to the Damage and Dishonour of the King, the Peril of his Oath, and Disinheritance and Destruction to the People of his Realm.

12. ‘ Also Bishops, Abbats, and Priors Elect, who ought to be received of the King when duly Elected, cannot come near him, nor speak with him to obtain his Favour, until they have agreed and made Fine with Sir *Hugh* the Son according to his Pleasure; nor any that had any Grant to ask of the King could obtain it, before they had made Fine with him.

‘ Which Wickednesses are notorious and true, as it is found by the Examination of the Earls, Barons, and other Peers of the Land: Wherefore *we Peers of the Land, Earls and Barons*, in the presence of our Lord the King, do award, That *Hugh le Despenser* the Son, and *Hugh le Despenser* the Father, shall be Disherited for ever, as *Disheriters of the Crown*, and *Enemies to the King and his People*, and to be *Banished* the Kingdom of *England*, never to return again, *unless it be by the Assent of the King, and by the Assent of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons in Parliament duly summoned*; to avoid the Realm between that time and the Feast of the Decollation of *St. John Baptist*, or 29th of *August* next coming; and if found in *England* after that Day, or if they returned after that Day, then to be done unto as to the Enemies of the King and Kingdom. This in the printed Copy is called, *Exilium Hugonis le Despenser, Patris & Filii*; The Banishment of *Hugh Despenser*, Father and Son.

After they had by force obtained these things, and in this manner, they bethought themselves of some Security for what they had done, \* setting forth, That they could not be obtained by Process of Law, for that the Two *Dispensers* usurping Royal Power, and having the King and his Ministers, and the Direction of the Law at their Devotion, or in their Power, the Great Men of the Land made a Confederacy by Oath, Writing, and in other manner, without the King's Leave; and then they and others, with Horse and Arms, marched against others, with the King's and their own Arms displayed, and took and seized upon Castles, Towns, Mannors, Lands, Tenements, Goods and Chattels of the King's Liege Subjects; and others of them they took and imprisoned, others they ransomed, and some they killed, and did many other things, in destroying the said *Hugh* and *Hugh*, and their Allies and others, in *England, Wales*, and the Marches, of which some may be called Felonies; which things having been so done by *Necessity*, ought not to be taken notice of, or punished by Law, nor can be without great Trouble or Hazard of War. These *Great Men* pray the King for Peace sake, for the asswaging of Anger and Rancour, and making Unity in the Land, and that he may more entirely have the Hearts and Goodwill of his People to defend his own Countries, and offend his Enemies; That it might be *accorded and assented* to in full Parliament, *by the King, Prelates, Earls, Barons, and Commons* (*& la*

*Com-*



A *Comon du Royalm*) that no Great Men of the Realm, Prelate, Earl, Baron, Knight, Clerc, or Esquire, for the Confederacy made by Oath, Writing, or in other manner, or for riding with the King's, or other Arms display'd, nor for the Taking, Possessing, or Detaining of Castles, Towns, Mannors, Lands, Tenements, Goods, or Chattels, the Taking, Imprisoning, and Ransoming the King's Liege-People, or for Killing of Men, other Robberies, Felonies, or other things done against the King's Peace, which may be judged Trespases or Felonies, from the beginning of the World to that Day; and other People of what Condition soever they were, for the Trespases and Felonies aforesaid committed since *Candlemas* last past to that Day, should not be Empeached, Grieved, or Molested at the suit of the King or any other. But of all such things, by this Statute and Accord should be quit for ever, saving to every one, except the said *Hugh* and *Hugh*, their Right to Demand and Recover their Frank Tenement, and their Right without Punishment from the King, or giving Damages to the Party. And also, That it may be Granted by the King in the said Parlement, That if any Earl, Baron, or any Great Man, for themselves or others, whom they shall Name to the Chancellor, between this and St. *Michael* next coming, will have the King's Pardon of sute of the Peace, or what pertains to him, of all manner of Felonies and Trespases done contrary to the Peace; or of Disobediences, Contempts, Conspiracies, Confederations, Privy Covenants, and Obligations, made against the King, should have their Charter of Pardon, without paying Fees in the *Chancery*; and that all such Writings where-ever found to be Null. This was Granted, and hath this Title in Print, [8] *Ne quis occasionetur pro Feloniis seu Transgressionibus factis in prosecutione Hugonis le Despenser Patris & Filii*, That no Man may be prosecuted for the Felonies and Transgressions committed in the Prosecution of *Hugh Dispenser* Father and Son: And there follows a Charter of Pardon [9] Granted to the Earl of *Hereford*, according to this Accord; Dated the 20th of *August* next following, then in the 15th year of his Reign.

E After this, the Barons having their Charters of Pardon, went home; but as [1] *Walsingham* says, being jealous of the King's Favour, went always Armed, and kept in safe Places. (*Armati semper incedebant, & loca tuta querebant*) In the mean time there happened an unfortunate Accident to the Barons. [2] Queen *Isabel*, who was always the Nurse of Peace and Concord between the King and Barons, (*Isabella Regina, quæ nutrix Pacis & Concordiæ fuerat inter Regem & Barones*) took her Progress toward *Canterbury*, intending to Lodge in *Leeds-Castle* in *Kent*, of which *Bartholomew de Badlesmere*, (a Town also in *Kent* from whence his Name) had been made Constable or Governor in the [3] 11th of this King, (yet our Historian in the place last cited, says, having been long his Steward, obtained it of the King, to him and his Heirs, in Exchange for other Lands) in which he had placed his Wife and Children with much Treasure, under a Guard; while he forsaking the Faith of his Lord the King, adhered to the Barons. ([4] *Dum fidem Domini sui Regis Deserendo, adhæsit Baronibus*.) The Queen's Marshal comes to provide Lodgings for Her self

[8] *Ibm.* p. 60. a.

[9] *Ibm.* p. 61. b.

[1] *Hist. f.* 114. n. 50. The Barons Jealous of the King. [2] *Ibm.*

[3] *Par. 11 Ed.* II. Part 1. M. 17.

[4] *Walsingh.* *Ut supra.*



[5] Ibm. f. 115.  
lin. 2. &c.  
The Queen  
denied En-  
trance into  
Leeds Castle in  
Kent.  
The Garrison  
deny to ren-  
der it to the K.  
[6] Ibm. n. 10.

He besiegeth  
and takes it,  
puts the Go-  
vernor to  
Death, and  
many of the  
Warders.

[7] E. 595. n.  
30, 40.  
A. D. 1321.  
15 Ed. II.  
The Barons  
came to Re-  
lieve the Ca-  
stle.  
And sent to  
the King to  
raise the Siege,  
who would  
not.  
They march  
into other  
Parts of the  
Kingdom  
with their  
Army.  
[8] Revoca-  
tion, ut supra.  
Sir Thomas de  
la Moor, ut  
supra n. 50.  
The Banish-  
ment of the  
Spensers re-  
vok'd.

[9] Walsingh.  
Hypodig. Neust.  
f. 504. n. 40.

De la Moor, ut  
supra.  
A. D. 1322.  
15 Ed. II.  
The King in-  
creased his  
Army, and  
marched a-  
gainst the Ba-  
rons.

[1] Ibm.  
The Earls of  
Hereford and  
Lancaster join  
their Forces.

self and Family; He is denied Entrance, with a [5] Sawcy Re-  
turn from the Guard within, *That they would not suffer the Queen,*  
*or any other, to enter there, without Command or Letters from the Lord*  
*of it.* She came her self, and demanded Entrance into the Castle,  
and was denied, and forced to seek Lodgings other where. When  
she returned to the King, and complained to him of the Affront  
offered to her, he was very Angry, and having drawn together  
many Thousands of Armed Men, with many *Londoners*, [6] A  
came Personally to the Castle, commanding the Garrison to ren-  
der it to him; They Refuse to obey the King's Command, he  
straightly Besieges them; They hold out so long as they had Vi-  
ctuals, and when they could not longer hold out they deliver the  
Castle. *Thomas Colepeper* the Governor of it, was Drawn and  
Hang'd for his Rebellion against the King, (*Thomas Colepeper custos*  
*castris, qui tenuerat Castrum contra Regem, tractus & suspensus est.*)  
The Women found there were sent to the Tower of *London*, and B  
many of the Warders or Servants put to Death.

Sir *Thomas de la Moor* tells us, it was about [7] *Michaelmas*, that  
the *Queen* demanded Entrance into the Castle, that she might Lodge  
there, and after a Months Siege, the *Barons* with their Forces  
came to *Kingston upon Thames*, on the Vigil of the Apostles *Si-*  
*mon and Jude*, or 27th of October, in hopes to Relieve it, from  
whence they sent the *Archbishop of Canterbury*, the *Bishop of London*, C  
and *Earl of Pembroke*, to the King to raise the Siege; promising  
him after the next Parliament, to deliver the Castle into his Hands,  
He not granting their Desires, they marched into other Parts of  
the Kingdom, and the Castle in a very short time was Surren-  
der'd.

In December following, *Hugh Dispenser* the Younger, [8] appli-  
ed himself to the King for the Repeal of his Exile, who com-  
mitted him to Prison, and sent his *Petition to the Archbishop of*  
*Canterbury*, the other *Bishops and Clergy*, being then in a *Provincial*  
*Synod at London*, to advise about, and give him their Sense upon it,  
who Judged the Award, as to the Exile and Disinheritance, Er-  
roneous, against Right, and obtain'd by Force, without their  
Consent, as Peers of the Land, and therefore advised, and prayed  
the King to Repeal, and make it null for Ever; which was done,  
and the King granted him his Protection and safe Conduct, for E  
his Person and Estate, by his Letters Patents, Dated at *Westmin-*  
*ster*, the 8th of December in the 15th of his Reign.

The King kept his *Christmas* [9] at *Cirencester* in *Glostershire*,  
where *Hugh Despensers*, and others perswaded him to increase his  
Army, and march against the *Barons*; He did so, and went into  
the *Marches of Wales*, and left *Glocester*, which was possessed by  
the *Barons*, and passing by *Worcester*, went to *Bridgnorth*, and took  
in that Castle; while he was in *Shropshire* both the *Mortimers* sub-  
mitted themselves, and were sent to the *Tower of London*. *Mau-*  
*rice de Berkeley*, and *Hugh Andeley*, Senior, fell into the King's  
Hands, and were sent to *Wallingford-Castle*. [1] The *Earl of He-*  
*reford* and his *Adherents* marched toward the North, to join the  
*Earl of Lancaster* who expected them. The King marched after  
them, F



A them, and comes to *Burton upon Trent*, where the *Earl of Lancaster* had joined them; They hinder the *King's* Passage over the *Trent* by the *Bridge* there three Days, and Killed some of the *King's Men* and *Servants*, so as the *King* was forced to find another way over the *Trent*, and marched toward them in the *Town*, which when they saw, they Fired the *Town*, and marched into the *Field*, to give the *King* Battel; but perceiving the *King* coming toward them, with a great Force, superior to them in Number and Courage, the *Earl of Lancaster* with his Confederates fled Northward with their Army, and made Great Depredations and Robberies in their way; the *King* pursues them to *Burgh-bridge*, then marching toward their Friends and Allies the *Scots*; where they were stopt, by Forces brought from *Carlisle* by *Sir Andrew Harclay*, and others from *York* by *Sir Simon Ward*; in forcing his Way over the *Bridge*, the *Earl of Hereford* was Killed, B the *Earl of Lancaster* not being able to bear the shock of the Battel, nor to fly any way, was taken by *Sir Andrew Harclay*, and many other Barons, Banerets, and Knights, to the Number of [2] Ninety Five.

C The *Earl of Lancaster* was sent to *Pontfract*, where on Monday before the *Annunciation* of the *Blessed Virgin*, or 22d of *March*, he was impeached before the *King* for divers Treasons, Murders, Burnings, Depredations, and other Felonies, in the Presence of *Edmond Earl of Kent*, *John Earl of Richmond*, *Adomar de Valentia Earl of Pembroke*, *John de Warennia Earl of Surrey*, *Edmund Earl of Arundel*, *David Earl of Athol*, *Robert Earl of Arques*, and other great Men of the Kingdom, by whom he was adjudged to be Drawn, Hang'd, and Beheaded, which then were accounted three distinct Punishments. Two whereof for the Greatness of his Bloud and Family the *King* pardoned, so as he was only Beheaded. This D Impeachment and Judgment was Recorded in *Chancery*, in the 15th of this *King*, under the Title of *Pleas of the Crown*, and was brought into the first Parlement of *Edward III.* at *Westminster*, by *Henry Earl of Lancaster* his Brother, for the Revocation thereof, in which Revocation that whole Record is recited, and many of the Practices, of *Earl Thomas*, the Confederacy between him, the *Earl of Hereford*, and their Adherents, with *Robert Brus*, *Thomas Randolph Earl of Murray*, and *James Douglas*, Two of the greatest E Managers of the *Scots* Affairs at that time, and others, concerning mutual Assistance and Defence, and the Ingratitude of this great *Earl* toward the *King*, are declared; for which Revocation see the Appendix, N. 62.

F By the same Judgment, and for the same Crimes suffered these Barons, [3] *Warin Lisle*, *William Toket*, *Thomas Manduit*, *Henry de Bradborn*, *William Fitz-William*, *William Cheyny*, *Roger Clifford*, *John de Mowbray*, *Gocelin D'enynvill*, *Henry Teyes*, and *Bartholomew de Badlesfemer* who was beheaded at *Canterbury*, only *Roger de Damory*, died of his Natural Death.

The *Prior* and *Monks* of *Pontfract* obtained the Body of *Thomas Earl of Lancaster*, and Buried it in their Church, on the Right Hand of the High Altar, whither came a great number of People, Pilgrims,

The Scots Friends and Allies to the Earls. The *Earl of Hereford* killed at *Borough-bridge*. The *Earl of Lancaster* taken there. [2] *Oula Moor*, f. 596. n. 10.

Our Lady-day this Year 1322. was on Thursday. The *Earl of Lancaster* impeached of Treason, &c.

Adjudged to be Drawn, Hang'd, and Beheaded.

The Confederacy of the E. of Lancaster, &c. with Robert Brus King of Scots, &c.

N. 62.

[3] *Walsing.* History, f. 116 n. 30, 40, 50. The Barons that suffered for the same Crimes with the *Earl of Lancaster*.



Litua F. Vol.  
63. Book 7.  
Capitule 201.

The Miracles  
said to be  
done by the  
Earl of Lan-  
caster.

A Blind Priest  
restored to his  
Sight.

A Dead Child  
restored to  
Life.

Men out of  
their Wits re-  
stored to  
them.

Cripples,  
Crooked,  
Blind, and Sick  
Cured and  
Healed.

A Man whose  
Flesh rotted  
from his Side  
and stunk,  
cured, and his  
Flesh restored.

*Pilgrims, and Others, to Offer and Pray at his Tomb, really be-  
lieving the Miracles, and great Cures of Diseases that were reported  
to be done by him, a Specimen whereof I shall give the Reader  
from an English Chronicle in Corpus Christi College Library in Cam-  
bridge, in the Sense and Language of those Times, it was wrote in.*

*Of the Miracles that GOD worughte (wrought)  
for Seint Thomas of Lancaster, wherefore the  
King lete close (caused them to be shut) the Church  
Dores of Pountfret of the Prioree, for (that) no  
Man shall come therein to the Body for to Offren.*

And soon after that the Good Erl Thomas of Lancaster was Mar-  
tered, a Preste that had long tyme ben blyende Dremed in his  
slepyng, That he shuld gou unto the Hull (Hill) there that the  
Good Erl Thomas of Lancaster was done unto Deth, and he shuld  
have his sighte agen, and so he Dremed iij Nightis seuyng, (three  
Nights following) and the Preste, tho (then) let lese him to the  
same Hulle, and when he come to that Place, that (where) he  
was Martered on, devoutly he made there his Prayers, and prayed  
God and Sent Thomas he moste (might) have his sight agen, and  
as he was at Prayers he layde his right Hond oppon the same  
Place that the good Man was Martered, and a Drop of dry Blode  
and small Sonde cleved on his Honde, and therewith he Strekede  
his Een, (Eyes) and non thorug might of God and of Sent Thomas  
of Lancaster, he had his Sighte agen, and thanked the Almygte  
God and Sent Thomas, and whenne this Meracle was Cud (known)  
amonge Men, the People come there in every side and knelede  
and made hire (their) Prayers at his Tombe, that is in the Priorye  
of Pountfret; and prayed that Holy Marter of Socor and of Helpe,  
and God herde hire Prayer.

Also there was a young Child Drenchede (Drowned) in a  
Well in the Town of Pountfret, and was ded iij Days and iij Nig-  
tis, and comen and layde the ded Child upon Sent Thomas Tomb the  
Holy Marter, and the Child aros there from Deth to Live, as meny-  
e a Man hit saw.

And also much People were out of hire Mynde, (out of their  
Wits) and God hathe sent ham (them) hire Mynde agen, tho-  
rug Virtu of that Holy Marter.

And also God hath given thereto Criples hire goyinge (Going)  
and to Croked hire Honds, and hire Feet, and to Blyende also  
hire Sighte, and to meny- e Sike (Sick) Folk hire hele (health)  
that had diverse Maladies, for the love of his good Marter.

Also there was a Riche Man in Coundom in Gascoigne, and such  
a Maladie he had that as his right side rotede, and fell away fram  
him, and Men migt se his Livere, and also his Hert, and so he  
stank that onney (no) Men migt come neyre him, wherefore his  
Friendes were for him Wonder forye; but at last as God wolde,  
they

A

B

C

D

E

F



they prayed to *Sente Thomas* of *Lancaster*, that he wolde pray to al-  
migte God for that Personne, and behighte (thought) to gon to  
*Pountfret* for to done hire *Pilgrimage*, and the Good Man soon  
after slepte full softe, and *Drēmed* that the *Marter Sente Thomas*  
come unto him, and *anoyntede* over all his seke Body, and there-  
with the Good Man awoke and was *alle hole*, and his Flesh was  
*Restored* agen, that byfore was *Rotede* and falle awaye, for which  
A *Miracle* the Good Man, and alle his Frenodes *lovede* God and *Sente*  
*Thomas* ever more after.

And also two Men have been heled there of the *Morivaile*  
(*Murrain* or *Plague*) thorug *help* of that *Holy Marter*, thoug that  
Evele be hold incurable.

Whenne the *Spensers* herde that God dede *such Miracles* for his *Holy*  
B *Marter*, and they wold beleve hit in no manere wyse, but seyde  
opynlicke, That hit was great *Erefie*, such Vertu of him to be-  
leve.

And whenne Sir *Hugh* the *Spenser* the Son saw alle this Doying,  
(Doing) anon he send his *Messānger* fram *Pountfret*, That (where)  
he Dwelled, to the King *Edward*, that tho was at *Graven* at *Skip-*  
C *tone*, (at *Skipton* upon *Craven*) for cause that the King shulde un-  
done the *Pilgrimage*. And as the *Reband* (*Ribald*) that was  
*Messānger* wente toward for to done this *Messāge*, he come by  
the Hulle that this Good Man was done unto his Deth, and in  
the same Place he made his *Ordure*, (*Eased* himself) and when  
he had ydone he went toward the King, and stronge flexe (*Flux*)  
come oppon him er he come to *Tork*, and shedde all his *Bowels*  
at his *Fundament*: So in the Author.

And when Sire *Hugh* the *Spenser* herd this Tyding som Del he  
was adrad (he was somewhat fearful) and thought to undo the  
*Pilgrimage*, yf he migt be enye manere way, and to the King  
went and said, that they shulde ben in grete *Slander* thorugout  
all *Christendome* for the *Deth* of *Thomas* of *Lancaster*, yf that he  
suffred the People done hire *Pilgrimage* at *Pountfret*, and so he  
Counceiled the King that he commanded to close the *Chirche*  
Dores of *Pountfret*, in the wch *Chyrche* the *Holy Marter Sente Tho-*  
E *mas* was Entered, (*Interred*) And thus they deden al *Froncheyse*  
of *Holy Chirche*, so that foure yere after migte no *Pilgrimage*  
come unto that *Holy Body*. And for *Encheson* (because) that the  
Monks suffred Men and Women to honor that *holy Body* of *Sente*  
*Thomas* the *Marter* thorug counceile of Sir *Hugh* the *Spenser* the  
Sone, and thorug counceile also of Master *Roberd Baldok* the false  
pelede (pilled) Clerke, that was the Kings *Chancelere* the King  
concende (consented) that they shulde be \*sette to here *Wages*,  
F and lete make *Wardeyns* over her own good longe tyme, (and  
sent a *Guard* upon them) and thorug comandment of the fore-  
saide Sire *Hughe* the *Spenser*, fourteen *Gascoignes* well armed kept  
the Hulle† there that the Good Man *Sente Thomas* was done to Deth,

† When the People were shut out of the Friars Church, and a Guard set upon the Tomb,  
they went to the Hill where he was put to Death, and offered there.

Two Men  
cured of the  
Plague.

The *Spensers*  
affirmed it  
Herefie to be-  
lieve these  
Miracles.

*Spenser* the  
Son's Messā-  
nger to the K.  
shed his Bow-  
els at his Fun-  
dament.

The Church  
Dores shut  
where the E  
of *Lancaster*  
was buried, to  
hinder *Pil-*  
*grimes* to ho-  
nor his Body.

\* That is to  
live upon  
their own *Sci-*  
*pends*, *Salaries*  
and *Income*,  
and not to re-  
ceive any *Of-*  
*ferys* or  
*Censures*.



and biheveded, (beheaded) so that no Pilgrime migte come by that way; fulwel wende he (thought he) to haf by nome (taken away) Christis migte and his power, and the grete loose (many) Meraclis that he shewed for his Marter *Thomas* thorug all *Cristendome*.

And it was not at *Pontfract* only, that the People were affected and possessed with the Saintship and Miracles of this Earl, but in the Church of *St. Paul's* also in *London* they did the same things, which caused the King to write [4] to the Bishop and the Dean and Chapter, That he took it ill, that many of the People of God committed to their Charge, deceived by a Diabolical Cheat, foolishly coming to a Table in their Church, in which the Images of divers, and amongst the rest the *Effigies* of *Thomas* late Earl of *Lancaster* his Enemy and Rebel, was Painted and Worshipped, and Adored as a Holy Thing, affirming *Miracles* to be done there, to the Discredit of the whole Church, to the Disgrace of him and them, the manifest Danger of the People aforesaid, and pernicious Example of others; And that they knowing these Abuses, by connivance had permitted them to be done, yea, rather for Gain, and filthy Lucre sake, they had Dissembled in this Matter, therefore he Commanded, and firmly Injoined them, considering the Premisses, and that taking notice the Church was of his Patronage, and that the Bishop was by reason of Fealty sworn to him, to preserve his Honour, and to prevent his Disgrace, to forbid the People to come to the Table, to make Prayers and Oblations, or other things tending to Divine Worship, without the Authority of the *Roman* Church, as they ought by the Duty of their Offices, and knew belonged to them by Canonical Sanction. Witness the King at *York* the 28th of *June*, in the 16th of his Reign.

But within a month after the King was Dethroned, and his Son at Fourteen years of Age placed in the Throne, the Pious Lady, his Queen, in her Son's Name, (for what Reasons may easily be guessed) [5] wrote to the Pope, extolling his glorious Virtues, and declaring what a *Stout Champion* he had been for the *Liberty* of *Holy Church*, and the Laws of the Land, and also how many *Miracles* had been wrought, and People healed, by Pious invocation upon him, and infinite Remedies granted to the great number of those that resorted to his Tomb, desiring Procefs might be made for Sainting of him; Dated at *London* the last day of *February*, in the First year of the Reign of *Edward III.* Her Messengers for Transacting this Affair, who went with this Letter, were *Walter Burle* Professor of Divinity, *William Trussell* Kt. and *Mr. John Thoresby* Clerk.

And she thought it not enough to have the Pupil Sainted, but would have the Tutor also \* *Robert Winchelsey*, Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, inserted into the same Catalogue of Saints, and to that purpose wrote again to the Pope, in her Son's Name, about Eight days after, That he shined in *Miracles*, and had restored Health to innumerable Sick People, humbly and devoutly beseeching his Holiness, [6] that he would vouchsafe to insert into the

[4] Append.  
n. 63.

The Earl of  
*Lancaster* wor-  
shipped in  
*St. Paul's*,  
*London*.

The King  
writes to the  
Bishop of  
*London*, the  
Dean and  
Chapter, to  
hinder it.

[5] Append.  
n. 64.

The Queen  
extolling the  
Earl of *Lan-*  
*caster's* stout  
Behaviour for  
*Holy Church*,  
and his Mi-  
racles, writes  
to the Pope to  
Saint him.

\* He was made  
Arch-Bishop  
23d of *Ed. I.*  
*A. D.* 1294.  
and died the  
12th of *May*,  
6 *Ed. II.* 1313.

She also  
writes to the  
Pope to Saint  
*Robert Winchel-*  
*sey*, Arch Bi-  
shop of *Can-*  
*terbury*, and  
the Instructor  
of *Lancaster*.

[6] Append.  
n. 65.

A

B

C

D

E

F

venc-



venerable Catalogue of Saints so Pretious a Stone, rejected of Men, but Chosen of God; Dated at Westminster the 8th day of March, in the First of Edward III.

A Toward the end of that month Walter Reynold, then Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and the Bishops of his Province, [7] wrote to the Pope, moved by the Example of Thomas Earl of Lancaster of famous Memory, who had wrote to him before upon the same Subject, representing his Life to him, and what he had suffered and done for the Rights and Liberties of the Church, and sending him a few Miracles amongst innumerable others, that God had wrought for him, and upon Bended Knees humbly Supplicated his Holiness, that upon their Information he would Estimate, Diffine, Order, and Command what was further to be done in that Case, for the Honour and Glory of the Divine Name, and the wished for Exaltation of Catholick Faith. I find not that  
B either of these Men were actually Sainted, and it may be supposed, the Pope considering how they had behaved themselves, could not think it fit, and void of Scandal, to Estimate, Diffine, Order, and Command their Saintships.

C Nor was it the Sense of all Men in those times, that the Earl of Lancaster deserved it, as it is Reported by [8] Ranulph Higden, the Monk of Chester, who lived at the time. *De cuius i meritis* (saith the Monk) *an inter sanctos sit annumerandus, crebra in vulgo Disceptatio est, &c.* of which Man's Merits, (speaking of of this Earl) there was much Dispute amongst the Vulgar, whether he was to be numbred among the Saints, some asserting he ought, for that he gave much in Alms, honoured the Religious, and contended to Death, as it seemed, (ut videbatur) in a just Quarrel. Others thought the contrary, That a Man who neglected his generous  
D Wife, and defiled innumerable Women, (innumeras mulierculas poluit;) That put to Death such as did but lightly offend him, That cherished Renegado's from their Orders or Profession, and Transgressors of the Law, lest they might be punished by the Law; That committed all things to the Direction of his Secretary; That at the time of Contending to Death for the Maintaining of Justice, basely fled, ought not to be thought a Saint, especially when he was unwillingly taken, and suffered unwillingly. But what Money  
E might do, or the Shadow of, or counterfeit Miracles then celebrated at the place where he was beheaded, what Issue they would have for the future, after Ages would see; *Sed profecto oblationum dona, & miraculorum simulacra quæ in loco suæ decapitationis in presentiarum celebrantur, qualem in posterum habebunt exitum, secula videbunt post futura.*

F However it was, the Queen was not only pleased to have him a Saint, but there must be a Chappel built upon [9] the Hill where he was put to Death, to which purpose there was an Accord made between the Prior and Convent, Parsons of the Church of Pontfract, and the Burgesses of the same Town, before the King, Queen, and Henry Earl of Lancaster, Brother to Thomas, That John de Ypre, an Hermit, abiding upon the Hill where the Noble Earl of Lancaster was put to Death, should procure

[7] Hist. sacra. Vol. 1. f. 173.

The Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, Walter Raynold, and the Bishops of his Province, write to the Pope to the same purpose.

[8] Lib. 7. Cap. 42.

Ranulph Higden's Report of the Earl of Lancaster.

His seeming Virtues.

His Crimes, and Character.

[9] Append. n. 66.

The Queen, &c. contrives a Chappel to be built on the Hill and Place of Lancaster's Execution.



procure and increase Alms and good Deeds, to make a Chappel there; That there should be a Clerk assigned by the Queen and Earl of *Lancaster*, and a Monk whom the Prior should appoint, to remain there to receive and lay out what should be received at the Hill, for the Building of the Chappel; and it was also agreed there should be a Trunk provided with Three Locks and Keys, whereof the Clerk was to keep one, the Monk another, and a Burgess of the Town the third; Which Trunk for the security of it, was to be removed every night to the *Priory*, and carried back to the Hill every day; To be opened once or twice a week in the presence of the Three Key Keepers, and the Money to be delivered to the Clerk to pay the Workmen, &c. The King's Confirmation of this Accord is Dated at *York* on the 5th of *June*, in the First year of his Reign.

A

[2] Append.  
n. 67.

Miracles reported to be done by Two ordinary Men.

These Two Persons were taken at *Borough-bridge*.

This was a fruitful Age of Miracles, for within less then Two years after the Execution of the Earl of *Lancaster*, [2] the King sent a Commission to Enquire after certain Persons, that reported *Miracles* to have been done at the place where *Henry Montfort*, and *Henry Wylington* hung at *Bristol*, who were Condemned to be Drawn and Hanged by the King's Court for Rebellion, and afterwards their Bodies to remain upon Gibbets; This Report brought much People thither, to the Disturbance of the Peace, and Alienation of their Affections from the King, insomuch as by Force and Arms they defended their Idolatrous Cheats, against such as were sent to disabuse the People, preserve the King's Honour, and keep the Peace.

B

A. D. 1320.

Easter-Day was April 11. this year, 1322.

The Process and Award against the *Spencers* brought into Parlemt.

On the 14th of *March*, in the Fifteenth of his Reign, just before the Barons Army was defeated, and this *Saint* taken at *Borough-bridge* in *Yorkshire*, the King at *Derby* issued his Summons for a Parlemt to be holden at *York* three weeks after *Easter* next coming, into which Parlemt upon the *Petitions* of *Hugh Despencer*, the *Father* and *Son*, (notwithstanding the *Son's* had been Reversed before, as above) was brought before the King, the *Process* and *Award* for their *Disheritance* and *Exile*, and upon shewing the Errors in them, they were both Revoked and made Null; Which *Revocations*, because they contain something of the *History*, and much of the *Practice* of, and *Way* of the Great Men's Living in those times, I have, with as much brevity as I could, Translated from the *Old French*, not being any where Printed or Published that I know of.

C

D

E

[1] Claus.  
15 Ed. II.  
M. 14. Dors.  
in cedula.  
This Writ dated at *Westminster*, May 15. and 14th of Ed. II.  
A. D. 1320.

The Petition of *Hugh Spencer* the *Son*, to the King.

Whereas lately at our Parlemt summoned at [1] *Westminster* to meet Three weeks after the *Nativity* of *St. John Baptist* last past, an Award was made against *Sir Hugh le Despencer the Son*, and *Sir Hugh le Despencer the Father*, by certain Great Men of the Realm, and then after the Feast of *St. Andrew* next following, *Hugh the Son* petitioned Us, shewing, That while he was in our Service in the Office of *Chamberlain*, and so appointed in full Parlemt, the *Earl of Hereford*, *Monsieur Roger de Mortimer the Nephew*, *Monsieur Roger de Mortimer the Uncle*, *Monsieur Roger Damory*, *Monsieur John de Mowbray*, *Monsieur Hugh d'Audele the Father*, *Monsieur Hugh d'Audele the Son*, *Monsieur Roger de Clifford*,  
Mon-

F



A Monsieur John Giffard de Brimmesfield, Monsieur Maurice de Berkeley, Monsieur Henry de Tyes, Monsieur John Maltravers, and many others, made a Confederacy by Oaths and Writing to pursue and destroy him, and upon this Agreement all the above-named, with their Retinues, came the Wednesday after the Feast of the \* Invention of Holy Cross, in the 14th year of the King, to Newport in Wales, with Force and Arms, that is, to wit, with 800 Men at Arms, with the Banner of the King's Arms Displayed, and with 500 Hobelors, and 10000 Foot, to enter upon all his Lands to destroy them, and with the same Power and Force to besiege his Towns and Castles, and took them by force, and killed part of his People, Sir John Iwayn, Matthew de Gorges, and about 15 other Welshmen; and part they maimed, as Sir Philip Joce; and part they took and imprisoned, as Sir Ralph de Gorges, who was then in Prison, Monsieur Philip Joce, Sir John de Frefingfield, Sir John de Dunstable, William de Dunstable, and many others, which they freed upon Ransom; and they took, carried, and drove away his Goods and Chattels found in his Towns and Castles; That is to say, 40 War Horses, and Armor for 200 Men compleatly Armed, and other Warlike Engines and Implements, and Victuals, Wheat, Wine, Honey, Salt, Flesh, Fish, and other Victuals, to the value of 2000 l. and burnt all his Charters, Remembrances, and Monuments they could find, to his loss 2000 l. They also burnt part of the Gates of his Castles, and Houses, and took the Irons out of the Windows, and Leads off the Houses, &c. and carried them away, to the damage of 2000 l. and then names Ten Castles in Wales, and the Marches, which they took and destroyed; and with the same Force and Power, they stayed in his Lands totally to destroy them about 15 days, in which time they forced the greatest part of all the Country to Swear to be of their Party, and those that would not, they imprisoned, put to ransom, and burnt their Houses and Goods; and in the same time they robbed and plundered him of all the Moveables in and upon his Mannors, 60 large Working Mares with Colts and Foals of two years, 160 Heifers, 400 Oxen, 500 Cowes with their Breed for two years, 10000 Sheep, 400 Hogs, and all other necessary things found upon them, as Carts, Ploughs, Vessels, all these they took, drove, and carried away (without leaving any thing) from his Mannors, Lands, and Towns in Wales, which were 24 in number, to his damage of 2000 l. They burnt his Granges, and destroyed his Crop upon the Ground, to his damage of 2000 l. and the Debts which were owing him there, by force and cruelty they made his Debtors pay unto them, to the value of near 3000 l. with Fee-Farm Rents, and other Customs, which amounted to near 1000 l. And from Wales with the same Power and Force they came into England, upon his Castles, Towns and Mannors there, and cut up his Woods, Unchaced his Chaces, Disparked his Parks, pulled down his Houses, robbed and rifled as much as they could any where find, to his damage of 10000 l. and then seized upon his Friends, and his People, whereof some they put to ransom, some they rifled, and some they imprisoned, to the great grievance of them, and then by the same Cruelties and Hardships, they made the greatest part of the People against their wills, to be of their Party, and Sworn to them. And also with their Force and Power they came to the Parlement at Westminster, and there upon false Accusations, without calling the said Hugh to Answer, against all manner of Right and Reason, and against the

A Confederacy against the Spencer.

May the 3d.

The Outragious Practices against them.

Law



The Errors of  
the Award.

Law of the Land, Erroneously Awarded him to be Disberited and Exiled England, wherefore he prays the King, as he is bound by Right of his Crown, and by the Oath he made at his Coronation, to maintain all People in their Rights, That he would please to cause to be brought before him the Proceſs of the Award made againſt him, that it may be Examined, and that the ſaid Hugh may be received to ſhew the Errors in it, and if there ſhall be any found, he would please to Repeal and Redreſs them, and to do further according to Right and Reason; and the ſaid Hugh afterward ſhall be ready to ſtand to Right, and to answer every Complaint and Accuſation according to Reason. And he ſheweth the Errors of the ſaid Proceſs, For that the Great Men who purſued and deſtroyed him, prayed Pardon of the King for all thoſe things, which might be Judged Felonies or Trefpaſſes in that Purſuit, which they made by their own Authority, by which wrongfully they made themſelves Judges of him, where they could not, or ought not to be Judges; alſo Error, in that the ſaid Hugh was not called into Court, or to answer where the Award was made; alſo Error, in that the Award was made without the Aſſent of the Prelates who were Peers in Parlemt; Item, Error, in that there was no Record of their Purſuit, or the Cauſes contained in the Award; alſo Error, in that the Award was made againſt the Form of the Great Charter, wherein is contained, That no Man ſhall be forejudged, nor in other manner deſtroyed, unleſs by Judgment of his Peers, or by the Law of the Land; with Requeſt to the King to take notice, that the Great Men were ſummoned to come duely to the Parlemt, but did not, when they came with Horſe and Arms, and all their Force; Whereupon the ſaid Hugh came and rendred himſelf Priſoner to the King, praying he would receive him into his Protection to proſecute his Complaint, and that Right might be done him in theſe Matters; and the King received him, as he ought to do, (ſicome faire devions) and cauſed his Petition to be carried to the Arch-Biſhop of Canterbury, the Biſhops, and other Prelates, and the Clergy of the Province of Canterbury, then being in a Provincial Council at London, charging them by the Faith they ought him, to adviſe about the Petition, and let him know their thoughts concerning it; and when they had well Adviſed concerning it, they answered, That it ſeemed to them, that the Proceſs and Award of the Exile, and Diſinheritance of Hugh the Son, and Father, were Erroneous and Wrongfully made, wherefore they agreed and unanimously aſſented, as Peers of the Land, and prayed as Peers Spiritual, That the Award which was made wickedly and wrongfully againſt God, and all manner of Right, (contre Dieu & tote manere de droit) might be by the King repealed and annulled for ever; and ſaid further, That they nor none of them ever aſſented to the Award; but that every one of them at the time when the Award was made, in Writing made Proteſtation, That they could not, or would aſſent to it for many Cauſes; and the Earl of Kent the King's Brother, the Earls of Richmond, Pembroke, and Arondel, before the King and Prelates, ſaid the Award was wrong-ful, and againſt Law and Right, and prayed him, with the Prelates, and as they had done before, to null and make void the Award; and the Earls affirmed, That for fear of the Force, which the Great Men ſuddenly brought to the Parlemt to make the Award, which was to them unknown and unexpected, they gave their Aſſent to it, and alſo adviſed the King to ſuffer it to paſs, for which Offence and Miſtake they prayed his Pardon.

And



And then afterwards another Petition was delivered to the King, on behalf of [3] *Hugh* the Father, setting forth, That the same Great Men before named, and their Adherents and Confederates with Force and Arms on the Day of *St. Barnaby*, in the 14th Year of the King, came to his Mannor of *Fastern* in *Wiltshire*, and Twelve others in that Shire, Six in the County of *Glocester*, Four in *Dorsetshire*, Five in *Hampshire*, Two in *Berkshire*, Six in *Oxfordshire*, Three in *Buckinghamshire*, Four in *Surrey*, One in *Cambridgeshire*, Two in *Huntingtonshire*, Five in *Leicestershire*, One in *Yorkshire*, One in *Lincolnshire*, Five in *Cheshire*, and Five in *Warwickshire*; in all 63 Mannors there named, where they made the same Havock, committed the same Spoils, Devastations, and Destructions upon his Houses and Lands they had done upon his Sons, and used his Debtors, Tenants, Friends, and People as those of his Son; except that the loss of his Goods, moveable and immoveable, in and upon his Mannors and Lands, were greater; as namely, two Crops of Corn, one in the Barns or Granges, the other upon the Ground; 28000 Sheep, 1000 Oxen and Heifers, 1200 Cows, with their Breed for two Years, 40 Mares with their Breed for two Years, 560 Cart-Horses, 2000 Hogs, 400 Kids, 40 Ton of Wine, 600 Bacons, 80 Carcasses of Beef, 600 Muttons in the Larder, and 10 Tons of Cyder; Armour for 200 Men, and other Warlike Engines and Provisions, with the Destruction of his Houses, to his Damage 30000 *l.* And at the same time they entred the Abby of *Langley* in *Wiltshire*, broke up his Coffers, and carried away 1000 *l.* in Silver; also his Charters, Evidence, and Bonds, Cups of Gold and Silver, and other Silver Vessels and Jewels, to his Damage of 10000 *l.* And at the same time with Force and Arms entred the King's Castle of *Marlborough* (where he was the Constable) and took his Goods there found, 36 Sacks of Wooll, 6 Pair of rich Vestments, a Library, a Golden Chalice for the Sacrament, one Crofs of Gold, another of Ivory and Ebony, and other Ornaments belonging to the Chapel; Cloths of Gold, Carpets, Coverings, and many other things, and his whole Wardrobe entirely, to his Damage of 5000 *l.* Excepting these Differences of Losses, the Petition is the same with his Sons *verbatim*, and the Errours assigned in the Process and Award, are the very same; his rendring himself Prisoner to the King, and his Reception into the King's Protection the same, and expressed in the same Words. And then it follows by the King (*Et nous apres, a nostre Parlement summons a Everwyk as treis semaines de Pasch en an nostre Regne Quinziesme seifems devant nous le Proces del dit Ægard a la suite les ditz Hugh le Fitz, & Hugh le Pere, en cestes Paroles, A l'Honneur de Dieu & Seinte Eglise, &c.*) And we afterwards, at our Parliament at *York*, three Weeks after *Easter*, in the 15th Year of our Reign, caused to come before us the Process of the Award, at the Petition of the said *Hugh* the Son and *Hugh* the Father, in these Words: *To the Honor of God and Holy Church, &c.* the whole Award being cited in this Record. After which Recital it follows, (*a quen Parlement, &c.*) At which Parlement at *York*, the said *Hugh* the Son and *Hugh* the Father being brought before us in Court, prosecuting their Complaints, and praying us to do them Right; and [the said *Hugh* the Son for

[3] *Ibm. Claus.*  
15 *Ed. II. ut*  
*supra.*  
*Hugh Spensr*  
the Father's  
Petition to  
the King.

The Petition  
of the *Spensers*  
brought into  
Parliament.

15 *Edw. II.*  
The Writ of  
Summons to  
this Parle-  
ment bears  
Date *March*  
*14, 1321:*  
*Easter-day*  
was *April 11.*  
*1322.*



The Proceſs  
againſt them  
examined in  
Parlement.

Reaſons why  
the Award  
ought to be  
made void.

for himſelf ſhewed and alledged the Errors in the Proceſs as  
aboveſaid ; and alſo *Hugh* the Father alledged the ſame Errors,  
and prayed ſeverally and jointly, That as the Award was made  
erroneouſly and wrongfully, againſt the Laws and Uſages of the  
Realm, and againſt common Right and Reason, that we would  
annull and defeat the ſaid Award, and that they might be re-  
mitted and reconciled to our Faith, and to ſuch Eſtate as they  
had and were in before the Award : And hereupon hearing the  
Reaſons of the ſaid *Hugh* and *Hugh*, we cauſed the Proceſs to be  
examined in full Parlement, in the preſence of the *Prelates, Earls,*  
*Barons, Knights of Counties,* and the People that were come, by  
reaſon of the Parlement (*en preſence des Prelates, Countes, Ba-*  
*rons, Chivalers des Countes, & le Peuple & eſtoit venutz par Enche-*  
*ſon du dit Parlement*) And we found the ſaid Award was made  
without calling them to Answer, and without the Aſſent of the  
Prelates, which are Peers of the Realm in Parlement, and  
againſt the Great Charter of the Franchiſes of *England*, which  
ſays no Freeman ſhall be Banished, or other way Destroyed,  
but by lawful Judgment of his Peers, or the Law of the Land,  
and for that they were not called in Court to make Answer,  
and for theſe Errors, and for that the Cauſes in the ſaid  
Award were not duly proved (*& pur ceo que les Cauſes contenes*  
*en la dit Award ne furent pas duement approvees ;*) And further ha-  
ving regard to that, that we cauſed the Parlement at *Westmin-*  
*ſter* to be ſummoned in due manner, and commanded by our  
Writs the ſaid Great Men (who made the Award) not to make  
Aſſemblies and Alliances, or come with armed Men, yet  
they came with all their Force to that Parlement, notwithſtan-  
ding our Command : And when they came to *London* in that  
manner, they held their Councils and Aſſemblies at *London*,  
without coming to us at *Westminſter* according to Summons ;  
and then we ſent to them to come to the Parlement at *Westmin-*  
*ſter* as they ought, yet they would not come, nor let us know  
their Mind, nor the cauſe of the Award, tho' we had begun  
and held the Parlement for 15 Days and more, and cauſed to  
come before us the Prelates, and ſome Earls and Barons, Knights  
of Counties, and others which came for the Commons of the  
Realm (*& avioms fait venir, devant nous Prelates, & aucunes*  
*Countes & Barones, Chivalers des Countes, & autres que vindrent par*  
*la Commune du Royalm*) and cauſed it to be publiſhed, That  
 thoſe that had Petitions to promote ſhould deliver them. And  
after Proclamation thus made, no Petition was delivered, or  
Complaint made againſt the ſaid *Hugh* and *Hugh*, until they  
came as aforeſaid : And the Contrivance of the ſaid Award  
they wholly concealed and kept from us, unto the very Hour  
they came to *Westminſter* with Force and Arms, and made their  
Award againſt Reason, aſa thing treated and agreed on amongſt  
themſelves, on their own Authority, in our abſence, and en-  
croached upon the Royal Power, Jurisdiction, and Conuſance  
of Proceſs and Judgment of thoſe things, which belong to  
our Royal Dignity ; wherefore we could not at that time ſtop  
the ſaid Award, nor do right to the ſaid *Hugh* and *Hugh*, as it  
belonged to us. And further taking notice that thoſe Great  
Men, after the Award made, prayed our Pardon and Releaſe  
for

A

B

C

D

E

F



' for Confederating themselves by Oath, Writing, or in other  
 ' manner, without our Leave, in pursuing them, and Trouping  
 ' with Banners of ours and their own Arms displayed, and ta-  
 ' king and possessing Castles, Towns, Mannors, Lands, Tene-  
 ' ments, Goods, and Chattels, and also taking and imprisoning  
 ' People of our Allegiance and others, and some they wounded,  
 ' and some they killed; and many other things they did, in or-  
 ' der to destroy the said Hugh and Hugh, in England, Wales, and  
 ' other where, of which some might be called Trespasses, and  
 ' others Felonies; also it appeared, those Great Men were Ene-  
 ' mies to, and hated them at the time of the Award and before,  
 ' wherefore they ought not to be their Judges, in their own  
 ' Prosecution of them, nor have Record (*ne Record aver*) upon  
 ' the Causes of the said Award. And we are bound by the Oath  
 ' we made at our Coronation, and obliged to do Right to all our  
 ' Subjects, and to redress and cause to be amended all Wrongs  
 ' done to them when we are required, according to the Great  
 ' Charter, by which we are not to sell or delay Right and Justice  
 ' to any one; and at the pressing Advice and Request of the Pre-  
 ' lates, given us for the safety of our Soul, and to avoid Danger,  
 ' and for to take away an ill Example for the time to come of  
 ' such Undertakings and Judgments, in the like case, against Rea-  
 ' son. Wherefore we seeing and knowing the said Process and  
 ' Award, made in the manner aforesaid, to be as well to the Pre-  
 ' judice of us, the Blemishment, (or Hurt) of our Crown  
 ' and Royal Dignity, against us and our Heirs, as against the  
 ' said Hugh and Hugh, and for other reasonable Causes, of our  
 ' Royal Power, in a full Parlement at York, by the Advice and  
 ' Assent of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, Knights of Counties, the  
 ' Commons of the Realm, and others being at our Parlement at York  
 ' (*pur le Conseil & l'assent des Prelatz, Countes, Barons, Chevalers des*  
 ' *Countez le Commun du Roialme, & autres a nostre dit Parlement a*  
 ' *Everwyk Estautz*) do wholly null and defeat (*de tut Anentif-*  
 ' *soms & Defesoms*) the said Award of the Exile and Disheritance  
 ' of the said Hugh and Hugh, and all things in the Award (*& quant*  
 ' *que cel Award touche*) and do fully remit and reconcile the said  
 ' Hugh the Son, and Hugh the Father, to our Faith and Peace,  
 ' and to the Estate they had and were in before the making of  
 ' the Award in all Points. And we Award, That they have again  
 ' (*recient*) Seisin of their Lands and Tenements, Goods and Chat-  
 ' tels, &c. And we Will and Command, That where this  
 ' Award is enrolled in any Places of our Court, it be cancelled  
 ' and annulled for ever. And so the Roll was cancelled  
 ' and crossed, and remains so at this day, with this Memorandum  
 ' written under the Award.

Les choses susescrites sont anenties e chaunceles per force dun Award  
 que se fit au Parlement le Roy a Everwyck a treis semaines de Pasch lan  
 du Regne nostre Seign. Quinsime, sicome est contenue en un Roule que  
 est consu pendant a ceo Roul en le Mois de May prochain, ' These  
 ' things above written are nulled and cancelled by force of an  
 ' Award made in the Parlement at York held three Weeks after  
 ' Easter, in the 15th Year of the Reign of our Lord, as 'tis con-  
 ' tained in a Roll sowed to, and hanging at this Roll in the Month  
 ' of May.

The Award  
 made void by  
 Assent of the  
 whole Parle-  
 ment.



[4] Great Stat. Roll. from Hen. III. to 21 Ed. III. M. 31. Biblioth. Cotton. Claud. D. 2. f. 232. a. The Ordinances examined and annulled in Parliament, A. D. 1322. 15 Ed. II.

In [4] this Parlement at *York* the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and the Commons of the Realm (amongst which were the Ordainers then alive) there assembled by the King's Command, caused to be rehearsed and examined the Ordinances dated the 5th of *October*, the 5th of *Edward II.* And for that by Examination thereof it was found in the said Parlement, That by the things which were Ordained, the King's Power was restrained in many things, contrary to what was due to his Seignory Royal, and contrary to the State of the Crown: And also for that in times past, by such Ordinances and Provisions, made by Subjects over the Power Royal of the Antecessors of the Lord the King, Troubles and Wars came upon the Realm, by which the Land or Nation was in danger; It was accorded and established in the said Parlement, by the Lord the King, the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and all the Commonalty of the Realm at that Parlement assembled, That all those things Ordained by the Ordainers, and contained in those Ordinances from thenceforth for the time to come, should cease and lose their Force, Virtue, and Effect for ever; And that from thenceforward in no time, no manner of Ordinances or Provisions made by the Subjects of the Lord the King, or his Heirs, by any Power or Commission whatever, over or upon the Power Royal of the Lord the King, or his Heirs, or against the State of the Crown, shall be of value or force. But the things that shall be established for the Estate of the King and his Heirs, and for the State of the Realm and People, may be treated, accorded, and established in Parlement by the King, and by the Assent of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and Commonalty of the Realm, as hath been accustomed.

[5] *Tho. de la Moor*, f. 596. n. 20, 30. The King raiseth an Army against the Scots, and goes in Person. The Army baffled. The Scots invade England, plunder and burnt almost as far as *York*.

This Year the King raised an Army, and about the Feast of *St. James* marched into *Scotland*; the Scots fearing his Power, went over the Scots Sea [5] (*ultra Mare Scoticum se conferunt*, that is, *Edinburgh Frith*) carrying with them and destroying all the Victuals on this side; and in a short time the King returns into *England*, his Army not having wherewithal to subsist. The Scots come over the *Frith* and follow him by Night-marches, and almost surprized him in his Camp in *Blackmore-Forest*; but he escaping with a few, they took the Earl of *Richmond*, and the King of *France* his Envoy, with many others, and waste the Country with Fire and Rapine almost as far as *York*; they burnt *Ripon*, and compounded with *Beverly* for 400 l. Sterling, and returned home laden with Spoils.

[6] *Wals. Hypod. Neustr.* f. 503. n. 40. & Hist. f. 17. n. 50 f. 18. lin. 1, &c. The King & Kingdom of *Scotland* send to *Rome* to take off the Excommunication and Interdict, but prevail not. [7] *Ibm.* f. 505. n. 30, 40. & Hist. m. *supra*.

The Two Cardinals [6] sent from the Pope in the 10th of the King (as there noted) to make Peace between the Two Nations of *England* and *Scotland*, and Reconcile the King and Earl of *Lancaster*; but their Negotiation being without Effect in *Scotland*, Excommunicated *Robert Brus* King thereof, and put the whole Kingdom under Interdict, for their Perfidiousness to the King of *England*. To take off both, the [7] Bishop of *Glasco*, and the Earl of *Murray*, were sent to *Rome* by King and Kingdom, but prevailed not, Satisfaction not having been given to the Pope, nor King and Kingdom of *England*. Whereupon *Robert Brus* desired of the



the King of England a Truce, [8] which was granted to him for Thirteen Years.

*Philip* the [9] Fair of France left Three Sons, who all Reigned after him. *Lewis* the Eldest Reigned but Nineteen Months; to him succeeded *Philip* called the Long, he Reigned Five Years and Six Weeks, [1] dying on the 3d of January at Bois de Vincennes, A. D. 1322. The Youngest Brother *Charles*, called the Fair [2] succeeded him, and was Crowned at Reims on the 11th of February following, A. D. 1322. all the Peers of France assisting at that Solemnity, but the King of England, and Earl of Flanders.

This King not long after sent his Envoys [3] to cite King Edward to come and do his Homage for the Dukedom of Aquitan and Earldom of Panthien. The King sent wholly to excuse himself, or for but a time to delay it, by Advice of his Council, [4] the Earl of Kent and Arch-Bishop of Dublin; they were honourably received by the King of France, but returned without obtaining what they were sent for.

The King of France took these Excuses for a Denial, and sent his Unkle [5] Charles of Valois, an Enemy to the English, for the Disobedience of King Edward, in not doing his Homage, to seize the Duchy of Aquitan and Earldom of Ponthieu: He took Possession of Agen, and some other Parts of that Dukedom, and went to the Town of Rege, or Reole, which was Fortified, and the Earl of Kent, the King's Brother, in it, which was yielded; and upon a Treaty between them Two, a Truce was made, while the Two King's might agree upon a Peace.

In the mean time, the King accused Adam [6] Bishop of Hereford in Parlement for Treason, for assisting his Enemies and Traytors. He said he was a Consecrated Bishop, and Member of Holy Church, and could not answer to so hard a Charge, without the Consent of the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury (who was his Judge next to the Pope) and the other Bishops his Peers. The Arch-Bishop and Bishops hearing what he said, implored the King's Favour for him, who not granting their Request, they challenged him as a Member of the Church. A few days after, the King renewed his Accusation, when the Arch-Bishops of Canterbury, York, and Dublin, with Ten other Bishops, came to the Place of Judgment, and took away their Brother without making Answer, enjoining all Men, in the Name of God, not to lay violent hands upon him, Anathematizing all that should do it. After this the King being much moved, caused him to be Tried by a Jury of his Country, who found him Guilty; whereupon all his Lands and Temporalities were seized.

The [7] Record by which he was Restored to his Temporalities in the First of Edward III. reciting the Record of his Trial in the Country, gives a more particular Account of his Crimes, which informs us, That by Inquisition taken at Hereford before the Justices of the Kings-Bench, it was presented, That Adam Bishop of Hereford was of the Confederacy of Roger de Mortimer of Wigmore, who

[8] De la Moor, ut supra. A Truce for 53 years between England and Scotland. [9] Mexer. Hist. f. 345.

[1] Ibid. f. 349. [2] Ib. f. 350. Charles the Fair King of France.

[3] Wal. Hist. f. 119. n. 20. f. 20. n. 10. [4] De la Moor, f. 596, n. 20, 30, &c. He summons K. Edward to do him Homage, who made his Excuse.

[5] Ibid. De la Moor n. 40, 50. which the K. of France took for a Denial, and sends to seize the Duchy of Aquitan and Earldom of Ponthieu.

A Truce between the two Kings while a Peace made.

[6] Wal. Hist. f. 119. n. 30, 40, 50. The King accused Adam Bishop of Hereford. His Excuse for not answering.

[7] Claus. 1. Ed. 3. Part 1. M. 13. in us. His Crimes.



He pleads he cannot answer without offending God and Holy Church, nor without leave of the Pope. He is found Guilty by Inquisition.

His Lands, Tenements, &c. Adjudged to be Seized.

[9] *De la Moor* f. 597. thro' our. He upon that Judgment endeavours to revive the Hatred of the Nobility against the *Spensers*. And incense the Queen against them, and the King her Husband.

[1] *Ibm.* The King intended to pass into *France* about a Treaty of Peace.

Is dissuaded.

[2] *Ibm.* The Queen makes means to go into *France* upon the same Affair.

And obtains her Desire.

[3] *Ibm.* and *Walsingb.* F. 121. N. 40, 50.

was then reputed an Enemy and Rebel to the King his Father, and that he sent certain Men at Arms to his Assistance; and then being accused for these things before the Justices, and his Father, he alleged, that without offending God, and Holy Church, and without leave of the Pope, he could not, or ought to answer, nor ought the Justices to proceed to take the Inquisition; and though the Bishop submitted not to the Inquisition, yet the Justices went on, and for that it was found by that Inquisition that the Bishop was of the Confederacy of the said Roger, and sent to his assistance Men at Arms: It was adjudged by the Justices, he should as convict remain in the Custody of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and that his Lands and Tenements, Goods, and Chattels, should be seized into the King's Hands, and remained so seized, until the Date of this Record, by which they were restored. Witness the King at *Westminster*, the 16th of *February*, in the First of his Reign.

After this Judgment given by the King's Justices, this [9] Bishop used all means to revive the Hatred of the Nobility against the *Spensers*, now laid asleep, and incensed the Queen against them, upon pretence they advised the King to reduce her Family to a less Number, and Retrench her Expences, which (being a Lady affecting Prodigality) caused her Hatred not only toward the *Spensers*, but also toward her Husband. He made use of the Opportunity he had in many private Conferences about the times, and incited and increased her Indignation, as did likewise the Bishop of *Lincoln*, and both Bishops advised her, to take an Opportunity of making a Visit to her Brother the King of *France*, and her Uncle *Charles de Valois*, and beg their advice and help against the *Spensers*, which if she obtain'd, all things would succeed according to her Desire.

At this time [1] according to the Truce made between *Charles of Valois*, and the Earl of *Kent* when he delivered up *Reole*, (as was noted before) a Peace was to be treated of between the two Kings, for which purpose the King intended to pass the Sea himself; but the Earls of *Winchester* and *Glocester*, (for such were now the two *Spencers*) dissuaded him, lest being left at home without him, or if they should accompany him into *France*, they might fall into the Hands of their Enemies. [2] In the mean time, the Queen by her Flatteries urged the King, that she might be sent upon this Message, promising to do all things according to his Desire, by the assistance of the two Bishops *Lincoln* and *Hereford*, and others of the Noblemen, the King was prevailed with to send her into *France*; where she was kindly received by her Brother, and Uncle, (*Dum causam mariti agit*) while she Transacted her Husband's Business, who staid upon the Coast all the time of *Lent*, and *Summer*, for more easie receiving Letters from, and sending to her. (*Ea interim* [3] *suas res agit.*) In the mean time she did her own Business; and notwithstanding the King's Commissioners, the Bishops of *Winchester*, and *Norwich*, and the Earl of *Richmond*, by her Mediation the Bargain was made, or they received a Form of Peace from the King of *France*, That if King *Edward* would give his Right in the Dukedom of *Aquitain*,



tain, and Earldom of Ponthieu to his Son Edward, upon his doing Homage he would give him seisin of both; These Things agreed on both sides, the King of France sent his Letters of Safe-Conduct for the Prince, and the King sent him with a Grant of those Lands to have and to hold them to himself and Heirs, Kings of England; adding, That if the Son should die, living the Father, they should return to him; and also other Conditions, by which it should not be Lawful for the King of France to Marry him, nor provide a Guardian for him against his Will. [4] This Agreement was Confirmed by the Advice of the Prelates, and other Noblemen at Dover, the Day after the Nativity of the Virgin Mary, in the Eighteenth of the King; and on the Thursday following, Edward the Son, accompanied with the Bishop of Excester and other Noblemen, went on Shipboard, and afterwards about the Feast of St. Mathew, did Homage to his Uncle of France, under Protestations made on both sides; the whole Affair being completed for which the Queen was sent into France.

Soon after Michaelmas the King [5] wrote to her, That she would speedily bring her Son into England. She wrote back, That the King of France her Brother, out of great Affection would have them stay with him; and sending back the greatest Part of their Families, she employed the residue of the Year, in prosecuting her own Designs. The Bishop of Excester was sent over with the Prince, but was now removed from the Queen's Secret Council, and Roger Mortimer and other Fugitives the King's Enemies, were received into it. [6] This Roger Mortimer the Younger, upon Tryal for Treason had received Sentence to be Drawn and Hang'd, the King out of his special Grace, pardoned the Execution of that Sentence, and willed that instead thereof he should be a perpetual Prisoner, and assigned certain Justices to declare his Favour, and adjudge him to Perpetual Prison; and not long after the Time of the Queen's going over, corrupting his Keepers he made his [7] Escape out of the Tower of London, and got into France.

The King much moved at the Queen's stay, and Detaining his Son out of the Kingdom, some [8] to salve the Matter, said they were unwillingly Detained; others guessing that she was so bound by the Unlawful Embraces of Mortimer, that without him, and the other Fugitives, she would not return.

However it was, The King [9] sent and wrote to her oft times to return home, Expressing great Kindness to her, and grief of Mind for her absence; many feigned Excuses she had for her not coming, but the Chief was the Danger and Fear she was in of Hugh le Despencer the Younger, which she sent to him by the Bishop of Winchester, with her Letters of Credence; in answer to which the King wrote, That he as much wonder'd as he could, seeing and observing always in his Presence the Kind Deportment of her to him, and of him to her, and especially at her Departure, declaring a perfect Amity; and since by her Letters of a late Date to him, which he had shewn unto the King attesting the same; and therefore the Homage being done to his Brother of France, and that they were in so fair a way of Affection one to another, he

She bargains with her Brother, that if King Edward would give Aquitan and Ponthieu to the Prince, upon doing his Homage he should have Seisin of them.

Upon that Agreement the Prince goes into France and does Homage.

[4] De la Moor, Ut supra. & Walsing. Ut supra.

A. D. 1324. 13 Ed. II.

[5] De la Moor, ut supra, & f. 589. lin. 1. &c.

The K. wrote to the Queen to return with his Son into England.

She makes her Excuse, having no Mind to return.

The Bishop of Excester removed from her secret Council.

[6] Pat. 16 Ed. 2. Part 1. M 34. Dors. And Roger Mortimer taken into it.

[7] De la Moor, f. 596. N. 50.

[8] lbm. f. 598. n. 10.

Reasons why the Queen stayed in France.

[9] Claus. 19 E. 2. M. 2. Dors.

The King sent and wrote often to the Queen to return out of France. The fear of Hugh le Despencer the Younger was her Chief Excuse.

The King answers all her Excuses.



And chargeth  
and com-  
mands her to  
come to him  
in all haste.

He also Wil-  
led and Com-  
manded her  
to send his  
Son to him.

[1] Ibm.

The King of  
France wrote  
the Queen  
dare not come  
to K. Edward  
for fear of her  
Life and Hugh  
Spenser.

King Edward's  
Answer to  
that, and o-  
ther things.

He prays  
him to send  
his Wife to  
him.

And to dis-  
patch his Son's  
Business, and  
suffer him to  
come to him.

he Commanded and Charged her as much as he could, That all feigned Matters and Excuses laid aside she should come to him with all haste, (*Par qui nous vous mandons & chargeons en quanque nous pooms, que totes tieles Enchesons feints, & autres choses lessées & excusations cessantes, reignes a nous od tote hast*) for that the Bishop had told him, That his Brother the King of France in his Presence told her, That according to the Tenor of her Safe-Conduct she should not be disturbed nor stayed from coming to him as to her Lord, and as his Wife. And then further writes to her, When she came, her Expences and way of Living should be such, as should be neither to the Dishonour of him, or her. He also Willed and Commanded her to suffer his dear Son Edward to come to him, as he had commanded him. And whereas at the time Walter Bishop of Excester was lately with her, he had been certainly informed, That some of his Enemies, and his Banished People, waited to Destroy him, if they had opportunity; to avoid such Dangers, and for other great Business he had with him, he commanded him upon his Faith and Allegiance to come to him with haste, leaving all other things in as much security as he could, she was to excuse his sudden coming away, it being for no other Cause. Given at Westminster the First of December.

At the same time,[1] the King of France by the Bishop of Winchester, wrote to him, and sent a Message by word of Mouth, That he had been informed by Persons of Credit, that the Queen dare not come to him for fear of her Life and Hugh le Despenser; to which excuse he made the same answer he had done to his Queen, and averred by Oath, That if the said Hugh, or any other Living in his Kingdom, or in his power, should offer any Ill to her, and he could know it, he would make them severe Examples to all others, and beseeched him not to believe those that told him other things, for that he had and ought to have greater Reason to know and understand this Matter, than any other, and therefore prays him to prevail with his Sister to come to him as soon as she could, for the Honour of themselves and of her, being much disturbed for want of her Company.

He also earnestly prayed him to dispatch his Son Edward, and deliver and surrender to him the Dutchy and Lands, which he preserved out of affection to him, that he might not be Dishherited; and further prayed him to suffer his Son to come to him with all the hast he could, as he had commanded him, it being always his Mind he should return, the same hour he should command him, so soon as he had done his Homage: And then Excuseth the Bishop of Excester's sudden leaving France, returning into England, as he had done in the Letter to his Queen, Dated as above, at the same Place.

The



[2] *Ibid.*

His Friends and Peers of  
*France.*

{ Peers of *France*.

The Lord of Cossi,  
 Lewis Earl of Clermont,  
 Robert de Artois E. of Be

His Relations, but not Peers.

[3] *Ibmi.*  
The K wrote  
to his Son to  
return with-  
out his Mo-  
ther if she  
could not.

[4] *Ibm.*  
The Prince  
answered his  
Father's Let-  
ter, and he  
wrote a Se-  
cond Letter to  
him.

The Con-  
tents of the  
King's second  
Letter.



The Queen's  
Kindness to  
Mortimer.

She makes  
him her Son's  
Companion  
and Counsel-  
ler.

The King  
commands  
him to re-  
turn notwith-  
standing any  
feigned Ex-  
cuses.

[5] *Ibm.*  
King Edward  
Answers the  
King of  
France his  
Letter con-  
cerning his  
Queen.

[6] *Ret. Rom.*  
19 *Ed. II.*  
M. 3.  
He writes to  
the Pope a-  
bout the Af-  
fair of his  
Queen.

Nephew, and faithful Hugh le Despenser, who hath always loyally served me: You see, and all the World may see, that she openly, notoriously, and designedly, against her Duty, and against the Estate of our Crown, which she is bound to favour and maintain, hath drawn to her, and retains in her Company and Council (*attrée a foi & in sa compaignie reteint de son conseil le Mortimer, &c.*) Mortimer our Traitor and Mortal Enemy, proved Attaint, and in full Parliament so judged, and keeps him Company every where in House and abroad, in despite of us and our Crown, and the Laws of the Realm; Whom at another time your Uncle Banished his Kingdom at our Request, as our Enemy; and yet she doth worse, if worse can be, in bringing you into his Company, and making him your Counsellor, and making you adhere and stick to him openly and notoriously in the face of the World, to the greatest Dishonour of us and you, and in prejudice of our Crown, and the Laws, and the Usages of the Laws of England, the which above all things you are bound to Preserve and Maintain, (*as queux vous estes souverainment tenuz, savel, & maintenir*) and therefore he Commands and Chargeth him upon his Faith, Amity, and Legeance, and his own Blessing, that he come to him with what speed he can, notwithstanding the foresaid Excuses, or any other; his Mother having wrote, that if he would return, she would not hinder him, (*car vostre Meer nous ad Escrit, que si vous voillez retourner ele ne vous disturbereit pas*) and he could not understand his Uncle should hinder him against the Tenor of his Safe Conduct. Given at Lichfield the 18th of March.

At the same time King Edward [5] wrote to his Dear Brother the King of France, That he had considered his Letters, wherein he signified to him, he had seriously Discoursed his Sister, about the Reason and Things to which he had Answered, and that she had told him, she desired only to be with him, and in his Company, as a good Wife ought to be with her Lord, (*et que ele vous ad dit, qele desire tant se estre avecz vous, &c.*) and that the seeming Amity between her and his Nephew Hugh le Despenser was only feigned, yet it was convenient to keep it up to gain time, and avoid worse things. To disprove what she said to her Brother the King of France, he reminded him of what great Amity and Kindness she often pretended to Hugh Despenser since her being there; and repeats the Intimacy between Mortimer and his Wife, and how she was wholly advised and directed by him, and did whatever he advised in the same Words and Manner as in the last Letter to his Son, and then desires him to restore the Duchy of Aquitain, &c. to him, without having regard to the wilful humour of a Woman, and send him his Pleasure by the Bearer. Given at Lichfield, March 18. on the same day as before.

On the 15th of April next following, the King [6] wrote to the Pope, and sent him a Transcript of what had passed between himself, the King of France, his Sister the Queen, and his Son, by way of Narrative, and the Copies of the Letters he wrote them, with his Answers to what was reported of him in France, heartily beseeching him to read and consider them, and apply such Remedy for the removing the Matter of Scandal and Dissension, and the Dangers that might proceed from thence, as he should think fit, promising wholly to be directed by his Advice. Given at Knelworth the 15th day of April.

All



A All these Letters, all these Mediators, could not bring her into England, until her Design was Ripe, and that she could come with Force; yet in all probability, they caused her either to quit, or be thrust out of France; Tho some of our Historians, and the French Historian [7] *Mezeray*, (who understood nothing of this Story, as appears by his Writing) and all from *Froysard*, Report, That by the Arts of the *Spencers*, and the Money given to her Brother *Charles* the Fourth of France, and scattered in his Court, and to the Pope himself, and distributed in his Court, that made them their Friends, so that her Brother forbad all Persons to assist her, and commanded her to go out of his Dominions.

B Take the Original from [8] *Froysart*, who says he wrote his Chronicle from the Chronicles of Sir *John la Beke*, Canon of *St. Lambert's* of *Liege*, an Intimate, and of the Secret Council of *John* of *Haynault*.

C The Barons [9] could not bear or suffer *Hugh Spencer's* favour with the King any longer, but sought each other amongst themselves, to be of a Peaceable Accord, and sent secretly to the Queen, who had been at *Paris* three years, (which was false by two parts of the time) signifying to her, if she could come into England with One thousand Men at Arms, and bring her Son and Heir with her, they would all come to her, and her Son *Edward*; She shewed these Letters to the King of France, who promised such Assistance, and to furnish her with Money; She was providing for her Voyage, of which *Hugh Spencer* had notice, who contrived with Gifts to Buy off the King of France, and sent secret Messengers, with plenty of Gold, Silver, and Jewels into France, and especially to the King, and his Privy Council, infomuch as the King forbad under pain of Banishment, That none of his Subjects should assist the Queen to go into England by force; and further, *Hugh* [1] *Spencer*, out of his Malice to the Queen, to get her under the King's Power, and his, caused the King to write to the Pope, That he would write to the King of France, to send his Wife again into England, for he would acquit himself to God and the World, that it was not his fault, that she departed from him, for he would nothing to her, but all Love and good Faith, such as he ought to hold in Marriage.

E Also he sent [2] Gold and Silver great plenty, to divers Cardinals and Prelates who had most power with the Pope, (who lead the Pope by such-wise, with their Gifts and subtle ways) that he wrote to the King of France, That on pain of Cursing, he should send his Sister *Isabel* into England, to the King her Husband: These Letters were brought to the King of France by the Bishop of *Xaints*, when he had read them, they were shewed to the Queen his Sister, and then commanded her speedily to avoid his Kingdom, or he would make her to avoid it with shame.

Neither Letters nor Mediators could bring the Queen into England, until her Design was ripe.  
[7] Fol. 351, 352.  
The Historians Account of the Transactions between the King and Queen at this time.

[8] F. 1. a. col. 1. in the Prologue to the First Volume, Printed at London, 1520.  
Especially at *Froysard*.  
[9] Ib. f. 3. a. col. 1. c. 8.

The King of France corrupted with Money.

[1] Ib. col. 2.

[2] *Ibm*.  
The Pope and Cardinals corrupted with Gold and Silver.



[3] *Ib.* cap. 9.  
Robert of Artois his Advice  
to the Queen.

[4] *Ib.* f. 3. b.  
col. 1.

She goes out  
of France to  
William Earl  
of Haynault.

[5] *Ib.* fol. 4.  
col. 1.

He received  
her kindly,  
and brings  
forth his four  
Daughters.  
The Prince  
likes Philip  
best.

[6] *Fol.* 123.  
lin. 1, &c.

[7] *Ib.* n. 20.  
And was con-  
tracted to her.  
[8] *Fol.* 598.  
n. 10.

[9] *Walsingh.*  
*ut supra.*  
The Earl of  
Haynault fur-  
nisheth the  
Queen with  
Ships and  
Forces to  
come for Eng-  
land.

[1] *Ibm.* &  
*Anglia sacra,*  
*parte prima,*  
f. 366.

She lands at  
Harwich.

[2] *U: supra,*  
n. 20.

[3] *Walsing.*  
*Ib.* n. 30.  
Several Bi-  
shops, Earls,  
and Barons,  
join with her.

[4] *Ibm.*

[5] *Append.*  
n. 68.

*A. D.* 1329.  
20 *Ed. II.*  
The King  
proclaims  
*Mortimer*  
Traitor, &c.

By this means [3] all the Barons of France were withdrawn from the Queen, except Robert of Artois her Dear Cousin, who privately advised and encouraged her; and gave her secret notice, That her [4] Brother would deliver her, her Son, and the Earl of Kent, King Edward's Brother, and Sir Roger Mortimer, to the King and Hugh Spencer, and advised her to go into the Empire to William Earl of Haynault, and Sir John of Haynault his Brother.

The Earl received her with Joy at Valenciennes, and [5] brought forth his four Daughters, Margaret, Philip, Jane, and Isabell, the Prince liked Philip best, and she kept him Company during his stay there.

Walsingham [6] tells us, that the King, as 'twas reported, (*prout dicitur*) had procured the Death of his Wife, and Son Edward, and that John of Britania, Earl of Richmond, her Familiar, was to have been the Executioner, but that perceiving the Noblemen of France to have been corrupted by large Gifts, and that there was no safety to be expected there, she fled privately with her Son and Family (or Followers) to the Earl of Haynault, of whom they were Honourably and Magnificently received.

Whether she was commanded by her Brother, or fled privately out of France, certain it is she [7] went to the Earl of Hanault, and having Contracted her Son to his Daughter Philip, ([8] Sir Thomas de la Moor says, Married him to her, without the Advice of the Nobility;) by his Assistance, who provided Men and Ships, [9] she came for England, with her Son, (then not Fourteen years of Age) Edmond Earl of Kent the King's Brother, Roger Mortimer, and many others, who were forced, or fled out of England, and with 2757 Men at Arms, commanded by John of Hanault, the Earl's Brother, and landed at [1] Harwich on Wednesday before Michaelmas-day, where she was joined by the Earl [3] Marshal, the Earl of Leicester, and other Barons, and Knights, (*cum Prælati fere omnibus*) with almost all the Prelates, but chiefly with the Bishops of Lincoln, Hereford, Dublin, and Ely, who together made her up a great Army, [4] which being refreshed at St. Edmunds-Bury, she went forward to seek out her own, and the Kingdom's Enemies.

On the 28th of September, the King issued his Proclamation against [5] Roger Mortimer, giving notice, That he and the other Traitors had entred his Kingdom by force, and had brought with them Aliens and Strangers, and taken upon them Royal Power over him, and that therefore he was resolved to oppose them in Person, to Arrest and destroy them and all their Company and Adherents, as he ought and might, except the Queen, his Son, and Earl of Kent, who he would by all possible means to be as safe as before their landing; and summoned all Persons that by their Ligeance were obliged, to come with all their Force and Power, in Defence of him, themselves, and the Kingdom, and for the Ease of the People he promised to pay the Soldiers Wages; and



and also promised to all Great Men his Charters of Pardon for Felony or Adherence to his Enemies, as well in times past, as at present; and for Outlawry for what Cause soever, except the Traytor Roger Mortimer, and the great Managers of the People which came from beyond Sea with him, and those that killed Sir Roger Boler; and then promised 1000*l.* Sterling and Pardon to any one should bring him the Body or Head of Roger Mortimer. Given under his Great Seal at the Tower of London, the 28th of September.

This Proclamation had not its desired Effect, the People having been so prepossessed with strange Notions, and Jealousies concerning the King, and both the Spencers, and the strange things the Queen and Mortimer would do for Holy Church, themselves, and the Kingdom, that in her March, her Army daily increased, and the King's decreased; She did no injury [6] to the Bodies or Goods of any but her Enemies, which she fought out, and every where applied their Goods to her own use, and destroyed their Farms.

The Queen's Army was much [8] increased by some Bishops Letters wrote to their Fellow Bishops, and other Friends, that there were so many Dukes, Earls, and Barons, with their Troops, sent by the King of France, to defend the Right of his Sister, as all England could scarce feed them.

And also by another Lye spread all over the Kingdom, That the Pope had absolved all Englishmen from their Oath of Fealty sworn to the King, and that he had thundered out the Sentence of Excommunication against all those that bare Arms against the Queen, *Præterea profuit [9] Mendacium, ab exercitu in omnes Regni partes divulgatum, quod summus pontifex Romanus omnes Anglos absolvit a fidelitate jurata suo Regi, &c.* For the Confirmation of which Lye, it was pretended there were Two Cardinals with the Queen in the Army, sent to her with these Favours from the Pope. *Ad hujus Mendacii confirmationem, &c.*

The Queen upon her Landing emitted a Proclamation, [1] That all should enjoy Peace and Quiet, except the Publick Enemies of the Kingdom, the Two Despensers Father and Son, and Robert Baldock the King's Chancellor, and their Favourers, who were the Cause of the present Disturbance of the Nation; That no Goods should be taken from any without the Consent of the Owners, if above the value of 3*d.* (then a days Wages for a Common Soldier) his Finger was to be cut off; nor 6*d.* (the Wages of an Hobelor) under Pain of his Hand being cut off, (*nec valorem Duodecim Sterlingorum*) which I Translate 12*d.* the daily Wages of a Man at Arms) upon Pain of Death.

The King then at London requested Assistance of the [2] Londoners, who refused to aid him, whereupon he [3] left the City, and went Westward; In the mean time the Londoners, who were always in a fury, when they had a liberty of being Insolent, pretending Friendship to the Queen, (*dum [3] hæc aguntur Londinenses,*

The Proclamation without effect.

[6] *Ibm.*

[7] *Ib. n. 40.*

[8] *De la Moir, f. 598. n. 30, 40.*  
The Queen's Army much increased.

Her Cause carried on by Lyes.

[9] *Ibm.*

[1] *Walsingh. f. 124. lin. 1, &c.*

The Queen's Proclamation.

Punishments for Plunderers.

[2] *Ib. f. 123. n. 40.*

The Londoners refuse to give the King Assistance.

[3] *Ib. f. 124. n. 10, 20.*



The Rabble  
seize their  
Major.  
[4] Ibm.  
They Confe-  
derate to kill  
the Queen's  
Enemies, &c.

[5] Ibm.  
They cut off  
John Marchal's  
Head, Hugh  
Spenser's Ser-  
vant.

[6] Ib. n. 30.  
They plunder  
the Bishop of  
Excest. r's  
House, and  
cut off his  
Head.

[7] Ibm.  
n. 40, 50.  
The Reason  
of their fury  
against this  
Bishop.

[8] Ibm.

[9] Ibm.  
They seize the  
Constable of  
the Tower.  
Prisoners set  
free all Eng-  
land over.

Fugitives and  
Banished Per-  
sons return  
into England.

[1] Hist. sacra.  
f. 366.

Another Ac-  
count of the  
Murder of  
the Bishop of  
Excester.

[2] Ibm.  
All sorts of  
Citizens meet  
at Guildhall,  
and contrive  
how to put  
to Death  
the Bishops of  
London and  
Excester, and  
the King's  
other Justices.

[3] Ibm.  
The Queen  
comes to Lon-  
don.

All her Ene-  
mies that ad-  
hered not to  
her.

*nenses, quibus nunquam deest furia, cum adest insolendi licentia*) gathering together the Rabble of all Artificers, (*Congregatis de cunctis artificibus, infirmis personis, &c.*) taking Arms, and seize their Major, threatening to kill him if he would not swear to Consent to their Orders, which he did, to save his Life, *Fecerunt* [4] *igitur Conjuracionem, &c.* And they made a Confederacy, That the Queen's Enemies where-ever to be found, of what State or Condition soever they were, or such as should procure any Damage to the Liberties of the City, should be put to Death.

Under pretence of this Oath, [5] they presently took John Marchal, Servant to Hugh Spenser the Younger, (*& ejus caput immisericorditer amputarunt*) and unmercifully cut off his Head, and plundered all his Goods; and on the same day continuing their Madness, ([6] *eodem die continuantes suam Rabiem*) they ran to the Bishop of Excester's House, setting fire to the Gates, entering, and not finding him, they plundered his Jewels, Plate, and Household-stuff; and coming out of the Fields on Horseback to the North Door of [6] St. Pauls, the mad People took, beat, wounded, and threw him off his Horse, and dragged him into Cheapside, where they proclaimed him a Publick Traytor, and cut off his Head. The Reason of their Fury against this Bishop [7] was, That being Treasurer of the Kingdom, he had persuaded the King's Council, that the Itinerant Justices might sit in London, [8] who found the Citizens had offended in many things, for which they lost their Liberties, some were Fined, and others had Corporal Punishment.

Next day they seized the [9] Constable of the Tower, and took the Keys from him, and set free all the Prisoners, and so it was all over England, and at the same time all Fugitives and Banished Persons returned.

We have a further Account of the Death of the Bishop of Excester, and some of these things, from [1] William de Dene, a Publick Notary of the Church of Rochester, living at the time. The Arch-Bishop, 15 days after Michaelmas, intended to have held a Treaty with the Bishops at St. Pauls, about sending some of their own Order to the King and Queen as Mediators of Peace between them; The Bishop of Rochester dissuaded his going into the City, or beyond the Thames, to Treat, being then at Lambeth, telling him the Hearts of the People were against the Bishops, and that they hated them, imputing all the Evil that had happened in the Nation to their Sloathfulness, Foolishness, and Ignorance; Next day they met at Lambeth, and Resolved to send Two; The Bishop of Winchester was willing to go for one, but could not get a Companion. [2] *Die Mercurii proximo ante Festum St. Lucae convenerunt apud la Gylde-Hall, &c.* On Wednesday before St. Luke the Citizens, great and small, (*maiores & minores*) met at the Guildhall, where they contrived how they might take, and put to Death, the Bishops of London, and Excester, and the King's other Justices, and how they might Plunder the Merchants, & Mercatores in Civitate depredarent, taking the occasion of the Queen's coming, [3] *accepta occasione de adventu Reginae, quod Reginae adherere nolentes proditores Regni*

A

B

C

D

E

F



A *Regni publice censerentur*, because those that would not adhere to the Queen were publickly Reputed Traytors to the Kingdom: The *Iustices* were then met at the *Friers Preachers*, and the *Bishop of Excester* was *flying* to *St. Paul's Church*, they caught him at the Door, beat and grievously wounded him, and drew him through the Streets and Lanes to the *Great Cross* in *Cheapside*, where the Sons of the Devil, (*Filii Diaboli Virum fidelem, providum, & discretum, ac Regno valde necessarium truculenter decapitarunt*) Beheaded a Faithful, Wife, and Discreet Man, and very useful to the Nation. And further says, *Tunc conturbata est tota* [4] *Terra, & in circuitu impii ambulantes, animalia & alia bona pacificorum, quos hostes Reginae dixerant, sub tali colore ubique depradantes abduxerunt*: Then the whole Nation was in confusion; and the Wicked calling peaceable Men the Queen's Enemies, and under that colour took away and plundered their Goods.

[4] *Ibm.*  
Those who were called the Queen's Enemies were plundered all the Nation over.

B The King not thinking himself safe there, had left *London* before the Queen came thither; and finding [5] by such as he had sent to make a Discovery, that almost all the Nobility, afrighted with false Reports (*tota fere Regni Communitas falsis territa rumoribus*) had come in to the Queen, went in [6] *Wales*; and having appointed *Hugh Despenfer* the Father, then Earl of *Winchester*, to defend the Town and Castle of *Bristol*, went with *Hugh* the Son, then Earl of *Glocester*, *Robert Baldock*, and few others to [7] *Chepstow*, and there took Ship, intending for the *Island of Lundy*, or *Ireland*; but the Wind being cross, he could make neither, and having undergone much Hardship at Sea, he landed, and got to the Abby of *Nethe* in *Glamorganshire*, where he lay close,

[5] *De la Moor*, f. 598 n. 50.  
The King goes into *Wal.*

[6] *Ibm.*  
Sets *H. Spenser* the Father to defend the Town and Castle of *Bristol*.

[7] *Ibm.* & *Walf.* f. 125. n. 10.

The King lay close in the Abby of *Nethe* in *Glamorganshire*.

D In the mean time, the Queen followed him with her Army, and sent these Letters abroad, to command and draw in the People to her Assistance: [8] *Isabel by the Grace of God Queen of England, Dame of Ireland, Countess of Pontif, or Ponthieu; and we Edward, Eldest Son to the Noble King of England, Duke of Guyen, Earl of Chester, Pontif, and Monstroil, or Monstrevil; and we Edmond, Son to the Noble King of England, Earl of Kent, To all those to whom these Letters shall come, Greeting: Whereas 'tis notoriously known, That the State of Holy Church and the Realm of England, are many ways blemished and abased, by the Evil Counsel and Abett of Hugh le Despenfer, who by Pride and a Desire to Lord it, and set himself over all others, hath taken upon him Royal Power against Right, Reason, and his Allegiance; and in like manner made use of all the Evil Counsel of Robert Baldock and others his Adherents, so as Holy Church is reviled, and shamefully put under great Subjection, and the Prelates of Holy Church spoiled of their Goods against God and Right; Holy Church defamed and dishonoured many ways, and the Crown of England destroyed in divers manners, in Disheritance of our Lord the King, and his Heirs, the Great Men of the Realm, by the Envy and wicked Cruelty of the said Hugh; many of them, without Fault and without Cause, put to shameful Death; some Disherited, others Imprisoned, Banished, and Exiled; Widows and Orphans wrongfully forejudged of their Right, and the People of the Land, by divers Tallages and undue Exactions very often burthened, and by divers Oppressions grieved*

[8] *Ibm.*  
Append n. 69  
The Queen's Letter, by which she commanded and drew in the People to her Assistance.

Her care of Holy Church, and the Prelates of Holy Church.



grieved without Mercy. By which Offences the said Hugh hath shewn himself an open Tyrant and Enemy to God and Holy Church, to our most dear Lord the King, and to the whole Realm. And we, and many others with us, and in our Company, who have long been estranged from the good Pleasure of our Lord the King, by the false Suggestions and Evil Procurement of the aforesaid Hugh and Robert, and their Adherents, are come into the Land to raise the State of Holy Church and the Realm, and to defend the People from these Mischiefs and grievous Oppressions, and to maintain to our Power the Honour and Profit of Holy Church, and our Lord the King and the whole Realm, as abovesaid. Wherefore we command and pray you for the Common Profit of you and every one of you, to be Aidant to us at all times and in all places, and by all the ways you know or can, that the things abovesaid may be speedily brought to a good Effect and End. For know certainly, That all we, and all those with us, will not undertake any thing that shall not be for the Honor and Profit of Holy Church, and of the whole Kingdom, as in time you will see and find, if God please. Given at Wallingford the 15th Day of October, in the Twentieth Year of the Reign of our most dear Lord the King.

From Wallingford she marched to Oxford, and so in a short time to Bristol, which she besieged, and soon took; and the next day after she came thither, [9] Hugh Despenfer the Father, Earl of Winchester, was Drawn and Hanged upon the Common Gallows, without Hearing or Trial, on the [1] Vigil of Simon and Jude, or the 27th of October.

Then the Queen went into the Marches of Wales, and staid at \* Hereford a Month, from whence she sent Henry Earl of Lancaster, and Rhese ap Howel a Clerc and Welsh-man, who knew those Parts well, with part of her Army to find out the King, and by Money corrupted the Welsh-men, so as they discovered him to be in the Abby aforesaid, where he was taken, with Hugh Despenfer the Younger, Robert Baldock, and Simon de Reding, [2] who were committed to the Custody of the Earl, by the Advice of the Bishop of Hereford.

Before it was known where the King was, it was supposed he had left [3] England, and [4] quitted the Government; whereupon on the 26th Day of October, at Bristol, the Arch-Bishop of Dublin, the Bishops of Winchester, Ely, Lincoln, Hereford, Norwich, and other Prelates, and Thomas Earl of Norfolk, Edmund Earl of Kent, the King's Brothers, Henry Earl of Lancaster and Leicester, Thomas Wake, Henry de Bello Monte, or Beaumont, William la Zouche de Ashby, Robert de Monte alto, or Montalt, Robert de Morle, Robert de Watteville, and other Barons and Knights in the Presence of the Queen and the Duke of Aquitan her Son, by the Consent of the whole Community of England, being then present, unanimously chose the same Duke to be Guardian of the Kingdom, so as the said Duke and Guardian should Govern the Kingdom in the Name and Right of the King his Father in his absence: And he took the Government of the Kingdom upon him accordingly, and passed all Matters under his Privy Seal, not having any other. Afterwards, on the 20th of November, when the Queen's and Duke's

Bristol taken.  
[9] De la Moor,  
f. 599. n. 50.  
H. Despenfer  
the Father  
drawn and  
hanged.

[1] A. B. S. C. R.  
vol. I. f. 18.

The Queen at  
Hereford a  
Month.

\* Ib. & f. 600.

The Queen  
goes with her  
Army into the  
Marches of  
Wales to find  
out the King,  
and takes him  
with H. De-  
spenfer the  
Younger and  
others.

[2] Ib. m.

[3] [4] Ap-  
pend. n. 70.  
It was suppo-  
sed the King  
was out of  
England.

The Prince  
or Duke of  
Aquitan made  
Guardian of  
the Kingdom.

A

B

C

D

E

F



A Duke's Enemies were taken, and the King was returned into his Kingdom, the Queen, Duke, Prelates, and Noblemen aforesaid, with the Assent of the Community aforesaid, then being at Hereford, by reason that the Power of the Guardian ceased by the King's coming into his Kingdom, sent the Bishop of Hereford to the King, then at Monmouth, to beseech him to Command, That all things that might tend to the Peace of the Kingdom, might be Sealed with the Great Seal then with him. This was done in the presence of the Earl of Lancaster, &c. and the King was prevailed on to send the Seal to his Wife and Son to [5] Seal what they would with it.

B Whilst the Earl of Lancaster was carrying the King through Wales, [6] by Monmouth, Lidbury, and other Places, to his Castle of Kenelworth in Warwickshire, they sent Hugh Spenser the Son, Robert Baldock, and Simon Reding, to the Queen at Hereford. Before their coming, the Earl of Arundel, John Daniel, and Thomas Micheldene, had their Heads struck off by the Procurement and Hatred of Roger Mortimer, who [7] was at this time the Queen's most familiar Counsellor (*Consiliarius Regine familiarissimus*) without whom the Queen did nothing. [8] Those that brought Hugh Spenser, for their Reward had Two thousand Pounds, as she had promised. And [9] soon after he was adjudged to Death, without being put to answer, (*sine Responsione*) and was Drawn and Hanged upon a Gallows 50 Foot high, and then Quartered, and his Head fixed upon London-Bridge. [1] On the same Day Simon Reding was Drawn and Hanged for speaking hard things of the Queen.

D Yet Knighton [2] reports Hugh Spenser the Younger was Arraigned before Sir William Trussell, a Justiciary, in the Form there mentioned, which was by way of a Speech made against him, as 'tis here contracted.

E Hugh le Despenfer [3] in the Parlement at Westminster, in the 15th of the King, your Father and you Hugh were awarded Traytors and Enemies of the Realm, and Banished as such, never to return without the Assent of the King in full Parliament duly summoned. Contrary to which Award, your Father and you Hugh were found in the Court without Warrant: And you Hugh, as you returned into the Kingdom, feloniously spoiled and robbed Two Domands (Merchant-Ships so called) of Goods to the Value of Forty thousand Pounds. Hugh, after this Felony, you came to the King, and caused him to go with Force against the Peers of the Realm, and other his Liege People, to destroy and disherit them, contrary to the Great Charter: And also taking upon you Royal Power, you Hugh and your Assistants, with Force and Arms, robbed feloniously the good People of the Realm; and by Andrew Harleze, and other Traitors your Adherents, Murdered the good Earl of Hereford, Monsieur William Sullee, and Monsieur Roger de Berfelde (at Borough-Bridge) and caused to be taken my most Honourable Lord Thomas the Good Earl of Lancaster, and caused him to be Judged by a false Record, against Law, Reason, and the Great Charter, and also to be Murdered, Martyred, and put to a cruel Death. Also in the same March (in the French Journey)

The Great Seal sent to the Queen and her Son. [5] Ibm. [6] Wals. f. 125. n. 30, 40. The King carried to Kenelworth. Castle. The Earl of Arundel and 2 others Heads struck off at Hereford. [7] Ibm. n. 40, 50. Mortimer the Queen's most familiar Counsellor. [8] Ibm. n. 40, 50. [9] Ibm. H. Despenfer the Son drawn, hanged, and quartered. [1] Ib f. 126. lin. 3. Simon Reding drawn and hanged. [2] Col. 2547. n. 10, 20, &c. Knighton's Relation of the Judgment of H. Despenfer the Son. [3] Ibm. Sir W. Trussell's Speech against H. Despenfer the Son.



[4] Col. 2548.  
n. 10, 20, 30.

Journey) to Borough-Bridge, you caused many of my Lords (the Earl of Lancaster) Barons and Knights to be Drawn and Hanged, by false Record against Law and Reason, [4] and caused other Great Men to be put in Prison and Murdered to get their Estates, as Roger Mortimer the Nephew and Uncle, Hugh Audeley Father and Son, and the Earl of Hereford. Hugh, after this Destruction of the Nobility, you Hugh, your Father, and Robert Baldock, usurping Royal Power over the King, led him and his People into Scotland against his Enemies, where you Hugh by your Traiterous Conduct caused him to lose 20000 of his People, to his great Dishonour, and Damage of the Realm, and to return without doing any thing.

A

[5] Ibm. n. 40,  
50, 60.

Hugh, [5] this Treason nor this Tyranny would satisfie you, until by Royal Power gained over the King, you destroyed the Franchises of Holy Church and the Prelates, as the Bishops of Hereford, Lincoln, and Norwich, taking their Goods out of their Churches: And whereas you knew God had done great Things by my Lord (the Earl of Lancaster) you caused to be murdered, you placed armed Guards, and shut the Church-Doors, that none should enter to Honour God and his Saints. Hugh, after these Mischiefs, you advised the King to give unto the false Traitor the Earl of Winchester, Andrew Harkley, and self, Lands properly belonging to the Crown, in Disberision thereof.

B

[6] Ibm. Col.  
2549. n. 10,  
20.

[6] Hugh, whereas the Queen and her Son passed beyond Sea by the King's Command to save the Country of Guyen, in point to be lost by your Traiterous Counsel, you sent over a great Sum of Money to some of your wicked Adherents, to destroy the Queen and her Son, (gest Droit heir del Realm) who is Right Heir of the Kingdom, and to hinder their coming over. [7] Hugh, your Father, Robert Baldock, and self, and other false Traitors your Adherents, taking upon you Royal Power, made great and small by force to swear to, and assure you, to maintain you in your false Quarrels or Pretences (en vous faux Quereles) not having regard that such Confederacies were False and Traiterous, against Legience and the State of the King and his Crown. [8] And forasmuch as you Hugh, and other Traitors, knew that the Queen and her Son were arrived in the Nation, by your Evil Counsel you caused the King to withdraw himself, and go from them, and carried him out of the Kingdom, to the Danger of his Body, and Dishonour to him and his People, feloniously taking with you the Treasure of the Realm, contrary to the Great Charter.

C

[7] Ibm.

[8] Ibm. n. 30,  
40.

D

[9] Ibm.  
The Judg-  
ment upon H.  
le Despenser the  
Son.

Hugh [9] you are found Traitor, wherefore all the good People of the Kingdom, Great and Small, Rich and Poor, by Common Assent, do Award, That you are found as a Thief, and therefore shall be Hanged; and are found as a Traitor, and therefore shall be Drawn and Quartered; and for that you have been Outlawed by the King, and by Common Assent, and returned to the Court without Warrant, you shall be Beheaded (vous ferrez decollez) and for that you abetted and procured Discord between the King and Queen, and others of the Realm, you shall be Embowelled, and your Bowels burnt. [1] Withdraw, Traitor, Tyrant, and so go take your Judgment, attainted wicked Traitor.

E

[1] Ibm. n. 50.

F

He was at this time Earl of Glocester; and I see no Trial by Common Jury, or his Peers; and the Attaint was only this Speech made against



against, and most what was objected to him, had been *Pardoned* by Act of Parlement. (*Et sic* [2] *statim morte plexus est Octavo Kalendarum Decembris*) And so he was presently put to Death, on the 8th of the Kalends of *December*, or 24th of *November*.

[2] *Ibm.*  
His Executi-  
oc.

A The Earl of *Lancaster* made no great haste with his Prisoner the King to *Kenelworth*, for in 13 Days time he was got no further from *Monmouth* than *Lidbury* in *Herefordshire*, at which Place the [3] *Writ* for Proroguing a Parlement that was pretended to have been *Summoned* by the King to meet 15 Days after *St. Andrew*, was Dated the 3d of *December* (*Teste Rege apud Lidbury, tertio die Decembris, 20 Ed. II.*) Witness the King at *Lidbury* the 3d of *December*. The *Writ* for this Parlement, which was to meet 15 Days after *St. Andrew*, I believe can no where be found, which was to be holden by *Isabel Queen-Consort of England*, and *Edward his Eldest Son Guardian of England*, he then being out of the Kingdom, as 'tis said in the *Writ*, Dated the 3d of *December*, &c. for Proroguing that Parlement to the morrow of *Epiphany*, or *Twelfth-Day*; To be holden by him if *Personally present*, or in his absence by his said *Consort and Son*. But the miserable King knew nothing of this *Summons* Dated at *Lidbury* on the 3d of *December*, with his *Teste*; for the *Great Seal* was that Day in the keeping of the *Bishop of Norwich* at *Wodstock*, and the next Day delivered to *Roger Mortimer and the Duke of Aquitan* (i. e. *Edward the King's Son*) at the same Place, as it most certainly appears by the *Record* in the *Appendix*, n. 70.

[3] *Append.*  
n. 71.

A Parlement to be holden by the Queen and her Son, if the King not in *England*. Prorogued to the morrow of *Twelfth-day*. The King knew nothing of the *Writ* of Prorogation dated *Decemb. 3*.

The Parle- ment met according to the Prorogation. [4] *Hist. Sacr.* vol. 1. f. 367. The first thing moved in it, was, Whether the Father or Son should be King.

[5] *Append.* n. 72. It was carried for the Son. The Reasons why he was deposed.

D The Parlement (as 'tis called) met *crastino Epiphaniæ*, or 7th of *January*: The first thing moved by the *Bishop* of [4] *Hereford*, and many other *Bishops* joining with him, was, Whether King *Edward the Father*, or his Son *Edward*, should Reign over them? They were not long before they Agreed the Son should have the Government of the Kingdom, and be Crowned King [5] for the Causes following:

E 1. ' *First*, For that the Person of the King was not sufficient to Govern; for in all his time he was Led and Governed by others, who gave him Evil Counsel, to the Dishonour of himself, and Destruction of Holy Church and all his People, not considering or knowing whether it was Good or Evil; nor would remedy these things, when he was requested by the Great and Wise Men of his Realm, or suffer them to be amended.

F 2. ' Also, In all his time he would not give himself to Good Counsel, nor take it, nor to the Good Government of his Kingdom; but always gave himself to Works and Employments not Convenient, neglecting the Business of his Realm.

3. ' Also, For want of Good Government he lost the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and other Lands and Dominions in *Gas-coigne* and *Ireland*, which his Father left him in Peace and



‘ Amity with the King of *France*, and many other Great Persons.

4. ‘ Also, By his Pride and Cruelty he destroyed Holy Church, and the Persons of Holy Church, putting some in Prison, and others in Distress ; and also put to shameful Death, and Imprisoned, Banished, and Disherited many Great and Noble Men of the Land.

A

5. ‘ Also, Whereas he was bound by his Oath to do Right to all, he would not do it for his own Profit, and the Covetousness of him and his Evil Counsellors which were with him ; neither regarded the other Points of the Oath which he made at his Coronation, as he was obliged.

6. ‘ Also, He abandoned his Realm, and did as much as he could to destroy it and his People ; and what is worse, by his Cruelty and the Default of his Person, he is found incorrigible without hopes of Amendment. All which things are so notorious, they cannot be gainsaid.

B

[6] *Author. Decemb. col. 2765. n. 40. Commissioners sent to the King at Kenilworth-Castle*  
[7] *Knighton, col. 2549. n. 50, 60.*

[8] *Append. n. 73. Homage and Fealty resigned to K. Edw.*

These Articles were Conceived and Dictated by John Stratford [6] Bishop of Winchester and Treasurer of England, and written by William Mees Clerc, his Secretary and a Publick Notary. Having Approved the Articles, they were by Commune Agreement [7] sent to the King, then Prisoner in Kenilworth-Castle, Three Bishops, Two Earls, Two Barons, Two Abbots, and Two Justices, amongst whom was Sir William Trussell before noted, Proxy to the whole Parliament, to Resign their Homage and Fealty to the King, which he did in this manner : [8] I William Trussell, Procurator of the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, and other People in my Procuracy named, having for this full and sufficient Power, do Resign and Deliver up to you Edward King of England, as to the King before this Hour, the Homage and Fealty of the Persons in my Procuracy named, and do Return them upon you Edward, and make Quit or Free the Persons aforesaid, in the best manner that Law and Custom may do it ; And do make Protestation in the Name of those that will not for the future be in your Fealty, or Allegiance, nor claim to hold any thing of you as King, but shall hold you as a Private Person, without any manner of Royal Dignity.

C

D

E

[9] *f. 600. n. 40, 50.*

The Bishops of Lincoln and Winchester circumvent the King, by Promises and Threats.

[1] *Ib. f. 601. lin. 4. &c.*

Sir Thomas de la Moor [9] tells us who the Three Bishops were ; John Stratford Bishop of Winchester, Adam de Torleton Bishop of Hereford, and Henry Burwast Bishop of Lincoln : Three Principal Companions in transacting this Affair. The Bishops of Winchester and Lincoln came before the rest to the King, who with his Keeper the Earl of Lancaster, persuaded him to resign his Crown to his Son, and circumvented the King, promising him as much Honour after his Resignation as before ; and on the other hand threatened him if he would not, the People should yield up their Homage and Fealty, and repudiate his Sons, and Choose one not of Royal Blood. With these and other importune Promises and Threats, they obtained their Desires. And then the Bishop of Hereford [1] brought in all the other Commissioners, sent by the Parliament, into the King's Chamber,

F



Chamber, where the whole Matter they came for was dispatched, not without great Grief and Reluctancy from the King.

*Walsingham* [2] reports, all the Nobility met at London, on the morrow of, or day after Twelfth-day, in Parlement, and Judged the King Unfit to Rule, and for several Reasons to be Deposed, and his Son Prince Edward to be chosen King. Of which when the Queen had notice, [3] she was full of Grief outwardly (*ut foris apparuit.*) But the Prince affected with this outward Passion of his Mother, would not accept the Title against his Father's Will and Consent (*Et* [4] *juravit quod invito Patre, nunquam susciperet Coronam Regni.*) The King when he received this News by the Commissioners, was much disturbed, and said since it could be no otherwise, he thanked them for choosing his First Born Son, making his Resignation, and delivering up the Royal Ensigns and Tokens of Sovereignty. The Commissioners returning to the Parlement at London, with the King's Answer and the Royal Ensigns, made the Rabble [5] rejoice; and presently the whole Community of the Kingdom admitted Edward, a Youth of Fourteen Years of Age to be their King, on the 20th Day of January, which they would have to be the First Day of his Reign. And from that time he acted as King before his Coronation, as may appear by the [6] Writ to all the Sheriffs of England to proclaim his Peace.

The King to the Sheriff of Yorkshire, Greeting: Because Edward, late King of England, our Father, by Common Council and Assent of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, and also of the Communities of the said Kingdom, of his own Free Will removed himself from the Government of the said Kingdom, Willing and Granting, That we as his First-Born and Heir of the Kingdom, should take upon us the Rule and Government: And we yielding to the Good Pleasure of our Father, by the Counsel and Advise of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, Great Men, and Communities aforesaid, have taken upon us the Government of the said Kingdom and received the Homages and Fealties of the said Prelates and Great Men according to Custom. Therefore desiring our Peace for the Quiet and Tranquillity of our People to be inviolably observed, we Command, That presently after sight of these Presents, you cause our Peace publicly to be proclaimed through your whole Bailiwick, forbidding all and singular, under the pain of Disinheriting, and losing Life and Member, That they presume not to infringe or violate our Peace, but that all Men do prosecute their Suits and Actions without violence, according to the Laws and Customs of the Land, &c. Witness the King at Westminster the 29th of January. On the First of February, being Sunday, he was Crowned.

In the time between his being declared King and his Coronation, the Londoners fearing themselves for their Cruelty against the Bishop of Excester, to palliate their Wickedness, [7] *interim Londinenses sibi metuentes de crudelitate Patrata in Episcopum Exoniensem, ad palliandum iniquitatem eorum, &c.* forced the Arch-Bishops of Canterbury, York, and Dublin, and the other Bishops which came to the Parlement, to come to their Guild-Hall, where all the Bishops, except the Arch-Bishop of York, the Bishops of London and

[2] f. 126. n. 20, 30.

[3] *Ibm.*  
The Queen outwardly sorrowful.

[4] *Ibm.* n. 40, 50.  
The Prince unwilling to receive the Crown.

K. Ed. resigns.

[5] *Ibm.*  
His Son made King.

[6] *Claus. Ed.*  
III. Part. 1. M.  
28. Append.  
n. 74.

Note this Writ.

[7] *Hist. Sacr.*  
f. 357. col. 1.  
The Londoners force the Bishops to swear to maintain and defend all the Rights & Liberties of the City.



[8] *Ibm.*The Bishop  
of Rochester's  
Protestation.[9] *De la Moor*,  
f. 601, 602,  
603.  
The Nation  
begins to be  
sensible of the  
King's Condi-  
tion.His Keeper  
the Earl of  
Lancaster pi-  
ties his deplora-  
ble case.  
Many Lords  
and others  
begin to think  
how they  
might deliver  
him; the su-  
spicion where-  
of, caused him  
to be removed  
from Kenel-  
worth-Castle,  
and to have  
new Keepers.He is inhu-  
manly treated[1] *Ibm.* f.  
603. n. 20.  
And barba-  
rously mur-  
dered.

Carlisle, Swore to maintain and defend the *Rights* and *Liberties* of the City, in the presence of the Earl of Kent and an immense Multitude, who came to see the Silliness of the Bishops, how they Sacrificed to Mahomet: [8] *In presentia Comitum Cantie, & multitudinis immense, qui ad videndum fatuitatem Episcoporum, quo modo Mahumeto Sacrificabant confluxerunt.* The Bishop of Rochester protested before a Publick Notary, and Witnesses especially called, That it was not his *Intention* to Swear, but *saving his Order, and saving all Things contained in Magna Charta.*

The King was all this time [9] Prisoner in Kenelworth-Castle, not knowing what further they were doing. The Nation observing what had been done, seeing the Queen engaged, and the Prince carried along with them, (not then perhaps *suspecting* or in the least *understanding* the *Designs* of the Heads and *Privado's* of the Faction) began to be *sensible* of the King's Condition, and to *consider* the *Pretences* of his *Enemies*, and to *think* how they might be *kind* to him, and *prevent* further Mischiefs. His Keeper also, the Earl of Lancaster, began to be every way *obliging* to him, much *pitying* and *commiserating* his deplorable Case. Many Lords and others began to think how they might deliver him out of Captivity; the *notice* or rather *suspicion* thereof, much startled Mortimer, the Bishop of Hereford, the Queen, and Chief Actors in this Tragedy, reflecting upon what they had done, and fearing if the King should get his Liberty they could not be safe, or at least their Designs must come to nothing, and caused them to think of removing him from Kenelworth, and appointing him new Keepers, who were Thomas Gournay and John Maltrovers Knights, receiving him at Kenelworth-Castle by Principal Authority, (*Autoritate Principali*, as Sir Thomas de la Moor *phraseth* it) and hurried him up and down the Nation, that it might not be known where he was; and at last brought him to Berkley-Castle in Gloucestershire, where he was *inhumanly treated* by his Keepers, attempting to destroy him by all ways of horrid Indignities, brutish Usages, and before uncontrived and unthought of Affronts: But having been frustrated in their Intentions, by his natural Strength of Body and Fortitude of Mind, on the 10th of the [1] Calends of October, or 22d of September, at night in his Bed they stifled and smothered him, with large and heavy Bolsters and Pillows, and put up a red-hot Iron, thro' a Ductil-pipe, into his Guts at his Fundament; and in this most cruel manner murdered him, that no Wound or Mark of a Violent Death might be found upon him.



## Church-Affairs.

- A** **I**N these we may give a short Account and History of the Templars, being an Ecclesiastick Order, and in these times the Pope claiming the Jurisdiction over, Judgment and Censure of them, as not being subject to Temporal Power. This Order began in the [1] year 1118, only Nine Knights at first entring into a Combination by voluntary Agreement, were the first Founders of it, whereof the Two Principal were Hugo de Paganis, and Godfrey of St. Omar, to whom, because they had no certain Habitation, Baldwin King of Jerusalem assigned them part of his own Palace, near the South-Gate adjoining to the Temple of the Lord, from whence they were called Templars: Their first Profession was for the Remission of their Sins, to guard the High-ways for the safety of Pilgrims, and such as came to visit the Sepulchre, and to defend them from Thieves and Robbers. The King, Nobility, and Patriarch, with other Prelates, giving Lands to support and maintain them. Nine years after, [2] in the Council of Troyes, they had a Rule and Habit assigned them by Pope Honorius, when their Numbers and Possessions began to increase; in a short time they were so numerous, that there was in the Convent 300 Knights, besides of Brethren almost an infinite number; and they were said to have such vast Possessions, as there was no Christian Country, wherein they had them not, and so as to exceed Princes in their Revenues, and are reported by the same [3] Historian, to have obtained, and been possessed of in the space of 126 years 9000 Mannors in Christendom: Their increase in Revenues and Riches begat the Envy, and their neglect and non observation of the first Institution of their Order, their Luxury, Pride, and most horrid and detestable Crimes which were reported of, and objected against them, begat the hatred of all Christendom, so that within Sixty three years after, when they were [4] possessed of 16000 Lordships, besides other Lands, viz. [4] in the year of our Lord 1307, on Friday after St. Denis, or 12th of October, by Command of the [5] King of France, Philip the Fair, with Consent of Pope Clement the Fifth, all the Templars in France were secured, their Houses, Lands, Possessions, Goods, Treasure, Church Ornaments, and Writings seised on, and delivered to Guardians, under whose Custody and Administration they remained.
- E**
- F** In like manner it was [6] ordained by the King and his Council, that all the Templars in every County in England, Scotland, Ireland, West-Wales, North-Wales, and Earldom of Chester, but more particularly those in England, should be attached by their Bodies on Wednesday next, after the Feast of Epiphany, or 6th of January, and that all their Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattels, as well Ecclesiastick as Temporal, with their Charters, Writings, and all Muniments, should be seised into the King's Hands; That the Goods and Chattels should be inventoried and priséd, and Indentures made of them in the presence of the Guardian, or Preceptor of

[1] Mat. Paris, f. 67. n. 10, 20, 30, 40. A. D. 1118. A short History and Suppression of the Templars.

[2] Ibid.

[3] Ib. f. 615. n. 50. A. D. 1244.

[4] Heylin's Cosmog. lib. 3. fol. 98. a.

[5] Mezeray's Hist. f. 333.

[6] Rot. Claus. 1 Ed. II. M. 12. Dors. De captione Templariorum, &c. A. D. 1307.



of every place, and in the presence of Two Lawful Men, where-  
of *one* to remain with the *Guardian*, and the *other* with the *Sheriff*, the Live Stock to be kept upon the Premises, and the *Lands*  
to be Plowed and Sown to the best Profit and Advantage; That  
the *Bodies* of the *Templers* should be kept safe in convenient Places,  
other then their own, but not to be put in *vile* and *base* Prisons,  
while the *King* should order otherwise, and that every one ac-  
cording to his Condition, should receive a Competent Mainte-  
nance from these Goods. There is also contained in this *Record*  
the manner how this Ordinance was put in Execution: The *Writ*  
wherein the Instructions for the *Execution* of it were included,  
was Dated *December* the 20th, in the First of *Edward II.*

A. D. 1307.

[7] *Puteanus*  
*de la condem-*  
*nation des*  
*Templars*, p.  
8, 9.

The *King* of [7] *France*, after he had secured the *Templars*,  
desirous to proceed in the Prosecution of them, consulted the  
*Faculty of Divinity* in *Paris*, who answered him by Decree;  
That the *Authority* of a *Secular Judge* could not extend it self to  
proceed against any one for *Heresie*, unless he was required by  
the Church, or unless in case of necessity, where there was dan-  
ger, he might secure Hereticks with intention to deliver them to  
the Church; Those that were in the Exercise of War for the  
*Defence* of the *Faith*, having made a Vow of *Religion* approved  
by the Church, were holden for *Religious*, and exempt from the  
*Lay-Judge*; and as to their Goods, they ought to be preserved  
to be employed for the end they were first given to the *Tem-*  
*plars*.

[8] *Ib.* p. 9.

The *Pope* finding [8] the most wicked Procedure of the *King*,  
pretending they were *Ecclesiasticks*, Remonstrated to him by his  
*Bull* the great Obedience of his Predecessors to the Holy See, who  
never attempted to Judge *Ecclesiasticks*; That the *Templars* were  
immediate Subjects of the Church; That to the prejudice of his  
former *Bulls*, he caused Execution to be done as well upon their  
Persons, as Goods, for which he demanded Reason, sending to  
him Two *Cardinals*, to cause him to put things in such a State,  
that might satisfy him; Requesting him to Command, That the  
*Accused*, and their Goods, might be put under the Power of them  
Two.

[9] *Ib.* & p.  
10, 11.

In pursuance of his [9] *Bull*, full of Discontent, the *Pope*  
suspended the Power of the *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, *Prelates*, and  
*Inquisitors* in *France*, and removed the whole *Affair* before his  
own Person, which made the Pursuit of the *King* void, and of  
none effect; Which the *King* resented by a Remonstrance which  
he made on his part; A Courageous Remonstrance, (saith the  
Author) and full of Resolution, (*Remonstrance courageuse & plein*  
*de Resolution*) for he complained first, The *Pope* was cold to se-  
cond this just Pursuit, it being without difficulty; That God  
hated nothing more then those that were *Lukewarm*, this was to  
give Consent to the Crimes of the *Accused*, and give them Assu-  
rance they need not confess their Faults; That the *Pope* was sub-  
ject to the *Laws* of his Predecessors, and as some have said, that  
he might be Censured in a Case of Faith; That the suspension of  
the Power of the *Inquisitors* made by the *Pope*, was much preju-  
dicial



dicial to this Affair, giving *hope* to the *Templars* they might find favour before him, or that the *Business* would never be ended; That what he did was as a *Catholick King*, not as an *Accuser*, not as a *Threatner*, or *Partial Promoter*, but as the *Minister of God*, a *Champion* of the *Catholick Faith*, a *Zelot* for the *Divine Law*, and for the *Defence* of the *Church*, according to the *Traditions* of the *Holy Fathers*, of which he was bound to give an Account to God.

A

The King by all ways shewing to the whole World, that he went freely on in this Affair, and by justifying himself, he had done nothing without just Occasion, satisfied the *Cardinals*, and caused to be conducted to *Poicters*, where the *Pope* then was, some of the *principal Templars*, that he might know from their own Mouths the *Justice* of his Procedure.

[1] *Ib.* p. 11.

B

The *Pope* [2] interrogated these *Templars*, and 72 of them confessed, that at their *Reception* into the Order, they denied *Jesus Christ*, and many other *Crimes*, which were so horrible that he would not insert them in his *Bull*; [3] yet their *Depositions* were taken in Writing before the *Bishop of Preneste*, the Two *Legates* sent into *France*, and Three other *Cardinals*.

[2] *Ibm.*[3] *Ibm.*

C

These *Confessions* [2] without constraint, and of other most strange things, and the freedom the King of *France* used, changed the *Resolution* of the *Pope*, and he saw well he had failed in the suspension of the Power of the *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, and *Inquisitors* of *France*, (*& il vid bien quil avoit failli en suspendant le pouvoir, &c.*) for by his *Bull* he took off the *Suspension*, and permitted the *Bishops* with all diligence to proceed within their *Dio-ceses* against the *Templars*.

[2] *Ibm.* & p. 12.

D

In the mean time the [3] *Legates* advised the *Pope*, the King had put the *Templars* under their Power, and judging they could not safely be sent out of the Kingdom without a great Guard, he ordered they should be kept within the Realm by his own People, always under the Name of the *Pope* and himself.

[3] *Ibm.*

E

The King was very jealous of his Rights and Authority, yet shewed no Discontent; however wrote to the *Pope*, That as he had in no wise done injury to the Church Liberty, so he intended not by the *frankness* he had used in delivering what he did to the *Cardinals*, to do Violence to his own Rights; and for the *Templars* Goods, those he had deputed to keep them were his faithful Subjects, and such as had the Charge of his Demain.

[4] *Ibm.* p. 13, 14.

F

This Letter [5] drew from the *Pope* a *Bull*, by which he declared, That what he had done, and should do in this Affair by his Agents, as well in respect of the *Persons* of the *Templars*, as their *Goods*, should be made no advantage to him, nor prejudice to the King, or *Prelates*, *Dukes*, *Earls*, *Barons*, or others of the *French Nation*, as to their *Homages*, *Fees*, and other Rights, they could pretend to, upon the *Goods* of the *Templars*, both Moveable and Immoveable, since their being secured.

[5] *Ib.* p. 14.

While



[6] *Ibm.* c.  
p. 15.

While these things were in agitation, fearing lest there might be alteration in his Proofs, there being as yet no *Process* made [6] the *King* by Deliberation of his Council, with the *Advice* of the *Prelates*, *Princes*, and *Barons*, of his Realm, issued a *Commission* as well to *Frier William* of *Paris* of the Order of Preachers, and the *Pope's* Inquisitor in *France*, as to some *Gentlemen* upon the place where the Accused were Prisoners, to assist on his part in Interrogating the *Templars*, in which *Commission* were inserted their chief Names; That when they first *entred* into the Order, they *denied* *Jesus Christ* three times, and *spit* upon the face of the *Crucifix* so often, that *those* that were received *kissed* those which received them on the *Breech*, the *Navel*, and *Mouth*, and then *obliged* themselves, and *made* a Vow to *expose* themselves one to another for the *Exercise* of the *Execrable Sin* of *Sodomy*.

A

[7] *Ibm.* p.  
15, 16.

The [7] *Inquisitor* and *Gentlemen* lost no time in the *Execution* of these *Commissions*, but laboured without intermission to perform what the *King* had enjoined them, so as the *Inquisitor* on several days *Heard* and *Examined* 140 *Templars*, of the *Temple* at *Paris*, who all *agreed*, That at their *Reception* into the Order, they were *made to deny* *Jesus Christ*, and *spit* three times upon a *Crucifix* that was presented to them; *Secondly*, They all *deposed*, That he who was *received*, *kissed* the *Receiver* in the *Mouth*, *Navel*, and *Breech*; *Thirdly*, That they had straight *Prohibitions* against the *Carnal Knowledge* of *Women*, but if *pushed* with *Carnal Appetite*, the *Brethren* without *Fear* or *Conscience* might *use* one another; *Fourthly*, Some of them [8] *confessed* they had *Adored* a *Wooden Head* gilt, with a great *Beard*, which was only brought forth at general Chapters.

B

C

[8] *Ib.* p. 16.

[9] *Ibm.*

[1] *Ib.* p. 17.

The *Grand Master*, [9] *James de Molay* or *Mauleu*, and *Hugh de Peraldo*, being *Examined* amongst the rest, *confessed* the same things, and there was but [1] *Three* of the whole number, which *affirmed* they had *never* seen any ill in the Order.

D

[2] *Ib.* 27, 28.

The [2] *Pope* not having any great *Confidence* in the *French* Inquisitors, deputed *Three Cardinals*, to *Examine* the Prisoners themselves at *Crinon* in *Tourain*, that he might know whether their *Informations* were true; From whose Report, the *Pope* perceiving the Order to be more and more corrupt, thought it necessary his *Inquisition* should be general, and therefore dispatch't his *Bulls* or *Commissions* to all the *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, and *Officers*, in *France*, *England*, *Wales*, *Scotland*, *Ireland*, *Almain*, *Bohemia*, *Poland*, the *Kingdoms* of *Arragon*, *Majorca*, *Navarre*, and the *Lands* adjoining, the *Provinces* of *Arles*, *Aix*, *Ambrun*, *Vienne*, *Bezançon* and *Tarentais*, *Cyprus*, and all *Italy*, *Sicily*, *Hungary*, *Achaia*, *Sardinia*, and *Corfica*.

E

[3] *Ib.* p. 29,  
30, 31.  
*Append.* n 75.

To these *Bulls* or *Commissions* the *Articles* of [3] *Inquiry*, directed and prescribed by the *Pope*, were annexed, which were these:

F



1. Whether, when first they were admitted into the Order, they abjured **Christ**, the **Virgin Mary**, or the **Saints**, or were admonished to do it, or they themselves had incited others to abjure?

2. Whether they had denied **Christ**, or **Crucified Jesus**, to be true **God**, or that he suffered for the **Redemption of Mankind**?

3. Whether they affirmed him a false Prophet, and that he suffered for his own Crimes?

4. Whether they believed the Master of the Order, not being in Holy Orders, could by the Sacrament of Penance forgive Sins, and whether he had done it?

5. Whether they thought they had any thing in their Statutes, to the Disgrace of the Orthodox Roman Church, or that favoured Crimes and Errors?

6. Whether, when they entred into the Order, they were taught, that they might luxuriously use one another, and commit no Wickedness, and whether they taught the Novices this?

7. Whether they sware to advance their Order against Right, and what was Decent, and induced others to swear accordingly?

8. Whether he that admitted them into the Order, told them they could have no Salvation in Jesus Christ?

9. Whether they spit upon the Cross, and the Image of Christ, or stamp't upon it, or on the Holy day of Friday, or any other, pissed upon it?

10. Whether they worshipped a Cat, or Skull, or any fictitious and false Image or Idol, with Divine Worship, in their great Meetings, or other Place of the Brethren; and whether they hoped for Riches, and plentiful Fruits of the Earth, and Trees from them?

11. Whether they touched the Idol with the Girdle they girt about their Shirts and Flesh?

12. Whether they libidinously and intemperately kissed the young Novices in any indecent part?

13. Whether, when they said Mass, they omitted the Holy Mysteries, and Words of Consecration?

14. Whether they esteemed it Wicked and Nefarious, to do these things?

The King having been at Poitiers, [4] conferred with the Pope, and they had agreed upon these Heads; That the Templars should be kept by the King, at the Request of the Pope and Bishops, and in their Name; That the Bishops might Judge the

[4] Pateamus, ut supra, p. 33.



*Templars* within their *Diocese*, except those who were reserved to the *Pope*; That in case of *Abolition* of the *Order*, the *Goods* should be employed for the *Service* of the *Holy Land*; That they should give to one another *Covenants*, that the *Money* arising from those *Goods* of the *Templars*, should not be diverted to any other use.

[5] *Ibm.* p. 34.  
35.

The *Bishops* and other *Prelates* [5] in pursuance of the *Bulls*, proceeded against the *Templars* within their *Dioceses*, and did what they could to find out the *Truth* of the *Accusations*; but for that in *France* the *Examination* had been made before by *Inquisitors* with the *King's* Authority, assisted by *Gentlemen* named by himself, with which the *Pope* was not satisfied, and further, because the *Order* was not only settled in *France*, but spread all over the *Earth*, he thought it most necessary to name *Commissioners* himself to proceed a-new in his Name and by his *Order* against the *Templars*, who were the *Arch-Bishop* of *Narbon*, the *Bishop* of *Bayeux*, *Mande*, and *Limoges*, *Matthew* of *Naples* *Arch-Deacon* of *Rouen*, *John de Mantua* the *Pope's* *Notary*, *Arch-Deacon* of *Trente*, *John de Montlaur* *Arch-Deacon* of the *Church* of *Maguelon*, and *William Agarris* *Provost* of the *Church* of *Aix*, as appears by the *Commission* it self Dated at *Poitiers* the second of the *Ides*, or *Twelfth* of *August*, in the third Year of his *Pontificate*, *A. E.* 1309.

[6] *Ibm.* p.  
113. to p. 123.  
in the *Ex-*  
*tracts*, &c  
*A. D.* 1309.

[7] *Ibm.* 36.

The same [7] Month the *Commissioners* began to act, and sent out their *Citations* for the whole *Order* to appear before them at *Paris* in the *Bishops* Hall.

[8] *Ibm.* p.  
38, 39.

On the 22d of *November*, they caused the *Grand Master* *James de Molay*, and *Hugh de Peraldo*, to come before them; but I find nothing worth noting that passed between them. One of the *Superiours* of the *Order*, [8] *Ponzard de Gyziac*, told the *Commissioners*, That the *Templars* in many *Places* had been grievously *Racked*; That all which they had confessed was for fear of *Death*, and that some of them died in their *Torments*; yet nevertheless he was resolved to defend his *Order*; and desired *Renand* of *Orleans*, and *Peter* of *Boulogne*, *Friers* of the *Order*, might be joined with him for *Advice*.

[9] *Ibm.* p.  
46, 47.

These *Commissioners* [9] remained at *Paris*, from the Month of *August*, 1309. to the Month of *May* in the Year 1311. in which time they examined 231 *Witnesses*, as well *Templars* as others; and they almost all confessed the *Crimes* contained in the *Articles* sent by the *Pope*.

[1] *Ib* p. 47.

During [1] this time, there was a *Council* of the *Province* of *Sens*, held at *Paris* against the *Templars*, where the *Arch-Bishop* of *Sens* presided. Those that undertook the *Defence* of the *Templars*, told the *Pope's* *Commissioners*, they had appealed to the *Pope* from the *Council* of *Sens*, and other *Councils*, which were holden for *Matters* concerning them, and requested them to take notice of it; who refused to do it, because both the *Commissioners* and *Councils* had the *Pope's* Power.

This



This [2] Provincial Council, by a long Process, Sentenced many Templars, some whereof were only Absolved; others did Penance, and were delivered; others were Condemned to end their Lives between Four Walls, and 59, as such as had relapsed, were Degraded by the Bishop of Paris, and delivered over to the Secular Power, and by that condemned to be Burnt, which Judgment was executed accordingly; who declared themselves Innocent at their Death, and that what had been imposed upon them was false, to the Astonishment of the People.

[2] *Ibm.* p. 48.

There were [3] 74 Templars named in the Instrument, who offered to defend the Order: They and their Procurators in the [4] Instrumente and Articles of Defence, do say, That the Articles sent by the Pope were detestable, horrid, and wicked Lyes, unreasonable and impossible; That the Religion of the Temple was pure and free from such Sins and Vices; That the Articles were made and forged by false Brethren, and Enemies to the Order; and that the King of France first, and then the Pope, had been deluded and imposed upon by these Men: That the Brethren of the Temple, that had confessed and told so many Lyes, did it for fear of Death and Torments, or were suborned or taught what they should say, so as they might agree, though brought from several Parts: That the Apostates and Fugitives from the Order, and such as had been cast out of it for their Wickedness, were sought up for Witnesses and Informers: They also protest and declare it to be notorious, That what the Brethren of the Temple had said, or should say while in Prison, ought not to prejudice the Order; and that they were corrupted and compelled by Promises, Money, or fear of Torments and Contumelies they had seen others suffer; whereas the false Brethren had great Promises made them, and lived splendidly. To prove these things, they desire they might be in their former Liberty, and might appear in the General Council; and that those that could not come, might appoint their Proctors. These and many things more are contained in their Reasons, Arguments, and Articles of Defence, which were delivered in Writing and due Form of Law, to the Pope's Commissioners, as may be seen in the Instruments themselves before cited in the Margin.

[3] *Ibm.* p. 152, &c.  
[4] *Ibm.* & p. 157, &c.

The Pope by his [5] Bull dated at Poitiers on the 2d of the Ides or 12th of August, in the 3d of his Pontificate, A. D. 1308. had Summoned a General Council to meet at Vienne in Dauphin, on the Calends or first of October, two Years after the same Calends then next coming; and from that time by a second Bull, [6] Dated at Avenion on the 12th of the Calends of December, or 22d of November, in the 6th of his Pontificate, A. D. 1310. he Prorogued the Meeting of the same Council to the Calends of October then next coming, A. D. 1311.

[5] *Speim. Concil.* vol. 2. f. 458. *Labbei Concil.* Tom. 11. Part. 2. col. 1539. A. D. 1308.  
[6] *Labbei.* ib. col. 1554.

A. D. 1311.

On the 11th of the Calends of April, or the 22d of March next following, on Thursday in the Week before Easter, the Pope called a private Consistory of Cardinals and Prelates, wherein he made void and utterly annulled the Order of Templars, and on the 3d of April next coming, A. D. 1312. the second Session of this Council

*Ibm. Labbei.* col. 1569.

began,



[7] *Ibm.* col.  
1558.

[8] *Ret. Claus.*  
7 *Ed. II. M. 11.*  
*Dors.*

[9] *Labbe, ib.*  
D. E.

[1] *Claus. 3.*  
*Ed. II. M. 21.*  
*Dors.*

[2] *Ret. Pat.*  
4 *Ed. II. Part*  
1. M. 10.

[3] *Col. 1730.*  
n. 10, 20, 30.

began, in which by *Approbation* of the Council, the Pope published the *Cassation* as above, Philip King of France being present, with his Brother Charles of Valois, and his three Sons. The Bull by which this whole Order was dissolved, hath this Title, [7] *Sententia de extinctiōe Templariorum a Clemente Papa V. lata in Concilio Viennensi*: The Sentence of Extinction of the *Templars*, made by Pope Clement V. in the Council of *Vienne*, Dated there on the 6th of the Nones, or 2d of May, 1312. an *Exemplification* whereof is to be found in the [8] *Tower of London*, in which 'tis said the Pope dissolved the Order (*non sine Cordis amaritudine & dolore*) not without Grief and Bitterness of Heart; for their unheard-of Wickedness and Obscenity, which, for the Filthiness of it, could not be inserted in the Bull. Yet it was not done by definitive Sentence, which could not of right be given upon the Inquisition and Process had against them, but by way of Provision, or Apostolick Ordinance: [9] (*Non per modum definitivæ Sententiæ, cum eam super hoc secundum Inquisitiones, & Processus super his habitos, non possemus ferre de jure, sed per viam Provisionis seu Ordinationis Apostolicæ*) by irrefragable Sanction to endure for ever; by Apostolick Authority reserving all the Goods (which in the Civilians and Canonists Sense, are both Moveable and Immoveable) to the Ordering and Disposal of the Apostolical See; and then annexed them for ever to the Order of the Hospital of St. John of Jerusalem. That the *Templars* were taken and imprisoned in England, and their Goods, as well Moveable as Immoveable, seized in the same manner as in France, hath been shewn before: That also they were here Examined as there, appears by the Instrument, or Commission, and Records here cited. The Pope, by his Bull, or Commission, Dated at Poitiers the 12th of August, 1309. appoints the Patriarch of Jerusalem, the Arch-Bishop of York, the Bishops of Lincoln, Chichester, and Orleans, the Abbats of Lotyngiac in the Diocese of Paris, and St. Germans in the Meadows near Paris, Richard de Vaux, Cannon of Narbon, his Chaplain and Hearer of Causes in his Palace, and Guido de Vich, Rector of Hosbe in the Diocese of London, to be Inquisitors into, and Examiners of the Crimes of the *Templars*, [1] in the 3d of Edw. II. it was agreed (*Accordez est que tous les Templars Dengleterre*) that all the *Templars* of England should be brought to three Places, London and Lincoln in the Province of Canterbury; and those in the Province of York to that City, to be examined by the Inquisitors and Examiners assigned by the Pope, and by the Ordinaries or Bishops of the Diocese where they were; and that the Inquisitors and Ordinaries should repair thither; and the King commanded such as had the keeping of the *Templars* to carry them before them, as often as they should be required; and in the 4th of his Reign granted safe Conduct to the Pope's Inquisitors or Nuncio's, the Abbat of Lotyngiac and Richard (or, as in the Record, Sicard de Vaux) with others, to go to Places aforesaid, and enquire upon the Articles sent by the Pope against the Order of the *Templars*, and all and singular Persons of it.

What was proved against the English *Templars* before these Inquisitors, I have not seen Recorded. [5] Thomas Stubbs, in the Acts of William Greenfield then Arch-Bishop of York, gives this very



A very short Account of it; That at *London* and *York*, before the *Arch-Bishop* and *Bishop* of those Cities, the *Templars* were solemnly examined, by the *Pope's* appointment, upon the *Articles* framed against them, to which they gave competent and agreeable *Answers*; and though they were accused in many things, yet nothing was found for which the *Order* might seem justly to be disannulled. This *Arch-Bishop* was in the *Council*, and much Honoured by the *Pope*; and when the *Order* was dissolved (*Pietate motus*) moved with Piety about the Condition of the *Templars* in his *Diocese*, distributed them into *Monasteries*, and commanded they should be provided for during Life.

B *Walsingham* in his *History* likewise [4] makes a short Report of the whole Story, and tells us, That *Philip King* of *France* thought to make one of his *Sons* King of *Jerusalem*, and to obtain for him all the *Rents* and *Revenues* of the *Templars*; and upon this occasion caused many of them, and the *Great Master* of the *Order*, to be burnt in his Kingdom, and procured the whole *Order* to be made null in the *Council* of *Vienne*: But he missed of his Purpose, and the *Pope*, not without a great Sum of Money (*non sine magnæ pecuniæ interuentu*) gave them to the *Hospitalers*. About this time there had been many heinous Crimes sworn against the *Templars*, in the *Provincial Council* of *London*, called at the Command of the *Pope*, the same that were sworn against those in *France*. They confessed the Report, but not the *Fact*, unless one or two *Ribalds* (that is, most wicked and profligate Men) in every State (to wit, of *Priest-Templars*, *Knight-Templars*, *Common Brethren*, and *Servant-Templars*; ) *Nisi unus vel duo Ribaldi in omni statu*. Yet at last they all confessed they could not purge themselves from the things charged on them; so that every one of them were thrust into *Monasteries*, there to do perpetual Penance, where they in all things behaved themselves well. This Relation of *Walsingham* is taken out of *Adam Murymonth* [5] who then lived, and his very Words transcribed by him.

E In the Sentence of Extinction of the *Templars*, and Donation of their *Lands* and *Goods* to the *Hospitalers*, all Possessors and unlawful Detainers of them, of what State, Condition, Excellency and Dignity soever they were, whether *Bishops*, *Emperors*, or *Kings*, were Excommunicated, unless within one Month after they should be required by the *Master* and *Brethren* of the *Hospital* of *St. John's* of *Jerusalem*, or their *Procurators*, they parted with, and fully and freely restored them to that *Order*; and also all that were Aiding, Advising and Assisting in the Detaining of them; and likewise all Chapters, Collegiate and Conventual Churches, Cities, Castles, Towns, and other Places that detained them, and delivered them not when required, as aforesaid, were put under *Interdict*; from which *Excommunication* and *Interdict*, they were not to be absolved, until they had made full and due Satisfaction. And besides these Punishments, all Persons and Places that detained the Goods and Estates aforesaid, and delivered them not, that held Fees of the *Roman*, or any other Churches, were decreed (*ipso facto*) in very Deed to be deprived of them.

[4] Fol. 99.  
n. 10, 20, 30.  
40.

[5] In 1310. &  
1311.



[6] *Ibm. A D.*

In the end of this Council, says the last cited [6] Historian, the Pope sent two Cardinals into England, to receive the Lands, Goods, and Possessions of the Templars, for the Use of the Hospitalers. The Earls and Noblemen, whose Progenitors had given them to the Templars (the Order being dissolved) possessed themselves of, and refused to restore them, so as the Nuncio's returned without doing the Business they came for. The Pope's [7] Letter, or Bull, to the King, That he should give his best Assistance in promoting of the Delivery of the Templars Goods to the Master and Brethren of the Hospital, or their Procurators; and further, That he should expressly Command all his Earls, Barons, Great Men, Corporations, and Bodies Politick, Seneschals, Bailiffs, and other Officers, which were by him deputed to keep those Goods, to deliver them when required, was Dated the 26th of the same Month of May, in which he passed the Sentence of Extinction. This in all probability was the Bull, or Letter, by which the two Cardinals, as Procurators, or Attorneys, came to demand the delivery of the Lands of the Templars for the Hospitalers.

[7] *Append. n. 76.*[8] *Rot. Claus. 7 Ed. II. M. 12. Dors.*

On the 25th of November, 1313. by virtue of a long tedious [8] Instrument for the restitution of the Possessions, Goods, and Chattels to the Hospitalers, which had belonged to the Templars in England, in which the Pope's Proceedings against them were recited, Albert of Black-Castle (*de Castro nigro*) Great Commander of the Hospital of St. John's of Jerusalem, and Deputy of the Great Master, and Leonard de Tibertis, Prior of the Hospital of St. John's of Venice, and Procurator General of the Order: Their Procurators petitioned and required, That whereas the Pope had given, by Consent of the General Council, all the Houses, Churches, Chapels, Oratories, Cities, Castles, Towns, Lands, Granges, Places, Possessions, Jurisdictions, Rents, and Rights, and all Goods, Moveable and Immoveable, with all their Rights, Members, and Appurtenances, and annexed, united, incorporated, and applied them to the Greatness and Extent of Papal Power (*de plenitudine Apostolicæ potestatis*) to the said Hospital, &c. The King hearing this Supplication, made Protestation for the Preservation of his Right, and Rights of his Subjects, notwithstanding such Restitution and Rendering; and that if he made such Restitution, it was for fear of the Danger which he foresaw might come upon him and his Kingdom, if he did it not, and which for the shortness of Time and other Causes could not be avoided: And further protested, That at a fit time he and his Subjects would demand the Goods, as if they never had been restored.

Three Days after, on the 28th of November, the King caused to be delivered all the Things above mentioned to the two Procurators, Albert and Leonard, according to the Pope's Bull directed to him, and to avoid the many Dangers and Damages that might otherwise happen to him, his Dominions, and Subjects, saving the Right of him and his Subjects, according to the Effect of his Protestation. The King's Letter to this purpose was directed to the Guardians [1] of the Lands and Tenements of the Templars in London, and Suburbs; and the like Letters were sent [2] to Fifty

[1] *Ibm.*  
[2] *Ibm.*



six other Guardians of their Lands and Possessions in all Counties, and several particular Places in *England*, and to *Audomar* Earl of *Pembroke*, to deliver and surrender the new Temple, with all its Lands, Tenements, and Appurtenances in *London*, the Suburbs, and *Middlesex*. In like [3] manner he wrote to the Bishop of *Lincoln*, several Noblemen, and all the Sheriffs of *England*.

[3] *Ibm.*

A And then after these Letters and Instrument, there is entred upon Record a long *impertinent* [4] Acquittance reciting the Proceedings, as before, in their Request against the Templars, from these Procurators, by which they acknowledge themselves to be well contented and paid (*bene contenti & pacati*) by the King, and all others in the Restitution, &c. Dated in *London* on the Nones or 5th of *December*, A. D. 1313.

[4] *Ibm.*

B The Pope by a long Bull dated on the 5th of the Kalends of *November*, or 28th of *October*, in the 4th of his Pontificate, commanded *Robert Winchelsey*, Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, A. D. 1309, to deliver an Abstract of it to the King, and to Expound it to him, which was thus Directed; [5] *Excellentissimo Principi & Domino suo, vobis Domino Edwardo Dei gratia Regi Angliæ illustri Domino Hiberniæ, & Duci Aquitaniæ, insinamus, & Exponimus nos Robertus permissione Divina Cantuariensis Archiepiscopus totius Angliæ primas, ex injuncto nobis mandato Apostolico quæ inferius describuntur.* To the most Excellent Prince, and his Lord, you Edward, by the Grace of God, illustrious King of *England*, Lord of *Ireland*, and Duke of *Aquitain*, we Robert by Divine permission Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, and Primate of all *England*, by the Pope's Command, do insinuate, and declare to you, the things underwritten; Which were these Grievances.

[5] *Registrum Winchelsey, f. 6. a. in Doctoris Communis.*

D 1. 'That his Officers, altho they were bound fervently to assist the Cardinals of the *Roman Church*, whom the Wisdom of God had taken into part of the *Apostolick* Care thereof, and to whom the fulness of Reverence was due from all Sons of the Church, (*a cunctis Ecclesiæ filiis debetur Reverentiæ plenitudo*) yet they presumed to give them great trouble, and to do unto them and their Agents, grievous Injuries, especially unto *Neapoleon* of *St. Adrian*, and *Francis* of *St. Mary in Cosmedin*, Deacon Cardinals, notwithstanding they had done such things as promoted the King's Honour, and hindred the contrary from being done.

E

F 2. 'There was another Cause of profound Trouble arose in the Judgment of the Pope himself, (*præterea sensibus ipsius Pontificis alia profundæ Turbationis causa consurgit, &c.*) That whereas sometimes imitating the Steps of his Predecessors, he had provided the Ecclesiastick Dignities, and Benefices of his Kingdom, and other Lands, with sufficient and worthy Persons, and they having deputed certain Persons their Agents, the King's Officers glorying in Licentious Wickedness, altho they had no just Power or Jurisdiction given them in such Matters, either from God or Man, yet they rashly presumed to inhibit their Agents to act for them, or form any Processes, or cause them to be publish-



published, whereby the Hinderers of such Proceedings damnably incurred the Sentence of Excommunication.

3. 'Also adding worse things to the former, not fearing any Citations concerning Matters that belonged to Ecclesiastick Jurisdiction, granted by the Apostolick See, tho against Ecclesiastick Persons, they prohibit all such Citations to be executed, and also that no Man go to the Apostolick See by virtue of such Citations, nor make Instruments upon them, or obey them under most grievous Punishment in Person and Goods, against the Canon, by which they do *ipso facto*, damnably incur Excommunication.

A

4. 'Also, for that the Pope cannot sufficiently admire, and feels the cruel Prickings in his Mind, (*Item ex eo summus Pontifex non sufficit admirari, diras sentit in animo Punctiones, &c.*) because the Nuncio's of the Holy See, when sent into your Kingdom about Business, they dare not publish them, before they are shown to your self, and if they do, they are chased out of the Kingdom by Terrors and Frights, and sometimes seized by your Officers as Vile and Reprobate Persons, not attending what great Detraction of Honour and Reverence from the Holy See is made thereby, in Contempt and Disgrace of the same, as by the detestable boldness of the said Officers concerning Mr. William Piat, a Messenger of the Holy See, it doth most evidently appear, who, because as he ought not, would not forbear gathering the Profits of Ecclesiastical Benefices, reserved in your Kingdom by the Pope himself, according to the prohibition of your Officers in Reproach of the Holy See, and the Pope, was by your Sheriff of Yorkeshire, not attending that the Supereminent Authority of the Holy See, is Honoured, or Despised in its Ministers, committed to Prison, and there detained until he redeemed himself by paying 10 l. Sterling.

B

C

D

5. 'Also your Officers refuse to cause to be taken such as are Excommunicated by Authority of the said See, at the Request of the said Nuncio's, or Judges sent from the Apostolick See.

6. 'Also your Officers and Ministers do hinder the Delegates of the Apostolick See, us, and other Ordinaries, (*nos & alii ordinarii*) and all Ecclesiastick Persons, whatever, to judge of Causes meerly belonging to Ecclesiastick Jurisdiction, and strictly forbid us and them, tho unjustly, That we nor they do any ways meddle with the Judgment of them, (*& minus juste nobis & eis, ne de cognitione hujusmodi intromittamus vel intromittant aliquo qualiter*) and if we or they do contrary to this Prohibition, which ought not to be obeyed, the same Ministers and Officers take unduely our, and their Goods, manifestly thereby hindring Ecclesiastick Jurisdiction, which with Divine Reverence, and as an help to their Salvation, they ought with great Care to Defend; *Quam debent pro reverentia Divina, & eorum salutis argumento intentis studiis defensare.*

E

F

7. 'Also



7. 'Also we and the Ordinaries aforesaid dare not take, or keep in Custody any Ecclesiastick Person, nor do Justice upon him, what great Fault soever he hath committed, being affrighted by the Threats of your Ministers.

A 8. 'Also your Officers and Ministers not taking notice that  
 'Laics have no Power given unto them over Clercs, Religious, Ecclesiastick Persons, tho they be in Priests Orders, yea Bishops, without Licence from the Pope, or their Superiors, in Derogation of your Honour, do amercy them in Pecuniary Mulcts, (*amerciant in pena pecuniaria*) and otherwise unjustly condemn them at their pleasure, and force them to answer before themselves, seising their Persons and Goods against their Wills, in Criminal, Personal, and other Actions, altho they alledge the  
 B 'Priviledge of Clerks, to avoid their Jurisdiction, (*ipsosque per captionem personalem, & bonorum suorum & aliis tam super criminalibus quam personalibus, & aliis actionibus quibuscunque renitentes & invitos, & etiam eorum forum declinantes, & Clericale privilegium allegantes, coram se respondere compellunt.*)

C 9. 'Also your Officers and Ministers do condemn Clercs in Priests Orders, as Thieves and Murderers, and cause them to be put to Death, offending thereby the Supreme King, who hath forbidden his Anointed to be touched by any Secular Power, (*in supremi Regis offensam, qui Christos suos per quamcunque secularem potestatem tangi prohibuit*) and in these Cases Twelve Laymen are admitted as Witnesses, (*i. e.* Jury-men) against the Clerk, who if they say they believe they committed the Fault, for which they are accused, upon this saying of the Witnesses they are condemned to Death, for which things they undoubtedly incur the Sentence of Excommunication, *ipso facto*.  
 D

10. 'Also your Officers and Ministers take the Goods, Rents, and Profits of Prelates and Clerks, at their pleasure, not offering or giving them satisfaction.

E 11. 'Also as well your Officers and Ministers, as the Noblemen, pretending that Churches and all Monasteries were founded by them, do go and come into Religious Houses, and the Houses of other Ecclesiastics, at their pleasure, and do so oppress them, and make so great Exactions upon them, that they scarce have sufficient to support themselves, they sometimes extorting by violence half, sometimes a fourth, or other certain part of their Goods.

F 12. 'Also when the Guard of Bishopricks, Monasteries, Priories, and other Benefices of holy Church belonging to them by vacancy or otherwise, his Officers and Noblemen destroyed and wasted the Houses, Woods, Warrens, Fishponds, Parks, Beasts, Mills, and other Goods belonging to them, so as in long time they could not be repaired, or put into their former Estate; for which such as were Counselling, Aiding, or Assisting in such Destruction, incurred the Wrath of God,



‘and other grievous Pains; from the Commission of which  
‘Wickedness the King ought to restrain his Officers.

[6] Ib. f. 7. a.

After these Grievances [6] the Pope complains, he had often sent and wrote to the King for Redress, but could never receive any Answer from him; therefore lest the Glory of Ecclesiastic Liberty, which was the Gift of Heaven, should be sullied, (*ne Ecclesiastica Libertatis gloria, cœlestis muneris dono concessa, in vestris, regno & terris, in vestre salutis & honoris dispendium maculetur, &c.*) the Pope renewed the same Exhortations with Paternal Affection, intreating, admonishing, and persuading, in him that gives Health to Kings, (*in eo qui Regibus dat salutem*) that he would not suffer these Grievances, Injuries, and Troubles to be done, but that he by his Royal Protection would defend and cherish the Churches, and Persons themselves, for the Divine Reverence of the said See and of the Pope (*pro divina dictæ sedis, & Domini nostri summi Pontificis reverentia.*)

A

B

And then he demands the Annual Sum of Rent of 1000 Marks per Annum, which he was bound to pay to the Roman Church, and the Arrears of it for about 15 years in his Father's time and his.

[7] Ib. a. & b.

The [7] Pope concluding and closing with Devout Prayers and Humble Supplications to his Royal Highness and Magnificence, seriously to consider how his Progenitors, Kings of England, that duely Honoured God, and his Spouse the Church, enlarged their Government, (*qualiter progenitores vestri, Reges Angliæ, qui Deum & Ecclesiam sponsam suam debite honorabant, principatuum suorum culmina latius diffundebant, &c.*) and how Peace and Quiet prevailed in their times, and how the Kingdom then abounded in Wealth. How also in the times of those Kings, who stopt their Ears to the Admonition of the Church, and by an elated, or proud Obstinacy, despising her Advice, and not regarding her Exhortations, brought upon themselves and Kingdoms great Troubles and Dangers. And therefore to avoid them, presseth him effectually to compel his Officers and Ministers to abstain from acting such Grievances, and to protect and defend the Churches, and Ecclesiastick Persons, and to pay the whole Pension or Rent, as he was obliged.

C

D

E

[8] Append.  
n. 77.

After the delivery of these (*Gravamina*) Grievances, by the Pope's Command, he sent [8] to him a very formal Account of it, and the King's Answer; That he had frequently Treated about the Execution of his Command, with some of his Suffragan Brethren that had received the like, and that afterwards on the 3d of the Kalends of March, or 27th of February, in the presence of the Patriarch of Jerusalem, his Brother Suffragans, the Bishops of London, Winton, Sarum, Lincoln, Norwich, Chichester, Worcester, Excester, Bath and Wells, and St. Davids, and of some Earls and Barons of the Kingdom, he declared the Contents of his Mandate to the King, and delivered them to him written in Latin and French, with Exhortations and Admonitions; And that because the King said he would deliberate upon them, he

F

came



came to him again, with some of his Brethren, on the Ides or 15th of *March*, to receive his Answer, who not appearing after long waiting, he sent the *Bishop of Worcester*, then Lord Treasurer, to him, and desired he would give an agreeable and convenient *Return* to the *Roman Church*, and to *him*, concerning the things declared and delivered to him; That at length he let him know by the Lord Treasurer, and *John de Longham*, a Frier Preacher and his Confessor, That he could not make Answer then, for that the *Contents* of the Mandate not only touched him, but all the *Earls, Barons, and Great Men* of the Kingdom, with whom he could not then Treat, as was necessary to be done; but hoped he might in a short time: That at last the *King*, with his *Council*, on the 2d of the Kalends of *April*, or 31st of *March*, answered in this Form; That saving the *Right* of his *Crown* in as much as he could, he would in all things, as a Devout Son of the Church, obey him, and the Holy Apostolick See; Adding, That before the notice of these Letters, there had been Discord raised between some Great Men of his Kingdom, which was not yet composed, for which reason he could not fully Deliberate, so as to give a suitable Answer to all things in his Mandate, but so soon as the Differences between the Noblemen were made up, he intended to call a *Council* of his Kingdom, and send such Answers by his own Messengers, before the time prefix't for a General Council, as might be pleasing to God, acceptable to him, and the Apostolick See, advantageous to Holy Church, and to his own and the Kingdom's Profit and Honour.

In the Twelfth of his Reign he prohibited [9] the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, the *Prelates* and *Clergy*, That in their principal Synod to be held at *London*, they should not attempt to do, or ordain any thing against his *Crown* and *Dignity*, or against the State of the Kingdom; but if they had any thing to Prosecute or Determine concerning the State of the Church, themselves, or himself, it should be Transacted in the next *Parlement* he had then summoned to meet at *Lincoln*.

In the [1] Fifteenth year likewise, he commanded the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, and the other *Prelates*, that were to meet in the *Provincial Council* to be held at *London*, That they should not determine, do, or any ways ordain any thing prejudicial to himself, the State of his *Crown*, or his *Kingdom*.

There having been frequent *Prohibitions* directed to the Ecclesiastick Courts, and many *Doubts* raised, about what *Pleas* might be holden in them, the *King* [2] wrote to his *Justices*, That *Pleas* meerly Spiritual, as punishment for Mortal Sin, such as *Fornication, Adultery*, and the like, of which the punishment was sometimes Corporal, sometimes Pecuniary, especially if the Convict was a Freeman.

Also the punishment for the Church-Yard not being well fenced, or the Church not being in good Repair, or Decently Beautified, in which Cases Pecuniary Punishments could only be inflicted.

[9] Append.  
n. 78.

[1] Ib. n. 79.

[2] Ib. n. 80.



Also if the Rector demanded of his Parishioners Oblations, due and accustomed Tithes, or if one Rector sued another for great Tithes.

Also if a Rector demanded a Mortuarie, where it was due.

Also if a Prelate, or Patron of a Church, demanded a Pension due from the Rector.

Also for laying violent hands on a Clerk, or defaming him, were within the Cognisance of an Ecclesiastick Judge, notwithstanding his Prohibition; and these were the Heads of such things, and Pleas, as were then controverted between, and claimed by, both Ecclesiastick and Secular Judges.

### Taxes in this KING's Time.

In Rot. Caput.  
in Custod. Cler.  
pipæ Temp.  
Edw. II.  
Claus. 1. Ed. II.  
M. 12. intus.

IN the Parlement at Northampton, in the First of his Reign, the Earls, Barons, Knights, and all others of the Kingdom, (& omnes alii de Regno) or Government, granted to the King a Twentieth part of their Moveables, except their Armor, War Horses, Jewels, Robes, and Vessels of Gold and Silver, of Knights (Militum & aliorum liberorum hominum) and other Freemen, and of their Wives. The Citizens, Burgeses, and Tenents of the ancient Demeasns of the Crown granted a Fifteenth part of their Moveables, as also did the Clergy.

Claus. 3. Ed. II.  
M. 23. in Cod.

In his Second year, at a Parlement holden at Westminster a Month after Easter, the Laity granted a Twenty fifth of their Moveables.

In Rot. Comp.  
at supra.

In the Seventh year, in his Parlement at Westminster, the Earls, Barons, Knights, Freemen, and the Communities of Counties, gave a Twentieth part of their Goods; and the Citizens, and Burgeses, and Communities of Cities, and Burghs, gave a Fifteenth.

Rot. Pat.  
8 Ed. II. M. 12.  
Dors. Part 2.

In his Eighth year he had a Twentieth part of the Moveables of the Laity, granted by the Communities of Counties of the Kingdom (per Communitates Comitatum Regni) in Parlement.

Rot. Parlem.  
9 Ed. II. n. 2.

In his Ninth year he had granted a Fifteenth of Citizens, Burgeses, and Tenents in ancient Demeasns, for his War with the Scots, in the Parlement held at Lincoln, the Community of the Kingdom, or the Military Men, being summoned to do their Service then.

\* Rot. Claus.  
15 Ed. II.  
M. 16. Dors.

In the Fifteenth year of his Reign the King \* summoned a Parlement to meet at York three weeks after Easter; and after the end of this Parlement, and after the 7th of July next following, he directed his Writs to the Prelates and Clergy to meet at a Provincial



vincial Council at *Lincoln*, which the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury* was immediately to summon to *Treat* of a *Competent Ayd* to be granted to him, toward his Expedition against the *Scots*, who had invaded *England*; in which *Writts*, as it were for a *Direction*, he \* *recites* what the *Earls*, *Barons*, *Noblemen*, and the *Communities* of the *Kingdom* had done in the *Parlement* at *York*, viz. That they had granted him a *Tenth* of the *Goods* of the *Community* of the *Kingdom*, and a *Sixth* part of the *Goods* of *Citizens*, *Burgeses*, and *Tenents* of ancient *Demeasns*, \* *Prelati*, *Comites*, *Barones*, & *proceres*, necnon *Communitates* *dicti* *Regni* apud *Eborum*, ad tractandum super *dictis* *negotiis* & *aliis* nos & *statum* *dicti* *Regni* tangentibus, nuper *Convocati* *decimam* de *Bonis* de *Communitate* *eiusdem* *regni*, & *sextam* de *Civitatibus*, *Burgis*, & *Antiquis* *Dominiciis* nostris nobis liberaliter concesserunt & gratanter.

\* *Rot. Claus.*  
16 *Ed. II.*  
*M. 20. Dors.*

\* *Ibm.*

B

### The Issue of Edward II. by Isabell, Daughter of Philip the Fair King of France.

C ON the Day of *St. Brice*, or 13th of *November*, his Eldest Son *Edward*, who succeeded him by the Name of *Edward* the Third, was born at *Windfor*.

*A. D. 1312.*  
*Ed. II. 12.*  
*Walsingh. Hist.*  
*f. 102. n. 30.*

In the year 1315, his Second Son *John* was born at *Eltham* (from whence his Title) on the *Assumption* of the *Virgin Mary*, in the Eighth of his Father's Reign, he was Created *Earl* of *Cornwall*, and after several Matches propounded for him, died unmarried, about the 20th year of his Age.

*Ibm. Hypodig.*  
*Nentr. f. 502.*  
*n. 30, 40.*

D

*Joan* his Eldest Daughter, Married to *David* King of *Scots*, when both Children, and after being his Wife 28 years, died without Issue.

*Sandford, Genealog. Hist.*  
*&c. f. 155.*

E

*Eleanor* Dutcheß of *Guedres* his Second Daughter, she Married *Reynald* Second *Earl* of *Guedres*, who was Created *Duke* of *Guedres*, by the *Emperor* *Lewis* of *Bavaria*; by her he had Two Sons, *Reynald* and *Edward*, who were both *Dukes* successively after him, and died without Issue.

*Ibm.*

F



A

# CONTINUATION

Of the Compleat

## History of England, &c.

King EDWARD the Third.

The young King managed by the Queen, Mortimer, &c. The Adherents to the Earl of Lancaster petition [1] Append. n. 82. to be restored to their Lands, &c. They were all Friends to, and Assistants in this Revolution.

[2] Stat. at Large, 1 Ed. III. The first thing printed, f. 77. All that came over with the Queen & her Son pardoned, and those that joined them after their arrival.

**T**His Young Man at the Age of Fourteen Years being placed in the Throne of his Father, then living and in Prison, as hath been related in the latter end of the former Reign, was, with all the Affairs of the Nation, *managed by the Queen, with the Advice of Roger Mortimer chiefly, and other Privado's in their Designs, who had been all Favourers and Abettors of the Cause and Quarrel of Thomas Earl of Lancaster; whose Adherents being all Friends to, and Assistants in this Revolution, on the 3d of [1] February, two Days after the Coronation, Petitioned the King and his Council in that Parlement, which had Deposed his Father, then Sitting at Westminster, That being of the Quarrel of the Noble Earl of Lancaster (esteient de la Querele le Noble Coun'e de Lancastre) and therefore wrongfully Imprisoned, Banished, Disberited, might be Restored to their Estates, with the Issues of them, from the time they had been wrongfully diseised. And it was granted by the Assent of the whole Parlement, That all the Lands and Tenements, which had been seized by reason of that Quarrel or Contention, which was affirmed to be good by the whole Parlement (la quele Querele par tor le Parlement est afferme bone) as well in Ireland and Wales, as in England, should be Restored, with their Issues and Arrears of Rent, except those that had been Received to the King's Use.*

On the same Day [2] *all those that came over with the Queen and her Son, and those that joined with them after their arrival, were also pardoned, &c. The long Preamble to that Pardon, Statute, or Grant, is worth notice, as containing the Cober, Preences, and Suggestions of all the Contrivances and Designs against Edward the Second; in these Words:*

*Whereas Hugh Spenser the Father, and Hugh Spenser the Son, late at the Suit of Thomas Thun Earl of Lancaster and Leicester, and Steward of England, by the Common Assent and Award of the Peers and Commons of the Realm, and by the Assent of King Edward, Father to our Sovereign Lord the King that now is, as Traitors and Enemies of the King and his Realm, were Exiled, Disberited, and Banished out of the Realms for ever; and afterwards the same Hugh and Hugh*  
by



by Evil Counsel which the King had taken of them, without the Assent of the Peers and Commons of the Realm, came again into the Realm; and they with others procured the said King to pursue the said Earl of Lancaster, and other Great Men and People of this Realm; in which Pursuit the said Earl of Lancaster, and other Great Men and People of this Realm, were willingly Dead and Disberited, and some Outlawed, Banished, and Disberited, and some Disberited and Imprisoned, and some Ransomed and Disberited; and after such Mischief, the said Hugh and Hugh, Master Robert Baldock, and Edmond late Earl of Arundel, usurped to them the Royal Power, so that the King nothing did or would do, but as the said Hugh and Hugh, Robert, and Edmond Earl of Arundel, did counsel him, were it never so great Wrong: During which Usurpation, by Dureffe and Force against the Will of the Commons, they purchased Lands, as well by Fines levied in the Court of the said King Edward as otherwise. And whereas after the death of the said Earl of Lancaster, and of other Great Men, our Sovereign Lord the King that now is, and Dame Isabel Queen of England his Mother, by the King's Will and Common Counsel of the Realm, went over into France, to Treat a Peace between the Two Realms of England and France, upon certain Debates then moved; the said Hugh and Hugh, Robert, and Edmond Earl of Arundel, continuing their Mischief, encouraged the said King Edward against our Sovereign Lord the King that now is his Son, and the said Queen his Wife; and by the Royal Power which they had to them encroached, as afore is said, procured so much Grievance, by the Assent of the said King Edward, to our Sovereign Lord the King that now is, and the Queen his Mother, then being beyond Sea, that they remained as forsaken of the said King Edward, and as exiled from this Realm of England. Wherefore it was necessary for our Sovereign Lord the King that now is, and the Queen his Mother, being in so great Jeopardy of themselves, in a strange Country, and seeing the Destruction, Damage, Oppressions, and Disberisons, which were notoriously done in the Realm of England, upon Holy Church, Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, and the Communalty, by the said Hugh and Hugh, and Robert Earl of Arundel, by the encroaching of such Royal Power to them, to take as good Counsel therein as they might: And seeing they might not remedy the same unless they came into England with an Army of Men of War, and by the Grace of God with such Puissance, and with the help of Great Men and the Commons of the Realm, they have vanquished and destroyed the said Hugh and Hugh, Robert and Edmond. Wherefore our Sovereign Lord King Edward that now is, at his Parlement holden at Westminster at the time of his Coronation, on the morrow after Candlemas, in the First Year of his Reign, upon certain Petitions and Requests made to him in the said Parlement, upon such Articles above rehearsed, by the Common Counsel of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, and by the Communalty of the Realm, there being by his Commandment, hath Provided, Ordained, and Establisshed, in Form following:

First, That no Great Man nor other, of what Estate, Dignity, or Condition he be, that came with the said King that now is, and with the Queen his Mother, into the Realm of England, nor none other then dwelling in England, that came with the said King that now is, and the Queen, in Aid of them to pursue their said Enemies, in which Pursuit



Pursuit the King his Father was taken, and put in Ward, and yet remaineth in Ward, shall not be Impeached, Molested, nor Grieved in Person, nor in Goods, in the King's Court, nor other Court, for the Pursuit of the said King, taking and with-holding of his Body, nor Pursuit of any other, nor taking of their Persons, Goods, nor Death of any Man, or any other things perpetrate or committed in the said Pursuit, from the Day that the said King and Queen did arrive, till the Day of the Coronation of the same King.

A

What follows in this Statute, is not much to our purpose : Those concerned in the Conspiracy against, and Design upon the King, thought them well covered by this Preamble, and themselves well secured by this First Chapter.

[3] Rot. Claus. 1  
Ed. III. M. 16.  
Dors.

The Scots refuse to treat of a Peace. They break the Truce with England.

[4] Wals. f. 127.  
n. 40.

They make their escape from Stanhop-Park.

[5] Rot. Claus.  
ut supra.

The English and Haynalters quarrel.

[6] Knighten,  
col. 2551. n.  
50.

Wals. ut supra.  
The Haynalters &c leave England.

[7] Ib. m. c.  
2552. n. 40.

[8] Rot. Claus.  
1 Ed. III. M. 3.  
Dors.

[9] Rot. Claus.  
2 Ed. III. M.  
31. Dors.

A Parlement at Northampton.

[1] In A. D.  
1327.  
A shameful Peace made with the Scots.

[2] Rot. Claus.  
Ed. III. M. 15.  
Dors.  
A Parlement at Salisbury.

After the end of this Parlement, there were [3] Commissioners sent to the Borders of Scotland to Treat of Peace; but the Scots refused to Treat with them, and not only so, but brake the Truce which had been made with King Edward II. raised an Army, and invaded England. [4] The Young King and his Mother raised an Army, and with the Stipendiary Strangers marched against them, and had almost inclosed them in Stanhop-Park, in the Bishoprick of Durham; yet in the Night they escaped, and got into their own Country, but threatned to return again: Wherefore, for the Defence of the Kingdom and other Matters, there was a Parlement called, to meet on the morrow of Holy Cross, or 15th of September, at Lincoln. The [5] Writ in which most of this Relation is contained, bears Date at Stanhop, Aug. 7.

B

C

In their March towards the Scots, the Haynalters Domineering over the English, they Quarrelled at York, where many were killed, and the most English; whether for fear of the English, or for what other Reason, the Haynalters and other Foreigners [7] left England not long after, well Rewarded with Gold and Silver by the Queen and Mortimer, and others of their Faction.

D

What was done in this Parlement, I find not. This Year there was another [8] Summoned to meet at York, on the next Sunday after the Purification of the Virgin Mary, to Treat of certain Articles propounded and declared between the Two Nations at Newcastle; but nothing was done at this Parlement, the Bishops and other Great Men not appearing; and therefore, as is expressed in the Writ [9] Dated March 5. next following, he called another Parlement to meet three Weeks after Easter at Northampton. In this Parlement [1] says Murymuth, and Walsingham from him (*facta fuit turpis Pax inter Anglos & Scotos*) there was made a shameful Peace between the English and Scots, by the Direction and Contrivance of the Queen and Roger Mortimer, by which David, Son and Heir to Robert Brus King of Scotland, was to Marry Joan King Edward's Sister, both Children: And he was also to release all his Right and Claim of Superiority, that he and his Progenitors had in the Kingdom of Scotland, and to deliver up all Charters and Instruments concerning the same. Some great Matters having happened after this Parlement that required great Advice, there was a [2] Writ issued, Aug. 28. for another to meet at Salisbury, on the

E

F



the Sunday next after the Quinden of St. Michael. In this Parle-  
ment [3] there were made [3] three Earls, John of Eltham, the  
King's Brother, Earl of Cornwall, Roger Mortimer Earl of the  
Marches of Wales, and the Butler of Ireland Earl of Ormond.  
[4] To this Parlement the Earl of Lancaster, the Lord Wake, and  
other Noblemen, came not, tho' they came armed near to the  
Place. [5] These new Earls and their Adherents raised a great  
A Army for Queen Isabel against Henry Earl of Lancaster, and other  
Great Men, who had not consented to their wicked Deeds, and  
with a great Force of English and Welsh marched to Leicester, and  
there plundered and spoiled the whole Country. The Earl of  
Lancaster was then in the South parts of the Nation with great  
Force, and marching toward Roger Mortimer and his Army, en-  
camped near Bedford, intending to give him Battel, where the  
King's two Unkles [6] Thomas of Brotherton and Edmund Earl  
B of Kent, left him, and submitted themselves to the Queen-Mother  
and Mortimer. Seeing himself thus deserted, he made his Sub-  
mission to the King before the whole Army, and was by the Me-  
diation of Simon Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and other Bishops, re-  
conciled to him, [7] making Oath with others in his Company, and  
giving Security by Recognisances, ' That he nor they should attempt  
' any thing upon the Bodies of the King, the two Queens, nor of  
' any others great or small of their Council, or that were about  
C ' them; nor should do, or procure to be done, any Evil, In-  
jury, or Damage unto them, privately or openly, nor Assent  
' to the doing thereof.

On the 25th of [8] January, the First Day of the Fourth Year  
of his Reign, the King Summoned a Parlement to meet at Winche-  
ster, on the Sunday before St. Gregory, or 13th of March, where  
on [9] the morrow of that Feast, or 12th of that Month, the  
D Earl of Kent was seized, and adjudged to Death. 'Tis not agreed  
amongst the Historians about the Cause of his Death: Most re-  
port it was for his Designing to set his Brother King Edward II. at  
Liberty, being then, as was reported, and by him supposed to  
be living, and Prisoner in Corf-Castle. In the Articles against  
Mortimer (presently to be mentioned) 'tis urged upon him, That  
he was the Author of the Report to the Earl of his Brother's not  
being dead; and that he invented it to trick him out of his  
E Life.

Edmund, Son and Heir to Edmund Earl of Kent, and his Mo-  
ther Margaret Countess of Kent, \* requiring the Record made  
against the said Earl, might, for the Errours therein, be revo-  
ked, set forth in their several Petitions, That his Father and her  
Husband was informed by Roger Mortimer, Sir John Maltravers,  
and other his Accomplices, That King Edward was alive, after he was  
F Murdered, with design to deceive him into a pretended Contri-  
vance with them, to release and deliver him out of Prison, for  
which he lost his Life and Estate in the Parlement at Winchester, as  
Mortimer confessed to the People at his Death, and that he died  
wrongfully. Whereupon Edmund was Restored to the Blood and  
Lands of his Father, and the Countess to her Dower.

[3] Wallf. f.  
129. n. 10.  
Three new  
Earls made in  
this Parle-  
ment.

[4] Ibid.  
[5] Knighton,  
col. 2554. n.  
10, 20, &c.  
They raise an  
Army for the  
Queen against  
the Earl of  
Lancaster.

[6] Ibid. 81.  
40. 50.  
The King's  
two Unkles  
leave the Earl  
of Lancaster.  
Thus desert-  
ed, he makes  
his Submissi-  
on.  
[7] Claus. 3.  
Ed. III. M. 31.  
Daf.

[8] Claus. 4.  
Ed. III. M. 41.  
Earl.  
A. D. 1329.  
A Parlement  
at Winchester.  
[9] Wallf. 129.  
n. 20, 30.  
The Earl of  
Kent adjudged  
to death in  
that Parle-  
ment,  
For intending  
to deliver his  
Brother K. Ed.  
out of Prison.

\* Rot. Parl.  
4 Ed. III. n.  
11, 12.  
His Son re-  
stored to the  
Blood and  
Lands of his  
Father.



[1] *Knights*  
col. 2552 n. 60  
2553 n. 10, 20.  
The Queen-  
Mother and  
Mortimer King  
and Queen.

They suffer  
no body to  
advise K. Edw.  
[2] *Ibm.*

[3] *Clauſ. 4*  
*Ed. III. M. 23.*  
*Deſ.*

A great Coun-  
cil at Notting-  
ham.

[4] *Knights*  
col. 2555. n.  
60. & col.  
2556. n. 10,  
20.

The King  
cauſed Morti-  
mer and his  
Adherents to  
be taken, and  
ſent to the  
Tower of Lon-  
don.

[5] *Clauſ. 4 Ed.*  
*III. M. 19.*  
*Deſ.*

A. D. 1330.  
A Parlemt  
at Weſtmiſter.

[6] *Append.*  
n. 82.

Since the ſetting up of this Young King, [1] *Mortimer* and his *Mother* were *King* and *Queen*; he had only the *Title*, and his *Name* was uſed in carrying on their *Deſigns*: They did all; diſpoſed of the *Treasure* of the *Nation*; diſpoſed of all *Places* and *Offices*; oppreſſed the *People*; and yet ordered the *Matter* ſo, as no Man durſt ſpeak for the *Good* of the *King* or *Kingdom*. *Henry Earl of Lancaſter* had been appointed at his *Coronation* the *King's Chief Guardian* and *Counſellor*, by *Aſſent* of the *Noble* and *Great Men* of the *Kingdom*, for the *better Government* of him and it: But they Two had by their *Great Power* precluded all *Paſſage* to him, ſo as he could not get to ſpeak with, or adviſe him.

In this *Ignorance*, and under this *Power* the *King* remained, until in the 4th of his *Reign*, on the 6th of *September* he [3] *Summoned* a *Great Council* to meet at *Nottingham*, on the *Monday* before the *Feaſt* of *St. Luke*, or *Quinden* of *St. Michael*, where he was better informed, and the *Practices* of his *Mother* and *Mortimer* were detected: [4] And perceiving the *Danger* as well paſt as to come, if Things continued in that ſtate, upon *Friday night*, on the *morrow* of *St. Luke*, or 19th of *October*, the *King* with a ſelect *Company* went to his *Mother's Chamber* in the *Caſtle*, by a way under-ground, and found *Mortimer* in the next *Chamber*, and the *Biſhop* of *Lincoln* with him, and preſently commanded him to be apprehended and ſecured. Next Day he cauſed to be ſeized all his *Adherents* in the *Town*, and ſent them to the *Tower* of *London*. In the entrance into *Mortimer's Chamber*, *Hugh Triplington*, a *Knight* and *Steward* of the *Household*, was ſlain.

This done, the *King* then at *Leiceſter*, on the 23d of *October*, [5] *Summoned* a *Parlement* to meet at *Weſtmiſter*, on *Monday* next after the *Feaſt* of *S. Katherine*, or *Nov. 25*. ſetting forth in the [6] *Writ* of *Summons* to the *Arch-Biſhop*, That ſince his taking upon him the *Government* of the *Kingdom* to that time, the *Buſineſs* that concerned himſelf and the *State* of the *Nation*, had been managed to his *Damage* and *Diſgrace*, and *Impoveriſhing* of his *People*: Wherefore his *Conſcience* wroging him, and not being able longer to endure it, but deſiring with his whole *Heart* to reform the *State* and *Government* of the *Kingdom*, according to *Right* and *Reason*, to the *Honour* of *God*, and *Peace* and *Tranquillity* of *Holy Church*, and the whole *People* of the *Kingdom*. By *Aſſent* of the *Prelates* and *Great Men* aſſiſting him he called this *Parlement*, &c. Apologizing for his having abbreviated the *Day* of *Summons*, That it was out of the *intense Deſire* he had, that the *Buſineſs* concerning the *State* of the *Kingdom*, might be happily ordered and diſpatched. The whole *Writ* being in a *Form* very *unusual*, is to be found in the *Appendix*, n. 82. as noted in the *Margin*.



In this Parlement the following Articles were exhibited against Roger Mortimer, with this Title :

Append. n. 81.

*These [7] are the Treasons, Felonies, and Mischiefs done to Our Lord the King and his People, by Roger Mortimer, and others of his Company.*

[7] Append. n. 83.

1. ' *First*, Whereas in the Parlement holden at *Westminster*, next after the King's Coronation, it was Ordained, That Four Bishops, Four Earls, and Six Barons, should remain with the King to Advise; and that always Four should be with him; One Bishop, One Earl, and Two Barons at least; and that no great Business should be done without their Assent. After which Parlement, the said Roger not having regard to the said Assent, usurped Royal Power and the Government of the Realm, above the State of the King; and put out and placed Officers in the King's House, and elsewhere throughout the Kingdom, at his Pleasure, such as were of his Party; and set *John Wyward* and others about the King to observe his Actions and Words; so as he was encompassed by his Enemies, that he could do nothing as he would, but only as a Man under Guard or Restraint.

Articles against Mortimer in Parlement.

2. ' *Also*, Whereas the King's Father was at *Kenelworth*, by Order and Assent of the Peers of the Land, to stay there for his Ease, and to be served as such a Lord ought to be; the said Roger by his usurped Power, which he exercised over him at his Pleasure, ordered he should be sent to *Berkley-Castle*, where by him and his Confederates he was Traiterously, Feloniously, and falsely Murdered and Killed.

3. ' *Also*, The said Roger, by his usurped Royal Power, forbade by the King's Writ under the Great Seal, That none should come to the Parlement at *Salisbury* with Force and Arms, under pain of forfeiting whatever they could to the King; yet thither he came, with others of his Party, with Force and Arms to the Parlement, contrary to the Prohibition; wherefore many Peers of the Land, as the Earl of *Lancaster*, and others, knowing the manner of his coming, would not be there: And whereas the Prelates were assembled in one House, to consult about the Business of the King and Realm, the said Roger broke the Doors of the House with Armed Men upon the Prelates, and threatened them of Life and Member, if any of them should be so hardy to speak or do any thing contrary to his Pleasure in any Point. And in the same Parlement by the said Power, he caused the King to make him Earl of *March*, and to give him and his Heirs many Lands, in Disherison of the Crown: And afterwards the said Roger and those of his Party, led the King armed upon the Earl of *Lancaster*, and other Peers of the Land, as far as *Winchester*, where they were coming to the Parlement at *Salisbury*, where the Earl, and other Peers, to avoid the Evils that



‘ might have hapned, out of regard to the King, departed and  
 ‘ went toward their own Countries, grieving that they might  
 ‘ not speak with, or advise their Liege Lord as they ought.

4. ‘ Also, The said *Roger* by the said usurped Power, caused  
 ‘ the King to march forcibly against the Earl, and other Peers of  
 ‘ the Land, which were appointed to be with the King to Ad-  
 ‘ vise him; and so prosecuted them with Force, that the said  
 ‘ Earl and some others of his Company that wished Good to the  
 ‘ Kingdom, submitted to the King’s Grace, saving to them Life  
 ‘ and Member, and that they might not be Disherited, nor have  
 ‘ too great a Fine set upon them; yet he caused them to be Fined  
 ‘ so grievously, as half their Lands, if sold right out, would only  
 ‘ pay it; and the others he caused to be driven out of the Nation,  
 ‘ and their Lands to be seized, against the Form of the Great Char-  
 ‘ ter and Law of the Land.

5. ‘ Also, Whereas the said *Roger* knew well the King’s Father  
 ‘ was Dead, and Buried, he by others of his Party in deceivable  
 ‘ manner, informed the Earl of *Kent* that he was alive; where-  
 ‘ fore the Earl being desirous to know whether it was so or not,  
 ‘ used all the good ways he could to discover the Truth; and so  
 ‘ long as the said *Roger*, by his usurped Royal Power, caused  
 ‘ him to be apprehended in the Parlement holden at *Winchester*;  
 ‘ and so pursued him, as in that Parlement he procured his  
 ‘ Death.

‘ ‘ Also, The said *Roger*, by his usurped Royal Power, cau-  
 ‘ sed the King to give to him and his Children, and Confede-  
 ‘ rates, Castles, Towns, Mannors, and Franchises, in *Eng-  
 ‘ land, Ireland, and Wales*, in Decrease of the Revenues of the  
 ‘ Crown.

7. ‘ Also, The said *Roger* in deceivable manner caused the  
 ‘ Knights of Shires, at the Parlement at *Winchester*, to grant to  
 ‘ the King one Man at Arms of every Town of *England*, that  
 ‘ answered in Eyre by Four and the Provost, at their cost, for a  
 ‘ Year in his War in *Gascoign*; which Charge he contrived for  
 ‘ the Advantage of himself and Party, in Destruction of the  
 ‘ People.

8. ‘ Also, The said *Roger* by his Power, caused Summons to be sent  
 ‘ to many great Knights, and others, That they should come to  
 ‘ the King where-ever he was; and when they came, he caused  
 ‘ them to be charged to prepare themselves to go into *Gascoign*,  
 ‘ or Fine at his Pleasure; which Fines were for the Benefit of him  
 ‘ and his Party.

9. ‘ Also, The said *Roger* falsly and maliciously made Discord  
 ‘ between the King’s Father and his Queen; and possessed her,  
 ‘ That if she went to him, she should be killed with a Dagger,  
 ‘ or otherwise Murdered: And by this way, and his other Sub-  
 ‘ tilities, he so ordered it that she would not come at her Lord;  
 ‘ to the great Dishonour of her Son and self, and great Damage  
 ‘ to



‘ to the whole Realm, perchance in time to come, which God  
‘ forbid.

A 10. ‘ Also the said *Roger* by his Usurped Royal Power, had  
‘ caused to be taken for him and his Party, the King’s Treasure,  
‘ as much as he pleased, without Tale, in Money and Jewels, in  
‘ destruction of the King, so as he had not wherewithall to pay  
‘ for his Victuals.

11. ‘ Also the said *Roger* by the said Power, caused to be  
‘ shared by him and his Confederates the 20000 Marks which  
‘ came out of *Scotland* for the Articles of Peace, without any  
‘ thing received by the King.

B 12. ‘ Also the said *Roger* by his Royal Power, received the  
‘ King’s Duties, and Purveyance thro the Kingdom, as if he had  
‘ been King, and he and his Party had with them double the  
‘ Company of Men and Horse that were with the King, in de-  
‘ struction of the People, not paying for their Quarters more  
‘ then they pleased.

C 13. ‘ Also the said *Roger* by his Royal Power caused the King  
‘ to grant to the Mounting of 200 *Irish*, of those that killed the  
‘ Great Men and others, which were in the King’s Faith, whereas  
‘ the King ought immediately to have Revenged their Deaths,  
‘ rather then Pardoned them, contrary to the Statute and Assent  
‘ of Parlement.

D 14. ‘ Also the said *Roger* contrived to have destroyed the  
‘ King’s Secret Friends, in whom he had most Confidence; and  
‘ he surmised to the King in the presence of the Queen his Mo-  
‘ ther, the Bishops of *Lincoln* and *Salisbury*, and others of his  
‘ Council, That his said Secret Friends had excited him to Com-  
‘ bine with his Enemies beyond Sea, in Destruction of the Queen  
‘ his Mother, and of him the said *Roger*, and this he affirmed so  
‘ impudently upon the King, as he could not be believed, against  
‘ what he had said; And for these things he had been appre-  
‘ hended, and for many others not as yet fit to be declared;  
‘ Wherefore the King charged the Earls, and Barons, the Peers  
‘ of the Land, as these things concerned himself, themselves,  
‘ and all the People of the Realm, to do right and true Judg-  
‘ ment upon him, for the Crimes above-written, as notorious,  
‘ and known to be true, to themselves, and all the People of the  
‘ Kingdom.

F The Earls, Barons, and Peers, having Examined the Articles,  
came into Parlement before the King, and they all delivered their  
Opinion by one of their Peers, That all things contained in the  
Articles were notorious and known to themselves and the People,  
wherefore they as Judges in Parlement by assent of the King, did  
Award and Judge the said *Roger* as Traitor and Enemy to the King  
and Kingdom, to be Drawn and Hanged, and commanded the  
Earl Marshall to Execute the Judgment, and to the Major, Alder-  
men, and Sheriffs of London, the Constable of the Tower, and those  
who

The Peers O-  
pinion con-  
cerning the  
Articles a-  
gainst *Mortimer*.

The Judg-  
ment against  
*Mortimer*.



\* Monday the 26th of November was the first day of this Parliament, St. Katherine, being the 25th. See the Summons in Append.

n. 82.  
[8] Rot. Parl. 4 Edw. III. n. 2.

Simon Beresford charged as a Confederate with Mortimer.

Adjudged to be Drawn and Hanged.

[9] Ib. n. 3.  
John Mantravers Practice and Contrivance against the Earl of Kent.

Judged to be Drawn, Hanged, and Beheaded. A Thousand Marks to him that should take him alive. Five hundred Pounds for his Head.  
[1] Ib. n. 4.  
The same Judgment against Bogo de Bayons, and John Deveroil.

who had the Guard of him, to be aiding to the Earl Marshall at the Execution, which was done on Thursday next after the \* first day of the Parlement, being the 29th day of November. He was not brought to Answer, but Condemned without hearing, and for that reason this Judgment was Reversed as Erroneous, and made void by Act of Parlement, and his Grandchild Roger Restored to his Title and Estate, Rot. Parl. 28 Ed. III. n. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12.

In the [8] same Parlement, the King charged the Earls, Barons, and Peers, to give right and true Judgment against Simon de Beresford Knight, who had been aiding and advising to Roger Mortimer, in all the Treasons, Felonies, and Wickednesses, for which he was adjudged to Death, as it was notorious and known to the said Peers, who came before the King in Parlement, and said all with one Voice, (*& disrent touz come d'une voice*) that the said Simon was not their Peer, wherefore they were not bound to Judge him as Peer of the Land, but for that it was a thing notorious and known to all, that he was aiding and advising to the said Roger in all the Felonies, Treasons, and Villanies abovesaid, which were in Usurpation of Royal Power, Murder of the Liege Lord, (*Murdre de Seigneur Lige*) and destruction of Royal Blood, and that he was guilty of divers other Felonies, and Robberies, and principal Maintainer of Robbers and Felons, they as Peers and Judges of Parlement, by Assent of the King, do Award and Adjudge him, as Traitor and Enemy to the King and Realm, to be Drawn and Hanged; and the Earl Marshall had Command to do Execution, which was done on the Monday next after the Feast of St. Thomas the Apostle.

All the Peers, Earls, and Barons in this [9] Parlement agreed, That John Mantravers was guilty of the Death of Edmond Earl of Kent, the King's Uncle, as he that chiefly, traiterously, and falsely compassed it; and whereas he knew King Edward was dead, he cunningly, and by his false and wicked Subtleties, made the Earl think and believe King Edward was alive, the which false Contrivance was the cause of all the ensuing Evils, wherefore as Peers and Judges of Parlement they award the said John to be Drawn, Hanged, and Beheaded as a Traytor, when he should be found; and prayed the King to issue his Proclamation, That any one who could take him alive, and bring him to the King, should have 1000 Marks, and if he could not be taken alive, he that should bring his Head should have 500 l. of the King's Gift.

Further, [1] the same Judgment was given against Bogo de Bayons, and \* John Deveroil, for the same Cause, and he that could take Bogo alive, and bring him to the King, should have 100 l. or bring his Head should have 100 Marks, and he that could take John alive, and bring him to the King, should have 100 Marks, or could bring his Head, should have 40 l.

\* This John Deveroil or Daverel, was a Creature of Mortimer's, and Governor of Corf Castle, where 'twas reported King Edward was, who being sent to by the Earl of Kent, told the Messenger he was there, alive and well, but that no body might see or speak with him, but such as were sent by the Queen, or Mortimer.



The same Judgment [2] was given against *Thomas de Gurney*, and *William de Ocle*, for the Death of King Edward, Father of the King that then was, (*pur la mort le Roi Edward, pere nostre Seigneur, &c.*) That they falsely and traiterously Murdered him; and he that could take *Thomas* alive was to have 100 l. or bring his Head 100 Marks; he that could bring *William Ocle* alive was to have 100 Marks, or his Head 40 l.

[2] Ib. n. 5.  
The same Judgment against *Thomas de Gurney*, and *William de Ocle*, for the same cause.

Amongst the Pleas of the Crown in this [3] Parlement is contained the Arraignment of *Thomas de Berkele* Knight, for the Death of King Edward the Second; for that the said King was committed to the keeping of the said *Thomas* and *John Mantravers* in the Castle of the said *Thomas* at Berkele, when he was Murdered. The said *Thomas* saith, That at the time of the Murder of the said \* King, he was sick at Bradelye, without the said Castle, and knew not what was done, nor was consenting thereunto, and thereupon put himself upon his Tryal by Twelve Knights named in the Record, who found him Not Guilty, nor that he fled, or withdrew himself upon it, but that he placed under him *Thomas de Gurney* and *William de Ocle*, to keep the King, by whom he was Murdered; he had Day given him to hear his Judgment in next Parlement, and the mean time, was committed to *Ralph Nevill*, Steward of the King's Household.

[3] Append. n. 84.  
*Thomas de Berkele* Arraigned, found not guilty.

\* Note, That so often as Ed. the II. is any way mentioned in this Record, he is acknowledged to have been King at the time of his Murder.

In this [4] Parlement *Richard* Eldest Son to the late Earl of Arundel, prayeth to be restored to Blood, Lands, and Goods, seeing his Father was put to Death, not being tried by his Peers according to the great Charter and the Law of the Land: But because the Attainder was confirmed by Parlement at Northampton, he mended his Petition, and prayed to be restored of the King's meer Grace, and he was accordingly restored.

[4] Rot. Parl. 4 Ed. III. n. 13.  
*Richard* Son to the Earl of Arundel, restored to Blood, Lands, and Goods.

Also in the [5] same Parlement, the Prelates, Earls, and Barons, pray and advise the King to give and grant 1000 l. per Annum to *William Montacute* and his Heirs for his Service, in quietly taking *Roger Mortimer* Earl of March, and his Confederates, without Bloodshed, a 1000 Marks whereof was to be out of the Lands of Mortimer.

[5] Ib. n. 14.  
A Thousand Pounds per Annum given to *William Montacute*, for taking *Mortimer* without Bloodshed.

Upon the same Prayer and Advice his Assistants [6] *Edward Bohun* had 400 Marks per Annum to him and his Heirs, *Robert de Ufford* 300, and *John Nevill* 200.

[6] Ib. n. 15.  
His Assistants were likewise Rewarded.

In the 5th year of his Reign the King called a Parlement at Westminster, to [8] meet on the morrow after Michaelmas. The Bishop of Winchester being Chancellor, [9] declared the cause of Summons to be concerning the Dutchy of Aquitan, and the King's Lands beyond Sea, whether Peace should be made, or other Issue put to the Dissentions between the King's of England and France, by reason of the said Lands; and also about the Business of Ireland, concerning the King's going thither, to be advised by his Lieges in that Nation; and likewise to ordain how the Peace might best be kept: When also it was agreed, That the King's Business

A. D. 1331.  
[8] Cl. 5 Ed. III. M. 7. Derf. Part. 1.  
[9] Rot. Parl. 5 Ed. III. n. 2.  
A Parlement called about the Business of France and Ireland. And to ordain how the Peace might be kept.



The King's  
Business in  
Parliament to  
be dispatch'd  
before any  
other.

[1] Ib. n. 3.  
The Lords  
Advise the  
King to an  
Amicable  
Treaty with  
the King of  
France about  
the Duchy of  
Aquitain, &c.

[2] Ib. n. 4.  
The Lords  
Advise the  
King to go in  
Person to Ire-  
land.

[3] Ib. n. 9.  
The Queen  
Mother to  
have Lands  
and Rents of  
the value of  
3000 l. a year  
assigned her.

[4] Ib. n. 10.  
An Agree-  
ment how the  
Peace was to  
be kept.

[5] Rot. Claus.  
& Ed. III. M.  
36. Dors.  
A. D. 1331.  
A Parliament  
called.

Business ought to be dispatch't before any other, & *auxint, illoeq-  
ues feust Accorde que les Busoignes le Roi deussient primerement estre  
exploitez, einz ce que Rien feust fait de nully autre Busoign.*

The Chancellor further [1] applied himself to the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, and all the other *Prelates*, *Earls*, *Barons*; (& *autres Grantz*) and other Great Men, for their Advice, whether they thought it best, for the King to proceed with the King of France by way of *Process*, or *War*, or *Amicable Treaty*; They all agree in the 3d way, by *amicable Treaty* with the King of France for the *Restitution* of *Aquitain*, seeing the two former might prove dangerous; and to that purpose the *Bishops* of *Winchester*, *Worcester*, and *Norwich*, two or one of them, as the King pleased, with the *Lords Beaumont*, *Percy*, and *Montague*, *Monsieur Geofry Lescrop*, and *Maistre John de Shordich*, were to be sent to the King of France.

As to the Business [2] of *Ireland*, it was agreed by the King, *Prelates*, *Earls*, *Barons*, and other Great Men in the same Parle-  
ment, (*si est accorde par nostre Seigneur le Roi, Prelates, Countes, Barons, & autres Grantz en Mesme le Parlement, &c.*) That the King should provide himself to go thither, as soon as he could, and that in the mean time he should send over some Great Men, with Men at Arms, to aid the *Justices*, and other *Liege People*, against such as opposed the Government.

In this Parleмент [3] the King by assent of the *Prelates*, *Earls*, *Barons*, and other Great Men, and at their Request, granted, That the Queen his Mother, not being well paid according to her mind Three thousand Pounds (*trois mill livres*) yearly, which she was to receive out of the *Exchequer* for her support, should have *Lands* and *Rents* of the value assigned to her.

Then for keeping of the Peace it was [4] agreed in full Parle-  
ment, by the King, *Prelates*, *Earls*, *Barons*, and other Great Men of the Kingdom, (*par nostre Seigneur le Roi, Prælat, Countes, Barons & autres Grantz du Royaume en pleyn Parlement chescun des ditz Grantz ent especialment examine & assentat, &c.*) every one of the said Great Men having been especially Examined and Assent-  
ing, That no Great Man of the Land for the future, shall retain, maintain, or avow, openly, or privately, by himself or others, any Robber, Evil-Doer, indicted of *Felony*, or *Fugitive* for the same, nor any sued to *Exigend*, *Common Transgression*, or of *Evil fame*; and the said Great Men promised with all their Power to as-  
sist the *Justices*, *Sheriffs*, and other the King's Officers, in the *Execution* of *Judgments*, and other things that belonged to their Of-  
fices, as well against Great Men, as others of what Condition so-  
ever they were.

On the 27th of *January*, in the 6th of his Reign, the King issued his [5] *Writs* for a Parlement to meet on the *Monday* after *St. Gregory*, or 12th of *March*, reciting in the Summons the Cause of calling it, which the Chancellor more fully declared;

[6] To



A [6] To wit, That the King of France, and many other Kings and Princes, (*quampures alii Reges & Principes*, so in the Writ) had ordered his going toward the Holy Land, in that present Month of March, and that it much pleased him to have the Company of the King of England, for the greater performance against the Enemies of God, and for this purpose sent Letters and Messengers to the King, for whom he demanded the Advice of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, in full Parlement, whether it was fit for him to Accompany the King of France or not.

B After this Declaration [7] Monsieur Geoffry Lescrop, by Command of the King, and in his presence, before all the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, Reported, That the King was informed, and it was a notorious thing to them all, That divers People defying the Law, were gathered together in great Companies in destruction of the King's Lieges, the People of Holy Church, and the King's Justices, taking and detaining some of them in Prison, until to save their Lives, they had received great Fines and Ransomes, at the pleasure of the Evil-Doers, some they put to Death, and Robbed others of their Goods and Chattels, doing other Mischiefs, and Felonies; and thereupon the said Geffry, on behalf of the King, charged the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, That by the Faith and Allegiance they ought him, they would Counsel him concerning his Voyage to the Holy Land, which he very much desired to undertake, with their Advice; and also how the Peace might be kept, and how those Rioters might be chastised and restrained from their Wickedness.

D The first Care by the Advice of the [8] Prelates, Earls, Barons, and Great Men, was against these Wicked People; That the King should prosecute them by Law, Force, and all other good ways, which should be advised him; and accordingly Commissions were issued, to the best Men in the Counties, and Sheriffs, to apprehend and imprison, and raise the *Posse Comitatus* against them, and cause them to be Endicted and punished according to their Deserts.

E And it was further [9] Agreed by the King, Prelates, Earls, Barons, other Great Men, the Knights of Shires, and Communes, (*par nostre Seigneur le Roy, Prelats, Countes, Barons, & autres Grantz, Chivalers de Countees, Gentz du Commune, &c.*) That a Sentence of Excommunication ordered by the Prelates, and Clergy, should be pronounced against them in the Church of St. Paul in London, and sent to all the Bishops in England, to be also pronounced against them in their Dioceses.

F First, [1] That all those who disturbed the Peace and Quiet of Holy Church, and the Realm, especially such as made Alliances, by Covenants, Obligations, Confederacies, or in any other manner, were Excommunicated, and so to remain.

Also [2] the Receivers, Favourers, and Defenders of them.

[6] *Rat. Parl.*  
6 Ed. 3. c. 5.  
To advise the King whether he should go to the Holy Land with the King of France.

[7] *Ibm.*

Notorious Riots in the Nation.

The King demands Advice about his going to the Holy Land.

And how to chastise and restrain the Rioters.

[8] *Ibm.*

The Lords advise to prosecute them by Law and Force.

[9] *Ibm.*  
They were likewise to be Excommunicated.

[1] *Ib. n. 6.*

The Reason and Terms of the Excommunication, and who to be Excommunicated.

[2] *Ib. n. 7.*



[3] Ib. n. 8.

Also, [3] That all such *Covenants, Obligations, Confederations, and Alliances*, were made void, and annulled by the said Prelates, and that if any *Oath* was taken to confirm them, that was also declared void.

[4] Ib. n. 9.  
The Lords  
Answer about  
the King's  
going to the  
Holy Land.  
[5] Ib. n. 10.

As to his [4] going to the Holy Land, they all concluded the time assigned by the King of *France*, to be too short.

The King  
asked Advice  
of the Lords,  
whether he  
should go into  
*France* to  
Treat Per-  
sonally with  
that King.

It was [5] further declared in this *Parlement*, on behalf of the King, by Monsieur *Geffry Lescrop*, That in the last *Parlement*, in the 5th of the King, at *Westminster*, it had been agreed, That the Debates moved between the Kings of *England* and *France* concerning the Lands beyond Sea, should be reconciled by *Treaty*, by way of *Marriage*, or any amicable manner; and that thereupon the King sent his *Commissioners* to the King of *France*, who Treated with him, and made Report to King *Edward*, That the King of *France* said to them, that if it pleased him to come to him Personally, he would do more favour to him than to any other, wherefore 'twas necessary to send speedily to the King of *France*; and for this purpose, he demanded the Advice of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, in full *Parlement*, whether in case the Messengers with the King of *France* at their return, should inform the King his Affairs would be in a better condition, if he went over in Person, he should go or not, and in that respect all the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, consented to his going, in hopes all Obstacles of a *Composure* between them might be thereby removed, and much advantage accrew to him; They also assented, his Voyage into *Ireland* might be deferred until *Michaelmas* next coming, so as in the mean time some Men at Arms, and others, might be sent in Ayd of his good People there.

The Lords  
consent to his  
going.

The Saturday next after the meeting of this *Parlement* it was Dissolved.

Edward Baliol,  
Son of John,  
came out of  
*France* into  
*England*.  
[6] *Walsingh.*  
f. 131. n. 20.  
30. *Buchan.*  
f. 87. b. f. 88.  
a. b. f. 89. a.  
n. 30. &c.  
Claims the  
Crown of  
*Scotland*, and  
recovers it by  
King *Edward's*  
Assistance.  
And was  
Crowned at  
*Scene*.

Upon the Peace made at *Northampton*, by the Contrivance of *Mortimer* and *Queen Isabell* to secure themselves, King *Edward* lost his Superiority over *Scotland*, and the English Noblemen and others the Lands and Estates they had there, some of whom, by consent of the rest, went into *France* to *Edward Baliol*, Son of *John Baliol* late King of *Scotland*, and brought him into *England*, at what time he claimed the Crown of that Kingdom as Heir to his Father, against *David* Son to *Robert Brus*, [6] in which Claim, by the Mediation of his Friends, he was assisted by *Edward* King of *England*, who furnished him with a small Army of English, by which his Friends were encouraged to come to him, and after several of the Regents of *Scotland*, and Guardians of *David* and that Kingdom, as *Thomas Randolph*, *James Douglas*, *Andrew Murray*, and other Great Men of his Party, either dying, or having been killed or taken Prisoners, in the Engagements, Skirmishes, and Battles, between both Parties for the space of Two years, the *Brussians* having always been worsted, tho most in number, and the greatest People, by the constant Assistance of the English,  
Edward



Edward Baliol was Crowned King on the 8th of the Kalends of September, or 25th of August 1332, at Scone, in the 6th of Edward the Third.

A. D. 1332.

A In the Second year of his Reign he made Recognition, and an Acknowledgment, That the Kingdom of Scotland was holden of the Kings, and Crown of England, by Homage, Liege, and Fealty, as of their Sovereign Lord, by ancient Right, and also of the Manner of his doing Homage, and Swearing Fealty, in the presence and by assent of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, Knights, and others of his Kingdom in Parlement assembled at Edinburgh, holding his Hands between the King of England's, in these Words:

He doth Homage, and Swear Fealty to King Edward, &c. in the presence, and by consent of the Parlement of Scotland. See the Original here under noted where to be found.

B Jeo Edward par la Grace de Dieu Roi Descocce & des Isles apertennences, Devenke vostre home liege pur les dits Roialm, & Isles contre touts Gents que purront vivre & morir, & le dit Roi Dengleterre come Sovereign Seigneur des dits Roialm Descocce & Isles, recent nostre Homage en la form susdit. Et puis Apres entrasems en la foi de dit Roi Dengleterre Sovereign Seigneur de dits Roialm Descocce & Isles touchees les Saints Evangeles par les paroles que sensuit; Nous seroms foial & loial, & foi & loialte porteroms a vos nostre treschier Seigneur Roi de Angleterre, & a vos heires come as Sovereignes Seigneurs de dits Roialm Descocce & Isles contre touts Gents que purront Vivre & Morir. Et voloms, grantoms, & obligeroms, nos & nos heires affair a nostre dit Seigneur le Roi Dangleterre & a ces heires Homage liege & Fealty en le formes susescrits, au chescun changement de Seigneur ou inneument dune part ou d'autre.

The Form of his doing Homage.

And Swearing Fealty.

D That is: I Edward by the Grace of God King of Scotland and the Isles thereto belonging, become your Liege Man for the Realm and Isles, against all People that can live and dye, and the said King of England received our Homage in the form above-said as Sovereign Lord of the Realm of Scotland and the Isles, and then afterwards we entred into the faith of the said King of England, Sovereign Lord of the said Realm of Scotland and the Isles, touching the Holy Gospels by the Words that follow: We shall be true and faithful, and faith and truth bear, to our most Dear Lord the King of England, and to your Heirs, as Sovereign Lords of the said Realm of Scotland and Isles, against all People that live and dye; and we Will, Grant, and Oblige us, and our Heirs, to do to our said Lord the King of England, and to his Heirs, Homage, Liege, and Fealty, in the Forms above-written, upon every Change of a Lord, or Renewal of one part or the other. In the same Instrument he granted to King Edward Berwick, &c. In Witnefs whereof he made his Letters Patents, dated at Edinburgh, Febr. 12. A. D. 1333, in the Second of his Reign. The Original under the Great Seal of Scotland, is in a Box, Intituled, *Stotia Tempore Regis Edwardi Tertii*, in a great Chest with that Title, in the old Chapter House in the Cloyster at Westminster.

F



Edw. King of Scotland grants to Edw. King of England 2000 l. per An. to him and his Heirs, for his Assistance, &c. with the Town of Berwick.  
By Assent of Parlement.

Other Towns, Castles, and Counties in Scotland given to K. Edward of England.

In the same Year of his Reign reciting that Edward III. by great Expence and Labour of him and his People, had given him great Assistance in the Recovery of his Inheritance, he granted for him and his Heirs, to give, assign, and deliver unto him 2000 l. yearly, Land and Rents, in the Borders where it should best please him. And in part of those 2000 l. yearly Rent, he gave, granted, and assigned the Castle, Town, and County of Berwic upon Twede, with their Appurtenances, separate from the Crown of Scotland, and annexed to the Crown of England for ever. By Assent of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, Knights, and others of the Kingdom (*& aliorum de Regno nostro*) in Parlement assembled. And in further full Satisfaction of the said 2000 l. per An. by the same Assent in Parlement, gave, granted, rendred, and assigned the Town, Castle, and County of Rokesburgh, the Town, Castle, and Forest of Jedworth; the Town and Castle of Selkirk, the Forests of Selkirk and Etrick; the Town, Castle, and County of Edinburgh, with the Constabularies of Haddington and Linliscou; the Town and County of Pebbles, and Town, County, and Castle of Dunfres, with their Appurtenances, Knights, Fees, Services, with the Advousons of Churches, Chapels, Religious Houses, Custody of the Temporalities in the time of the Vacation of Bishopricks, and all things whatsoever belonging to them, with the Subjection and Government of the People in those Places; To hold them to him and his Heirs, separate from the Crown of Scotland, and annexed to, and incorporated with the Crown of England for ever. Dated at Newcastle upon Tine, June 12. in the Second Year of his Reign. The Original under the Great Seal of Scotland is in the same Box above noted, and is confirmed by several Instruments in that Box under the Great Seal.

[7] Froyssard. K. Edw. demands Berwick, and was denied.  
Du Chesne, f. 64<sup>v</sup>. C. D.  
L. Bruce denied Homage to K. Edward.

As R. Bruce his Father had done to his Antecessors.

King Edward of England two Years before had [7] sent to David the young King of Scots, to deliver up to him Berwic as his Heritage and proper Right, and enjoyed by his Ancestors; and to come and do Homage for the Kingdom of Scotland, holden of his Crown. He consults his Barons and Great Men, according to whose Advice he gave the Ambassadors this Answer: That he greatly marvelled at what King Edward required, seeing there could no ancient Titles or Papers be found, by which it might appear that the Realm of Scotland held of the Realm of England by Homage, or any other way; That his Father King Robert had conquered Berwic by War against Edward II. and he would keep it; and that his Father never would do Homage to the Ancestors of Edward King of England: And desired the Ambassadors to pray their Master, That since he had Married his Sister, he would permit him the same Liberty the Kings of Scotland had at all times enjoyed.

K. Edw. besiegeth Berwick.

[8] R. de Avesbury, p. 82. a. c. 21. A. D. 1334. 8 Ed. III.

In the mean time, King David's Friends held Berwic, so as King Edward could not obtain it without Force, notwithstanding the Grant of Edward Baliol, or his Demand by Right; and therefore sent an Army under Command of the [8] Lord William Montacute, to besiege it, and within a Month followed with another Army to assist in the Siege. On Monday, on the Eve of St. Margaret, or 19th of July, the Scots came with a vast Army to relieve the



the Town. King Edward marched to meet them, and led up his Army himself, and in Huntene-More near Berwic, fought with, and routed them, killing, says the Historian, Forty thousand. The rest fled, when the Besieged yielded the Town and Castle.

Beats the  
Scotts Army,  
and takes it.

A The next Year [9] King Edward marched through Scotland with a great Army, ravaging, burning, and spoiling the Country, all flying before him, and none daring to oppose him. At length returning to St. Johnston, many Earls, Barons, Knights, and other Nobles of Scotland, having his safe Conduct, came to him there, and concluded a Peace with him, as followeth :

[9] Ib p 26,  
b. c. 22.  
He waits and  
burns Scot-  
land.  
The Scotts  
make a Peace  
with him.

B These [1] are the Points and Things accorded between the Council of the Kings of England and Scotland of one Part, and Monsieur Alexander de Moubray, Monsieur Geffry de Moubray, Monsieur Godfry de Ros, Sir William Bulloke, and Eustace de Loreigne, having Full Power from Monsieur David de Strabolgi Earl Dufcelle, and Robert Steward of Scotland, to Treat, Accord, and Agree all Points between the foresaid Kings, and the said Earl and Steward on the other Part.

[1] Ib m. c. 23,  
The Articles  
of the Peace.

C 1. ' First, 'Tis Accorded and Agreed, That the Earl of Ascelle, and the Great Men, and all others of the Community of Scotland, which came into the Conditions, shall have Life and Member, Lands, Tenements, Fees, and Offices in Scotland which they ought to have of Heritage, or other Right, except those that shall be excepted by comune Assent.

D 2. ' Also, 'Tis Agreed they shall have Pardon of Imprisonment, and for all Trespasses by them done in the Realms of England and Scotland, from the Beginning of the World, to the Day of the Date thereof.

3. ' Also, That the Earl of Ascelles and Monsieur Alexander de Moubray, shall have the Lands, Tenements, Possessions, Offices, and Fees they had in England, at their Departure after the Homage at Newcastle upon Tyne.

E 4. ' Also, 'Tis Agreed, that the Franchises of Holy Church in Scotland shall be maintained according to the ancient Usages of Scotland.

5. ' Also, That the Laws of Scotland in Burghs, Towns, Sheriffsdoms, within the Lands of the King of Scotland, shall be used according to the ancient Usages and Customs of Scotland, as they were used in the time of King Alexander.

F 6. ' Also, That the Offices in Scotland may be always administered by People of the same Nation, and that the King of Scotland of his Royalty may make such Officers as he please, and of what Nation soever.

7. ' Also, 'Tis Agreed, That all those that shall be in these Conditions, or this Agreement of the Earl Dufcelles, that have Lands



‘ Lands within the Lands of the King of *England*, in *Scotland*,  
 ‘ may have again their Lands, Tenements, Possessions, Offices,  
 ‘ and Fees, as they had at their Departure, after the said Homage  
 ‘ made at *Newcastle upon Tyne*, except those that shall be excepted  
 ‘ by common Assent.

8. ‘ Also, If they should be empleaded concerning their  
 ‘ Lands and Tenements aforesaid, they shall have their De-  
 ‘ fences and Recoveries in Court where they ought to have  
 ‘ them.

The rest are of things that concerned particular Persons, and  
 not much material to be known now. This Accord or Articles  
 of Peace were writ in the Town of *St. John* in *Scotland*, the 18th  
 Day of *August*, in the Year of Grace 1335. and 9th of *Ed-  
 ward III.*

A.D. 1335. 9  
 Edw. III.

D. Bruce did  
 Homage and  
 swore Fealty  
 to K. Edw.,

\* Append. n.  
 85.  
 And by Ad-  
 vice and Con-  
 sent of the 3  
 Estates in Par-  
 lament, ac-  
 knowledge  
 him to be Su-  
 perior Lord  
 of *Scotland*.

[2] Mezeray,  
 f. 377.

[3] Ibid. f. 36.  
*R. de Artois*  
 came into  
*England*, and  
 advised K. Ed.  
 to make his  
 Claim to  
*France*.

[4] *Froiss.* vol. 1.  
 c. 28.

[5] Ibid.  
 He consults  
 his Friends.

On the first of *November* next following, *King David*, in con-  
 sideration that his Predecessors and Progenitors, *Kings of Scotland*,  
 in ancient times held, and of Right ought to hold the Kingdom of  
*Scotland* of the *Kings of England* by Liege Homage and Fealty, and  
 that very many of them had made Personal Homage, and done  
 Fealty to them, as appeared by ancient Records and Pleas of the  
 Crown, as well in Parlements, as in the Iters or Circuits of the  
 Chamberlains and Justices of his Predecessors and Progenitors, \* by  
 his Letters Patents made with the Advice and Consent of the Three  
 Estates of the Kingdom in Parlement at *Edinburgh*, did acknowledge  
 to hold the Kingdom of *Scotland* of *Edward III.* King of *England*,  
 by Liege Homage and Fealty, as of the Superior Lord of the King-  
 dom of *Scotland*, notwithstanding all and all manner of Releases,  
 Remissions, Quiet Claims, and other Letters whatsoever made by any  
 King or Kings of *England* to the contrary. This Instrument was  
 Dated in full Parlement, on the first of *November* aforesaid, in the  
 5th Year of his Reign, and yet remains entire under the Great  
 Seal of *Scotland*.

After this Treaty concluded with the Scots, *King Edward* was  
 at leisure to look after his Affairs in *France*; and a meer Accident  
 contributed much to his Claim of that Crown: [2] *Robert de Artois*  
 Earl of *Beaumont*, who had been the greatest Friend to *Philip* of  
*Valois* in setting the Crown upon his Head, [3] made Pretensions  
 to the Earldom of *Artois*, after the Death of *Mahaut*, and brought  
 several Grants under the Great Seal of *France* to confirm them;  
 which being strictly examined, were found Counterfeit, and  
 Judgment given against him by the King. Much moved at the  
 Loss of his Pretensions and Honour, reproached the King, and  
 provoked him to the utmost Extremity; so that though he had  
 Married the King's Sister, he was Banished, and his Estate con-  
 fiscated, who then [4] comes into *England*, and advised *King*  
*Edward* to make his Claim to the Crown of *France*. This being  
 communicated to his Council, they [5] advise him to consult his  
 Father-in-Law *William* Earl of *Haynault*, and his Brother *John* of  
*Haynault*, who had done him great Service in Conducting his Mo-  
 ther and self into *England*, before he attempted any thing in  
 this

A

B

C

D

E

F



this Affair. [6] Accordingly he sent *Henry Burghersb* Bishop of *Lincoln*, with two Bannerets and two Doctors, to acquaint them with his Intentions; [7] who not only approved the Design, but advised the King to make further Alliances with some of the Neighbouring Princes.

[6] *Ibm.*  
[7] *Ibm.*  
They approve the Design, & advise him to make Alliances.

A In pursuance of this Advice [8] by special Commission, Dated the 16th of December, he impowered *William Earl of Haynault*, therein stiled (*Gulielmus Comes Hanoniæ, Hollandiæ, & Zelandiæ, ac Dominus Frisiæ*) to Treat and Agree with such Noblemen, Persons of Note, and others, as he should think fit, about Alliances and Retainers.

[8] *Pat. 10. Ed III. Part 2 M. 6.*  
He Commissioned *Will. Earl of Haynault* to treat about Alliances and Retainers.

B The like Commissions, and with the like Power of the same Date, were sent to [9] *William Earl of Juliers*, the King's Brother-in-Law (being Husband to *Joan*, Sister to Queen *Philippa*) to Sir *John de Montgomery* Knight, and to Mr. *John Waweyn*, Canon of *Darlington*.

[9] *Ibm.*  
The like Commissions he gave to others.

C On the 19th of [1] April following, a like Commission was issued to *Henry Bishop of Lincoln*, *William Earl of Salisbury*, and *William Earl of Huntington*, who were sent into *Flanders*; and before the Month of May was ended, [2] they contracted with several Noblemen and others in *Haynault*, *Gulderland*, and *Juliers*, to assist the King against *France*, together with what Number of Men every of them were to find to serve the King, and the Wages and Stipends (or as now called Pay) they were to receive for so doing.

[1] *11 Ed III. p. 1. M. 11.*  
They contract with several Noblemen & others in *Haynault*, *Gulderland*, and *Juliers*.

D In a very short time after [3] *Reginald the Second Earl of Gueldres* and *Zutphen* (who Married *Eleonora* the King's Sister) and *William Marquess of Gulick*, came into the Alliance; as also [4] *Rupert Count Palatine of the Rhine*, Duke of *Bavaria*.

[2] *Rot. Alman. 11 Ed III. M. 9. 10, 11. A. D. 1337.*  
What Men they were to find, and what their Wages and Stipends.

Lewis the Emperor [5] entred into a Confederacy with King Edward, by which they obliged themselves and Heirs, to Assist each other with all their Power to recover their Inheritances and Possessions, withheld from them by *Philip of Valois*.

[3] *Ibm.*  
4 German Princes enter into Alliance with K. Edw.

E About the same time [6] *John Duke of Lorrain*, *Brabant*, and *Lemburgh*, was retained for King Edward, and many petty Earls and Lords.

[4] *Ibm.*  
[5] *Ibm.*  
Lewis the Emperor joins with him.  
*John Duke of Lorrain, &c.*  
[6] *Ibm. M. 8.*  
And many petty Earls & Lords retained to serve him.

F In the same Year, the 11th of Edward III. several of the same Confederacies are entred upon the [7] Scots Roll, where in some of them the Wages was expressed, which was allowed by the King to his Retainers, for every Man at Arms they brought into his Service by the Month, viz. 15 Florens of Florence, which was 45 s. Sterling, better than Eighteen pence a Day, great Wages at that time.

[7] *M. 1. & 6. & 11.*  
The Wages of Retainers better than 18 d. a day. A Man at Arms better than 18 d. a day.

The Allies and Confederacies on the French side were the [8] Bishop of *Liege*, *John King of Bohemia* and Earl of *Luxemburgh*,  
Henry

[8] *Du Chesne, f. 646. C.*  
The King of France his Confederates.



Henry Count Palatine of the Rhine, Aubert Bishop of Metz, Otho Duke of Austria, Theodore Marquess of Montferrat, Ame Earl of Geneva, Gefrey Earl of Linanges, Waleran Earl of Deux-Ponts, Henry Earl of Vaudemont, John Earl of Sarbruck, Imbert Bastard of Savoy; and many other Lords and Captains of Almain, Spain, Franch-County, Dauphine, Savoy, and other Countries, the Scots, and Duke of Lorrain.

[9] Rot. Almain.  
ii Ed. III. n. 13.

A. D. 1337.  
Commissioners sent by K. Edw. to K. Ph. to treat about the Right of the Crown of France, and to which of them it belonged.

[1] Ibm.

They were also by another Commission impowered to treat about Aquitan, &c. and also a happy Peace.

[2] Appen. n. 85 B.

A Commission to the Duke of Lorrain and Brabant to be Viceroy of France.

[3] Ibm.

The same Commission to others.

[4] Ibm.

He sent his Writ to all the great Persons of France and others to obey his Vice-roys.

The same Commands were to obey others.

The Pope mediates a Peace between the two Kings.

Having made these Alliances against France, King Edward, before any Acts of Hostility, [9] constituted the Bishop of Lincoln, the Earls of Salisbury and Suffolk, and John Darcy, his Agents, by Commission Dated October 7. to Treat (*cum Magnifico Domine Principe Domino Philippo Rege Franciæ Illustri*) with the Magnificent Prince Philip the Illustrious King of France, or his Commissioners, concerning the Right of that Crown, and to which of them it belonged. And by another [1] Commission, the same Persons were impowered to Treat upon all Controversies and Demands whatsoever relating to the Dukedom of Aquitan, or other Parts beyond Sea, and also of a happy and perpetual Peace.

Yet the same Day considering the famous Kingdom of France was lawfully devolved to him by Right of Succession, and that he had claimed that Kingdom as his Inheritance, he [2] made John Duke of Brabant and Lorrain his Lieutenant, Captain, and Vicar-General there; granting and committing to him meer Empire, the Power of the Sword, and all Jurisdiction high and low, the Consuance and Decision of all Questions or Cases, as well Criminal as Civil, with Power to appoint Judges and Ministers as he pleased, for the good Government of the Kingdom, according to the Laws thereof.

The same Commissions were [3] granted and made to William Marquiss of Juliers, William Earl of Henault, and William Earl of Northampton; to each of them severally, the Words King of England and France, and King of France and England, being transposed; that is, sometimes England was put before France in these Commissions, and sometimes France before England.

These Commissions so made, he directed his [4] Writs of the same Date, to the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Dukes, Marquisses, Earls, Barons, and all other Persons in the Kingdom of France whatsoever, commanding them willingly and freely to receive the said Duke, and obey him in all things as if he were present himself, letting them know, That to the Obedient he would be very kind, and to the Stubborn very severe.

The same Commands were directed to them in the Names of Marquiss of Juliers, the Earls of Hanault and Northampton, particularly and severally, with the same transposition of Words, King of England and France. What were the Effects of these Commissions of Treaty and Lientenancy, I find not.

The Pope taking notice of these things, to prevent the War between the Two Nations, sent to both Kings Peter Priest-Cardinal of St. Praxed, and Bertrand Deacon-Cardinal of St. Mary in Aquizo, if

A

B

C

D

E

F



if it might be, to take up, and end all Controversies between them. [5] Upon their Application to King Edward, a Truce, in hopes of a Peace to follow, was obtained, until the morrow after Candlemas, in the 12th of his Reign: It was thence continued [6] to the first of March, and from that time to [7] Midsummer following, if the King of France would agree to it. But he not complying with the Terms of the last Continuation of the Truce, King Edward was advised to declare it null; which was done on the [8] 6th of May; and further, to pass beyond Sea to confer with his Allies, in prosecution of his Design against France. He took the Advice, and went to Antwerp: But before he went, the Cardinals prevailed with him to direct a [9] Commission, Dated June 21. to John Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Durham, Robert de Ufford Earl of Suffolk, Sir Geofrey le Scrop Kt. and Mr. John Ufford Arch-Deacon of Ely, with full Power to treat and conclude all things in variance between them, in order to a full and final Peace. And by another [1] Commission of the same Date, John Duke of Brabant, the Earl of Hanaw and Gueldres, the Marquis of Juliers, and Sir William Dunork Lord of Onstrehout, were added to them. The Stiles of the Commissions were different; in one 'tis, *Philippus de Valois Consanguineus noster Francie* (Philip of Valois our Kinsman of France) without other addition. In the other 'tis, *Excellentissimus Princeps, Dominus Philippus Rex Francie, Illustris Consanguineus noster Charissimus*; Most Excellent Prince, the Lord Philip King of France, our Illustrious most dear Cousin.

At Antwerp there was a Congress of the Confederates with King Edward, where on the 22d of July, he revoked [2] the Power he had given the Commissioners abovesaid, to Treat with Philip de Valois as King of France. From thence the [3] Marquis of Juliers was sent to the Emperor, who obtained a Promise from him, To make King Edward Vicar-General of the Empire, [4] which was done accordingly; and the Emperor commanded all People and Subjects of the Empire to obey the King of England his Vicar, as himself, and do him Homage.

In the 13th of his Reign, at the Request of the Cardinals, [5] John Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, Richard Bishop of Durham, Henry Bishop of Lincoln, the Earls of Derby, Salisbury, and Suffolk, with others, had, on the 1st of July, Authority to Treat with Philip de Valois, or his Deputies, upon the Dignities, Honours, Rights, and Lands, belonging to King Edward, and all other Differences whatever. The French Commissioners were the Arch-Bishop of Rouen, the Bishops of Langres and Beavais; the Place at Arras; but without effect.

Having made this Progress toward a War with France for the obtaining that Kingdom, [6] he wrote to the Pope, setting forth his Title to it, That the Crown belonged to him by lawful Right of Succession, as being Grandchild to Philip the Fair by his Mother Queen Isabel; and tho', as he grants, she could not Inherit by the Constitution of France, yet when all the Sons of Philip were dead without Issue Male, (Charles the Fair being the last) he claimed it as the nearest Male to his Grandfather, and having the Right of Succession before Philip of Valois, being Son to Charles Earl of Va-

[5] Rot. Fran. 11 Ed. III. M. 2. Dors. [6 & 7] Rot. Aman. 12 Ed. III. M. 36.

[8] Ibm. M. 16

[9] Rot. Aman. 12 Ed. III. Part. 1. M. 5. A. D. 1338.

[1] Ibm.

At a Congress of the Confederates.

[2] Pat. apud. Antwerp. 12 Ed. III. M. 37.

The Commissions to treat were revoked. [3] Froy. lib. 1. c. 32.

K. Edw. made Vicar-General of the Empire.

[4] Ibm. c. 34.

[5] Pat. Conc. lomin. Angl. & Vasc. 13 Ed. III. M. 17.

Another Treaty appointed, without effect.

[6] Wal. f. 136. n. 50.

See there the whole Letter, and in Rot. A. vsbury, p. 83. b.

K. Edw. writes to the Pope, and sets forth his Title to the Crown of France by Right of Succession.



A. D. 1339.

lois his Grandfather's Brother; and affirmed, That his Mother's Disability to take the Crown, could not, nor ought not to barr him of his Right. This Letter bears Date at Antwerp, July 16. 1339. in 13th Year of his Reign.

[7] Walsf. f. 140. n. 20.  
The Pope's Answer to K. Edward's Letter,

The Pope in [7] answer to this Letter, reprehends him for joining with Lewis of Bavaria the Emperor, and receiving from him the Office of Vicar-General of the Empire, seeing by his Predecessor Pope John XXII. he had been Excommunicated, and deprived of all Dignity and Honour; who also had exercised the Power of the Apostolic Sword against all his Adherents who shewed him any Favour, and gave him any Help or Advice, or called or acknowledged him Roman King or Emperor, declaring them Favourers of Hereticks. Then persuading him to Peace, and pretending great Affection to him, advised him to hearken to the Cardinals, that loved him sincerely, and wished him Prosperity; and in making Peace, would propound nothing but what was pleasing to God, and acceptable to the People.

A

B

He entred France with an Army.  
[1] Ibm. f. 143. n. 30, 40, 50.  
Walsf. p. 86. b. Burns, wastes, and destroys the Country.  
[9] Ibm. Puts all that resisted him to the Sword.  
[1] Walsf. 144. n. 10, 20.  
The Pope offers his Mediation for a Peace.

This notwithstanding, King Edward, after he had been at Antwerp above a Year, on the 19th of September, 1339. saith Avebury (in October, says Walsingham) [8] entred France with a great Army, and burnt, wasted, and destroyed Cambresis, or the Territory of Cambray, and the Country of Vermundois; and such as resisted him were put to the Sword. [9] The King of France marched towards him with a vast Army; but when he came to Fighting, he retreated for Fear.

C

The Pope hearing of this, [1] attributes the cause of not Fighting to Providence, and an Act of Divine Clemency for the sparing of Christian Blood; and after many Remarks upon it and the War, beseeched the King, for the Lord's sake, and by the Mercy of God, to think of Peace, and in the mean time to consent to a Truce in order to a Peace; and if the Cardinals, by what they should propound, could not effect it, he offered his own amicable Mediation for a happy End and Composure of all Differences.

D

[2] Ibm. f. 145. 10, 20, &c.  
K. Edward's Answer to the Pope's offer of a Mediation.

The King's Answers to the [2] Pope, were his most humble Thanks for offering his Mediation, and the Care and Affection he had for his Sons, and that he should pursue his wholesome Advice; but that Philip unjustly usurped the Crown of France, lawfully devolved upon him after the Death of his Uncle Charles the last King thereof; That he had seized on Aquitan, and excited the Scots to Rebell against him; and therefore he intended not to neglect his Hereditary Rights, but should endeavour to recover them by the Help of God; and although that Kingdom had been demanded for him before the Cardinals, who had earnestly and laudably laboured in the Business of Peace, yet he could not obtain a reasonable Answer, nor know what he would do or offer; and that after many Treaties he would not hearken to Reason.

E

F

[3] Claus. 13 Ed. III. Part. 2. M. 28. Dors. A Parlement summoned.

On the [3] 25th of August, not long before King Edward's Inroad into France, the Duke of Cornwall, Guardian of England, in his Name issued Writs for a Parlement to meet 15 Days after Michael-



A Michaelmas; [4] To which Parlement came the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Durham, and Monsieur William de la Pole, from the King then in France, to shew the Lords and Commons what he had done beyond Sea, and his Condition there, and the Mischiefs that had befallen him, and those with him, by reason he was not supplied from England. At the same time came Letters to the Earl of Huntington, and to the Prussia Merchants, That the King was in France, near St. Quintins, with an Army of 15000 Men, and more, so as it was hoped, with the Aid of God, he would be honoured thro the whole World, and his Liege People safe in all Points, and preserved for ever; Then also he shewed to the Great Men and Commons, how that he and others that were with the King, for the Charge they had been at, to have his Allies and others to march with him into France, were obliged with him for 300000 l. Sterling or more, and how that the King and his Friends could not honourably depart from thence, without giving his Creditors Satisfaction, and likewise, that for this Cause, and for the Maintenance of him and his Quarrel, which was undertaken by the common assent of them all, and for his Business on this side the Water, he ought to be supplied with a very great Sum.

C Whereupon in this great Necessity [5] it was thought convenient to Aid him with a very great Sum, or he would be dishonoured, and he and his People destroyed for ever; and it was agreed by the Great Men (*les Grantz ont Grante*) to give him every Tenth Sheaf, Fleece, and Lamb, of their Demeasnes, except of their Bond Tenents.

D The Commons [6] declare themselves very forward and willing to assist the King, but they pray the Duke of Cornwall, Guardian of England, and the Lords, That he would summon a Parlement to meet in convenient time; That the mean while they might go into the Country, to endeavour to have an Aid granted answerable to the King's Necessity; and they further pray, That Two of the best valued Knights might be chosen in every County for that Parlement.

E Accordingly the Guardian issued [7] Writs on the 16th of November for another Parlement to meet Eight days after St. Hilary, or 20th of January, in which the Commons gave the King 30000 Sacks of [8] Wooll upon certain Conditions comprised in Indentures made hereupon; The Clergie gave nothing, because in the Eleventh year of his Reign they gave a [9] Triennial Tenth toward the War coming then on with the King of France, and to pay Germans, Brabanters, and others Confederated with him against that King, [1] the three years being not then expired.

F The King and Queen [2] kept their Christmases at Antwerp, and afterwards went to Gant in Flanders, from whence he wrote to all the Prelates, and Persons Ecclesiastic, to the Peers, Dukes, Earls, Barons, Nobles, and Plebeians of the Kingdom of France, setting forth his Title as aforesaid, and telling them, That Philip of Valois intruded himself into the Kingdom by force in his Minority, and possessed it against God and Justice; Therefore lest he should seem

[4] Rot. Parl. 13 Ed. III. Part. 1. n. 4. The King sent to them an Account of his Affairs in France.

And requires a very great Sum of Money.

[5] Ib. n. 5. The Great Men give him every Tenth Sheaf, Fleece, and Lamb, &c.

[6] Ib. n. 8. The Commons desire another Parlement, Give their Reason for it. And pray the Two best valued Knights may be chosen in every County.

[7] C. 13 E. III. Part. 2. M. 1. Dors.

The Commons give 30000 Sacks of Wooll.

[8] Rot. Parl. 13 Ed. III. Part. 2. n. 5, 6, 7

The Clergie give nothing because, &c.

[9] Adom. Marynouth, A. D. 1337.

[1] Walsingh. f. 147. n. 20.

[2] Ib. n. 10. King Edward writes to the Peers and Great Men of France of all sorts, and Plebeians. Setting forth his Title to that Kingdom.



Declaring  
what he  
would do if  
possessed of it.

[3] *Rob. Avers.*  
p. 88. a. cap.  
28.

[4] *Claus.*  
13 Ed. III.  
parf. 1. M. 33.  
Dors.  
Summons for  
a Parliament.  
[5] *Rot. Parl.*  
14 E. III.  
parf. 1. n. 5,  
6, 7.  
A great Ayd  
desired.  
The King in  
Debt, and  
was to reman  
as a Prisoner  
at Brussels un-  
til it was paid.  
The Lords,  
and Knights  
of Shires give  
the 9th Sheaf,  
Fleece, and  
Lamb.  
The Citizens  
and Burgeses  
a 9th of all  
their Goods  
according to  
the true value.  
[6] *Ib. n. 9, 10.*  
The Com-  
mons make it  
their Request  
not to be sub-  
ject to the  
King as King  
of France.  
[7] *Append.*  
n. 86.  
[8] *Claus.*  
14 Ed. III.  
parf. 1. M. 23.  
Dors.  
A Parlement  
called.

to neglect his own Right, and the Gift of Heavenly Grace, or submit to the Divine Pleasure, he claimed the Kingdom and Government, in hope of Celestial help, (*Ne videamur jus nostrum & Donum Celestis Gratie negligere, &c.*) declaring he would be very Gracious to the Good and Obedient, and do Justice to every one according to the Laudible Rites and Customs of the Kingdom; To Reform all things were amiss, and add according to the Condition of the Times what was best and most expedient for them, by assent of the Peers, Prelates, and Great Men, and his faithful Subjects. The Letter as written in Latin begins thus; [3] *Edwardus Dei Gratia Rex Francie & Anglie ac Dominus Hibernie Universis Ecclesiarum Prelatis, & Personis aliis Ecclesiasticis, Paribus, Ducibus, Comitibus, Baronibus, & Nobilibus, ac Plebeis in Regno Francie constitutis, veram noticiam, subscriptorum universorum, &c.* Edward by the Grace of God King of France and England, Lord of Ireland, to all Prelates of Churches, &c. as above, Dat. apud Gandavum 8 die Februarii Anno Regni nostri Francie primo, Anglie vero Decimo quarto, Dated at Gant the 8th of February, in the First year of our Reign of France, and of England the Fourteenth.

Some short time after he came for England, and at Harwich on the 21st day of February he issued [4] his Summons for a Parliament, to meet on Wednesday next after Midlent Sunday. The cause of Summons was declared to be, for granting the King a great Aid, or [5] he would be for ever dishonoured, and his Lands as well on this side, as beyond the Sea, in great danger, if he should loose his Allies. And further, he was in his own proper Person to return to Brussels, and stay there as a Prisoner, until the Sum he was ingaged for there was all paid; and in case he had a sufficient Aid, all these Mischiefs would cease, and his Design (with the help of God) have a good issue, &c. Wherefore upon his Request, the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and Knights of Shires, having regard to the Mischiefs, &c. granted him the Ninth Sheaf, Fleece, and Lamb; and the Citizens and Burgeses the very Ninth of all their Goods, according to the true value, for two years next coming, upon condition he would grant their Petitions presented to him and his Council.

In this Parliament [6] the Great Men and Commons made it their Request, that seeing the King had taken upon him the Title of King of France, and changed his Arms, they might not be bound to obey him as King of France, nor the Kingdom of England put in subjection to him as King of France, or to the Kingdom of France, (*le fist faire lettres patentes de Indemnité*) he thereupon caused to be made Letters Patents of Indemnity [7].

On the 30th of May next following, declaring in the Writ [8] his intentions of going beyond Sea for the Defence and Safety of his Kingdom of England, and the Recovery of his own, and the Rights of his Crown, he summoned a Parliament to meet at Westminster on the Wednesday after the Feast of the Translation of St. Thomas the Martyr, (that is, Thomas Becket) which Feast was July the 7th, to be holden before his Son Edward Duke of Cornwall and Earl of Chester, whom he had made Guardian of England.

And



A And he not only publickly declared his *intention* in the *Writs* of *Summons*, but [9] appointed the precise day to be on the 13th of *June*, to pass from *Orwell* in *Suffolk* into *Flanders*, with about 40 Ships that lay ready there, to Treat with his Confederates about the War; Upon this Resolution the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, then his *Chancellor*, informed [1] him, That *Philip* of *Valois*, his *Adversary* of *France*, foreseeing his Passage, had privately sent a great Fleet of Men of War to encounter him in the Haven of *Sluce*; and advised him to provide more Ships, and reinforce his Fleet, otherwise he and his Affairs might be lost in the Passage. The King, not believing him, said he would go whatever came of it. The *Arch-Bishop* quitted his Council, and taking Leave departed, and sent the Seal of his Office to him; yet the King thinking better on the Matter, called to him *Robert de Morle* his Admiral, and one *Crabbe*, a famous Mariner, who upon his enquiry gave him the same Information and Advice the *Arch-Bishop* had given, whereupon he presently sent for him, and delivered to him [2] the Seal; and also having sent to the Northern and Southern Parts, and to *London*, within ten days he had a sufficient Fleet, and more Armed Men and Archers then he could expect, or had use for. With this Fleet he sailed towards *Flanders*, and on *Midsummer* [3] Day the *English* and *French* Fleets engaged, when the *English* obtained a mighty Victory, killing Thirty thousand *French*, and taking and destroying Two hundred Ships.

B

C

D The Parliament met at the time appointed, and the cause of *Summons* was declared to be, [4] to Treat and Ordain concerning the things might happen to the King; for keeping the Peace in *England*, upon the *Marches* of *Scotland*, and upon the Sea; and to Advise and Determine how, and in what manner, he might be best served by the Subsidy granted by common Assent the last Parliament, and to remove the Difficulties and Hindrances in Collecting it. [5] On the next day, being *Thursday*, it was shewn to the Great Men and Commons, (as *Grantz & Communes*) That since the *Summons* to this Parliament, God by his Grace (*Dieu par sa grace*) had given the King Victory over his Enemies, to the great Assurance, Repose, and Quiet of all his Liege Subjects; and how, that to perform his Design upon his Enemies, he was forced to be aided, or loose his Allies, (*il lui covendrait a force estre eidez ou perdre son alliez*) and the Knights, Citizens, and Burgeses, were charged by the Duke and the Council, to advise how and in what manner the King might best, and to the most Profit of him, and the least grievance of his People, be served by the Aid which had been granted him, and to give their Answer on *Saturday* next following, (*& donez leur respons samedi prochain suant*) on which day (*a quen samedi*) after great Treaty and Debate had between the Great Men, and the Knights and other Commons, (*entre les Grantz & les ditz Chivalers & autres des Communes*) it was agreed by all the Great Men and Commons, That there should be Men assigned to sell the Ninths granted to the King last Parliament, and directed the quickest and best way of selling them.

E

F

[9] *Rob. Aves.*  
p. 89. a. c. 29.  
A. D. 1340.  
The *Arch-*

*Bishop* of *Can-*  
*terbury*,

[1] *Ibm.*  
Then *Chan-*  
*cancellor*, ac-  
quaints the  
King with the  
Danger in his  
Passage to  
*France*.

He would not  
believe him.  
He Quits his  
Council, and  
sends him the  
Seal.

[2] *Ib.* p. 89.  
b.

[3] *Ibm.*

[4] *Rot. Parl.*  
14 E. III. parls.  
2. n. 2, 3.

The cause of  
calling the  
Parliament.

[5] *Ib.* n. 4, 5.



[6] Ib. n. 6, 7.  
The King  
wrote to that  
Parlement.  
That the Ayd  
given last Par-  
lement was  
great.

[7] Ib. n. 8.  
Yet because it  
could not be  
collected in  
due time, it  
answered not  
his purpose.

[8] Ib. n. 9.

[9] Ib. 9, 10.  
Upon the  
King's Letter.

20000 Sacks  
of Wooll  
granted for  
a present  
Supply.

[1] Ib.

[2] Ib. n. 11.

To this Parliament [6] were sent by the King the Earls of Arundell and Gloucester, and Sir William Trussell, with Letters of Credence, dated at Bruges, July the 9th, in the 14th year of his Reign in England, and first of France, directed to the Dukes, Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Earls, Barons, and others assembled in Parliament, signifying to them, That tho the Subsidy granted in the last Parliament was great, yet because it could not in due time be converted into Money, it did not answer his purpose as it ought: He likewise remembred them of the Victory he obtained in the Water of Zwynes on Midsummer-day: [7] And farther acquaints them, That with the Assent of his Allies, the Great Men of England who were with him, and the Country of Flanders, he had divided his Army, and intended to go and lie down before Tournay with one part of it, being an Hundred thousand Flemings Armed, besides (as must be supposed) his English Forces, and Robert Earl of Artois with Fifty thousand, besides all his Allies, and their Power, were marching towards St. Omers, that for the governing and marching of this Army he had need of a very great Sum of Money, over and above what was sufficient to discharge his Debts, which were necessarily to be paid before his march, requesting them and every one of them dearly (*vous priens cherelement, & a chescun de vous*) to consider the great Danger might happen, if he was not supplied with Money and Goods suddenly, to give Satisfaction to the Country, and his Allies, and Soldiers which he had retained, in case they should withdraw themselves, or desert if not paid, and also if his Allies should go over to the Enemy, and join him if not paid. At the Close of his Letter he tells them, [8] That the Persons above-named came over to declare his Condition and Business, willing them to give full Faith and Credit to what they should say.

This Letter having been read, and the Messengers [9] heard; for the Reasons given in and by both, all were of Opinion, That the King in his great necessity could not be aided so speedily as he ought by the Ninth, wherefore the Great Men sought all the ways they could, (*par quoi les Grantz sercherent totes les voies quilz poaint*) that the King might be speedily aided, and thought it the best, that he should have at present a certain number of Sacks of Wooll; which was propounded to the Knights of Shires for their assents, how they might be hastily provided, and Merchants spoken to, to take them at an indifferent and equal Rate, (*& sur ce parlez as Chevaliers des Counties d'avoir lounz assent coment, &c.*) The number of Sacks agreed upon was 20000, for which the Merchants were to pay the King 40 s. per Sack Custom, besides the Price of the Wooll beyond Sea, [1] (*pur equitter ert ses dettes, & pur les ploit de ses grosses besoignes*) to discharge his Debts, and for the Exploit of his great Affairs: And it was left to the King's Choice and his Counsels beyond Sea, whether the Flemings [2] or Almans should be paid with the Money was to be received of the Merchants.

Soon



Soon after King Edward, [3] with the assistance of the Duke of Brabant, the Earl of Haynault, (whose Forces then passed under the name of Flemings, as in the Parliament Roll) and the Communities or Governments of Bruges, Gaunt, and Ipres, besieged Tournay; from which Siege he wrote [4] to Philip of Valois, without any Title or addition, That he had besought him by Messengers, and all other ways he knew reasonable, to restore his Rightful Heritage of France, and for that he saw he would not do him Reason, he had enter'd into the Country of Flanders, as Sovereign Lord thereof, signifying to him, That by the aid of Jesus Christ, and power of the Country, his own People and his Allies, he would put a short end to his Claim, if he would approach him and advance towards him. But for that Two so great Armies, as there was on both sides, could not long continue together without great damage to the People and Country, which thing every Christian ought to avoid, especially Princes and Governors of the People; he desired a brief period might be put to the Matter, and to avoid the Deaths of Christians, the Quarrel being between themselves, that the discussion of their Claims might be determined by and between their two Bodies. And if he would not consent to this way, then that it might be ended by Battel between them and an hundred of their best Men on either side. And if he would not take one of these, then that he would assign a certain day, within ten days after the date of this Letter, to fight Army with Army before the Town of Tournay. This was his desire, not out of Pride or Disdain, but that the will of Jesus Christ might be shewn between them, for the greater repose amongst Christians. Given under his Great Seal at Clyn, in the Field, the 27th day of July, in the 14th year of his Reign of England, and first of France.

To this Letter he had the following Answer returned; \* Philip 'by the Grace of God, King of France, to Edward King of England: We having seen your Letters brought to our Court, from you to Philip of Valois, in which were contained certain Requests made to Philip of Valois; and for that your Letters were not directed, or the Requests made to us, as clearly appears by the Tenor of them, we ought not to have given you any Answer, nevertheless, because we understand by the said Letters, and otherwise, that you are entred into our Kingdom of France, doing great damage to us, our Realm and our People, without Reason, not regarding what a Liegeman ought to observe toward his Lord; for you have entred into our Homage Leige, and recognized us King of France according to Reason, and promised such Obedience as Men ought to promise to their Liege Lord, as appears more clearly by your Letters Patents sealed with your Great Seal, which we have by us. Our intention therefore is, when it shall seem good unto us, to drive you out of our Realm; and that we may be able to do this, we have firm hope in Jesus Christ, from whom all our Puissance, &c. Given in the Fields near the Priory of St. Andrew, under our Privy Seal, in the absence of our Great Seal, the 30th of July, in the year of Grace 1340.

[3] Rob. Avel.  
p. 90. b. c. 30,  
31.

[4] Append.  
n. 87. a.

He besieged  
Tournay, and  
wrote to the  
King of  
France.

And sent a  
Challenge to  
him, to deter-  
min the  
Quarrel and  
their Claims,  
by Duel be-  
tween their  
Two Bodies,  
&c.

\* Ib. 87. b.  
The King of  
France his  
Answer to  
King Edward's  
Letter and  
Challenge.



[5] *Ib. Averb.*  
*ut supra* p. 91.  
c. 33.

Philip of Valois brought a great Army into the Field, but dare not fight.

The English burn and destroy 300 Cities, Towns, and Villages. And kill a vast number of French of all sorts.

Both Armies in great want of Forage and Victuals.

[6] *Ib.* p. 91.  
b. c. 34.

The King of England in great want of Money. Commissioners on both sides to Treat of a Truce.

[7] *Ibm.*

The Articles of the Truce.

Hereupon Philip of Valois [5] brought a very great Army into the Field, as was thought to raise the Siege, but he kept at such a distance off the English Army, being afraid (as says the Historian) to engage them, that he could not be provoked to fight; tho the Earl of Haynault, the Lord Walter Manny, and Reginald de Cobham, the King's Marshal, and other Officers of the Army, were sent with Parties from the Siege, who wasted the Country, destroy'd and burnt three hundred Cities, Towns, and Villages, within six Leagues round Tournay, and killed of the French Fourteen Barons, Sixscore Knights, and more then Three hundred Men at Arms.

At last both Armies being very numerous, and in great distress for want of Forage and Victuals, and the King of England especially in very great want of Money, the Two Kings consented to a Treaty of Truce until Midsummer next following. [6] The Commissioners for the King of England were, the Duke of Brabant, the Duke of Guelderland, the Marquis of Juliers, and Monsieur John de Haynault Lord of Beaumont. Those for the King of France were, John King of Bohemia and Earl of Luxemburgh, Adolph Bishop of Liege, Raoul Duke of Lorraine, Anne Earl of Savoye, and John Earl of Arminiack, who concluded a Truce between the Two Kings, their Aidants and Allies, [7] upon the ensuing Articles.

1. That no prejudice, or injury, be done by either Party to the other, during the Truce and Respite.

2. It was agreed, That the Two Kings, their Aidants and Allies, whosever they were, should remain in the same possession and seizin, they were in at that time, of all their Goods, Lands, and Possessions they held, or had acquir'd any manner of way during the Truce.

3. It was agreed, That during the Truce, the Kings, their Assistants and Allies, whoever they were, might safely go out of one Country into another, and the Merchants with all manner of Merchandise, and all other People with their Goods might go, and come as well by Land as Sea and Water, as freely as they used to do at other times, paying their Passage Money, Tolls and Customs as anciently due. The Barons and others of Gascoigny, in the Duchy of Guieu, to be comprised in this Article.

4. It was agreed, That neither of the Kings should procure, or cause to be procured by themselves or others, any grief or prejudice to be done to the other, his Friends, or Allies by the Church of Rome, or others of Holy Church whatever they were; nor to their Lands, or Subjects, by reason of the War or any other cause, nor for the service the Allies, and Assistants of both Kings had done, or should do for either of them. And if their most Holy Father, the Pope, or others, would do so, both Kings might oppose them to their Powers, without doing ill, during the Truce.

5. All



All *Prisoners of War* on both sides to be released during the *Truce*, upon their *Paroles* to return again to *Prison* when it was ended.

A 6. That there should be a *Truce* between the *English* and *Scots* for the same time, and certain *Persons* appointed upon the *Borders* of each *Kingdom* to see it observed, upon such *Conditions* as had been formerly: Which if the *Scots* refused, the *King of France* was not to assist them with Force, or any other ways to relieve and encourage them. And it was agreed, That this *Truce* should be notified, or proclaimed in *England* and *Scotland*, 26 Days after the Date thereof; [8] which was confirmed and sealed with the *Seals* of the *Commissioners* on both sides, in the *Church of Espetelyn*, on *Monday* the 25th of *September*, in the Year of Grace 1340.

[8] *Ibm.* p. 93. 4.

B In the time of this *Truce*, several *Commissions* were issued for the ending all *Controversies* between the Two *Kings*, by a full *Peace*, or long *Truce*, as they are to be found in the *Alman* or *Close Roll* in the *Tower*, in the 15th of *Edward III.* But they had no other effect than to continue the *Truce* unto the *Decollation* of *St. John Baptist*, or 29th of *August*; from thence to the *Exaltation* of the *Holy Cross*, or 14th of *September*; and from that time to *Midsummer* the next Year.

Several *Commissions* during this *Truce*, to make a firm *Peace*, without effect.

C While the *King* lay before *Tournay*, the *Scots* [9] that had not submitted to *King Edward Baliol*, came into *England*, and plundered and ravaged the *Country* as far as *Durham*; but being included in the *Truce*, as above, all *Hostility* ceased during that *Truce*.

[9] *Knights*, col. 1580. The *Scots* plundered & wasted the *Borders*.

D After the *Siege* of *Tournay*, the *King* went to *Gant*, and staid there some time; and returning into *England*, on the Feast [1] of *St. Andrew*, about midnight he arrived at the *Tower*, and next morning he sent for the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury* to *Lambeth*, but found him [2] not there. He also sent for the *Bishop* of *Chichester* his *Chancellor*, the *Bishop* of *Lichfield* and *Coventry* *Lord Treasurer*, and several others his *Great Officers*, *Clerks* of *Chancery*, and *Justices*, and imprisoned them in the *Tower*, except the *Bishops*, whom, says [3] *Robert of Avesbury*, for fear of the *Clementine Constitution*, That *Bishops* ought not to be imprisoned, he permitted to have their *Liberty*. On the 3d of *December*, the *Arch-Bishop* went to *Canterbury*, and secured himself in his *Church*, to escape future *Dangers*. Most of the *Persons* [4] sent for, or imprisoned by the *King*, were of the *King's Council* in *England*; and those who were appointed and directed in *Parliament*, to take care of the *Payment* of the *King's Debts* to the *Town of Brussels*, and other *Towns* in *Brabant* and *Flanders*, and treat with the *Merchants*, both *Foreign* and *English*, about paying the *Money*, amongst whom was the *Arch-Bishop*.

[1] *Class.* 14 *Ed III.* Part 2. M. 12. *Dor.*  
[2] *Hist. Sac.* vol. 1. f. 20. The *A. Bp.* of *Canterbury* and others of the *King's Council* imprisoned  
[3] p. 93. a. c. 35.

[4] *Rot. Parl.* 14 *Ed III.* Part 1 n. 13, 14, 15.

The *Sheriffs* [5] were commanded to send from all *Cities* and *Burghs*, in their several *Counties*, *Merchants* to be before the

[5] *Ib.* Part 2. n. 17 & 25.



About selling  
the Wooll,  
granted.

[6] n. 20, &c.  
ad 28.]

[7] n. 29.

[8] *H. B. Sac.*  
vol. 1. f. 21. 25.  
The A. Bp. of  
Canterbury's  
Advice and  
Reproof to  
the King.  
[9] *Walf. f. 150.*  
n. 10, 20, &c.

King's Council at London, or Westminster, on Monday next after the Assumption of the Virgin Mary, or 15th of August, to treat with them about buying the Ninth of Wooll in all Counties; where the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, some other Bishops, Earls, and Barons of the King's Council there named, as being nearest at hand, Treated with them, and contracted [6] for great numbers of Sacks of Wooll; the Money to be paid at Bruges within three Weeks after, or upon the Feast of the Nativity of the Virgin Mary, or 8th of September; or upon the Feast of St. Michael. The Merchants of Bard and Prussia bought much of this Wooll, and engaged to pay the Money to the People of Louvain and Malins, and several particular Persons there named, Almans and others, that had been retained by King Edward; and also sent for divers Persons to account before them, and ordered them to return the Money to the King beyond Sea.

On the 30th of July [7] the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, the Lords Chancellor and Treasurer, the Earl of Arundel, Thomas Wake of Lydell, and others of his Council in England, wrote to the King to give him an account of his Subsidy; and to let him know, That the Grant of 20000 Sacks of Wooll to raise Money speedily, was not made (in the Parlement he Summoned, before he went beyond Sea, to meet on Wednesday next after the Feast of St. Thomas, or 7th of July) until the Vigil or Eve of St. James, or 24th of the same Month: And therefore he could not wonder, nor his Allies, or good People of Flanders, That neither Wooll nor Money was then come to him; for certainly as much as could be levied of his Subsidy should come to him daily, as soon as the Pains or Knowledge of Man could cause it to be sent or paid.

The Arch-Bishop having secured himself at Canterbury, [8] the King sent Nicholas de Cantelpue with Letters of Credence, That he would come to him to London, where he might personally speak with him; but he came not, pretending some about the King had threatned to kill him. Yet though he came not, he wrote to the King, and admonished him to take good Advice, and make use of good and wise Counsellors, and to remember that by evil Counsel his Father had, contrary to the Laws of the Land and Magna Charta, imprisoned some great Men and others, adjudged them to death, seized their Goods, or put them to grievous Ransom: And what hapned to him for this cause! He also put him in mind, That by the Circumspection and Discretion of the Prelates, the Great and Wise Men of the Nation, his own Affairs had prospered, so as he possessed the Hearts of the People; and had met more Assistance from the Clergy and Laity than any of his Progenitors. But at present, by the evil Counsel of some English and others, who loved their own Profit more than his Honour, or the Safety of the People, he had imprisoned Clercs and others, against the Laws of the Land, his Coronation-Oath, and against the Great Charter; the Infringers whereof were, by the Prelates of England and the Pope's Bull, which he had by him, excommunicated. Which things he had done to the great Danger of his Soul, and Detriment of his State and Honour. He tells him, he had pronounced Excommunicate all such about him that were Favourers of Treason, Flatterers of, and imposed upon

A

B

C

D

E

F



upon him; and as his *spiritual Father beseecheth* him to hold them as such, some of which by their *Sloth, and Wicked Service and Advice*, lost *Tournay*. And requested him to call together the *Prelates, Great Men, and Peers* of the *Land*, to see and enquire in whose hands the *Wooll, Moneys, and other things* then remained, which since the *beginning* of the *War* had been granted to him for maintaining thereof; and by what means, and whose default he lost *Tournay*; and punish the *Offenders* in all things according to *Law*. And as to what concerned him, saving always the *Estate* of *Holy Church*, and his own *Order*, he was ready in all *Points* to submit to the *Judgment* of his *Peers*. This Letter was Dated at *Canterbury* the First of *January*.

In the same Month [1] he wrote to Robert Bonser (a Lay-man) late made *Chancellor* of *England*, in the place of the *Bishop* of *Chichester*, to preserve the *Liberties* of *Holy Church*, and the *Laws* of the *Land* entire: And to let him know, that the *Ninth* had levied and *destrained* for it, upon *Prelates* and others of the *Clergy*, who were not bound to pay it, as those that [2] paid the *Tenth* granted to the *Clergy*, and held nothing of the *King* by *Barony*, or were obliged to come to *Parlement*; and also exacted the *Tenth* of such as were bound to pay the *Ninth*, oppressing the *Clergy*, contra Deum & *Justitiam*, against *God* and *Justice*: Exhorting and requiring him in the *Lord* (*hortamur in Domino & requirimus*) not to permit the *Religious* and *Clergy* to pay otherwise than according to the *Form* of the *Grant* of the *Taxes*, nor give his *Advice* or *Assent* to any thing in *prejudice* of the *Great Charter*, or that might tend to the *Subversion* of *Church-Liberties*, declaring if he should make out any *Writ*, *Commission*, or *Precept* to that purpose, he should not omit to exercise such *Power* as *Holy Church* had permitted him.

He [3] wrote also to the *King* and his *Council* after this manner: (*Domino nostro Regi Consilioque suo, ac omnibus & singulis dicti Consilii sui Personis monstramus nos, Johannes permissiones divina Cantuariensis Archiepiscopus, totius Angliæ Primas, sedis Apostolicæ Legatus, &c.*) To our *Lord* the *King* and his *Council*, to all and every one of them; We *John* by *Divine Permission* *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, and the *Pope's Legate*, do declare all those that do *Arrest Clercs*, put them in *Prison*, and detain them against their *Wills*, are *Excommunicated* by *Canon*. Which Sentence he published in the *Church* of *Canterbury*, and caused it to be published by all his *Brother Suffragans*, or *Bishops* of that *Province*. After the *Denunciation* of which Sentence, several *Clercs* (there named) were taken and imprisoned (*in prejudicium Dei Ecclesiæ Sanctæ*) in *prejudice* of *God* and *Holy Church*, against the *Laws* and *Privileges* of all *Clercs*, and to the *danger* of their *Souls*, who did such things, or gave *Advice* or *Assent* to the doing of them. Wherefore he beseeched the *King* to preserve untouched the *Rights* and *Privileges* of *Holy Church*, and forthwith release the *Clercs*, and others, that had been imprisoned against the *Great Charter*, the *Laws* of the *Land*, and *Privileges* of such as were detained. And further beseeched all of the *King's Council*, who had presumed to advise the *King* to commit such things (*qui talia committendi consilium Regi dare presumerunt*) not to hinder the *Release* of those that were kept

[1] Ib. f. 151. n. 30, 40, &c. He wrote also to the Chancellor of England to preserve the Liberties of the Church.  
[2] Rot. Parl. 14 Ed. III Part 2 n. 14. & 17.

[3] Walsf. f. 152 n. 10, 20, &c. The A.Bp. declared in a Letter to the King all those Excommunicate,

Who imprisoned Clercs, or oppressed the Church.



in Prison. He also declared, That the *King's Ministers* or *Officers*, of what Condition soever, who entred the *Granges*, *Houses*, and other Places of *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, *Ecclesiasticks*, or other *Religious*, without the *Consent* of their *Bailiffs*, and took and carried away their Goods; and all those that commanded these things to be done, were involved in the same Sentence of *Excommunication*. He wished the *King* would vouchsafe to apply a fit Remedy, for he could not dissemble; but that against such, as his *Pastoral Office* required it of him, by his Brother *Bishops* of the Province, he should execute what was his and their bounden Duty. Yet it was not his *Intention*, that the *King*, *Queen*, or their *Children*, should be comprehended in this Judgment, or Sentence of *Excommunication*, as far as by Law or Right they might be excused [4] (*nostræ tamen Intentionis non existit Dominum nostrum Regem, Dominam Reginam, aut Liberos eorundem, dictis Sententiis involvi seu comprehendi, quatenus de jure poterunt excusari.*

[4] *Ibm.* n. 50.[5] *Ib.* f. 153.  
n. 20, 30, 40,  
&c.[6] *Ibm.* f. 154.  
n. 30.

As he had resolved [5] he wrote to all the *Bishops* of his Province [6] and commanded them to declare *Excommunicate* all such as deprived Churches of their Rights, or by Malice infringed or disturbed their Liberties or free Customs; and those especially that violated the ancient Liberties and free Customs of his Church of *Canterbury*, or in any manner diminished them, or did any thing contrary to its Privileges. Also those that disturbed the Peace and Quiet of the Kingdom, or that gave Advice or Assistance to, or favoured them. Also those who by any Art or Trick whatsoever (*quacunque arte vel ingenio*) should violate, break, diminish, or change any of the Liberties and free Customs contained in the Great Charter, or Charter of the Forest, privately or openly, by Word, Deed, or Advice, or the ancient Liberties and free Customs granted by them to the City of London, should be declared *Excommunicate*. And then he directs them to proceed in the same manner against all such as imprisoned Clerics, or entred into the Houses, Granges, Ba- &c. of *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, &c. as above.

[7] *Ibm.* f. 154.  
n. 30, 40 &c.  
The King's  
Letter concerning the  
A. Bp. of *Canterbury* and his  
Crimes.

The King, moved with this Behaviour of the *Arch-Bishop* [7] wrote to the *Bishop* of London, and the Prior and Chapter of *Canterbury*, in harsh and severe Language, how he had been used by the *Arch-Bishop*, and charged him with many great Crimes; as, that being exalted to the Throne in his Nonage, desiring to be directed by sound Counsel, believing him in Fidelity and Discretion to exceed all Men, and using him as the Director of his Soul, and likewise the Affairs of his Kingdom, and receiving him into great Familiarity; and seeing the Kingdom of France devolved to him by Right of Succession, and was usurped by Philip of Valois, he with great Importunity persuaded him to make a Confederacy against Philip with the German Princes (*idem Archiepiscopus nobis importuna instantia persuasit cum Principibus Alemannie contra dictum Philippum fœdus inire*) exposing us and our Affairs to the Charge and Hazard of War; promising and affirming, That he would cause abundantly to be supplied the necessary Expences from the Revenue of our Lands, and Subsidies; adding further, That we need only take care to have ready expert and stout Soldiers. Then he tells how he went beyond Sea, and entred into a War at



- at a vast Expence, obliging himself to his Confederates in great Sums of Money upon the promised Aid ; but trusting to a broken Reed, and his Assistance in Money not coming to him, he was forced to contract unprofitable Debts under the greatest Usury ; and so as he could not prosecute his Expedition, but must of necessity return into *England* : Where declaring to the Arch-Bishop his *Streights* and *Misfortunes*, he called a *Parlement*, which gave him the *Ninths* as above, and the *Clergy* a *Tenth* ; which if fully collected, and in due time, had probably been sufficient for the carrying on his War, and the Payment of his Debts, to the no small Confusion of his Enemies. Then he says the Arch-Bishop promised again to assist him effectually toward Collecting the *Subsidy*, and administering other *Necessaries* : Whence trusting to his promised Assistance, he again passed over Sea, and obtained his Sea-Victory, as before related ; and afterwards besieged *Tournay*, as aforesaid ; when every day expecting by the Arch-Bishop's Management to be relieved, in so great Necessities, with what had been promised him, his Hopes failed : And though by many Letters and Messengers he had signified to him, and others of his Counsellors his Adherents, the Wants and Dangers he was in for want of Money, being put off with frivolous Excuses and fine Words, by which they palliated their Fraud and Malice, he was forced unwillingly to consent to a Truce, to his Shame, and the Hindrance of his Expedition. At length his faithful Friends, Companions, and Participants in his Adventure and Tribulation (*tandem convenerunt ad nos amici Fideles, Peregrinationis nostræ Comites, & Tribulationis nostræ participes*) with whom he discoursed how he might most aptly be delivered from his present Misfortunes, all agreed the Fault was the Arch-Bishop's, either by *Sloth* or *Negligence*, if not *Malice* ; murmuring against him, that he had not corrected the Insolence of the Arch-Bishop and Officers (*Archiepiscopi & Officialium Insolentiam, &c.*) which if he should not do speedily, they threatned to quit his Service, and withdraw themselves from the Confederacy. Whence thinking of the *Discipline* and *Correction* of his Officers (*unde nos ad disciplinam & correctionem nostrorum officialium mentis aciem dirigens*) he removed some from their Offices for *Mal-administration*, by subversion of Justice oppressing the People, and taking Bribes : Others of less Note he committed to Prison ; and believing he might have a more full account of the Actions of his Officers from the Arch-Bishop, to whom he had committed for a long time all the Administration of all his Affairs, he sent *Nicholas Cantilupe* to command him to come speedily to *London*, that he might have Personal Discourse with him ; but being always Proud, and fearful in Adversity, he pretended Danger from some about him, if he should stir out of the Church of *Canterbury*. The second time he sent to him *Ralph Stafford*, Steward of his Household, with Letters of safe Conduct, to come to, and inform him about the Business of the Kingdom : But contemning his Requests and Messages, with an haughty Look he answered, That he would not meet, come to, or confer with him, but in full *Parlement*, which at that time it was not rationally expedient to convene (*quod in his diebus ex causis rationalibus non expedit convocari.*) Then recounting his great Bounty and Beneficence toward him, his extraordinary



ordinary Respect and Affection to him, and the mighty Trust and Confidence he had in him, declares how ungrateful he was, and how he had deceived him, wounding his Innocence, by railing at, and reproaching the Justice, Fidelity, and Diligence of his Officers, by Preaching publickly, and sending Letters into divers Parts, That by Royal Power and against Justice, the People had lately been oppressed, the Clergy confounded, the Kingdom over-burdened with Exactions, Taxes, and Tallages. And because he falsely endeavoured to obtain the Name of a Good Pastor, which he always wanted, yet truly he was a notorious Mercenary by common Opinion, and his own publick Confession; (*& quia nomen boni Pastoris, quo hactenus semper caruit, &c.*) he applied himself to assert the Liberty of the Church; which if it had been injured or grieved, either in Persons or Things (*in rebus vel Personis*) it was only and truly to be ascribed to the Remissness, crafty Intentions, and reprobate Counsels of the Arch-Bishop (*Archiepiscopi duntaxat remissioni, & callidis adinventionibus, ac reprobis consiliis sunt veraciter ascribende*) wickedly pretending he had certain Sentences and Articles of Excommunication, made in general against the Violators of Church-Liberty and the Great Charter, to blacken the Good Opinion the People then had of the King, to defame his Ministers, traiterously to raise Sedition amongst the People, and to withdraw the Affections of the Earls, Barons, and Great Men from him. Wherefore being willing, as he was bound, to secure the Integrity of his Fame, to obviate the Malice of the Arch-Bishop, and to avoid the Snares laid for him and his, he desired to publish some other of his Actions, besides those above repeated; to wit, That by his improvident Advice in his Nonage, he had made so many prodigal prohibited Gifts and Alienations, and done so many excessive Favours, that his Treasury was exhausted, and his Crown-Rents beyond measure diminished; and that corrupted by Bribes, he had without reasonable cause remitted great Sums of Money due to him, and had given much of his Rents and Revenue, which ought to have been applied to his own use, to Persons not deserving, or converted it to his own Use; and presumed to attempt other things to the Detriment of his Estate, Damage of his Royal Dignity, and Grievance of his Subjects, abusing the Power committed to him. Commanding those to whom this Letter was directed, to publish it, and cause others to publish it, in such Places as they should think convenient. Witnes his Self at Westminster, the 12th of February, in the 15th of his Reign.

[8] *Hist. Sacr.*  
Vol. 1. f. 23.  
The A. Bp.  
published the  
K. 's Letters,

and makes his  
Defence.

[9] *Ibm.*

On Ash-wednesday, being the 21st of February, the Arch-Bishop Preached in the Cathedral of Canterbury, and [8] at the end of his Sermon he told the People, there were Letters directed by the King to the Prior and Convent against him, which he desired might be read: Which was done by order of the Prior, and the Contents of them published in the English Tongue. Against which the Arch-Bishop in every Point defended his Innocence; and then admonished the People to pray for the King, Queen, and their Children; and to those that should do so devoutly, and also pray for the State of Holy Church, being penitent, and sorry for their Sins, he granted Forty Days Indulgence from Purgatory. And the next Day, being the Chair of St. Peter at Antioch, or the 22d of that Month, [9] the Abbot of St. Augustines in Canterbury, to whom



whom and his Convent the like Letters had been sent, published them to the People, *expounding* them in *Hatred* to the *Arch-Bishop* (in *odium Archiepiscopi*) that so the People might have an *ill Opinion* of him.

The Abbot of *S. Augustines* published them to the Disadvantage of the A. Bp.

A The very same *Complaints* against this *Arch-Bishop* the King [1] sent to the *Pope*, tho' in somewhat smoother Language in some parts of the *Epistle*; and *requests* he might be by him removed out of the *Kingdom*, for preserving the Peace of it, and preventing other Dangers that might be feared to ensue, if he staid there, *Dat. apud Langele 14 die Martii.*

[1] *Ret. Rom.* 14 *Ed. III. M.* 4. The King sent to the Pope to remove him out of the Kingdom.

B The *Arch-Bishop* wrote an *Answer* to the King's Letter, which bears this Title, [2] (*Excusatio Archiepiscopi ad famosum Libellum*) The Excuse or Answer of the *Arch-Bishop* to the *slandorous Libel*; addressing himself by way of Preface to the King, telling him There were two things by which the World was Governed, the *Holy Pontifical Authority*, and the *Royal Ordained Power*; of which the Charge of the *Priests* was the greatest and highest, inasmuch as they were in the last Judgment to give an account of *Kings*: Wherefore he ought to know, that they depend upon the Judgment of *Priests*, who might not be directed by their Wills; for who could doubt but *Christ's Priests* were to be thought the Fathers and Masters of *Kings*, *Princes*, and all faithful People. [3] (*Reverendo Domino suo Edwardo Dei gratia, &c. Duo sunt quibus principaliter regitur iste Mundus, Sacra Pontificalis Autoritas, & Regalis Ordinata Potestas; in quibus est pondus tanto gravius & sublimius Sacerdotum, quanto & de Regibus illi in divino reddituri sunt examine rationem. Et ideo scire debet Regia celsitudo ex illorum vos dependere iudicio, non illos ad vestram posse dirigi voluntatem. Quis enim dubitat Sacerdotes Christi Regum, & Principum, omniumque fidelium Patres & Magistros censeri?*) And he proceeds to inform him, that many *Bishops*

[2] *Hist. sacr.* vol. c. f. 27. The A. Bp.'s Answer to the King's Letter, which he call's a famous Libel.

C had [4] *Excommunicated Kings* and *Emperors*; and also to inform him what Good *Kings* were to do, and how to behave themselves toward *Bishops*, and what *Reverence*, *Honour*, and *Respect* was due to them. And he complains, that the *Honour* due to him, in regard of his *Dignity*, and as he was his Father, was turned into *Disgrace*, *Devotion* into *Reviling*, and *Reverence* into *Contempt*; (*sed proh dolor, &c. Honor nobis exhibendus conversus est in Opprobrium, Devotio in Blasphemiam, Reverentia in Contemptum*) whilst his *Epistles* sealed with the *Royal Seal*, but more truly *slandorous Libels*; [5] (*dum Epistolas vestras Regio sigillo Signatas, quin verius Libellos famosos*) dictated and written by his *Enemies*, containing many *Crimes* falsely imputed to him, were sent to the *Bishops* of his Province, *Deans*, *Abbots*, *Priors*, their *Convents* and *Chapters*, to be published to his, and would to God not to the injury of him too; (*in nostram, utinam non in divinam injuriam.*) By which

[3] *Ibm.*

D E unthought of, that he might not say detestable Fact, *Royal Power* presumed to Judge the Lord God in his Servants and *Priests*; and he seemed to condemn him his *Spiritual Father*, and greatest Peer of the Land, against the Order of God, *Human Law*, and natural Reason, not called, not convicted by Record, and unheard, to the Danger of his Soul, and as an ill Example to the manifest Prejudice of all the Peers of England. At last, making great Profession of his Affection

[4] *Ibm.* f. 28.

F to

[5] *Ibm.*



to him, and the great *SerVICES* he had done him, he comes to his Answer, here following: That [6] whereas he accused him, That when the *Kingdom* of *France* was devolved to him by Right of Succession, he importuned him to make a League with the *Almain* to recover his Rights and was only to find expert Soldiers, and he would find Money; which failing, you were, you say, forced to contract great Debts upon Usury. [7] To this he said, That in the beginning of his Government, when he was Bishop of Winchester, it was known by whose Counsel he was Governed. That when the Kingdom had devolved to him by Hereditary Right, and so judged in the Parlement at Northampton, the two Bishops of \* Worcester, Coventry and Litchfield, were sent into France to Claim that Kingdom in your Name, and to hinder the Coronation of Philip de Valois; which Embassie was the greatest occasion of the War. We at that time were not employed in any of your Affairs, but were hated at Court, for what cause God knows. Afterwards, when it pleased your Majesty to call me, with others of your Privy Council, to transact the Publick Affairs, we considering the Danger of Mens Souls, Bodies, and Goods, by a devouring War, endeavoured with all our Power to make Peace between the Two Kingdoms; but [8] after all Endeavours for Peace proved unsuccessful, and Philip had made War upon you, then in a Parlement at Westminster, called for that Purpose, seeing the Obstinacy of Philip, it was agreed you should League with the Germans or Almain, and others. As for the Payment of the Expences of this War, there were Agreements made with certain Merchants in a Council at Stamford, which are to be found in Chancery; which if observed, together with other Subsidies granted both by Clergy and Laity, and the great Customs of Wooll, not only in our own, but in the Opinion of all the Council, had been sufficient for the whole War, if well managed. [9] And your Majesty knows well, that these Agreements were not broken or changed by us, nor did the Subsidies come to our hands; because after your first Passage we staid not in this Kingdom, but with the Reverend Fathers the Cardinals and Bishop of Durham, went into France to treat of Peace, often going backward and forward from and to your self, then in Brabant; and afterward, when there was no hopes of Peace, staid some time with you there, and were made Partakers of your Necessities, and with other Prelates and Great Men of England, became bound with you for great Sums upon Usury.

The [1] second thing charged upon him in the King's Letters, he says, was yet more wonderful (That when the Ninth was granted, he promised effectually to assist in the levying of it; but that by reason of the nonperformance of that Promise, when before Tournay, he was forced to consent to a Truce, contrary to his Mind;) To this he said, the whole Subsidy for the Ninth for the first Year, was assigned to his Creditors before his second Passage, as might appear by the Assignations themselves; and therefore it was manifest, that he neither promised to send, nor could send any thing to the Siege of Tournay, especially not knowing when it began.



- To the [2] third thing, (That the *Necessities* and great *Streights* he was in were brought upon him by his *Fault*, *Negligence*, and *Malice*, as also of his other *Officers*, some of whom he was forced to remove, and imprison others, lest his Friends that were with him, and Allies beyond Sea, should leave him: And when desiring to have a better *Information* of his *Affairs*, he sent for him, &c.) The *Arch-Bishop* affirms, he made no Promise [3] to send Money to him; and therefore such as Warred in his Service, could not complain of his *Fraud* or *Negligence*. And professing again how diligent he had been, and faithful, both then and at all times in his Service, he says, [4] as concerning his Faithful Friends, and those that accompanied him in his Enterprizes beyond Sea, who desired a fit Remedy to be applied to those ill Services, that brought him into those Inconveniences and Misfortunes; it was to be believed, according to their Words, that as culpable or guilty of any Fault, they were to be punished by just, not arbitrary Process. Then as to his Two Messengers, first *Nicholas Cantilupe*, bringing the King's Letters of Credence, he only cited and enjoined him to go into *Brabant* to pay the King's Debts, and stay there while they were paid; so that if he had been summoned to have been at *London* with the King, as his Letters intimated, he must have been here and beyond Sea at the same time. As to *Ralph de Stafford*, he came without Letters, and by bare Word cited him to come to the King, affirming he ought not to fear any Treachery, [5] and says (this notwithstanding) that tho' the King's Letters of Conduct at first view seemed sufficient for his coming to, staying at, and returning from his Councils, if he had been summoned, as he was not; yet the same day he received these Letters of Conduct, the *Sheriff* of *Canterbury* brought him the King's Writ to appear at *London* before the King and Council upon a Contempt: So as tho' the King's Letter gave him free liberty of returning, yet by the King's Writ he was of necessity to fall into his Enemies hands; [6] (*quod non decuit, nec decuisset Regiam Majestatem*) which became not, nor could become Royal Majesty: Nevertheless, he was, and should always be ready to answer what should be objected against him, before the Prelates and Peers, saving his State and Order; *Statu nostro & Ordine semper salvo*.
- As to what was [7] charged upon him (for publishing Sentence of Excommunication, and commanding it to be published, against the Violators of Ecclesiastic Liberty and the Great Charter, to blacken the King's Reputation, defame his Ministers, and traiterously move Sedition amongst the People, and to withdraw the Affections of the Earls, Barons, Nobles, and Great Men, from the King) because it seemed to affix the Crime of Treason upon him, in which case no King or Temporal Lord could be his competent Judge, he protested openly and publicly, by these Presents, That what he said, or should say, he intended not to prejudice his State in any thing, but wholly to decline Trial by any Secular Judge whatever: [8] *Quia præmissa proditoris crimen in Caput nostrum retorquere videntur, quo casu Rex nullus, vel Dominus Temporalis, judex noster competens esse potest, sicut satis Superius est ostensum; protestamur palam, & publice per Presentes, Quod dicta vel dicenda, in nullo, Statui nostro prejudicare intendimus in hac parte, sed judicis cujuscunque Secularis examen*



[9] *Ibm.* f. 35.

*totaliter declinari.* At last, as to [9] his Prodigality in giving away the Revenues of the Crown to undeserving Persons, and wasting the Product of them, and converting the King's Treasure to his own use, he utterly denies it, asserting again his Innocence, and the great Service he had done, the Labour and Expences he had been at for the Crown. And near his Conclusion he says, *Hec* [1] *ad Libellum famosum responsa sufficient in presenti*; This may suffice for Answer to the scandalous Libel at present, and wisheth for the King's Honour it had neither been wrote or published.

[1] *Ibm.* 36.[2] *Ibm.* f. 36, 37, 38.

The King's Reply to the A. Bp.'s Answer.

The King [2] replied very briefly to this Answer, reproves him for his insolent and undutiful Language; tells him how much he Honoured and Revered his Spiritual Fathers, and that he ought not to overlook their Offences, when he saw them tending to the Danger of him and his Government: And shews him his Mistake, when he complained he was condemned of Capital Crimes, being absent and unheard, as if he in those Letters wrote in his own Vindication only, had proceeded criminally against him; and forbids him and all other Bishops to publish any Sentences of Excommunication, or other things, against the Rights of his Crown, or derogatory to his Royal Dignity and Prerogative, as they had been always used by his Progenitors.

A Parlement called.

[3] *Claus.* 15  
Ed III. Part 1  
M. 37. *Dors.*  
A. D. 1341.  
[4] *Rot. Parl.*  
l. 3. p. 8.

The A. Bp. humbles himself to the King, and begs pardon.

During this Controversie between the King and Arch-Bishop, there was a Parlement called to meet at Westminster, on Monday next after the Quinden of Easter, the Writ of Summons in ordinary bearing Date March 3. at Wedestoke. [3] In this Parlement the Arch-Bishop appeared, and humbled himself to the King; [4] (*le dit Ercevesque se humilia a nostre Seigneur le Roy*) requesting his Favour and Good-will, to which the King received him, and for which the Prelates and Great Men gave him all possible Thanks they could think of. And then the Arch-Bishop prayed the King, That having been defamed through the whole Kingdom, he might be Arraigned before his Peers in full Parlement; (*qu'il puisse estre arefnez en pleyne Parlement devant les Piers*) which the King granted; (*quen chose le Roy ottraia*) but said, he would that the Business touching the State of the Kingdom and Common Benefit, should be first dispatched.

[5] *Ibm.* n. 43.  
A Committee appointed to examine the A. Bp.'s Answer to the King.

Afterwards [5] in the same Parlement, the Bishops of Durham and Salisbury, the Earls of Northampton, Warwick, Arundel, and Salisbury, were appointed to hear the Answer of the Arch-Bishop, to the things charged upon him by the King (*de choses que lui sont surmys par le Roi*) so as if his Answer was allowed; then the King of his good Grace should hold him excused (*adonques le Roi de la bon grace lui tenra pur excusez.*) And in case his Answer seemed not sufficient to the King and his Council, then it was to be debated in the next Parlement, and there Judgment given concerning it; and in the mean time all things [6] touching the Arraignment of him (*totes les choses touchants la reinement Lercevesque de Cantirbery*) remained with Sir William Kildesby, Keeper of the Privy Seal.

[6] *Ibm.* n. 49.



The next Parliament was in the 17th of Edw. III. when the King [7] commanded, that the things touching the Arraignment (*les choses touchants l'arrement Lersevesque de Canturbis*) of the Arch-Bishop, which remained in the hands of Sir William de Kil-desby, to be advised upon this Parliament, (*pur aver ent avissement de ce Parlement, soient adnullés, & ouster de tut*) should be annulled and totally outed or laid aside, as such as were neither reasonable or true: (*come celles que ne sont pas raisonnables ne veritables*) and Master John de Urford was commanded to bring them into Parliament, to be vacated there.

[7] *Ret. Parl.*  
17 E. III.  
n. 22.  
The things against the Arch-Bishop to be vacated in Parlement, as neither reasonable or true. Note what year this was.

The Parliament in the 15th of Edward the Third, which began on Monday next after the Quinden of Easter, being that year April 23. because the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men were not fully come (*pur ce que les Prelats, Countes, Barons, & autres Grantz, ne sont pas pleinement venus*) was continued [1] from day to day until Thursday; when the cause of Summons was [2] declared with the common Preface, That Philip de Valois, who called himself King of France, had wrongfully seized his Lands, Seigniories, and other Possessions in the Dutchy of Guien, and other-where; and also, as much as he could, supported his Enemies the Scots against him; That it had been agreed by the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and the Commonalty of the Land in full Parliament, that he should pass beyond Sea to purchase Friends, Allies, and Retainers, to help him to conquer his Rights, (*que nostre Seignieur le Roi se purchaseroit amys, allies, & retenantz qui lui purroient aider a conquer ces droictures, &c.*) to which purpose there had been granted many Aids that had been diverted, and spent by some of his Officers and others, to his great damage, and hindrance of all his Business; That he intended not to ask any new Subsidy, but charged and requested very earnestly the Great Men, and others of the Commons, that they would Treat together, and advise among themselves, that is to say, the Great Men by their selves, and the Knights of Counties, Citizens, and Burgeses by themselves, (*si ad il chargez & priez en chargeance manere les ditz Grantz, & autres de la Commune, gils se treisent ensemble & savisent entre eux, cest assavoir les Grantz de par eux, & les Chivalers des Countes, Citeyns & Burgeys de pas eux*) how he might best be served, and receive the Arrear of the Ninth for the first year; and how he might most speedily receive them for the second year, before the Feast of St. John Baptist next coming, for the Achievement of his great Business, with the aid of God; and to give their Answer on Saturday next following.

[1] *Ret. Parl.*  
15 E. III.  
n. 4.  
[2] *Ib. n. 5.*  
The cause of Summons to Parlement declared.

But the Consideration of this Matter was put off, until the King's Answers [3] to the Petitions of the Great Men, the Commons, and Clergie, were made into Statutes, which were shewn to the King, with certain Conditions demanded by the Great Men, and Commons, upon the grant of 30000 Sacks of Wooll made to him, in compensation of the Ninth of the second year; (*od ascuns conditions que les Grantz & la Commune demanderent du Roi sur le grant, quil ferroient a lui de 30000 \* sakes de leyn in recompensacion de la neofisme garb, aignel, & toison del an second*;) The Statutes and Conditions were read before the King, and the great Officers and Justices required to Swear to the Observation of them, as it might in their plates belong to them. The Chancellor, Treasurer,

[3] *Ib. n. 42.*

\* Then with the Custom about the value of 180000 l. Statutes made with Conditions.



The Chancellor, Treasurer, and some Justices, would not consent to them.

surer, and some of the Justices made *Protestation*, they neither consented to the *making*, or *form* of them, nor that they could observe them, in case they were contrary to the Laws and Usages of the Kingdom, which by Oath they were bound to keep; yet these *Statutes* and *Conditions* were sealed with the Great Seal, and delivered to the *Great Men* and *Knights* of Counties, (*as Grantz, & as Chivalers du Countees.*)

Some of the King's Answers to the Articles, or Petitions of the Clergy brought in by the Arch-Bishop, and other Bishops, are remarkable. As to the second, That the Liberties of the

[4] Ib. n. 20.  
The King's Answer to some of the Conditions.

[4] Church, and all Liberties granted to any other Estate, or Persons, may be observed; and that the Great Charter may be proclaimed again, and confirmed by Oath: The King's Answer was, He would the Observation of the Great Charter, and other Liberties; which being exemplified [5] under the Great Seal, he thought was sufficient, and that there was no need of Swearing to it, considering that in the Kingdom there were already too many Perjured, (*par trop y ad parjurs en son roialme.*)

[6] Ib. n. 23.

To the fifth, That [6] several of the King's Officers, and others, have enter'd into *Religious Houses* and *Parsonages*, and by force taken away their Goods, and further by *Oaths* forced upon Religious Persons and Parsons, have enquired of things within their Houses, and them so found have carried away, his Answer was; [7] That he would not that any Man should enter into the Churches *fee* against their Liberties, nor would that any of his Officers should enter into the Churches, Lands, or Houses, to take their Goods; but if *Laymen* to defraud him brought their Goods thither, he thought himself wronged.

[7] Ib. n. 30, 31.

[8] Ib. n. 25.

To the seventh, [8] That the Kings Officers levied of Parsons, Rectors of Churches, the *Ninth Sheaf*, the *Ninth Lamb*, and the *Ninth Fleece*, when they ought only to have paid their Tenth, the Answer was, [9] He would not the *Ninths* or *Tenths* to be otherwise paid then they were granted, that is, the *Ninths* by such as held a *Barony*, or used to be summoned to Parliament. And then the King [1] granted for him and his Heirs, That if any Person do any act against the form of the Great Charter, or any other good Law, that he should answer in Parliament, or other place where he ought by Law to answer.

[9] Ib. n. 32.

[1] Ib. n. 35.

Where the Statutes and Conditions are.

The Statutes, and the Conditions above-mentioned, are enter'd into the back of the Roll, and Printed in the *Statutes at Large* this year, and are a true Translation of the Record in French. In the Third Chapter of the Statutes it was agreed, That the Chancellor, Treasurer, Barons, and Chancellor of the Exchequer, the Justices of both Benches, Justices assigned in the Country, Steward, and Chamberlain of the King's House, Keeper of the Privy Seal, Treasurer of the Wardrobe, Controllers, and those that were appointed to remain and be about the Duke of Cornwall, should then be sworn in Parliament; and so from thenceforth at all times, when they should be put in Office, to keep and maintain the Privileges and Franchises of Holy Church, the Points of the Great Charter, the Charter of the Forest, and all other Statutes, without breaking any Point.

Great Officers to be sworn in Parliament.

Orders about the Justices and great Officers.

In the 4th Chapter of the same Statutes it is said it was agreed, That if any of the Officers aforesaid, or Controullers, or Chief Clerk

A

B

C

D

E

F



A Clerk in either Bench, by Death or by other Cause, be put out of his Office, that the King by assent of the Great Men, which should be nearest him in the Country, and by the good Counsel he should have about him, should put another convenient into his Office, who was to be Sworn according to the Form aforesaid: And that in every Parliament the King should take into his Hands, at the third day thereof, the Offices of all the Ministers aforesaid, and so to remain four or five days, except the Offices of the Justices of both Benches, Justices assigned, and Barons of the Exchequer; so as they might be put to answer every Complaint: And if by Complaint, or otherwise, they or any of them should be found faulty, then to be *attainted* in Parliament, and punished by Judgment of the Peers, and outed of his or their Office, and another convenient put in his place: And the King was to cause Execution to be done without delay, according to the Judgment of the Peers in Parliament.

B It is very probable, that these Agreements concerning the Officers were the *Contrivances* of the Arch-Bishop, Bishops, and Clergie; for it was a great trouble to them, that the Chancellor, Treasurer, and many other Officers who were Clerks, had been put out of their Offices (as hath been related before) at the King's arrival in England; and others, that were Lay or Secular Persons, placed therein. [2] *Rex Edwardus Angliam intravit, ministros suos videlicet Cancellarium, Thesaurarium, & alios amovit; non Clericos, imo Seculares ad placitum suum substituit.*

C The Statutes above-mentioned were some months after the making of them (that is, on the first of October next following) revoked by the King, as contrary to the Laws and Customs of the Land, his Prerogatives and Royal Rights, by the Advice and Consent of the Earls, Barons, and other Wisemen; as appears by the Revocation it self of the same Date, directed to the Sheriff of Lincoln, Printed in this year in the Statutes at Large, and in Pulton; as likewise by a Writ directed to the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury. The King [3] to the Venerable Father in Christ, John

D Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, Primate of all England, Greeting: 'Whereas some time since in our Parliament at Westminster, assembled in the Quinden of Easter last past, there were certain Petitions made, expressly contrary to the Laws and Customs of England, and not only very prejudicial, but reproachful also to our Royal Dignity; which if we had not permitted to have been drawn into a Statute, the said Parliament had been without success, and dissolved in Discord, and so our Wars with France and Scotland, which we principally undertook by your Advice, had very likely been (which God forbid) in ruin; And we, to avoid such dangers, permitting Protestations of revoking those things, when we could conveniently, that had so been extorted from us against our will, yet permitted them to be sealed with our Seal at that time: And afterward by the advice and assent of the Earls, Barons, and other Wisemen, for Lawful Causes, because our consent was wanting (or as it is in the Revocation, directed to the Sheriff of Lincoln, because we never consented to the making of the Statute; but as then it behoved us, we dissimuled in the Premisses, &c.) we have declared it null, and that it ought not to have the name and force of a Statute. And we under-

Contrived by the Clergy.

[2] *Walsingh.* f. 150. l. 13.

The Statutes and Conditions above-mentioned revoked.

[3] Append. n. 88. The King's Writ to the Arch-Bishop that in a Provincial to be holden at London,

Nothing be done prejudicial to him or his Crown.



Not to confirm the Statute and Conditions.

‘understand, you have commanded a Provincial Council to meet at London, on the morrow of St. Luke next coming; in which you intend to excite the Bishops of your Province against us, and to ordain and declare some things prejudicial to us, about confirming the said pretended Statute, and for the enervation, depression, and diminution of our Royal Jurisdiction, Rights and Prerogatives; for the preservation whereof we are bound by Oath; also concerning the Process depending between us and you for certain Matters charged upon you by us; and that you intend to promulge grievous Censures concerning these things: We willing to prevent so great mischief, do strictly forbid, that in that Council you do not propound, or any ways attempt, or cause to be attempted any thing in derogation, or diminution of our Royal Dignity, Power, or Rights of the Crown, or of the Laws and Customs of our Kingdom, or in prejudice of the Process aforesaid, or in confirmation of the pretended Statute, or otherwise in contumely of our Name and Honour, or to the grievance or disadvantage of our Counsellors or Servants. Know ye, that if you do these things, we will prosecute you, as our Enemy and Violator of our Rights, with as much severity as lawfully we may. Witness the King at Westminster the first day of October.

The Revocation was confirmed, or rather the Statute vacated in Parliament the 17th of Edward the Third, in the very next Title or Number to the Acquittal of the Arch-Bishop, as followeth;

[4] Append.  
n. 89.  
The Revocation confirmed in Parliament.

[4] ‘Also it is accorded and assented unto, That the Statute made at Westminster in the Quinden of, or fifteen days after Easter, shall be wholly repealed and annulled, and loose the name of a Statute, as being prejudicial, and contrary to the Laws and Usages of the Kingdom, and the Rights and Prerogatives of the King. But for that there are some Articles in the same Statute which are reasonable and agreeable to Law, (as in the Revocation in Print) ‘tis agreed by the King and his Council, that those Articles, and others, accorded in this present Parliament, shall be made into a new Statute, by the advice of Justices and other Sages, which shall be perpetual.

20000 Sacks of Wooll to be Transported.

[5] Rot. Parl.  
15 E. III.  
n. 45.

The Necessitous Condition of the King's Affairs requiring 20000 Sacks of Wooll to be [5] transported before Michaelmas next coming, it was provided, That no Man before that time should send over Sea any Wooll, on pain of thrice the value, and loss of Life and Member.

[6] Hist. Sacr.  
vol. 1. f. 39, 40.  
The Arch-Bishop not permitted to enter the Painted Chamber where the Lords sate in Parliament.

How this Arch-Bishop was prohibited, and kept from entering in at the Door of the Painted Chamber, where the Parliament sate, by Two Serjeants at Arms placed there by the King; we have it in Birchington, the Monk of Canterbury, [6] in his Life. On Saturday, the Feast of St. Vital, or 28th of April, being the sixth day of the Parliament, he came to Westminster, and to the Door of the Painted Chamber; The Serjeants told him, they could not permit him to go in; To whom he said, the King called him to Parliament by his Writ, That he was after the King the greatest, and ought to have the first Voice, (*ego sum major post Regem, primam vocem habere debens*) That he challenged the Rights of his Church of Canterbury, and demanded entrance into the Chamber; but the Serjeants expressly denied it to him, and to the Bishops of London and Chichester, who were with him. Then advancing his Cross, he



he told them, That he would not depart from that place until the King should command him; at length, staying there, the Earls of Northampton and Salisbury coming out, he desired them to acquaint the King with what had been done; and that they would request him in his Name, to preserve the Right of the Church of Canterbury. At last, with his Fellow Bishops, and the Bishop of Ely, he was admitted into the Chamber, where Treating with the Prelates and Peers of the Land, the King withdrew. On Thursday following, being the 3d of May, in full Parliament, he with Ten Bishops, Eight Earls, Four Abbots, Eight Barons, (all there named) the King's Chamberlain, John Darcy, Bartholomew Burghersh, the Mayor of London, the Barons of the Cinque-Ports, and Knights of the Community of England, (*ac militibus communitatis Angliæ*) appeared before the King, and supplicated him for the Arch-Bishop, who admitted him into favour; but did not then (as Birchinton affirms) excuse him wholly from his Crimes, as is clear from the Parliament Records above cited.

Not long after the Dissolution of this Parliament, Lewis the Emperor [7] wrote to King Edward, That Philip King of France had given him Authority by his Letters, to Mediate a Peace between them; which, tho' incumber'd with many and weighty Affairs, he was willing to undertake, it being very expedient for, and advantageous to himself, Kingdom, and Allies; if he would give him like Power by his Letters to Treat of, and make a Peace, or Truce for a year or two. Nor (as he says) ought the Friendship enter'd into, and contracted between him and Philip King of France, move King Edward; for since he had made Truce and Agreement (meaning the Truce at Tournay) with Philip without his knowledge, will, or assent; by advice of his Princes, who knew his Leagues, Agreements and Unions, to whom it seemed he might with Honour make Agreement and Friendship with the King of France, he had contracted and enter'd into Union with him. And for the Causes before noted he revoked his Commission, by which he had made him Vicar of the Empire; yet certainly letting him know, that in his Mediation and Treaties he would provide for him like a Brother; and if he would acquiesce in his Advice, his Cause should be brought to a good end by his assistance. And for his further intimation he sent to him one of his Chaplains, who he desired might speedily be sent back. These Letters were dated at Francfort, June the 24th.

To which Letter King Edward sent his Answer, [8] That he had received it with Respect; and then reciting the chief Contents of it, commends his Zeal for making an Agreement between him and Philip of Valois, giving him notice, That he always wish't for a reasonable Peace with him, which he had prosecuted as much as he could with Justice; and that he then desired such a Peace, as he wished for, might be procured at the instance of so great a Mediator. But because he knew his Right in the Kingdom of France to be sufficiently clear, he would not by his Letters commit it to a doubtful Arbitration or Judgment; much wondering he should join with Philip, that had done him such notorious injury, when seeing the evident Justice he had for his Demands, and Philip's obstinacy in not complying with them, he had for that reason enter'd into a League with him. And as

At last he was permitted to enter.

And admitted to favour by the supplication of Great Men.

[7] Append. n. 90.

The Emperor by Letter offers his Mediation of a Peace with France.

[8] Append. n. 91.

King Edward by his Letter refuseth to accept it.



to what was said, That he *without* his *knowledge* or *assent* had made a *Truce*, and entred into a *Treaty* of *Peace* with *Philip*, considering the *Circumstances* of the *Fact* it *ought* not *rationaly* to have *moved* him; because at that time he *besieged* *Tournay*, and ought to follow the *advice* of those that were with him, and gave him their *assistance*; Considering also that *Winter* was coming on, and the *distance* between them, he could not be *permitted* to *consult* him. And further he put him in mind, That he had *granted*, that when he had *opportunity* he might *Treat* without his *knowledge*; but so as not to make a *final* *Peace* with *Philip* without his *consent*, which he never *intended* to do. It seemed also to some, that the *Revocation* of the *Vicarship* was too *suddenly* done, when as according to the *Agreement* by the *height* of *Imperial* *Power* made with him, it ought not to have been done, until he had obtained the *Kingdom* of *France*, or the *greatest* part of it. Dated at *London* the 18th day of *July*, in the second year of his *Reign* over *France*, and over *England* the *Fifteenth*.

A

B

[9] *Freiffard*,  
l. 1. c. 64.  
The Duke of  
*Bretagne* dies.

After the *Truce* at the *Siege* of *Tournay*, [9] *John Duke* of *Bretagne*, who had *served* the *King* of *France* in his *Army*, in the way toward his own *Country* fell sick, and died *without* *Issue*: After his death there arose a *controversie* between *Charles Earl* of *Blois*, and *John Earl* of *Montfort*, about *Succession* to, and *Enjoyment* of that *Dukedom*. Their *Titles* were thus; *Arthur* the second had [1] *Two Sons* by his *first Wife*, this *Duke John*, and another who *Married*, and had a *Daughter* only, and died before the *Duke* his *Brother*. This *Daughter* was *Married* to *Charles Earl* of *Blois*, *Nephew* to *Philip* the *French King* by his *Sister*. The same *Arthur* by a *second Wife* had a *Third Son*, who did bear the *Title* of *Earl* of *Montfort*. The *Question* was, Whether the *Wife* of the *Earl* of *Blois*, or the *Earl* of *Montfort*, was nearest in *Blood* to the late *Duke*.

C

[1] *Ib.* and  
*Robert of A-*  
*versbury*, p. 98.  
b. c. 40.  
Competitors  
for the *Duke-*  
*dom*.

Upon the *Dukes* *Death* *Montfort* went to *Nantes*, the chief *City* in *Bretagne*, [2] where he was *received* by the *Citizens* and *People* of the *Country* thereabout, as their *Lord*, and as nearest of *Blood* to his *Brother*, who did *homage* and *sware fealty* to him. To this place he *summoned* in the [3] *Nobility*, and the best sort of *People* of the *Country*, and good *Towns* of *Bretagne*, who appeared not; whereupon he *raised* an *Army*, and took the *Town* and *Castle* of *Brest*, the *City* of *Rennes*, the *Town* and *strong Castle* of *Hannibont*, the *Town* and *Castle* of *Caraches*.

D

E

[2] *Freiffard*,  
*Ibidem*.  
The *Citizens*  
of *Nantes* and  
some others  
own *Montfort*.  
[3] *Ib.* 65, 66,  
67.  
The *Nobility*  
and best sort  
of *People* ap-  
pear not upon  
his *Summons*.  
[4] *Ib.* c. 68.  
He offers to  
hold the  
*Dukedom* of  
the *King* of  
*England* by  
*Homage* and  
*Fealty*.  
*King Edward*  
accepts his  
offer, and pro-  
miseth to de-  
fend him.

Yet after all this the *Earl* [4] of *Montfort*, fearing the *Earl* of *Blois* by the *power* of *France* might drive him out of the *Dukedom*, came into *England*, and offered to *King Edward* to hold it of him by *Homage* and *Fealty*, if he would defend him against the *French King*, and all others who should give him *Trouble* in this *Matter*. The *King* accepted his offer, and thought he should have great *advantage* by it, as not having a more *commodious* way of *entring* *France* than by *Bretagne*; calling to mind, that the *Alemans* or *Germans*, and *Brabanters*, had done little or nothing for him; and only made their own *advantage* by spending him much *Money*. After *Homage* done, *King Edward* in the presence of the *Lords* of *Bretagne*, and *England*, that were present, promised he would aid and defend him, as his *Liege-man*, against the *French King* and all others. The *Homage* and *Promises* were written, sealed, and delivered interchangeably.

F

The



The French King observing what the Earl of Montfort had done in Bretagne, and hearing he had done Homage to the King of England for that Dutchy; at the Request of the Earl of Bloys he was summoned to appear at Paris before the King, Twelve Peers, and other great Lords of France. He appeared according to Summons, [5] and when the French King charged him with having done Homage to his Adversary, the King of England, he denied it: He then commanded him by all he held of him, that he should not depart from Paris in Fifteen days, in which time the Twelve Peers, and other Lords, should judge of his Right. But he suddenly and privately withdrew from Paris, and returned into Bretagne.

Nevertheless the Peers and Lords on the 15th day gave their Opinions concerning the Title and Inheritance of the Dutchy, That it belonged to Mary the Wife of the Earl of Bloys; and further their Opinions were, That if ever the Earl of Montfort had any Right, he had forfeited it two ways, by doing Homage, and receiving it from any other Lord than the King of France, of whom he ought to have held it; and by disobeying the King's Commands, in going from Paris without his Leave.

No sooner was this Judgment passed for him, [6] but the Earl of Bloys, with great assistance from the King of France, entered Bretagne, and surprized and took the Earl of Montfort in the Town of Nantes, by the Treachery of the Townsmen; from whence he was sent Prisoner to Paris, and there died. This was done (says Foissard [7]) in the year 1341, about the Feast of All-Saints, which was in the Fifteenth year of Edward the Third; after whose Death his Widow, Sister to the Earl of Flanders, a Princess of great Prudence and Courage, [8] maintained the War against the Earl of Bloys, and kept possession of those Parts and Places of Bretagne, as had not been brought under his power. This was in the beginning of Winter, when the French Nobility, that came with the Earl of Bloys by the King of France his Command, retired, the fury of the War then ceasing; but failed not to return in the Spring, to attempt to take from the Countess of Montfort what remained in her possession. So soon as she was informed of their return, she sent [9] Emery de Clisson, a Lord of Bretagne, into England, to Request Assistance of the King, propounding her Son John, Heir to the Earl of Montfort, as a Husband to one of his Daughters, (who was afterwards [1] Married to Mary his fourth Daughter, and she enjoyed the Title of Dutcheß of Bretagne.) The Proposition was readily agreed to by the King, and he sent Sir Walter Manny into Bretagne, with as many Men [2] at Arms as Sir Emery desired, and also 3000 Archers; but these were not sufficient to defend the Country against the Force of the Earl of Bloys, who had taken Rennes, Vannes, and other Places; and would have conquered all Bretagne, if not speedily opposed. [3] This Account was sent to the King by Messengers from the Countess, and Sir Walter Manny; whereupon he sent Robert de Artois with more Men, Arms, and Archers, to reinforce Sir Walter. [4] This joint Force besieged and retook Vannes; but not long after Vannes was recovered by assault, made by the Forces and Friends of Charles of Bloys; in the defence whereof [5] Robert de Artois was much, and dangerously wounded; who not long

The French King summons him to Paris.

[5] Ib. c. 69, 70. He denies he did Homage to the King of England.

The Peers of France give the Title of the Dutchy of Bretagne to Mary the Wife of the Earl of Bloys.

The Earl of Bloys enters Bretagne.

[6] Ib. c. 71, 72.

Surprized and took Earl Montfort.

[7] Ib. c. 72. A. D. 1341. Who died at Paris, being there Prisoner.

[8] Ib. c. 79. and Du Chesne, f. 656. B. His Widow maintains War against the Earl of Bloys.

[9] Ib. in both. she sends to the King of England for assistance.

[1] Sandf. Genealog. Hist. f. 179. Which she received.

[2] Fraiss. & Du Chesne, ut supra.

A. D. 1342. Upon the Marriage of her Son with the King's 4th Daughter.

[3] Ib. Fraiss. c. 86. 90. & Du Chesne, f. 657. B.

[4] Du Chesne, tom. C. D. Fraiss. c. 92.

[5] Ib. c. 93. Du Chesne, f. 658. B. G.



The Scots enter into, burn and waste the Borders.

[6] *Ib.* in both.

An Army raised, with which

[7] *Clause*  
16 E. III. M.  
20. *Dors.*

A. D. 1342.  
the King went in Person into Bretagne.

He wrote to the Pope to Command Prayers, &c. to be made for his Success.

[8] *N.*

[9] *Clause*  
16 E. III. p. 2.  
M. 23. *Dors.*

[1] *Froiss.*  
c. 94, 98.  
Two Cardinals sent by the Pope to mediate a Truce, which was obtained for 3 years.

[2] *F.* 659. B.

The Articles of the Truce.

The first Article is according to Aversbury.

after returned into England, in hopes of better Chirurgeons and Medicines, and died there.

The mean while the Scots entered into England, plundered, burnt, and ravaged the Counties of Northumberland, Cumberland, and the Bishoprick of Durham; against whom the King raised an Army in the Northern Counties.

King Edward very much disturbed [6] for the Death of his great Friend, and at the Progress of Charles of Bloys, raised a great Army, and appointed it by Proclamation [7] to be ready to pass with him into Bretagne by Midsummer following; and then wrote to Pope Clement the Sixth to put up Prayers to the Almighty for his happy Progress, and that he would cause Preachings, Processions, and other Pious Offices to be exercised in England for a Blessing upon his Armies, which at that time he intended against France and Scotland. The Letter it self being written in an extraordinary strain of Piety and Devotion, and to shew the Devotional Latin of those times, is Printed in the Appendix. [8.] Notwithstanding his Proclamation, he could not get ready [9] until the 4th of October, when he took Shipping at Sandwich; and sailing toward France he met with the French Fleet; from which, after a sharp Engagement, they were separated by Storm. At length he landed near Vannes in Bretagne, which he besieged; and [1] the French Army, under the Conduct of the Duke of Normandy, lay ready to relieve it. At which time the Pope sent the Two Cardinals of Penestrin and Tusculum, who mediated a Truce for Three years; for the maintaining whereof the King of England, and Duke of Normandy (as Froissard says) made Oath, according to the Articles of the Truce which do here follow, tho not exactly according to the form in Robert of Aversbury, p. 100. c. 42. or in Tho. Walsingham, f. 159. n. 10, 20, &c. which is tedious and without method, but according to Du Chesne, [2] who hath drawn up the whole and entire Sense of them in a short Form.

1. For the Reverence of Holy Church, and the Support of Christianity, and Ease of the Subjects of both Kings, and the Honour of the Cardinals Treating Peace and Concord between them, they would send some of their Blood, and others to the Court of Rome, to end all Differences and Debates before the Pope, having Power by Advice of the Pope, and Consistory of Cardinals, to alledge and propound their Reasons; not that he should end and decide it, or give Sentence, but only for the making a better Peace and Treaty.

2. The Treators, or Ambassadors, shall appear before the Pope by the Feast of John Baptist, or Midsummer-day next coming; That before Christmas the Treaty may be ended, if nothing happens for the prolonging of it; or in case the Pope be not hindered by other Business, or that he cannot compose in that time the Differences between the Kings; yet nevertheless the Truce shall continue for Three years after the Feast of St. Michael then next following, between the King of England and France, the King of Scots, and the Earl of Haynault, and all the Allies of the said Kings, that is to say, the Dukes of Brabant and Gelderland, the Marquiss of Juliers, Monsieur John de Haynault, and the People of Flanders, in all their Lands and Seignories.

3. That



3. That the King of Scots, and Earl of Haynault, and other Allies of the Kings, shall send their Messengers or Ambassadors to the Court of Rome, by the Feast of St. John, with sufficient Power to consent to, and confirm the Treaty before the Pope, for what belongs to them; but if they would not send, the Treaty was to proceed notwithstanding.

Ib. & Walsing.

A 4. That the Truce shall be observed in Bretagne between the Two Kings, and their Allies, notwithstanding they both pretend Right to the Dutchy.

5. The City of Vannes shall remain in the Hands of the Cardinals, or of one of them, to be holden during the Truce in the Name of the Pope. And after the end of the Truce, they may dispose of it as they please.

B 6. That the Cardinals shall labour diligently, to find some way how the Flemmings may be absolved from the Popes Censures they had incurred.

Avesbury.

7. That the Earl of Flanders may remain in his Earldom, as Lord without Mean, but not as Sovereign, provided the People do Consent.

8. Both Kings shall endeavour without fraud, that their Subjects do not make War upon one another, in Gascoign, nor in Bretagne, during the Truce, or in any other place; and in case they should, there should be no Rupture between them.

C 9. That none, who were under the Obedience of one King, before or at the time when the Truce was made, shall put himself under the Obedience of the other during the Truce.

10. That nothing shall be given or promised, directly or indirectly, to any Party to make War during the Truce.

D 11. That the Truce be kept, and observed by Land and Sea, and Sworn to by both Parties, and speedily published in both Armies, and within Fifteen days in Gascoign, Bretagne, and Flanders; and in England and Scotland within Forty.

E The residue of the Articles are the same with those of the Truce, made at the Siege of Tournay, the 25th of September 1340, in the Fourteenth of Edward the Third, before noted. This Truce was made in the Priory of St. Mary Magdalen in the Town of Malatrait, and Signed the 19th of January 1343, according to Avesbury, and on the same day 1342, according to Walsingham.

About five Weeks after this Truce was Signed, [3] Writs were sent forth for a Parlement to be holden at Westminster, on the Monday next after the Quinden of, or 15th after Easter; Teste Custode, Witness the Guardian of England, Feb. 24. &c.

[3] Clause  
17 E. III.  
Part. 1. M. 25.  
Dors.  
Writs for a  
Parlement.

F The chief cause of Summons of this Parlement (signified also in the Writ it self) [4] was to treat and advise with the Great Men and Commons (od les Grantz & Communes) what was best to be done about the King's Affairs, concerning the Truce made between him and his Adversary of France; and then touching the Government and Safety of this Nation and his People. And for that Monsieur Bartholomew de Burghesh, who was with the King in Bretagne at the making of the Truce, knew best how things went there, the Chancellor sent to him to come, and declare in Parle-

[4] Rot. Parl.  
17 E. III. n. 7,  
8, 9.

The Declara-  
tion of the  
Cause of Sum-  
mons.



ment the manner of making the Truce; who reported, That after the King had begun the War with France, by Assent of the Prelates, Great Men, and Commons, (*par Assent des Prelatz, Grantz, & Communes*) to conquer his Rights and Inheritance there, he many times passed the Sea with his Host; and in his last Passage had harassed the greatest part of the Dutchy of Bretagne, and by God's Assistance had taken Towns, Castles, and Ports: At last he came to the City of Vannes, which by Advice of the Great Men with him, he besieged, where he was desired by the Pope, for the Reverence of God and Holy Church, he might send Two Cardinals with Terms of Peace, or a Truce until a Peace might be treated of, and concluded. The King perceiving the Truce to be Honourable and Advantageous for him and his Friends or Allies, assented to it, that during the continuance thereof, a Treaty of Peace might be had before the Pope, as a Mediator and Friend, but not as a Judge, or one to whom the matter was compromised; (*come meen, amy, & noun pas come juge, ne recompromissair*) which Peace, if Good and Honourable, the King would accept; if not, he would pursue his Quarrel. And he said further, That because the War was begun by the Common Assent of the Prelates, Great Men, and Commons, the King would not treat of, or make Peace, without their Common Assent. Wherefore the Prelates and Great Men were charged (*furent chargez*) to Assemble on Thursday the First of May (*Joedy le primer jour de May*) to treat, advise, and agree among themselves, whether the King ought to send Envoys to the Court of Rome to propound his Rights before the Pope, or not. And in the same manner the Knights of Counties and Commons were charged (*furent chargez les Chivalers des Countees & Communes*) to assemble in the Painted Chamber, to treat, &c. and to report their Answer and Agreement in Parlement the same Day (*& de reporter leur respons & leur assent en dit Parlement le dit Joedy*.) On which Day the Prelates and Great Men answered, Their Advice was, That the Truce was Honourable and Advantageous to the King and all his Friends; and that every Christian ought to wish the War, which was so great and hurtful to all Christians, might end in Peace: Wherefore they agreed to the Truce, and that the King should send Messengers to Rome, to lay before the Pope, as Mediator and Friend, but not as Judge, his Rights and Demands, in order to a Treaty of Peace, according to the Form of the Truce. And then the Knights of Counties came, and the Commons (*& puis vindrent les Chivalers des Countees & les Communes*) and answered by Monsieur William Trussel in the White Chamber, who in the Presence of the King, Prelates, and Great Men (*qi en presence de nostre Seignieur le Roy, & des Prelatz & Grantz*) proposed for the Knights and Commons (*purposa par les Chivalers & les Communes*) that they were fully agreed the Truce should be kept, to the end a good and honourable Peace might be made. And further, the said Commons (*les ditz Communes*) prayed the King to send solemn Envoys, or Messengers to treat of Peace, as abovesaid; and in case he could have an Honourable and advantageous Peace for himself and Friends, he would accept it; but if not, the said Commons (*les ditz Communes*) granted to aid and assist him, and to maintain his Quarrel with all their Power; (*granteront de luy aidez, a meyntemir sa querele ove tote leur poair*).

A

B

C

D

E

F



Several Commissions [5] were made to Commissioners, to treat before the Pope as a *private Person*, and not as a *Judge*, with the Commissioners of his Cousin Philip of Valois, upon all *Dominions, Dignities, Honours, Lands, Possessions, Places, and Rights*, concerning which there was any *Controversie or Dissention* between them; and also concerning the *Right* he had or might have to the *Crown and Kingdom of France*; and generally about all *Dissentions, Wars, Quarrels, Commotions, Questions, Damages, Injuries* done, given, or made on either side, &c.

In the Cotton Library [6] there is a Treaty as it was managed at *Avignon* before the Pope, day by day, from the 22d of *October*, to the 29th of *November*, by *William Bateman Bishop of Norwich, John Offord Dean of Lincoln, the Arch-Deacon of Norwich, Sir Hugh Nevill Knight, and Nicholas de Flisco*. The Pope offered many *Equivalents* to the English for the *Dukedom of Guien, &c.*

to treat about what had been attempted against the *Truce*, and by whose means it had been broken: But they would not enter upon the Treaty of any other Matter, until they were satisfied in their Demand of the *Kingdom and Crown of France* for *King Edward*. By the last Commission there [7] were Two other Commissioners added to the former, *John de Thoresby* and *Sir Ralph Spigurnel Knight*, who appeared in the Pope's Court on the Feast of *St. Catherine*, or 25th of *November*, before himself, and delivered the King's Letters to him, and he appointed the next day at the time of *Vespers* to hear them.

When Mr. *John Thoresby* acquainted him that *Sir Ralph* and he had Commissions, and were sent by the King for two things, for reformation of what had been attempted against the *Truce*, and also that they might assist the other Commissioners in the Treaty. The Pope appointed them to come before him the 28th Day; but not being then at leisure, he appointed the next Day, when they understanding from the Commissioners of the King's Adversary, That he should have nothing in the *Kingdom of France* but in subjection to him, they resolved to treat no more before they knew the King's Mind: Whereupon the Pope told them, he would send *Sir Hugh Nevill* to him with his Letters, and likewise *Sir Simon de Buysy* to the King of France: And so stood the Treaty at that time, on the 29th of *November, 1344.* and 18th of *Edward III.*

During the Treaty, the French King put to death at *Paris* *Oliver de Clifton*, and many other Barons and Lords of *Bretagne and Normandy* (says *Froissard* [8]) for suspicion of Treason. *Du Chesne* says [9] they held secret Intelligence and private Correspondency, and made a League with *King Edward* under their Seals, contrary to the Ninth Article of the *Truce*, which was, That none in the Obedience of one King, at the time of *Truce*, should put himself under the Obedience of the other, while it continued.

The Treaty hitherto having been without Success, [1] the King on the 20th of *April* issued his Writs for a *Parlement* to meet on *Monday* next after the *Octaves of Holy Trinity*, or 7th of *June* that Year. The next Day the Names of the Lords were read and examined [2] before the King in *Parlement*, (item soient les nouns des Seigneurs, &c.) to see who were come, who not; and the Names of those who were not come, were given to the

Commissioners sent to the Pope.

[5] Rot. Fran. 17 Ed. III.

M. 12. 20

Maii; ib. 19

Aug. n. 6. ib.

18 Ed. III. M.

3. 4 Aug. ib.

M. 2 Offeb. 20.

[6] Cleopatra, Edw. III. f. 28. in the bottom.

The Pope offers Equivalents to the English Commissioners.

They refuse to treat of any thing but the Crown and Kingdom of France.

[7] Rot. Fran. Ed. III. M. 2. 18

Offeb. 20.



The absent  
Lords to be  
punished at  
the King's  
Pleasure.  
The cause of  
Summons de-  
clared.  
[3] *Ibm.* n. 6.

the King in Writing, that he might order such Punishment as he pleased (*pour ordainer lieu punissement come lui plerra.*)

On Thursday the Chancellor declared the Causes of Summons to be concerning the Truce made in Bretagne, and the Breach thereof, in seven Articles; and begins [3] thus: (*Seigneurs en les Trewes prises, accordez & affermez par serement en Bretagne entre autres pointz, &c.*) Lords, in the Truce made, agreed, and confirmed by Oath in Bretagne, amongst other Articles it was agreed,

A

1. That the Truce should be kept in Bretagne between the Kings and their Adherents (*entre les Rois & leur Adherantz*) notwithstanding the Right they both claimed in the Dutchy.

2. Also, That none who were under the Obedience of one of the Kings (*en obedience dun des Rois*) should come under the Obedience of the other King (*del autre Roi*) during the Truce.

3. That there be no renewing of Injuries against one part or other, in prejudice of the Truce, while it continues.

B

4. Also, That the said Lords, their Adjutors, and Coadjutors and Allies, whatever they be, do remain in such Possession, and such Seisin, as then they had of all their Benefices, Lands, and Possessions (*des toux leur benefitz, terres, & possessions*) which they held, or had any ways obtained, during the Truce.

5. Also, That what was promised to the Earl of Montfort, before, and within, the City of Vannes, might be performed.

C

6. Also, If any one in Gascoigne, or elsewhere, continuing the Truce, move War against their Neighbour, or Enemy, who shall be in the Interest of either Party, then the said Kings ought not to meddle in it by themselves or others, directly or indirectly (*que le ditz Rois ne se devient mellez par eux ne par autre, droitement, ne noun droitement.*)

7. That to none of either Party shall any Gift or Promise, be made directly or indirectly, to make War during the Truce.

D

[4] *Ibm.*  
Things done  
against the  
Truce.

And against these Articles several things have been done [4] as the King's Council have been informed (*par ascunes de Bretagne*) by some of Bretagne.

First, That some of the Allies of him, that calls himself the King of France, have taken and imprisoned many Men at Arms of the Allies of our King, and some they sent into France, to remain in Prison there, during the Pleasure of the King's Adversary.

E

Also the said Adversary caused many Knights, Esquires, and other Persons of Bretagne (*Chevaliers, Esquiers, & autres gentz*) who were known to be in the Legiance and Obedience of our King, before the Truce made, and were comprised in it, and ought to have been protected by it, to be carried to Paris, and there put to death against the Assent and Decree of the Members, and others of his Counsell in his Parlement; and some he caused to be murdered in their own Country, falsely and maliciously, against the said Truce, and against his Oath. And the said Adversary sent Men at Arms and Foot to a great number, into Gascoigne and Bretagne, who, after the Truce made, took Castles, Towns, Mannors, and Fortlets, and seized Lands and Possessions being in the Possession and Obedience of our King (*esteantz en la possession & en obedience de*

F



de nostre Seigneur le Roi) at the time of the Truce made, in which, amongst other things, it is contained, That no new thing should be attempted during the Truce (*es queux entre autres choses est contenue que rien serroit attemptez de novell durantes mesmes les Trewes.*) And further [5] the said Adversary endeavours, by all ways he can, or knows, to take and seize all the Lands and Possessions which our King hath beyond Sea, and to procure his Allies in Brabant, Flanders, and Almain, or Germany, to leave him; and hath a firm purpose, as our King and Council have certainly been informed, or have understood, to destroy the English Language, and to possess England (which God forbid) if a forcible Remedy be not applied to his Malice (*& si est il inferme propos a ce que nostre Seigneur le Roi & son conseil ont intenduz en certeyn a destruire la Lange Englois, &c.*)

A On the other side (*d'autre part*) the [6] Scots, who are the said Adversaries Allies, have openly declared, That when he gives them notice, they will not observe or regard the Truce, but march into England, and do what Mischief they can.

[6] *Ibm.*

Wherefore the King [7] prays and charges (*pur quoi nostre Seigneur le Roi pria & chargea les Prelates, &c.*) the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and Commons, That these things considered, they would give him such Advice and Assistance, as was necessary for the saving his and their own Rights and Honour.

[7] *Ibm.*

C Which things being [8] recited by the Arch-Bishop (*les Prelates, Counts, Barons, & les autres des Commons prierent, &c.*) the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and others of the Commons, pray, That they may deliberate till Monday next following.

[8] *Ibm. n. 7.*

And from that Monday [9] because they had not then fully deliberated, they pray till Wednesday, the Vigil or Eve of St. John Baptist; upon which day the Arch-Bishop, and Ten other Bishops, Five Abbots, Two Priors, Eight Earls, Six Barons, all there named, and the Commons of the Realm assembled in the White Chamber, (*& les Commons du Roialme assemblez en la Chambre blanche, &c.*) in the presence of the King, having regard to the great Mischiefs and Dangers, which may come to the King, and all his Subjects and Allies, if the Malice of his Adversary was not stopt; and considering the great Charges, which the Great Men and the Commons of England, had been at, and suffered by reason of the War continuing so long, by false Truces, and Sufferances; and seeing openly, that an end of the War, or so good a Peace as ought to be, cannot be made without great force of Men, and great Power, they pray the King with one Assent, and every particular Person of the Great Men for himself (*si prierent touz dun assent, & chescune singulere persone de Grantz a par lui, &c.*) that he would make an end of the War, either by Battel, or by a convenient Peace, if it might be had.

[9] *Ibm. n. 8.*

The Parliament prays the King to make an end of the War by Battel or Peace,

F And that when [1] the King should be ready to pass beyond Sea, to take what God should give him (*pur prendre ce que Dieu lui durra*) upon the Exploit of this Business, he would not for the Letters or Command of the Pope, or any other, lay aside his Voyage, until he had made an end one way or other. The which Prayer the King fully granted, (*a quele preere le Roi otroia pleynement*) but because it could not [2] be done without a great and agreeable Aid, the Arch-Bishop, Bishops, Prelates, and Procurators of the Clergy

[1] *Ibm. n. 9.* And n. t. to lay aside his Voyage for the Pope's Letters.

Clergy



Aid for this  
Voyage gran-  
ted by the  
Clergy and  
Commons.

[3] *Ibm.* n. 10.

[4] *Wals.* f. 164.  
n. 30.  
*Froiss.* l. i. c. 100.  
*Aschmole*, f. 182.

[5] *Acuf.* p.  
103. a. c. 48.  
III news from  
*Britagne*.

[6] *Rot. Franc.*  
19 Ed. III. Part  
1. M. 24.  
The King  
sent Defiance  
to Philip of  
*Valois*.

[7] *Rot. Rom.*  
19 Ed. III. M.  
2. n. 4.

He wrote to  
the Pope com-  
plaining of  
him.

[8] *Cleopatra*,  
E. 2.

The Effect  
and Contents  
of K. Edward's  
Letter to the  
Pope.

Clergy of the Province of Canterbury, granted to the King a Triennial Tenth; (*Et les ditz Commons le samaday apres grantent nostre Seigneur le Roi pur mesme la cause deux Quinzismes de la Communalte de la Terre, & deux dismes des Citees & Burghs;*) And the said Commons granted to the King for the same cause Two Fifteenths of the Commonalty of the Land, and Two Tenths of the Cities and Burghs. And [3] after that the said Commons granted another Fifteenth; (*Et apres le dite Commune grantent une autre quinzisme.*) See for the Conditions of these Grants, in the Statutes at large, 18 Ed. III. translated exactly from the French on this Roll, n. 14. to n. 23. which Statute was made from the Petitions of the Commons, and the Answers to them; and 'tis called in the totting on the Roll, the Charter of the Commons; (*la Chartre enseale par la Commune*) and also for the Statute, or Charter for the Clergy, bearing Date July 8. in the 18th of his Reign, which gave them many Privileges, n. 24. to n. 32. In both these Statutes, which are now in a manner become obsolete; 'tis said, the Great Lay-men granted to pass and adventure themselves with the King, and therefore they are not found upon the Roll to be Taxed.

The residue of this Year was spent in [4] Tournaments, and other Military Exercises, at Dunstable, Smithfield, and especially at Windsor, in Feastings, Revellings, Dancing, and all manner of Jollity.

But it was not long after the beginning of the next Year, that King Edward [5] received news of what had been done in Bretagne; how the Noblemen, who adhered to him there, were put to death; and what havock and depopulation had been made in those Places under his Subjection. Whereupon William de Bohun Earl of Northampton, had [6] Commission, Dated April 24. to defie Philip of Valois as a Truce-breaker, his capital Enemy, Persecutor, and unjust Usurper of his Inheritance the Kingdom of France. And, as what was done in Normandy and Bretagne against the Truce, had been declared to be so by the Parlement; so he wrote [7] to the Pope on the 26th of May following, almost the same thing; and made grievous Complaints to him of Philip de Valois having, in the highest manner, broken and dissolved the Truce. The effect of his Letter the Pope repeats in his Bull, or Answer to it (the Original being in the Cotton Library [8]) That for avoiding the Dangers and Damages that might arise, by reason of the Dissensions and Wars between Edward III. and the Illustrious King of France, as the Bull hath it, (*inter te, fili carissime, ac carissimum in Christo filium nostrum Philippum Regem Francie Illustrem*) he had offered many ways of Peace; that he might apply himself, as he much desired, to the Service of his Redeemer beyond Sea, but was always delayed with fair Words and Treaties without effect, to his great Damage. His second Complaint was (after a Narrative of the Truce made before Vannes) That when he returned into England, and had left a few Men only in Bretagne, and sent his Commissioners to treat before his Holiness about a Peace (as related before) he received news, which pierced his Soul, That certain Noblemen of Bretagne were, by Command of Philip, taken, carried to Paris, and put to death: And also of the great Ravage and Depopulation made in Bretagne, Gascoigne, and other Places.



- Places. 3dly, That he *endeavoured by crafty and secret Treaties* to draw his *Allies and Subjects* from him, and procured other things to be *attempted*, against the *Truce by Sea and Land*: Therefore he thought it *utterly dissolved* by his Adversary. And now since the Time of *Treaty* was ended, and no rational way of Peace appearing, nor were the things attempted against the Truce reformed or amended, but rather multiplied, although by his Holiness's Letters the said King had been often required to reform them (not to say any thing of his Legate, that was sent into *Bretagne* to cause the Truce to be observed, yet took the contrary part, and blamed him that he did not what he ought toward an Accommodation) he thought himself excused by God, Holy Church, and the People; if seeing he could have no other Remedy in a just Cause, he declared the Truce dissolved by *Philip*, and defied him, as above, and renewed the War again, *protesting*
- B he would *attempt nothing* that might offend his Holiness or the *Apostolick See*, which he desired and ought to revere; or that might do Injury to any one, but only with Moderation to defend himself, and prosecute his Rights; asserting what he did was for want of other Remedy, and against his Will, *offering Peace* when he might have a *good one*, or by good means (*cum habere poterit bono modo*).

- C The Pope's Answer to this Complaint, begins with a most obliging Compellation, calling God to Witness (*Fili dilectissime, novit* [9] *Altissimus, qui scrutator est cordium, & cognitor secretorum, &c.*) Most beloved Son, the Most High knows, who is the *Searcher of Hearts*, and *understands all Secrets*, that he had faithfully endeavoured to procure a Peace between him and the *King of France* without partiality, and would not yet spare any Pains for the effecting of it. And he tells him, That those who wrote his Letters, probably understood not the Truth of the Affair; for that there were some things put in them, and some things left out, which caused notable Errors. *It was agreed by the Truce*, That there should be some of the *Royal Blood* Commissioned to Treat on either side in his Presence; and though the *King of France* had sent several of the *Royal Blood*, and many *Prelates* of great Authority (as it had been agreed) with sufficient Power, and were very ready to Treat; yet he had sent none such; and therefore it ought to be considered, Whether he, the *King of France*, or himself,
- D were in fault, that the Peace did not proceed as it ought to have done.
- E

- As to the taking and punishing of the [1] Noblemen, mentioned in his Letters, and that therefore the Truce was broken, the Pope says he had wrote to his *Magnificence*, and told his *Commissioners*, That the *King of France*, in answer to the investigative Letters he had wrote to him upon that Subject, affirmed, That those Noblemen had manifestly violated the Truce, by committing Murders, by burning and wasting the Countries, and doing other horrid Wickednesses in *Bretagne*, where they were taken and punished according to Justice; (*quod illi nobiles violando ipsas Treugas manifeste in partibus Britannie, ac homicidia, depopulationes, incendia, & alia horrenda maleficia committendo, ibidem flagrantibus huiusmodi & aliis criminibus capti propter premissa, & alia sua facinorosa scelera, & deinde puniti exigente iustitia extiterunt.*) And that
- F

The Pope's Answer to King Edward's Complaints.  
[9] *Ibm.*

He tells him he had not done according to the Truce.

[1] *Ibm.*

That the Noblemen put to death had broke the Truce, committed Murders, &c.



the same Noblemen asserted they were not in Confederacy with him, but with John of Bretagne Earl of Montfort, who had also denied when at Paris, that he had any Confederacy with him, that is King Edward.

[2] *Ibm.*

And that the King of France would inviolably keep the Peace, if he would do the same.

[3] *Ibm.*

Charles of Bloys denies himself to be within the Truce.

\* He is not named in the Truce, or amongst the Allies; yet 'tis said in the Truce, it was to be kept in Bretagne by both Kings and their Adherents.

[4] *Ibm.*  
The King of France complies fully with the Pope's Method propounded.

The King of England did not.

[5] *Ibm.*  
The Pope's Excuse for his Legate in Bretagne.

[6] *Ibm.*  
And says, that against the Tenor of the Truce he seized the City Vannes.

Further, [2] That his Excellence could not but know, that as he had complained of things attempted against the Truce in Bretagne, Gascoign, and elsewhere, so the King of France had likewise complained of things done against the Form and Tenour of the Truce in the same places, and also upon the Sea, having exhibited divers Articles thereof: That therefore he had directed Letters to them both about this Matter; To which the King of France answered, he would inviolably observe the Truce, and cause whatever had been done against it to be revoked, provided he would do the like. Then having charged him by Letter with giving assistance to Charles of Bloys, taking upon him the Title of Duke of Bretagne, he wrote back often, That he never assisted him with Men or Money, or any other way; and the same thing John Duke of Normandy, his Eldest Son, constantly and frequently affirmed in his presence.

And whereas [3] he had wrote effectually to Charles of Bloys, about the Observation of the Truce; he came to him, and in his presence, and in presence of the Cardinals that mediated the Truce, declared and affirmed, he never entered into the Truce, (*asseruit se nunquam truces aliquammodo inivisse, nec fuerat super hoc requisitus*) nor was ever required, or asked to do it; and that by the Words \* of the Truce he could no ways be comprehended in it, of which he seriously gave notice to his Commissioners before their departure from his Court.

At which time [4] he thought it most expedient to avoid Scandal, and for other causes, to consider the Complaints made on both sides, which were long, many, and intricate, according to a Method to be propounded, and consented to by both Parties, concerning the Revocation of what had been done against the Truce, with which he had acquainted his Commissioners, and to the same purpose wrote to them both. The King of France returned his Letters of Consent according to his Proposition, sealed with his Seal, readily and freely, without any limitation of time; but he prefixed so short a time, as nothing could be undertaken in that Business.

Then [5] to what he said concerning his Legat sent into Bretagne to cause the Truce to be observed, hearing what had been attempted against it; he, as it had been often related to him, as much as he could with Justice, and as he found Compliance, was more favourable to his Cause than the other, as Charles of Bloys by Letters and Messengers grievously complained to him. But whether his Legat did any thing unjust or injurious, he knew not; however upon the first Complaint of his Friends he recalled him, who at his return excused himself; and if he could be informed truly of any such Practice, he should correct him for it.

After these [6] Answers, he put him in mind, That against the Tenor of the Truce he had seized upon the City of Vannes, and expelled those, who were to keep it by direction of the Cardinals, and Mediators, in the Name of him, and the Roman Church, during the Truce; who were to dispose of it afterwards as they pleased; Of which he said nothing in his Letters.

A

B

C

D

E

F



At last [7] in a long, tedious Discourse, telling him how God had fitted him with many Endowments to prosecute his Business against the Enemies of the Christian Faith, (*ad prosequendum Dei negotium adversus hostes fidei Christianæ*) he earnestly perswades him to undertake the Holy War; and to think diligently, Whether to himself, or to the King of France, the Violation of the Truce ought to be imputed: Withall requesting, and exhorting him in the Lord, (*rogamus itaque Celsitudinem tuam regiam, & in Domino attentius exhortantes, tibi sub virtute juramenti præstiti super eisdem trengis injungentes, &c.*) enjoining him by virtue of the Oath he made, to observe the Truce, to restore the City of Vannes into the hands of the Cardinals, in the same Condition it was when he expelled those they appointed to keep it, in the Name of him and the Church, during the whole time of the Truce, as therein expressed; and to return to the observation of the Truce, which was until Michaelmas then next coming, and a year afterwards; and to omit his Warlike Preparations and Insults, promising to prevail with the King of France to do the like.

And then [8] he concludes with Prayers and Exhortations by the Mercy of God, to return to the Treaty of Peace, and to send knowing Commissioners, with Inclination towards, and full Power to Treat of it; and promises, That having God only before his Eyes, he will promote it without partiality, to the praise of God, the honour and profit of both parts, and would induce the King of France to do the same. The day of the Date and Month of this Bull are not legible, but the year is, being the Fourth of his Pontificate, which was the 19th of Edward III.

Yet this he thought not sufficient to make his Case known to the World; but, first declaring his Title to the Crown of France, (the same as when he first claimed it) he drew up, what he had wrote to the Pope, into a Manifesto, and published it with this Title, [9] (*Rex omnibus ad quod præsentibus hæc literæ pervenerint salutem, &c.*) 'The King, to all Men to whom these Letters, or this Manifesto, or Declaration shall come, Greeting, &c. Which were dated at Westminster the 14th of June, in the 19th year of his Reign over England, and over France the Sixth. Date [1] apud Westmonasterium 14 die Junii Anno Regni nostri Angliæ decimo nono, regni vero Franciæ sexto.

About Michaelmas following [2] King Edward sent Henry Earl of Derby, Son of Henry Earl of Lancaster, with the Earl of Pembroke, and Sir Walter Manny, into Gascony with a considerable Force, where he took the strong Town Bruggierac at the first assault, and forty six other Towns great and small, which Philip de Valois had injuriously taken, and detained from the King of England; the last of which was the Town and Castle of Auberoche. After which the Earl of Derby, with the Earl of Pembroke, and Sir Walter Manny, retired to Burdeaux; upon notice whereof the Earl of Laille, King Philip's Lieutenant in Gascoigne, brought together a great Force, and besieged Auberoche; To the Relief whereof the Earl of Derby coming, he obtained a great Victory, and took many Noblemen and great Officers.

After Easter [3] next year, John Duke of Normandy, Son and Heir to Philip of Valois, besieged the Town of Aguilon in Guien, in which was a strong Garrison placed by the Earl of Derby, and

[7] *Ibm.*  
The Pope desires him to think seriously, whether he or the King of France had violated the Truce.

And chargeth him upon his Oath to restore the City of Vannes.

[8] *Ibm.*  
He Exhorts him to return to the Treaty of Peace.

And promiseth his utmost Assistance.

King Edward again declares his Title to France.

[9] *Avesbury*, p. 103. a. c. 48.  
And put forth a Manifesto.  
[1] *Ib.* p. 104. b.

[2] *Ib.* & *Du Chesne*, f. 661, 662.

He sends an Army into Gascony, and takes 47 Towns great and small.

[3] *Avesbury*, p. 105. a. c. 50, *Du Chesne*, f. 663. D. A. D. 1346.  
20 E. III.



King Edward,  
the Prince of  
Wales, and  
many Noble-  
men.

[4] Ib. *De*  
*Chesne & Aves.*

Land with an  
Army in Nor-  
mandy.

[5] Ib. p. 105.  
a. c. 51.

[6] Ib.  
What he did  
there after his  
Landing.

[7] Ib. in the  
same Journal.  
Qu whether  
not Rothmisse?  
How he burnt  
and destroyed  
the Country.

well provided; For the relieving of this place, and to reinforce the Earl of Derby, King Edward raised an Army, and in Person, with the Prince of Wales, then Seventeen years of Age, and many of the Nobility, intended to pass into Guien; but the Wind being cross, and the Weather stormy, he was persuaded [4] by Geoffrey of Harcourt (an Outlaw and Exile of France, Lord of St. Saviours, the Viscount in Constantin in Normandy, and one of his Marshals) to land in Normandy, and he did so on the 12th of July, being Thursday, land at La Hogue. What he did after his landing, and in his march toward Caen, and of his taking of that City, and other things, Avesbury [5] hath delivered in a Transcript of the Journal of Michael de Northburg, an able Clerk, and one of King Edward's Counsellors, who went, and was with him all the while.

Where he landed, [6] for the unshipping of his Horse, and refreshing of himself and Army, and baking of Bread, he stay'd six days. While he stayed there, a Party went off to Barfleur, and burnt the Ships in that Harbour, Eight of which had Castles before and behind, (*des queux huit avoient chastiel devant, & decere.*) After the Party left the Town, the Mariners burnt it. The first of the King's March was to Valoignes, where he stay'd only one night, and found sufficient Refreshment. From thence he marched to Carenten, where were found plenty of Wine and Victuals: Much of this Town was burnt, notwithstanding the King did what he could to preserve it. From hence he marched to St. Lo, where the People with some Soldiers seemed to make resistance; in this place he found a thousand Tun of Wine, besides great store of other Goods. Next night he lodged in an Abby, and his Army was quartered about him in Field Villages, (*& son host as villes champestres entour luy*) which in Parties made inroads into the Country, robbing and destroying five or six miles about every day, and burning Towns in many places, (*& chivacherent les gentz del host robbantz & destruantz cinque od sis lieux, environ toutz les jours, & arderent en plusors lieux.*) Three or four days after his removal from this Abby, he came before Caen; in which were the Constable of France, and the Chamberlain of Tanquerville, with a great Force for its defence. The King took it by assault with a great slaughter of Knights, Esquires, and other People; and made Prisoners the Constable and Chamberlain, with 500 Knights, and Six or sevenscore Squires. In the Town were found Wine, Victuals, and other Goods and Chattels without number (*& furent trouee en la ville vines, victualles, & autres biens & chatieux sanz nombre.*)

When the King removed from Hogen, [7] there were about 200 Ships stay'd there, which sailed to Rothmisse, and went on Shore, and burnt the Country two or three Leagues (*lieues*) within the Land, and took much Goods, and brought them to their Ships: From whence they went to Cherburg, a good Town, where was a strong Castle and noble Abby, all which were burnt, as were all things and Towns upon the Sea Coasts from Rothmisse to Hostrem upon the Haven of Caen, about Sixscore English miles. There were then also burnt Sixty one Ships of War, with fore-Castle and hind-Castle, (*count ars 61 niets de guerre od chastel devant & derere*) with 23 Cayers and other small Vessels of about 30 Tuns.

From

A

B

C

D

E

F



From *Caen* he marched to *Poissy* upon [8] the River *Seyn*, where he repaired the Bridge that was broken down, and passed the River on the morrow of the Assumption of the *Virgin Mary*, or 16th of *August*, after he had defeated several great and strong Parties, who came to hinder his passage, and killed many of them. The Bridges were every where broken down, and guarded to hinder his passage, so that he could not march very fast; and therefore he had time to plunder and ravage the Country, to burn most of the good Towns and Villages he past thro, or came near, as may be seen in *Froissard* [9] and *Du Chesne*. [1] At length he came to the River *Soam* in *Ponthieu* and *Picardy*, which he passed at a Ford called *Blanchetaque*, between *Abbeville* and the Sea, [2] where was placed an Army to oppose him, which he routed, killed 2000, and took a great number of Knights and Esquires; the rest fled to *Abbeville*. From hence King Edward marched leisurely toward [3] *Creffy* in *Ponthieu*, his Army burning and harassing the Country, where the King of France joined Battel with him on Saturday the 26th of *August*; [4] The Victory was obtained by the English. There were slain on the French side [5] the King of *Bohemia*, the Duke of *Lorrain*, the Earls of *Alanson*, *Flanders*, *Lewis* of *Blois*, the Earl of *Harecourt*, *Geoffry* of *Harecourt's* Elder Brother, and his Two Sons; the Earls of *Albemarle* and *Savoy*, the Archbishop of *Nismes*, and Bishop of *Sens*, six German Earls, and many other Earls, Barons, and Lords. The [6] English Army was ranged in Three Battles; the Prince of *Wales* headed the first, the Earl of *Northampton* the second, and the King himself the third. [7] The King of France fled only with five Barons, Sir *John* of *Haynault*, who had left King Edward's Service, Sir *Charles* of *Montmorancy*, the Lord of *Beaujeu*, the Lord *Daubery*, and the Lord *Montfort*, to *Bray* Castle, and so to *Amiens*. On Sunday morning came several [8] Reinforcements, and great Bodies of Frenchmen to their King's Army, as they thought, not knowing what had been done, who were all routed, many taken, and great numbers slain. That day in the afternoon King Edward sent to have the dead viewed, and numbered [9] by Two Barons and Three Heralds; At their return to the King they gave him an account of Eleven great Princes, Four-score Banners, ('tis *Froissard's* Word) Twelve hundred Knights, and more than Thirty thousand Ordinary Men. From *Creffy* the King marched to [1] *Calais*, and laid Siege to it on the Third of September.

Upon his last passage into France [2] the King, and Lords that accompanied him, and also the Great Men of his Counsel that were in England, agreed and ordered there should be a Parliament summon'd to meet at *Westminster* on the Munday next after the Nativity of the *Virgin Mary*. [3] To this Parliament the King sent from the Siege of *Calais*, *Bartholomew* *Burghersse*, *John* *Darcy* his Chamberlain, Mr. *John* de *Thoresby* Keeper of his Privy Seal, and *John* de *Carleton*, to inform them of the State of his Affairs, and to propound and declare some things to them in that Parliament, that concerned the Honour of God and the Church, the Defence and Quiet of the Kingdom of England, and his War in France, and also other things that were to be done. These Letters of Credence, or this Commission, [4] was dated before *Calais* on the 7th

[8] *Avesb.* p. 100. c. 54.

[9] *L. i. c. 122, 123, 124, 125, 126.*

[1] *F.* 664, 665.

[2] *Avesb.* p. 109. 4. c. 54. The Battel of *Creffy*.

[3] *Ibm.*

[4] *Walsingh.* f. 166. n. 30.

[5] *Avesb.* at *supra*. What Great Men were slain.

[6] *Froiss.* l. i. c. 130.

[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Ib.* c. 31. The number of the slain.

[9] *Ib.* c. 32. In that Battel.

[1] *Avesb.* f. 109. 6. c. 55. A Parliament called.

[2] *Rot. Parl.* 20 E. III. n. 6.

[3] *Ibm.* The King sends to inform the Parliament of his success and progress in France.

[4] *Ibm.*



[5] Ib. n. 7.

[6] Ib.  
And to desire  
an Aid.

[7] Ib.

[8] Ib.  
The Ordinance of Nor-  
mandy pro-  
duced in Par-  
liament.

[9] Ib. n. 8.

What it was.

The design to  
invade and  
conquer Eng-  
land.[1] Ib.  
How England  
was to be di-  
vided in case  
of Conquest.

7th of September; and directed to the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Ab-  
bots, Priors, Earls, Barons, and other his faithful Subjects in Par-  
liament; (*& aliis fidelibus suis in Parlamento suo, &c.*) which  
when read, Bartholomew Burgeresse for himself and Companions  
(*pur lui & pur ses compaignons*) in presence of the Guardian of  
England, (Leonell the King's Son) the Prelates, and other Great  
Men there named, [5] shewed the Graces God had given to the  
King, to the Great Men, and others with him, after their land-  
ing at La Hogue, (*monstra les graces que Dieu avoit donez a nostre  
Sir le Roi, &c.*) by a short Account of his Progress and Success in  
Normandy, the Battle of Cressy, and his besieging of Calais, from  
whence he resolved not to depart, until he had taken the Town;  
and that then he would draw toward his Adversary, pursue his  
Quarrel, and not return into England, until he had ended the  
War beyond Sea, with the help of God. [6] For the accom-  
plishment of which things, the said Messengers (*a queu chose pour  
faire les ditz messages prièrent, &c.*) prayed the Prelats, Great Men,  
and Commons, that they would Treat and Advise about an Aid,  
and Means to perfect that which had been so graciously begun;  
for that by common assent in Parliament, at the time when the King  
[7] undertook this War, they all promised that they would assist him  
with their Bodies and Goods to their power, (*tonz lui promistrent, qils  
lui eideroient de corps & d'avoir a leur poir.*)

At the same time they produced an Ordinance [8] or Agreement  
made by the King's Adversary, and some Great Men of France  
and Normandy, to destroy the whole Nation of England, and the  
English Language: And to put this Design in Execution, the Earl  
of Eu then Constable of France, and the Chamberlain of Tankerville,  
were to raise a great Army for that purpose; but, as it pleased  
God, they were both taken at Caen, and many of their Men there  
killed and taken, so as the intended destruction of the English  
was defeated.

This Ordinance is [9] enter'd upon the Parliament Roll, and  
there in the Todding called, (*L'Ordinance de Normandie*) The Or-  
dinance of Normandy; 'Tis pretty long, but the most Material  
things were, That the King of France his Eldest Son, John Duke  
of Normandy, as General, with the Nobles, and others of that  
Dukedom, should pass into England with Four thousand Men at  
Arms, Knights, Esquires, and Men of good Estate, and Forty thousand  
Foot. And if this Invasion could not be made that year, then it  
was to be the next year, and so in any other year at a convenient time,  
during the War. Or if this Invasion should not be made, the  
Country of Normandy was to serve him with the same number of  
Men at Arms, and Twenty thousand Foot, in any other place,  
where the King, Duke, or either of them should be in Person.

It was [1] also agreed, That if by God's assistance England  
were Conquered, the Conquest should be made in the Name and Ho-  
nour of the Duke; and that all that the King of England en-  
joy'd should be his, as King and Lord, with all his Rights and  
Honours: And what the Nobles, Barons, and other Seculars pos-  
sessed, was to be enjoy'd by the Church, Barons, Nobles, and Noble  
Towns of Normandy, (*que les Nobles & les Barouns & autres Secu-  
lars y ont, serra & demorra as Esclises, as Barouns, Nobles, & as  
Noble villes de Normandie;*) That the Pope and Church of Rome  
should

A

B

C

D

E

F



should safely enjoy what they had without diminution; and that whatever had been *taken* from the Scots by War, or otherwise, should be *restored* fully and entirely without delay. [2] This Ordinance was Dated at *Boys de Vincens* the 23d Day of March, 1338. and, says *Avesbury*, [3] it was found in *Caen*, when it was taken and delivered to the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, that he might excite the Clergy and Laity (*ut per hoc excitaret clerum & populum*) to pray more willingly for Peace and the King.

[2] *Ibm.*[3] p. 107. 2.  
c. 53.

After these things had been declared and expounded [4] in Parlement, they all thanked God for the *Success* he had given the King against his *Adversary*; and said, That whatever had been given him, had been well employed, and that they would further Aid him according to their Power. The Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses desired time to consider of the Aid until *Thursday* next following, when they granted him Two Fifteenths, making grievous Complaints of Oppressions and Poverty in the Grant; [5] praying the King to think how they had been annually charged with *Tallages*, as *Fifteenths*, *Wooll*, *Ninths*, *Men at Arms*, *Hobelors*, *Archers*, *Viñuals*, *Guard* of the *Sea-Coasts*, and many other Taxes, by which they were almost ruined. And also in the last Parlement, when they granted Two Fifteenths for the ending of the War, it was granted and certainly promised to them (*grantes leur fust, & certainment promis en le dit Parlement*) they should

[4] *Rot. Parl.*  
*ut supra.*

An Aid granted.

[5] *Ibm.* n. 11.  
The Commons Complaints and Grievances.

not be charged or grieved with *Payments* or *Tallages*: Wherefore, it seemed to them reasonable they ought now to be discharged and excused. And notwithstanding these Grants and Promises, there daily issued *Commissions* to *Array*, in all Parts of *England*, *Men at Arms*, *Hobelors*, and *Archers*, according to the *Value* of their *Lands*, or to make *Composition* therefore. They likewise complained of *Purveyance* and *Free Quarter*; and of the Custom and Subsidy of Forty Shillings the Sack upon *Wooll*. [6]

[6] *Ibm.*

Which Grievances, Hardships, and Oppressions (*les queux Grievances, Duretees, & Oppressions*) were done and suffered every day, without Assent or Grant in Parlement (*sanz Assent ou Grant en Parlement*) expressly against \* Record. Yet notwithstanding these Oppressions and Grievances, the Commons, to the utmost of their Abilities, granted Two Fifteenths for the final Accomplishment of the War, by Gods Help, and Destruction of his Enemies, to be levied in two Years, of *Cities*, *Burghs*, and *ancient Demeasns*, as also of the *Commons* of the *Counties*, so as [7] their Petitions upon these Grievances, and others, might be recited on the morrow in Parlement, and have speedy and good Remedy ordered (*& sur ce hastive & bon remedie ordeigner*) for the Common Profit of the Land, according as the King's Four Commissioners, or Messengers, had granted on his behalf to the Commons.

\* See *Rot. Parl.*  
14 Ed. III.  
Part 1. n. 8. 9.  
*Pulton's Stat.*  
14 Ed. III. c. 1.[7] *Ibm.*

The first Petition of the Commons was, [8] That the *Ordinances*, *Promises*, and *Grants* made in Parlement, for the future might be observed, for the Ease of the Commons, against the great Charges and Hardships they had felt and suffered.

[8] The Commons Petitions, n. 10.

Also, That *Commissions* might not be issued out of *Chancery*, to charge the People with the *Array* of *Men at Arms*, *Hobelors*, *Archers*, or *Viñuals*, without *Assent* or *Grant* in Parlement; and if any



any such were, the People should neither be charged with, nor bound to obey them.

[9] *Ibm. R.*  
The King's  
Answer to  
the Commons  
Petitions.

The Answer was, as to the *first Point*, [9] That it should be as they desired. As to the *second*, it was *notorious*, that the Great Men and Commons (*les Grantz & Communes*) in many *Parlements* had *promised* the King to *assist* him to their utmost in Body and Goods (*en corps & avoir e quant qils poant*) in his *Quarrel* with France, and for the Defence and Safety of England: Wherefore the Great Men ([1] *pur quoi les ditz Grantz veantz la necessite nostre Seigneur le Roi*) seeing his Necessity to be supplied with such Men before his Passage, to recover his Rights beyond Sea, and for the Defence of England, had ordered, That those who had an *Hundred Shillings* a year Rent on this side Trent, should find Men at Arms, Hobelors, and Archers, according to the quantity of their Estate and Tenure, to go with the King at his Wages: or if they would not go in Person, to find others; or if not that, to pay the King what he could procure Men for: And so things were, and had been done, and no otherwise. And the King would not, that what was done in this Necessity, should be made an Example for the future, as appeared by his Letters Patents.

[2] Commons  
Petitions, n.  
18.

Another *Petition* of the Commons, [2] was, That the *Forty Shillings* a Sack upon Wooll, might not be collected, but only the old Custom paid.

[3] *Ibm.*  
The King's  
Answer.

To this the Answer [3] was, That the Prelates, and others, seeing the King's Necessity, before his Passage beyond Sea to recover his Rights, and defend his own Nation, agreed by Consent of the Merchants, he should have the *Subsidy* of *Forty Shillings* on every Sack of Wooll that passed beyond Sea, for two Years; and that several Merchants had advanced Money upon that Grant to the King, for the carrying on the War: And therefore it could not be annulled, without the Assent of the King and his said Great Men (*& de ses ditz Grantz.*)

[4] *Aves. p.*  
110. c. 56.  
The Earl of  
Derby's Suc-  
cess in Gascony.

While King Edward was doing these great things in France, and was before Calais, there came an account from the Earl of Derby in Gascony, That the Duke [4] of Normandy, and the French, had in great haste raised the Siege of Aguilon, on Sunday before St. Bartholomew; and went off in such haste, as they left their Tents and most of their Baggage behind them: That he had taken many Towns and Castles of Force and Value in that Country, and put it into good Order, and then marched into Poictou, took Poitiers, and settled that Country, and thence came back to Burdeaux, from whence he came to England, and was at London on the Feast of St. Hillary, or 13th of January.

[5] *Ib. p. 111.*  
a c. 57.  
The Scots in-  
vade England  
with a great  
Army.

The Success against the Scots was likewise considerable this Year. [5] David their King being excited by Philip of Valois, invaded England with a great Army, and marched as far as Durham, near which place the Arch-Bishop of York, Henry Percy, Ralph Nevill, and other Great Men of the Northern Parts, with such an Army as they had then raised, met him, and gave the Scots Battel on St. Luke's Eve, or 17th of October, at Nevill's Cross near Durham; where they obtained a very memorable Victory, killing the Earls of Moray and Strathern, and the Flower of the Scots Militia and Men at Arms; taking King David, the Earls of

The Battel of  
Nevill's Cross.

David King  
of Scots taken  
Prisoner.

Fife



*Fife and Monteth, Malcom Fleming, that called himself Earl of Wigetown, and William Douglas, Prisoners, and many Men at Arms. By Warrant directed to Thomas Rokeby [6] Sheriff of Yorkshire, Dated Decemb. 20. who then had the King of Scots in his keeping, he was commanded to carry David de Bruys (that had with Force of Arms invaded England, plundered and burnt the Country, killed the King's Subjects, and done other Mischiefs) to the Tower of London, and deliver him to the Constable thereof, or his Lieutenant, there to remain in safe Custody. [7] The Earls of Monteth and Fife were condemned for Treason; the first whereof was executed about the beginning of March, in the 21st of Edward III. and the second reprieved during the King's Pleasure.*

The Pope wrote [8] to King Edward from Avignon, on the 18th of the Calends of February, or 15th of January, with great Urgency and Vehemency to consent to a Treaty of Peace, and sent Anibald Bishop of Tusculum, and Stephan by the Title of St. John, and St. Paul a Priest Cardinal, with his Letter, to be his Nuncio's, to treat of, and mediate a Peace.

The King's [9] Answer to this Letter, or Bull, was to this effect: That he was very willing to consent to a Treaty of Truce, or Peace, as he always had been, for the Benefit of Christianity; but his Adversary had always broken the Truces that had been made, and kept his true Heritage from him; which if he did not yield up, there could be no Treaty.

While the King lay before Calais, Charles [1] of Blois, who had taken upon him the Title of Duke of Bretagne, besieged the Town and Castle of Rochedirian, a strong Place in this Country; for the Relief whereof, Sir Thomas Dagworth, King Edward's Governour of that Dukedom, raised what Force he could there, and in Normandy, and marched toward the Siege: Of which Charles of Blois had notice, and stood all Night with his Army ready to receive him. Next morning, which was the 20th of June, before Sunrise both Armies were engaged; and Sir Thomas received the Charge of the French four times successively, and afterward put them into Confusion, and obtained the Field, having slain between 6 and 700 Knights, Esquires, and Men at Arms, besides ordinary Men; and then made Prisoner Charles de Blois, with several Great Men there named, and a great number of other Knights and Esquires; (*& autres Chivalers, & Esquiers a graunt nombre.*) This Account [2] is from Sir Thomas Dagworth's Letter to the Chancellor of England.

About a Month or five Weeks after, the King of France had a Letter from the Governour of Calais [3] of the ill Condition the Town was in for want of Victuals; That the Dogs, Cats, and Horses were most eaten; That the Garrison had agreed, if they had not speedy Relief, to issue out of the Town, and go into the Field to fight for their Lives, or die bravely, as being more Honourable than to eat one another.

On the Friday [4] or 27th of July, before the Gule or first Day of August, it being that Year on the Wednesday, the King of France on an Hill on the other side of the Marsh before Calais, over against King Edward, lodged or posted his Army, which was very great, as by what follows in his Letter to the Arch-Bp. of Canterbury,

[6] Rot. Scot.  
20 Ed. III. M.  
2. A.D. 1346.

Sent to the  
Tower of Lond.

[7] Ib. 21 Ed.  
III. M. 9. Dors.  
A. D. 1346.

[8] Aves. p. iii.  
a. c. 58.  
The Pope  
sent to K. Edw.  
to consent to  
a Treaty of  
Peace.

[9] Ib. b. c. 59.  
To which he  
would not a-  
gree, unless  
his Heritage  
was yielded  
to him.

[1] Ib. p. 114.  
a. b. cap. 64,  
65.  
Charles of  
Blois enters  
Bretagne with  
the Title of  
Duke.

A. D. 1347.  
21 Ed III.  
His Army  
beaten, and  
himself made  
Prisoner.

[2] Ib. m.

[3] Ib. m. p. 113.  
b. 114. a. cap.  
63.  
Calais in great  
distress for  
want of Vi-  
ctuals.

[4] Ib. m. b. 115.  
a. b. cap. 66,  
67.



[5] *Ibm.*  
The King of  
France comes  
with a great  
Army to re-  
lieve it.  
Two Cardi-  
nals mediate  
a Treaty,

Which held 3  
days without  
effect.

\* *Officium.*

The King of  
France chal-  
lengeth the  
King of Eng-  
land to Battel,  
and then runs  
away with  
his Army.  
[6] *Ibm.*

[7] *Ibm.*  
*Calais yield-  
ed.*  
[8] *Ib. p. 116.*  
*a. cap. 68.*  
*A. D. 1347.*  
*21 Ed. III.*

Hard Terms  
put upon the  
Caleſians by  
K. Edward,  
according to  
the French  
Historians.

[9] The same  
Historians.

to his Chancellor, and Treasurer. [5] The *Cardinals* the same Day came to the end of the Causeway leading to *Calais* (*vindrent mesme le jour les Cardinaux a bout de la choncee, &c.*) and send their Letters to his Cousin of Lancaster, and other Great Men of his Army, requesting they might speak with them. Whereupon he gave Leave to him, and his Cousin of Northampton, to go to them; who were with great earnestness requested by them that there might be a Treaty; telling them they knew well the French King would make such Offers of Peace, as would according to Reason be acceptable. At their instance, as one that had always been ready to accept of a reasonable Peace, and at the moment they made the Offer, he assented: And his Cousin of Lancaster built two Pavilions, or Tents, between both Armies; and there assembled, or met, before the Cardinals and Marquess of Juliers, the Earls of Lancaster and Northampton, Monsieur Bartholomew de Burghersh his Chamberlain, Monsieur Reignald de Cobham, and Monsieur Walter de Manny, on his Part; The Dukes of Bourbon and Batheues, the Chancellor of France, the Lord Oistmond, and Monsieur Geofry de Charny, on the Part of his Adversary, who only insisted upon Terms about the Town of Calais; yet at last offered his Commissioners, That he should enjoy the Dukedom of Guyen, and County of Ponthieu, as his Grandfather had done; which was thought a small matter to what Damage he had received. So that after Three Days Treaty without effect, on Tuesday the last Day of July, toward Evening his Adversaries gave him notice, by some Great Men, That if he would come out of his Fastnesses, to a Place convenient to Fight in, to be set out by Four Knights chosen on either side, he would give him Battel any time between that and Friday Evening. On the next Day, being Wednesday, [6] and the first of August, he let him know he accepted his Offer, and gave Letters of safe Conduct to Four Knights, to come and join with Four of his, to set out the Ground. Whereupon his Adversary [7] on Thursday night, with his Army, in great haste marched off, as if they had been routed, and burnt their Tents, and most part of their Baggage. [8] The next Day, which was the 3d of August, the Besieged wanting Victuals, and despairing of Relief, yielded up the Town, and themselves and all their Goods, to his Mercy and Pleasure.

But King Edward being much enraged at the Inhabitants long holding out, and the great and many Injuries they had done him at Sea, did not admit them to these Terms, as the French Historians Froysard, Du Chesne, de Serres, and Mezeray report, until they sent Six of their Chief Burgeſſes, bare-headed and bare-footed in their Shirts, with Ropes about their Necks, to deliver the Keys of the Town and Castle to him, with a total Submission to his Pleasure. He was greatly resolved to put them to death; but his Queen then in the Camp, by an importune Intercession, obtained their Lives. 'Tis very remarkable, That, as the same Historians say, at a Meeting of the Townsmen to appoint or chuse the Six to send out, they were in great Difficulties and Perplexity: Eustace of St. Peter, the most Noted of them, to save his Fellow-Burgeſſes, offered himself to be one; by whose Example there soon followed others to make up the Number. [9] The Keys thus delivered, and the King in possession of the Town, all the old Inhabitants were

A

B

C

D

E

F



A were removed by his Authority, and it was new Peopled with English, to whom he gave all their Goods. [1] Robert of Avesbury hath nothing of this Relation of the Six Burghers being demanded, or thus sent out; he only says, That the Besieged wanting Victuals, and hopeless of Relief (*ipsam villam, ac se & sua omnia voluntati Domini Regis Angliæ reddiderunt, & idem Dominus Rex semper misericors, & benignus, captis & retentis paucis de Majoribus, Communitatem dictæ villæ cum bonis suis omnibus gratiose permisit abire*) rendred the Town, themselves, and all they had to the King's Will, who, always merciful and kind, retained only a few of the Chief Persons, and graciously permitted the Community of the Town to go away with their Goods.

B Soon after the taking of [2] Calais, by the Mediation of the Cardinals, the Earls of Lancaster and Huntington, Ralph Lord Stafford, Walter de Manny, and others, had Commission to Treat of a Truce with the Commissioners of Philip de Valois, which was concluded, affirmed, and sworn to, on the 28th of September, 1347. to continue till 15 Days after Midsummer next following. [3] The Chief of the Articles were the same with the Truce made before Tournay. In a very short time after, having settled the Town, with his Affairs in those Parts, making Sir Amery de Pavy, an Italian, Governour thereof, [4] he returned into England with great Glory and Renown.

C The Number of King Edward's Army at this time in France, Normandy, and before Calais, besides the Lords [5] was 31294. And the whole Pay and Wages of this Number, from the 4th of June in the 20th Year of his Reign, to the 12th of October in the 21st of his Reign, being a Year and 131 Days, amounted to 127201 l. 2. s. 9 d. ob. as appears by the Particulars.

D Within 5 or 6 Weeks after his Return, on the 13th of November, he sent forth [6] Writs of Summons for a Parlement to meet on the morrow of St. Hillary, or 14th of January.

The cause [7] of Summons by William de Thorp Lord Chief Justice, was declared to be for two things: First, concerning the War with France, undertaken by Consent of the Lords and Commons. The Second, how the Peace of the Nation might be kept: And that within four Days, they should give their Answer to the King and his Council, what they thought of these things.

E The fourth Day the Commons declare, [8] That they are not able to advise any thing concerning War; and therefore desired to be excused as to that, and that the King will be advised by his Nobles and Council; and what shall be by them Determined, they would Consent unto, Confirm, and Establish.

F To the second they answer, [9] Whereas they were charged to advise the King, how the Peace of the Land might be better kept, That in every County there should be Six Persons, of whom Two to be the Greatest of the County, Two Knights, and Two Men of the Law, or more or less, as need should be; and they to have Power and Commission out of the Chancery, to hear and determine Matters concerning the Peace, &c. And then because they had been so long in Parlement, to their great Costs and Mischiefe, they desire the Answer to their Petitions, and a Dismission.

[1] p. 216. a. 2. 8. Avesbury reports none of those Terms; but gives a more fair account of of the Usage them.

[2] Rot. Calcf. 22 Ed. III. M. 4.

A Truce made at Calais.

[3] Aves. p. 116. b. 117 a. c. 69, 70.

[4] Walsf. f. 167. n. 50. K. Edw. returns into England.

[5] Append. n. 92. The number of his Army. What their Pay for a year and 21 weeks.

[6] Claus. 21 Ed. III. Part 2. M. 9. Dors. Summons for a Parlement.

[7] Rot. Parl. n. 4. The cause of Summons.

[8] Ibid. n. 5. The Commons not able to advise any thing concerning the War.

[9] Ibid. n. 70. The Commons Advice to the King about keeping the Peace. Having been long in Parlement, they desire to be dismissed.



Summons to  
Parlement.

[1] Rot. Clauf.  
22 Ed. III.  
Part 1. M. 32.  
Dors.

[2] Rot. Parl.  
22 Ed. III. n. 2.

3.  
The cause of  
Summons de-  
clared.

'Tis probable the King received not the Satisfaction he expected from this Parlement; for within a Month and 3 Days after the firstday of the Meeting thereof, he issued [1] Writs for Summoning another (that is to say, on the 14th of February) to meet on Monday next after the Sunday in Midlent: On which Day, because the Great Men Summoned were not fully come, the Parlement was continued until the next Day, and for the same reason unto Wednesday: (*Pur ceo que les Grantz gestoient somons ne furent pas pleynement venuz fu continuez tanque le Mardy prochain suant & pui, pur mesme la cause du dit Mardy tanque a Meskerdy.*) When Monsieur [2] William de Thorp Chief Justice, propounded the Causes of Summons (fully also contained in the Writ) which were two: The first, That according to the Truce made at Calais, between the King and his Adversary of France, certain Messengers were to be sent to the Court of Rome, on both Parts, to treat of a final Peace between them; That King Edward had sent his competent Messengers to find the Disposition of the Pope concerning some Preparatories for the Treaty and other things, about the Feast of St. Andrew last past, in hopes to have heard from them in his last Parlement; of whom, or of what they had done, he had then received no certainty; and for that many notable things had been agreed last Truce in favour of him, his Subjects and Allies, by the Malice of the adverse Party, were not then accomplished. And also for that his said Adversary, contrary to his Faith given, concerning the then hoped-for Peace, had provided a very great Multitude (*Trop grant multitude des Gentz d'Armes*) of Men at Arms, and others, with Ships and Gallies of greater Force than at that time had ever been heard of, (*que cea en arere ad este oi*) to invade England, destroy the Nation, the King and his Subjects, as it manifestly appeared by what he had shewn and did show every day. The other cause was to know how and in what manner the Peace of the Land might be best kept; and then the Commons were commanded to treat together, and take good Advice how the Malice of the King's Adversary might be resisted; and for the Safety of himself and Kingdom how he might be Aided, to his greatest Profit, and the least Charge to his People. The Commons having advised together, gave the Answer following.

[3] Ibm. n. 4.

The Com-  
mons Gri-  
evances and  
Complaints.

To their most Honourable and most redoubted Liege Lord, his poor Commons [3] shew, (*A lour tres Honorable & tres Redoutez Seigneur Liege, monstre sa pour Comune*) That at his last Parlement he sent the Noble Earls of Lancaster and Northampton (& autres Grantz) and other Great Men, to tell them, That he intended not to take any thing of, or charge them, which they had published to the whole Land, for which they had also thanked him, according to their Knowledge, as much as they could, and prayed for him Night and Day (& prient pur lui nuyt & jour) and yet at this present Parlement, upon News now come (*pur noveles que sont venuz*) he demanded a very great Charge of his poor Commons (*un trop grant Charge da sa povre Comune.*) They desire his Nobleness and most High Lordship, he would please to understand the Mischiefs and Burthens of the Commons: That is to say, the reasonable Aid which had been pardoned in his 14th Year; (that is, a Grant was made it should not be paid all his Reign) to wit, 40 s. upon every Knight's Fee to make his



his Eldest Son Knight; whereas by Statute there was but 20 s. due upon every Fee: Fifteenths of the Commons, Tenth of Cities and Burghs, Men at Arms, Hobelors, Archers, taking of Victuals without paying for them, Guarding the Sea, and also the Subsidy of Wooll; by reason whereof, every Sack of Wooll, that was the Treasure of the Land, was sold for 40 s. less than its Value. So as it would be a great Trouble to the Commons to bear any Charge. Yet nevertheless, so as the Aid now to be granted might not be turned into Wooll, neither by way of Loan or Value, or in any other manner; nor levied too hastily, but in the Form it was to be granted; and that the Eyres of Justices in the mean time might cease, as well of the Forest as of Common Pleas and General Enquiry in the whole Land, if this Aid should be levied: That no Subsidy upon Wooll for the future may be granted by the Merchants: That no Imposition, Loan, or other Tallage, or Charge whatsoever, shall be put upon them by the Privy Council, without their Grant and Consent in Parlement: That Two Prelates, Two Lords, and Two Justices, might be assigned to hear and dispatch their Petitions, which were not answered in the last Parlement; and that their Petitions in this Parlement might also be answered according to Reason; and the Answers to remain in force, without being changed or altered: That the Justices do enquire of False Money, which destroys the People: That David Bruys, William Douglass, and other Chieftains of Scotland, may in no manner be released, neither by Ransom, nor upon their Faith: That he would restore the 20000 Sacks of Wooll taken of the Commons by way of Loan: That an Aid to Marry his Daughter might not be taken the mean time; and, That there might be no Marshalcy in England, except that of the King, or the Guardian of England, when he was out of the Kingdom. Upon these Conditions, and otherwise not; (sur cestcs Conditions, & autrement nient;) and also that they may be entred in the Parlement-Roll, as Matter of Record (come chose de Record) by which they might have Remedy, if any thing should be done to the contrary in time to come: The said poor Commonalty, to their very great Mischief, Grant to the King (si grante la dite povre Communalte a lour trop grante Mischief a nostre Seigneur le Roy trois Quinzismes, &c.) three Fifteenths to be levied in three Years, to begin at Michaelmas next coming, so as every Year one Fifteenth may be levied, and no more, at two Terms in the Year, St. Michael and Easter, by even Portions; and that this Aid may be assigned and reserved only for the War, and not to pay Debts. And if the War should cease, or a Truce be made, then the Fifteenth of the last Year not to be levied. That of these Conditions, and the manner of this Grant, Letters Patents shall be made, and sent into all Counties, without paying any thing for them, wherein shall be made mention of the great Necessity the King was in, after the last Parlement. And in case the War should break out toward Scotland, the Aid granted beyond Trent, should be employed for the Defence of those Parts, as it had been formerly.

About this time Lewis of Bavaria being dead, several of the Electors met at Colen, from whence they sent Ambassadors to King Edward, and offered to Elect him Emperor of Germany; [4] in Return to which Offer he sent Sir Hugh Nevill, and Ivo de Glington, Canon of St. Paul, with his Refusal of that Dignity, and great Thanks for the Honour they intended him.

The Conditions of the Grant of an Aid.

The Electors offer to chuse K. Edward Emperor of Germany.  
[4] Claus. 22 Ed. III M. 20  
Dors. A.D. 1334.  
He refuseth their Offer.

The



[5] Rot. Fran.  
22 Edw. III.  
M. 13.  
Several  
Truces con-  
tinued and  
made.

[6] Rot. Fran.  
23 Edw. III.  
M. 9, 10. Dors.

[7] F. 168.  
ii. 10.

The English  
Women imi-  
tate the French  
in Apparel.

[8] Freysard,  
lib. i. c. 150.  
[9] Du Chesne,  
f. 669. C. D.  
and f. 670.  
A B.  
The betray-  
ing of Calais.

Prevented by  
the King and  
Prince of  
Wales.

Many French-  
men of Note  
made Priso-  
ners.

[1] Freysard,  
c. 152.  
The King  
Treats the  
Prisoners and  
his own No-  
bility with a  
Supper.

[2] Rot. Fran.  
22 Edw. III.  
M. 1.

The time of the Truce of Calais being near expiring, [5] the King upon the Pope's sending Commissioners, either to prolong the Truce, or Treat of a final Peace, the former was agreed for six weeks; Which Term being ended, the Ambassadors on both sides met between Guines and Calais, and agreed to another Truce, to begin on the 13th of November, and continue to the first of September, 1349; Which Truce on the second of May that year, [6] was prorogued to the Feast of Pentecost, 1350. The Articles were much the same with those of the Truce before Tournay, A. D. 1340, and of that before Vannes, A. D. 1343. This year, says Walsingham, was [7] Glorious in England, for Peace, Victories, the Spoils of Caen, Calais, and other Towns and Cities in France, as also for Garments, Furs, Gold and Silver Vessels, and other rich Utensils, which were seen almost in every House, and that then it was, the English Dames began to pride themselves in the Apparel of the French Dames.

In a very short time after the Truce as above was concluded, the Lord Geofrey Charny, Governor of St. Omers, [8] made a Bargain with Sir Amery de Pavy, an Italian or Lombard, [9] Governor of Calais, for 20000 Crowns, to betray the Town to him, of which King Edward having notice, came privately thither, the night or very evening the delivery was agreed on, with the Prince of Wales, and several Earls and Barons, and lodged himself in the Castle, to secure it with the Men he brought with him; The Money was brought and paid, and Twelve Knights, and an Hundred Men at Arms, were let into the Castle, who were all made Prisoners by the King's Guards within it, who lay undiscovered. Sir Geofrey was under the Town with a considerable Force, placed near two Gates, ready to enter it when they should be opened. But the mean time the Prince of Wales went forth at one Gate, and the King at the other, concealed under the Banner of Sir Walter Manny, and fought on Foot among the common Soldiers, and was engaged with the Lord Eustace of Rybemont, a valiant Person, who struck the King twice to his Knees, yet at last was overcome by him, and made his Prisoner, with Sir Geofrey de Charny and many other Frenchmen of Note. The Prince likewise prevailing against the Party he engaged with, and there were slain and drowned about 600 French, who were double the number to the English that sallied out of Calais upon them.

The very evening of this day [1] the King ordered a great Supper to be provided, as well for the Prisoners as his own Nobility, and coming in amongst them, took a Chaplet of Pearls from his own Head, and placed it upon the Head of Sir Eustace of Rybemont, as one that had deserved best of all Men in the Morning Action, and forgave him his Ransom. Freysard says this Action was done upon the 31st of December, 1348, the 22d of Edward the Third; and Walsingham placeth it in the year 1349, which was in the same year of the King, but the difference is inconsiderable, for they both begin the year on the first of January; And Walsingham following Robert de Avesbury, reports it to have been on the 2d of January, which was indeed according to this Account in the year of our Lord 1349. The King discharged [2] Sir Amery de Pavy of the Government of the Town, and put in Sir John Beauchamp.

This

A

B

C

D

E

F



This year the Plague first began in *Dorsetshire* about the first of *August*, and spread it self all over the Nation, and continued until *Michaelmas* twelvemonth after; it was so great in both years as a [3] *Parlement* being summoned it was twice prorogued [4] for that reason, and at last respited and deferred until new Summons. This was a general and horrid Plague, it began in the Kingdom of *Cathay*, *A. D.* 1346, by a most horrible stinking Vapour, which broke out of the Earth like a Subterranean Fire, and consumed a great part of the Country, and infested the Air. [5] From *Cathay* it passed into *Asia*, and *Greece*, from thence into *Africa*, and afterwards into *Europe*, and so into *France* and *England*. By reason of this Plague there is scarce any thing remarkable reported to have been done in the last year thereof, 1349, in either Kingdom, which was the 23d of *Edward* the Third. Yet Mr. *Ashmole* [6] in his *Institution, Laws, and Ceremonies* of the most Noble Order of the *Garter*, would fix the Institution of the Order this year, and seems to assert, That the first great Feast of *St. George*, was this year celebrated, which is scarce probable; for the Writ by which the *Parlement* that was to meet fifteen days after *Easter*, [7] was prorogued until new Summons, because of the *Raging Pestilence* in the Nation, is dated *March* the 10th preceding; *Easter-Day* this year falling on the 9th of *April*, and the *Quinden* or *fifteenth* of *Easter* being the 23d or *St. George's-Day*, it cannot be thought that this great Solemnity, to which the King sent his *Heralds* into *Germany*, *France*, *Scotland*, *Burgundy*, *Haynault*, *Flanders*, and *Brabant*, to invite all *Knights* and *Esquires* to come and shew their *Military Skill* and *Valour* in all kinds of Feats of Arms, when the *Parlement* was put off from meeting on that day, until new Summons, by reason of the *Mortal Pestilence* then raging, as 'tis expressed in the Writ. However this famous Order might then be instituted, the Modal of it contrived, and the Statutes made to adorn *Martial Virtue*, and to increase and confirm *Faith*, *Honour*, and *Courage* in the minds of the Nobility; which were then the true *Endowments*, *Practice*, and *Badges* of *Military Men*, by the observation and performance whereof they truly acquired a great Name and Reputation, as the only Men of *Trust* and *Fidelity*, and not to do *Honourably*, *Justly*, *Stoutly*, and *Faithfully*, was by them esteemed the greatest *Blemish*, *Villany*, *shame*, and *Dis-honour* imaginable. Of this glorious Order I shall write nothing further, but leave the Reader to the perusal of the Excellent, Laborious, and Learned Work of Mr. *Ashmole*.

The next year [8] Sir *Thomas Dagworth*, the King's Lieutenant in *Bretagne*, with a small number, as he was used to do, in the month of *July*, going from place to place to visit the Garrisons, was surprised by an Ambush of *French*, and after a brave Defence, killed, as were most with him, or made Prisoners.

In *August* following, about the Feast of *St. Laurence*, or 10th of that month, [9] as *Avesbury*, or according to [1] *Mexeray* on the 22d thereof, *Philip King* of *France* died, and his Eldest Son *John* was Crowned at *Rheimes* on the 26th of *September* following. *Walsingham*, f. 170. n. 50. falsely (as appears from the *Parlement Rolls* hereafter cited) placeth the death of King *Philip* in *A. D.* 1355, and 29th of *Edward* the Third.

A great Plague in England.

[3] Rot. Clause 22 Edw. III. Part 2. M. 7. Dorf.  
[4] Ib. M. 3. Dorf. & Rot. Clause 23 E. III. Part 1. M. 19. Dorf.  
[5] Mexeray, f. 369.

[6] F. 185. c. 5. Sect. 3. The Institution of the Order of the Garter.

[7] Rot. Clause 23 Edw. III. Part 1. M. 19. Dorf.

[8] Avesbury, p. 120. b. c. 74. A. D. 1350. Sir Thomas Dagworth slain.

[9] Ib. c. 75. [1] F. 370. Philip King of France dies; his Son John Crowned.



[2] *Avesbury*,  
at *supra*.  
c. 76, 77.  
The Spaniards  
take many  
English  
Their Fleet  
beaten by the  
English.

[3] *Ib.* p. 121.  
a. c. 77.

They make a  
Truce.

[4] *Rat. Fran.*  
23 *Edw. III.*  
M. 9, 10.  
The French  
Truce pro-  
rogued.

[5] *Ib.* 24 E.  
III. M. 2.

[6] *Ib.* M. 8.  
*Dors.*

The same  
Truce con-  
tinued.  
Hostilities  
committed  
notwithstand-  
ing the  
Truces.

[7] *Avesbury*,  
p. 121. a.  
c. 78. A. D.  
1351.

A. D. 1351.  
25 *Ed. III.*

[8] *Ib.* c. 80.

[9] *Ib.* 372.

[1] *Rat. Clause*  
25 *Ed. III.*  
M. 5. *Dors.*

[2] *Rat. Parl.*  
25 *Ed. III.*

Part 2. n. 1.  
Summons to  
Parlement.

[3] *Ib.* n. 7.  
The cause of  
meeting de-  
clared.

The Spaniards [2] the year before came toward *Burdeaux* with a great Fleet of Ships, and took many *English* Ships coming from thence laden with Wine, and killed all the Men. And this year they came upon the *English* Coast; The King suspecting it was to waste, burn, and rob the Country near the Shore, fitted out a Fleet, taking with him many Noblemen, and Manning it well with Men at Arms, Archers, and Seamen, about the latter end of this month engaged them before *Winchelsey*, [3] and took Twenty four large and rich Ships; after which Sea Battel the Spaniards made a Truce for Twenty years.

The Truce [4] above-mentioned, that had been made between *Calais* and *Guines* on the 13th of *October*, 1348, to continue unto the first of *September*, 1349, was the 2d of *May* preceding Prorogued (so the Word in the Record) to the *Feast* of *Pentecost* in the year 1356.

In *August* that year *Philip* of *Valois* (as above) died, and his Son *John* succeeded [5] on the 25th of *November* next following, *Commissioners* were appointed to Treat with his *Commissioners* to confirm the last Truce made with his Father to the first of *August* then next to come, which was to be in the year 1351, and 25th of *Edward III.*

Upon a new Treaty this same Truce [6] was proclaimed to continue a whole year longer, until the first of *August*, next after that first of *August* which was to be in the year 1352, and 26th of *Edward III.*

Notwithstanding these Truces were in being, there was often something enterprised, by each Party against the other. [7] The French besieged the Town of *St. John de Angely* in *Xantogne* in the year 1351, and made themselves Masters of it. [8] The English surprised the Castle of *Guines*, the Governor having been corrupted with Money, which King *Edward* pleasantly excused, as [9] *Mezeray* hath it, saying, Truces were Merchandise, and that he did no more than follow the Example of King *Philip*, who would have bought *Calais*.

This year the King issued his Writs [1] on the 15th of *November*, for summoning a *Parlement* to meet on the *Feast* of *St. Hillary*, or 13th of *January*, which was on *Friday*; [2] from that day it was continued to *Monday*, because many of the Lords were not come, and then until *Tuesday*, the Fifth day of the *Parlement*, when Sir *William de Shareshall*, in the presence of the King, Lords and Commons, [3] declared the cause of Summons, setting forth the King's Title to the Crown of *France*, telling them, That *Philip* of *Valois* had usurped it all his Life, and not only so, but moved War against him in *Gascoign* and other Places, seizing upon his Rights and Possessions, and doing the Mischiefs to him by Sea and Land, which they well understood, in subversion of him and his Realm of *England*, and that in *Parlements* before that time the Matter had been propounded in behalf of the King; and the Great Men, as also the Commons, had been requested to give their Counsel and Advice, (*& fut prie de s'ibien as Grantz come as Communes qils ent vorroient doner leur conseil & avis*) what was best to be done; and after good Deliberation had, they said, They knew no other way to advise him, than to procure Allies, to go against his Adversary by main Force, and to do this,



this, they promised to aid him with Body and Goods, (*& a ceo fair ils lui promistrent de lui aider de corps & de avoir;*) Whereupon the King made Alliances beyond Sea, and with their Assistance, and the help of his good People of England, he made War upon him, because he could not have a reasonable Peace; That the King and his Adversary had often assented to Truces, yet his Adversary during those Truces imagining to subdue and deceive the King, broke them every way, continuing his Malice against him and his Friends; That now John his Son, after his decease, continuing the same wrongs his Father had maintained, possessed the Kingdom of France, and contrary to the last Truce confirmed and sworn to by both, which he had broken in Gascoign and Bretagne, and also upon the Sea, and had sent to Scotland to continue the ancient Alliance made between them, wholly in Subversion and Destruction of the King and his People of England: Wherefore the King first of all much thanks his Commons for the Aids they have made him, and for the Goodwill he had always found in them; *pur quoi tut ad e primes nostre Seigneur le Roi mercie molt a ces Comunes des Eydes qils lui ont faitz, & de leur bone volunte qils ad totes voyes trouve en eux, &c.*) and prays them (*& les prie*) they would advise upon these things until Wednesday, (*tant a cest meskerdy preschien suant*) which was next day) and be at Westminster by Sun-rising (*tantst apres le solail lever*) in the Painted Chamber, to deliberate, and to hear if the King would say any thing further touching the cause of his Parliament, and to shew the King their Grievances, if they had any, that Remedy might be given them this Parliament.

Afterwards [4] Sir William charged the Commons on behalf of the King (*le dit Sire William chargea les Comunes de par le Roi*) to shorten their stay in Town, and for the quick dispatch of these Matters, and others that might be shewn them from the King, that before their departure they would go together in some place at Westminster, to choose 24 or 30 Persons out of their whole number, to be on the morrow in the Painted-Chamber, that the King might send to them some Great Men (*aucunes des Grantz*) to confer with them upon the Business aforesaid.

On Friday [5] all the Commons came before the Prince, and the other Great Men, (*& les autres Grantz*) in the White Chamber, where Sir Bartholomew Burghersh gave them an Account of the Malice and falshood of the King's Adversary of France, (*on fut dit par Monsieur Bartheu de Burghersh la Malice & la Fausine de son adversair de France*) how he had broke the last Truce, and that lately upon the Sea, in Gascoign, Bretagne, and near Calais, and indeavoured by all the Subtilties and Contrivances his Council knew, to trouble the King and his Subjects every where, and said the Commons ought diligently to advise what seemed, and what might be best to do for the King to oppose and check the Malice and falshood aforesaid, for the safety of himself, his Kingdom and all his Subjects. And presently after this Declaration, the said Sir William told the Commons, if they had any Petitions of Grievances done to the People, or for the amendment of the Law, they should bring them into Parliament; and told the Prelates and Lords, they were to attend the Business of all Persons Petitions in the Places where they were assigned.

[4] Ib. n. 8.  
A Committee of Lords and Commons to meet to confer upon the Business of this Parliament.  
The King sent the Lords or Great Men to them.  
[5] Ibid.

The cause of Summons further declared and enforced.



[6] Ib. n. 9.

Upon Treaty  
of the Com-  
mittee, and  
Advice of the  
Lords sent to  
them.

A Roll of an  
Ayd, and the  
Petitions of  
the Commons  
was delivered  
to the King.

[7] Ib. n. 10.  
The Ayd.

[8] Ib. n. 11.  
The Condi-  
tions of the  
Ayd.

[9] Ib. n. 12.

[1] Ret. Ib.  
The King's  
Answer.

[2] Ib. n. 16.

And then after a long [6] Treaty and Debate by the Commons (that is, the 24 or 30 Persons chosen to confer with the Great Men sent to them by the King) with the Commonalty, and the Advice of the Great Men sent to them, as well about a convenient Ayd to the King to oppose the Malice of his Adversary, as about making the Petitions concerning the common People of the Land; (*& puis apres longue Trete & Deliberation enes par les Communes ove la Commualte, & levis de ascuns des Grantz a eux envoies sibi en sur un eide que convendroit a Roi, &c.*) The Commons came before the King, and all the Great Men in Parlement, (*vindrent les ditz Communes devant nostre Seigneur le Roi & touz les Grantz en Parlement*) and shewed how the Common People of the Land were much impoverished by the late Mortal Pestilence, as by other Burthens, Taxes, Taillages, and many other Payments laid upon them, but notwithstanding these Mischiefs, having regard to the necessary Defence to be made for the safety of the Nation, against so great Malice of the Enemies of the Kingdom, delivered to the King in full Parlement a Roll, (*baillerent a le Roi en Parlement une Roule, &c.*) containing as well the Ayd which they had intirely with one accord granted, as the Petitions, (*touchant la comune de la terre*) concerning the Commons of the Land, to which they prayed the King to give a good and quick Answer, (*bon & hastif Respons;*) He granted their Prayer, and Thanked them for the great Ayds given him before, and for that now granted, and for the good Will and Nature which he had always found in his Commons before this time, and now finds in this Affair.

Then follows the Grant [7] of Three Tenths, and Three Fifteenths granted to the King this Parlement by the Great Men of the Land, and the whole Commons, (*Grantees a nostre Seigneur le Roi en cest present Parlement par les Grantz du Roialme & par tote la Commune, &c.*) for the great necessity declared to the said Commons, by the King and Great Men, (*par le Roi & les Grantz avantditz*) to be paid as the last Tenths and Fifteenths were in Three years, &c. upon the Conditions following:

'To wit, [8] That all the Fines, Issues, Amerciaments, Profits and Excesses levied, or to be levied upon the Labourers, Artificers, Regrators, &c. go to the Commons toward this Tax, &c. as in the Statutes at Large, now nothing to the purpose; and so the Answer.

'That hereafter [9] no Tax, Taillage, Ayds or Charges be demanded or levied of the Commons; and that all the reasonable Petitions prayed by the Commons, may be granted, confirmed, and sealed, before the departure of this Parlement.

'As to Tax and Taillage, [1] 'tis not the intention of the King, or the Great Men, (*ne des Grantz*) they should ever be charged.

'As to granting their reasonable Petitions, the King is pleased 'it should be done.

'Also the Commons pray, [2] the Loans that were granted to the King by many Persons of the Commons, may be released, and none compelled to make such Loans for the future against his will,



'will, for that 'twas against Reason and the Franchise of the Land; and that *Restitution* might be made to those that had made the Loans.

'The King [3] is pleased it should be so.

'Also, That whereas the Justices [4] assigned in divers Counties, have *judged* many Men that were Arraigned before them as *Traitors*, for divers Causes *unknown* to the Commons to be *Treason*, That the King by his Council, (*& par les Grantz & Sages de la Terre*) and by the Great and Wise Men of the Land, would please to Declare the Points of *Treason* in that Parlement.

'The [5] Answer was, as in the Statute of the 25th of Edward the Third, Cap. 2.

The next year, about the beginning of *August*, Sir *Walter de Bintley*, the King's Governor of *Britain* and Parts adjoining, with a small number of *English*, in respect of the great Army a Marshal of *France* had encompassed them with, in the Plains near the Town of *Mauiron*, obtained a considerable Victory, having killed *Sevenscore Knights*, and as many *Esquyers*, and Men at Arms as made the number 500, besides Common Soldiers without number, and many taken Prisoners, according to his own Relation in a [7] Letter to the Lord Chancellor, *John Thoresby*, Bishop of *Worcester*, and soon after Arch-Bishop of *York*, in which he mentions the Names of those of the best Quality that were slain or taken.

On the 6th of *December* \* *Pope Clement* the Sixth died, and *Cardinal Stephan de Albret*, Bishop of *Clermont*, succeeded him the 18th of the same month, a *Limosin* by Birth, and took upon him the Name of *Innocent VI*.

In the 27th of his [8] Reign, he issued his Writs, *July 15*, by which he summoned a great Council to meet at *Westminster* on *Monday* after *St. Matthew* the Apostle, [9] on the 7th of *October*; The King, Prelates, and Great Men (*le Roy, Prelates & Grants*) being in the [9] *White Chamber*, (*les coes appelez*) the Commons were called, and *Monfieur Bartholomew de Burghersh*, the King's Chamberlain, told them, 'That the King thinking how he might best ease his People, who had been often charged with *Impositions*, and great *Ayds*, by reason of the War against his Adversary of *France*, who detained his Rights and Heritage of the Crown of *France*, had sent lately the most Noble and Excellent Persons of his Realm, the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, the \* *Duke of Lancaster*, and other Prelates, and Great Men, to *Gwynes*, to Treat with the Deputies of his Adversary (*ove les Deputes son dit adversari*) in presence of a Cardinal which the Pope sent thither as a Mediator; and after this Treaty had sent his Confessor to the Pope, to let him know, That considering the many People had been killed in this War, and desiring to spend part of his time in another War to the greater Pleasure and Honour of God, if his Adversary would make restitution of the *Dutchy of Guyen* to him as intirely as any of his Ancestors had enjoyed it, to hold it freely without Homage or Service, he would be willing after the end of the War,

[3] Rot. Ib.  
The King's Answer.  
[4] Ib. n. 17.

[5] Rot. Ib.  
The Answer.

[6] *Ausbury*,  
c. 81, 82.  
p. 121. b. 122.  
a. b.  
A. D. 1352.  
26 Ed. III.  
A great Victory obtained over the French in *Britany*.  
[7] *Ibm*.

\* *Murray*,  
fol. 372.  
*Pope Clement* the Sixth dies, *Innocent* the Sixth succeeds.  
[8] Clause,  
27 Ed. III.  
M. 12. Dors.  
A great Council summoned.  
[9] Rot. Parl.  
27 Ed. III.  
n. 31. or 9.  
The causes of it declared.

\* He was created the first Duke of *Lancaster* on the 6th of *March*, 25th of Ed. III. See *Pat. 25 E. III.* p. 1. M. 18.



K. Edw. upon  
Terms would  
have quitted  
his Title to  
the Crown of  
France.

[1] Ibm.

[2] Ibm.

The Subsidy  
of Wooll, &c.  
granted for 3  
years.

[3] *Ans. p.*  
122. b. c. 84.  
Charles of  
Blois set at li-  
berty for a  
great Sum of  
Money.

[4] *Rot. Parl.*  
28 Ed. III. c. 58.  
K. Edw. contin-  
ues his Inclina-  
tions for  
Peace.  
St Mark was  
on Easter  
Tuesday, Easter-  
day this year  
being Apr. 23.

[5] Ibm.

to resign the Crown of France: That the Pope had been farther addressed to, privately to search out his Adversaries Inclinations toward another Treaty, with Protestation, That if he should not accept it, all his Rights should be entirely saved to him, as if no Offer had been made; of which the King not having received any Account from the Pope, he sent his Clerc, Master William de Witlesey Arch-Deacon of Huntington, to know what had been done in this Affair, who brought back nothing to any purpose:

[1] Wherefore it seemed convenient to the King, the Great Men, and his Council, That he should prepare himself for War against his Adversary, as well for the Defence of England, as to recover his Rights, for which he ought to have a great Sum of Money.

[2] And the said Chamberlain shew them further, That the Subsidy of Wooll, Leather, and Woollfells, ended at Michaelmas last past - That it was not the King's Intention to lay any Tax, or other Charge upon his People; but he requested the Prelates, Great Men, and his Commons, to grant him the Subsidy of Wooll, Leather, and Woollfells, for some time; (*mes il prie as Prelates, Grantz, & ses Communes, qils lui veulent Granter le Subside des Leines, Quirrs, & peaux lanus pur un temps.*) Upon which Request and Deliberation had between the said Prelates, Great Men, and Commons, they unanimously agreed and granted the King the Subsidy of Wooll, &c. to receive it as it had been taken formerly, for three Years from Michaelmas last past, if the War held so long; (*sur queu priere ene deliberation entre les ditz Prelatz, Grantz, & Communes s'assenteront unement & granterent au Roi le Subside des leines, quirrs, & peaux lanuz, &c.*) upon Condition that the Money arising from this Subsidy, should be safely kept for the War, and not to be employed to any other Use.

This Year after Christmas [3] Charles of Blois, who took upon him the Title of Duke of Britan, and had been Prisoner in England a long time, by the Mediation of the Great Men of that Country, upon certain Conditions and Promises of a great Sum of Money, was released; for the Payment whereof, two Sons and a Daughter were sent into England as Hostages.

King Edward continued his Inclinations to Peace, [4] which were declared by Monsieur Bartholomew de Burghersh, to the Great Men and Commons (*a les Grantz & Communes*) in the Parlement holden next Year, on Monday after the Feast of St. Mark, signifying to them, that there was great hopes of Peace, by Treaty between Commissioners on both Parts. Yet the King would not conclude any thing, without the Assent of the Great Men and his Commons (*sanz assent des Grantz & de ses Communes*) wherefore he demanded of them, on behalf of the King, Whether they would Assent and Agree to Peace, if it might be had by Treaty? To which the Commons answered with one accord, That what Issue it should please the King and Great Men to take of the Treaty, should be agreeable to them (*a quoi [5] les Communes dun assent & dun accord, responderent que quel Issue que pluist a Seigneur le Roy & les Grantz de prendre du dit Tretee fenst agreeable a eux.*) Then the Commons were asked again, If they would Assent to a perpetual Peace, if it might be had? who all entirely answered (*Oil, Oil*) Yes, Yes. Whereupon Master Michael Northburgh, Keeper of the Privy Seal, Commanded Sir John de Swyneley the Pope's

A

B

C

D

E

F



Pope's Notary, That he should make thereof a Publick Instrument.

A Not long after this Parlement [6] by a Second Treaty a Peace was concluded, upon the *Terms* King Edward had sent to the Pope the Year before : And it was agreed, That for the Pope's Confirmation of this Peace, there were Messengers to be sent by both King's to the *Roman* Court, and at the same time a Truce was [7] made, until the Feast of St. *John Baptist*, which was to be in the Year following.

B About *Christmas* [8], *Henry Duke of Lancaster*, *John Earl of Arundel*, *William Bishop of Norwich*, and *Michael Bishop of London*, went to the *Roman* Court, in behalf of King Edward ; by whom the *Articles of Peace* were recited before the Pope, in the Presence of the *French Envoys*, who denied the Form of the Articles, and said their had been no such Agreement, and that they would not consent to them : And the *English Envoys* returned, not having done any thing for what they were sent, except *William Bateman Bishop of Norwich*, who died, and was Honourable interred at *Avignon*.

C After the Expiration of the Time of Truce, King Edward on the 20th of *September* [9] issued his Writs for a Parlement to be holden on the morrow after the Feast of St. *Martin*, being *Thursday* the 12th of *October*, when [1] it was continued, because the Lords were not come, until *Wednesday* next following the 18th of *October*. On which *Wednesday*, Sir *Walter de Manny* declared the cause of Summons, as knowing the whole matter of it, which was as follows, in part much according to the Relation of *Avesbury* :

D [2] That the King had lately sent Commissioners to *Calais*, to Treat about a Peace with the Commissioners of his Adversary of *France*, in the Presence of the Cardinal of *Bologne* sent by the Pope : That several Points had been agreed ; and that according to the Agreement, he had sent the Duke of *Lancaster*, and others, his Ambassadors to the Court of *Rome*, to perfect and finish the Peace before the Pope ; but without effect, for the Faults found with it on the part of his Adversary ; (*pour defaute & coupe trove de la part son Adversair :* ) That while his Ambassadors remained there, the King of *Navarre* (who about two Years before had Married [3] *Jane* the King of *France's* Daughter) had complained often to the Duke of *Lancaster* of the [4] Wrongs and Hardships he had suffered from the King of *France*, affirming upon his Oath, he would willingly enter into an Alliance with the King against his Adversary with all his Power ; and pressed him so often, that at last the Duke promised an Alliance, if the King pleased : That thereupon he engaged to make himself as strong as he could with Ships, and Land Forces, and come to the Isles *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, to affirm and make good the Alliance (*pur affermer, & secure lalliance :* ) That for this cause, upon the Duke's return into *England*, the King, informed of this Agreement, caused to be got ready an Army, and Fleet of great Ships, with which he sailed out of the *Thames* towards the Isles ; and the Winds being contrary, with much trouble got to *Portsmouth*, and there staid so long, as he received certain Intelligence the King of *Navarre* would not proceed in, or had quitted the Alliance (*que le Roy de Navarre entre lessé la dite Alliance*) against his

E Promise

[6] *Aves. p.*  
123 b. c 89.  
A Peace concluded.

The Peace to be confirmed by the Pope.  
[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Ibm.*  
The King's Envoys to the Pope for that purpose.  
The French Envoys before the Pope deny the Articles of the Peace.

[9] *Rot. Claus.*  
29 Ed. III. M.  
8. Dorf.  
A Parlement summoned.  
[1] *Rot. Parl.*  
29 Ed. III. n. 1.  
The cause of Summons declared.

[2] *Ibm. n. 4,*  
5, 6, 7, 8, 9.

[3] *Mezeray,*  
f. 372.  
The King abused and cheated by the King of *Navarre*.  
[4] *Rot. Parl.*  
*ut supra.*



The King  
passeth to Ca-  
lais with his  
Fleet and Ar-  
my.  
His Foreign  
Allies.

He could not  
provoke the  
King of France  
to Battel.

His Men wea-  
ried for want  
of Wine.

He pays off  
his Allies, and  
returns into  
England.

[5] Ib. n. 10.

Speedy Ad-  
vice desired  
of the Parle-  
ment.  
The King de-  
sires to finish  
the War with  
France.

[6] Ib. n. 11.

A Subsidy of  
6 years gran-  
ted to the  
King.

[7] p. 126. a. b.  
c. 95.  
His Expediti-  
on into France.

Promise and Oath, and was become an *Allie* of his *Adversary*. Whereupon the King returned with his Fleet and Forces (*nostre Seigneur se retourna ove sa Navie & Gentz ;* ) and seeing he could not have Peace, and the Alliance failed, and also that his *Adversary* made himself strong with Men at Arms, and other Forces near *Calais*, thinking to have a speedy Battel with him, he resolved, with his Fleet and Army, to pass over to *Calais* : That when he was landed, by Advice of his Council, he *Mustered* his own Forces, and *those* of his *Allies* which he found there ; as those of *Monsieur Henry de Flanders*, *Monsieur Frank de Vanhale*, and other People of *Almain*, in great number, and marched out of *Calais* on the Feast of *All-Souls*, or 2d of *November*, toward the Places where, by Spies or other means, he could be informed his *Adversary* was, that he might bring him to a Battel : But to avoid that, he fled Night and Day, the King pursuing him, wasting and burning the Country throughout (*degastant, ardent, & brillant le pays par tut* ) until by Assent of his Council, because his People were much wearied for want of Wine, having drank only Water for near four Days (*per cause que les Gentz fuerent molt lassez pur defaute de Vin, & ne buerent que de eau bien per quatre jours* ) he returned toward *Calais*, where he designed to have fought his Enemy ; but he came not. Then he paid off his *Allies* very frankly, they having been there a long time, and returned into *England* to his Parle-ment.

After this Relation, the [5] Commons were told by Sir *William Sharebull*, Chief Justice of the *Kings-Bench*, They ought to have regard to the great Trouble the King had endured, for the Defence and Safety of the Kingdom, and of his Readiness to march into *Scotland* against his Enemies, who had taken the Town of *Berwick* by Force : And that to shorten the Time of Parle-ment, and their stay in the Town, they were to give speedy Advice what was best for the King to do, to make an end of the War with *France*, which he desired sovereignly, or above all things, might be done with dispatch (*quel il desire souverainement que soit fait en hast* ) and how he might be best aided to do it, to the least Grievance of his People, and most Profit to himself, he gave them time to answer until *Friday* next following (*en sur ceo les dona jour de Respons de Vendredy preschien suant* ) and in the mean time to prepare their *Bills* and *Petitions*, and bring them into Parle-ment : [6] (*A quen Vendredy vindrent les dites Communes en la presence nostre dit Seigneur le Roy, Prelatz, & Grantz, assemblez en la Chambre blanche el ene illoques une brief parlance ove les dits Grantz, Granterent uniement, &c.* ) On which *Friday*, the Commons came into the presence of the King, Prelates, and Great Men, assembled in the White Chamber, and having there a short Conference with the said Great Men, Granted (*uniement & dune accort* ) unanimously and of one accord to the King, the Subsidy of *Wooll*, *Leather*, and *Woolfel's* for six years next coming. So as during that time, the King should not put any *Impositions* or other *Charges* upon the Commons ; and then they brought their *Petitions* before the King, who answered them.

*Avesbury* in his [7] Narrative of the King's Expedition into *France*, tells us, That after his return to *Calais*, on *Wednesday* the Feast of *St. Martin*, or 11th of *November*, the *Constable of France*, and

A

B

C

D

E

F



and others, met the Duke of Lancaster, the Earl of Northampton, and Sir Walter Manny, at the end of the Causeway of Calais; and by Letters of Credence from their King, offered Battel to the King of England on Tuesday following. The English Lords answered by the King's Command (*de Præcepto Regio*) That it was his Intention, as much as he could, to avoid the Effusion of Christian Blood, and therefore desired to fight Body to Body with his Adversary; so as the whole Right to the Crown of France might be decided by this Battel between them two: And if this was refused, That each of them should take to him his Eldest Son; and if he admitted not that, Then both to chuse Two, Three, or Four Knights, the nearest to them in Blood, to be joined to them and their Sons; that so the Right to the Kingdom of France might be finally determined, and that he who was Conquered should yield it to the Conqueror. Which Offers the French refused, standing to their Proposition of Fighting on Tuesday. The English offered to Fight the next Day, or Saturday: The French persisted in their First Offer; which the English accepted, upon Condition, That if they could not bring their King to Battel on that Day, they should render themselves Prisoners to the King of England; as in like manner they would render themselves Prisoners to the King of France, if they brought not then their King to Battel. The French refused this Offer; and the English thought they trifled with King Edward, and put Cheats upon him, that by Delay and his great Expences he might be weary of the War. The King staid and expected the French on Tuesday, but none came.

[8] The French Writers make a contrary Story of this: They say, That after King Edward had ravaged and burn Bolognais and Artois, as far as the Town of Hisden, which nor the Castle he could not take, he returned to Calais: That the King of France, having Rendezvoused his Army at Amiens, marched to Hisden, and pursued him to St. Omers, and from thence sent to him Arnold de Andregben, Marshal of France, and other Knights, to let him know he would Fight with him Body to Body, or Power to Power, when and in what place he pleased; which he refused, returning into England, and King John to Paris.

Before this Action of his Father's near Calais, on the Nativity of the Virgin Mary, or 8th of September, [9] the Prince, with the Earls of Warwick, Suffolk, Salisbury, and Oxford, with 300 Ships, and a good Force in them, set Sail from Plimouth into Gascoigne; and in a short time after his arrival, [1] marched from Burdeaux to Narbon, seated, as it was then called, on the Greek Sea, now the Mediterranean, laid waste, burnt, and destroyed all the Cities, Walled, Fortified, and other Good Towns, in his March backwards and forwards, except the City [2] Tholose, in which were the Constable of France, the Marshal de Clermond, and Earl of Armanak, with a great Force to defend it. The time of these Burnings, Plunderings, and Destroyings, was two Months before the Return to Burdeaux, a Journal whereof is to be seen in a Letter from the Prince to the Bishop of Winchester, then Lord Treasurer, Dated on Christmas-Day, and another more exact from Sir John Wingfield, one of the Chief Actors in this Cavalcade, Dated on Wednesday before Christmas-Day, in Avesbury, p. 127. a. b. p. 128. a. b. p. 129. a. b.

[8] Froys. lib. 1.  
c. 155.  
Du Chesne, f.  
674. D.  
Mezer. f. 373.

[9] Ausp. p. 125.  
b. cap. 93.  
The Prince  
goes into Gas-  
coigne.  
[1] Ibid.  
Marched to  
Narbon; burns  
and destroys  
the Country.

[2] Ib. 129. b.

A. D. 1355.  
19 Edw. III.



Berwick surprized by the Scots.

[3] Ibm. p. 131. b. cap. 103.

Retaken by the King.

The King of Scotland ill used by his People.

He grants the Crown of Scotland, &c. to K. Edw.

And puts him in possession of the Kingdom.

[4] Rot. Scot. 29 Ed. III. M. 12.

[5] Ibm. 30. Ed. III. M. 6.

[6] Ibm. 8.

[7] Ibm.

[8] Walsf. f. 171. n. 40.

[9] Ibm. and Du Chesne, f. 675. D. from Freyf. f. 78. a. cap. 157.

a. b. p. 130. a. b. Cap. 98, 99, 100. now not much to the purpose to be either transcribed or translated.

The King having received News, that the Scots had surprized the Town of *Berwick*, as was noted by Sir *William Shakesbull* in his Discourse to the Parlement; so soon as it was ended, in the latter end of *November*, marched with a great Army toward *Scotland*, and kept his *Christmas* at *Newcastle upon Tyne*. [3] The *English* all this while defended *Berwick-Castle* against the Scots, and on the 13th of *January*, the King being in it, with Sir *Walter Manny*, the Town was surrounded with the *English* Army, and the Port and Castle both secured by the *English* Navy, the Scots threw themselves upon the King's Mercy, and yielded up the Town.

For the very severe Usages and Hardships, drawn up in hard Words, in the very Grants *Edward Baliol* King of *Scotland* received from the Scots, and not being able to endure them, or contend for the Honour and Dignity due to him from his People in his old Age and feeble Condition, on the 20th and 25th Day of *January*, at *Rokesburgh*, Gave, Granted, and Confirmed, for him and Heirs, to *Edward* King of *England*, the Kingdom, Government, Title, and Crown of *Scotland*, together with the Isles, and all manner of Royalties, Dignities, Honours, Prerogatives, Privileges, Rights, Dominions, Homages, Services, Fees, Advowsons, Cities, Castles, Towns, Lands, Possessions, and all and singular things which belonged to the Crown of *Scotland*, or might any way belong to it; and all his Isles, Castles, Cities, Towns, Demeasns, Lands, Possessions, Dignities, and Rights, with their Appertinences in *England*, or *Galway*, or elsewhere within the Kingdom of *Scotland*; to have and to hold to him, his Heirs, and Assigns; and put him in possession of all these things, as well by delivery of his *Golden Crown*, as delivery of corporal Possession of the Soil of the Kingdom, &c. In consideration whereof, King *Edward* was to allow him 2000 *l.* Sterling by the year for his Life, to be paid Quarterly. There were several long [4] Instruments made about this Grant, as also an Exemplification of the main Indenture of the Agreement between the Two Kings, Dated at *Banburgh* the 20th of *February* [5] the Year following. Also there is King *Edward's* Release of the Homage done to him by *Edward Baliol*, [6] Dated the 12th of *March* next after at *Westminster*, and a Proclamation, That notwithstanding this Grant, the People of *Scotland* should enjoy and be Governed by their Old Laws and Customs as before, without any Change or Alteration, [7] Dated at the same Place, on the 15th of the same Month.

In the next Year, *Prince Edward* [8] marched out of *Burdeaux* with his Army toward the River *Loire*, and designed such another Ravage and Destruction in the Countries on both sides of it, as he had made the Year before between *Burdeaux* and *Narbon*, which he had begun. [9] Upon the News whereof, the King of *France* went directly from *Paris* to *Chartres*, where he drew Forces from *Auvergn*, *Berry*, *Burgogn*, *Lorain*, *Haynault*, *Vermandois*, *Picardy*, *Normany*, and *Bretagne*, to oppose him; in the meantime guarding the Passes and breaking down the Bridges upon the *Loire*, while the Prince took *Remorentin*, and several other Places

A

B

C

D

E

F



Places and Castles, and had many Skirmishes with *French* Parties, beat them, and took several Prisoners, on the South-side of the River, before the memorable Battel of *Poitiers*; the best Description whereof is in [1] *Mezeray's* Abridgment of *Froisard's* tedious Relation of it, as follows :

[1] Fol. 371.  
A. D. 1356.

A While the King was at *Chartres*, where he was drawing all his Forces together, he was informed that the Prince of *Wales* with 12000 Men, of which there were but 3000 Natural *English*, had pillaged *Quercy*, *Auvergne*, *Lemosin*, *Berry*, and was marching to do the same in *Anjou*, *Tourain*, and *Poitou*; he thought fit to cut off his March upon his Retreat, and led his Army along the *Loire*. The Prince being advertised, left the Road to *Tours*, and retired by *Poitou*; but he could not do it so speedily, but that the King's Army overtook him within two Leagues of *Poitiers*. B The Prince finding him so near, entrenched himself amongst the Vines and strong thick Hedges, nigh the Place called *Mau-pertuis*.

The Battel of *Poitiers*.

C Cardinal *de Perigord* the Pope's Legate, went often from one Army to the other to prevent them from coming to Blows. [2] *Edward* offered to pay for all the Damages he had done in his March from *Burdeaux*; to deliver up all his Prisoners, and not to bear Arms himself, nor any of his Subjects, for seven years time against *France*. But *K. John* believing the Victory secure and certain, rejected all his Submissions; and blinded with Passion and Anger, instead of hemming him in, and starving him (which could not have failed in three Days time) went on headlong with the Courage and Fury of a Lion rather than of a Captain, to attack him within his Fastness, the \* 19th of *September*: Nay, by the worst Advice in the World, he caused all his Horsemen to alight, excepting Three hundred select Men, who were to begin the Onset, and the *German* Cavalry, who had Orders to second them. D

The Pope's Legate endeavours to prevent the Battel.

[2] *Froissart*. 1. 8. b. cap. 161.

The King of *France* his Confidence destroyed him.

\* A. D. 1356.  
30 Ed. III.

The thickness of the Hedges hindred these Three hundred Horse from breaking in upon them; the *English-men's* bearded Arrows made the Horses mad, and turned them upon the *Germans*, who fell into the Avant-Guard, and they were totally routed by a Gros of the Enemies, who came forth and charged them during their Disorder.

E Of the Four Sons the King had in this Battel, Three of them were a little too soon carried out of the Fray by their Governours, together with 800 Lances; and this gave a fair Pretence of Excuse to all such Cowards as were glad to follow them. There was only *Philip* the Youngest of the Four, who obstinately resolved to run the Fortune of his Father, and fought by his side.

F The King's single Valour sustained the Enemy's Charge a considerable time; and if one fourth part of his Men had but Seconded him, no doubt but he had gained the Victory. At length he yielded himself up into the hands of *John de Morebeque* an *Artesian* Gentleman, whom he had banished the Kingdom for some Crime. *Philip* his Son was taken Prisoner with him. There were but 6000 *French* killed in this Fatal Day; but of that Number were 800 Gentlemen, and amongst those the Duke of *Bour-*

The King of *France* yields himself. His Son *Philip* and several of the *French* Nobility made Prisoners.



The Prince  
very kind and  
civil to the  
King of France

He carries  
him to Bur-  
deaux, with a  
great number  
of Prisoners.

[3] F. 79. b.  
cap. 160.  
The French in  
this Battel 4  
times more  
than the Eng-  
lish.

The English  
Noblemen  
that shew most  
Courage in  
this Battel.

[4] F. 83. a.  
cap. 164.

A. D. 1357.  
31 Ed. III.  
The King of  
France brought  
Prisoner to  
London.  
[5] Walsf. 172.  
n. 40.  
Knights; col.  
2615. n. 10,  
20, &c.  
[6] Holinshed,  
1. 390.

[7] Froyf. 1. 1.  
c. 173. f. 86 b.

A Truce for  
two years by  
the Pope's  
Mediation.

[8] Rot. Scot.  
27 Ed. III. M.  
2.

[9] Ibm. 28  
Ed. III. M. 4.

bon, the Duke d'Athenes, Constable, the Marechal de Nesle, and above 50 more of good Quality.

The Young Prince, as Courteous as he was Valiant, Treated the King as his Lord; the same Night he served him at his Table, and endeavoured to allay his Grief and Misfortunes, by the most obliging and becoming Language he could express. The next day fearing this Noble Prey might be snatched from him, and withal observing his Soldiers were so laden with Plunder, that they were incapable of further Service, he took his March towards Burdeaux, and carried away the King and his Son along with him, together with a prodigious Number of Prisoners.

According to [3] Froyfard, the Men at Arms only, besides others of the French, were four times the Number of the whole English Army, they being Forty eight thousand, divided into three Battels, Sixteen thousand in a Battel; the English Army not being esteemed above Eight thousand, by the Account of Sir Eustace of Ribemont, and Two other Lords, gave to the King of France, having been sent by him to discover their Number.

In this Battel the Earls of Warwick, Suffolk, Salisbury, Stafford, Sir James Audeley, Sir John Chandos, Sir Reginald de Cobham, &c. behaved themselves very bravely; but beyond others, the Earl of Warwick, Sir James Audeley, and Sir John Chandos. And as 'tis said by Froyfard, [4] the Prince of Wales, who was Courageous and Cruel as a Lion, took that Day great Pleasure to Fight, and to chafe his Enemies. His Courage and Conduct, with the Assistance of those about him, was in this Battel most certainly very extraordinary and wonderful.

On the 5th of May next Year, the Prince of Wales arrived at Plimouth, with his Noble Prisoners the [5] King of France and his Son, where, and in his Passage from thence to London, he was treated with much Honour and Respect, and on the 24th of the same Month, had a Publick Entrance made him into that City, and was Lodged in the Palace of the Savoy, the King, Queen, and Great Men often making him Visits. [6] Here he staid until toward the next Spring, when he was removed to Windsor-Castle, where he and his Son passed the Time in Hawking and Hunting, and toward Winter returned to the Savoy.

Soon after the King of France his [7] Arrival in England, the Pope sent the two Cardinals of Perigord and St. Tital, into England, to mediate a Peace between the Two Kingdoms; but without effect: Yet so far they prevailed, as to procure a Truce until the Feast of St. John Baptist, which was to be in the Year 1359. or 33d of Edward III. out of which Philip of Navarre, the Countess of Montfort, and Dutchy of Britan, were excepted.

Before this, by the Mediation of Joan Queen of Scots (or, as 'tis phrased in the Record, Consort to David Brus his Prisoner) Sister to King Edward, who in the 27th of his Reign had his Leave to come into England to her Husband, with moderate Attendance (*cum moderata Familia*) and upon the Prayer of David Brus his Prisoner, the Prelates, Great Men, and Commons of Scotland [9] (*a la Priere David de Bruys nostre Prisoner, & des Prelates, Grantz & Communes Descece*) he granted to Treat with them

A

B

C

D

E

F



them about his Deliverance: And thereupon sent to Newcastle upon Tine the Bishop of Duresme, William de Bohun Earl of Northampton and Constable of England, Gilbert d'Umfreyvill Earl of Anegos, the Lords de Percy and de Nevill, William Baron of Greystock, and Henry le Scrop, his Commissioners, with full Power to Treat with the Bishop of St. Andrews and Brechin, Patrick of Dunbar Earl of the March of Scotland, the Abbot of Dumfermelin, and Master Walter de Moffet Arch-Deacon of Leoneffe, Commissioners for Scotland: Where it was [1] Agreed,

Commissioners appointed to treat about the Deliverance of David Bruce.

[1] Ibid.

1. That David should be Ransomed and set free for Ninety thousand Merces of Sterling Silver, to be paid in Nine Years by equal Payments; the first whereof to begin at the Purification of the Virgin next coming, after the Date of the Treaty, or within Fifteen days after; and to be made at Berwic, if in the hands of the English, otherwise at Norham-Castle in Northumberland, not far from thence.

His Ransom 90000 Merces, to be paid in 9 years.

2. That there should be a Truce upon sufficient Security, by Instruments and Oaths between King Edward and all his People of England, Scotland, and the Isle of Man, and David de Bruys; and all the other People of Scotland, and their Adherents by Land and by Sea, in all Places, without Fraud or Deceit, until the said Sum was fully paid; and that Edward de Baliol, and other his Allies and Adherents, should be comprised within the Truce.

3. That all People of one Part, and the other, during the Truce, might Negociate, and have intercourse one with another, by Land and by Sea, except Castles and Fortified Towns and Places: And, that if during the Truce, any Country, Town, Land, Burgh, Possession, Castle, or Person, of what Estate or Condition soever he was at the Day of making this Agreement, should be taken or received into the Faith or Peace of one Party from the other (soit pris ou receu de une Foi ou Pees a lautre) that full Restitution should be made, without Delay, Contradiction, or Fraud, the same Hour they were demanded.

A Truce for 9 years between England and Scotland; with the Articles.

4. That for the Payment of the Money according to the Agreement, David was to send Twenty Hostages into England, who were Twenty of the Eldest Sons and Heirs of the Earls and Best Men of Scotland, named in this Article, to remain there until the Money was paid, &c.

5. That the said David, and the other Great Men of the Kingdom of Scotland, as well Bishops and Prelates, as other Lords of the Land, should be bound by Letters and Oaths in the best manner and form could be devised, for the Payment of the Money, and Observation of the Truce: And that the Merchants and Comunes of Aberdeen, Dundee, Perth, and Edinburgh, should be bound accordingly for themselves and all other Merchants of that Kingdom, for the Performance of the Payment and Truce.

6. That if the said David, or others that should be bound for the Payment of the Money, should fail of Payment of any of the Terms, then the Body of David was to be re-entred into the Castle of Norham, within three Weeks after every Failure, there to remain until the Sum was paid.

7. That if there should be any Rebels in Scotland against David (item in cas que aucuns Rebelx Descocé soient contre le dit David) they should not be received, maintained, or supported by any in the Faith of King Edward: Or if any in the Faith of King Edward



should rise or rebell against him, or his Officers, he should not be received, maintained, or supported by the said David, or any in his Faith or Legiance.

8. By the Advice and Assent of the Prelates, Great Men, and Sages of the Kingdom, King Edward accepted the Treaty, and promised and granted in Good Faith, That if David, the Prelates, Great Men, and others of Scotland of his Party, would observe and perform as much as belonged to them, the Things treated and agreed upon, That he would also keep and perform, and cause to be observed the same, without Fraud or Deceit, according to the Purport of the Treaty. In Witness and Confirmation whereof, King Edward made his Letters Patents, Dated at Westminster on the 5th of October.

[2] *Heff. Boeth.*  
f. 326 b n. 50.  
A new Treaty.

[3] *Rot. Scot.*  
31 Ed III. M.  
M. 2. D. 1357.  
The Commissioners on both sides.

The Articles of a 10 years Truce.  
K. David to be released.

This and the former Truce to be observ'd.

[4] *Heff. Boeth.*  
ut supra, n. 60,  
70, 80.  
K. David punished such as deserted him at the Battel of Durham.

This Treaty, and all others before, proved ineffectual, [2] because the Scots would not consent to the Terms and Conditions of the Release: Yet the Endeavours and Mediation before mentioned were continued, and on the Third of October this Year, Commissioners on both sides met at Berwic; for King Edward, [3] John Arch-Bishop of York, Thomas Bishop of Duresme, Gilbert Bishop of Carlisle, Henry de Percy, Ralph Neville, Henry le Scrope, and Thomas Musgrave: For Robert Steward Guardian of Scotland, and the Prelates, Lords, and Commons of that Kingdom, William Bishop of St. Andrews, Thomas Bishop of Catness, Patrick Bishop of Brechin, Chancellor of Scotland, Patrick Earl of March, Robert de Irskin, and William de Levington, Knights: When it was Agreed,

1. That King David should be Released, set Free, and Ransomed for an Hundred thousand Mercs Sterling Money, to be paid yearly by Ten thousand Mercs; the first Payment to begin at Midsummer then next following.

2. That there should be a Truce kept and observed in England, Scotland, and the Isle of Man, until the Money was paid: And, That Edward de Baliol, and all King Edward's Allies, should be included in this Truce.

3. That for Payment of his Ransom, Twenty Hostages should be delivered by King David, there named in the Conditions of their Delivery.

4. That King David, the Prelates, and Peers of Scotland, should be bound by Writing and Oath, for Payment of the Money, and Observation of the Truces.

5. That if the Money was not paid as agreed, they should be obliged to return the Body of King David, who was to remain Prisoner while it was paid, according to every Term of Payment. These and some other Articles were the Conditions upon which he was released, after more than Eleven Years Imprisonment.

King David was no sooner returned into Scotland after his Deliverance, but he began to chastise [4] such as deserted him, and left the Field at the Battel of Durham: And first he deprived Robert Stewart of the Right of Succession, and declared Alexander Sutherland (who was his own Sister's Son, his Successor, Robert Stewart being Son to the Daughter of the First Wife of Robert Brus) and caused all the Nobility of Scotland to Swear Fealty to him:



him: But *Alexander* dying soon after, he established *Robert Stewart* in the *Succession*, according to his Right, and caused the *Nobility* again to Swear *Faith* to him. He took away part of the *Earl* of the *Marches* Estate, another Great Officer in the Army, and punished others according to their Deserts.

A It is not much to the Purpose of this History what the Troubles and Confusions were in France, and the Miseries of that Nation during King *John's* Captivity, or rather his Absence only from the French People; they may be seen in the French Historians, by such as desire to know them. The bold Behaviour of the Provost of the Merchants and Parisians against the Dauphin, the Insolence of the Rustics against the Nobility, Gentry, and Citizens in all Places, and their Violence exercised upon the Peasants; the Practices of the King of Navarre against the Dauphin and Government of France, by making Divisions amongst the People, and driving them into Parties and Factions; the Barbarity of the Plundering-People, calling themselves Companions, and of the Soldiers [5] both Foreign and Domesticks, who upon Truces made between the Parties, were neither disbanded or paid. All these robbed and pillaged one another, committed Rapin without distinction, wasted and burnt the Countries where they came, until the Dauphin procured himself to be declared Regent of France by the Parlement at Paris [6] in the Year 1358. and some little while after, until the Nation was reduced to some sort of Settlement by that Regency, and Compliance between the Regent and Parlement, which had not been before.

C The last-mentioned Truce being expired without hopes of Peace, [7] the King of England and his Son the Prince of Wales, the King of France, and James Earl of Bourbon, only amongst themselves, Treated of, and agreed upon a Peace, and sent the Articles into France to the Duke of Normandy the Dauphin and Regent. He assembled the Prelates, Nobles, and People of the Good Towns; who upon debate of the Terms, resolved to suffer more than they had done, and permit their King to remain Prisoner, rather than to submit to such Articles, as should so much lessen the Power of France. King Edward, at the Return of the Messengers, understanding the Resolution of the French, determined to enter France with such a Force as should make an end of the War, or procure Peace according to his Desire.

E To put what he resolved on in execution, he raised an Army such as had not been [8] seen, and sent the Duke of Lancaster before him to Calais. [9] Walsingham says there was Eleven hundred Ships prepared at Sandwich to Transport this Army; from which Port he set sail on the 28th of [1] October, taking with him his Four Sons, [2] Prince Edward, Lionel, John, and Edmund, [3] with most of the Nobility (*serē Proceres omnes*) leaving his young Son Thomas of Woodstock, not then four Years old, Guardian of the Kingdom, with a Council fit to perform that Charge.

F Before his [4] Passage, he sent the King of France and his Son from their loose Confinement to the Tower, or more safe Custody, and the rest of the French Prisoners into Places of Security.

The Troubles and Confusions in France, during King John's absence.

[5] Mazer. f. 76.

[6] Ib. f. 377.

[7] Froyslib. i. c. 201.

A Peace concluded.

The French refuse the Terms.

K. Edward raised a mighty Army.

[8] Froys. i. 1. c. 205.

[9] 174. li 5. 2. 1100 Ships provided to transport that Army.

[1] Claus. 33 Ed. III. M 9. Dors.

[2] Froys. ut supra, c. 207.

[3] Wals. f. 174. li. 3, 6, & 7.

[4] Froys. i. 1. c. 206.

The King of France and his Son sent to the Tower.

With



[5] *Ib.* c. 209, 210. 211.  
[6] *Wasf.* f. 174. n. 10.  
K. Edward marches into the middle of France, burns and wastes the Country. The French sue for Peace.

[7] *Mezeray*, t. 380.

K. Edw. averse.

[9] *Lib.* r. c. 216.  
Was frightened into it by a Tempest.

[1] *Rot. Cales de negotiis communibus*, 3. a. Ed. III. M. 6.  
[1] *Rot. Fran.* 34 Ed. III. M. 11. *Dors.*  
The famous Treaty of Bretigny.

[2] *Mezeray*, f. 380.  
A Peace made in 8 days.

[3] *Rot. de Transact. pacis Fran.* 34 Ed. III. M. 10. See also *Leibnitz Codex juris Gentium*, from f. 208, to f. 220.

With this Army, [5] he marched into the middle of France, laying all waste as he marched. He was entering [6] Burgundy when the Duke met him, and compounded with him for Seventy thousand *Florens* to spare his Country from Burning and Rapin. The French kept themselves within their Places of Strength, and filled them with Armed Men, and permitted the Country to be harassed and ravaged by this Army.

The Miseries and Desolation of the Kingdom of France at this time, and in this manner, urged the Duke of Normandy and Regent, the Clergy, Nobility, and all sorts of People to be desirous of, and sue for a Peace. [7] Cardinal Simon de Langres the Pope's Legate, the Abbot of Clugny, and the Dauphin's Commissioners, always followed King Edward's Camp, and earnestly solicited for Peace. The [8] Duke of Lancaster, and other Lords, were inclinable to a Peace, and pressed the King to hearken to it: He was averse, putting such Terms upon the French they could not submit to them, until (as [9] Froissard tells the Story) being before Chartres, there suddenly happened such a Tempest of Thunder, Lightning, Rain, Hail and Stones, that it killed many of his Men and Horses, when turning towards our Lady's Church there, and steadfastly beholding it, he made a Vow to her to Consent to Peace: And being then Lodged in a Village called Bretigny near Chartres, Commissioners were appointed on both sides to Treat there accordingly.

This Famous Treaty of Bretigny, was managed by [1] the Prince of Wales, and Charles Regent of France, in the Names of both Kings. Commissioners for the English were, Sir Reginald de Cobham, Sir Bartholomew Burghersh, Sir Francis Hale, Banerets; Sir Miles Stapleton, Sir Richard la Vache, and Sir Neel Loring, Knights, with others of the King's Council: On the French Party were, the Elect of Beauves, the Chancellor Charles Lord Mome-rency, Monsieur John de Meingre Marshal of France, Monsieur Aynart de la Tour Lord of Vivoy, Monsieur Ralph de Ravenal, Monsieur Simon de Bucy, Knights, Monsieur Stephen de Paris, and Peter de la Charite, with many others of his Council, named by King John himself.

These Commissioners on both sides [2] met the first of May at Bretigny aforesaid, within a Mile of Chartres, and concluded upon all the Articles of this Peace in eight Days time; which do here follow, Translated from the French, with Notes where they were afterwards altered and corrected by the Two Kings at Calais

Edward, Eldest Son [3] to the King of France and England, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, Earl of Chester; To all those who shall see these Letters, Greeting: We make you know, That all the Debates and Disorders whatsoever, moved or stirred between our Lord and Father King of France and England, on the one Part; and our Cousins the King, his Eldest Son, Regent of the Realm of France, and all those it may concern on the other Part. For the Good of Peace, it is Agreed, the 8th Day of May, 1360. at Bretigny near Chartres, in the manner following:



1. 'First, [4] That the King of England, with what he holds in Gascoigne and Guyen, shall have for him and his Heirs for ever, all those Things which follow, to hold them in the same manner the King of France, or his Son, or any of his Ancestors Kings of France, held them: That is to say, Those in Sovereignty in Sovereignty, and those in Demain in Demain, according to the time and manner hereafter declared. The City, Castle, and Earldom of Poictiers, with the whole Land and Country of Poictou; together with the Fief of Thonars, and Land of Belleville; the City and Castle of Xaintes, and the whole Land of Xaintonge, on this side and beyond the River of Charente; the City and Castle of Agen, and the Land and Country of Agenois; the City and Castle, and whole Earldom of Perigort, and the Land and Country of Perigieux; the City, Castle, and whole Earldom of Limoges; the Land and Country of Limozin; the City and Castle of Cahors, and the Land and Country of Cahorsin; the City and Castle, and Country of Tarbe, and the Land and Earldom of Bigorre; the Earldom, Land, and Country of Gaure; the City and Castle of Angoulesme, and the Earldom, Land, and Country of Angoulesmois; the City and Castle of Rodes; the Land and Country of Rouergne. And if there be any Lords, as the Earl of Foix, the Earl of Armagnac, the Earl of Lisle, the Earl of Perigort, and Viscount of Limoges, or others, which hold any Lands within the Bounds of these Places, they shall do Homage to the King of England, and all other Services and Devoirs due by reason of their Lands, in the same manner they did in times past.

[4] Ibid.

The First Article was corrected; and in instead of the Words, *Those in Sovereignty in Sovereignty*, were inserted these, *Those in Fee in Fee*.

2. 'Also the King of England shall have all that any of the Kings of England anciently held in the Town of Monstruel upon the Sea, with their Appurtenances.

3. 'Also the King of England shall have all the County or Earldom of Ponthieu entirely; save and except, That if any thing of the said County or Appurtenances have been alienated by the Kings of England for the time being, and to other Persons than the Kings of France, the King of France shall not be obliged to render them to the King of England: And if the said Alienations have been made to the Kings of France for the time being without mean, and he doth possess them at present, they are entirely to be released to the King of England; except the Kings of France had them by Exchange for other Lands of the Kings of England, then both were to release. But if the Kings of England for the time being, had alienated any thing to other Persons than to the King of France, and afterwards they came into his hands, he shall not be obliged to render them. Also if the things abovesaid owe Homage, the King of France shall convey them to others, who shall do it for the King of England: And if they do not owe Homage, the King of France shall appoint a Trustee or Tenant to perform the Devoir, within one Year after he shall part from Calais.

4. 'Also



4. 'Also the King of *England* shall have the Castle and Town  
' of *Calais*, the Castle, Town, and Seigneurie of *Merk*, the  
' Towns, Castles, and Lordships of *Sangate*, *Colongue*, *Hames*,  
' *Wale* and *Oye*, with Lands, Woods, Marshes, Rivers, Rents,  
' Lordships, or Seigneuries, Advowsons of Churches, and all o-  
' ther Appurtenances lying between the Meeses and Bounds fol-  
' lowing; That is to say, from *Calais* by the Course of the River  
' that goes before *Graveling*, and also by the Course of the same  
' River round about *Langle*, and by the River which goes beyond  
' the *Poil*, and by the same River that falls into the great Lake  
' of *Guifnes*, and so to *Fretun*, and from thence by the Valley  
' about the Hill *Calculy*, inclosing that Hill, and so to the Sea,  
' with *Sangate* and all the Appurtenances.

A

5. 'Also the King of *England* shall have the Castle, Town  
' and County or Earldom of *Guifnes*, with all the Lands, Towns,  
' Castles, Forteresses, Places, Men, Homages, Lordships, Woods,  
' Forests, and the Rights of them, as intirely as the Earl of  
' *Guifnes*, lately dead, had them at the time of his death, and  
' the Churches and good People being within the *Limits* of the  
' County of *Guifnes*, of *Calais*, and *Merk*, and other Places a-  
' bovesaid, shall obey the King of *England*, as they obeyed the  
' King of *France*, or Earl of *Guifnes* for the time being; All  
' which things of *Merk* and *Calais*, contained in this and the pre-  
' cedent Article, the King of *England* shall hold in *Demain*, ex-  
' cept the *Heritages* of the Churches, which shall remain to them  
' intirely where-ever they be; and also except the *Heritages* of  
' other People, of the Country of *Merk* and *Calais* lying out of  
' the Town of *Calais*, to the value of an Hundred Livres of  
' yearly Rent, or under, of Current Money of the Country,  
' which shall remain to them. But the *Habitations* and *Heritages*  
' being in the Town of *Calais*, with their Appurtenances, shall  
' be to the King of *England* in *Demain*, to dispose of them at his  
' pleasure; and also the Inhabitants in the County Town and  
' Lands of *Guifnes*, shall enjoy all their *Demains* intirely, and  
' shall wholly be returned to them, saving what hath been said  
' concerning the Borders, Meets, and Bounds in the precedent  
' Article.

B

C

D

6. 'Also 'tis agreed the King of *England* and his Heirs shall  
' have and hold all the *Isles* adjacent to the Lands, Countreys,  
' and Places before named, together with all other *Isles*, which  
' he holds at present.

E

7. 'Also 'tis agreed the King of *France*, and his Eldest Son the  
' Regent, for them, their Heirs and Successors, as soon as they can  
' without deceit, and at furthest by the Feast of *St. Michael*, in  
' one year after the same Feast next coming, shall render, transfer,  
' and deliver to the King of *England*, his Heirs and Successors, all  
' Honours, Obediences, Homages, Ligeances, Vassals, Fees, Services,  
' Recognisances, Mere, and Mixt Empire, and all manner of Juris-  
' diction high and low, Resorts, Safeguard, Collations and Patronages  
' of Churches, and all manner of Seigneuries, and Sovereinties, and  
' all the Right they have, or can have, appertains, or can appertain, to  
' them, by what Cause, Title, or Colour of Right soever, or to the Kings  
' and Crown of *France*, by reason of the Cities, Counties, Towns,  
' Castles, Lands, Countreys, Isles and Places before named, and all  
' their

F



'their Appurtenances and Dependances, and every one of them,  
 'where-ever they are, without retaining any thing to them or their Heirs  
 'and Successors, or to the Kings or Crown of France. And also,  
 'That the King, and his Eldest Son, should send their Letters  
 'Patents to all the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, and all other Prelates  
 'of Holy Church, and to the Earls, Viscounts, Barons, Noble-  
 'men, Citizens and others of the Cities, Lands, Countreys,  
 'Isles and Places before-named, that they should obey the King  
 'of England and his Heirs, and their certain Command, in the  
 'same manner they had obeyed the Kings and Crown of France;  
 'and by the same Letters they should quit and absolve them after  
 'the best manner they could, from all Faiths, Homages, Oaths,  
 'Obligations, Subjections and Promises made by any of them to  
 'the Kings and Crown of France, in what manner soever.

A

B

This Article was corrected; The Word (*Resorts*) being  
 left out in the Correct Copy, and these Words or Sen-  
 tence (*and all manner of Seignevries, and Soverainties*)  
 and these Words or Sentence (*without retaining any thing*  
*to them or their Heirs and Successors, or to the Kings or*  
*Crown of France*) also the last Words (*in what manner*  
*soever.*)

C

D

E

F

8. 'Also it is agreed, That the King of England shall have the  
 'Cities, Counties, Castles, Lands, Countries, Isles, and Places  
 'before named, with all their Appurtenances and Dependences,  
 'where-ever they are, to hold to him, his Heirs, and Successors,  
 'heritably and perpetually in Demain, as the Kings of France  
 'held them, and in the same manner, saving what hath been  
 'said above, in the Article of *Calais* and *Merk*; and also the Ci-  
 'ties, Castles, Counties, Lands, Countreys, Isles, and Places be-  
 'fore named, Rights, Mere and Mixt Empire, Jurisdiction and  
 'Profits whatever, which any Kings of England held there, with  
 'their Appurtenances and Dependences, any Alienations, Do-  
 'nations, Obligations, or Incumbrances, had, or done by any  
 'of the Kings of France, in Seventy years from that time, by  
 'whatsoever Cause or Form it was, all such Alienations, Dona-  
 'tions, Obligations or Incumbrances, are now, and shall be  
 'wholly annulled, repealed, and made void: And all things so  
 'given, alienated, or incumbered, shall be really rendred and de-  
 'livered to the King of England intirely, and in the same Con-  
 'dition they were Seventy years since, or to his special Depu-  
 'ties, as soon as they may without fraud; and at furthest be-  
 'fore *Michaelmas* next come twelve-months, to hold them heri-  
 'tably and perpetually, and to his Heirs and Successors, except  
 'what is said in the Article of *Ponthieu*, which is to remain in  
 'its force, and saving all things given and alienated to Churches,  
 'which shall peaceably remain to them in all Countries before  
 'and after named, so as the Parsons of the Churches pray dili-  
 'gently for the Kings as for their Founders, wherewith their  
 'Consciences shall be charged.

9. 'Also it is agreed the King of England shall have and hold  
 'all the Cities, Counties, Castles, and Countreys above-named,  
 'which anciently the Kings of England had not, in the same  
 'Estate as the King of France and his Sons hold them at pre-  
 'sent.



10. 'Also it is agreed, That if within the Limits of the Countreys the Kings of *England* anciently possessed, they should now have any thing that was not then theirs, of which the King of *France* was in possession on the 19th of *September* 1356, they shall be and remain to the King of *England* and his Heirs as above-said.

11. 'Also it is agreed, That the King of *France* and his Eldest Son the Regent, for them and their Heirs, and for the Kings of *France* and their Successors for ever, as soon as they could without deceit, and at furthest before *Michaelmas* 1361, should render and deliver to the King of *England*, his Heirs and Successors, and transfer to them all the Honours, Ligeances, Obediences, Homages, Vassals, Fees, Services, Recognisances, Oaths, Right, Mere and Mixt Empire, all manner of Jurisdictions high and low, Reforts, Safeguards, and Seigneuries, which can or may belong in any manner to the Kings or Crown of *France*, or to any other Person by reason of the King, or Crown of *France*, at any time, in the Cities, Counties, Castles, Lands, Countreys, Isles and Places above-named, or in any of them, their Appurtenances and Appendances whatsoever, or in Persons, Vassals, Subjects, or whosoever of them, be they Princes, Dukes, Earls, Vicounts, Arch-Bishops, Bishops, and other Prelates of the Church, Barons, Noblemen, and others whosoever, without reserving or retaining any thing to them, their Heirs and Successors, or to the Crown of *France* or others, whatever it be, whereby they, their Heirs, and Successors, or any Kings of *France*, or other Person, under pretence of the King and Crown of *France*, may challenge, and demand any thing in time to come, from the King of *England*, his Heirs and Successors, or upon any of the Vassals and Subjects afore-said, by reason of those Countreys and Places: Also all the before named Persons, their Heirs and Successors, shall for ever be the Liegemen and Subjects of the King of *England*, his Heirs and Successors; and that he and they shall hold all the Persons, Cities, Counties, Lands, Countreys, Isles, Castles, and Places afore named, and all their Appurtenances and Appendances, and they shall be and remain to them fully, perpetually, freely, in their Seignury, Sovereignty, Obedience, Ligeance, and Subjection, as the Kings of *France* had and held them in any time past; and that the said King of *England*, his Heirs and Successors, shall have and hold perpetually all the Countreys before named, with their Appurtenances and Appendances, and other things before named, with all perpetual Franchises and Liberties, as Sovereign and Liege Lord, as Neighbour to the King and Realm of *France*, without acknowledging any Sovereign, or performance of any Obedience, Homage, Refort, Subjection, and without doing in any time to come any Service, or making Recognisance to the King or Crown of *France*, for the Cities, Counties, Castles, Lands, Countreys, Isles, Places, and Persons before named, or for any of them.

This Article was Corrected, and at least Two Parts of Three left out of the Corrected Letter (as then called) or Copy, the whole Article there being no more then what follows:

'Also,



A 'Also, it is agreed, That the King of France, and his Eldest Son the Regent, for them, and their Heirs, and for the Kings of France and their Successors for ever, as soon as they can without fraud, and at furthest before Michaelmas 1361, shall render and deliver to the King of England, his Heirs and Successors, and transfer to them, all the Honours, Ligeances, Obediences, Homages, Vassals, Fees, Services, Recognisances, Oaths, Right, mere and mixt Empire, all manner of Jurisdictions high and low, Safeguards and Seignuries, which can or may belong in any manner, to the Kings or Crown of France, or to any other Person by reason of the King and Crown of France, (*ou a aucun autre person a cause du Roy & de la Couronne de France*) at any time in the Cities, Counties, Castles, Lands, Countreys, Isles and Places above-named, or in any of them, their Appertenences, and Appendences, whatsoever, or in Persons, Vassals, Subjects, or whosoever of them.

B 12. 'Also, it is agreed, That the King of France and his Eldest Son, shall renounce expressly all Resorts and Sovereignties, and all the Right they have or can have in all those things, which by this Treaty ought to belong to the King of England. And in like manner he and his Eldest Son shall renounce, expressly all those things, which by this Treaty ought not to belong or be delivered to him, and all demands he makes of the King of France, and especially to the Name, and to the Right of the Crown of the Kingdom of France, and to the Homages, Sovereignty, and Demain of the Duchy of Normandy, the Duchy of Tourain, the Counties of Anjou and Main, the Sovereignty and Homage of the Dukedom of Bretagne, and the Homages and Sovereignties of the Country and County of Flanders, and all other Demands, he can or shall make of the King of France, for what Cause soever, except what by this Treaty ought to remain and be delivered to the King of England and his Heirs; and one King shall part with, Release and Transfer to the other perpetually all the Right which either of them hath, or can have, in all the things which by this Treaty ought to remain and be delivered to each of them; and of the time and place where and when the said Renunciations shall be made, the Two Kings shall agree and appoint when they meet at Calais.

E This Article was intirely left out of the Treaty corrected at Calais, when the Two Kings met there.

13. 'Also, it is agreed, That to the end this Treaty may speedily be accomplished, that the King of England, shall bring the King of France to Calais, within three weeks after Midsummer, (there being no just hindrance) at his own Expence.

F 14. 'Also, it is agreed, That the King of France shall pay to the King of England, Three Millions of Crowns of Gold, whereof Two shall be of the value of a Noble of English Money; whereof 600000 Crowns shall be paid to him or his Deputies, within four Months after the King of France shall arrive at Calais, and within a year following 400000 Crowns to be paid at London, and so every year 400000 Crowns to be paid there until the whole was discharged.



15. 'It is also agreed, That for the Payment of the 600000 Crowns at Calais, and for the delivery of the Hostages hereafter named, within four months after the King of France shall be come to Calais, the Town, Castle, and Fortresses of Rochell, the Castles, Fortresses, and Towns of the County of Guines, shall be rendered to the King of England, with all their Appertenences, and Appendences; and the Person of the King of France shall be delivered out of Prison, but he is not to Arm himself or People against the King of England, but is to accomplish what was to be done by this Treaty; And the Hostages were the great Prisoners taken at the Battel of Poitiers, and these following:

'That is to say, Monsieur Lewis Earl of Anjou, Monsieur John Earl of Poitiers, the King's Sons, the Duke of Orleans the King's Brother, the Duke of Bourbon, the Earl of Blois, or his Brother, the Earl of St. Paul, the Earl of Alanson, or Monsieur Peter of Alanson his Brother, the Earl of Harcourt, the Earl of Portien, the Earl of Valentinois, the Earl of Briene, the Earl of Vaudemont, the Earl of Forest, the Viscount Beaumont, the Lord of Concy, the Lord of Fienne, the Lord of Preaux, the Lord of St. Venant, the Lord of Garencieres, the Dauphin of Avergne, the Lord of Hangest, the Lord of Montmorency, Monsieur William de Craon, Monsieur Lewis of Harcourt, Monsieur John de Ligny. The Names of the Prisoners taken at Poitiers were these:

'Monsieur Philip of France, the Earl of Eu, the Earl of Longueville, the Earl of Ponthieu, the Earl of Joigny, the Earl of Sancene, the Earl of Dammartin, the Earl of Ventadour, the Earl of Salbruche, the Earl of Auxerre, the Earl of Vendosme, the Lord of Craon, the Lord of Darnalt or Rual, the Marshal of Dauchan, or d'Andeneham, the Lord of Aubigny.

16. 'Also, it is agreed, That the Prisoners aforesaid, which come to remain in Hostage for the King of France, shall therefore be delivered out of Prison, without paying any Ransom, according to Agreement made before the 3d of May last past; and if any of them be out of England, and not in Hostage at Calais, within the first month after the said three weeks, after Midsummer, without just hindrance, he shall not be quit of his Imprisonment, but be forced by the King of France to return into England, and there remain Prisoner, or pay the Penalty by him promised and incurred, for not returning.

17. Also, it is agreed, That in stead of those Hostages, which shall not come to Calais, or shall dye, or shall remove out of the Power of the King of England, the King of France shall deliver others of the same Quality, as soon as may be within four months after the Bayly of Amiens, and the Major of St. Omer, upon the King of England's Certificate, shall have notice thereof; and the King of France, upon his departure from Calais, may have in his Company Ten of the Hostages, such as the Two Kings shall agree upon, so as Thirty may remain.

18. 'Also, it is agreed, That the King of France, within three months after he shall be gone from Calais, shall send thither, to remain in Hostage, Four Persons (de la ville de Paris) of the Town of Paris, and Two of every Town following, of St. Omer, Arras, Amiens, Beauvais, Lisle, Doway, Tournay, Remes, Chaalons,



'Chaalons, Troyes, Chartres, Tholoufe, Lyon, Orleance, Compiègne, Roven, Caen, Tours, Bourges; The most sufficient of these Towns for the Accomplishment of this Treaty.

A 19. Also, it is agreed, That the King of France shall be brought from England to Calais, and remain there for four months, but shall pay nothing the first month for his Guard and Keeping, but for every one of the other months he shall remain there, he shall pay 6000 Royals, as they shall be then current in France, before his departure from Calais, and so afterwards for the time he stays there.

B 20. Also, it is agreed, That as soon as may be, within a year after the King of France is departed from Calais, Monsieur John Earl of Montfort, shall have the Earldom of Montfort, with all its Appertenences, doing Homage Liege to the King of France, and his Devoir and Service in every Case as a good and Loyal Vassal Liege ought to do to his Liege Lord by reason of his Earldom; and also his other Heritages shall be rendred to him, that belong not to the Dutchy of Bretagne, doing Homage and other Dues belonging to them; And if he will demand any thing in any of the Heritages belonging to that Dutchy, out of the Country of Bretagne, he shall receive good and speedy Reason from the Court of France.

C 21. Also upon the Question of the Demain of Bretagne, which is between Monsieur John de Montfort, and Monsieur Charles de Blois, it is agreed, That the Two Kings calling before them or their Deputies, the Parties Principals, they shall inform themselves of their Right, and shall indeavour to make them agree about all that is in Debate between them, as soon as they can: And in case neither the Kings, or their Deputies, can make an Agreement within a year after the King of France shall arrive at Calais, Friends on both sides may make the best D Agreement between them they can, and as soon as they can, and if they cannot compromise the Matter within half a year, they shall make Report thereof, and what they find concerning the Rights of each Party, and why the Debate remains between them, to the Two Kings or their Deputies; and then they as soon as may be, shall make an Accord, giving their final Sentence upon the Right of each Party, which shall be executed by the Two Kings; and in case they cannot end the Controversy E in half a year, then the Two Principal Parties of Blois and Montfort shall do what seems best to them, and the Friends of one Part and the other, shall assist which Part they please, without hinderance of the said Kings, or without receiving any Damage, Blame, or Reproach from them; and if it happen that one of the Parties will not appear before the Kings or their Deputies, at the time appointed, and also in case the Kings or their Deputies shall declare an Accord between the Parties, and shall give their Opinion of the Right of one F Party, and either of the Parties will not consent to, and obey the Declaration, then the said Kings shall be against him with their whole Power, and in Ayd of the other which shall comply and obey; But the Two Kings shall not in any Case in their proper Persons, or by others, make War upon one another for the Cause aforesaid, and the Sovereignty and Homage of the Dutchy shall always remain to the King of France.

Here seems to be some inconsistency in this part of the Article; but it is a true Verbal Translation from the French.



22. 'Also, That all the *Lands, Towns, Countries, Castles*, and other  
'*Places* delivered to the *King*, shall enjoy such *Liberties* and  
'*Franchises* as they have at present, which shall be confirm-  
'ed by the said *Kings* or their *Successors*, so often as they  
'shall be duly required, if they be not contrary to this Ac-  
'cord.

23. 'Also, the *King* of *France* shall render, or cause to be ren-  
'dred, and confirm to *Monsieur Philip* of *Navarre*, and to all his  
'*Adherents*, after this time, as soon as may be, without Deceit,  
'and at furthest within a Year after the *King* of *France* shall be  
'gone from *Calais*, all the *Towns, Fortresses, Castles, Lordships,*  
'*Rights, Rents, Profits, Jurisdictions*, and *Places* whatever, which  
'he in his own Right, or in Right of his Wife, or his *Adherents*,  
'held or ought to hold in the *Kingdom* of *France*: And that he  
'shall not do them any Damage or Injury, or reproach them  
'for any thing done before that time, and shall pardon them  
'all Offences and Misprisions for the time past, by reason of the  
'War; and for this they shall have good and sufficient Let-  
'ters, so as the said *Monsieur Philip* and his *Adherents* return to  
'their *Homage*, and perform their *Devoirs*, and be Good and Loyal  
'Vassals.

24. 'Also, it is accorded, That the *King* of *England* may give,  
'for this time only, to whom he please the *Lands* and *Heritages*  
'that were *Mons. Godfrey de Harecourt's*, to hold of the *Duke* of *Nor-*  
'*mandy*, or other Lords of whom they ought to hold, by *Homage*  
'and *Services* anciently accustomed.

25. 'Also, it is agreed, That any Man or Country, under the  
'Obedience of one Party, shall, by reason of this Accord,  
'go under the Obedience of the other Party, he shall not be im-  
'peached for any thing done in time past.

26. 'Also, it is agreed, That the *Lands* of the *Banished*, and  
'*Adherents* of one Party and the other, and the Churches of one  
'Party and the other, and all those that are disherited and outed  
'of their *Lands*, or charged with any Pension, Tax, or Imposi-  
'tion, or otherwise in any manner charged by reason of the  
'War, shall be restored entirely to the same Rights and Posses-  
'sions which they had before the War began; and that all  
'manner of Forfeitures, Trespasses, or Misprisions, done by  
'them, or any of them in that time, shall be wholly pardoned;  
'and these things to be done so soon as they well can, or at  
'furthest within one Year after the *King* shall leave *Calais*, ex-  
'cept what is said in the *Article* of *Calais* and *Merk*, and the  
'other *Places* named in that *Article*; except also the *Viscount* of  
'*Fronsac*, and *Mons. John Gaillard*, who are not to be comprised  
'in this *Article*, but their Goods and *Heritages* shall remain as  
'they were before this Treaty.

27. 'Also, it is agreed, That the *King* of *France* shall deliver  
'to the *King* of *England*, as soon as well he may, and at furthest  
'within one Year after his *Departure* from *Calais*, all the *Cities,*  
'*Towns, Countries*, and other *Places* above-named, which by this  
'Treaty ought to be delivered to him.

28. 'Also, it is agreed, That upon Delivery of the *Towns,*  
'*Fortresses*, and whole County of *Ponthieu*; the *Towns, Fortresses,*  
'and whole County of *Montfort*; the *City* and *Castle* of *Xainctes*; the  
'*Castles,*



Castles, Towns, Fortresses, and all the King held in Demain in the Country of Xaintogne, on both sides the River Charente; the City and Castle of Angoulesme, and the Castles, Fortresses, and Towns which the King of France held in Demain in the Country of Angoulmois, with Letters and Commands of Releasing of Faith and Homage to the King of England, or his Deputies. He at his proper Cost and Charge shall deliver all the Fortresses taken and possessed by him, his Subjects, Adherents, and Allies, in the Countries of France, of Anjou, of Main, of Berry, Avergne, Burgoigne, Champaigne, Picardy, and Normandy, and in all other Parts and Lands of the Kingdom of France; except those of the Dutchy of Bretagne, and those Countries and Lands by this Treaty which ought to be and remain to the King of England.

29. Also, it is agreed, That the King of France shall give up, and deliver to the King of England, his Heirs, or Deputies, all the Towns, Fortresses, Castles, and other Lands, Countries, and Places before named, with their Appertenances; at his proper Costs and Charge: And also if he shall have any Rebels, or Disobedient, that will not render and give up to the King of England any Cities, Castles, Towns, Countries, Places, or Fortresses, which ought to belong to him, the King of France shall be bound to cause them to be delivered at his own Expence: And likewise the King of England shall cause to be delivered at his Expence the Fortresses that by this Treaty ought to belong to the King of France. And the said Kings, and their People, shall be bound to Aid one another, when they shall be required, at the Wages of the Party that shall require it, which shall be one Florin of Florence a Day for a Knight, and half a Florin for on Escuyer, and to others. And it is Agreed, That if the Wages be too small, in regard of the Rate of Provisions or Victuals in the Countries, they shall be ordered by Four Knights chosen for that purpose, Two of one Party, and Two of the other.

30. Also, it is agreed, That all the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, and other Prelates and Men of Holy Church, by reason of their Temporalities, shall be subject to that King under whom they hold their Temporalities; and if they have Temporalities under both Kings, they shall be subject to each King for the Temporality they hold of him.

31. Also, it is agreed, That Good Alliances, Amities, and Confederacies be made between both the Kings and their Kingdoms, saving the Conscience and Honour of one King and the other, notwithstanding any Confederacies they have made on this side or beyond the Sea, with any Persons, be they of Scotland or Flanders, or any other Country.

32. Also, it is agreed, That the King of France and his Eldest Son the Regent, for them and for their Heirs Kings of France, as soon as it may be done, shall declare themselves, and depart from all the Confederacies they have with the Scots, and promise, That they nor their Heirs, nor the Kings of France for the time being, shall give or do to the King or Realm of Scotland, nor the Subjects thereof present and to come, any Aid, Comfort, or Favour, against the King of England, his Heirs and Successors, nor against the Kingdom, nor against the Subjects in any manner;



‘ manner ; and that they make not other Alliances with the  
 ‘ Scots in time to come, against the *Kings* and *Kingdom* of Eng-  
 ‘ land. And in like manner, as soon as it may be done, the  
 ‘ *King* of *England* and his *Eldest Son* shall declare themselves, and  
 ‘ depart from all *Alliances* they have with the *Flemmings* ; and so  
 ‘ on in the same Words and Things concerning them, as the  
 ‘ *King* of *France* engaged to do in respect of the *Scots*.

33. ‘ Also, it is agreed, That the Collations and Provisions  
 ‘ made of Benefices, vacant in time of the War by one Party and  
 ‘ the other, shall hold and be good ; and that the Costs, Issues,  
 ‘ and Revenues, received and levied of any Benefices, or other  
 ‘ things Temporal whatever, in the *Kingdoms* of *France* and  
 ‘ *England*, by one Party or the other, during the Wars, shall  
 ‘ be quitted by one Party and the other.

34. ‘ Also, That the *Kings* above-said shall be bound to cause to  
 ‘ be confirmed all the Things above-said by our Holy Father the Pope ;  
 ‘ and they shall be made sure, and strengthened by Oaths, Sen-  
 ‘ tences, and Censures of the Court of *Rome*, and all other Places,  
 ‘ in the most strong manner that can be ; and there shall be ob-  
 ‘ tained Dispensations, Absolutions, and Letters from the Court  
 ‘ of *Rome* for perfecting this Treaty, and they shall be delivered  
 ‘ to the Parties, at furthest within three Weeks after the *King*  
 ‘ shall be arrived at *Calais*.

35. ‘ Also, That all the Subjects of the said *Kings*, which come  
 ‘ to Study in the Universities and Places of Study in the *King-*  
 ‘ *doms* of *France* and *England*, shall enjoy the Privileges and Li-  
 ‘ berties of those Places and Universities, as well as they might  
 ‘ have done before the War, or as they do at this pre-  
 ‘ sent.

36. ‘ Also, it is agreed, That to the end the Things debated  
 ‘ and treated of as above, may be more established, firm, and  
 ‘ valuable, there shall be made and given the Securities which  
 ‘ follow : That is to say, Letters (or Instruments) sealed with  
 ‘ the Seals of both *Kings* and their *Eldest Sons*, the best that can  
 ‘ be made or directed by their Counsel. And the said *Kings* and  
 ‘ their *Eldest Sons*, and other Sons shall swear, and also those of  
 ‘ their *Lineage*, and other great Men of their Kingdoms, to the  
 ‘ number of Twenty on each side, That they will observe and  
 ‘ keep, and help in the keeping of the Things treated and agreed,  
 ‘ inasmuch as shall concern them, and without Fraud or Deceit  
 ‘ shall accomplish them, without ever doing any thing to the  
 ‘ contrary, and without any hindrance of the same. And if there  
 ‘ shall be any of the Kingdom of *England* or *France*, which shall  
 ‘ be *Rebels*, and will not agree to the Things above-said, the  
 ‘ said *Kings* shall use the Power of their Bodies, Goods, and  
 ‘ Friends, to bring such *Rebels* to Obedience, according to the  
 ‘ Form and Tenour of the Treaty. And further, the said *Kings*,  
 ‘ their *Heirs*, and *Kingdoms*, shall submit themselves to the Co-  
 ‘ ertion of our Holy Father the Pope, that he may constrain by  
 ‘ Sentences, Censures of the Church, and all due ways, him  
 ‘ that shall be *Rebel*, according to Reason. And according to  
 ‘ these Establishments and Securities above-said, both *Kings* and  
 ‘ their *Heirs* shall by Faith and Oath Renounce all Wars and  
 ‘ Contention. And if by Disobedience, Rebellion, or Power of  
 ‘ any



A ' any Subjects of *France*, or any just Cause, the *King of France*  
 ' or his Heirs cannot accomplish all the Things above-said, the  
 ' *King of England*, his Heirs, or any for them, shall not make  
 ' War against the *King of France*, his Heirs, or *Kingdom*; but  
 ' both together shall endeavour to bring the *Rebels* into true  
 ' Obedience, and accomplish the Things above-said. And if any  
 ' of the Realm or Obedience of the *King of England*, will not  
 ' render the *Castles, Towns, and Fortresses*, which they hold in the  
 ' *Realm of France*, and obey the Treaty above-said, or for just  
 ' cause cannot do that which by this Treaty they ought to do.  
 ' The *King of France*, nor his Heirs, nor any for them, shall make  
 ' War upon the *King of England* or his *Kingdom*; but both together  
 ' shall employ their Power to recover the *Castles, Towns, and Fortresses*; and  
 ' that all Obedience and Compliance may be given to the Treaty.  
 B ' And there shall be made and given on both sides, according to  
 ' the nature of the Fact, all manner of Security that shall be  
 ' known, or can be devised, as well by the *Pope*, the *College of*  
 ' the *Court of Rome*, as otherwise, holding and keeping the  
 ' Peace perpetually, and all the Things as above agreed.

37. ' Also, it is agreed, That by this present Treaty all others,  
 ' if any have been made before, shall be null and void, and never  
 ' be any Advantage to either Party, nor cause any Reproach of  
 ' one to the other for not observing them.

C 38. Also the present Treaty shall be Approved, Sworn to, and  
 ' Confirmed by the Two *Kings*, when they shall meet at *Calais*; and  
 ' after the *King of France* shall be gone from thence, and be in  
 ' his own Power, within a Month next following, he shall make  
 ' Letters Patents of Confirmation, and send and deliver them at  
 ' *Calais* to the *King of England*, and receive such and the like  
 ' from the *King of England*.

D 39. ' Also, it is agreed, That neither *King* shall procure, or  
 ' cause to be procured, by himself or others, any Injury or Mo-  
 ' lestation by the *Church of Rome*, or any of Holy Church who-  
 ' ever they be, to, or concerning this Treaty, towards either of  
 ' the *Kings*, their *Coadjutors, Adherents, and Allies*, whoever they  
 ' be, or their Lands or Subjects, on occasion of the War, or  
 ' other thing, or for Service the *Coadjutors, Adherents, or Al-*  
 ' lies of either side have performed; or if our *Holy Father* will do  
 ' it of himself, both *Kings* shall hinder it, as well as they can  
 E ' without Deceit.

40. ' Also the *Hostages* that are to be delivered to the *King of*  
 ' *England* at *Calais*, the manner and time thereof the Two *Kings*  
 ' shall there direct.

F Note, That in the Corrected Instrument or Letters of this  
 Treaty, the Words *Resort* and *Sovereignty*, are al-  
 ways, and in all Articles, omitted, in respect to  
 the *King of England's* enjoying them in the Places  
 which were to be delivered to him, where in the  
 uncorrected Articles and Instrument they are given  
 to him.

And then it follows at the latter end, or bottom of the Articles :



And We King of England aforesaid, having seen and considered  
 the said Treaty made in our Name and for us, for the Good of Peace,  
 and forasmuch as it concerns us, do Agree unto, Ratifie, Confirm, and Ap-  
 prove all Things above-written; and by our Royal Authority, with the  
 Deliberation, Counsel, and Consent of many Prelates and Men of Holy  
 Church, Dukes, Earls, as well of our Linage, as others, and many  
 Peers of England, as of other Great Barons, Noblemen, Burgessees, and  
 other Subjects of our Realm, do Consent to, and Confirm the said Treaty, A  
 and all Things contained in it: And we Swear, upon the Body of Jesus  
 Christ, in the Word of a King, for us and for our Heirs, to Observe,  
 Accomplish, and Keep it, without ever doing any thing to the contrary,  
 by our self or others. And that we may firmly and perpetually maintain  
 and keep the Things above-said, and every one of them, we bind Us,  
 our Goods present and to come, (nos biens presens & advenir) our  
 Heirs and Successors, to the Jurisdiction and Coertion of the  
 Church of Rome; Willing and Consenting, that our Holy Father B  
 the Pope may Confirm all these Things, by giving General Monitions  
 and Commands for the Accomplishment of them, against Us, our Heirs,  
 and Successors, and against our Subjects, Communities, Colleges, Uni-  
 versities, or particular Persons whatsoever, in pronouncing Sentences  
 General of Excommunication, Suspension and Interdict, to be incurred  
 by us and them, so soon as we or they shall attempt or seize on Fortresses,  
 Towns, Castles, or other Things whatsoever, or shall Do, Ratifie, or  
 Agree unto any thing, or shall give Counsel, Favour, Comfort, or Aid, C  
 secretly or openly, against the said Peace: From which Sentences, none  
 to be absolved, until they have given full Satisfaction to all those that  
 shall sustain Damage by such Practices. And further, That this Peace  
 may be more firmly kept for ever, We Will and Consent, That all Agree-  
 ments, Confederations, Alliances, and Covenants, howsoever they may  
 be termed, any way prejudicial to the said Peace at present, or after-  
 ward, supposing they be valid, and confirmed by Penalties or Oath, or  
 ratified by our Holy Father the Pope, or others, they shall be cassated, D  
 and made null and void, as contrary to Common Good, and a Peace  
 Common and Profitable to all Christendom, and Displeasing to God.  
 And all Oaths made in such case shall be released, and our Holy Father  
 the Pope shall decree by his Letters, That no Man shall be bound to  
 keep such Oaths, Alliances, or Covenants, and prohibit that no such or  
 the like be made for the future. And if any one shall do to the contrary,  
 it shall at that very moment be null and void; and nevertheless we shall  
 punish them, as Violators of the Peace, in their Bodies and Goods, as E  
 the Case and Reason shall require. And if We shall do or procure, or  
 suffer any thing to be done to the contrary (which God forbid) we will  
 be holden and reputed False and Perjured; and we shall be willing to  
 incur such Blame and Infamy as a Crowned King ought to incur in  
 such case. And We will cause the Things above-said to be Sworn unto,  
 Kept, and Observed by Our most Dear Eldest Son the Prince of  
 Wales, and Our Younger Sons Leonel Earl of Ulster, Edmond  
 of Langley; and Our Cousins Monsieur Philip de Navarre, the F  
 Dukes of Lancaster and Bretagne; the Earls of Stafford and Salis-  
 bury, the Lord of Manny, Guy de Brian, Reginald de Cobham,  
 the Captal de Bruche, the Lord of Montferrat, James Audley,  
 Roger de Beauchamp, Ralph Ferrers Captain of Calais, Eustace  
 Dambreticourt, Frank van Hall, John de Moubray, Henry de  
 Percy, Nicholas de Tamworth, the Lord of Cominges, Richard  
 de



de Stafford, William Grandison, Ralph Spigurnel, Gaston de Greyly, and William Burton, Knights. And We will also cause to be Sworn in like manner, so soon as We can, our other Children, and the greatest Part of the Churches, Earls, Barons, and other Noblemen of our Realm. Given or Dated at our Town of Calais, under the Testimony of our Great Seal, the 24th of October, in the Year of Grace 1360.

Many Authentick Transcripts of *Instruments* (or, as they were then called, Letters) concerning this Peace at *Bretigny*, there are upon the Rolls in the *Tower of London*, in the 34th and 35th Years of *Edward III.* most of the Originals whereof under the Great Seals of both *Kings* and their *Eldest Sons*, are to be found in a thick, long Box, with this Title: *Hic continetur Pax facta Cales, inter Reges & Regna Angliæ & Franciæ, die 24 Octobris, Anno Domini 1360.* within a great Chest in the Chapter-House at *Westminster*, some of which are here briefly noted:

The Articles of Peace uncorrected, being the same concluded at *Bretigny* the 8th Day of *May* preceeding, which the *King of France* delivered to the *King of England* at *Calais*, the 24th of *October*, 1360. with the Attestation of the *Abbat of Clugny* the *Pope's Nuncio*, that they were delivered in his Presence, Dated the 25th of the same Month, part of the Label of the Seal remaining at it.

The Articles corrected at *Calais*, owned by the *King of France* and his Son, and delivered to *King Edward*, *Octob.* 24. in the Presence of the same Nuncio [5] *Androynus Abbat of Clugny*, whereof his Certificate bears Date the next Day at the same Place, with the Articles recited in it, and his Seal hanging to it with a Parchment Label.

The Articles of Accord between *King Edward* and *John King of France*, about the Delivery of *Countries, Fortresses, Castles, Towns, and Places* one to another, according as they are named in the Treaty of *Bretigny*, and according to the 29th Article of that Treaty, the 7th, 11th, and 12th Articles thereof not being mentioned in this Agreement, *King Edward* to deliver them to *King John, &c.* at or before *Candlemas* next following the Date thereof, and *King John* to him within a Month after, with the Hostages Names on either side to be given for Performance, and the Names of such as Sware to it on the Part of the *King of France*, Sealed with his Seal at *Calais*, *Octob.* 24. 1360.

Par le Roy,

J. Math.

In these Articles *King Edward's* Letter of the same Accord is recited.

The *King of France* his Letter of *Renunciation*, Testified by the *Pope's Nuncio* the *Abbat of Clugny*, in which the *Renunciation* it self is recited, Dated at *Calais* *October* 24. the *Nuncio's* Testification bearing Date at the same Place the Day

Transcripts and Originals of many Instruments concerning the Treaty and Peace at *Bretigny*, where to be found.

The Contents, or a short Account of them. [5] Append.n. 93.



following, with his Seal hanging to it by a Parchment Label.

*Note*, That by *Renunciation* is meant, the Delivery, Releasing, Cession from, and Transferring of Countries, Cities, Towns, Castles, and Fortresses, with their Rights and Appertenences, from and by one King to the other.

The Attestation of the *Pope's* Nuncio of the Peace concluded between *King Edward* and *King John*, with *King Edward's* Renunciation according to the 11th and 12th Articles of the Peace of *Bretigny*, which are inserted in it, as also *King John's* Letter of Renunciation of the same Tenor, both dated at *Calais*, *October* 24, the Attestation bearing date the 25th of the same month at the same place.

[6] Append.  
n. 94.

*King John's* [6] Oath for the performance of the Treaty in many Articles worth notice, dated at *Calais* the 24th of *October* 1360.

Articles of the Peace and Treaty at *Bretigny* confirmed by *King John*, as they were Corrected at *Calais*, dated at *Bologne* the 26th of *October*.

*Par le Roy,*

*J. Math.*

This Instrument is much torn, and the Seal gone, but there remains some Red and Green Silk by which it hung.

The *King* of *France* his Letter or Chart, That he will perform all the Articles of the Treaty of *Bretigny*, as they were Corrected at *Calais*, as also all Renunciations, Covenants, &c. contained in one special Deed, Letter or Writing between the Two *Kings*, dated at *Bologne*, *October* 26. with his Seal hanging at it, with Red and Green Silk twisted.

*Par le Roy,*

*J. Math.*

Articles of the Treaty and Peace of *Bretigny*, confirmed by *King John* and his Son *Charles* without Correction, both dated at *Bologne*, *October* 26. 1360. *Par Monsieur le Duc*, with his Seal of Green Wax hanging to them. The last Clause whereof runs thus: *And many Articles of the said Accord having been afterwards Corrected at Calais in certain manners, for that the Renunciations which were to be made by one Party and the other according to the said Treaty, were not made purely and simply we being at Calais; (that is, Prisoner, and not in his own Power) We make it known, That we will agree, and are pleased, that afterwards the Cessions, Renunciations, Transports, and Releases, shall be made by one Party and the other, and sent and delivered at Bruges, as it is contained in Letters made about this Matter, sealed with the Seals of us and our Brother, that the same Articles as they were passed and agreed at Bretigny, and as they are above recited, shall be given and delivered to our said Brother, sealed with our Seal, and the Seal of our most Dear Eldest Son Charles Duke of Normandy, and Dauphin of Vienne.*



A Vienne. And this we promise to give and deliver at Bruges one year after the Feast of St. Andrew next coming, (that is, on St. Andrews-Day 1361.) in case that our said Brother shall send us the Renunciations which he is to make on his part, and deliver them to us or our People at the place aforesaid; as also Letters of the Tenors of the said Treaty and others sealed with his Seal, and with the Seal of our Nephew his Son; and we will that the things abovesaid, done and accomplished as abovesaid, the said Articles as above incorporated, (in this Instrument) shall remain in force, and have the same effect for one Party and the other, as if they had not been Corrected. And we promise truly in good Faith, and Swear without Deceit, to keep, observe, and accomplish without fraud what is abovesaid. In Witness whereof we have put to our Seal to these Letters. Given at Bologne upon the Sea the 26th of October, in the year of Grace 1360.

B And then follows his Son's Confirmation: And we will with all our Power observe and accomplish all that our Lord and Father hath promised and covenanted, engaging truly and in good Faith, and have Sworn, and do Swear upon the holy Body of Jesus Christ, to hold and accomplish as much as shall or may concern us, all and every of the things as written in the Letters above, according to the Manner and Form therein comprised, without doing or causing to be done any thing to the contrary in any manner for the time to come. In Witness whereof we have caused our Seal to be put to these present Letters.

C Given at Bologn the 26th day of October, in the year of Grace 1360.

Par Monsieur le Duc,

N. de Vienès.

D Charles, Eldest Son to the King of France, and Regent, his Confirmation of his Father's Grants, in which is contained the Peace and Treaty of Bretigny, with the Articles as they had been Corrected at Calais, dated at Bologn, October 26. 1360. with his Seal hanging at it with Red and Green twisted Silk.

E The great [7] Letter (or Instrument) of Renunciation, according to the Treaty of Bretigny, of John King of France, without Correction of the 7th and 11th Articles, which are intirely recited in it, the 12th Article being wholly omitted, dated at Bologn, Octob. 26. 1360. his Seal affixed with Red and Green Silk twisted together, and signed *Le Roy*.

F Also his Letters of Renunciation, with the 11th and 12th Articles of the Treaty of Bretigny intire, upon Condition King Edward and his Son, made their Renunciations, and sent them to the Augustin Friars at Bruges, sealed with their Seals on the Feast of St. Andrew, in one year after the same Feast next coming, dated at Bologne, October 26. 1360. with his Seal affixed as above, and signed *Le Roy*. These Letters were to be of no effect, if King Edward and his Son sent not their Renunciations to the place, and at the time therein expressed.

Charles, Regent of France, his Confirmation of these Letters of Renunciation, without Correction of Articles, and upon the same Conditions, dated at Bologn the 26th of October 1360. Par Monsieur le Duc, with his Seal hanging at it with Green and Red twisted Silk.

[7] Append  
n. 25.



The *King of France* his Acknowledgment, the *King of England* had performed his Agreement in setting him free, dated at *St. Omers* the first of *November*, 1360. with his Seal hanging to it as before.

*Par le Roy,*

*J. Math.*

*Charles, Duke of Normandy, (King John's Eldest Son)* his Certificate of the same thing, dated at *St. Omers*, *Novemb. 2. 1360.* *Par Monsieur le Duc*, with his Seal of Red Wax hanging at it by a Parchment Label.

[8] Append.  
n. 96.

The *Amities*, [8] *Alliances*, and *Confederacies*, between the Two *Kings*, confirmed by the *Duke and Regent at Bologn*, dated *October 26. 1360.* the Seal affixed with Green and Red twisted Silk; And many other Letters and Instruments there are relating to this Treaty and Peace in this Box, and scattered up and down the Body of the Chest, and more especially particular Letters of *Remunciation for every Country, Castle, City, Town, Fortrefs, and Place mentioned in the Articles of the Peace*, which may, with others upon many and divers Subjects, be published in due time by my Worthy Friend *Mr. Rymer*.

These Letters or Instruments seem to be very dissonant, and almost contradictory one to another, tho dated on the same days and at the same Places, some containing the Articles agreed on at *Bretigny*, others as they were *Corrected at Calais*. In like manner the things comprehended in the Letters or Instruments for the accomplishment of this Treaty, were to be performed and executed after a quite different Method, by some according to the *Original*, by others according to the *Corrected Articles*; but 'tis not very hard to see thro this Mystery, for both Kings and their Sons, were very strict and exact in Confirming both Copies of the Articles, as they thought themselves obliged by Oath to do, and first confirmed them at *Calais* before the *King of France* had his Liberty, and afterwards at *Bologn*, when he was free from his Imprisonment, yet were not so strict and just in the observation of their Oaths in the performance and fulfilling of them, but used and made their advantage of the different Copies of the Letters and Instruments as they served their turns.

[1] *Froissard*,  
lib. 1. c. 213  
f. 108. b.

*A. D. 1360.*  
The King re-  
turns to Eng-  
land with the  
Hostages for  
the Observa-  
tion of the  
Peace of *Bre-  
tigny*.

[2] *Ibm.*  
Their Free-  
dom and  
Kind Recepti-  
on in England.

[3] *Ib. c. 214.*  
*Du Chesne*, f.  
693. D.

*A. D. 1361.*  
King Edward  
sent Commis-  
sioners into  
France, to  
take Posses-  
sion of what  
had been a-  
greed on.

All things at that time, relating to this Peace at *Bretigny*, that could be, having been finished at *Calais* and *Bologne*, the [1] *King*, his Sons, and others, with the *Hostages of France*, took Shipping on the Eve of *All-Saints*, or last of *October*, and came for *England*, where the *Lords* and other [2] *Hostages* had all the *Enjoyments of the City of London, Hawked, Hunted, and Visited the Ladies in the Country* without any Restraint, the *King's Favour* being so great towards them.

It was not long after this, [3] that *King Edward* sent his *Commissioners* into *France*, to take possession of what was granted him, and what he was to enjoy according to the Peace; but several *Lords in Languedoc and Gasconne* refused at first to be wholly under the Power of the *English*, notwithstanding the *King of France*

A

B

C

D

E

F



France had Released their Faith and Homage, which they affirmed he could not do, nor make them Subjects to another Man; The Lords were the Earls of March, Perrigort, Gonniges, Arminac, the Viscounts of Chastillon and Carmaing, the Lords of Pincornet, and d'Albret; yet at last pressed by the King's Command, and prevailed upon by the King's Cousin James of Bourbon, who was sent Express to them, they obeyed against their Wills.

A The same Difficulties were found in [4] Poictou, Rochelois, and Xantoigne; The Rochellers excused themselves often, praying King John he would not put them out of his Power, that they might come under the power of the English, shewing to him they had rather every year be Taxed to the half of their Goods, then come under their Power, yet at length they submitted; declaring openly, That they would obey, but their Hearts could never be moved. [5] This done, King Edward made Sir John Chandos his Lieutenant, who had possession given him of all the Lands, Countreys, Towns, and Fortresses, which he was to have in France, by John de Maingre Marshal of France, and Received the Fidelity and Homages of all the Earls, Viscounts, Barons, Knights, and Esquires, Towns and Fortresses, making and appointing Seneschals, Bayliffs, Governors, and all Officers, in all Places, in the Name of the King of England; and made his own Residence at Niort, a City in Poictou.

C Then these there were yet greater Difficulties, for notwithstanding what the English and French Commissioners for evacuating the Garrisons held by, or for the English, could do, [6] there were some that would not yield, (but pretended they were employed by the King of Navarre;) There were also many Strangers great Captains, and great [7] Robbers or Pillagers, as Almain, Brabanters, Flemmings, Haynalders, and Gascoins, who would not quit their Employments, or the Kingdom of France; but set up for themselves under the Name of Companions; and the Disbanded Soldiers of such as gave up the Garrisons, and freely left their present Employments, ran into them, chose new Captains, and formed themselves into a great Body of Men, [8] so as it was feared in time they might do more Mischief in France, then the War had done. [9] The greater part of their Leaders were English, or at least under the Dominion of the King of England, yet would not obey his Orders, answering they must live by what they got.

E To reduce these, or expel them the Nation, [1] the King of France sent his Cousin James of Bourbon with an Army, which was routed, and himself much wounded, of which Wounds he died three days after. [2] These Companions pillaged and plundered the Countreys, and good Towns, where-ever they came, and by the encouragement of this Victory, or Advantage, they grew very numerous, so as they divided themselves into Two Bodies; one whereof lay at Auce upon the River Saone, not far from Lyons, [3] the other marched down by the River Rhosne, leaving Lyons toward Avignon, and in their way took the Bridge and Town of Holy Spirit within Seven Leagues of that Place, and other Fortresses, making themselves Masters of that River; in this Place they found great Riches, and had contrived to proceed to Avignon, and take it, or bring the Pope and Cardinals under their Mercy.

Several Earls, Viscounts, and Lords, refuse to become his Subjects. Yet at last submit against their Wills.

[4] *Ibm.* in both.

The same difficulties of non-submission in Poictou, &c.

[5] *Froyf. Ib.* Du Chesne, f. 694. A. Further Difficulties about Evacuating Garrisons.

[6] *Froyf. Ib.* f. 109. b. Robbers, Plunderers, and Disbanded Officers and Soldiers.

[7] *Ibm.* Make a great Body, and call themselves Companions.

[8] *Ib. & f.* 110. a.

[9] *Walsingh.* f. 173. l. 9 & 13. f. 181. l. 9.

[1] *Froyf. Ib.* c. 215. f. 111. a. James of Bourbon sent with an Army to reduce them.

[2] *Ibm.* which was routed, and himself killed. They divide into Two Bodies.

[3] *Ib. & f.* 111. b. One whereof marched toward Avignon And threatened the Pope and Cardinals



[4] *Ibm.*A Croysado  
Preached up  
against them  
without ef-  
fect.[5] *Ibm.*The Artifice  
to divert  
them.[6] *Ibm.*King Edward  
sends to the  
King of  
France, to  
make good  
what was a-  
greed by the  
Peace of Bri-  
tigny.\* *Rot. Franc.*  
35 Ed. III.  
M. 3.[7] *Dugd. Bar.*  
Vol. 1. f. 789.  
A great  
Plague in  
England.[8] *Rot. Vaseux.*  
36 Ed. III.  
M. 16. A. D.  
1362.The Prince of  
Wales made  
Prince of  
Aquitain.  
Homage and  
Fealty done to  
him by the  
Noblemen.  
He kept his  
Court at Bur-  
deaux.\* *Wal. Ing.*  
f. 179. n. 10.  
Pope Innocent  
dies.  
An Englishman  
chosen Pope.

Mercy. Pope *Innocent* and the *Cardinals* much disturbed at the Proceedings of these People, who besides Robbing and Plundering, committed all sorts of [4] horrid Villanies, preached up a Croysado against them, and absolved all from Crime and Punishment (*a culpa & pœna*) who would venture their Lives to destroy them; [5] but this Design did not take; and therefore they sent to the *Marquis of Montferrat*, who had then War with the *Milaneses*, to come to *Avignon*, [6] where it was contrived, That for a good Sum of ready Money, and the Promise of great Pay, he should attempt to get them into his Service, which had its due effect, for upon the Payment of the Money and his Promise, they quitted the Town of *St. Spirit* and other Places, and marched with him into *Piedmont*. The other Body of *Companions* would not stir out of *France*, but kept possession of what they had got, and increased in their Numbers and Outrages.

During these Confusions in *France*, King *Edward* sent his Commissioners, *Sir Thomas Vuedale*, and *Mr. Thomas de Dunclent*, *Licentiate* in Laws, to the King of *France*, to make certain Requests to him about the accomplishment, and a full effectual Dispatch of the things agreed, promised, and sworn to upon the Peace made between them, and especially that he would cause to be delivered and rendered intirely to him, or his Deputies, all the Cities, Towns, Castles, Fortresses, Lands, Countries, Isles and Places, which he was bound to deliver according to the Peace aforesaid; and further, to Receive the Letters of him and his Eldest Son, which should be sent and delivered at *Bruges* in *Flanders* on the Day of *St. Andrew* next coming, as well those of the *Renunciations*, *Cessions*, *Releases*, and *Transports*, as of other things that ought to be performed according to the Peace, under their great Seals, in Manner and Form agreed between them, &c. This Commission was Dated on the 15th of November 1361, and 35th of *Edward* the Third, but whether the Commissioners went according to the Commission, or what was done upon it, I have not seen.

This year there was a great Plague in *England*, which swept away many of the Nobility and Bishops, and amongst the rest *Henry Duke of Lancaster* [7] on the 24th of March, or last day of the year, a Person of great Worth in all respects.

On the 19th of July the year following, the Prince of Wales was made [8] Prince of *Aquitain*, and had all *Guien* and *Gascogne* given him during Life, the Direct Dominion, Superiority, and last Resort of those Countreys reserved to his Father. Not long after this the Prince, his Princess, and Family removed into *Aquitain*, where having received the Homages and Fealties of the Noblemen and others, he kept his Court at *Bordeaux* in great State and Splendor. He made *Sir John Chandos* his Constable of *Aquitain*, and *Guischard d'Angle* (a Native of *France*, but by the Peace of *Bretigny* a Subject of *England*) his Marshall, who continued faithful.

This year \* died Pope *Innocent* the Sixth in August, to whom succeeded *Gillerin*, an Englishman, and *Benedictin* Abbat, by the Name of *Urban* the Fifth, who was Consecrated on the First of November.

King



A King Edward was very kind to Four of the chief of the French Hostages, [9] the Dukes of Orleans, Anjou, Berry, and Bourbon, who gave them Leave to go over to Calais, and stay there for some time, and to go about into the Country for 4 days at any time, so as they always returned to Calais before Sun-set on the last day of the four. The Duke of Anjou upon this Liberty made his Escape, the others returned with the King of Cyprus into England.

[9] *Froiss. c. 218. f. 113. b. A. D. 1363.*  
Great Liberty given to four French Hostages.  
The Duke of Anjou made his Escape.

B Toward the [1] end of this year King John of France came for England, and landed at Dover the day before the Eve of Epiphany, or 4th of January, upon the [2] News he received of the Escape of his Son, the Duke of Anjou, to repair his Honour, and shew he had no Hand in that Act, and to dispose King Edward to the Expedition of the Holy War, he having accepted the Command of Generalissimo, by the Preaching and Persuasion of Pope Urban the Fifth: After he had been Nobly Treated here by the King and Nobility, [3] he fell sick at the Savoy in London about Mid-March, and died on the 8th or 9th of April following, for whom the King of England made a Magnificent Funeral, but his Body was carried into France, and interred at St. Denis upon the 7th of May; and upon Trinity Sunday next following, his Eldest Son Charles the Regent of France, and Duke of Normandy, was Crowned King at Rheims.

[1] *Ibm. c. 219.*  
The King of France comes into England.  
[2] *Mazery, f. 382.*

His Errand.

[3] *Ib. f. 383. A. D. 1364.*  
He falls sick, and dies there.

His Son Charles Crowned King.

C This year the King held a Parlement, 15 days after Michaelmas, wherein \* was granted unto him of every Sack of Wooll Transported 20 s. of every 300 Woollfells 20 s. of every Last of Leather 40 s. besides the Ancient Custom.

A Tax granted to the King.  
\* *Rot. Parl. 36 Ed. III. n. 35.*

D Notwithstanding the Peace of Bretigny, wherein [4] were not comprehended the Naverrois and Dukedom of Bretagne, the War continued there, Charles of Blois having been assisted by the French, and John de Montfort by the English. After many Skirmishes, Sieges, and the Battels of Cocherel and Auray, in which last Charles of Blois lost his Life, and then by a Treaty at Guernand a Peace was concluded [5] upon these Terms; That Montfort should enjoy the Dutchy, upon Condition of doing Homage and Fealty for it to the King of France; That the Widow of Charles should enjoy the Title of Dutcheess during her Life; and in case Montfort died without Heirs, the Dutchy to remain to the Heirs of Charles of Blois.

[4] *Mazery, fol. 384.*  
War in Bretagne between Blois and Montfort.

[5] *Ibm. f. 385. A. D. 1364.*  
*Froiss. c. 229. f. 125. a.*  
A Peace between them.

E About the same time, or not long after, there was Peace [6] between France and Navarre, when many Soldiers and Companions knew not what to do. [7] *Froissard* says, most of the Captains of the Companions, who horribly wasted and plundered the Country, were Englishmen, and Gascons under the Obedience of the King of England, and that the King of Hungary wrote to the Pope, the King of France, and Prince of Wales, that those People might be employed in his Service against the Turks, who offered them Gold, Silver, and Passage, but they would not quit France, which they called their Chamber.

[6] *Ibm. f. 125. b.*  
[7] *Ibm.*  
A Peace between France and Navarre.  
The Companions waste the Country.  
They refuse to serve against the Turk.

F Yet within a year or two, the Pope and King of France found an Opportunity to employ these Companions they so much feared. [8] *Alphonso XI.* King of Castile had by his Wife a Son called Peter, and by another Woman had several natural Sons, or Bastards,

[8] *Ib. f. 126. Maz. f. 386.*  
An Expedient to employ them.



Peter the Cruel King of Castile an Enemy to the Church.

Henry the Bastard Legitimated by the Pope, made King.

[9] *Froiss.* ib. The Kings of France and Aragon make War against Peter, and drive him out of his Kingdom.

[1] *Ibm.* c. 231. A. D. 1366. He applies himself to the Pr. of Wales, who undertakes his Quarrel,

[3] *Ib.* c. 234. Beats Henry,

[4] *Ib.* c. 237, 238. and restores him.

[5] *Ib.* c. 239. f. 142. The Pr. sends to K. Peter for Pay for his Soldiers, and could not get it.

[6] *Ibm.* The Pr. not being well, returns with his Army into Aquitan.

[7] *Ib.* c. 240.

[8] *Ibm.* The Companions rob and spoil the Country.

[9] *Ibm.*

starts the Eldest whereof was was Henry. Peter had the Name of Cruel and Wicked, from his Actions of the same Denomination, and was reputed a great Enemy to the Church; whereupon great Complaints were made to the Pope, who upon Summons refusing to come to Avignon, was by Advice of the College declared an Infidel, Cursed, and Condemned, and Henry the Bastard Legitimated, and made capable of Receiving the Kingdom.

[9] By this Encouragement the Kings of France and Aragon made War upon him, and sent under the Command of Bertrand du \* Guesclin, the Famous Commander of the Companions, a great Body of those Men, and a great Number of other Volunteers under excellent Officers, to assist the Bastard Henry against Peter, who drove him out of his Kingdom.

Peter applies himself to the Prince of Wales, [1] who sends into England to his Father, and by his Advice, and the Concurrence of the Gascon Lords, undertakes his Quarrel, upon Condition of Payment of his Men, and that the King of Navarre would permit them to pass through his Country. [2] His Brother the Duke of Lancaster came to his Assistance out of England, and with as many Companions as he could gather up, under the Command of Sir Hugh Caverly and others, the Gascons, and Forces his Brother brought with him, he enters Castile. [3] (The March, Number of Men, and Chief Commanders, are described and named by Froissard) on Saturday April 3. 1366. The [4] Battel was fought between Navar and Navaret in Spain, where Henry the Bastard received a total Rout, and Peter was restored to his Kingdom.

Some time after the Battel, [5] the Prince sent to King Peter for Pay for his Soldiers, who excused himself, and let him know his People could raise no Money, so long as the Companions were in the Country; and that they had three or four times robbed his Treasurers coming to him with Money, and therefore desired him to send them away.

The Prince not being well, [6] nor the Air of Spain (then thought to be infectious) agreeing with him or his Army, he was advised to return to Aquitan; and Order was given accordingly. Upon his return, he promised the Army to pay them so soon as he got Money, though King Peter had not kept his Promise. The Gascon Lords went to their own Homes; the [7] Companions kept together expecting their Wages, and exercised their Trade of Robbing and Plundering. The Prince desired [8] them to leave his Country, it not being able to sustain them: Some staid; others that would not displease him, marched towards France, under English and Gascon Officers, passed the River Loire, and went into Champagne, where their Numbers encreased much, and they were so strong as none dare encounter them, though many Complaints had been made to the King of France concerning them: They harassed the Countries where-ever they came, and the [9] People wondered the Prince of Wales should send them thither to make War.

\* So Mazeray; Froissard, Clisgai; Walsingham, Cleikin; others Clequin and Guesceline.



Who wanting Money to pay his Debts, contracted by the *Spanish Expedition*, and his own *Expences*, and in some measure to satisfy his Soldiers and Military Men, he was advised [1] to call together the *Bishops, Abbats, Barons, and Knights of Aquitan* at *Niort*, where *Chimney-Money* was propounded and urged by the *Bishop of Rhodes* Chancellor of *Aquitan*, a *Frank* upon every *Chimney*. Some consented to it, others dissented; but the main Answer was, They would consider and advise about it; and then departed. [2] The *Prince* commanded them to return at a Day assigned: Many returned not, nor would suffer *Chimney-Money* to be paid. [3] He rigorously exacted the Collection of it. Sir *John Chandos*, one of the Chief of his Council, advised him to the contrary; but seeing he could not prevail, left him, pretending Business in *Normandy* at his own Estate *St. Savours le Vicount*, where he abode six Months.

In the mean time, [4] the *Earl of Arminac*, the *Lord d'Albret*, the *Lords Gomenges, Pincornet*, and divers other *Barons, Prelates, Knights, and Esquires of Gascon*, made great Complaints, and appealed to the *French King* as their *Superiour Lord*, to whose Court was, as they affirmed, the last Resort for maintaining their *Liberties and Franchises* against the Oppressions and Evil Usages of the *Prince of Wales*. [5] He managed them cunningly, giving them such Answers as satisfied them at present; yet knew not his meaning, until he had covertly prepared for War; and then he sent a [6] *Summons* to the *Prince of Wales* upon their farther Instance, Dated *January 25. at Paris*, to appear there before him in his Chamber of *Peers*, and do the People Right, according to their Complaints. His Answer was, That if he must come, he would, attended with Sixty thousand Men.

This *Summons* was soon after followed with a *Defiance*, [7] sent to the *King of England*, and the Invasion of *Ponthieu and Aquitan*.

The chief Reasons why the *French King* began the War again with *England*, were (besides the above-mentioned) a pretended [8] *Agreement* the Two *Kings* should make at *Bologne*, on the 26th of *October*, 1360. when the *Treaty at Bretigny* had been corrected and confirmed by them both; by which it was accorded, That whereas for some Difficulties which then hapned, the *Renunciations* to be made at *Calais* could not be perfected, both *Kings* in the Year following should send their *Deputies* to *Bruges*, to be there on the Feast-Day of *St. Andrew*, bringing with them the *Treaty of Peace and Renunciations*, in *Letters Patents*, Sealed with their *Seals*: And until that time, they should be of no effect: And that to the *King of France* should remain the *Resorts and Sovereignties* as before: [9] That if any of the Subjects of one Party or the other should contravene the Peace, exercising *Robbing and Killing, Pillaging, Burning, or Taking or Detaining Fortresses, Persons, or Goods, in one Kingdom or the other*, upon the Subjects, Adherents, or Allies, and should not cease, or make Reparation within one Month after Demand. From thence they were to be holden as Banished both Kingdoms, Guilty of *Treason*, and to be punished without Remission or Connivance.

The *Pr. want* Money.

[1] *Ib. c. 241.*

*Chimney-money* propounded; Many dissatisfied about it: [2] *Ibm.*

Yet it was exacted,

[3] *Ibm.* against the Advice of some of his Council.

[4] *Ibm.*

Many Great Men of *Gascon* complain to the *King of France* of the Oppressions of the *Pr. of Wales*

[5] *Ibm.*

The *King of France* summons him before him in his Chamber of *Peers*.

[6] *Ib. c. 243. & Du Chesne, f. 699. D.*

*A. D. 1369.* The *Prince* his Answer.

[7] *Froiss. e. 246. Du Ches. f. 700. D.*

The *King of France* defies the *King of England*: Invades *Ponthieu and Aquitan*.

[8] *Du Chesne, f. 693. B. C.*

The Reason of this War.

[9] *Ibm.*



[1] *Ibm.*[2] *Ib. f. 694. A. B.*[3] *Fol. 388.*

All the Lands  
the King of  
England held  
in France de-  
clared forfeit,  
and to be con-  
fiscated for  
Rebellion,  
Contempt,  
and Disobedi-  
ence.

[1] *Claus. 43  
Ed. III. M. 24.  
Dors.*

*A. D. 1369.*

[2] *Rot. Parl.  
43 Ed. III. n. 1.  
A Parlement  
called.*

The cause of  
Summons.

And further, That one *King* do not Receive the *Enemies* of the other, but preserve their *Honour Reciprocally*. And that *King* [1] *Edward* on his Part deputed no body to *Bruges* at the time appointed, to make the *Exchange* of the *Treaty* and *Renunciations*. [2] That instead of delivering the *Fortresses* and *Garrisons* he held in *France* at his own Charge, as he was expressly bound by the *Treaty*, he kept many in his own Name under pretence of Wages due to the Soldiers as then unpaid; and seized upon others, and continued the War in effect by those of his Party, who changed their Names, and called themselves *Companions*; who would not yield the Places they held, without an unreasonable Redemption or Payment for the quitting of them. Further, That he took no notice of the Difference between his Son-in-Law *John Montfort*, and *Charles Earl of Blois*, concerning the *Duchy of Bretagne*, as by the *Treaty* he was equally bound to do, as the *King of France* was, but suffered the War to continue there to weaken the Force of *France*, and to prevent the Return of the *Companions* into *England*, lest that might have been too great Charge and Trouble to him. That he never kept his Faith with *France*. Lastly, That he had done *Homage* and sworn Fealty to the *King of France* as to his *Superiour Lord* for the *Duchy of Aquitan*, *Earldom of Ponthieu*, &c.

*Mezeray* [3] writes, That *King Edward* thought himself absolute *Soveraign* in *Guyen* by the *Treaty of Bretigny*; but as on his side he had not Disbanded his Soldiers; and moreover he had committed divers Hostilities, the *King of France* pretended that *Treaty* was null and void; and that therefore he remained still a *Vassal* to the Crown. And that it was upon this foot that he sent to declare War against him. And afterwards his Parliament being assembled on *Ascension-Eve*, sitting in his Seat of Justice, made a Decree by which for *Rebellion*, *Contempt*, and *Disobedience*, they declared forfeit and confiscated all those Lands the *King of England* held in *France*.

But beyond this Pretence, in the Declaration of the Confiscation of the *Dukedom of Aquitan*, against *King Edward* and the *Prince of Wales*, by *Charles V. King of France*, Dated at *Vincennes* the 14th of May, 1370. it is positively affirmed, That the Superiority and Resort of the whole *Dukedom of Aquitan*, and the other Lands delivered and assigned to the *English* by that *Treaty*, were especially and expressly reserved to his Father, himself, and Successors. See the Instrument it self in *Codex Juris Gentium Diplomaticus*, *Fol. 229. Paragraph 1.* wherein they are said to have violated the Peace they solemnly Swore to maintain; and for that their *Rebellion*, (there so called) their *Contempt*, and *Usurpation* of the Superiority and Resort of the *Dukedom of Aquitan*, and other Lands, and many other Crimes there mentioned, that *Dukedom*, &c. was decreed Confiscate, and to be annexed to the Crown of *France*.

The War being open, the *King* [1] Summoned a *Parlement* to meet on the *Octaves of Holy Trinity*, or the next Sunday after that Feast, being May 27. this Year. [2] The *King*, *Prelates*, *Dukes*, *Earls*, *Barons*, *Knights*, *Citizens*, and *Burgesses*, being in the *Painted Chamber*, the *Bishop of Winchester*, then *Chancellor*, shewed the cause of Summons, telling them, That the *King* in all his great



great Business touching himself and the Kingdom, had in all times done and wrought (*de tout temps ad fait & overs*, &c.) by the Counsel and of the Great Men and Commons of the Realm, who he found in all his Affairs Good and Loyal, for which he thanked them, and would not any thing should be unknown to them. He further told them, That with their Advice and Counsel he had made Peace with his Adversary of France, upon certain Conditions, That he should cause to be delivered unto him certain Lands and Countries beyond Sea, and also pay him certain Sums of Money at certain times appointed in the Peace; and that he should lay aside the Use of Resort in all the Lands and Countries of Gascon, and all the Lands and Countries which the King held beyond Sea; and that he was to part with the Name and Title of the King of France for the same time (*pur mesme le temps*.) That his Adversary had wholly failed to make Delivery of the Lands and Countries so Agreed to be Delivered by the Peace, and of his Payment also. That nevertheless he had received the Appeals of the Earl of Armynak, the Lord de la Bret, and others, which were the King's Lieges in Gascon, and by virtue of their Appeals had caused to be Summoned the Prince of Gascoigne to appear before him at Paris (*le Prince de Gascoigne d'apparer devant luy a Paris*, &c.) the first Day of May last past, to Answer their Appeals against the Form of the Peace.

[3] And further, That he had sent a great Number of Men at Arms, and others into the Countries of Gascoigne, and there by force had taken Towns, Castles, Fortresses, and other Places; killed some of the King's Liege People, taken others, and imprisoned them, in expectation of great Ransoms. The like also he had done in Ponthieu. And because of these things done in the Principality against the Form of the Peace, [4] the Prince sent solemn Messengers to inform the King, he had called to him the most Wise Men of the Principality, and treated with, and propounded to them, whether by reason of these things, he might not, by Right and Reason, retake upon him, and use the Name of King of France; who answered and affirmed the King might do it by Right and Good Faith (*de Droit & bon Foi*) [5] Upon which Point the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and the other Prelates, were charged by the King (*firent chargez par le Roy*) to treat and shew their Advice and Counsel (*leur Auy & Conseil*.)

On Wednesday following, the [6] Arch-Bishop and Prelates, after mature Deliberation had upon the Charge, with one accord answered and said (*respondrirent & desoient*) That the King for the Causes above-said, might retake and use the Name of King of France, by Right and good Conscience: To which Agreed the Dukes, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, and Commons in full Parlement; (*& a ce [7] accorderent les Ducs, Countes, Barons, & autres Grants, & Communes en pleyn Parlement*.) Which Name of King of France he did retake, and had his Great Seal, and other Seals altered, and that Title [8] engraved upon them.

On the same [9] Day, and Thursday, the Estate of the King was laid before the Great Men and Commons (*feust monstre as Grants & Communes lestat le Roy*) and because the War was open, (*par cause de la Guerre queste ouverte*) he should be at great Charges

An account of the Transactions between K. Edward and his Adversary of France.

His unfaithful Dealing with K. Edw.

[3] *Ibm.* n. 2.

[4] *Ibm.* n. 3.

[5] *Ibm.*

[6] *Ibm.* n. 2. King Edward by Adv<sup>c</sup>: of Parlement retakes upon him the Title and Name of King of France.

[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Ibm.*

[9] *Ibm.* n. 5, 10.



A Subsidy of  
Wooll, &c.  
granted to  
maintain the  
War.

[1] Ib. n. 25.  
K. Edward's  
Offer,  
To all Per-  
sons whatever  
that would  
maintain his  
Quarrel a-  
gainst France.

[2] *Walsf.* 184.  
n. 20.  
The Death of  
the Queen.  
The Offer as  
above, no ad-  
vantage to  
K. Edward.  
[3] *Froyf. c.*  
272. *Du Ches.*  
f. 704. D.  
He sends his  
Letters of  
Indemnity  
and Pardon  
into Aquitan.

as well by Sea and Land, which he could not maintain without their Aid, he requested them they would treat and advise how he might be best assisted to his greatest Profit, and the least Charge and Damage to the People. The Prelates, Dukes, Earls, and Barons, by themselves, and then the Commons of one accord, Granted (*les Prelates, Ducs, Barons, par eux, & puis les Communes d'un acord Granteront, &c.*) to the King a Subsidy of Woolls of every Sack 43 s. 4 d. and of the Woollfels every Twelvescore as much, and of every Last of Leather 4 l. which passed beyond Sea for three Years, besides the ancient Custom, to begin at Michaelmas next coming, of Denizons: Of Strangers, for every Sack of Wooll 4 Marcs, of every Twelvescore Woollfels, 4 Marcs, and of every Last of Leather 8 Marcs.

He not only provided for Money this Parlement, but [1] declared, That for the Compensation of such Lords, or others of whatsoever Estate, Degree, Condition, or Nation they were, who would maintain his Party and Quarrel against his Enemies of France, should hold Heritably what they should Recover and Conquer, be they Dutchie, Earldoms, Vicounties, Cities, Towns, Castles, Fortresses, or Lordships, situate in France, by what Name or Title they were called, of him as of the King of France, by the Services and Dues accustomed, except and reserved expressly to him and his Heirs. all his Demeasn Royalties, Services, Homages, Dues, Resorts, and Sovereignities belonging to the Crown of France; except also Church-Lands, and the Lands of all such as without Force or Difficulty would obey, adhere to, and stay in Obedience to him on their own Good-will, and him Aid, Counsel, and Comfort in his Quarrel. &c.

This Year [2] on the Assumption of the Virgin Mary, or 15th of August, died Queen Philip, Just and Sincere, as the Historians say, to the English Interest.

There is nothing extant which makes it appear, that the Offer above-mentioned advanced King Edward's Cause; and therefore next Year he sends his Letters of Indemnity and Pardon, with great Promises of Reformation, into Aquitan: [3] That he being informed of certain Troubles, Grievances, and Molestations done, or supposed to be done, by his Dear Son the Prince of Wales in his Seigniorie of Aquitan, being obliged and desirous to remedy all things tending to evil Surmises, Hatreds, and Contentions, between him and his Loyal Friends and Subjects, did Announce and Pronounce, Certifie and Ratifie, of his meer Good-will, and by great Deliberation of his Council, to that purpose called, and did Will and Command, That the Prince of Wales should forbear and remit all manner of Actions done, or to be done, and restore to all such as had been grieved or molested by him, or by any of his Officers and Subjects in Aquitan, all their Costs, Expences, or Damages raised, or to be raised, in the Name of Aids or Chimney-Money. And did further pardon all such as had revolted and forsaken his Homage and Fealty, upon Condition, that after the sight of these Letters, within one Month they returned to their Obedience. And if any Persons made any just Complaint against his Dear Son the Prince, or any employed by him; that in any thing they were grieved or oppressed, or had been in times past, he would cause them to have reasonable Amends, for the maintaining of Peace, Love, Concord, and Unity between him and his People of the Dutchy. And that all Men might be

A

B

C

D

E

F



be satisfied of the Truth of these Letters, he willed they should have Copies of them; and then declared he had Sworn to maintain and make them good, by the Body of Jesus Christ, in the Presence of his Dear Son John Duke of Lancaster, the Earls of Salisbury, Warwick, Hereford, and many other there named. Dated at Westminster, in the 44th Year of his Reign, on the 5th of November, in the Year of our Lord 1370.

A Mezeray [4] taking notice of these Letters, tells us, That to the Force of Arms, the King of France joined Religion and Eloquence, which could do all things on the Hearts of the People. He ordered Fasts and Processions to be made all over his Kingdom, and sometimes went barefoot himself with the rest; when at the same time the Preachers made out his Right and Title, with the Justice of his Cause, and the Injustice of the English: Which had two Ends; the one to bring back again those French Provinces, which had been yielded by the Treaty of Bretigny; the other, to make those that were under him willing to suffer the Contributions, and all other Inconveniencies of War. The Arch-Bishop of Thoulouse alone, by his Persuasions and Intrigues, regained above Fifty Cities and Castles in Guien; amongst others, that of Cahors. The King of England would have practised the same Methods on his part, and sent an Amnesty, or General Pardon, to the Gascons, with an Oath upon the Sacred Body of Jesus Christ, to raise no more new Imposts; but all this could not reclaim those Minds, that had bent themselves another way.

C King Edward [5] sent Forces over to the Prince, with Edmond Earl of Cambridge his own Son, and the Earl of Pembroke his Son-in-Law; who with a great number of Companions, under the Command of Hugh Caverley, an Experienced Officer which came from Aragon, Rendezvoused at Angoulesme, and were put all under his Command by the Prince. What things of Note they did, I find not.

D Before this time, [6] Henry the Bastard had, by the Assistance of Peter King of Aragon, the King of France, and the Power of Bertrand de Guesclin and his Companions, seized the Kingdom of Castile, and killed King Peter, and fixed himself in that Throne. The King of France wrote to Henry to [7] permit him, and to Bertrand himself, to come into France, and to enter into his Service; who made all the haste he could, and came and joined the Duke of Anjou at Thoulouse.

E About the same time the [8] Duke of Lancaster arrived at Burdeaux with more Forces from England, who marched forthwith to the Princes Rendezvous at Cognac, where he met with the Earls of Cambridge and Pembroke; who all joining with the Forces of Xantong and Poictou, which the Prince had Summoned in, made a great Body of Men.

F In the mean time, [9] the Duke of Berry lay before Limoges, who being reinforced, with Forces sent under the Conduct of Bertrand de Guesclin, caused the City to Treat, and was soon delivered by the Bishop and Citizens into the hands of the French, to whose King they gave their Faith and Homage.

[4] F. 389.  
The King of France joined Religion and Eloquence to his Arms; And sent Preachers abroad, to justify his Cause.

[5] Ib. c. 249, 250.  
Forces sent into France to the Prince. Some of the Companions joined with them.

[6] Ib. c. 241, 242.  
Henry the Bastard killed Peter King of Castile, and fixed himself in the Throne.

[7] Ib. c. 276.  
Bertrand de Guesclin and his Companions serve the K. of France against K. Edw.

[8] Ib. c. 279.  
The Duke of Lancaster arrived at Burdeaux with more Forces from England.

[9] Ib. c. 280.  
Limoges delivered to the French.



[1] *Ib. c. 280.*  
*Maz. f. 390.*  
The English  
harass and  
burn the  
Countries a-  
bout Paris.

[2] *Frayard,*  
*c. 283.*  
The Prince  
inraged with  
*Limoges*, takes  
it by Storm,  
puts to the  
Sword 3000  
Men, Women,  
and Children.  
Burns and  
destroys the  
Town.

[3] *Ib. c. 280.*  
The weak  
Condition of  
the Prince.

[4] *Ib. c. 287.*  
His return to  
England.

[5] *Ibm.*  
*A. D. 1370.*

[6] *Du Chesne,*  
*f. 707. B.*

*Bertrand de*  
*Guesclin* made  
Constable of  
France.

[7] *Rot. Claus.*  
*44 Ed. III. M.*  
*1. Dors.*

A Parlement  
summoned.

[8] *Rot. Parl.*  
*45 Ed. III.*  
*n. 1.*  
The Cause of  
Summons.

While these things happened in *Aquitan*, the Command of the [1] Army about *Picardy* was given to Sir Robert Knolls, which terrified the Country as far as the *Loir*; it harassed *Vermendois*, *Champaign*, *la Brie*, and the *Isle of France*, burnt all round *Paris*, yet nothing could move the King of France to send out of *Paris* any Force against them.

The Prince much inraged with [2] *Limoges* for rendring as it did, was resolved to execute his Revenge upon it, set his Miners to work to undermine the Wall, which they did in the space of a month, so as a great part of it fell into the Ditches, when the Town was taken by Storm, and more than Three thousand Men, Women, and Children, of the Inhabitants, put to the Sword, the Town burnt and destroyed by the Prince's Command. The Bishop likewise should have had his Head stricken off, had not the Duke of Lancaster begged him of the Prince, and the Pope by sweet Words and kind Intreaty prevailed with the Duke to send him to *Avignon*. [3] The Prince at this time was carried in a Horse Litter, being so weak he could not ride. This was the last Warlike Athievement of the Prince, being [4] advised by his Physicians and Chirurgeons to return into *England* for his Health's sake; He took their Advice, and with his Princess, his young Son Richard, the Earls of Cambridge and Pembroke, came for *England*, leaving the [5] Affairs of *Aquitan* to the Management of his Brother John Duke of Lancaster. By this time [6] *Bertrand de Guesclin* had Baffled the Army of Sir Robert Knolls, that had Braved all France, and recovered from the English many Towns and Fortresses, for which Services he was made Constable of France on the Second of October.

In the latter end of the 44th year of Edward the Third, on the 8th of January, he [7] issued Summons for a Parlement to meet on Monday in the first week of Lent, being the Feast of St. Matthias, or 24th of February, in the 45th of his Reign, on which day the King, Prelates, Great Men, and Commons, (Grantz & Coes) assembled in the Painted Chamber, [8] and the Bishop of Winchester, then Chancellor, declared the cause of Summons to be, That by their assent last Parliament, the King did retake upon him the Name of King of France, because his Adversary had broke the Peace, and used the Resort, which by that belonged to him; for which cause and others he had been at great Expences, and sent some Great Men and others, to a great number, to recover and conquer his Right, (*par son droit avoir & conquere*) and that the King had received News from his Friends and Allies, That his Adversary had made himself stronger then he had done before, (*que son adversaire se fait plus fort, quil n'ad fait devant*) and directed so great a number of People to be brought together, as seemed to him, were able this year to put him out of possession of all his Lands and Countreys beyond Sea, as well in *Gascoign*, as at *Calais*, *Guines*, *Pontheu*, and other Places; and further, That he had such a Fleet ready, as seemed sufficient to destroy the whole English Navy, (*a destruire toute la Navy D'engleterre;*) and also, That he prepared to send over a great Army into this Land, to destroy, conquer, and subiect it to his Power; Wherefore the King required and charged the Great Men and Commons, (*par quoi le Roi requert & charge les Grantz & Coes*)

That



That they would Advise about these Points, and Counsel him, how the Kingdom might be safely guarded, the Navy preserved from the Malice of his Enemies, how his Lands beyond Sea should be kept, the War there maintained, and the Conquest of them carried on.

Upon these [9] Causes thus propounded, and many ways of Ayd, Touched, Treated of, and Debated between the Great Men and Commons, (*& plusieurs voies de cide touchez, tretez, parlez & debatuz per entre les Grantz & Communes*) in consideration of the great Costs and Charges the King was to be at for the Causes abovefaid, the same Great Men and Commons (*mesmes les Grantz & Communes*) on the 28th day of March granted a Subsidy of 50000 l. to be levied of every Parish of the Land 22 s. 3 d. so as every Parish of greater value should contribute ratably to those of less value.

But at the Great Council holden at [1] Winchester Eight days after Trinity Sunday, the Chancellor shew the Great Men and Commons there assembled, (*fust monstre par le Chancellor as Grantz & Communes illoques assemblez*) That the number of Parishes in England would not answer the Sum of 50000 l. as might appear by the Certificates of all the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, and Sheriffs, made and returned into Chancery by the King's Warrant; [2] Which Certificates being Examined, (*& sur se plusieurs tretes & parlanes enes*) and many Treaties and Conferences had upon the Matter, at last in full accomplishment of the Sum of 50000 l. the said Great Men and Commons (*les ditz Grantz & Communes*) granted of every Parish within the Kingdom of England Cxxvi s. the Sum of 22 s. 3 d. first granted, being comprised therein, except the County of Chester, and the Church Lands, which were Taxed to the Tenth, so as always the Parishes of greater value should be contributory to those of less value.

The [3] Commission of this Grant was read before the King, Great Men, and Commons, and the Names of the Collectors given in by the Knights of the Shires, and also the Names of the Lords and others that were assigned to see the Tax was duely and reasonably Assessed and Levied; and the Petitions of the Commons that were not answered in the preceding Parliament, were answered in this Council, amongst which this following is very observable.

For that [4] it had been declared to the King in this present Parliament by all the Earls, Barons, and Commons of England, That the Government of the Kingdom had for a long time been managed by Men of the Church, whereby many Mischiefs and Damages had happened in time to come, in Disberison of the Crown, and to the great Prejudice of the Kingdom: It would please the King, That Laymen, of sufficient Abilities, and no others, might for the future be made Chancellor, Treasurer, Clerc of the Privy Seal, Barons of the Exchequer, Chamberlanes of the Exchequer, Controller, and other Great Officers and Governors of the Kingdom, and that this Matter might be so Established, that it might not be Defeated, or any thing done to the contrary in time to come, saving to the King the Election and Removal of such Officers, yet so as they should be Laymen.

[9] Ib. n. 6.

A Subsidy of 50000 l. granted to be levied ratably upon every Parish.

[1] Ib. n. 6. A great Council at Winchester.

The number of Parishes could not answer 50000 l. as it was to be levied upon them, and therefore they were Taxed higher.

[2] Ib. n. 10, 11.

Note, That the Transactions of this Council, and the precedent Parliaments, are entered in the same Roll, and the numbers continued as if it were one and the same Assembly.

[3] Ib. n. 12, 13.

[4] Ib. n. 15.

The Commons Petition, that Laymen, and no others, might be made the great Officers of the Kingdom.



The King's  
Answer.

[5] *Ibm.*

[6] *Rot. Clause*

45 Ed. III. M.

29. *Dorf.*

The Members

of the great

Council at

Winchester.

[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Froyf. c.*

295.

\* *Ib.* John  
Duke of Lan-  
cast'r's Title  
to Castile.

[9] *Ib.* c. 296.

[1] *Ibm.*

Two Armies  
to be sent into  
France.

The Earl of  
Pembroke Lieu-  
tenant of *A-*  
*quitain.*

[2] *Rot. Vasc.*

46 E. III. M. 4.

Henry the Ba-

stard of Ca-

stile assists the

King of France

with a Fleet.

[3] *Froyfard,*

c. 297, 298,

299. *A. D.*

1372.

The English

Navy de-

stroyed.

The Earl of

Pembroke taken

Prisoner.

[4] *Walsingh.*

*ypredig. Nustr.*

f. 530. n. 10.

He dies.

[5] *Froyfard,*

c. 304.

*Rehell* de-

clares for the

King of

France.

[6] *Ib.* c. 305.

*Mezer. f. 392.*

The Town of

*Thovars* forced

to Capitulate.

The Terms

granted unto

them.

The King's Answer was, [5] He would do in this Point, what seemed best to him by Advice of his Council.

The Members of this great Council were, [6] four Bishops, four Abbats, six Earls, six Barons, and such, and so many of the Commons as the King named in his Writs to the Sheriffs, which were of the last Parlement; for Kent there were only [7] Thomas Apuldrfeld, one of the Knights of the Shire, Edmund Horner, one of the Citizens of Canterbury, and John Fynchynfeld, one of the Citizens of Rochester.

About this time [8] John Duke of Lancaster Married Constance, the Eldest Daughter of Peter the Cruel, King of Castile, &c. the true Inheritrix of that Kingdom, and took upon him the Title of King in her Right. \* Whereupon Henry the Bastard of Castile, made a League Offensive and Defensive with the King of France. [9] After Michaelmas he came for England, for Instructions how to carry on the Affairs of Aquitan, leaving Governors and Deputies in Guien and Poitou, his Wife and her Sister Isabel, who was afterward Married to Edmond his Brother, Earl of Cambridge, came with him.

And this Winter [1] were divers Councils holden about the Affairs of Aquitan, and other Parts in France, and how the War was to be maintained there next Summer; at last it was resolved there should be Two Armies sent thither, one into Guien, and another by the way of Calais.

In the Spring [2] the Earl of Pembroke was made Lieutenant of Aquitan, and was ordered to go by Poitou into Guien, with a Fleet and Forces, and to land at Rochell. The King of France knowing what was designed in England, sends to Henry the Bastard of Castile to assist him with a Fleet, who sent one greater and far more powerful than that of England. [3] The Two Fleets met at the Entrance of the Bay of Rochell on the 22d of June, where they fought two days; most of the English Navy was destroyed or taken, and the Earl made Prisoner. The Rochellers saw all this, but gave no assistance to the English, tho demanded of them. The Ship also was sunk, in which the Treasure was for the payment of the Soldiers in Aquitan. The Earl of Pembroke was sent Prisoner into Spain to Henry the Bastard, who about [4] three years after sent him to Bertrand Guesclin for a Sum of Money he owed him. The Sum of his Ransom was agreed on at Paris; but coming for England to raise the Money, being very weak, he died before he reached Calais, and the Constable of France lost the Price of his Redemption.

After this Fight at Sea, and the Destruction of the English Fleet, [5] Rochell declared for the King of France, and all Rochelois. In Poitou the Constable reduced many Towns and Forts, and besieged [6] Thovars, whither most part of the Lords and Chief Men of that Country were retired, as to a Place of Security; In a short time they were forced to Capitulate and Agree, That they should put themselves, their Lands and the City under the Obedience of the King of France, unless upon their sending to the King of England, he himself, or one of his Sons, came with an Army to relieve them by next Michaelmas-day.

The



The Messengers [7] sent from *Thouars* informed the King, Prince, and Council, of the Condition of *Poitou*, and *Xantonge*, and especially of that Place: The King resolved to go over himself, and was advised to take with him that Army which was to march into *France* by the way of *Calais*; [8] and besides, he sent forth *Summons* for a very considerable number of the *Military Men*, and many of the *Nobility*, to be ready to pass the Sea with him, and the Prince of *Wales*, into *Poitou*.

On [9] Monday, August 30. (Orders having been given for Publick Prayers to be made in all Churches for good success upon the Voyage) he took Ship with many of the chief *Nobility*, and with 400 Vessels [1] of all sorts, sailed toward the Coast of *France*, and *Poitou*, but the Wind was always contrary, so as he could not land; Having kept the Sea about five weeks, and the time limited for Relief, or Surrender of the Town, being past, he returned to *England* in the beginning of *October*. [2] This unhappy Voyage, with the Disaster of the Earl of *Pembroke*, lost all *Poitou*, *Xantogne*, and *Rocheleis*.

On the very day [3] he put to Sea, he made his Grandchild *Richard*, Son to the Prince of *Wales*, then scarce Seven years old, Guardian, and his Lieutenant of the Kingdom during his absence, appointing him a Council fit for the Management of the Publick Affairs: Two days after, on the first of *September*, [4] he issued Writs of Summons for a *Parlement* to meet 15 days after *Michaelmas*; but before that time King Edward was come into *England*, and by his [5] Writs dated at *Winchelsea* on the 6th of *October*, he prorogued this *Parlement* to the morrow of *All-Souls*, or 3d of *November*.

Sir John Knivet [6] declared in part the Causes of Summons, the *Parlement* being adjourned until *Friday*; after that Monsieur *Hugh Bryan*, in the White Chamber, acquainted [7] the Prelates, Duke, Earls, Barons, and Banerets, (*les Prelates, Duc, Countes, Barones, and Banerets*) That the Prince, who had the Principality of *Guyen* by the Grant of the King, had often signified to him, when there, by Letters and Messengers, That the Revenues and Profits arising from the Principality did not, nor could suffice to maintain him, and support the Government, and Wars against their French Enemies, and other necessary Charges, without great assistance from the King; and that the Prince having made these things appear to the King and Council when first he came into *England*, had surrendered [8] into the King's Hands the Principality, and all he could claim there by virtue of his Grant, in the presence of the King's Council, and some other Great Men.

On the next day, being [9] Saturday, Sir Hugh Bryan, before the Prince, Prelates, Dukes, Earls, Barons, and Commons, in the White Chamber, more especially declared the Causes of Summons, That the King, by Advice of the Great Men, (*des Grantz*) had ordered many Great Men, (*plusours des Grantz*) with sufficient Power, some into *Gascoigne*, others to *Calais*, to oppose the Malice of his Enemies, and make War upon them by all the ways they could; That afterwards, for sudden News that came to the King, he made ready with all his Power to put to Sea, or go to Sea, (*ove tout son poir daler sur la Meer*) against his Enemies,

[7] *Braynard* as above.

King Edward resolved to go into *France* with an Army.

[8] *Ibm.* He summons the Noble and Military Men, to pass with himself and Prince of *Wales*.

[9] *Rot. Clause* 46 Ed. III.

M. 12. *Durf.* A. D. 1372. Prayers made for success.

[1] *Braynard* as above.

The Voyage unhappy by reason of contrary Winds.

[2] *Ib. c.* 306. *Poitou*, *Xantogne*, and *Rocheleis* lost.

[3] *Par.* 46 Ed. III. Part. 2. M. 25.

*Richard*, Son to the Prince of *Wales*, made Guardian and Lieutenant of *England* in his absence.

[4] *Clause* 46 Ed. III. M. 11. *Durf.* Summons of *Parlement*.

[5] *Ib.* M. 10. *Durf.* Which Prorogued by Writ.

[6] *Rot. Parl.* 46 Ed. III. n. 1, 2, 3.

Further Declaration of Summons.

[7] *Ib.* n. 7. The Revenues of *Guyen* not sufficient to support the Government of it, &c.

[8] *Ib.* n. 8. The Prince resigns it into the King's Hands.

[9] *Ib.* n. 9. Yet a further Declaration of Summons.



The French  
make them-  
selves stronger  
by Sea and  
Land, then  
ever they had  
done before.

[1] *Ibm.*

[2] *Ib. n. 10.*  
These Com-  
mons were the  
Knights of  
Shires.

A Subsidy  
upon Wooll,  
&c.

[4] *Ibm.*  
A Fifteenth  
granted.

[5] *Ib. n. 11.*

[6] *Ib. n. 12.*

[7] *Ib. n. 13.*

[8] *Ib. n. 14.*

[9] *Ib. n. 15.*  
The Grant of  
the Citizens  
and Burgesses.

to do what he could against them, but by reason of the Wind being contrary, and other Causes reasonable, (*par contrariousete de vent, & autres causes raisonnables*) he came back into England, and caused to be summoned and prorogued this Parlement, that the Great Men who were with him upon the Sea might be there, that by the good Advice and Counsel of them and others, and also of the Commons, (*& auxi une la Coe*) he might do the best he could for the safety of the Nation, and to resist and oppose the Malice of his Enemies, who had made themselves much stronger by Land and Sea then ever they were before, (*qui plus safforcent de guerier si bien par terre par Meer, que unques fesoient a devant.*)

And then [1] beseecheth the Prelates, Prince, Dukes, Earls, Barons, and Commons, on behalf of the King, (*& supplia as ditz Prelates, Prince, Ducs, Countes, Barons, & as Coes de par le Roi*) that they would advise upon this Matter, and give such Counsel (*& donner tiel conseil*) and Ayd to the King, as seemed to them best profitable for the Nation, and to restrain the Malice of his Enemies.

Quenx [2] Prelates, Prince, Ducs, Counts, Barons & Coes en sur les pointes de lour charge, & as dependantz dycelles plein deliberation, &c. which Prelates, Prince, Dukes, Earls, Barons, and Commons, having had full Deliberation upon the Points of their Charge, and the Dependences thereon, and also considering the great and outrageous Charges and Expence the King was to be at for the Defence of the Nation, and Maintaining the War against his Enemies, granted him the Subsidy of Wooll, Leather, and Woollfells, for Two years, to begin at Michaelmas last past, of every Sack of Wooll which passed out of England 43 s. 4 d. of every Twelvescore Woollfells as much, of every Last of Leather 4 l. of Denizens, besides the old Custom, and of Strangers or Forreigners four Marks of every Sack of Wooll, as much of every Twelvescore Woollfells, and Five Pounds six shillings eight pence of every Last of Leather.

And whereas [4] the Subsidy and Custom so granted could not be sufficient for the great Expence and Charge the King was to be at for the Causes abovesaid, as it was openly shewed unto them, the same Prelates, Prince, Dukes, Earls, Barons, and Commons, having regard thereto, [5] granted One Fifteenth for one year to be levied as the last was.

On the 23d of [6] November the King, Prelates, Duke, Earls, Barons, and Commons, assembled in the White Chamber, when the Chancellor declared to the King how kind the Lords and Commons had been to him, in granting him the Subsidy and Fifteenth, who much Thanked them for their great Ayd; and and then the [7] Petitions of the Commons were read and answered, when the Knights of Shires had leave to depart, [8] and sue out Writs for their Wages or Expences, (*pour lour depenses*;) but the Citizens and Burgesses were commanded to stay, [9] who the same day assembled before the Prince, Prelates, and Great Men, and for the safe conveying of their Ships and Goods granted 2 s. upon every Tun of Wine coming in, or passing out of the Kingdom, and 6 d. in the Pound of all Goods for a year.

The



A ' The next Year the King [1] made his Son John King of Castile and Leon, and Duke of Lancaster, his Lieutenant, as well  
 ' in the Kingdom of France as in Aquitan (*tant en nostre Roialme*  
 ' *de France come in Aquitaine*) and other where, giving him  
 ' Power to take and receive in his Name, and by his Authority,  
 ' to his Peace, Grace, Obedience, and Subjection, all the Cities,  
 ' Towns, Burghs, Castles, Fortresses, and Places in those Parts, and  
 ' their Inhabitants, that would come and return into his Peace,  
 ' Grace, &c. and to remit and pardon all manner of evil Practices  
 ' (*toutes maneres de Malefices*) Trespasses, Excess, Theft,  
 ' Homicide, and all manner of Treasons: To re-call all Banished  
 ' and Exiled Persons, and to re-establish and render to them all  
 ' their Goods they had forfeited, and to restore them entirely to  
 ' their Countries, with all their ancient Privileges they were used  
 ' to enjoy. To give to those that deserved well in his Wars Towns,  
 ' Castles, Fortresses, Lands, and Rents, &c. in Heritage, during their  
 ' Lives, or for Years, according to their Deserts. To raise Forces,  
 ' Taxes, Subsidies, and Aids for the Wars; to collect and to  
 ' levy them. To shorten this full, long, and extraordinary  
 ' Grant and Commission, he had Power to do whatever he could  
 ' do himself, if present. It was Dated at Westminster June 12.  
 ' 1373. and 47th of his Reign of England, &c.

C The Duke of Lancaster having this Power, [2] Prayers having  
 been made for his good Success, [3] arrived with an Army at Calais  
 on the 20th of July, which he divided into three Bodies or  
 Battels, marched through, and pillaged Artois, Picardy, Champagne,  
 Fores, Avergne, and Limosin; and so into Guyen and to  
 Burdeaux, where he came about Christmas with a shattered and  
 unserviceable Army, having [4] lost many Men, and most  
 of his Horses, for want of Rest, Victuals, and Forage, without  
 any Battel or considerable Engagement.

D Mezeray [5] reports it to have been the constant Resolution  
 of this King of France, not to hazard any main Battel against  
 the English; but directed his Forces should be so lodged every  
 Night, as next Morning to follow them, always galling and disturbing  
 them, falling upon their Parties, and Detachments keeping  
 so near them, as to prevent their being supplied with Provision  
 and Forage, and by that means to defeat great Armies by  
 little and little, and make them unserviceable; which was the  
 present case: The Duke of Lancaster, though he marched Triumphantly  
 in the beginning, yet toward the latter end of his  
 March, being constantly followed and attended by the Dukes of  
 Anjou and Burgundy, and Constable of France, his Army was  
 baffled without Fighting, and mightily weakened.

F While the Duke of Lancaster marched thus through France  
 from Calais to Burdeaux, his Father Summoned a Parlement to  
 meet on the morrow of St. Edmund the King, or 21st of November,  
 which was that Year on Monday: In the Writs of [6] Summons  
 to the Sheriffs, were these unusual Clauses, being enjoined  
 to cause to be Chosen Two Dubbed Knights, or the most Worthy,  
 Honest, and Discreet Esquires of the County, and the most  
 expert in Feats of Arms, and no others; ([7] *Quod de Comitatu*  
*tuo Eligi facias duos Milites Gladiis cinctos, seu Armigeros de dicto*  
*Comitatu Digniores, & Probiores, & in actibus Armorum Magis*  
*Expertos*)

[1] Rot. Fran.  
47 Ed. III. M.  
18. A.D. 1373.  
Ibm Duke of  
Lancaster the  
King's Lieutenant  
in France  
and Aquitan.

The great  
Power given  
unto him.

[2] Claus. 57  
Ed. III. M. 25.  
Dors.  
[3] Mezeray,  
t. 393. Froiss.  
c. 310, 311.

His ill Conduct.  
[4] Walf. f. 187.  
lin. 16.

[5] F. 393.  
The King of  
France his Policy

in marching  
his Army.

Summons to  
Parlement.  
[6] Rot. Claus.  
42 Ed. III. M.  
13. Dors.  
A. D. 1373.

[7] Ibm.  
What Knights,  
Esquires, Citizens,  
and Burgesses  
were to  
be chosen.



*pertos & Discretos, & non alterius Conditionis :* ) And of every City of that County Two Citizens, and of every Burgh Two Burgeses (*de Discretioribus & magis Sufficientibus, qui in Navigio, ac in Exercitio Merchandisarum noticiam habent meliorem*) of the most Discreet and Sufficient, who had the greatest Skill in Shipping and Merchandizing.

The King, Prince, Prelates, Earls, Barons, Great Men, and Commons, being assembled in the Painted Chamber (*le Roi, Prince, Prelatz, Countes, Barons, Grantz, & Communes en la Chambre de Peinte assemblez*) Sir John Knivet then Chancellor, declared the cause of Summons, [8] telling the Lords and Commons they knew well, That after the Peace between the King and his Adversaries of France, apparently broken by them, the King had many times sent great Numbers of Men at Arms, and others, over Sea to recover his Rights, and to restrain the Malice of his Enemies; and lately had sent his Son the King of Castile and Leon, and Duke of Lancaster, with many great Men, and others in great Number, to oppose the Malice of his Adversaries, \* who by their Good and Noble Conduct (*queux par my leur bon & noble Government*) and Feats of Arms, have done great Damages and Destructions to his Enemies, as they knew well, to the great Honour, Quiet, and Tranquillity of the King, the Clergy, and all others of the Kingdom: That the Sum granted last Parlement to the King in Aid of his Wars, tho' great and heavy upon the People, yet the King expended a great Sum of his own more than that. Further, [9] That the Great Men and others, who ventured their Lives and Fortunes for, and to defend them from their Enemies, ought to be well refreshed and comforted with Force and Aid many ways (*busoignent bien de estre refreschez & confortez de Force & de Aide par plusieurs vies*) and that as speedily as might be, as it was well known to many of them who had been in the same Condition. That also the Enemy of France made himself as strong as he could, not only by his own People and Allies, but by Strangers of divers Countries, and by all the ways he could, both by Land and Sea.

Wherefore (he said) the King beseeched and charged them ( [1] *par quoi nostre Seigneur le Roi, vous supplie & charge* ) That considering the Perils and Damages might happen to the Kingdom and all the People for these Causes, they would consult upon the matter, and give the King such Advice, as might be for the Safety of him, the Kingdom, and themselves.

And further said, [2] That the Business requiring speedy dispatch, the King would that all manner of Petitions, and other particular Business might remain in suspense, until this had a good Issue: (*Le Roi voet que toutes manere de Petitions, & autres singuliers Busoignes de moergent en suspens tanque cette soit mys a bon fin.*) And then commanding the Commons (*& commanda as Communes*) to consider and give good Counsel and Advice upon the Points above-said, told them they might depart for that Day, and come thither again on the morrow.

At which time [3] some of the Commons, in Name of the rest, went to the Lords, and prayed they might have some Bishops, Earls, and Barons, with whom they might treat and confer, for the better Issue of the Matter was enjoined them (*sur la matiere que*

[8] Rot. Parl.  
47 Ed. III. n. 2.  
The cause of  
Summons de-  
clared.  
The Peace  
broken by the  
French.

\* This must  
be in the be-  
ginning of  
their March,  
and before the  
Armies of  
France atten-  
ded their mo-  
tion, and hin-  
dred their  
glorious and  
easie Progress.  
[9] Ibid. n. 3.

The Enemy  
of France  
makes him-  
self strong,  
&c.

[1] Ibid. n. 4.

[2] Ibid.  
The King  
willeth, That  
all Petitions  
and particular  
Business re-  
main in sus-  
pence, until  
his was dis-  
patched.

[3] Ibid. n. 5.  
The Com-  
mons desire a  
Committee of  
Lords to treat  
with them.

A

B

C

D

E

F



que leur estoient enjoynt) and desired the Bishops of London, Winchester, and Bath and Wells, the Earls of Arundel, March, and Salisbury, Monsieur Guy Bryan, and Monsieur Henry le Scrop. And it was agreed they should go to the Commons, and Treat with them in the Chamberlain's Chamber. And there having been Deliberation between the Great Men and Commons, until Tuesday the Eve of St. Andrew, on which Day the King, Prince, Prelates, Great Men, and Commons, being in the White Chamber, the Commons Granted (*les Communes granteront*) the King an Aid for the Wars against his Enemies, and delivered a Schedule thereof to the King, which was read, and begins thus: (*Les Seigneurs & Communes D'engleterre ont Grante a nostre Seigneur le Roi en ceste present Parlement la Quinzaine, &c.*) The Lords and Commons of England have Granted to the King in this present Parlement a Fifteenth, &c. The effect of the Grant was, Two 15ths to be levied in two Years, according to the ancient manner; to be paid at the Feasts of the Purification and Pentecost: If the War ended the first Year, the Second 15th not be paid. Also Six pence upon every Pound value of Merchandise going out of the Kingdom, except upon Woolls, Leather, and Woollfells, Wine, &c. And of every Ton of Wine Two shillings for two Years, upon the same Condition. Likewise the Subsidy of Wooll to be received after Michaelmas next coming, without Condition for the first Year, and under the same Condition for the second. These were granted so as no other Charge or Imposition might be upon the People of England for those two Years. The Commons prayed what was granted might be spent in maintaining the War; and that no Knights of Shires or Esquires, Citizens or Burgeesses returned for this Parlement might be Collectors of this Tax.

All things now went backward in France; nothing from thence but the loss of Towns and small Countries in Aquitan, either by Force or Revolt, many voluntarily and by Inclination becoming French, and putting themselves under the Obedience of that King. The Particulars might swell the History; but the knowledge of them at present is not of much moment. \* Walsingham says, That when the Duke of Lancaster came out of Gascony into England, in the 48th of Edward III. about the Month of July, all Aquitan revolted from the King of England except Bourdeaux and Bayon.

The Pope in this Posture of Affairs was very solicitous to procure a Peace between the Two Nations, and used all Endeavours towards it, and oftentimes prayed and required both Kings by his Letters, solemn Messengers, and lastly by his Nuncio's, the Arch-Bishop of Ravenna and Bishop of Carpentras, who frequently went backward and forward between both Parties, to make them inclinable and condescend to a good Peace and Accord between each other, as may be seen in the [4] Record of the following Truce, both in the Preface of the Commission to John King of Castile and Leon, Duke of Lancaster, by Edward III. and in the Commission of King Charles of France to his Brother Philip Duke of Burgundy: (*Savoir faisons que come nostre tresseint Pierele Pape, eit plusieurs foitz nous prie & requis par ses Lettres & fait prier & requirer, par ses solennes Messagers, & Darreinement par Reverentz Piers in Dieu l'Ercevesque de Ravenna, & l'Evesque de Carpentras, de incliner & conde-*

The Grant of  
a Tax.

The French  
Towns and  
Countries in  
Aquitan re-  
volt.

\* Fol. 83. lin.  
7.

The Pope me-  
diates a Peace.

[4] Rot. Fran.  
49 Ed. III. N.  
2.



*condescendre a bon Paix & Accord ouesque nostre Adversair* (so in both Commissions) &c. The Commission to the Duke of Burgundy, bears Date at Paris the first of March, 1374. and 11th of King Charles of France, and 48th of Edward III. and that to the Duke of Lancaster was Dated at Westminster, June 8. and 49th of Edward III.

[5] *Ibm.*  
A Truce in  
order to a  
Peace.

This [5] Treaty was managed chiefly by the Two Dukes before the Two Nuncio's, and by their Mediation at Bruges in Flanders, which produced a General Truce, in order to a Peace between the Two Kings, their Subjects, Friends, Allies, Aidants, and Adherents, and for all their Dominions, Lands, Countries, and Places whatsoever, [6] to begin on the 27th of June, 1375. the Day of the Date of the Truce in 49th of Edward III. and end the first Day of July, 1376. and 50th of Edward III. The Heads of the Articles were these :

[6] *Ibm.*  
A. D. 1375.

[7] *Ibm.*  
The Heads of  
the Articles.

*All taking of Persons, Fortresses, and other Places ; [7] all Pillaging, Robberies, Burnings, and all other Feats of War* (touz Pilleries, Robberies, Arceurs, & tout autre fait de Guerre) *through all the Realms, Lands, and Dominions of one Party and the other, to cease during the Truce.*

*Neither Party to suffer any Subjects or Allies of the other, to change their Obedience, Subjection, or Alliance.*

*All Subjects of either Party to remain in the Countries of the other without Arms, and to Trade and dispatch all other Business there without Disturbance ; but not to enter into Castles, Fortresses, or fortified Towns without Licence.*

*Prisoners taken to be released.*

*No New Forts to be erected.*

*None of the Subjects or Allies of one Party to do Injury to the Subjects or Allies of the other, or their Friends, by way of Company, Robberie, or otherwise ; if they did, to be punished so soon as it came to the knowledge of their Lords, without Request.*

*All Attempts and Injuries to be repaired without delay.*

*If the Lands of either Party were invaded by Companions, upon Request they were to assist each other in freeing their Countries of them.*

*None to demolish the Houses of one Party or the other, nor destroy Fruit-Trees.*

*If any evil Action, Attempt, or Enterprize happen, it shall not be a Breach of the Truce, nor shall War be made therefore. This Truce was Sealed by the Two Dukes and Pope's Nuncio's at Bruges, on the 27th of June, 1375.*

[8] *Ibm.*

There were certain [8] Mutations, Declarations, and Modifications made, by way of Supplement, in reference to this Truce, by the Pope's Nuncio's of the same Date ; namely,

*That Henry King of Castile (the Bastard) and the Lands he held, should be comprized in the Truce.*

*That the Duke of Bretagne should in like manner be comprized in it : That War should cease there, and the King of England and Duke to remove their Forces out of the Dukedom without delay during the Truce, all but 200 Men to guard the Towns and Places the Duke held there.*



The Two Kings to have [9] Commissioners at Bruges on the 15th of September next coming, to Treat of Peace. The residue of the Articles are of less moment.

[9] *Ibm.*

These were confirmed by John King of Castile and Leon, Duke of Lancaster, with Protestation, That the Title of King of France, given to King Charles, Adversary to his Father, nor the Title of King of Castile, given to Henry his Adversary, might in no manner prejudice either of them or their Titles.

A

In Winter, the 48th of Edward III. the [1] Earl of Cambridge and Duke of Bretagne were made the King's Lieutenants in France; but went not till the next [2] Spring, for whose good Success Publick Prayers were appointed to be made. In this Expedition [3] there went with the Earl and Duke several Noblemen and Persons of Quality, and in a short time he recovered many of his Towns in Bretagne; and had laid siege to the Town of Campelly, when Sir Nicholas Carswell and Sir Walter Urswick, were sent to him by the Duke of Lancaster, to quit the Siege, and give over that War, as being included in the Truce made at Bruges.

[1] *Rot. Fran.*  
48 Ed. III. M. 6.

[2] *Claus.* 49  
Ed. III. M. 46.

[3] *Freyf. cap.*  
313.

B

On the 28th of December next following the Truce, [4] Writs of Summons were sent forth for a Parlement, to meet on the 12th of February: Afterwards, before it met, by Writs Dated [5] the 20th of January, the King thought fit to Prorogue it (*duximus prorogandum*) to the Monday after the Feast of St. George; but it fate not till the next Day, when the Prelates, Dukes, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men, and Commons, Justices, Serjeants of the Law, and others assembled in the Painted Chamber before the King; [6] (*A quel Lendemain s'assemblerent les Prelates, Ducs, Contes, Barons, & les autres Grantz, & Communes, Justices, Sergeantz de Ley, & autres, en la Chambre de Peynte:*) And there Sir John Knivet declared the Causes of holding the Parlement; which were three:

[4] *Claus.* 49  
Ed. III. M. 6.  
*Dors.*

Summons to  
Parlement.

[5] *Ibm.* M. 4.  
*Dors.*

[6] *Rot. Parl.*  
50 Ed. III. n. 2.

C

D

1. The First and Principal was, To advise about the Good Government and Peace of the Realm of England.

2. The Second, For the Defence and Safety of the Kingdom, as well by Sea as Land.

3. The Third, To take Order for the Maintenance of the War with France, and elsewhere, and how and in what manner it might be done, for the best Profit, quickest Dispatch, and greatest Honour of the King and Kingdom.

The cause of  
Summons.

E

And then told them expressly, That what the King always had done, was by their good Counsel, Comfort, and Assistance (*tout dys par leur bons Conseilx, Confortes, & Aides*) for which the King entirely thanked them, and desired they would diligently advise about these Matters, the Prelates and Lords by themselves, and the Commons by their selves, and give their Good Answer (*leur bone Responce*) as soon as they well could.

The Lords  
advise by  
themselves,  
and the Com-  
mons by  
themselves.

[7] *Ibm.* n. 3.  
A Committee  
of Lords as-  
signed by Par-  
lement to go  
to the Com-  
mons, &c.

F

The Commons [7] went to their ancient Place, the Chapter-House of the Abbey of Westminster, and the Prelates and Lords went by themselves; and there were assigned in Parlement (*fuerent assignez in Parlement*) the Bishops of London, Norwich, Carlisle, and

St. Da-



They agree  
about the  
Grant of a  
Subsidy.

[8] Ib. n. 9.

Of Wooll,  
&c.

[9] Ib. n. 10.

The Com-  
mons pray  
Ten or twelve  
Persons may  
be added to  
the King's  
Council, &c.

[1] Ibid.  
The King  
grants their  
Prayer upon  
Condition.

[2] Ib. n. 11.  
The King's  
Officers not  
to receive  
Gifts, &c.

[3] Ib. n. 15.  
The Com-  
mons ready to  
ayd the King  
with Body  
and Goods.  
Complain of  
Evil Counsell-  
ors and Of-  
ficers.

St. Davids, the Earls of March, Warwick, Stafford, and Suffolk, the Lord Percy, Sir Guy de Bryan, Sir Henry Lescrop, and Sir Richard de Stafford, to go to the Commons and assist them, in Treating, and Conferring upon the things before declared: They agreed upon the Grant of a Subsidy, which begins as followeth:

*Les Seigneurs & Coes* [8] *assemblez en cest present Parlement eantz consideration.*) The Lords and Commons assembled in Parlement, having Consideration of the very great Charges and Expences the King hath, and must be at, for the maintaining of his Wars, his Noble Estate, and otherwise, granted him the Subsidy of Wooll, Leather, and Woollfells, as it was granted him in the Parlement holden at Westminster in the 47th of his Reign, from the Feast of St. Michael next coming, when the Subsidy then granted ended, to the end of three years; and the Commons humbly pray the King to be excused, That they gave him no other Subsidy or Ayd for his Wars, for that they were brought so low, and so disabled by the Pestilence, the Murrain among their Beasts, and destruction of their Grain and other Fruits, that they could not do otherwise at present, but promised if any extraordinary Case should happen, they would Ayd him to the utmost of their Power, as they had done before, beyond all the Commons of the World to their Liege Lord.

After this the Commons considering [9] the Mischiefs of the Land, do shew unto the King and Lords of Parlement, That it would be for the Honour and Profit of the King, and the whole Land, which is grieved in divers manners by many Adversities, as well by the Wars of France, Spain, Ireland, Guyen, Britain, and other-where, so that the Officers about the King, without other assistance, were not sufficient for so great Business; wherefore they pray the King's Council may be enforced or augmented with Lords, Prelates, and others, to the number of Ten or Twelve, who should be continually with the King, so as no great business should pass, without their Assent and Advice, nor small Matters without the Advice and Assent of Six or Four of them at least, as the Case required.

The which Request the King understanding [1] it was honourable, and very profitable to him and the whole Realm, granted, provided always that the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Privy Seal, and all other the King's Officers, might execute their Offices, without the presence of any the said Counsellors; which the King was to assign from time to time of such as he pleased, who were to be Sworn to keep this Ordinance, and to do Right to every one, according to their Power, without receiving any Reward for so doing.

That none of [2] the King's Officers should receive any Gifts, Fees, or Rewards, other then their Salaries, Liveries, and Travelling Charges.

The Commons make Protestation, [3] That they were, and always have been, and will be ready to Ayd the King with their Bodies and Goods, to the utmost of their Power; but they say, 'tis true, That if the King had always had about him Loyal Counsellors and good Officers, he had been very rich in Treasure, so as he should not have needed much to have charged his Subjects with

A

B

C

D

E

F



with *Subsidy*, *Taillage*, or otherways, having respect to the great Sums of Gold which were brought into the Kingdom for the Ransom of the *Kings of France and Scotland*, and other Prisoners. They also say, it further seems to them, That for the singlar Profit and Advantage of some Private Persons about the King, and their Confederates, the King and Realm were much impoverished, and many of the Merchants undone; wherefore they thought it a profitable thing to the King and his whole Kingdom, to have all these things duely amended as soon as might be. And the same *Commons* promise the King, That if he will do Justice, and speedy Execution upon such as should be found Culpable, and do with them as Law and Reason required, they undertake he would be so rich as to maintain his Wars, and support his other Affairs for a long time, without any great Charge to the Commons; and they say further, That in doing this, he should do a thing Meritorious and pleasing to God, and much for the In-  
 A  
 B  
 C  
 D  
 E  
 F

Three special  
Points to be  
amended.

[4] *Ib.* n. 16.

First, *Whereas* [4] the Staple of Wooll and other Staple Merchandises and Bullion, was lately ordained in Parlement to be at Calais, and no where else, for the great profit of the King and Kingdom, the Advantage and Amendment of the Town, for the Concourse of Merchants, and their continual Residence there, the said Staple, Bullion and Trade is removed from thence, and like to be lost, by the procurement and counsel of the said Private Persons about the King, and their Confederates, for their singlar Profit, to the great damage and prejudice of the King and his Realm, and destruction of the Town of Calais.

[5] *Ibm.*

Secondly, *Whereas* [5] the King had need for divers Sums of Money for his Wars and otherwise, some Persons by consent and contrivance of the said Private Persons about him, made agreement for divers Sums to the use of the King upon Usury, taking more from the King for Interest then they Bargained for, to the Deceit and grievous Damage of the King.

[6] *Ibm.*

Thirdly, *Whereas* [6] the King was Debtor to divers People upon Record in great Sums several had by Assent and Contrivance of the said Private Persons, bargained with his Creditors for the 10th, 20th, or 100th Penny, and procured the King to pay the whole Debt, in Deceit of the King, and his Creditors, for the singlar Profit of themselves and Confederates.

[7] *Ib.* n. 17.  
Richard Lyon  
impeached by  
the Commons.

Upon these, or some of these Points, [7] several were impeached by the Commons; First, Richard Lyon Merchant of London, and Farmer of the King's Subsidy and Customs: He put himself upon the King's Grace, and submitted his Body, Lands, and Goods to the King's Pleasure: [8] He was adjudged to be Imprisoned during the King's Pleasure, to loose the Franchise of the City, never to bear Office under the King, nor approach his Council or Court. All his Goods and Chattels were seised into the King's Hands, and Inquiry was made in all the Ports concerning his Extortions, since his being Farmer of the Customs.

[8] *Ib.* n. 19.  
His Judgment.

The Lord Latimer was [9] accused (*par clamour des Communes*) by the Clamour of the Commons, upon the Heads and Articles, and as a Confederate with Lyon, who tho he seemed to make a

[9] *Ib.* n. 21.  
The Lord Latimer accused.



[1] Ib. n. 28. His Judg- ment.	good <i>satisfactory</i> Defence, yet by the Prelates and Lords (in <i>plein Parlement</i> ) in full Parlement, was adjudged [1] to be Imprisoned, and make Fine and Ransom at the Will of the King; and further, upon the <i>Petition</i> of the <i>Commons</i> , the King granted he should never have Office under him, or be of his Privy Council: He was [2] <i>Bailed</i> by Four Bishops, the Arch-Bishop of York being one, Three Earls, the Prior of St. John of Jerusalem, and Twenty six Barons, with promise, That during the Parlement he should appear before the King and Lords, to answer further to the <i>Articles</i> , of which he was accused.	A
[2] Ib. n. 29. His great Bail.	<i>William Ellys</i> [3] of Great Tarmouth, was also accused ( <i>par la surmyse des Communes</i> ) by the Surmise of the <i>Commons</i> , as Deputy to Richard Lyon, Farmer of the Subsidy of 6 d. in the Pound of all Merchandises granted to the King; of many Extorsions in Collecting of them, and other Evil Practices: [4] Notwithstanding his Answer, which seemed <i>satisfactory</i> and sufficient, he was awarded to Prison, and to make Fine and Ransom at the King's Will, and to give his Prosecutors several Sums for Injuries pretended to be done to them.	B
[3] Ib. n. 31. <i>William Ellys</i> accused.	It displeased the King [5] that Women should pursue and sollicite Business in the King's Court, and therefore forbad all Women, especially <i>Alice Perers</i> , for the future to do it, upon pain to forfeit whatever the said <i>Alice</i> could, and to be banished the Realm.	C
[4] Ib. n. 32 His Judg- ment.	Sitting this Parlement, the Prince of Wales, King Edward's Eldest Son, died on the 8th of June, being Trinity Sunday: [6] The <i>Commons</i> humbly pray the King, That for the great Comfort of the whole Kingdom ( <i>en grand confort de tout le Roialme</i> ) he would order the Noble Child or Youth, Richard of Burdeaux, Son and Heir of Edward, late his Eldest Son, Prince of Wales, to come into the Parlement, that the Lords and Commons might see and Honour him as the true Heir apparent of the Realm; Which Request was granted; and at the same time the Bishops, Lords Temporal, and Commons, applied to the King, to make him Prince of Wales; Which was done.	D
The Death of the Prince of Wales.	The <i>Commons</i> Pétition, [7] That Justices of the Peace may be named in every County by the Lords and Knights of the County in Parlement, and Sworn before the King's Council, and not to be removed without consent in Parlement, and that they might be allowed Wages.	E
[6] Ib. n. 50.  His Son Ri- chard of Bur- deaux brought into Parle- ment, and made Prince of Wales, &c.	The King's Answer was, [8] They should be named by him, and his continual Council, and as to Wages he would advise.	F
[7] Ib. n. 57. The Com- mons Pétition about Justices of the Peace.	The Major, Aldermen, and Commons of London, shew unto the King, [9] they were impoverished and brought to nothing by reason their Franchises granted and confirmed by him and his Noble Progenitors, were restrained, and in a great measure taken from them, and assign their chief Grievance to be, That any Stranger might have a House and dwell in the City, be a Broker, and buy and sell all sorts of Merchandises by Retail, and Stranger sell to Strangers, that they may again sell the same Goods to others, to the great raising the Price of Merchandises, and making them Dear; Whereas in times past, no Strange Merchant used any of these Practices, against the Franchises of the City, by which the Merchants of the City were much impoverished, the Navy or Shipping much impaired, the Private Transactions of	F
[8] Ib. n. Ra. The King's Answer.		
[9] Ib. n. 143. The Grie- vances of the City of Lon- don.		



of the Nation discovered by those Strangers to his Enemies, by Spies and others lodging in their Houses: And then pray, it would please the King and his good Council, in Charity, to order in that Parlement, that Merchant Strangers should be restrained in these Practices, and that the Major, Aldermen, and Commons of the said City, might enjoy their Franchises, notwithstanding any Statute or Ordinance made to the contrary.

They pray  
Remedy.

- A The King's Answer was, [1] That upon Condition the City might be under good Government, to the Honour of him, and Profit of the Kingdom, from thence forward no Stranger should have a House to be a Broker, nor Sell any Goods by Retail within the City or Suburbs, notwithstanding any Statute or Ordinance to the contrary, saving to the German Merchants of the Hanse-Towns, their Franchises, Granted and Confirmed to them by the King and his Progenitors. According to the Purport, and Effect of this Answer, the Major, Aldermen, and Citizens of London obtained the King's Letters Patents, Dated the 4th of November next following.

[1] Ibm. Ro.  
The King's  
Answer upon  
Condition,  
&c.

- B The Commons Petition the King, That whereas great Riots [2] were committed in several parts of the Nation, by great numbers of Armed Men, that the Sheriffs might raise the *Posse Comitatus*, or Power of the County, to suppress them, and that the Sheriffs and Justices of Peace might inform the King's Council of such Rebels (*de tiels Rebelles*) as refused to go with them.

His Letters  
Patents to the  
same purpose.

- C The Answer was, [3] The King by Advice of his great Council would order Remedy, if need were, but in the mean time let the Statutes concerning that Matter be put in due Execution. This Parlement ended July the 6th, in the 50th of Ed. III.

[2] Ib. n. 164.  
The Com-  
mons Peti-  
tion against  
Riots.

- D Whether the Two Kings sent their Commissioners to Bruges on the 15th of September 1375, as was agreed on, or if so, what was done then, I find not, however the Truce continued; for in the next year, in a Commission to Thomas de Felton, Seneschal or Steward of Aquitan, and others, Dated the 28th of May, in the 50th of Edward the Third, for Reforming whatever had been done against the Form of the Truce in that Dutchy, and punishing the Offenders, it appears, that the Truce had then been lately renewed and prolonged from the last day of June next coming, when it was to have ended, to the first of April, which should be in the year 1377, or 51st of Edward the Third. Holinshed says, it was again continued to the first of May, and then the War opened.

[3] Ibm. Ro.  
The King's  
Answer.

The last Truce  
continued.

- E But the King many months before the Expiration of the Truce, had notice of a Design forming against him by the King of France, having made an Alliance with Spain and Scotland to that purpose, wherefore on the first of December, in the 50th of his Reign, he issued [4] Writs for a Parlement to meet on the Quinden of St. Hillary, or 27th of January next coming, at Westminster, which was held by Commission to the Prince of Wales, then about 10 years of Age, the Bishop of St. Davids being Chancellor.

Fol 411. col. 1.  
n. 60.

The King of  
France design-  
ing against  
King Edward.

- F Who [5] in his Declaration of the Causes of Summons, moved the Lords and Commons to a due Love, Affection, and Obedience, toward the King and his Grandchild the Prince of Wales, and then tells the chief Cause of Summons was for the Defence of the Land, for that the King having at the Request of the Pope agreed

[4] Clause  
50 Ed. III.  
M 6. Dof.  
Part 2.  
H: calls a  
Parlement.  
[5] Rot. Parl.  
51 Ed. III.  
n. 11, 12, 13.  
The Declara-  
tion of the  
Causes of  
Summons.



agreed to a *Treaty* of Peace, and that there was a *Truce* made for a time, while a *Peace* might be made, which *Truce* his Adversary of *France* had broken, and was preparing for War, and by the assistance of *Spain*, *Scotland*, and other *Enemies*, to destroy the *King*, *Kingdom*, and *English Language*; To obviate this Design, and the *Malice* of his *Enemies*, and to Maintain the *Peace* of the Nation within and without, by their Counsel and Advice, was his great Intention, as also to know how the Expence of the War should be provided for; and for that it was not fit for a *Bishop* to say any thing against the *Pope*, Monsieur Robert de *Ashton*, Chamberlain to the King, was appointed to propound how further Provision might be made against his *Usurpations*, as should by a Bill be shewed in this Parlement.

[6] Ib. n. 18.

A Committee of Lords appointed by Parlement to Treat with the Commons.

[7] Ib. n. 19.

A Tax granted.

[8] Ib. n. 20.  
Treasurers for the Tax.

[9] Ib. n. 21.  
Who were laid aside, and the High Treasurer made Receiver.

[1] Ib. n. 32.  
The Commons Petition,

At another [6] meeting of the *Prelates*, *Lords*, and *Commons* in Parlement, the *Commons* in the *King's* Name were directed to go to their Old Place the *Chapter House* of the Abby of *Westminster*, there to treat and advise how due *Resistance* might be made to the *Enemies* of the Nation, for the safety of the *King*, *Kingdom*, *Navy*, and themselves, and how Money might be most speedily raised to the least Grievance of the People; The *Prelates* and *Lords* Treating likewise about the same Matters, there was assigned in Parlement, to have Conference with the Commons for their better Information, the *Bishops* of *Lincoln*, *Chichester*, *Hereford*, and *Salisbury*, the *Earls* of *Arundel*, *Warwick*, *Salisbury*, and *Stafford*, the *Lords* *Percy*, *Roos*, *Fitzwalter*, and *Basset*.

To Maintain his [7] Wars, considering the great Charges the King was to be at for them, the defence of the Kingdom and otherwise, the *Lords* and *Commons* Grant him Four pence of the Goods of every Person (*des biens de chescune persone*) of the Kingdom, Male and Female, above Fourteen years of Age, except very Beggars; and most humbly pray their Liege Lord, he would please to excuse them, that they could grant him no greater Subsidy, being most willing to have done it, but that they were so impoverished of late by great Losses at Sea, as otherwise, (*pur grands perdes sur la meer come autrement*) that they were unable at present.

And the *Commons* [8] prayed the King, he would please to Name Two *Earls*, and Two *Barons*, that should be *Treasurers* as well of this Subsidy, as of that the *Clergie* was yet to grant, and also of the Subsidy of *Wooll*, *Pelts*, and *Leather* granted the last Parlement, and that they might be Sworn in their presence, That what was Received by them, should wholly be expended upon the Wars, and not otherwise; and that the High *Treasurer* of *England* should receive nothing, or any ways meddle herein.

But afterwards, when they had [9] considered what Sum, the *Wages* of such Four *Treasurers*, would amount unto by the year, (*quel somme les Gaiges des siex quatre Tresoiriers, resident sur celle fait amonteroit per an*) the *Commons* departed from this Request, and prayed the High *Treasurer* might be Receiver to the use of the War in manner accustomed.

The [1] *Commons* in this Parlement beseeched the King, That the *Patent* lately granted (*viz. November the 4th, as above*) by the great Council, to the *Major*, *Aldermen*, and *Commons* of the City

A

B

C

D

E

F



City of London, upon the Article, That no Strange Merchant ought to Sell to another Strange Merchant, any Goods or Merchandise, to Sell again, in manner as in the said Patent is more fully contained, might be renewed, and granted as well to other Cities and Burghs as to them, with a Charter or Clause of Confirmation; Of which Patent the Copy follows:

That the Patent granted to London, might be granted to other Cities and Burghs.

A Edward [3] King of England, &c. To whom these present Letters shall come, Greeting: Our Beloved and Faithful the Major, Aldermen, and the rest of the Citizens of the City of London, by their Petition exhibited before us and our Great Council, containing amongst other things, That for that all Strangers do freely sell all sorts of Merchandise whatsoever, within the Liberty of the said City, that they may be sold again as the Citizens do; whereas the said Strangers, according to the Liberty of the said City anciently obtained, ought not, nor could so do: Whereby as well the said Citizens are much impoverished, and Goods and Merchandise much more dear, &c. for Relief of the Citizens, and Common Profit of our People, under a grievous Forfeiture to us to command they shall be restrained. We being favourably inclined to the said Petition, Will and Grant, That no Stranger within the Liberty of the City aforesaid, shall sell any Merchandise to a Stranger, or any ways presume to do it, that they may be sold again, until by the Noble and Great Men of our Kingdom (per Proceres & Magnates Regni nostri) it shall be duly debated in our next Parlement, whether our present Grant may for the future redound to the Disprofit, or Common Profit of our People: Saving always to the Lords of our Kingdom, and all others, that they may buy such Merchandise of all Men in Gross for their own Use; and saving also to the German Hanse Merchants the Liberties Granted and Confirmed to them by us and our Progenitors. In Witness whereof we have caused to be made these Letters Patents. Witness our self at Westminster, Novemb. 4. in the Year of our Reign of England 50th, of France 37th.

[3] Ib. Rot. Parl. 51 Ed. III. n. 33. The Patent it self.

D The Answer to the Petition above, with which this Patent was delivered and presented by the Commons, was,

Le Roy [4] voet estre informe: The King will be informed.

[4] Ib. m. Ro. The Answer to the Petition.

E At the same time the [5] Commons, with the Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, Petition the King, That for divers Mischiefs that often happened in the said City, by reason the Coroner was not Justiciable (nest pas justifiable) by the Mayor, Aldermen, or other Officers: That they might chuse a Coroner of themselves, and remove him when they pleased, as it was practised in many Cities and Towns of the Land, they answering to the King in manner as appertained to the said Office. The King's Answer was,

[5] Ib. n. 34. A Petition of the Commons and Citizens of London about their Coroner.

Le Roy [6] my voet, mye depart a son ancien Droit: The King will not depart from his ancient Right.

The King's Answer to it.

F The Commons Petition the [7] King, That for many Causes well known to his Privy Council as to them, That it would be profitable to the Kingdom, that all manner of Foreigners were commanded out of it during the Wars, unless they were Merchants and Artificers which were not Adherents to his Enemies, and such as their stay were advantageous to the Reaalm; and for that he was their Liege Lord (& pur le que voz esterz nostre Seigneur Liege, &c.) and had the Power of doing Justice in Right of his

[6] Ib. m. [7] Ib. m. n. 35. The Commons Petition that Foreigners might be removed out of the Land, &c.



his Crown, in all things Temporal within his Kingdom, and that they have no Obedience of any thing Temporal, but to him as their King and Liege Lord: That he would please to Order and Command, That none of his Lieges be Farmer or Servant to any that have Estates in England, unless to such as inhabit there, or such as were in his Legiance, and had special Leave to live out of the Kingdom: And that he would please to Command his Sage Council, to add more to this matter, that might be needful for the Amendment and Profit of his Kingdom. And they all his said Commons make Protestations before God Himself, and all the Prelates and Clerges which were at that Parlement, That their Intent and Will was, That the True Estate of Holy Church shall not by them be Blemished in any Point, but otherwise preserved and kept safe, according to your Pleasure. The Answer was,

[8] *Ibm. R.*  
The King's  
Answer.

*Le Roy & les* [8] *Grantz de la Terre s'adviserent, & en ordeneront que mien & y soit Affaire:* The King and the Great Men of the Land will Advise, and order what is best to be done.

[9] *Ibm. n. 36.*  
They Petition  
against Provi-  
sors.

And further in this case they Petition, [9] That all Provisors of Benefices from Rome, and that their Officers or Servants may be put out of the King's Protection, if they Sue, Prosecute, or any way Disturb, or cause to be Excommunicated the True Patrons. This was the Answer:

[1] *Ibm.*  
The King's  
Answer.

The Pope hath promised Redress, [1] and if he makes it not, the Laws in this case shall be in force.

[2] *Ibm. n. 75.*  
The Com-  
mons pray the  
Judgment a-  
gainst the  
Lord Latimer  
may be rever-  
sed.

Amongst their Petitions in this Parlement we find the [2] Commons pray the King and Noble Lords of Parlement, That whereas in the last Parlement, by untrue Suggestions, and without due Process, the Lord Latimer, one of the Peers of the Realm, and sufficient to be of the King's Council, as well for his Wars as otherwise, was outed of all Offices, and Privy Council with the King (*estoit oustrez de tontz Offices, & des Privez Conseilx entour le Roy*;) That he may by Award of this present Parlement, be restored to his former Estate and Degree, to the great Profit of the Kingdom.

[3] *Ibm. R.*  
The King  
grants their  
Prayers

The King [3] willeth, at the Prayer of several Prelates and Lords of Parlement (*d'aucuns Prelates & Seigneurs de Parlement*) and also at the Prayer of the Commons.

[4] *Ibm. n. 87.*  
The Speaker  
prays, That  
the judgments  
against all  
such who had  
been impeach-  
ed last Parle-  
ment, might  
be reversed.

In the last Day of the Parlement, when the Petitions of the Commons had been read and answered, the Speaker Sir Thomas [4] Hungerford, said before the Prelates, Lords, and Commons, That whereas many People, as well Men as Women, had been Impeached in the last Parlement without due Process, and were Judged in certain Peynes, and foreclosed of the commune Liberty, which every Loyal Subject ought to enjoy; and therefore prayed it would please his Majesty, to restore them to their former Estates, Dignities, and all other things, notwithstanding those Judgments: The King presently demanded, If their Request was made for all that were impeached? And he answered, Their Request was all. It was then told them, They must declare distinctly in Writing, for whom and why they Petitioned: And presently the same Day Seven Bills (*i. e.* Petitions) were delivered to the Clerk



Clerk of the Parlement, whereof the first Two do here follow:

To our most [5] Dread and Noble Lord our Lord the King pray the Commons of your Realm, That whereas your Liege Rich. Lyon, by hasty Process was adjudged to the Tower of London during your Majesty's Pleasure; That it would please your Gracious Lordship (que ple a vostre Graciously Seigneurie) to Grant him your Favour to be restored to the Law, his Goods, Lands, and Tenements; for according to Law no cause of Forfeiture could be found in him.

[5] Ibm. n. 88. The same Prayer for the impeached Persons in particular.

To their [6] most Dread and Gracious Lord the King and his Sage Council in this present Parlement, his Commons make Supplication (supplient ses Comunes) That whereas Alice Perrers, by untrue Suggestion, and undue Process, was in the last Parlement foreclosed of the Common Liberty, which every Loyal Liege of the King, as well Men as Women, ought freely to enjoy, unless they be convicted of a Crime or evil Deed, for which they are to forfeit it, they would please, for the Love of God and right Justice, to have Consideration, That the said Alice was never present in Parlement, nor otherwise duly admitted to answer any thing for which she was Judged, and for this cause to repeal the Judgment, if any were, and cause her to be restored entirely to her former Estate; the said Judgment, or any Prohibition made against the said Alice in the same Parlement notwithstanding.

[6] Ibm. n. 89.

The other Five Bills or Petitions were according to this Form for five other Persons; namely, John de Leycester, Adam de Bury, Walter Sporer, John Peachy of London, and William Ellys of Yarmouth.

But there was not, nor could be any Answer made to them, [7] because the Parlement ended the same Day before any thing could be done in them.

The Parlement ended. [7] Ibm. n. 95.

Sitting this Parlement, the [8] King was informed the French were gotten to Sea, and had done much hurt upon the Coasts; wherefore he endeavoured to prolong the Truce: To which purpose, on the 20th of [9] Feb. he appointed several Commissioners to Treat with the Commissioners of the King of France, before the Pope's Legates; but nothing was done in the matter; the Legates only propounded a Match between Richard Prince of Wales, and Mary the King of France his Daughter. And afterwards there was another Meeting of Commissioners at Monstreul, without other effect than continuing the Truce until the first of May next following, as was before noted out of Holinsbed.

[8] Clauf. 51 Edw. III. M. 16.

[9] Rot. Fran. 51 Ed. III. M. 7.

The Truce continued.

Mezeray [1] says King Edward was now much desirous of Peace, and was willing to relinquish many Articles of the Treaty of Bretigny; but was prevented by Death.

[1] Fol. 394.

On the 26th of April, another [2] Commission was made to the Bishop of St. Davids, John Bishop of Hereford, and others, by which Power was given them to Treat at Monstreul with the French Commissioners, and to compose all Differences, Wars, and Contentions: But by reason of Jealousie and Suspicion the Commissioners had one of another, they never met.

[2] Rot. Fran. 51 Ed. III. M. 3.

This Year John [3] Wyclif was convented before the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury and Bishop of London, for his Opinions contrary to the Opinions of those Times, at the Black-Friers, London,

[3] Walsf. f. 191. 192. Knighton, col. 2647. n. 10.



How *Wyllyf* behaved himself at this time. See the latter end of Church-Affairs in this Reign.

The Citizens of *London* their Rage against *John Duke of Lancaster*.

[4] *Holinsh. f. 412. n. 30.*

*Hypod. Neustr. f. 53. n. 40.*

King *Edward's* Death.

[5] *Wals. Hist. f. 192. n. 30.*

*Hypod. Neustr. f. 531. n. 50.*

where were present *John Duke of Lancaster* and the *Lord Percy*. The *Duke* gave the *Bishop of London* some harsh words; which gave the *Citizens* such Disturbance, that they in a great Tumult would have murdered him, and pulled down or set fire to his House called the *Savoy*, had not the *Bishop* interposed, and kept them from doing it. To save himself he left his Dinner, and gat privately away to *Kemington* near *Lambeth*, where the *Prince* was with his Mother: So that not finding him, they only in the Streets reversed his Arms, as if he had been a Traitor. For [4] this the present *Major* and *Aldermen* were put out of their Places, and others put in by the *Duke's* Power, who then in the *King's Weakness* and *Infirmities* was his *Assistant* and *Viceroy*, and had Directed all the Affairs of the Nation for some time; of which *Infirmities* and *Sickness* daily encreasing, [5] he Died at his House of *Shene*, *June 21. 1377.* having Reigned 50 Years, 4 Months, and 28 Days.

## Church-Affairs.

THE old Controversie was still continued, *inter Regnum & Sacerdotium*, between the Secular and Ecclesiastic Governments, or between the *King* and *Pope* concerning the *Regalia* in Church Matters, and concerning the Clergy. In the 4th of his Reign, the *King* [1] wrote to the *Pope* (which was *John XXII.*) concerning the Treasury of *York* having been given by Provision to a *Cardinal*, against the Rights of his Crown and Prerogative, and to the inestimable Damage of the Kingdom, that he would revoke his Provision; and supplicates him to direct the *Cardinal* not to contend against *William de Maza* his Clerk, that was in Possession of it by his Presentation, about such a Novelty and Usurpation; it being his, and always had been the Right of his Progenitors, in the Vacancy of the *Arch-Bishoprick*; and to strengthen that Right, vouches a Precedent in the Court of *Kings-Bench*, in the time of his Grandfather *Edward I.*

He also [2] wrote to *Robert de Wodehous* Arch-Deacon of *Richmond*, That he had notice, that he and some others were contriving, by divers Proceffes, to put the *Cardinal* in corporal Possession of the Treasury of *York*, to the great Prejudice of his Crown; and strictly prohibited him, That he should do nothing to the impairing of his Right; and if any thing had been done by himself, or others by his procuring, he should without delay revoke it: And so behave himself in this matter, as he might not have cause grievously to chastise him as a Violator of the Rights of his Royal Dignity. After the same manner Directed his Writs to these under-written:

[1] Append. n. 97.

[2] *Ibm.*



<p>The Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, The Bishop of Lincoln, Manſer Marmyon, The Biſhop of Worceſter, The Biſhop of Salisbury, The Prior of Lewis, The Prior of Linton,</p>	<p>The Dean of the Church of Auk- land, Mr. Richard de Byntworth, The Arch-Deacon of Lincoln; Mr. Iſcher de Concoret, Mr. Guido de Calm.</p>
---	--

A

In the 10th of his Reign, the *King* [3] wrote to the *Pope* (*Benedict X.*) That his Progenitors had long ſince Founded and Endowed the Church of *England*, and freely collated to the *Cathedral Churches* by their Royal Right: That afterwards upon the Petition of the Clergy, and for the Reverence and at the Requeſt of the *Pope* that then was, the *King* that then was Granted to the *Chapters* of the Cathedral Churches, Power of Chuſing a Biſhop when the See was void, ſaving to him and his Succeſſors the Pre-rogative, That when the Church was void, the Chapter ſhould let him know it, and make their Requeſt to have *Licence* to Chuſe a Biſhop; and when he was Chosen, to preſent him to the *King* for his Aſſent, before he proceeded further in the Buſineſs of his Election: And then after he had been Confirmed, he was to requeſt of the *King* the *Temporalities* belonging to the Biſhoprick, and do him Fealty for them. And what was done againſt this Form, was void. That the *Biſhoprick* of *Norwich* being vacant, he had given the *Prior* and *Chapter* leave to Chuſe, who preſented their Elect to him; but having a deſire to be fully ſatisfied concerning ſomething he had heard of him, before he gave his Conſent, by the Advice of Wiſe Men, he gave him a ſhort Day to receive his Answer: But he *ſcornfully* rejected this way of Proceeding, and proſecuted the Buſineſs of his Election in the Court of *Rome*, to his Reproach, and in Contempt of his Royal Right, the *Depreſſion* of his *Royal Prerogative*, and manifeſt Danger of Diſheritance. Wherefore he implored his Favour to take the Premiſſes into due Conſideration, and deny him Audience for the Confirmation of his Election, until he had obtained his Aſſent, according to the Form aforeſaid; which he was ready to grant without difficulty, if there was no reaſonable cauſe for which he ought not to do it: Concluding, That if he ſhould not take notice of this Supplication of the *Elect* of *Norwich* to the *Pope*, yet his Subjects would not ſuffer it.

B

C

D

E

F

The *King* ſuppoſing [4] the *Pope's* Chaplains and Auditors of his Sacred Palace (who were ſuch to whom the *Pope* referred the Hearing of Cauſes in his Palace) though otherwiſe good Lawyers, yet might be ignorant of the *Laws* and *Customs* of *England*, wrote to them, and gave them notice, That all Cauſes about Right of Patronage whatſoever, were pleaded, determined, and ended in his Court before his Juſtices, and ought not to be diſcuſſed any where elſe: Then, That if any Man Married a Woman that was *Patroneſs* of any Church or Eccleſiaſtic Benefice, and had Iſſue by her, and ſhe died before him, upon any Vacancy he was to preſent during his Life, and his Clerc was to be inſtituted by thoſe unto whom it belonged: And further, That if any *Tenents* in *Capite* died poſſeſſed of Lands, to which the Patronage of any

[3] Append.  
n. 98.

[4] Rot. Rom.  
16 Ed. III. n. 2.



Benefices were annexed, that if there hapned any Vacancies after the Death of the Tenant, while the Lands were in the *King's* hands, it was his Right to present to them. And therefore desired, that if any of these Matters came before them, they might be duly considered, and nothing done in *prejudice* of his Court, or the *Laws* of his Kingdom.

[6] Stat. at  
Large, 14 Ed.  
III.

[6] *Ibm.*

And in these [5] Presentments, as also of those made in the Vacancies of *Arch-Bishopricks*, *Bishopricks*, a *Plenary*, or that the Church was full, was no more an Exception or Plea against the *King*, than if they had been made in Right of his Crown, until by the Statute for the [6] Clergy, made upon the Petition of the *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, and Clergy, in the 14th Year of his Reign, *Chap. 2.* he granted it should be a Barr to him and his Heirs. Before that, the *King* had his Remedy against the Incumbent, if he had not been duly presented: For then *Institution*, though upon a wrong Presentation against a common Person, made a *Plenary*; but to make it against the *King*, Induction or actual Possession of the Church, was also required: Yet before this *Statute* neither could be pleaded against him.

[7] Rot. Parl.  
17 Ed. III. n.  
59.

In the 17th Year of his Reign, there was Complaint made in Parlement [7] of *Strangers* holding so many Benefices in *England*; That the *Alms* which wont to be, were not performed; That much of the *Treasure* of the Land was carried beyond Sea, for the Maintenance of the *King's* Enemies, the *Secrets* of the Nation discovered, and by this means the Able and Loyal *Clerics* of the Nation the less advanced: That of late there were many *Cardinals* made, to Two whereof the *Pope* had granted, by his *Bulls*, Benefices in this Land, to the value of Six thousand Marks: (*Sur ce ore de novel plusieurs Cardinalx sont faitz, dont le Pape par ses Bulles ad grantez as deux de eux, Benefitz en ceste Terre a la Montance de vj. M. Marcs.*) That the Commons understood, that one of the *Cardinals*, namely, he of *Perigort*, was the most fierce Enemy, and the most against the *King's* Designs of any in the Court of *Rome*: That in time the Nation by such Grants would be filled with *Strangers*, and in a short space no *Clerc* of his Country, though the Son of a Great *Lord*, or other, would find any Benefice to which he might be advanced; and this to the great Damage of the *King* and whole Commons, by reason of such *Reservations* and *Provisions*: For which things the Commons pray Remedy (*par la dite Commune ne le poet, ne le voet plus endurere*) for that they could not nor would longer endure it; because all the *Foundations* and *Advowsons* of *Arch-Bishopricks*, *Bishopricks*, *Abbeys*, *Priories*, *Churches* *Parochial*, and the whole *Spiritual* Revenue of this Land, were of the *Foundations* of the *Kings*, *Earls*, *Barons*, and the Commons, (*sont des Fundacions des Roys, Countes, Barons, & de la Communes:*) That it would please the *King* to write to the *Pope* under his Great Seal, and the Peers and Great Men of the Land under their Seals, That he would cease from putting these Burthens upon the Nation, and revoke what he had done. And if any of the *Peers* or *Great Men* would not Seal such a Letter, the Commons would not hold him a Well-wisher to the *King's* Profit, or theirs: And in case the *Pope* should not comply with what was desired, they pray the *King* to encourage and maintain such as should, and would endeavour to remove this Burthen, and put

A

B

C

D

E

F



put such out of his Protection as would not. They also pray him to Command all the Peers and Great Men of the Land, to stay at this Parlement quietly, until these things should be perfected and sealed as above: *Et la Comune pri a nostre Seigneur le Roy qil voille comander as touz les Piers & Grantz de la Terre qils demourgent en pees a le Parlement tanque ceste choses soient parfaites & enseales sicome desus est dit.*) And for the great Damage that might happen in the mean time, he would please to grant his Prohibitions to the Ministers, and Proctors of the Great Bishops, not to meddle in this matter, until the Pope had wrote back his Pleasure.

The [8] Answer to this was, That the King understood the Mischief, and would that the Great Men and Commons should order Remedy and Amendment, and he would agree to it (*& voet que entre les Grantz & les Communes soit ordeigner Remedie & Amendment, & il sacorder.*) And also the King would and agreed, That Letters should be wrote to the Pope about this matter, as well by himself, as also by the Great Men, and by the Commons.

And [9] then the Earls, Barons, and other Nobles, and the whole Communalty of the Realm (*& puis fu prier a nostre Seigneur le Roy en ce Parlement par Counts, Barons, & autres Nobles, & tote la Comunalte du Roialme*) prayed the King, That for to avoid and set aside the Damages, Grievance, and Oppression of the People, and Holy Church of England (*& de Seint Eglise d'Angleterre*) which were done there by the Reservations and Provisions of the Court of Rome (*par Provisions & Reservations de la Court de Rome*) as well of Benefices, as of First-Fruits; and by Impositions of Tenths, and other Burthens, in Disheriting as well the King and his Crown, as the said Earls, Barons, and other Nobles, he would please to command to be considered certain Petitions of the Earls, Barons, and Commons of the Realm in the time of his Grandfather, in his Parlement holden at Carlisle, in the 35th Year of his Reign; and also the Agreement and Judgment made upon them in that Parlement. Their Prayer was granted, and search was ordered to be made in the Rolls and Remembrances of the said Parlement, where amongst other things it was found, That upon the shewing of the Earls, Barons, and Commons their Petitions, That Holy Church in this Nation had been founded in the State of Prelacy, by his Grandfather and his Progenitors, the Earls, Barons, and their Antecessors, to inform the People in the Holy Faith, and for Prayers, Alms, and Hospitality, to be made, done, and kept in the Places where the Churches were founded, for the Souls of the Founders and their Heirs, and all Christians: And that certain Possessions and Lands, in Fee and Advowsons, to a very great Value, were assigned to the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and other Houses of Religion, by your said Grandfather and his Progenitors, Earls, Barons, and other Great Men of the Realm and their Ancestors; and that they in the time of Vacancy of such Prelacies and Houses, as Lords and Advowees or Patrons, had and ought to have the Presentments and Collations of all manner of Benefices of the Advowry or Patronage of such Prelates, to give them to Englishmen, \* who had Great Place with his Grandfather, and the Great Men above-said,

[8] Ibm. Ro.

[9] Ibm. n. 10.

The Statute of Provisors made at Carlisle, Ed. I.

\* Writ of the King's Council.



\* For want of Bishops, and able Dignified Persons of his own Nation, of which then the King's Council mostly consisted.

said, for their Knowledge and Advice, when they had occasion to make use of them: And that the Pope that then was, had appropriated to himself the Gifts of such Possessions and Benefices, by his Provisions and Reservations, and gave and granted Dignities, Prebendaries, and Churches, to such as never Resided in *England*, and to Cardinals and others, as well Strangers as *Englishmen*, which could not Reside here, as if he had been true Patron and Advowee of Right, as he was not: For which things if they should be suffered, within a short time, there would be no Benefice in the Gift of such Prelates, but by such Provisions would be in the Hands of Strangers, contrary to the Will and Intent of the Founders; and so the Elections of Arch-Bishops and Bishops would fail, Prayers, Hospitalities, and Alms, which ought to be performed, would cease, and his Grandfather, and other Lay Patrons, in times of vacancy, would lose their Presentments and Collations, and the said Council would \* perish, and the Goods of the Nation in a great measure carried out of the Kingdom, to the undoing of the State of the Holy Church of *England*, (*de sainte Esglise Dengleterre*) and the Disinheriting of his Grandfather and his Crown, (*& des autres Nobles du dit Roialme*) and of other Nobles of the Realm, and in Offence and Destruction of the Laws and Rights of the Kingdom, to the greatest Damage and Oppression of the People, and Subversion of the State of the whole Nation, contrary to the Will and Ordinance of the first Founders.

By the Assent of the *Earls, Barons, Nobles, and Commonalty*, considering intirely the Errors and Damages aforesaid, in the said Parlement of *Carlisse*, it was Provided, Ordained, Decreed and Considered, That the forenamed Grievances, Oppressions, and other Damages and Errors aforesaid, from thenceforth should not be suffered, to be done in any manner; Whereupon the said Grandfather, by his Writs, forbad all such as it concerned, to attempt or do any thing that might turn to the Blemishing of his Royal Dignity, or in prejudice of the Nobles, or his People; and further, he commanded all the Sheriffs, by his Writs, That if by Enquests taken, any could be found doing to the contrary, they should take their Bodies, and bring them safely before him at a certain day, to answer as well to him as others that would complain against them, and to do further, and receive what the Court should award in this Case.

Wherefore our Lord the King, (*Edward the Third*) in this present Parlement, at the Suit of the *Commonalty*, making Suggestion, by their *Petition* before him and his Council, of many *Errors, Damages, and Grievances*, that many times happened by such *Provisions and Reservations*, as well of Benefices, as *First Fruits*, and other things whatsoever; Of *Impositions of Tenths*, and other *Burthens* by the Pope lately made; To the Slander, Dishonour, and Depression of the whole Church of *England*, and Disinheriting of our Lord the King and his Crown, and other Nobles of the Kingdom, and in Offence and Destruction of the Laws and Rights thereof, and most grievous Damage of his People, and Subversion of the State of the whole Realm, against the Will of God, and the good Design of the Founders of these Benefices, and against the Provision, Ordinance, Accord, Decree,

A

B

C

D

E

F



A cree, and Consideration aforesaid, made by his Grandfather and  
 and Council; and they pray the King he would please to have  
 regard to the Church of England, to the Indemnity and Disinher-  
 iting of himself, the Earls, Barons, Nobles, and Commonalty,  
 and Ordain Remedy; He by assent of the Earls, Barons, and  
 Nobles, and the Commonalty of his Realm, Provided, Ordained,  
 Accorded, Decreed and Considered, That as well within the  
 Franchise of the Cinque-Ports as other-where upon the Sea Coasts,  
 and thro all the Counties of the Kingdom, as well within Fran-  
 chise as without, open Proclamation should be made, That none  
 of what Estate or Condition soever he was, be he Stranger or  
 Denizen, should from henceforward bring, or cause to be  
 brought, upon grievous forfeiture to the King, Letters, Bulls,  
 Procefs, Reservations, Instruments or other things prejudicial to  
 B the King or his People, to deliver to Arch-Bishops, Bishops, Ab-  
 bats, Priors, Earls, Barons, or any others within the Realm, and  
 that none by virtue of such Provisions or Reservations receive Be-  
 nefices of Holy Church, and that none upon the forfeiture aforesaid,  
 receive or take such Letters, Bulls, Procefs, or Instruments  
 touching such Provisions, and Reservations, nor by reason there-  
 of make Institution or Induction, or any other manner of Exe-  
 cution of them; and that none do, or suffer to be done any  
 C other thing that may be prejudicial to the King or his People, or  
 Blemish the Rights of his Crown, or the Provisions, Ordinances,  
 Accords, Decrees and Consideration before said. And also it was  
 further agreed, That diligent search should be made in all Places  
 needful for all and every one coming into the Kingdom, and  
 that all who shall be taken by such Search, or Enquest to be  
 taken, or by other Information, bringing Letters, Bulls, Procefs,  
 Reservations, Instruments, or other things prejudicial to the King  
 D or his People; and all those who by them, receive any Benefices,  
 and place themselves in, or be received into them; And also  
 those that by Authority of such Letters, Bulls, Procefs, Reservati-  
 ons, or Instruments, shall or do make any Appeals, Citations, or  
 Procefs against the Patrons of the Benefices, or those they have  
 Presented, or any others, or shall Prosecute or cause to be Pro-  
 secuted in any Court whatever, where they have done, or pro-  
 cured to be done any thing in prejudice of the King, or the  
 E Earls, Barons, Nobles, and Commonalty aforesaid, or of the Pro-  
 visions, Ordinances, Accords, Decrees, and Consideration, and  
 against the Proclamation and Inhibition aforesaid, shall be taken  
 and arrested by their Bodies, and the Letters, Bulls, Procefs, and  
 Instruments upon such Provisions, and Reservations, shall be  
 taken from them, or others wherever they are to be found, and  
 sent before the King's Council with their Bodies, that brought  
 them into England, Wales, Ireland, or the County of Chester, or  
 Prosecuted any Execution of them; with the Bodies of all o-  
 F thers that shall be taken and arrested for the cause abovesaid, to  
 take and receive what the Court shall award; and that hereupon  
 Writs to that purpose be sent thro the whole Realm.

According to this Agreement, a Proclamation and Writs were  
 issued, but without effect; for in the Parliament [1] next year,  
 which began Eight days after Holy Trinity, the Commons prayed  
 the King, [2] That the Provisions, Ordinances, and Accord made

in

[1] Clause  
 18 Ed. III.  
 Part 1. M. 14.  
 Dors.  
 [2] Rot. Parl.  
 18 Ed. III.  
 n. 33.



in the *Parlement* of the 17th year of his Reign, concerning the Provisions and Reservations (*de la Court de Rome*) of the Court of *Rome*, might be confirmed and made a perpetual Statute.

[3] *Ib.* n. 36.

It was also [3] ordered, That the *King* present to the Prebends, Dignities, Churches and Chappels, of such as lived in his Enemies Countreys, or seize them into his Hands, and employ the Profits in *Defence* of the Land, and Holy Church, except so much as should maintain the Houses, and provide for Divine Service; [4] and that any one who should bring any thing prejudicial to this Order from beyond Sea, should be taken and carried back again.

[4] *Ib.* n. 37.

[5] *Append.*  
n. 29.

And further, That these *Writs*, and *Proclamation*, were of no effect, it appears by another [5] *Proclamation* this year, directed to the Sheriffs of *London*, in which all these Provisions, Ordinances, and Agreements, are recited; and in which it is said further, That some *Provisors*, (such as had received Benefices, &c. by the *Pope's* Provisions) as well Strangers as Denizens, their Proctors and Messengers, not considering the said Provisions, Ordinances, Concords, Decrees, Proclamation, and Inhibitions, nor the Punishments contained in them, had brought Letters, Bulls, Process, Reservations and Instruments into the Kingdom, prejudicial to the *King* and his *People*, and had delivered them to *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, *Abbats*, *Priors*, and others as well *Denizens* as *Strangers*, to be Executed, since and contrary to the Proclamation and Inhibition aforesaid; and the *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, and others receiving them, by virtue thereof, admitted and inducted very many Provisors and their Proctors, or Substitutes, into Benefices, which they possessed, to the disinheriting and intolerable prejudice of the *King*, his *Crown*, and *People*, against the Form of the Provisions, Concords, Decrees, Considerations, Proclamation, and Inhibitions aforesaid. And you (that is, the *Sheriffs* of *London*) have attempted somewhat against that Proclamation and Inhibition, and have hitherto neglected to obey our Command therein, at which we are much troubled; and then he comes to the Inhibition according to the Points of the former Agreement, Provision, and Ordinance, (including all those that admitted or inducted any into Benefices according to the *Pope's* Bulls and Reservations) under the greatest Forfeiture that could be made; and concludes, They should so behave themselves in the Execution of this present Proclamation, and Command, as he might not have cause to prosecute them as Favourers of his, and the Kingdom's Enemies. *Witness the King at Westminster the 30th of January, in the Eighteenth year of his Reign of England, and of France the Fifth.*

*By the King and the whole Council.*

In the same manner all the Sheriffs of *England* received the King's Commands, That they put in Execution the Proclamation in their several Counties and Shires, and also *Bartholomew de Burghersb* Constable of *Dover* Castle, and Keeper of the Five Ports.



In a Parlement holden on the 8th of September, in the 20th of his Reign, by *Leonel* his Son, *Guardian of England*, [6] the Commons Petition, that the *Alien Monks* might be made to go out of *England* before *Michaelmas* next coming, and that those that stayed beyond that Feast might be Outlawed, and the *Abbies* and *Priories* which they possessed might be seized into the *King's* Hand, and *Englishmen* placed in them according to the Advice of the Ordinary of the Place: For that the young *English* Scholars, who had, and then did neglect their Studies, and those that should be the Teachers of their Faith, and would undertake it if they had any hopes to be encouraged: And that the good *Priories* were in the Hands of *Strangers*, who carried the Revenues beyond Sea, so that for this reason their Faith was like to come to nothing: That the *strange Monks* were only *Laymen*, and the *King* their Patron.

[6] *Rot. Parl.*  
20 Ed. III.  
n. 30.

The [7] Answer, That the *Religious Aliens* were *Spiritual Persons*, and in their Houses by Institution, which thing could not be Tried in Parlement, (*quele chose ne poet estre trie en Parlement*;) And as to their Lands and Benefices, they were in the *King's* Hands, and he received the Profits of them, but as to Outing of them, it could not be done without Consulting the *King*.

[7] *Ib. Ro.*

It was also Prayed, [8] That *Strangers*, Enemies in *England*, who should remain there after *St. Michael*, and should be Outlawed, Command might be given to seize their Possessions and Goods to the *King's* Use, and he to cause *Englishmen* to inform the Parishioners and support the Chanteries, for that those that were advanced in *England* were *Taylors*, *Shoemakers*, and *Chamberlains* to *Cardinals*, (*sont Taillours, Suours, & Chamberleyns as Cardinalx*) so that the Parishioners were not informed by them, and their Faith decreased daily.

[8] *Ib. n. 32.*

The [9] Answer was near the same with the other, That they were *Spiritual Persons*, and the *King* had taken the Profits as above said, and as to Outing them of their Benefices, it could not be done without the *King's* Assent.

[9] *Ib. Ro.*

Notwithstanding these Proceedings in Parlement against the *Pope's Bulls*, his *Provisions* and *Reservations*, and the Proclamations and Inhibitions thereupon, the same Course was continued; for in the 25th of his Reign [1] the Commons, in a long Petition to the *King* and Peers of the Land, (*Item prie sa dite Communes a nostre dit Seigneur le Roy & a les Pieres de la terre veer & regarder un tres Grand Mischief, &c.*) pray them to take notice of the great Mischief and Destruction of late coming upon the Kingdom by the *Pope's* Reservations, by *Brocage*, and purchasing his *Provisions*, and many of the former Grievances complained of, which turned to a greater Ruine of the Nation then the whole War, and Request the *King* would please with his Council to ordain Remedy in that Parlement, for that the longer these things were suffered, there would be the greater difficulty in Reforming them; and it was then [2] Agreed the Answer to this Petition should be made a Statute; for which see *Statutes at Large*, and *Pulton* in this year. And in a Second Parlement the same year, the Commons [3] pray this Statute concerning Provisions and Reservations might be published and put in Execution against such as acted to the contrary.

[1] *Rot. Parl.*  
25 Ed. III.  
Part 1. n. 13.

[2] *Ibm.*

[3] *Ib. Part 2.*  
n. 43.



[4] *Ibm.*

The Answer [4] was, That the *Statute* should be *recited* before the *Council*, and if need were, it should be better worded and amended, so as the *Estate* of the *King* and *Kingdom* might in all things be safe and preserved.

[5] *Statute at Large, 27 E. III. c. 1.*

In the 27th of the King, [5] upon the grievous Complaint of the *Great Men* and *Commons*, That divers of the King's People, had been drawn out of the Kingdom, to answer things, the *Cognisance* whereof belonged to the *King's Court*; And that the Judgments given in the same Court, were impeached in another Court, in *prejudice* and *disherison* of the *King* and his *Crown*, and all the *People* of the Realm, in destruction and undoing of the Common Law. It was *accorded* and *assented* by the *King*, *Great Men* and *Commons*, That any of the *King's* Ligeance who should practice such things, and upon warning given him to appear before the *King* and *Council*, or before his *Justices* at the time appointed, to undergo the Law, and did not, should be put out of the *King's* Protection, and his Lands, Goods and Chattels forfeit to the King, his Body to be Imprisoned, and Ransomed at the King's Will.

During this *Contest* between the *King* and *Pope*, or Secular and Ecclesiastick Power then so termed, the *King* was very kind to the *Clergie*, in confirming their old, and granting them many new Liberties and Priviledges, as appears by the Statutes made for the Clergy in Print, in the *Statutes at Large* in the 14th, 18th, and 25th of his Reign.

[6] *Rot. Parl. 47 E. III. n. 30.*

From this time all things were pretty quiet, no considerable things complained of in *Parlement* against the *Pope* and his *Provisions*, until the 47th of his Reign, when the *Commons* [6] Requested Remedy against them, for that by reason thereof he received the *First Fruits* of Ecclesiastical Dignities, and by that Means the *Treasure* of the Realm was conveyed away, which they could not bear.

[7] *Ib. Ro.*

The Answer was, [7] The *King* had *Embassadors* at the Court of *Rome* concerning these Matters, before whose Return he could not give them Satisfaction.

[8] *Append. n. 100.*

In the Fiftieth year of his Reign, [8] the *Knights*, *Citizens* and *Burgesses*, which came to this *Parlement* for the *Commonalty* of the *Realm*, do pray the *King* and his *Council*, and supplicate on behalf of the *Commonalty*, That he would please to have good Consideration to the Things underwritten, and Faults following, and Ordain convenient Remedy, which will be the most pleasing to God, and kind to Holy Church, the most profitable to him and his Kingdom that ever was done, it being their holy Faith and firm Hope, that those who please God, and holy Church, shall be accepted in whatever they do:

*First*, That he would please to *think*, and *re-think*, how his Noble Progenitors, Kings of *England*, and other Great Men of the same Land, (*& autres Grands de mesme la terre*) built Churches, and in process of time, by great Devotion endowed them with Riches, Rents, Lands, and great Possessions, Franchises and Temporalities, which, with what the *King* himself had given, amounted to more then the Third part of his Kingdom; and think how all these things were given upon such Devotion and

In-



Intent, that the Profits rising from them should be spent upon the Places where they were given, to the Honour of God, and Maintenance of the Places belonging to them in Hospitality and Alms, and divers Works of Charity, in the Service of God and Holy Church, in Chaplains, Clerks, and Poor, that Prayed Night and Day, for their Holy Father the Pope, for Holy Church, for the King and Kingdom, for Peace, for their Founders, Patrons and Benefactors, for their Souls, and all Christian Souls. And think, how the Kings and other Great Men, (*& autre Grands*) by their great Devotion and Gifts to Holy Church, were in peaceable possession to give the Churches, and Benefices, as Holy King Edward gave the *Bishoprick* of Worcester to St. Wulstan; and afterward by Devotion of the Kings, it was granted, and by the Court of Rome confirmed, That the Cathedral Churches should have free Election of their Prelates, so as the Bishopricks by true Election, and other Benefices of Holy Church, were given Charitably, not out of Covetousness, or by Simony, to the most Worthy of the Clergy, of Strictest Lives, and holy Conversation, that could be found, such as would reside upon their Benefices, Preach, Visit, and Confess their Parishioners, and spend the Goods of Holy Church to the Honour of God, and in Works of Charity, according to the Devotion and Intent of the Donors. And so long as these good Customs were used, the Kingdom was prosperous, the People good and Loyal, there was Peace and Quiet, and sufficient of Treasure, Grain, Cattle, and other Riches; but since these good Customs have been perverted, Covetousness and Simony advanced, the Kingdom hath been full of Adversities, (*le Roialme ad este plien des diverses adversitez*) as Wars, Pestilence, Famine, Murrein amongst Cattle, and other Grievances, whereby the Kingdom was so much empoverished and destroyed, that there were not the Third part of the People or other Things in it, for the Cause abovesaid, and what follows:

Also it is to be thought on, That no Man in the World, who loved God, Holy Church, the King, and Kingdom of England, but had great Reason to think Sorrowfully of things, and Weep, That the Court of Rome, that was wont to be the Fountain, Root, and Source of Sanctity, and Destruction of Covetousness, Simony, and other Sins, had so craftily, by little and little, more and more in proceſs of time, gained the *Collations* of Bishopricks, Dignities, Prebendaries, and other Benefices of Holy Church in England, of which the Pope always received the Tax or First Fruits, and by his Bulls made several Translations that he might get the more, by which Means, and by other Payments, and Charges, the Bishops became so much in Debt to the Court of Rome, that they sold the Timber of their Bishopricks, had Ayd of their Poor Tenants, and the Clergy, and all Methods were taken, to destroy the Church, and Realm of England.

Also it ought to be thought on, That there are many, that when they have purchased one Benefice of the Court of Rome, and payed the Tax or First-fruits, and the Brokers of Benefices residing in the Wicked City of Avinion, (*en la pechere use Cite D'Avenon*) they let them to Farm, and send the Rents to their Brokers to purchase more and greater Benefices, even as a *Caitif*



or *miserable Person* not worth, or good for any thing, by Simony or Brokage, shall be preferred to Churches and Prebendaries to the Value of 1000 Marcs, whereas a *Doctor of Decrees*, and a *Maister in Divinity* must be satisfied with a small Benefice of 20 Marcs : So as Clercs lose all their Hopes of being advanced as such. And for the same cause People forbear to put their Children to School; so as the Clergy fails, which is the Support of the Church, and our Holy Faith declines, and comes to nothing.

Also it ought to be thought on, That *Strangers*, Enemies to this Land, and others beyond Sea, have Benefices, Riches, and Rents of Holy Church in *England*, which never saw, or will see their Parishioners, whereby the Service of God and Holy Church, and all Works of Charity are neglected, the Parishioners like to suffer in Body and Soul, their only care being to get the Profits of their Benefices out of the Kingdom : And so it is that Holy Church is more destroyed by such wicked Christians, than by *Turks* and *Saracens*.

Also it is to be thought on, That the Law of Holy Church is such, that the Benefices of Holy Church ought to be given freely out of pure Charity, without Price or Prayer, without the Gift of Gold, Silver, or any thing else : And that Law and Reason will, that what is given by Devotion to Holy Church, ought to be spent to the Honour of God, according to the Devotion and Intent of the Donour, and not out of the Realm upon their Enemies.

Also it is to be considered, That God committed his Sheep to the *Pope* to Pasture, and not to Shear them ; and that the Lay Patrons followed these Examples, and sold their Churches as God was sold to the *Jews*, who put him to Death.

Wherefore they desired the King would please to observe this was the 50th Year of his Reign, which was called the *Year of Jubilee*, the Year of Grace and Joy, and it would be the greatest Grace and Joy that ever happened to this Kingdom, and the most pleasing to God and Holy Church, and all those that love them ; if the things above-said were laid to heart, and agreeable Remedy provided for them. And then propounded, the *King* and *Great Men* should write to the *Pope*, as had been before ordered in Parlement.

The *King's* Answer was, That he had ordained sufficient Remedy before, by Statutes and otherwise, that he was then applying to, and pressing the *Pope* concerning this matter, and was fully resolved to do it from time to time, until he had performed their Desires, as well concerning the things comprised in this large Bill next foregoing, as that which was to follow, which was very near the same.

The Title of this Bill in the Todding, or in the Margin of the Parlement-Roll, is, (*Bill encontre le Pape, & le Cardinaux*) The Bill against the Pope and Cardinals ; and the other, which follows this on the Roll, and was almost the same, had this Title : The Bill and Articles against the Pope and Clergy ; (*Billes & Articles encontre le Pape, & le Clergy.*) To both which the *King* answered as above.



It is worth notice, That though the Second Bill was near the same with the First, yet in that the *Commons* informed the King [9] there were several Spies who resided in *London*, who had their Spies and Informers in all parts of the Kingdom, that gave them notice when any Dignities or great Benefices were void, that they might send to the *Cardinals*, and other Persons residing in the *Court of Rome*, to purchase them of the *Pope*.

[9] *Ret. Parl.*  
50. *Ed. III. n.*  
45. 104.

A

Seeing in these Complaints there hath been so often mention made of *Provisions* and *Reservations*, for the better understanding thereof, here follows the Translation of one of them, according to the true Form :

B

John, Bishop, [1] the Servant of the Servants of God, to the future Memory of the thing : Whereas we have understood, That the Church of Rochester, by the Death of Thomas \* Bishop thereof, is at present void ; We for the good Estate of that Church, intending the Provision of it, for this Turn, for certain Causes that have persuaded us to do so, Have, by the Authority of these Presents, fully Reserved it to the Ordinance and Disposition of the Apostolic See, Decreeing whatsoever shall be done, and by whomsoever, knowingly or ignorantly contrary to this Reservation, void. It may not therefore any way be lawful for any Man to infringe this our Reservation and Constitution, or rashly enterprize any thing against it. But if any one shall presume to attempt any such thing, he shall know that he incurs the Indignation of Almighty God, and of his Apostles St. Peter and Paul. Dated at Avignon the 18th of March, in the first Year of our Pontificate or Popedom, in the 9th of Edward II.

[1] *Append.*  
n. 101.

\* Thomas de  
Windham ; he  
died the last  
of Feb. 1316.  
See Godwin.

C

This Reservation [2] was published at the Arches of *London*, on the 30th of *March*, and on the 31st of the same at *Rochester* before the Monks: But they having Chosen their Prior Hamon Heth Bishop, the Day before the Date of the Reservation and Provision, after three Years Trouble in waiting at *Avinion*, and elsewhere, at great Expences, the *Pope* confirmed him in the Bishoprick. See the History of this Provision and Reservation, in *Historia Sacra*, Vol. 1. fol. 357.

[2] *Ibm.*

D

E

In the 50th and 51st Years of this King, [3] John Wyclif, Doctor in Divinity, by Preaching and Reading at *Oxford*, published many Opinions contrary to those of the then Church and Religion practised here. The *Pope* (Gregory XI.) hearing of it, sent his Opinions inclosed in his Letter, or Bull, Directed [4] to the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, and Bishop of *London*, to examine him and his Opinions, and take his Confession concerning them. The *Pope* [5] wrote another Letter to them, That if they found his Opinions to be such as he had inclosed to them, then they should keep him in Bonds and safe Custody, until they should receive other Commands from him. He [6] wrote likewise a third Bull or Letter, to use all Diligence to preserve the King, Queen, their Children, and the Great Men of *England*, from these Errors and Heresies, and keep them steady in the Faith ; and to require them strictly (*requiratis astrictissime*) to shew them Favour, and give effectual Assistance, &c. All these Bulls or Letters are of the same Date at *Rome*, May 22. and Seventh of his Pontificate, A. D. 1377.

[3] *Wals. Hy-*  
*pod. Neustr. f.*  
531. n. 10, 20.  
A. D. 1377.  
*John Wyclif.*

[4] *Spelm. Con-*  
*cil. Vol. 2 f 621.*

[5] *Ibm. f. 623.*

[6] *Ibm. f. 624.*

F



[7] *Knight. col.*  
2647. n. 10,  
20.

Upon these Bulls, John [7] Wyclif was cited to appear before the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and many other Doctors, in the Church of the Friars Preachers in London, where he thus explained himself concerning the Sacrament of the Altar, and in these Old English Words:

[8] *Ib. n. 40,*  
50, 60.

I knowleche, [8] That the Sacramens of the Autar is very Goddus Body in fourme of Brede; but it is in another maner Goddus Body then it is in Hevene: For in Hevene it is sene fote, in the forume and figure of Fleshe and Blode; but in the Sacrament Goddus Body is be myracle of God in fourme of Brede, and is be nouthur of sene fote, ne in Mannes figure, but as a Man leves for to thenk the kynde of an ymage, whether it be of Oke or of Ashe, and settys his thouzt in him of whom it is the ymage; so myche more schuld a Man leve to thenk on the kynde of Brede, but thenk upon Christ; for his Body is the same Brede, that is the Sacrament of the Antere, and withalle clemes alle Devotion, and alle Charite that God wolde gif him, Worschippe he Christ, and then he receyves God gostly more medefully than the Priest that syngus the Masse in lesse Charite. For the bodely etynge ne profytes mouth to Soule, but in as mykul as the Soule is fedde with Charite. This Sentence is provyde be Crist that may nouzt lye; for, as the Gospel fyyes, Crist that night that he was betrayed of Judas Scarioth, he tok Brede in his Hondes, and blesside it, brak it, and gaf it to his Discipulus to ete; for he says, and may not lye, This is my Body.

[9] *Hist. f. 191.*  
n. 50.

What Satisfaction this Explication gave to the Arch-Bishop, and those before whom he was convented, the Author says not: [9] Walsingham says it was feigned and vain, and that the Arch-Bishop and all others, the Duke of Lancaster, and Lord Henry Percy being present, commanded Silence to Dr. Wyclif, forbidding him for the future not to meddle with, or treat upon that matter, or suffer others to discourse or speak upon it; and that he and his Followers were silent for some time.

*He was neither imprisoned nor censured during his Life.*

His Opinions are variously and differently worded and stated, as well those that were reputed and censured as Heresies, as those accounted Errors; and so involved in the Terms of Scholastic Divinity then used, as they are now scarce intelligible. They are to be found in Spelman's Second Volume of the Councils, Henry de Knighton, Wood his Antiquities of Oxford; but the plainest and clearest that were esteemed Heresies, are in [7] Walsingham's Hypodigma Neustriæ, which are here translated:

[7] *Fol. 531.*  
*lin. & Hist.*  
*Angl. f. 191.*  
n. 30, 40.

1. That the Eucharist in the Altar after Consecration, is not the True Body of Christ, but its Figure.

2. That the Church of Rome is not the Head of all Churches, more than any other Church; nor was there any greater Power given to Peter than to any other Apostle.

3. That the Pope of Rome had no greater Power in the Keys of the Church than any other Priest.

4. That the Temporal Lords (that were Patrons) might lawfully and meritoriously take away the Temporals from a Delinquent Church.



5. If a Temporal Lord knew a Church to be Delinquent, he was bound, under the Pain of Damnation, to take the Temporal from it.

6. That the Gospel was a sufficient Rule for the Life of a Christian, and that all other Rules of Saints, under the Observation whereof divers Religious live, add no more Perfection to the Gospel than Whiteness to the Wall.

A 7. That the Pope, nor any other Prelate of the Church, ought to have Prisons to punish Delinquents; but every Delinquent might freely go whither he would, and do what he would.

These are all his Opinions *Walsingham* recounts in this Reign; yet he Taught and Preached many more in the University of Oxford, where he had many Followers, and some Learned Men, as likewise in other Places, which were Censured in the next

B

### Taxes in this KING's Time.

C IN the 6th Year he had granted him a Fifteenth of Counties, and a Tenth of Cities and Burghs, for one Year.

In his 8th Year he had the same, and a Tenth granted by the Clergy.

In his 10th Year he had the same Tax from Laity and Clergy.

D In his 11th Year he had a three Years Tenth given him by the Clergy in Convocation; a three Years Tenth given him by Citizens and Burghesses in Parliament, and by others a three Years Fifteenth, to maintain the War then beginning with France, and to pay Germans, Brabanters, and other Confederates on the Borders of Germany, against the King of France.

In the 13th Year the Great Men gave him the Tenth Sheaf of all manner of Grain of their Demeasns Lands, except their Bond-Tenants the Tenth Fleece and the Tenth Lamb. This was in the first Parlement this Year 15 Days after Michaelmas.

E The Commons excuse themselves, and desire to go into the Country, and endeavour to procure an Aid answerable to the King's Necessity.

A Parliament was Summoned to meet eight Days after St. Hilary, or 20th of January, in which the Commons gave the King 30000 Sacks of Wooll.

F In his 14th Year, the Prelates, Earls, Barons, for them and their Tenants, the Knights of Counties for themselves, and Commons of the Land (*les Chivalers de Countees pur eux, & pur les Communes de la Terre*) granted to the King the Ninth Sheaf, Fleece, and Lamb; the Citizens and Burghesses gave the very Ninth of all their Goods, according to the true Value, for two Years next coming. Those that lived not in Cities and Burghs, nor lived upon Tillage or Shop, paid the Fifteenth Part of all their Goods, according to the true Value.

*Walf. f. 132.  
lin. 7.*

*Ibm. f. 134.  
n. 10.*

*Ibm. f. 136.  
n. 20.*

*Adam Mur-  
muth, A. D.  
1337.*

*Rot. Parl. 13  
Ed. III. Part 1.  
n. 5.*

*Ibm. n. 8.*

*Rot. Parl. 13  
Ed. III. Part 2.  
n. 5, 6, 7.*

*Ib. 14 Ed. III.  
Part 1 n. 5, 6, 7.*



Ibm. Part 2. n.  
9, 10.

Upon the *King's* writing to them for speedy Supply, seeing the *Ninths* could not be levied time enough for his Service, the *Lords* and *Commons* agreed to have 20000 Sacks of Wooll speedily provided.

Ibm. 15 Ed.  
III. n. 56, &c.

In the 15th, the *Ninths* were revoked, in respect of this Grant of 20000 Sacks of Wooll.

Ib. 18 Ed. III.  
n. 9, 10.

In the 18th, the *Clergy* of the Province of *Canterbury* granted a *three Years Tenth*, and the *Commons* granted for the *Commons* of the Land *Two Fifteenths*, and *Two Tenths* of *Cities* and *Burghs*. And afterwards the *Commons* granted another *Fifteenth*. The *Lords* promised to go, or went with the *King* in Person, and therefore gave nothing.

A

Ibm. 20 Ed.  
III. n. 11.

In the 20th Year, the *Commons* granted *Two Fifteenths* to be levied in *two Years*, in *Cities*, *Burghs*, ancient *Demeasns*, as also of the *Commons* of the *Counties*.

Ib. 22 Ed. III.  
n. 4.

In the 22d Year the *Commons* granted *Three Fifteenths*, to be levied in three Years, so as one *Fifteenth* be levied in one Year, and no more.

B

Ibm. 25 Ed.  
III. Part 2. n.  
9, 10.

In the 25th Year, the *Great Men* of the *Realm* and the *Communalty*, by the Advice of some *Great Men* sent to assist them, granted the *King* *Three Tenths* and *Three Fifteenths*, to be paid in three Years.

Ibm. 27 Ed.  
III. n. 31, or 9.

In the 27th Year, the *King* made it his Request, That the *Prelates*, *Great Men*, and *Commons*, would grant him the *Subsidy* of *Woollfells*, and *Leather*, for some time; to which Prayer they unanimously consented, and granted that *Subsidy* in manner as it had been received before that time for three Years.

C

Ibm. 29 Ed.  
III. n. 11.

In his 29th Year, the *Commons* came into the presence of the *King*, *Prelates*, and *Great Men*, assembled in the *White Chamber*; and having there a short Conference with the *Great Men*, granted unanimously of one accord the *Subsidy* of *Wooll*, *Leather*, and *Woollfells*, for *six Years* next coming, so as during that time, no other *Impositions* or *Charges* be put upon the said *Commons*.

D

Ibm. 36 Ed.  
n. 35.

In the 36th Year, the *Great Men* and *Commons* (*les Grantz & Communes*) granted unto the *King* of every Sack of Wooll transported 20 s. of every 300 *Woollfells* 20 s. and of every Last of *Leather* 40 s. besides the ancient Custom of half a Marc a Sack of *Denisons*, and 10 s. of *Strangers*, half a Marc of every 300 *Woollfells* of *Denisons*, and 10 s. of *Strangers*, and one Marc of every Last of *Leather* of *Denisons*, and 20 s. of *Strangers* for three Years.

E

Ibm. 42 Ed.  
III. n. 9.

In the 42d Year, the *Prelates* and *Great Men* (*les Prelates & Grantz en Deliberation plein ove les Comunes dune accorde Granterent, &c.*) having had full Deliberation with the *Commons*, granted the *Subsidy* of *Wooll*, *Woollfells*, and *Leather* for two Years; of every Sack of Wooll, and every Twelvescore *Woollfells*, 36 s. 8 d. of every Last of *Leather* 4 l. besides the ancient Custom as before.

F

Ibm. 43 Ed.  
III. n. 9, 10.

In his 43d Year, the *Lords* and *Commons* granted to him the *Subsidy* as above for three Years; of every Sack of Wooll 43 s. 4 d. which passed beyond Sea; of every Twelvescore *Woollfells* as much, and of every Last of *Leather* 4 l. besides the ancient Custom; of *Strangers*, for every Sack of Wooll four Marcs, of every



every Twelvescore Woollfells *four Marcs*, and of every Last of Leather *eight Marcs*, besides the ancient Custom.

In the 45th Year, the *Great Men* and *Commons* granted a *Subsidy* of 50000 *l.* to be levied of every Parish of the Land 22 *s.* 3 *d.* so as the Parish of greater Value, should contribute ratably to those of less Value.

Ib. 45 Ed. III.  
n. 6.

This 22 *s.* 3 *d.* of every Parish, answered not the Sum of 50000 *l.* and therefore not long after at *Winchester* the *Great Men* and *Commons* granted 5 *l.* 16 *s.* of every Parish, the 22 *s.* 3 *d.* being comprised in it; so as the Parishes of greater Value should contribute to those of less.

Ib. n. 10, 11.

In the 46th Year, the *Lords* and *Commons* granted for two Years the *Subsidy* of *Wooll*, *Leather*, and *Woollfells*, as it was granted in the 43d Year.

Ib. 46 Ed. III.  
n. 10.

And for that the Sum of this *Subsidy* was not sufficient for the *King's* Expences, they granted a *Fifteenth* for one Year, to be levied as the last was.

Ib. & n. 11.

The *Citizens* and *Burgeses* in this Parlemt, for the safe Convoing of their Ships and Goods, granted 2 *s.* upon every *Ton* of *Wine*, and 6 *d.* in the *Pound* of all Goods for a Year.

Ib. n. 14, 15.

In the 47th Year, the *Lords* and *Commons* granted a *Fifteenth*, as it had been in ancient manner levied, for two Years; they also gave *Tonnage* and *Poundage* for two Years, as it was given last Year, of all Merchandise exported and imported, except of *Woolls*, *Woollfells*, and *Leather*, and then grant the *Subsidy* of them for the next Year coming.

Ib. 47 Ed. III.  
n. 5.

In the 50th Year the *Lords* and *Commons* granted the *Subsidy* of *Wooll*, *Leather*, and *Woollfells*, for three Years, as it had been granted in his 47th Year.

Ib. 50 Ed. III.  
n. 9.

In his 51st Year, the *Lords* and *Commons* grant him 4 *d.* of every *Person* of the *Kingdom*, *Males* and *Females*, above the Age of *Fourteen Years*, except very *Beggars*; and desire to be excused they could give no greater *Subsidy*.

Ib. 51 Ed. III.  
n. 19.

### The Issue of Edward III. by Philippa of Haynalt.

HIS Eldest Son was *Edward* of *Woodstock*, so called because born [1] there, *June* 15. 1329. or 1330. He was *Prince* of *Wales*, and Married *Joan* Countess of *Kent* (called for her great Beauty, *The Fair Maid of Kent*.) She was *Daughter* to *Edmond* of *Woodstock*, sixth Son of *Edward* I. but second by his *Queen* *Margaret*, Sister to *Edmond* Son of *Edmond* of *Woodstock*, and Sister and Heir to his Brother *John*, who both died without Issue. [2] She was first Married, after the 25th Year of her Age, and 26th of *Edward* III. to Sir *Thomas Holland* Knight of the *Garter*, and in her Right made *Earl* of *Kent*, by whom she had Issue two Sons, *Thomas* *Earl* of *Kent*, and *John* *Duke* of *Excester*. He died *Decemb.* 26. in the 34th of *Edward* III. 1360. And her Second Husband was *William* *Montague* *Earl* of *Salisbury*, from whom she was in a short time *Divorced* by Consent. With this Lady

[1] *Wals. Hist.*  
f. 130. n. 40.  
*Hyped. Neustr.*  
f. 510. n. 50.

[2] *Sandf. Ge-  
neal. Hist.* f.  
184, & 215.



[3] *Walf.* f. 1480.  
n. 30.  
A. D. 1365.

[4] *Ibm.* f. 181.  
lin. 5.  
A. D. 1366.

[5] *Hypod.*  
*Neustr.* f. 512.  
n. 30.

[6] *Ibm.* f. 513.  
n. 30.

[7] *Sandf.* ut  
*supra*, f. 219.  
222.

[8] *Ibm.*

[9] *Ibm.* f. 225.

[1] *Rot. Parl.*  
39 *Hin.* VI.  
n. 18.

[2] *Walf.* f. 148.  
n. 10.

[3] *Hypod.*  
*Neustr.* f. 514.  
n. 50.

[4] *Sandf.* ut  
*supra*, f. 357.

[6] *Ib.* f. 358.

[7] *Ib.* f. 360.

[8] *Ib.* f. 365.

[9] *Brooks Ca-*  
*talogue of*  
*Hon.*

[1] *Ibm.*

[2] *Sandf.* ut  
*supra*, 178.

[3] *Ibm.* & f.  
227.

the Prince fell in Love, and was Married to her in the 31st Year of his Age, and 35th of his Father's Reign, 1361. By [3] her he had, first, *Edward of Engolesm* (so called because there born) who died in the 7th Year of his Age. His second Son by her was *Richard* of [4] *Burdeaux* (so also called because born there) succeeded his Father as Prince of Wales, and his Grandfather in the Kingdom, by the Name of *Richard II.*

*William* of [5] *Hatfield*, Second Son of *Edward III.* born there 1336. in the 10th of his Father's Reign, who died very young.

The Third Son of *King Edward* and *Queen Philip* [6] was *Lionell*, born at *Antwerp*, Created *Duke of Clarence*, and Married to *Elizabeth de Burgh*, Daughter and Heir of [7] *William de Burgh*, Earl of *Ulster*, Lord of *Clare*, *Canaught*, and *Trim*, by whom he had only one Daughter named [8] *Philippa*. She was by her Grandfather, after the Death of her Father, at the Age of 13 Years, Married to *Edmond Mortimer* Earl of *March* and Lord of *Wigmore*, in the 42d of *Edward III.* 1368. by whom she had *Roger Mortimer* their Eldest Son and Heir to both their Honours and Titles, who left [9] *Edmond Mortimer* his Son and Heir, Earl of *March* and *Ulster*, Lord of *Wigmore*, *Clare*, *Trim*, and *Canaught*, and True Heir to the Crown of *England* after the Death of *King Richard II.* He died without [1] Issue, as also his Brother *Roger* and Sister *Alianor*, leaving *Anne* their Sister sole Heiress to her Father *Roger Mortimer* and Brother to *Edmond*.

The Fourth Son of [2] *Edward III.* and his Queen *Philip*, was *John* of *Gaunt*, born there: He was first Earl of *Richmond*, and afterwards *Duke of Lancaster*. He Married *Blanch* the Daughter and Coheir of *Henry Duke of Lancaster*, with *Maud* her Sister, by whom he had his only Son and Child *Henry* Earl of *Derby*, *Duke of Hereford* and *Lancaster*, called *Henry IV. King of England*. After the Death of *Maud* without Issue, he in Right of *Blanch* enjoyed all the vast Estate of her Father *Henry Duke of Lancaster*, with his Titles, and was then, in the 36th of *Edward III.* advanced to the Title of *Duke of Lancaster*, &c. *Dugd. Baron. Tome II. Fol. 115. Col. 1.*

The Fifth Son of *King Edward* and *Queen Philip*, was [3] *Edmond* of *Langley*, a Mannor near *St. Albans* in *Hertfordshire*, where he was born; by his Father made Earl of [4] *Cambridge*, and by *King Richard II.* [6] was Created *Duke of York*: He Married [7] *Isabel* younger Daughter and Coheir of *Peter King of Castile*, by whom he had *Edward* his Eldest Son, who died [8] without Issue. He had also by her *Richard* Earl of *Cambridge*, called of *Coningsburgh*, a Town of that Name in *Yorkshire*. [9] He Married *Anne* Mortimer above-mentioned, by whom he had *Richard* Duke of *York* and Earl of *Cambridge*, [1] who Married *Cecilie* Nevil, the youngest Daughter of *Ralph* Earl of *Westmerland*, by whom he had *Henry* his Eldest Son, who died young, and *Edward* his second Son Duke of *York*, and afterward *King of England*, by the Name of *Edward IV.*

*William* of [2] *Windfor* (a second of that Name *William*) was their Sixth Son, who died so young, as there is nothing memorable left of him.

The Seventh and Youngest Son of *Edward III.* and *Queen Philip*, was [3] *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, there born, *Duke of Gloucester*. He Married

A

B

C

D

E

F



Married *Eliaenor* the Eldest of the two Daughters, and Heirefs of *Humphry de Bohun* Earl of Hereford, &c.

The Eldest Daughter of King Edward and Queen Philip, was [4] *Isabel Lady Concy* and Dutcheß of Bedford, Married to *Ingelram* Lord of Concy and Earl of Soissons, who by her Father was Created Earl or Duke of Bedford.

[4] *Ibm.*

A Their Second Daughter [5] *Joan*, had the Title of Queen of Spain; she was by Proxy Married to *Alphonso* King of Castile and Leon, and conveyed into that Country, and not long after died of the Plague.

[5] *Ib. f. 179.*

Their Third Daughter [6] was *Blanch de la Tour*, so named because born in the Tower of London; she died an Infant.

[6] *Ibm.*

Mary their Fourth Daughter, [7] Dutcheß of Britan, was Wife of *John Montfort* Duke of Britan in France.

[7] *Ib. Hypod. Neustr. f. 516. lin. 9.*

B Margaret their Fifth and [8] Youngest Daughter, was Wife to *John Hastings* Earl of Pembroke.

[8] *Sanct. ut supra.*

C

D

E

F

Sf 2

A



A

# CONTINUATION

Of the Compleat

History of England, &c.

King RICHARD the Second.

[1] Rot. Clause  
Ric. II. M. 45.  
A. D. 1377.  
King Richard's  
Coronation.

[2] Ibid.  
Three Offices  
claimed by  
the Duke of  
Lancaster.

[3] Ibid.  
[4] Ibid.

[5] *Walsingh.*  
Hist. f. 193.  
n. 40, 50.

The Citizens  
of London de-  
fire the King's  
Protection.

[6] Ib. f. 194.  
n. 10, 20.

[7] F. 196. a.  
col. 2.

[8] *Walsingh.*  
f. 198. n. 20,  
30.

**K**ING Edward the Third [1] died June 21st, Anno Do-  
mini 1377, and this young King, his Grandchild, suc-  
ceeded him in the Eleventh year of his Age, when it  
was agreed he should be Crowned on the 16th of July  
following. John, King of Castile and Leon, Duke of Lancaster,  
came before King Richard and his Council, and claimed as Earl  
of Leiceſter the Office of Steward of England, as Duke of Lan-  
caster, to carry the King's principal Sword called *Curtana*, on the  
day of his Coronation, and as Earl of Lincoln, to be the King's  
Carver the same day; all these Offices he pretended to have in  
Right of his Wife *Blanch* then dead; and the Titles to them  
being Examined by the most knowing of the King's Council, it  
was adjudged [3] by the King and his Council, he might Exe-  
cute them by himself, and sufficient Deputies, [4] and on the *Thurs-*  
*day* next before the Coronation, (which was also on a *Thursday*)  
he sate (*de precepto Regis*) by the King's Writ, as Steward of  
England, to hear the Claims of all that pretended to have Offices,  
and perform Services on that day.

On the very day [5] of King Edward's Death, yet before he  
was known to be dead, there were sent some of the chief *Citizens*  
by the City of London, to the Prince then at Kingston with his  
Mother, who by John Philpot, that was one of them, acquainted  
him, That his Father was undoubtedly dying, and had the ma-  
nifest Signs of Death upon him, and beseeched his Favour to,  
and Protection of the *Citizens*, and his City of London, which  
was his Chamber, it being unspeakably disturbed he was so far  
from it, being ready not only to venture their Estates, but also,  
if needful, to lay down their Lives for him; with Request to  
him he would come and Reside there; and further prayed him,  
he would vouchsafe to put an end to all *Discords* and *Differences*  
between the *Citizens* and the Duke of Lancaster, [6] which was  
performed next day by several Persons sent to London for that  
purpose.

*Froysart* [7] says, England was then to be Governed by the  
Duke of Lancaster, by Accord of all the Land; yet soon after  
the Coronation, [8] perceiving all things in the Kingdom were  
like to become new, and his Care not to be valued amongst new  
Men,



A Men, and fearing if any thing should happen amiss to the King or Kingdom, it might be imputed to him, and that he should for the good he did, receive small or no Thanks, with the King's Leave he retired from Court, and went to his Castle of *Kenelworth*; before his departure, he promised the King, if he should need his assistance to come to him, with a greater *appearance* than any Lord in *England*, or do any other thing that might tend to his Profit or Honour.

The Duke of Lancaster with the King's Leave, retired from Court.

The French on the 21st of August [9] landed in the Isle of Wight, burnt and plundered some Towns, and received a Composition of the Inhabitants to save the rest; They then burnt [1] *Hastings* in *Kent*, and indeavoured to burn *Winchelsey*, but were repulsed, as also at *Southampton* by Sir John de Arundel, the Earl's Brother.

[9] Ib. n. 40, 50.  
The French land in the Isle of Wight.  
[1] Ib. f. 199. n. 20, 30.

B On the 4th of that month [2] Writs were issued for a Parliament to meet Fifteen days after *Michaelmas*; The Cause of Summons was declared by the Arch-Bishop of [3] *Canterbury*, and rehearsed by Monsieur *Richard Lescrop*, [4] which were, That the Commons would advise the King, how in the best manner his and the Kingdom's Enemies might be resisted, and how the Expences of such Resistance was to be born with the greatest Ease to the People, and Profit and Honour to the Kingdom.

[2] Rot. Clause Ric II. M. 37. D. r. f.  
A Parlement called.  
[3] Rot. Parl. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.  
[4] Ib. n. 11.  
The Cause of of Summons.

C The Commons [5] pray the King, That for the Arduity of their Charge, that is, the Declaration of Summons, (*que pur l'arduite de leur charge*) and for the feebleness of their Powers and Senses, (*& la Feiblesce de leurs poairs & sens*) That it would please the King to grant them to have the Prelates and Lords under-written for their Aid and Assistance, to Commune or Treat especially with them in their Affairs, for the more hasty and good Exploit of the Business wherewith they were charged; [6] that is, the King of Castile and Leon Duke of Lancaster, the Bishops of London, Ely, Rochester, and Carlisle, the Earls of March, Arundel, Warwick, and Angus, the Lord Nevill, Monsieur Henry Lescrop, Richard Lescrop, and Richard de Stafford, which was granted by the King in Parliament.

[5] Ib. & n. 12.  
The Commons desire to have a Committee of Lords for their assistance.

D The Duke of Lancaster immediately [7] stood up, and falling upon his Knees towards the King, humbly prayed him to hear him a little, in a weighty Cause that concerned himself; and then said, the Commons had chosen him for one of the Lords to Commune with them of the said Matters, but desired the King would please to Excuse him, for that the Commons had spoken Evilly of him, and so ill, that he had committed manifest Treason, if their Report was true, which God forbid, being always careful not to do any such thing, as the truth was notably known; and said further, None of his Ancestors of \* one side or other, was ever Traytor, but good and Loyal, and it was a marvellous thing he should stray out of the Line, (*& marveillous chose serroit, sil vorroit forveier hors de lyne*) for that he had more to loose then any other in the Kingdom; And more he said, That if any Man, of what Estate or Condition soever he was, should be so hardy, as to affirm Treason or other Disloyalty upon him, or other thing done by him, prejudicial to the Kingdom, he was ready to defend himself by his Body, or otherwise by Award of the King and Lords, as if he were the poorest Knight Bachelor of the Realm.

[6] Ib. n. 13.

[7] Ibid.  
The Duke of Lancaster makes his Excuse to the King for not being of that Committee. His Relation how he had been accused of Treason, and Excuse.  
\* Note, Thomas Earl of Lancaster, and his Brother Henry Grandfather to his Wife Blanche, in the time of Ed II.

His general Challenge to defend himself by his Body.

Where-



[8] Ib. n. 14.  
The Lords  
Excuse him.

Whereupon [8] the *Prelates*, and all the *Lords* stood up, and with one Voice Excused and prayed him, to leave off such Words, for they thought no Man living would say any such thing.

[9] Ib. n.  
The Commons  
Excuse him.

The Commons [9] also said, it was apparent and notorious, that they thought him free from all Blame and Defamation, (*les Communes avoient le dit Duc excusé de tout Blâme & Diffame*) inasmuch as they had chosen him to be their *principal Ayd, Comforter, and Counsellor* in this Parlement, praying with one Voice to have them excused.

He moves for  
a Law against  
the Inventors  
of such Reports.

Then the *Duke* said, the Words had been long thrown about the Kingdom falsely, and he wondered how any Man could or would begin or continue such a thing, for the Disgrace and Danger that might thence arise, because the first *Inventor* of such Speeches, by which Debate might be moved between the *Lords* of the Land, was a manifest and very Traytor, for such Debates might turn to the Destruction of the Kingdom for ever; and he prayed, that a good *Ordinance*, and a just and speedy Punishment might be provided in that Parlement, for such *Talkers* and *Inventors* of Evil Reports or Dreams, (*sur tieux parolours & trouvoirs de mesonges*) to avoid such Mischiefs for the time to come; but for the time past all should be forgiven, as to his own Person.

[1] Ib. n. 17, 18.  
The Commons pray  
Three things  
of the King  
and Lords.  
First, That  
Eight continual  
Counsellors may be  
appointed.

After this, [1] for that the *King* at present was Innocent and of Tender Age, for the amendment of several Mischiefs, and the Salvation of the Realm, which was then in greater Danger then ever it was before, the *Commons* prayed the *King* and *Lords* of Parlement for Three things especially:

*First*, That they would in that Parlement, Appoint and Name Eight Persons of divers Estates, to be the continual *Counsellors* of the *King*, for the Business of the Kingdom, together with the *King's Officers*, to be such Persons as best knew, and most diligently would and could take pains, in the amendment of the Mischiefs, and for the good Government and Salvation of the Realm, and the Commons might know the Names of those Counsellors, which also may be the *Expenditors*, and *Directors* of what was to be given toward the Wars.

[2] Ib. n. 19.  
Secondly, Such  
to be appointed  
as were to  
be about the  
King's Person.

*Secondly*, That they would please to [2] Name and Appoint in that Parlement, such as should be about the *King's* Person, People of Virtuous and honest Conversation, that might Educate him accordingly, and that the Charge of the *King's* House might be born with the Revenue of the Crown, so as what was granted for the Wars might only be employed that way.

[3] Ib. n. 20.  
Thirdly, That  
the Land  
might be observed.

*Thirdly*, That the [3] *Common Law* and other *Statutes*, and *Ordinances* of the Land, might be Observed, Ratified and Confirmed, and the People Governed by it, and that it might not be defeated, with *Masterships*, and *Singularities* of any about the *King*, &c. saving in all things the *Regalities*, and *Dignity* of the *King*, to which the *Commons* would not any prejudice should be done any way by their Demands.

[4] Ib. in the  
end of the  
number.  
The general  
Answer.

The Answer to these Demands [4] was, That the *Prelates* and *Lords* would Advise together, commanding the *Commons* to return to their place, (*commandant as communes de retourner a leur place*) and Treat of their other Charges given to them, (*& tretir de*

A

B

C

D

E

F



*de leurs autres charges a leurs donez*.) between that time and Thursday next, (*a quel jour ils furent commandez a retourner en parlement, &c.*) to hear the Answer to their Requests.

A The first [5] Request of the Commons was Repeated before the King and Lords, and by them granted, so as the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Keeper of the Privy Seal, Justices of the one Bench, and the other, and all other Officers of the Realm, may execute their Offices without the presence of such Councillors, who by Advice of the Lords were [6] Nine, the Bishops of London, Carlisle and Salisbury, the Earls of March and Stafford, Messires Richard de Stafford, and Henry Lescrop Banerets, and Messires John Deverose, and Hugh Segrave Bachelors.

B Which [7] Nine Prelates, Earls, and others, chosen in Council for this year, (*esluz en conseil par cest An*) were Sworn before the King himself, to do what they were chosen for, in the presence of many Lords of Parlement.

C As to the Second Request, to [8] Name and Assign such as should be about the King's Person, the Lords of Parlement there answered, That it seemed to them for many Causes too heavy and hard a Request, (*trop chargeant & dure Request*) to place any Person about the King that should not well please him; or to Remove any Officer or Servant, if it were not by his Express Will, and for notable fault to be proved against such Officers and Servants; Wherefore the Lords would not willingly meddle with these Matters, (*peront les Seigneurs ne verroient voluntres entre mettre.*)

To the other [8] part of this Request the Lords Answered, They would by good Deliberation speak with the Great Officers of the King's Household, and if by their advice it could be done, saving the State and Honour of the King, what they desired should be performed.

D For the [9] Third, at present it seemed reasonable to all the Lords it should be granted.

E The Lords and Commons \* perceiving the great danger of Destruction the Nation was in, by reason of the great Wars, as well by Sea as Land, for the defence of the Kingdom, and resistance of its great Enemies, granted to the King Two Fifteenths without Cities and Burghs, and Two Tenths within Cities and Burghs, for Two years; praying the King, That as well the Money of the Tenths and Fifteenths, as the Tenths granted by the Clergy, and Money for the Subsidy of Wooll, might be in the keeping of Especial Treasurers by the King's Appointment; which were William Walworth, and John Philypot, Merchants of London, who were to give an Account of their Receipts and Disbursements, in manner as the King and his great Council should order.

F In this [1] Parlement Alice Perrers was brought into the Lords House, where Sir Richard Lescrop, Steward of the King's Household, by the Command of the Prelates and Lords, Recited in the presence of the said Alice, an \* Ordinance made in the Parlement holden at Westminster in the 50th of Edward the Third, That no Woman, especially Alice Perrers, should prosecute any Business in the King's Courts by way of Maintenance, upon pain of forfeiture, and Banishment out of the Kingdom; and the said Seneschal or Steward furnished to the said Alice and the Lords, That she

[5] *Ibm.*  
n. 21, 22.  
The particular Answer to the first Request.

[6] *Ib.* n. 23.

[7] *Ib.* n. 25.

To the second Request.

[8] *Ib.* toward the end of the number.

[9] *Ib.* in the end of the number.  
To the Third.  
\* *Ib.* n. 27.  
Two Fifteenths and Two Tenths granted.

Special Treasurers appointed to receive them.

[1] *Ib.* n. 41, 42, 43.

\* See this Ordinance here in the 50th of Ed. III. Alice Perrers accused in Parliament.



she had incurred the pain of it, and forfeited against the Ordinance in Two Points: *First*, That Sir *Nicholas Dagworth* was ordered by the King's Council to go into *Ireland* upon several great Matters profitable to the King and his Realm, the said *Alice*, after the Ordinance made, perswaded the King, and procured at the Court at *Havering* by her singular Suit, That the said *Nicholas* should be countermanded, and his Voyage staid, to the great damage of the King and Realm. *Secondly*, That one *Richard Lyons*, for certain Misprisions, of which he was Convict in the said Parliament, submitted himself to the King's Grace, viz. his Body, Lands, Tenements, Goods and Chattels, so as he was imprisoned, and all his Lands, Tenements, Goods and Chattels seized into the King's Hands, of which Lands and Tenements he gave some to the Earl of Cambridge, and others to *Thomas of Woodstocke*, then Earl of Buckingham, for Term of their Lives. All which Forfeitures and Imprisonment, the King taking pity of the said *Richard* by the Perswasion of the said *Alice*, and her singular Pursuit and Procurement, at his Court at *Shene*, with the assent of his Council pardoned, and also pardoned the said *Richard* 300 l. due from him in the Exchequer, and further granted 1000 Marks of his Treasure as a Gift, which things being contrary to the said Ordinance, the Steward demanded of the said *Alice*, how she would Excuse her self of the said Articles, who answered she was not culpable or guilty of these Articles, which she was ready to aver and prove, by the Witness and Testimony of *John de Ippe*, at that time Steward of the King's House, *William Sheet* Controller, *Sir Allen Buxhall*, *Nicholas Carren* Keeper of the Privy Seal, and others of the Court of the said King, and present at the time of the supposed Forfeiture.

Her Answer.

[2] Item.

Witnesses  
Sworn against  
*Alice Perrers*.

Upon this, Day [2] was given her to *Wednesday* next after, in the mean time it was ordered by the assent of the Lords, That the Articles should be tried by Witness, or by Inquest of such as were of the House of the said King, and thereupon certain Persons were Sworn, and Examined before the Duke of Lancaster, the Earl of Cambridge, the Earl of March, the Earl of Arundel, and the Earl of Warwick: First, *Roger Beauchamp*, late Chamberlain of the said King, being Sworn, said, That in the presence of *Alice Perrers*, a Bill was given him to carry to the King at his Court at *Havering*, which Bill he took, and as he understood it, it contained the Revocation of Sir *Nicholas Dagworth* from *Ireland*, because he was Enemy to *Monsieur William de Windsor*, he refused to carry the Bill, because the Council had ordered the contrary; and the said *Alice* requested him to do it, which he did, and the King asked him what they talked about, which when he informed him of the Contents of the Bill, he answered the Petition was reasonable; and when *Monsieur Roger* replied, his Council had ordained to the contrary, the King answered, he was Sovereign Judge, and it seemed to him the Bill was reasonable, and commanded him to call back the said *Nicholas*, which was done accordingly. Concerning *Richard Lyons* he said he knew nothing. The Duke of Lancaster Examined, said, That one day he came to *Havering*, and found *Dame Alice Perrers* there, when *Roger Beauchamp* shewed him a Bill containing as above, about which he fell into Discourse with the King, who

A

B

C

D

E

F



who concerning Sir *Nicholas Dagworth* going to *Ireland*, said, it was not reasonable one Enemy should Judge another, and there he thought fit to countermand his Voyage; in which having satisfied the King, as done by his Consent in Council; but the King not long after coming from *Alice Perrers's Chamber*, came to the Duke, and prayed him dearly he would not suffer *Dagworth* to go toward *Ireland*, but the Duke could not comply, by reason it was ordained by King and Council, and on Monday morning when he took his Leave of the King in Bed, he commanded him upon his Blessing he should not suffer *Dagworth* to go toward *Ireland*, notwithstanding the Ordinance made the day before; and also he was countermanded. And to the Article of *Richard Lyons*, he said, in his Conscience he believed *Alice Perrers* was the chief Promoter of that Business, but was not present.

*Monsieur Philip de la Vache* Sworn, says nothing to the purpose.

*Nicholas Carren* Sworn, says, That he was commanded to come to *Shene* to the King, where he found *Richard Lyons*, and they were both commanded to come before the King in Bed, where he found *Dame Alice Perrers* sitting at the King's Bed's Head, where was shewed, that the King would pardon the said *Richard* 300 l. due to the King upon Account in the Exchequer, and also give him a Thousand Marks of his Treasure, and restore him what was given him to his Sons the Earl of Cambridge, and *Tho. of Woodstock*, and commanded him the said *Nicholas* to let his Sons know so much; and that the King rehearsed these Grants of his Grace, &c. before divers Knights and Esquires he called from behind the Curtains of his Bed to Witneſs the same. *Monsieur Alein Buxhall* Swears the same; except *Alice Perrers* sitting at the King's Bed's Head; and further, That *Alice* desired him to acquaint the Earls of their Father's Pardon to *Lyons*, which at her Instance the King commanded him to do. There were more Sworn, who said as they believed, and much to this purpose, and presently there were made to come before the Duke and other Earls, *Monsieur Roger Beauchamp*, *Alein Buxhall*, *John de Burle*, *Richard Stury*, *Philip de la Vage*, *John de Foxle*, *Tho. Garre*, Knights; *Nicholas Carren*, *John Beauchamp of Holt*, *John Beverle*, *George Felbrigge*, *John Salesbury*, *William Street*, *Piers Cornwall*, *Tho. Londen*, *Helmin Leget*, Esquires, of the King's House, Sworn, and charged to speak plain Truth, whether the said *Alice* was culpable, who found her guilty, and accordingly to the intent of the Statute made 50 *Edw. III.* considering the damages and villanies by her done, she was sentenced by Parlement to be banished, her Lands, Chattels, Tenements in Demesne and Reversion to be forfeited, and seized into the King's Hands; And it was ordained by the King and Lords in that present Parlement, That all her Land in Feoffees hands or purchased in Trust, should be also forfeited. But it was the Intention of the King and Lords, and this Law, made particularly for the prevention of such odious things, should not be made use of, or made an Example against any other Person, or in any other Case.

The Commons [3] pray, for that King *Edward* was guided by unfit Counsellors, (*par aucuns Conseillers nient Covenables*) as had been authentickly proved, That they might be removed from all

A Jury Sworn.

They find her Guilty.

Her Sentence and Punishment.

Which was not to be made an Example for others.

[3] *Ib. n. 49.*



King Edward guided by Evil Counsellors, such to be removed from this Kings Counsels.

The King's Officers not to maintain Suits.

[4] Ib. Ro. The King grants the first. And will forbid the second.

[5] See Stat. at Large, first of Rich. II. cap. 4.

[6] Rot. Parl. 1 Ric. II. n. 50. The Commons pray all great Officers of the Court and Kingdom may be appointed in Parlement during the King's Minority.

[7] Ib. Ro. It was agreed, that some of those Officers should be chosen by the Lords in Parlement.

[8] Ib. n. 88. The Commons complain of the Practices of the Villanes.

[9] Ibid.

[1] Ib. Ro. The Answer to the Complaint of the Commons.

the King's Counsels, and so as such, nor other such, should be near him, nor in office with him, and that other fit Persons might be put in their places; and that no Officers of the King's Court, great or small, do keep up Quarrels or Suits in the Country by Maintenance, nor meddle with any thing but what belongs to his Office.

As to the first Request, (*le Roy le voet*) the King willeth; and as to the second Request touching Maintenance, the King will straightly forbid, any Counsellor, Officer, or Servant, or others with him, or in the Kingdom, to uphold any Quarrel, or Suit by Maintenance, [5] under pain of losing their Offices, and Services, and to be Imprisoned, and Ransomed at the King's Pleasure.

The Commons also [6] pray, That during the King's Minority, the Chancellor, High Treasurer, Chief Justices of one Bench and the other, the Chief Baron of the Exchequer, the Steward and Treasurer of the Household, the Chief Chamberlain, and Clerk of the Privy Seal, the Wardens of the Forrests of this side Trent and beyond, might be made and provided by Parlement; and if it should happen that any of these Ministers or Officers should be laid aside, between one Parlement and another, That then another be put in his place, by his great Council, until next Parlement.

It was agreed, That [7] while the King was under Age, that the Counsellors, Chancellor, Steward of the Household, and Chamberlain, should be chosen by the Lords in Parlement, (*soient eslez par les Seigneurs en Parlement*) saving always the Estate and Heritage of the Earl of Oxford to the said Office of Chamberlain; and as to the other Officers abovenamed, the King should make them by the assent of his Council.

The Commons of the Kingdom shew to the King, and Council of Parlement, That in many parts of the Kingdom of England, ([8] *A nostre Seigneur le Roi, & a Conceil du Parlement monstrent la Commune du Roialme qen plusours parties du Roialm d'Engleterre, &c.*) the Villanes, and Land Tenents in Villenage, as well of Holy Church, as Lay Lords, which owed Services and Customs to their Lords, had withdrawn them of late, and did daily withdraw them, by procurement of certain Advisers, Maintainers, and Abettors in the Country who received Money of them, by colour of Exemplifications purchased in the King's Court out of Domesday Book, of the Mannors and Towns where they dwelt, by vertue whereof, and the ill Interpretations of them, they said they were quit and discharged of all manner of servage, as well of their Bodies as Tenures, and would not suffer any Distress to be taken, or Justice done upon them, threatning their Lords Servants to Kill or Maim them, and gathered themselves together in great Routs, and agreed by Confederacy to aid one another by force to resist their Lords; Therefore to prevent the Mischiefs which might issue, [9] and to avoid the like Danger that lately happened in France, by such Rebellion and Confederacy of the Villanes against their Lords, they prayed due Remedy.

The Answer was, [1] That as to the Exemplifications, Grants, and what had been done in Chancery, it was declared in Parlement, that they could not, nor ought not to be of any value, or hold place, as to the freedom of their Bodies, nor change the condition of their Tenure and Customs anciently due, nor do prejudice

A

B

C

D

E

F



A dice to their *Lords* concerning them; who if they would, might have Letters Patents of this Declaration under the Broad Seal; and also the *Lords* that found themselves grieved, might have special Commissions to Justices of Peace, and others, to enquire of all such *Rebels*, and their Offences, and their Counsellors, Advisers, and Abettors; and to imprison all those that shall be brought before them, without Bail, Mainprise, or otherwise, until they were prosecuted and acquit, &c. See *Statutes at large*, 1 *Rich. II.* which agrees with the *Parlement-Roll* in many things, though not in all.

The *Commons* pray further, [2] That a *Parlement* may be holden in a convenient Place once a Year, to redress Delays in Suits, and to end such Cases wherein the Judges were of different Opinions.

B They had this Answer: [3] The *Statutes* therefore made shall be observed and kept; and as to the Place where the *Parlement* shall be holden, the *King* will do his Pleasure.

The *Citizens* of *London* demanded, [4] That upon the *King's* special Grace, for the Enlargement of the *Franchise* of their City, that if any *Article* in the *Charters* granted by him or his Progenitors to the said *Citizens*, should prove difficult or doubtful, and might be taken in divers Senses, then that the *Sense* they claimed to have it in, might be allowed.

C This was the [5] Answer: That the *Interpretation* of the *King's* *Charters* belonged to him; and if any Doubt arose, the *King*, by Advice of his Council, would make such *Interpretation* as should be according to Reason and Good Faith (& bone Foy.)

D Several [6] *Rencounters*, *Burning* and *Plundering* each others *Towns* on the Coasts, and some in the Countries, taking and surprizing of some small *Towns* and *Castles* happened between the *English* and *French* at this time.

E The Town of [7] *Ard* was betrayed to the *French*. Sir *Thomas de Hilton* Governour of *Aquitan*, marched with a few *English* against a *Body* of *French*, was overcome by them, and taken Prisoner, with many Noblemen of that Country of the *English* Party. About the same time the *English* having notice, that there were many *Spanish* Ships in the Harbour of *Sluse* in *Flanders*, set out a great Fleet to surprize them, under the Command of *Thomas* of *Woodstock* Earl of *Buckingham*, the Duke of *Britan*, who was then in *England*, and others, which by Storm was scattered at Sea; but after the Storm, came together again upon the Coast of *England*, where they suddenly refitted, and put to Sea again, and took Eight *Spanish* Ships near *Brest*, and Twenty two others of several Nations laden with *French* Goods.

F *Hugh Caverly* Governour of *Calais*, burnt Twenty six *French* Ships in the Haven of *Bologne*, burnt the *Low Town*, and returned with much Plunder of Goods and Cattel.

The Men of *Rye* and *Winchelsey* sailed toward *Normandy*, landed in a small Town and Port, where they killed all they met in the Streets, except such as they thought able to redeem themselves by Money; those they carried Prisoners to their Ships; and then burning the Town and Country, returned home with a rich Prey.

The Commons Petition for a Parlement.

[2] *Ibm.* n. 95.

[3] *Ibm.* *Rs.* The Answer to that Petition.

[4] *Ibm.* n. 131. The Citizens of London demand they may have their own Interpretation of their Charters.

[5] *Ibm.* *Rs.* The Interpretation of Charters belongs to the King, &c.

*Rencounters* between the English and French, &c.

[6] *Walf. A.D.* 1377, 1378. 1 & 2 *Ric. II.*

[7] *Ibm.* The Town of *Ard* betrayed.

8 Spanish Ships taken, and 22 of other Nations.

26 French Ships burnt.

The Men of *Rye* and *Winchelsey* land in *Normandy*, kill and burn &c.



The Duke of Lancaster equips a great Fleet.

Henry the Bastard King of Spain prepares a great Fleet to oppose him.

The Duke delayed his putting to Sea. The English Fleet beaten by the Spaniards.

Ships taken out of Scarborough Haven by John Mercer a Scot. J. Philpot sets out Men of War at his own Charge; Takes Mercer with all his own and 15 Spanish Ships that had joined him: Was questioned for it, but discharged.

The King of Navarre sells Cherburgh in Normandy to the English. The Duke of Lancaster puts to Sea; Lands in Brittany; Returns ingloriously.

About this time the Duke of Lancaster desired to have the Money granted the last Parlement, upon promise to secure the Kingdom from Invasion of all Enemies for one Year, and to do some other great Good to the Nation; which at length he obtained; and provided a great Fleet, and also for his Assistance hired Nine Ships at Bayon, which in coming hither encountred a Fleet of Spaniards, and took Fourteen Ships laden with Wine and other Merchandise.

Henry the Bastard, that called himself King of Spain, hearing what those of Bayon had done, and that the Duke of Lancaster was putting to Sea with a great Fleet and Force, fearing him, by reason of his Title to his Kingdom, prepared a great Navy to oppose him, and if he could to take him Prisoner. The Duke delayed the time of his putting to Sea; the Chief Officers of the Fleet were disturbed at it, and sailed without him; and having been some days at Sea, met the Spanish Fleet, by which they were beaten, and Sir Hugh Courtney, a Famous Soldier, taken, with many others. This Misfortune, says Walsingham, was imputed to the Duke, for that he made such long Delays; but whether he was in Fault, knew not.

And while he was thus Dilatory, John Mercer a Scot, with a small Force of French, Scots, and Spaniards, took some Ships in Scarborough Haven, killing some of the Mariners, and carried them with him to Sea.

John Philpot, a rich Citizen of London, considering the Negligence, if not the Falsity of those who were to defend the Nation, and provide against such Inconveniencies, at his own Charge set out some Men of War, which met with Mercer, and 15 Spanish Ships that had joined him, and behaving themselves bravely, took him and all the Ships with him, recovering the Ships that were taken at Scarborough, and taking great Riches in the Spanish and other Ships. John Philpot was taxed by the Lords for presuming to set forth Men of War, without Advice of the King's Council; but he made such a Defence before the Earl of Stafford, and others, that called him to account, as he was suffered to depart, without further Trouble for that matter.

Still the Duke delayed his going to Sea, it not being known for what Reason, until the Spring and beginning of Summer were over; but by his Persuasion the Earls of Salisbury and Arundel set sail, and landed in Normandy, who compounded with the King of Navarre, then become Enemy to the King of France, for the Town and Port of Cherburgh, then very considerable, in which was placed a Garrison of English; and so the Earls returned.

At length the Duke of Lancaster went to Sea, and with him the Earls of Buckingham, Stafford, Warwick, and others of the English Nobility, with a great Force; they landed in Brittany, where Sir Robert Knolls burnt several Towns, and lost many of his stoutest Men. The Duke besieged St. Malo; but it was so well defended as he raised the Siege, and returned home. Walsingham says, at first the Townsmen would have yielded, so as the Town might have been preserved from being burnt and plundered. The Duke would not accept it, but upon Discretion, and that he might do with it what he pleased. In the mean time

A

B

C

D

E

F



time the *French* landed in *Cornwal*, and burnt *Fowey*, or *Foy*, and and several other *Towns*, without Resistance.

The *Scots* taking the Advantage of the present time, burnt *Roxburgh*, and spoiled the Country thereabout; whereupon a *Truce* was made between the *English* and them for some time.

A On [8] *Thursday* the 21st of *October* (it having met the Day before) the *Parlement* sate at *Gloucester*, in the Great Hall of the *Abby* there. The *Bishop* of *St. Davids*, then *Lord Chancellor*, declared the cause of *Summons*; wherein he took notice of what had been done by the *Scots* at *Roxburgh*; and that since, [9] notwithstanding the *Truce*, they had made *Alliance* with the *French* against *England*.

B Next Day *Monfieur Richard le Scrop*, *Steward* of the Household, enlarged upon the Causes of Calling the *Parlement*; and making excuse for his own Inability, [1] told the *Prelates*, *Lords*, and *Commons*, as the *Chancellor* had said before, That the *Nation* was encompassed with *Enemies*, who daily encreased: That the *Ports* of *Cherburgh* and *Brest*, which of a long time had not been in the hands of the *English*, besides *Calais*, *Burdeaux*, and *Bayon*, with the Countries about them, were very chargeable to maintain; *Calais*, with its *Marches*, or *Limits* about it, stood the *King* in 24000 *l.* every Year, and *Brest* 12000 *Marc*s; and the other three Places according to the same Rate.

C Afterwards [2] *Sir James Pickering*, *Speaker* of the House of *Commons*, with the *Commons* came before the *King*, *Prelates*, and *Lords* in *Parlement* (*& puis le Communes revindrent devant le Roy, les Prelates en Parlement, & illoques Monsieur James de Pickering, &c.*) making *Protestation*, as well for himself as for the whole *Commons* of *England*: First, for the *Commons*, That if he should utter any thing to the *Prejudice*, *Damage*, *Slander*, or *Disgrace* of the *King* or his *Crown*, or in lessening the *Honour* or *Estate* of the *Great Lords*, it might not be taken notice of by the *King*, and that the *Lords* would hold it for nothing, as if nothing had been said; (*& primerment pur la dite Commune, que si per cas il y dist choses que purreit soner en Prejudice, Damage, Esclandre, ou Villaine de nostre Seigneur le Roy ou de sa Corone, ou en anientissement del Honour & Estate des Grants Seigneurs du Roialm, que ce ne feust acceptez par le Roy, & les Seigneurs eins tenuz pur nul, come Riens nent este dit;*) for that the *Commons* soveraignly desired (*soveraignment desirent*) to maintain the *Honour* and *Estate* of the *King*, and the *Rights* of the *Crown* in all *Points*: As also to preserve the *Reverence* due to the *Lords* in all *Parts*. So much for the *Commons*. For his own *Person*, he made *Protestation*, That if by *Indiscretion* he spake any thing by *Common Assent* of his *Companions*, it might be amended by them before their departure, or afterwards.

F He then [3] rehearsed in short Words the *Articles* of the Charge (*il rehearceast en courtes Paroles les Articles de les Chargez a eux donez:*) And first for the *Liberties* and *Franchises*, for the *Honour* of *God* granted to *Holy Church*, and for the *King's Promise* of preserving the *Good Laws* and *Customs* of his *Kingdom* entirely, and punishing such as should any thing do against them; the *Commons* humbly thanked him with their whole *Hearts*, kneeling upon the *Ground* (*les genulx a Terre*) and praying *God* they might be put in due *Execution*.

The *French* land in *Cornwal*; Burn *Foy* and other *Towns*. A *Truce* between the *English* & *Scots*, who had burnt *Roxburgh*, &c. [8] *Rot. Parl.* 2 *Ric. II. n. 1, 2.* Part 1. A *Parlement* at *Gloucester*. The *Scots* make *Alliance* with the *French*.

[9] *Ibm. n. 7.* [1] *Ibm. n. 15.* Declaration of *Summons*.

[2] *Ibm. n. 16.* The *Speaker's* Request and *Protestation* in behalf of himself and *Commons*.

[3] *Ibm. n. 17.*

*Liberties* and *Franchise* of the *Church*. *Good Laws* and *Customs*.

As



[4] Ibid. n. 18.  
The Commons  
Pretences why they  
ought or  
could not  
grant an Aid.

As to the *Aid* the King [4] demanded of his *Commons*, for the Defence and Safety of the Kingdom, and for the Safeguard of his *Lordships*, *Lands*, *Towns*, and *Forts* beyond Sea, and toward his Wars; the *Commons* said (*la Commune dit*) That in the last Parlement in his first Year, the same things were shewn unto them in behalf of the King, at which time they answered, It was apparent the King had not so great need for an Aid, seeing he had in his hands the *Priories* alien, the *Subsidies* of *Wooll*, the *Revenues* of the *Crown*, the *Lands* of the *Prince* his Father, and many other Great *Lordships*, by the *Nonage* of the Heirs of them; and that therefore there must be great Plenty of Money in the Treasury. To which the King's Council then answered, That lately the Charge of the Coronation had been very great, and that the Money upon those Funds they mentioned came in very slowly, nor could they be collected soon enough for an Expedition that Year. And it was then further said, That if the *Commons* would furnish the King with a great Sum of Money, to make such an Expedition as might be for the Destruction of his Enemies (*en destruction des ses Enemies*) they hoped he might have Money sufficient afterwards from time to time to maintain the War and defend the Kingdom. And thereupon the *Commons* then said, That in hopes of that Promise, to be discharged of *Tallage* for a great time after, they granted a greater Sum than had been given to any King to be levied in so short a time: And all things considered, it seemed to the *Commons*, that there must be a great Sum in the Treasury, besides what had been expended in the last Voyage; so that the King had no need to charge the *Commons*, who were in a lower Condition than ever, by reason of that Payment, and lately by the *Murrein* amongst their Cattel, and their *Enemies Burnings* upon the Sea-Coasts: That their *Corn* and other *Chattels* were at so low a Rate, that no Money could be raised at present. And hereupon they prayed the King to excuse them, not being able to bear any Charge for pure Poverty (*pur pure Povertie*.)

[5] Ibid. n. 19.  
A full Answer to those  
Pretences.  
The Commons charged  
with untruth.

To all which, [5] *Monsieur Richard le Scrop* answered, making Protestation, That he knew of no such Promise made in the last Parlement; and saving the Honour and Reverence due to the King and Lords, what the *Commons* said was not True; (*le dit de la Commune en celle partie ne contient my veritee*;) And as to the Subsidy last granted, that a great part of it was in the Treasury, to wit, of the Two Fifteenths and Two Tenths, and afterward of *Wooll* in that Parlement, he vouched the Testimony of *William Walworth* and *John Philpot*, who by their Consent were appointed Receivers of them, that every Penny thereof was expended upon the War, and that not one Penny came to the High Treasurer of England, or any other to the Use of the King: That the Revenues of the Crown, besides the Annuities and other Charges upon them granted by his Grandfather and Father, were too small; and without the *Customs* of *Wooll*, and *Lands* of the *Priors* aliens, the Honour and Estate of the King could not be maintained: And therefore they were to know, that according to Reason they ought to relinquish their Complaint, if they pleased (*a celle plaint vous faut par Reason cesser, si vous plest*.)

Where-



Whereupon the *Commons*, [6] after a short Deliberation, made it their Request to the *King*, he would please to shew them how and in what manner the great Sums given for the War had been expended; and also, that he would please to let them know the Names of such as should be the Great Officers of the Kingdom, and who his Counsellors, and Governours of his Person, being yet of tender Age, for the next Year, as it had been before Ordained in Parlement.

[6] Ib. n. 20. The Commons request to know how the Money had been expended;

To know the Names of the Great Officers and Governours of the King's Person for the Year ensuing.

[7] Ib. n. 21. The Answer to both those Requests.

To which it was [7] answered, on the behalf of the *King*, by the said *Monsieur Richard*, That though there never was any account given of Subsidies, or any other Grant made in Parlement or out of Parlement, to the *Commons*, or any other but to the *King* and his Officers; yet he willed and commanded of his own motion, to please the *Commons*, not that it was of Right for him so to do, or that he was forced to it do, by reason of their Request now made, That *William Walworth* then present, with some of his Council assigned thereto by him, should in Writing clearly shew them the Receipts and Expences, so as it should not be drawn into Example for the future.

As to the Officers, the *King* had caused them to be chosen by the Advice of the Lords: And as to his Counsellors, they should be such as pleased him (*& serra les Counsellors de tieux come luy plerra*) whose Names they should receive in certain (*si plest au Roy*.)

The *King* commanded, charged, and prayed them, and also all the Lords present prayed them, (*& nostre Seigneur le Roy vous commande & charge, enpriant, & ainsi vous prient touz les Seigneur cy presentz*) That having due Consideration of the great apparent Dangers on all sides, they would provide for the Defence of the Kingdom, which not only concerned the *King*, but all and every one of them, and think how the War might be maintained, and give as speedy an Answer as they could, that the Parlement might have an end, and good effect, in ease of the *King*, Lords, and themselves, for the Profit of the Kingdom, and Discharge of the poor Commons, that every day paid their Expences during the Parlement; which was one of their principal Charges given the first day. Another was, That if any Fault was found in any part of the Kingdom, or Government, in the Laws, or any other manner, that they would bring in their Petitions concerning it, and they should have due Remedy.

The Commons commanded and prayed to dispatch their Parlement Business.

To save the Charge of the poor Commons in paying their Wages

The Commons desire to have the time limited to bring in their Common Bills, or Petitions; and that it might be prolonged to the Feast of All Souls, or 2d of November next coming, that Day to be accounted in (*& ce lour estoit ottroiez*) which was granted.

They desire the Parlement may be continued to Nov. 2. It began Octob. 20.

Also the [8] Commons prayed the *King* to have a Copy of the Enrolment of the last Subsidy of Fifteenths and Tenths, as they had been enrolled upon the Roll of Parlement, for them to advise upon (*& ce lour estoit ottroiez, come de la voluntee, nostre Seigneur le Roy, & ne mye a lour Requeste*.) And this was granted as the *King's* Pleasure, and not upon their Request.

[8] Ib. n. 22. They pray to have a Copy of the Enrolment of the last Subsidy of 15ths and 10ths.

Granted at the King's Pleasure, not their Request.

They



[9] Ib. n. 23.  
How and in  
what manner  
a Committee  
of Lords and  
Commons  
were chosen  
to Treat and  
Confer.  
And the Re-  
ports to be  
made.

[1] Ib. n. 24.  
The Com-  
mons upon  
Perusal of the  
Inrolment,  
pleased with  
the Accounts.  
Say, they  
were not  
bound to bear  
any Forreign  
Charge.

[2] Ib. n. 25.  
The Answer  
to that.

[3] Ib. n.  
A further  
Proposition  
of the Com-  
mons to avoid  
an Ayd.  
The Answer  
to that.

The King  
Commands,  
and the Lords  
pray them, to  
give an ef-  
fectual An-  
swer to their  
Charge.

[4] Ib. n. 29.  
The Prelates,  
Lords, and  
Commons,  
grant a Sub-  
sidy of Wooll,  
Leather, &c.

And 6 d. in  
the Pound  
upon Mer-  
chandise.

[5] Ib. n. 30.  
[6] *Walsingh.*  
f. 219. n. 10,  
20, 30, 40.  
A. D. 1378.

They pray [9] likewise, That *Five or Six Prelates, and Lords,* might come to the *Commons* to Treat with them about their Charge; The *Lords* Answer, they neither ought or would do it in that manner, which had never been seen but in the *Three* last *Parlements*; but the *Custom* was, for the *Lords* to choose a small number of *Six or Ten*, and the *Commons* as many of themselves, and Treat together without noise, and report what they had done, to their *Companions* of one part and the other; according to this *Method* the *Lords* would act, and no otherwise, and to this the *Commons* assented, to proceed as had anciently been used.

After [1] the *Commons* had seen and Examined the *Inrolment, Receipts, and Expences*, they were well pleased with them, as honourable to the *King and Kingdom*; They only said, That 46000 l. which was expended in keeping several *Countreys, Places, and Fortresses*, as the *Marches of Calais, Brest, and Cherburgh, Gascoigny and Ireland*, was not to be charged upon them, nor as it seemed to them, were they bound to bear any *Forreign Charge*.

To which [2] it was answered, That *Gascoigny*, and the *Fortes* beyond Sea, were *Barbicans*, and as it were *Outworks and Defences* to *England*, and if they were well Guarded, and the Sea well kept, the *Kingdom* would be quiet, otherwise it could not be so.

The *Commons* [3] then propounded this Charge to be born by the *Goods* of *King Edward the Third*, which the *King* possessed, and was much enriched by them.

Whereto it was answered, That those *Goods* were justly prized, and delivered to those his *Grandfather* was indebted, except some *Necessaries* reserved for his own House, for which he had paid in part, and was to pay in whole for the satisfaction of his *Creditors*; and therefore the *King commanded*, and the *Prelates and Lords* prayed them, as they had done before, (*& purce nostre Seigneur le Roy vous commande, & les Prelates & Seniors vous prient come devant, &c.*) to advise about their *Charges*, and give good and effectual Answers, with as much haste as might be, for the common Profit of the *Kingdom*, and the Ease of the *Lords*, and themselves.

At length, notwithstanding these *Excuses*, the [4] *Prelates, Lords and Commons*, perceiving the great Perils wherewith the Land was encompassed, and the great and outrageous *Expences* the *King* was to be at, for the Safety and Defence thereof, granted to him the *Subsidy* of *Wooll, Leather, and Woollfells*, for Three years; Of *Wooll* 43 s. 4 d. the Sack; Of *Woollfells* as much, that is, for every 240 of them, (accounting Sixscore to the Hundred;) and for *Leather* 4 l. 6 s. 8 d. every Last, which were Exported by *Denizens and Strangers*, besides the ancient Custom. And as an additional Grant, they gave more 13 s. 4 d. for every Sack of *Wooll*, as much for every 240 *Woollfells*, and for every Last of *Leather* 26 s. 8 d.

Also they [5] gave 6 d. in the Pound for every Pound value of *Merchandize*, as well of *Denizens as Strangers*, both Imported and Exported, for One year.

The *Scots* [6] on Thursday before *St. Andrew*, or the 30th of November, in the night, surprised *Berwick Castle*, and killed Sir *Robert Boynton* the Governor, but suffered his Wife and Children and

A

B

C

D

E

F



and their Friends to depart, upon Condition to pay 2000 Marks within 3 weeks, or deliver themselves Prisoners; but the *Earl of Northumberland* gathered a sufficient Force, and in Nine days retook it by Assault, putting to the Sword all the *Scots* he found in it, except one that was to discover this Contrivance, and the *Scots* Designs.

*Berwick* surprised by the *Scots*.

Retaken by Assault.

A The King of *France* [7] about this time assembled a *Parlement* at *Paris*, when upon pain of Death he forced the *Noblemen* of *Britany* that were there, to Swear to yield to him the fortified Towns and Castles they held, whenever he would demand them; At their return home, they Manned and Victualled their Castles, and Places of Strength; To reduce them, he sent *Bertrand de Clequin* with a good Army, which the *Britans* forced to retire out of their Country.

[7] *Walsingh.* f. 219. n. 50. The *Britans* forced to Swear to deliver their Forts and Castles to the King of *France* upon demand.

B Sir *Robert Ross* [8] was recalled from the Government of *Cheburgh* in *Normandy*, and Sir *John Harleston* put in his place; and in the stead of Sir *Hugh Calverley*, the *Earl of Salisbury* was made Governor of *Calais*; who not long after his coming, entered into *France* beyond the *Marches*, plundered the Country, and brought with him a great Prey.

[8] *Ib.* f. 220. lin. 13. Governors of Towns changed.

C Sir *Hugh Calverley*, [9] and Sir *Thomas Percy*, were joined in Commission to keep the Sea, who with a great Force of Armed Men sailed to the Coast of *Britany*, where they took Seven Ships of Burthen, and One Man of War, and sent them into *Bristol*; and afterwards set on Shoar a Party of Men to plunder the Country, (*ad depradandum patriam convicinam*) who were all taken by *Geffry Cornuel*, a *British Knight*, that lay there in Ambush, who commanded his Men not to hurt any of them; and by a safe Condukt from Sir *Hugh Caverley*, delivered them all to him without Ransom, and informed him, That if he would land, it would much please the Lords and Inhabitants of the Country, who were ready to deliver unto him their strong Towns, and Castles, if he would remain there for the Guard of the Country; who Excused himself, and said he had other Matters to prosecute, and could not then satisfy their Desires.

[9] *Ib.* n. 20, 30, 40.

The *Britans* offer to yield their Towns and Castles to the *English*.

D The Duke of *Britan*, by his own Subjects, with the assistance of the King of *France*, had been forced out of his own Country in the time of *Edward the Third*, and was now in *England*, and made a very strict League, Offensive and Defensive, with King *Richard*, between them and their Subjects, and no Peace to be made with *France*, but by mutual Consent; The Original being in the Old Chapter-house at *Westminster*, Dated *March 1.* in the Year of Grace 1379, at *Westminster*.

A League Offensive and Defensive between King *Richard* and the Duke of *Britan*.

E Before this, [7] on the 16th of *February*, Writs were issued for a *Parlement* to meet 15 days after *Easter*, in which the Lords and Commons, considering the great Necessities of the Kingdom, the Malice of it's Enemies, of *France* and elsewhere, upon Condition the Mark upon every Sack of Wooll, and the 6 d. in the Pound which was given in the last *Parlement* at *Gloucester*, should be remitted, did then grant [8] the Subsidy of Wooll for one year after the Feast of *St. Michael* next coming, of every Sack of Wooll, as it had been granted before the *Parlement* at *Gloucester*, and likewise a Sum to be paid by divers Persons of the Kingdom, as there ordered and named. For which see the Appendix, Numb. 102.

[7] Rot. Clause 2 Ric. II. M. 13. Ders. A *Parlement* called.

[8] Rot. Parl. 2 Ric. II. n. 13. The Subsidy of Wooll, &c. granted. And a Sum of Money upon particular Persons.



[9] *Walsingh.*  
f. 225. n. 50.  
The Duke of  
Britan called  
home.

A. D. 1379.  
and 3d of  
Ed. III.

A great Mortality in the North,  
[1] *Ib.* f. 228.  
n. 10, 20, 30.  
The Scots har-  
rafs and plun-  
der the Coun-  
try.

[2] *Ib.* f. 231.  
n. 50. f. 232.  
n. 10, 20, &c.  
A Fleet and  
Army to as-  
sist the Duke  
of Britan.

The Fleet de-  
stroyed by  
Tempest.

[3] *F.* 335.  
n. 40.  
The French  
and Spanish  
Fleet destroy-  
ed by the same  
Tempest.

[4] *Ror. Clause*  
3 Ric. II. M.  
32. *Durf.*  
A Parlement  
called.

[5] *Ror. Parl.*  
3 Ric. II. n. 12.  
A. D. 1380.  
The Com-  
mons pray the  
Continual  
Council may  
be discharged.  
The Five  
great Officers  
not to be  
changed until  
next Parle-  
ment.

[6] *Ibm.* n.  
13, 14.  
A Commissi-  
on of Inquiry  
into Courts,  
the State of  
the King's  
House, Re-  
ceits and Ex-  
pences, &c.

Not long after this Parlement, the [9] *Britans* called home their Duke, who was *convoyed* by Sir *Thomas Percy*, and Sir *Hugh Calverley*, and landed at a Port near *St. Malo* on the 4th day of *August*, where, and in all Places, he was received with a mighty Welcome, and strange *Rejoicings*, as well of the *Lords* and *Great Men*, as *Common People*.

This Summer there happened [1] a great *Mortality* of People in the *North parts* of the Kingdom, whereby the Country be-  
A came almost desolate; The *Scots* took this advantage, invaded the *Borders*, harraffed, robbed, and plundered the same, killing many of the People that were left alive, driving away vast numbers of Cattel, scarce leaving any thing behind them, not so much as *Hogs*, which they never *drove* away before.

About the [2] Feast of *St. Nicholas*, or 6th of *December*, this Third year of the King, a *Fleet*, with an *Army*, to assist the Duke of *Britan* against the King of *France*, who had invaded his  
B Country, and taken several of his *Towns* and *Castles*, was to have passed into that *Dukedom*, under the Conduct of Sir *John Arundel*, Sir *Hugh Calverley*, Sir *Thomas Percy*, Sir *William Elinham*, Sir *Thomas Morews*, Sir *Thomas Banestor*, and many other *Knights* and *Esquires*, great *Soldiers*; so soon as they were out at Sea, there arose an horrible Tempest, which scattered the Fleet, and drove them they knew not whether, Sir *John Arundel's Ship* was lost, and himself *drowned*, as likewise Twenty five more, and above 1000 Men; Sir *Thomas Percy*, Sir *Hugh Caverley*, and Sir *William Elinham*, with others of Note, hardly escaped.

At the same time, says [3] *Walsingham*, the *Spaniards* and *French* had brought together a mighty Fleet out of *France*, *Spain*, *Portugal*, and other Countreys subject to them, to hinder the landing of the *English* in *Britany*, but met with the same Storm and Tempest, and lost more Men and Ships then the *English* did.  
D

On the 20th of *October* last past the King had sent forth [4] *Writs* for a Parlement to meet on Monday next after *St. Hilary*, or the 14th of *January*, wherein the *Commons*, by their *Speakers*, [5] pray, That the *Prelates* and other *Lords* of the Continual Council, may be discharged, and no such to be retained, seeing the King was of good Discretion and Stature (*de bone Discretion & Bel Stature*) in respect of his Age, which agreed with the Age of his Grandfather, at the time of his Coronation, who then had no other Counsellors, but the Five Principal Officers of his Realm; Praying further, Those Five Officers, that is to say, the *Chancellor*, *Treasurer*, *Guardian* of the *Privy Seal*, *Chief Chamberlain*, and *Steward* of the Household, not to be re-  
E newed or changed until the next Parlement.

They likewise [6] Pray a Commission to certain Commissioners, to Survey and Examin, in all Courts and Places, the State of the King's Household, the Expences and Receits in all the Offices, &c. This was granted, and a Commission made to the Earls of *Arundel*, *Warwick*, and *Stafford*, *William Latimer*, *Guy Bryan*, and *John Montacute*, *Banerets*, *John Hastings*, *John Gildesborough*, and *Edward Dalyngrugge*, *Knights*, *William Walworth*, and *John Philpot*, *Citizens* of *London*, and *Thomas Graa*, *Citizen* of *York*, &c.  
F

Then



A Then the [7] *Lords and Commons*, perceiving the *King and Kingdom* were set round with Enemies, who with great Force endeavoured all they could, as well by Land as Sea, to *destroy* them both, and further to *extinguish the English Language*, therefore for the Defence and Safety of the Kingdom, and for the good Success of the Expedition ordered into *Britany*, and Destruction of the said Enemies, grant freely, tho it was very hard to be born, to the *King* One *Fifteenth and half* without *Cities and Burghs*, and One *Tenth and half* within *Cities and Burghs*; with Prayer, That his Subsidy, and what was remaining of that given the last *Parlement* might only be applied to the Expedition into *Britany*, and no where else.

[7] *Ib. n. 16.*  
The *Lords and Commons* grant a *Fifteenth and half*, and *Tenth and half*.  
For an Expedition into *Britany*.

B Considering also, [8] that the Subsidy of *Woolles, Leather, and Woollfells*, was to end at *Michaelmas* next coming, and that from thence the *King* was not able to endure the great Charges he was to be at, to maintain the War in the *Marches of Calais, Brest, Cherburgh, in Gascoigny, Ireland, and the Marches of Scotland*, they grant him the same Subsidies, from the time they were to end, until *Michaelmas* next after; praying the *King*, there might not be a *Parlement* to charge the Poor Commons, until a year after *Michaelmas* next coming.

[8] *Ib. n. 17.*  
The Subsidy of *Wool*, and granted a further time.

C The *Scots* toward the latter end of this [9] Summer invade *Cumberland and Westmerland*, raging, killing, and burning every where, and driving away, as the Historian says it was reported, 40000 of all sorts of Beasts; and went to *Penreth*, where was then a great Fair and Conflux of People, they killed some, carried away others Captive, and with them, all the Goods of the Town and Fair.

[9] *Walsingh. f. 240. n. 30, 40.*  
*A. D. 1380.*  
The Barbarity of the *Scots* in *Cumberland and Westmerland*.

D The *Earl of Northumberland* was preparing to [1] drive them out of the Country and Borders, and force them to make Satisfaction, or do the same things in *Scotland*, when he received a Prohibition from the *King* not to do any thing, but to expect the March Day, which was a day appointed for the *English and Scots* to meet every year, and adjust things done by either Nation upon the Borders.

[1] *Ibm.*  
Which was to be considered on the *March-Day*.

E In the same year, [2] on the 16th of September, died *Charles* the Fifth *King of France*, called *The Wise*; On his Death-Bed he left the Regency to his next Brother the *Duke of Anjou*, directing him to make some Agreement with the *Duke of Britan* if possible.

[2] *M. zerray, f. 398.*  
The Death of *Charles King of France*.

His Eldest Son [3] *Charles* succeeded him, being then about Twelve years of Age, and was Crowned at *Rheims* on the 4th of November.

[3] *Ibm.*  
*f. 400, 401.*  
His Son *Charles* succeeds him.

At this time there were great [4] Tumults and Disorders in *France*, by reason the *Duke of Anjou* had not taken off the Imposts, as his Brother had Commanded on his Death-Bed, but settled new ones, especially upon the City of *Paris*.

[4] *Ib. and f. 402, 403.*  
Great Tumults and Disorders in *France*.

F The like [5] Mutinies, Confusions, and Tumults, were then in *Flanders*, by the Seditious People against their *Earl*, especially those of *Ipre*, and *Gaunt*, having received great Provocations from him, as *Walsingham* relates it.

[5] *Ibm. and Walsingh. f. 241. n. 20, 30.*  
The same in *Flanders*.

After the [6] Disaster of the Fleet and Army under the Command of Sir *John Arundel*, Sir *Thomas Percy*, &c. the *Duke of Britan* this Summer about *Whitsuntide*, sent to the *King* for Assistance

[6] *Freyssard, c. 360.*



The Duke of  
Britan sends  
to the King  
for Assistance.  
[7] *Ibm.*  
[8] *Ibm.*

[9] *Ib. c. 363,*  
and 365.

[1] *Ib. c. 368.*  
The Duke's  
negligence.

[2] *Ib. c. 369.*  
The English  
besiege Nants.

The Duke's  
further Neg-  
ligence.

[3] *Ib. c. 374.*  
They raise  
the Siege.

[4] *Ibm.*

[5] *Ibm.*  
The Duke of  
Britan makes  
his Peace pri-  
vately with  
France.

The Articles  
of that Peace.

[6] *Ibm.*

[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Holinshed,*  
*f. 428. and*  
*Walsingh. f.*  
*244. n. 20, 30.*  
The Duke of  
Lancaster went  
with a great  
Force into  
the North  
parts.  
And did no-  
thing.

istance against the King of France. Thomas of Woodstock, Earl of Buckingham, [7] as General, the Earl of Stafford, and many Barons, Knights, and Esquires, of great Note and Skill in Arms, were appointed and retained for this Expedition, and [8] landed at Calais on the 19th of July 1380, and marched from thence into Britany thro' Champagne, and other Countreys, by small Marches, without any considerable Disturbance, [9] *wasting* the Countreys as they went, staying 2, 3, 4 days, or more, at every place or good Town, where they rested and took up their Quarters; When they came near Britany, the Englishmen wondered they [1] heard not from the Duke, the Earl sent to him Sir Thomas Percy, and Sir Thomas Triwet, who met him on the way going to the Earl; When they came together at Rennes, they resolved to besiege Nantes, as the most obstinate and Rebellious [2] Town in Britany, the Duke to assist the Earl in this Siege with his whole Force; The English remained 15 days at Rennes to make themselves ready, and went before the Town; They within the Town had notice of these things, who sent to the Duke of Anjou, to send them some French Officers and Soldiers, to join with them for the Maintenance of the Place, and they had them. The English lay before [3] Nantes Two months and four days, and never heard of the Duke or his Men, when on the day after New-years-day they raised the Siege, and marched towards Vannes, where the Duke was, and there, and several other Towns near upon the Coast of Britany, the English were Quartered all Winter. [4] The Earl's intention was at the Spring to march into France, and to that purpose sent into England for more Forces; The King and his Council approved his Design, and engaged to send another Army to land at Cherburgh in due time to join him.

All this while the Duke had [5] had Commissioners at Paris, privately making his Peace with the Duke of Anjou, which was concluded upon these Articles: First, it was agreed, That the Duke of Britan should provide Ships to carry back the English into their own Country. Secondly, That the Garrison of Cherburgh, which was with the Earl before Nantes, should, if they would, return thither by Land, and have Safe Conduet. Thirdly, That after the departure of the English, the Duke to go into France, and do his Homage and Fealty to the French King, as his Natural Lord. [6] Soon after this Agreement, the Duke came to Vannes, and privately acquainted the Earl with it, excusing himself by the obstinacy of his People, and that otherwise he must have lost his Country. [7] On the 11th of April the Earl, with the English, set Sail from Vannes, and other small Ports near, and came for England.

About Michaelmas [8] the Duke of Lancaster, the Earls of Warwick and Stafford, with other Lords, and great Soldiers, with a great Force, went into the North Parts, to Account with the Scots for their late Invasion, and lay so long in Northumberland, as they ruined the Country more then a Scottish Irruption would have done; They made a Truce with the Scots for half a year, and so returned, bringing nothing from Scotland but some Horses, which they divided amongst themselves.



On Monday next after the [9] Feast of all *All-Saints*, there was a *Parlement* holden at *Northampton*, which was adjourned until *Thursday*, at which time the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, then *Chancellor*, tho many *Temporal Lords* were absent in the *Marches* of *Scotland*, with the *Duke* of *Lancaster*, declared the *Causés* of their Meeting, [3] saying it could not be *unknown* to them, That the *Earl* of *Buckingham* had been sent over into *France* with an *Army*, which had cost the *King* more then was given him last *Parlement*, besides the *Expedition* into *Scotland*, the *Defence* of *Guien*, and his *Charge* in *Ireland*, had put him to so great *Expences* as he had been forced to pawn his *Jewels*, the *Subsidy* of *Wooll's* coming to little by reason of the present *Riot* or *Confusion* in *Flanders*; That the *Soldiers* in the *Marches* of *Calais*, *Brest*, and *Cherburgh*, were in *Arrear* more then *Three months*, and there was fear they might *desert* for want of their *Pay*; That they were to Consider the *King* was mightily in *Debt*; That he was bound by *Covenant* and *Indenture*, to pay the *Earl* of *Buckingham* and others in that *Expedition*, for another half year, which was near ended; and that the *King* was to be at a very great *Charge* for *Guarding* the *Coasts*; And at last desires them to Advise the *King*, how this *Charge* might be born with the most *Ease*, and the *Kingdom* best defended against all its *Enemies* by *Land* and by *Sea*, in as short time as they could.

And when the [4] *Commons* had Treated one day about their *Charge*, (*Et Apres les dites Communes avoient entre comuner & tretes un jour de leur dit charge*) they returned into the *Parlement* in presence of the *King*, *Prelates*, and *Lords*, and there *Monsieur John Gildesburgh*, *Kt.* their *Speaker*, demanded a more clear *Declaration* of what had been said to them, and especially what *Sum* they would demand to support the *Charge*, praying no more might be required then was necessary, (*& illoques Monsieur Johan Gildesburgh Chivalier quavoit les paroles par la Commune, demanda de par la Commune illoque clavoir plus clere Declaration de leur dite, & per especial de la some totale, quelle leur verroit ore demander, par les ditz charges supporter empriantz que celle somme fust tielment modifiez, que plus ny fust demandez que ne convendroit necessairement*) for that the *Commons* were poor, and of small *Estate* to bear the *Charge* any longer; [5] whereupon a *Schedule* was delivered in by the *King's* great *Officers*, and *Council*, containing the *Sums* necessary, which amounted to *One hundred and sixty thousand Pounds Sterling*.

The *Commons* pray [6] the *King*, and *Lords*, (*la Commune empriantz a nostre Seigneur le Roy, & as Seigneurs du Parlement*) for that they thought the *Sum* demanded, was much outrageous, (*que la somme de eulx ore demandez si est moelt outrageous*) and importable, That they would use such *moderation*, as nothing might be demanded but what was *portable*, and necessary now to have, for the *Causés* above set forth; And further, they pray, That the *Prelates* and *Lords* would *Treat* by themselves about the *Matter*, and propound the *Ways* by which any such *Sum* portable might be levied and collected.

After the [7] *Lords* had advised about the *Matter*, they caused the *Commons* to come before them, (*ils firent la Commune venir antre foitz devant eulx*) and told them what they had thought

[9] *Re. Parl.*  
4 *Ric. II. n.*  
1, 2.  
A *Parlement*  
at *Northampton*.

[3] *Ib. n. 3, 4.*  
The Cause of  
Summons.

The King's  
Necessities  
and great  
Charge.  
Forced to  
Pawn his  
Jewels.

[4] *Ib. n. 10.*  
The Com-  
mons, with  
with their  
Speaker, in  
presence of  
the King, Pre-  
lates, and  
Lords.  
Desire to  
know what  
Sum was de-  
manded, to  
supply the  
King's Necess-  
ity.

[5] *Ib. n. 11.*  
The Sum de-  
manded was  
160000 l.

[6] *Ib. n. 12.*  
The Com-  
mons think it  
an Outrage-  
ous and im-  
portable Sum.  
And pray the  
Prelates and  
Lords would  
Treat and  
Propound  
the Ways  
how a porta-  
ble Sum  
might be le-  
vied.

[7] *Ib. n. 13.*  
The Lords  
cause the  
Commons to  
come before  
them.



And propound several Ways of raising Money to them.

[8] Ib. n. 14. The Commons desire One Third of the Tax might be born by the Clergy.

[9] Ib. n. The Clergy claim the Liberty of the Church, and affirm their Grants ought not to be made in Parliament.

[1] Ib. n. 15. Three Groats granted upon every Person.

Many Riots and Insurrections in the Nation.

The Three Groat Tax the supposed cause of them.

on; First, That a certain Sum of Groats might be granted of every Person of the Kingdom, Males and Females, the more sufficient to help the less sufficient. Secondly, if that pleased not, to have for a term an Imposition upon all manner of Merchandises bought and sold thro the Realm, every time they should be sold, to be paid by the Vendor. And, Thirdly, Their Advice was to raise a certain Sum by Tenths, and Fifteenths. But because the last were very grievous to the poor Commons, (*a la poure Commune*) and that Impositions had never been tried before, nor could it be known to what Sum they would rise, nor in what time a notable Sum might be raised, and therefore the Lords pitched upon the Groats, and propounded four or five to be levied upon every Person as above, so as the most able might be constrained to assist the less able; This way of Tallage seeming to them the best and most easie.

The [8] Commons, when they had a long time Treated upon the manner of the Levy, they came into Parlement and made Protestation, they came not to grant any thing that day, but they thought if the Clergie would support a Third part of the Charge, they would grant 100000*l.* to be raised by a certain number of Groats, so as the Laity might pay 100000 Marks, and the Clergie 50000, for that they possessed a Third part of the Kingdom; and prayed the King and Temporal Lords, to move it to them, speedily to resolve and take upon them the Charge.

To which the Clergie [9] Replied, That their Grants were never made in Parlement, nor ought to be, and that the Laymen neither ought or could constrain them in that Case, and claim the Liberty of the Church, which it had enjoyed before that time, and desire the Commons might be charged to do what they ought, and were bound to do, (*come ils deivent & sont Tenuz del faire*) and they would do in the present necessity as they had done before.

At last the [1] Lords and Commons agreed to give Three Groats of every Person of the Kingdom, Males and Females, of the Age of Fifteen years, of what Condition and Estate soever they were, except very Beggars; The Sufficient People in every Town to contribute to the assistance of the less able, so as none paid above Sixty Groats, including those for himself and Wife; The whole to be for the Support of the Earl of Buckingham, and the other Lords, and People with him in Britan, and for Defence of the Kingdom, and Safeguard of the Sea: Two parts to be paid Fifteen days after St. Hillary, and the other at Whitsunday next after. No Knights, Citizens, or Burgeses of this Parlement to be Collectors of this Money, but that the King would order thro the Kingdom such as should equally levy it, according to the meaning of this Grant.

Toward the latter end of this Fourth year of Richard the Second, there happened many Riots, Insurrections, and Rebellions in many places of the Kingdom; The Historians tell us this Three Groat Tax, and the Insolence, Incivility, and Rudeness of the Collectors to young Maidens, was the cause of them; They might at first be the pretence, and give occasion to put in execution what the Leaders and Contrivers of the intended general Insurrection of the Villanes, Natives, Bond-Tenents, and Clowns, designed in the First of this King, the Demands and Practices of these Men being built upon the same foundation.

These



These *Insurrections* began first in *Kent* and *Essex*: In *Kent*, under the Leading of *Wat Tiler*; in *Essex*, under the Conduct of *Jack Straw*. The [2] Bulk of the People were *Villains*, *Bond-Tenants*, *Country Clowns*, such as were in *Debt*, and knew not how to *satisfie* their *Creditors*, and *Criminals*, who feared the Severity of the Law. The *Kentish Rebels* Rendezvoused upon *Black-beath*, to a vast number, on [3] *Wednesday, June 12*. Their Pretences were *Liberty*, changing the *Evil Customs* of the *Nation*, and cutting off the *Heads* of all the *Lawyers* great and small, and all that had any *Offices* in the *Law*, or *Relation* to it any way, where-ever they could find them; for that the *Nation* could not enjoy a true *Liberty* until they were killed. [4] The *King* sent to them to know the *Reason* of that *Commotion*, and the gathering together of such a *Multitude*. They told the *Messengers* they met to speak with the *King* about certain matters, and ordered them to go back, and let him know he must come to them, and hear what they desired. Some about the *King* persuaded him to go forthwith: The *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, *Simon de Sudbury* then *Chancellor*, and *Sir Robert Hales* *Prior* of *St. Johns of Jerusalem*, then *Lord Treasurer*, earnestly dissuaded him, moving him rather to think of suppressing, than going to speak with such a *Rabble* about *Business*. [5] Of which these rude People having notice, they threaten to cut off their *Heads*: And forthwith marching towards *London*, came to *Southwark*, where they pulled down [6] Houses, brake open the *King's* *Prisons*, and let forth the *Prisoners*, who joined with them. The *Bridge-Gate* was shut against them; but by the Assistance of their *Friends* in the *City*, and by their Menaces and Threatnings of the *Citizens*, if they had not free Passage into the *City*, the [7] *Gates* were opened, and they passed backwards and forwards into and out of the *City* as they pleased, giving out they came only to search for *Traytors* to the *Kingdom*; and at that time paid for what they called for, which got them Reputation with the low and ordinary *Citizens*, of whom a great many joined with them. Next Day, which was the Feast of *Corpus Christi*, or 13th of *June*, they marched through the *City* to the *Savoy*, the *Duke* of *Lancaster's* House, whom they called *Traytor*, and hated above all Men: This [8] House they burnt and beat down, and destroyed all the rich Furniture, throwing his *Gold* and *Jewels* into the *Thames*, as likewise all his *Plate*, first breaking it into small pieces, and made it by Proclamation *Capital* for any one to retain any thing to his own use, that they might shew the People what they did was not out of *Covetousness*. [9] From hence they went to the *Temple*, then an *Habitation* for *Lawyers*; this they demolish, and burn all their Books and Papers, with the *Records* that were there kept. [1] From this Place they go to *Clerkenwell*, where they destroy all the Goods in the *Hospital* of *St. John*, and set fire on that Magnificent Building. [2] They now divided themselves into Three Bodies; one went to *Heybury*, a Mannour belonging to the *Hospital* of *St. Johns* near *London*, where they were busie in destroying and plundering all the Goods belonging to it, and pulling down a Noble House that stood there. [3] A second Body of them, which were most of *Essex* and the Countries adjoining,

They began in *Kent* & *Essex*, *Wat Tiler*, *Jack Straw*. [2] *Wals. f.* 247. n. 40, 50. & f. 248. *A. D.* 1381. [3] *Ibm.* & f. 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, &c. Their Pretences.

[4] *Ibm.*

[5] *Ibm.*

[6] *Froiss. c.* 383. Their Practices.

[7] *Ibm.* & *Wals. ut supra.*

[8] *Ibm.*

[9] *Ibm.*

[1] *Ibm.*

[2] *Ibm.*

[3] *Ibm.*

lodged



lodged themselves upon *Mile-end-Green*; and the third about *St. Katherine's* and *Tower-hill*.

[4] *Frays. c.*  
384. *Walf. ut*  
*supra.*

Next Day being *Friday*, and *June 14th*, [4] the *King* with several Noblemen went to *Mile-end-Green*, and telling them he was their *King*, asked those People (being about 60000) what they would have? They told him, *They desired he would make them free, themselves, their Heirs, and Lands*, and that they might not be called or reputed *Bond-men*. The *King* granted their Desire, on condition they would return home, and leave Two or Three only of every *Parish* or *Town*, to stay and bring with them their [5] *Charters of Freedom*, Sealed with the *Great Seal*, which should contain what they demanded. With this, and with mighty and most quick *Dispatch*, having received some of their *Charters*, they were satisfied, and went to their own *Places* and *Countries*.

[5] *Append. n.*  
103.

[6] *Frays. &c*  
*Walf. ut supra.*

At the very same time [6] the *Kentish-men*, and those with them, who placed themselves on the *Tower-hill* and about *St. Katherine's*, went into the *Tower*, the *Gates* being open without *Resistance*, though there were in it 600 *Archers*, and 600 other *Armed Men*, who were so terrified and astonished at the *Number*, *Noise*, and *Practices* of this vast *Multitude*, that they never regarded who went in, or who went out; from whence they took out the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, *Lord Chancellor*, *Sir Robert Hales* *Lord Treasurer*, *John Leg*, one of the *King's Serjeants at Arms*, and a *Franciscan Frier*, and upon *Tower-hill* cut off their Heads. After this they went into the *City*, and cut off the [7] Heads of many *English* and *Flemings* there. They drew out of the *Church* of the *Augustin Friars* 13 *Flemings*, and out of other *Churches* 17 more, and cut off their Heads in the *Streets* (that being their only way of *Murder*) with mighty *Shouts* and *Rejoicing*.

They cut off  
the Heads of  
the A. Bp. of  
Canterbury, Sir  
R. Hales, &c.  
[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Ibm.*

Next Day, being the 15th of *June*, [8] they began to do as they had done the Day before, cut off many Heads, pull down and burn Houses. The *King* then sent to them to let them know their *Companions* at *Mile-end-Green*, upon their receiving *Charters of Freedom*, were separated, and gone home to live quietly, with offer to them of *Charters* according to the same Form, if they would accept them. [9] *Wat Tiler* their Great Leader replied, He would embrace *Peace*, if he liked the *Conditions*: Thinking this way to have delayed the *King* and *Council*, so as that Night he might have put his *Design* in execution; which was to kill the *King* and the *Great Men* that adhered to him; to have pillaged, plundered, and burnt the *City*, knowing all the poor People were with him. [1] *There were three several Charters sent, but none pleased him.* The *King* at last sent to him, that he would come and treat with him about the *Articles* he insisted upon to have inserted in the *Charter*; and when the *Messenger* desired him to make haste, he bid him if he were so much in haste, return to the *King*; he would come when he pleased. [2] When he came with his *Multitude* behind him into *Smithfield*, where the *King* was, he behaved himself with such intolerable *Rudeness* toward the *King* and those about him, and making such *Demands* as could not be granted; the *King* commanded *William Walworth* *Major of London* to Arrest him, who with great *Courage* struck him

[1] *Ibm.*

[2] *Ibm.*

A

B

C

D

E

F



him a *Blow* on the Head, with which he sunk upon his Horse, and others of the King's Servants and *Citizens* thrust him thro' the Body in divers places, when he fell dead off his Horse almost under the King's Horse's Feet; [3] who finding his Followers much moved at their Captain's Death, lest they should proceed to do further Mischief, rode up to them, with his Military Men and Friends about him, and spake to them not to be troubled for the Death of such a *Rogue* and *Traytor*; telling them he was their King, and would be their Captain and Leader, bidding them follow him into the Fields, where they should have what they would ask. In the mean time, the Major of London got 1000 Men into Arms, and put Sir Robert Knolls at the Head of them, who marching into the Fields in good Order, so daunted the Rustic Rebels, that they threw down such Arms as they had, laid themselves upon the Ground, and begged Pardon. [4] Whereupon Proclamation was immediately made in London, that the Citizens should have no Correspondency with them, nor permit any one of them to come into the City. The Military Men about the King ask him to permit them to serve the Rebels as they had served others, to cut off an Hundred or two of their Heads. He would not consent, lest the Innocent might suffer with the Guilty, many having been drawn in by Fear, and such fair Pretences, as they could not know but they might be Good and Loyal. And beyond this unknown Mercy, he sent them the Charter he had Granted to those of Essex and other Countries.

At the same time, and on the same Days, [5] the Tenents and Villains of the Abby, and the Townsmen of St. Albans, with the Rustics of the whole Shire of Hertford, and Countries near, assembled at St. Albans, requiring of the Abbat and Convent to be Manumised and made Free; to have the Liberties of the Town enlarged, and to have the Charters and Grants of Privileges and Liberties to the Abby delivered to them: Which by the King's Order were so delivered, and were with great Triumph burnt in the Market-place. They also had from the Abbat and Convent Letters of Manumission and Freedom dictated by themselves, threatening if they would not grant such, to burn and demolish the Abby, cut off the Heads of the Abbat and all the Monks. And in the mean time, while they obtained these things, they cut off the Heads of such as they thought were their Enemies, or would not do as they did, burnt and pulled down their Houses, and destroyed their Goods, following and performing in all things the Dictates and Orders of their Great Master Wat Tyler, which they had received from him, and seen practised in London on Corpus Christi Day, many of these Villains and Rustics and St. Albans-men being then there. William Gryndecobbe a Servant to the Abby, and William Cadyndon a Chandler in the Town of St. Albans, being the chief Men in this Tumult, who had received their Instructions, as above, at London. They made Proclamation for all of their own Condition to come in to them, with such Arms and Weapons as they had, under pain of losing their Heads, having their Houses burnt, if they had any of their own, and the loss of all their Goods found in them. These they caused to make Oath they would adhere to King Richard, and the True Commons of England. Where-ever they

Wat Tyler  
knockt down  
by the Major  
of London, and  
killed.  
[3] Ibid.

His Followers  
lay down  
Arms, and beg  
pardon.  
[4] Ibid.

The King's  
great Mercy  
to them.

[5] *Walsf.* 254  
255, 256, 257,  
&c.  
The villai-  
nous Practices  
of those about  
St. Albans.

The chief  
Leaders of  
them.



they came they broke open the Prisons, and set the Prisoners free.

[6] Ib. f. 259.  
n. 40.

[6] While they were in the height of these villanous Practices, they received news of the Death of Wat Tyler, and that the Citizens of London assisted the King against the Kentish and Essex-men that staid with them. This, and some sent from the King to make Proclamation, upon forfeiture of Life and Member commanding them to be quiet, and return to their own Homes, humbled and made them abstain from their most barbarous and outrageous Actions. Yet they kept together, and would not separate, tho' much perswaded to it, using their ordinary Practices against the Abbat-Monks, their Friends, Lawyers, Gentlemen, and all that would not do as they would have them. And for whatever they did, pretended the King's [7] Consent, Order, and Authority; which caused the King, to undeceive the People, to send his [8] Writs to all Sheriffs, Majors, Bailiffs, and others his Faithful People, to make Proclamation to the contrary, and to oppose them every where in their tumultuous Risings and Actings against the Peace; commanding them to desist from such Assemblings, and go home. Dated at London June 17. in the 4th of his Reign.

[7] Append.  
n. 104.

[8] Ib. m.  
They pretend  
the King's  
Order and  
Authority for  
what they  
did.

[9] Walsf. f. 261.  
n. 30, 40, 50.  
The same Tu-  
mults and  
Practices at  
St. Edmonds-  
Bury.

J. Straw and  
R. Westbrom  
their Leaders.  
They cut off  
the Heads of  
the Chief Ju-  
stice of Eng-  
land, the Pri-  
or, &c.

[1] Ib. m. f. 263.  
n. 10, 20, &c.  
The like Peo-  
ple and Pra-  
ctices in Nor-  
folk, under the  
Conduct of  
John Litiſter a  
Dyer;

Who stiled  
himself King  
of the Com-  
mons, and had  
his Royal Of-  
ficers.

At the same time, and on the same Days, as if Corpus Christi Day had been the Signal Day, [9] the same sort of People Tumultuated in Suffolk, under the Conduct of John Straw a wicked Priest, and Robert Westbrom of Edmonds-Bury, where they perpetrated the same Villanies, and committed the same Insolencies, as in other Places. They came to Bury, and got into their hands the Charters of Liberties and Grants of Privilege to the Abby there, to free, as they said, the Towns-men from the Power and Jurisdiction of that Place. They cut off the Heads of Sir John Cavendish Chief Justice of England, the Prior, and John de Lakinbeath a Monk of that Monastery, and set them on the Pillory in the Market-place.

In Norfolk [1] at the same time a vast Number of such People, under the Conduct of John Litiſter a Dier of Norwich, took upon them the same Pretences, and were the very same in all their Actions. These compelled the Lord Scales, Sir William Morley, Sir John Brewes, Sir Stephen Hales, and Sir Robert de Salle, to remain with them, who seemed to do and allow what they did; except Sir Robert Salle, who publicly condemning and abhorring what they did, had his Brains beat out. The other were Litiſter's Favourites, who now called himself King of the Commons, who had his Royal Officers, amongst whom Sir Stephen Hales was his Carver. These Rebellious People. whether they were wearied with, or repented of what they wickedly had done, and considered what they must do, sent Two of the Knights, Sir William Morley and Sir John Brewes, with Three of their own, in whom they put most Confidence, to the King, where-ever he should be, to obtain a Charter of Manumission and Pardon, and that it might be more large than the Charters granted to other Counties. They had given them a great Sum of Money which had been received of the Citizens of Norwich, to preserve their City from Burning, Slaughter, and Plundering, that they might thereby obtain what they desired.



A Henry Spencer [2] Bishop of Norwich being then in Rutlandshire, hearing of this Insurrection in Norfolk, was coming thither with eight Lances only, and a few Archers at Icklingham near Barton-Mills, he met with the Two Knights and their Three Companions going to the King, and upon strict enquiry finding out the Three Traitors, he presently caused their Heads to be cut off; and proceeded into Norfolk, where the Military Men and Gentlemen came to, and marched with him to North-Walsbam, where the Rebels were encamped; he with the Force he had with him being the first Man that charged the Enemy, assaulted their Trenches, and obtained the Ditch. The Fight was sharp for a while, but the Rabble soon fled: In the pursuit many of them were killed. Lister and the Chief Movers of this Rebellion were taken, who were Drawn, Hanged, and Beheaded, with many others thro' the whole Country; by which means it was reduced into a peaceable Condition. [3] Knighton says this Martial Bishop did the same things in Cambridge and Huntington-shires; if so, 'tis more than probable he also reduced those of Bury St. Edmonds, and the whole County of Suffolk, being part of his Diocese, into good Order.

The Countries where these Insurrections and Tumults were being now pretty quiet, Commissions of Oyer and Terminer were Issued for the Trials of the Chief Contrivers and Managers of them. [4] Those of London, and such of Kent, Essex, Sussex, Norfolk, and Suffolk; as were found within the Liberties of the City, were Tried before the Lord Major, of whom the Chief were John Straw, John Kyrkeby, Alan Treder, and John Starling, who Gloried that he Murthered the Arch-Bishop. These had their Heads cut off, and several others not named.

D At St. Albans [5] William Gryndecobbe, William Cadyndon, and John the Barber, with 15 others, were Condemned, Drawn, and Hanged. Of the Chief Men of the Town were Imprisoned Richard Walyngford, John Garlek, William Berewill, Thomas Putor, and many other of the ordinary sort. Of the Country were imprisoned 80 Persons, who afterwards by the King's Mercy were set at liberty.

John Ball [6] also a Priest was taken at Coventry and brought to St. Albans, where he was adjudged to be Hanged, Drawn, and Quartered, and was executed on the 15th of July, having been some Days Reprieved by the Mediation of the Bishop of London.

E [7] This Man had Preached to please the People above Twenty Years. He made a Speech to the vast Multitude of Malefactors at Black-beath, and took for his Subject the Old Rime,

Whan Adam Dalfe, and Eve Span,  
Who was than a Gentleman?

F From which he inferred, [8] That by Nature all Men were equal: That Servitude was introduced by the unjust Oppression of Wicked Men, against the Will of God; for if God had intended to have created Servants in the beginning of the World, he would have appointed who should have been Servants, and who Lords or Masters; advising them to consider, that then was the time given them by God, in which they might shake of the Yoke off Servitude if they would, and enjoy their long-desired Liberty. And to this end

[2] Ibid. n. 50. f. 264. n. 10, 20, 30, 40. The Conduct, Courage, and Bravery of H. Spencer Bishop of Norwich.

The chief Movers of this Rebellion drawn, hanged, and beheaded. [3] Col. 2639. n. 10.

Commissions of Oyer and Terminer,

[4] Wals. f. 267 n. 10, 20, 30. for the Trial of the Rebels. Those taken in London tried before the Lord Major. J. Straw and others beheaded.

[5] Ibid. f. 276. n. 30, 40. Gryndecobbe, Cadyndon, John the Barber, and 15 others hanged at St. Albans.

[6] Ib. f. 275, 276. John Ball a Priest hang'd, drawn, and quartered.

[7] Ib. f. 275. n. 10, 20. His Speech on Black-beath to the Malefactors.

[8] Ib. n. 30, 40. The Heads of his Speech.



[9] Ibm. f. 265.  
n. 20, 30, 40.  
John Straw's  
Speech and  
Confession at  
the time of  
his death.

W. Walworth,  
and other  
chief Citizens  
of London  
Knighted.  
[1] Stow's An-  
nals, p. 463.

[2] Walf. f.  
278. n. 50.  
279. lin. 4.  
[3] Ibm. n. 30,  
40.  
A two Years  
Truce with  
the Scots.  
A Quarrel be-  
tween the D.  
of Lancaster &  
Earl of Nor-  
thumberland.  
[4] Rot. Claus.  
5 Ric. II. M.  
40. Dors.  
A Parliament  
called.  
[5] Ib. M. 39  
Dors.  
[6] Rot. Parl.  
5 Ric. II. n. 1.

further advised them to be Stout, and hasten to procure it; first, by *killing all the Great Men of the Kingdom*; then the *Lawyers, Justices, and Jury-men*; and lastly, to *destroy all such as they knew would be injurious to them for the future*: So as then they might *acquire Peace and Security*; and there would be *equal Liberty, the same Nobility, the like Dignity, and the like Power amongst them*.

This *Speech*, with the [9] *Confession of John Straw* at the time of his death, discovers the full *Intention* of these *Riots, Rebellions, and Tumults*. He said, that when they *assembled at Black-beath*, and sent to the *King* to come to them, their *Purpose* was to have *slain all the Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen* that came with him; and to have *carried the King* with them from Place to Place, that the *Rabble* might with greater *Boldness* come to them, when they should see him, as it were, the *Author* of their *Insurrections*: That when there should have been great *Numbers* got together in all *Countries*, they were to have *killed the Lords or Knights* who were able to *advise against, or resist them*; especially the *Hospitalers*. At last they were to have *killed the King, and all Bishops, Monks, Canons, and Rectors of Churches*, that were *Endowed*, and had *Lands and Possessions*, sparing only the *Friers Mendicants*, who were sufficient to *celebrate and perform Divine Rites thro' the whole Nation*. These things done, when there had been none *Greater, none more Potent, none more Knowing* than themselves, they would have *made such Laws as they pleased*, by which the *People* were to be *Governed*. They intended also to have *made Kings*, as *Wat Tiler* in *Kent*, and in every other *County One*. On the *Night* also of that *Day* whereon *Wat Tiler* was *killed*, the poor *Rabble* being on their side, they intended to have *burnt the City of London*, and to have *divided all the Rich Goods* found there amongst themselves. This he affirmed to have been their *Design*, as he desired *God* would help him at his going out of the *World*; and then had his *Head* struck off. For their *Good Service* in *destroying Wat Tiler, preserving the City, and giving him Assistance, the King Knighted* [1] *William Walworth Major, John Philpot, Nicholas Brembre, and Robert Laund, Aldermen*; and gave to *Sir William Walworth* 100 *l. per Annum Land*; and to the other 40 *l. per Annum* to them and their *Heirs for ever*: And not long after, *Knighted Nicholas Twiford and Adam Francis, Two other Aldermen*.

In the [2] time of these *Insurrections and Rebellions*, the *Duke of Lancaster* was in *Scotland*, where he concluded a *Truce* for Two *Years*, before they heard of the *Tumults and Riots* in *England*. [3] In his return, he was *denied Entrance* into *Berwic* by the *Earl of Northumberland*, which mightily incensed him against the *Earl*.

On the 16th of *July* [4] *Writs* were sent forth for a *Parlement* to meet at *Westminster*, on *Monday* after the *Exaltation of Holy Cross*, or 14th of *September*, which was afterwards *Prorogued* to the [5] *morrow of All-Souls*, which was *Monday*, when it was [6] *Adjourned* to the next *Day*, many *Lords and Prelates* being *absent*; and so unto *Wednesday*, when by reason of the *Quarrel* between the *Duke of Lancaster* and *Earl of Northumberland*, who came to the

A

B

C

D

E

F



the Parlement with great Force of Armed Men and Archers, the King caused the Parlement to be Adjourned unto Saturday, in which [7] time the King composed the Differences between them, and ended the Quarrel.

They came to the Parlement with great Force of armed Men. [7] *Walf. f. 280. n. 40, 50.* The K. ends the Quarrel. [8] *Rot. Parl. 5 Ric. II. n. 3.* The cause of Summons.

A The Cause of Summons was [8] declared to be, That they might consider how to procure the Quiet and Peace of the Nation, and settle it after the late Tumults and Insurrections, to confirm or repeal the Revocation the King had made of the Grants of Liberty and Manumission by Force and Coertion obtained by the Natives, Bond-Tenants, and Villains: That the King was much indebted, and in great Necessity for Money to maintain his Court and the Wars.

B The whole Parlement, Lords and Commons, [9] declared the Grants of Liberties and Manumission, to Natives, Villains, and Bond-Tenants, to be by Coertion in Disberitance of them, and Destruction of the Realm, and therefore to be null, and repealed by Authority of Parlement.

[9] *Ibm. n. 13.* The Liberties and Manumissions of the Villains, &c. repealed by Authority of Parlement.

The Commons [1] prayed the King to have certain Prelates and Lords to commune with them about their Charge, for that the Matters very highly concerned the State of the Realm, and it was much to the Purpose to have their Advice.

[1] *Ibm.* The Commons desire certain Prelates and Lds. to treat with them.

C The Answer [2] was, They should give in the Names to the King in Writing, of such as they desired, that he might advise about it. Which was done; and the King granted their Desire; (*le Roy leur Grantast al Effect qils firent Demandez.*)

The King [2] *Ibm. n. 14.* grants their Request.

D And the Commons further \* prayed the King, That the Prelates by themselves, the Great Lords Temporal by themselves, the Knights by themselves, the Justices by themselves, and all other Estates singly might be charged to treat and commune about their Charge, and that their Advice might be reported to the Commons. To which it was answered, That the King had charged the Lords and other Sages, to commune and treat diligently upon the said Matters: But the ancient Custom and Form of Parlement had always been, That the Commons should first report their Advice, upon the Matters given them, to the King and Lords of Parlement, and not on the contrary; and therefore the King would that the ancient and good Customs and Form of Parlement should be kept and observed.

\* *Ibm. n. 16.* The Commons pray the King the Prelates by themselves, the Great Lds. by themselves, and the Kns. by themselves, and the Justices by themselves, might treat about their Charge, and their Advice reported to them.

E After the Commons had conferred [3] with the Lords, they returned into the Parlement, and made great Complaint of the ill Government of the Realm, which if not amended, the Kingdom would be in short time ruined. They complained of the Government about the King's Person, his Court, the over-great Number of his Servants, of the Chancery, Kings-Bench, Common-Pleas, Exchequer; of grievous Oppressions in the Country (*par la Outrageouse Multitude de Braceurs, des Quereles, & Mainteinours, qz sont come Roys en Pais, que Droit, ne Loy est a poy fait, &c.*) by the great Multitude of Bracers of Quarrels, and Maintainers, who behaved themselves like Kings in the Country, so as there was very little of Law or Right, and of other things, which they said were the cause of the late Commotion, Rumor, and Mischiefs of the Land, and requested they might be amended.

This was contrary to the Practice and Custom of Parlement, which th. K. would have observed.

[3] *Ibm. n. 17.* The Commons complain of the ill Government of the Kingdom,



[4] Ibm. n. 18.  
Certain Lords  
and others as-  
signed to sur-  
vey and exam-  
in the Go-  
vernment of  
the King's  
Person and  
Kingdom.

These Lords  
and others  
were assigned  
and chosen  
by the King.  
See n. 27.

[5] Ibm.  
The King's  
Confessor not  
to come to  
Court.

[6] Ibm. n.  
19, 20, 21, 22,  
23.

The Com-  
mons Petition  
the Duke of  
Lancaster, and  
others, assign-  
ed to appoint  
Officers, &c.

[7] Ibm. n. 25,  
26.  
They petition  
for an end of  
the War.

[8] Ibm. n. 28,  
29.

They Petiti-  
on certain  
Persons may  
inspect the  
Grievances a-  
bove noted.  
No answer  
made to this.  
[9] Ibm. n. 30.

The Com-  
mons pro-  
pound 3 sorts  
of Pardons to  
be granted by  
the King.  
The first.

[1] Ibm.  
The 2d sort.  
[2] Ibm. n. 32.  
Several Towns  
excepted out  
of these Par-  
dons.  
[3] Append. n.  
And those  
that killed the  
A. Bp. &c.

The King [4] by Advice of the Lords and his Council, granted that certain Prelates, Lords, and others, should survey and examin the Government of his Person and Court, and to think of sufficient Remedies. The Persons chosen to make this Enquiry, were, The Duke of Lancaster, the Eleēt of Canterbury, the Arch-Bishop of York, the Bishops of Winchester, Ely, Excester, and Rochester; the Earls of Arundel, Warwic, Stafford, Suffolk, and Salisbury; the Lords Zouch, Nevil, Grey of Ruthin, and Fitz-Walter; Monsieur Richard le Scrop, Monsieur Guy de Bryan, and others; & autres. [5] The King's Confessor was charged to abstain from coming to, and remain- ing at Court, by the Request of the Commons and Assent of the Lords.

The Commons [6] Petition the Duke of Lancaster, and others, assigned by the King to that purpose, to place the most valued Of- ficers about the King's Person, and in his Court; to appoint a Chan- cellor, Barons, and Officers in the Exchequer, Judges of one Bench and the other; That they might know their Names, and what they were to do, and the Method they were to take in the Regu- lation of the Nation, after these things were done.

They also [7] Petition an End might be made of the War, which was in great part maintained by the Goods which the Enemies of the Nation took by Sea and Land from the English, to the great Slander of the Government and Nation, and Destruction of the whole Realm.

They likewise Petition, That certain of the Chief [8] Clercs in Chancery, certain Justices, Barons of the Exchequer, and others Learned in the Law not there named, might consult of the Grievances above; and that certain Merchants not named, might de- clare the Causes of the Low Prices of our Commodities, carrying over our Money, Washing and Clipping thereof. But I find no report made of this Matter, or Remedy ordered: There is something in the Statutes at Large in this Year, about Exportation of Money, and the Exchequer, Cap. 2. & 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.

The Commons [9] brought into Parlement a Schedule, contain- ing Three Articles for Three sorts of Pardons, if the King would please to grant them: The first was, for the Lords, Gentlemen, and others, that in Resistance of the Riotors and Traytors, caused some of them to be slain without due Process of Law; for which see the Statutes at Large of this Year, Cap. 5. The Statute there exactly agrees with the Record.

The second [1] to appease and quiet the wicked People concerning Treason and Felony committed in the Riots and Tumults, which was granted [2] to all and singular Persons, except such as were of the Towns of Canterbury, St. Edmonds-Bury, Beverly, Scharburgh, Bridgewater, and Cambridge; except also the Persons whose [3] Names were after written, and were brought into Parlement as the Chief and Principal Excitors and Movers of the Insurrections in the several Countries; and those that killed the Arch-Bishop of Canter- bury, Lord Chancellor, the Prior of St. Johns Lord Treasurer, and John Cavendish Lord Chief Justice; and except such as had escaped out of Prison, and had not then rendred themselves: Pro- vided,



vided, that such as received Damages and Losses by these Insurrections, should not by this Pardon be foreclosed from recovering Recompence by due course of Law.

A The Third was, for [4] the good People that kept themselves in Peace, and were no ways consenting to, or concerned in the Tumults and Insurrections. The Forms of the Pardons were now drawn and read, tho the King had not yet passed them.

B Afterwards, upon [5] the Petition of the Commons, That the Towns above-named might, with other Towns, receive the Benefit of the Pardon, except those Persons that were specially excepted, which the King except the Town of St. Edmond's-Bury, that for their outrageous [6] and horrible Wickedness, so long continued, he would not have comprised in his Grace; and except also the Persons whose Names were delivered into Parlement as the chief and principal Beginners, Abettors, and Procurers of the late Outrageous Treason.

After the Business of the Pardons, the Commons make a [7] Rehearsal of their Requests and Grievances they would have amended, and desire to have a view of what was done in that Matter.

C The King tells them, [8] he had been at great Expence in quieting the Nation in the late Tumults, and otherwise, as was declared to them before by his Officers, and that he was to be at further great Expences by reason of the Queen's coming, her Marriage and Coronation, which were suddenly to be Celebrated; also in guarding the Seas, and keeping his Fortresses beyond Sea, and for the defence of the Realm at home, for the discharge of which Debts, and the supply of his Expences, he had nothing in Treasure or otherwise.

D The Commons [9] answered, That considering the Evil Hearts, and Rancour of the People thro the whole Realm, they neither dare nor would grant any manner of Tallage.

E They desire the [1] Parlement may be adjourned till after Christmase, which was granted; and then they also desire again to see the Method of his Grace and Favour.

F The King [2] Replied, it was not the Custom of Parlement to have a General Pardon, and such favour from the King, when the Commons would not grant him any thing; and told them, he would advise of his Grace and Pardon until they should do what belonged to them; and said further, it was Customary to grant Pardons the last day of the Parlement, when he answered their Supplications and Petitions in Writing.

Whereupon [3] the Commons came into Parlement before the Lords, saying they had advised, and considered the great Charge of the King as well here as beyond Sea; and then the Prelates, Lords, and Commons, granted a Subsidy of Wooll, Leather, and Woollfells, until Candlemas next coming, as it was last granted, which

Provided notwithstanding, those which had received Damages might recover Recompence by Law.

[4] Ib. Rot. Parl. 5 Ric. II. n. 32.

The Third sort of Pardons.

[5] Ib. n. 95.

The Towns above all Pardoned, except St. Edmond's-Bury.

[6] Ib. Rot. And except the Persons whose Names were delivered into Parlement in Writing.

[7] Ib. n. 34. The Commons rehearse their Grievances.

[8] Ib. & n. 35.

The King tells them of his great Expences and Necessity.

[9] Ib. n. 36. They answer, they neither dare, or would grant any Tallage.

[1] Ib. n. 37, 38.

They desire the Parlement may be adjourned, and to see the Method of his Grace and Favour.

[2] Ib. n. 39.

The King advise of his General Pardon, until the Commons should do what belonged to them.

[3] Ib. n. 40.

The Prelates, Lords, and Commons, grant the Subsidy of Wooll.



The Commons much  
joyed at the  
King's Grace.  
\* *Ibm.* n. 45.  
The Practice  
of the Town  
of Cambridge  
against the  
University.  
\* *Ib.* n. 54.

which was read in Parlement, as also the *Declaration* of the *King's Grace*, at which the *Commons* were much joyed, and thanked the *King* most humbly and intirely for the same.

In this \* Parlement there were great Complaints made of the *Mayor*, *Bayliffs*, and *Commonalty* of the *Town of Cambridge*, for their *Evil Practices*, as well out of the *Town* in the *Country*, as in it, against the *University*, in the time of the late *Tumults*, as by the \* Bill exhibited against them may appear, wherein it is set forth, That they went to *Corpus Christi* or *Benedict College*, where they seized the *Charters*, *Writings*, *Books* and *Records*, broke down the *Scholars Chambers*, and took and carried away *Goods* and *Chattels* to a great value, (a grant value;) Also, That they compelled the *Masters* and *Scholars* under Pain of Death, and Destruction of their *Habitations*, to renounce all manner of *Franchises* and *Privileges* granted to them by any *King* whatsoever, and submit to the Government of the *Town* for ever; Also, By threatening Death they caused the *Masters* and *Scholars* to enter into *Bonds* to pay them great *Sums* of *Money*, and forced them to give a *General Acquittance* and *Release* of all *Actions* *Real* and *Personal*; Also, That by threatening Death they compelled the *Masters* and *Scholars* to deliver to them their *Charters* and *Privileges*, which they burnt in the *Market-Place*, contrary to the *King's Proclamation* and *Prohibition*.

\* *Ib.* n. 46.

\* *Ib.* n. 48.

The *King* issued his \* *Writs*, To *John Masterman*, the present *Mayor*, (who was then one of the \* *Burgesses* for the *Town* in this Parlement) and *Bayliffs*, and to *Edward Lystere*, the late *Mayor*, and *Bayliffs*, when the *Riot* and *Tumult* was, to appear in Parlement, to acquit themselves if they could before him and his Council, reciting in his *Writs* most what they had done in prejudice of the *Chancellor*, *Masters* and *Scholars* of the *University*; They appeared, and were ordered to deliver up the *Renunciation Bond*, and *Release* above-mentioned under the *University Seals*, which were cancelled in Parlement, and are entred upon the *Roll*. The *Bill* against them being then read in their presence in Parlement, they were asked what they had to say, why their *Franchises* and *Privileges* should not be taken into the *King's Hands* as forfeit; at that time they were not charged with any *Crime*, but, as they were told, were only to answer concerning their *Franchise*, which they did by \* *Counsel*, and denied the *Matter of Fact*; and further said, if any such things were done, they were done by the *Traitors* and *Malefactors* of the *Counties* of *Essex*, *Hertfordshire*, and *Kent*, which came to their *Town* in great numbers; but it appearing they were always present at these *Wicked Practices*, and that the *Renunciation*, *Bond*, and *Releases* of the *University*, were in their keeping, and that upon the *King's Precept* they would not deliver them, it was thought evidence enough that they were guilty of the whole; when they submitted themselves wholly to the *King's Grace*, to do what he pleased with their *Franchise*; some part whereof, by advice and assent of the *Prelates* and *Lords*, the *King* gave to the *University*, and the *Residue* he re-granted to the *Town*.

Some of their  
Franchises  
granted to the  
University.

[4] *Ib.* n. 64.  
The Parle-  
ment ad-  
journed.

On the 13th of *December*, because [4] *Christmas* was near, and the time of the *Queen's* coming into *England* was also near, and for that her *Marriage* and *Coronation* were to be solemnized, (le Parlement soit ajourne par nostre seigneur le Roy de l'assent des Prelates, &c.) the *King* adjourned the Parlement by the assent of the *Prelates*, *Lords*, and *Commons*, unto the *Friday* next before the



the *Conversion of St. Paul*; and did *Will and Command*, That the *Pleas, Causes, and other Matters* moved in that *Parlement*, and were *undetermined*, and all *other things*, with their *dependences*, should remain as they were, in the *same condition*, until the *Friday* above said.

A At the meeting again [5] of the *Parlement*, there was a great Dispute about a *Voyage Monsieur Despaince*, the *Duke of Lancaster*, offered to make into *Portugal*, if the *Kingdom* would provide him 60000 *l.* to pay the *Wages* of 2000 *Men at Arms*, and 2000 *Archers*, for half a year. The *Pretences* or *Reasons* for this *Voyage* were, for the *saving* of such *English* as were then there, that he might *recover his Right* he had there; for the *safe-guard* of the *Sea*, and the *Realm* of *England*, (*& si Dieu x plest*) and if God pleased, for the greater *destruction* of its *Enemies*; Offering also to *repay* this *Sum* in *Three years*, either in *Money*, or *acceptable Service*.  
B Upon this *Offer* and *Voyage* the *Lords* had a *long Debate*, some approved his *Reasons*, others not, so as he obtained not what he desired.

C Yet the [6] *Lords* and *Commons*, on the 25th of *February*, considering the *Necessities* of the *King*, and the *multitude* of his *Enemies* by *Sea* and *Land*, with the great *Expences* he must be at for the *defence* of the *Kingdom*, and *resistance* of such *Enemies*, granted on their *Free-will* to the *King* the *Subsidy* of *Wooll*, *Woollfells*, and *Leather*, as he received it upon the last *Grant*, from that day until the *Feast of St. John Baptist* next coming, and from thence for *Four years*. Whether such *Defence* or *Resistance* should be by the *Voyage* of *Monsieur de Lancaster* into *Spain*, or any other *manner* whatever, with this express *Protestation* of the *Commons*, That it was not their intention to be obliged by any *Words* to *Quarrel*, *Conquer*, or have *War* with *Spain* particularly, any way whatsoever, but only for the *Defence* of the *Kingdom*, and *Resistance* of its *Enemies*, by the *advice* of the *Lords*, as it should seem best to them to ordain, (*par la vis des seigneurs del dit Roialme come meultz leur semblera a ordeiner*).  
D

E Between the *summons* and *meeting* of the next *Parlement*, \* the *Great Seal* was taken from *Richard le Scrop*, who had received it by *approbation* of *Parlement*, because he would not pass some *large Gifts* of *Estates*, which had *escheated* to the *Crown*, to some *Ambitious Knights* and *Esquires*, inferior *Servants* to the *King*, and given to *Robert Braybroke*, \* *Bishop of London*, on the *Vigil* of *St. Matthew the Apostle*, or 20th of *September*, by which *action* the *King* much *disquieted* the *Great Men* and *Community* of the *Kingdom*.

F In the *Sixth* of the *King* a [7] *Parlement* was summoned to meet on *Monday*, Eight days after *Michaelmas*, and was adjourned until *Wednesday* by the *King's Command*, when the *King* and *Lords* met in the *Painted Chamber*, before whom the *Names* of the *Knights*, *Citizens*, and *Burgesses*, were called over; The *Bishop of London*, then *Lord Chancellor*, amongst others, declared the cause of *Summons* to be for the *Defence* of the *Land* against its *Enemies*, and to provide *Means* to make it.

All things by the *King's Command* to remain as they were, until it met again.

[5] *Ib. n. 66.* The *Duke of Lancaster's* Proposals of going into *Spain*, &c.

He obtained not what he desired.

[6] *Ib. n. 67.*

The *King's* *Enemies* many by *Sea* and *Land*.

The *Subsidy* of *Wooll*, &c. granted for *Four years*.

The *Commons* protest against *Quarrelling*, &c. with *Spain*.

\* *Walsingham*, f. 290. n. 20, 30, &c. The *Great Seal* taken from *Richard le Scrop*. \* *Cl. 6 Ric. II. M. 24. Dors.* Which disquieted the *Great Men*.

[7] *Rot. Parl. 6 Ric. II. n. 1, 2.* A *Parlement*. The Cause of *Summons*, the *Defence* of the *Land*, and to provide *Means* to make it.



[8] N. 9, 10.  
A further Declaration of the Cause of Summons.  
Two ways propounded to deal with the Enemies of the Kingdom.

The Bishop of Hereford, by the King's Order, made a [8] further Declaration of the cause of Summons, and propounded *Two ways* to deal with the *Enemies* of the Kingdom, one by making use of the *Flemings*, who offered their Service; and the other, to close with the *profer* of *Monsieur Despaign* or *Duke of Lancaster*, who offered to go into *Spain* for half a year with 2000 Men at Arms, and as many Archers, if he might have 43000 *l.* to pay them, for which he would oblige himself to repay either in Money or Service.

A

[9] Ib. n. 14.  
The Commons desire such Lords as they named to Confer with them about their Charge.  
[1] Ib. n. 15.  
A Fifteenth and Tenth granted.

These Matters being of so high a Nature, [9] the *Commons* make their Request to the *Lords*, to have such as they named to Commune with them about their *Charge*; which Request was granted, and the *Lords* Names entered upon the Roll.

B

The *Lords* and *Commons* [1] upon Conference, granted a *Fifteenth* and *Tenth*, by reason of the great danger the Nation was in, for the Defence of it against the great *Preparations* of the *French*, to be imployed as the King, by Advice of his Council, and the *Lords* of the *Realm*, should think fit.

[2] Ib. n. 23.  
The Lords inclinable to the Duke of Lancaster's Proposal.

After this the [2] *Duke of Lancaster's Profer* came again into Consideration, upon which the *Question* was put to every particular *Prelate*, *Earl*, *Baron*, and *Baneret*, whether they thought his *Voyage* into *Spain*, with the number of Soldiers propounded, would be profitable to the *King* and *Realm*, or not; They thought it might be so, only believing the Force too small to make War with so strong a Kingdom.

C

[3] Mazaray, A. D. 1381, 1382. great Riots and Tumults in France and Flanders.  
The King of France subdues a great part of Flanders.

At this time [3] there were great *Riots*, *Tumults*, and *Rebellions* in *France* and *Flanders*; The *Flemings* had driven their *Earl* out of his Country, he applies himself to the *King* of *France*, as his Sovereign Lord, for Relief; They crave Assistance of the *King* of *England*. The *King* of *France* marched into *Flanders*, and subdued a great part of the Country; The *Earl* besieged *Gaunt*, which was the Head of the Rebellion, and in danger to be taken.

D

[4] Rot. Clause 6 Ric. II. Part 1. M. 4. Dors.  
King Richard offers to go in Person with an Army into France.

To prevent the *King* of *France* his further Progress in *Flanders*, his Designs against *England*, and his *Preparations* to besiege *Calais*, as he had been informed, [4] as it is said in the Writ of Summons to another Parlement this year, to be held on *Monday* in the third week of *Lent*, was the chief cause of calling it. And the *Bishop* of *London*, *Lord Chancellor*, declared further, the *King* had offered to go in Person into *France* with a Royal Army, but since that he received news the *French* had over-run all *Flanders* except *Gaunt*, and therefore this Parlement was [5] called for Advice, whether the *King* should go in Person to the Relief of *Gaunt* and Recovery of *Flanders*, and how to provide where-withall for the Performance.

E

[5] Rot. Parl. 6 Ric. II. Part 2. n. 2, 3.

After the *Commons* had advised two or three days (*sur leur charge*) upon their *Charge*, it being so great, and so highly concerned

F



A cerned his Person, they [6] *prayed the King, to grant certain Prelates, Earls, and Lords named by them, to Treat with them about it, viz. The Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of Ely and Hereford, the Earls of Cambridge, Stafford, and Northumberland, the Lords Nevill, Fitz-Walter, and Cobham; The which Prelates, Earls, and Lords, the King granted to Treat with the Commons,* ([7] *combien que feust, est & doit estre, en le Election de nostre dit seigneur le Roy d'assigner a ce les ditz Prelates & Seigneurs issint nomez ou autres a sa propre nomination*) altho it was, is, and ought to be in the Election of the King to assign the Prelates and Lords for this purpose, or others of his own proper Nomination.

[6] Ib. n. 8.  
The Commons pray some Lords named by them to Treat with them.

[7] Ib. n. 9.  
The King granted their Prayer, tho it was in his choice to assign them, or name others.

B When the Commons had [8] Treated long with the Prelates and Lords, they by James Pickering, their Speaker, said, The King's Passage, and the Ordaining of his Voyage, or any other great Voyage, belonged not to them, but to the King himself and Lords, yet [9] by way of Advice, and not by Counsell, seeing what Troubles were in every part of the Land, and that the Accord and Truce with the Scots were near at an end, and they were raising great Force toward the Borders, and it being doubtful, whether they would now comply with any Proposals of Peace or Truce, unless driven to it, they thought neither himself, nor any of his Three Uncles, of Lancaster, Cambridge, or Buckingham, could be spared out of the Kingdom, until that, and the Borders aforesaid, were well quieted and settled.

[8] Ib. n. 9.  
The Commons say, the ordering of the King's Voyage belongs not to them.

[9] Ib. n. 10.  
But they say, neither he nor any of his Three Uncles ought to leave the Kingdom at that time.

D But advised him to accept of the Bishop of Norwich his [1] proffer of raising 3000 Men at Arms, and 3000 Archers well mounted, to Relieve Gaunt, Reduce Flanders, and afterward to War in France, upon condition he might have the Fifteenth and Tenth granted by the Layety and Clergy, and the 2 s. per Tun upon Wine, and Sixpence in the Pound upon Goods, for the Guard of the Sea.

[1] Ib. n. 11.  
They advise the King to accept the Bishop of Norwich his offer for the Relief of Flanders.

E The [2] Commons pray the King, That for his Honour and Profit, and the Quiet and Comfort of themselves, of his great Grace he would please to Command, that certain Lords might be assigned to be about his Person, of the most Wise, Honest, and Discreet Persons of the Kingdom, to advise and counsel him; and further, That he would please by advice of the Lords, so to order his Household, that he might live upon the Revenues of his Realm, and that the Subsidy of Wooll, Money arising from Wards, Marriages, and Escheates, might be employed to support the War, &c.

[2] Ib. n. 19.  
They pray the King certain Lords might be assigned to be about his Person to advise him, &c.

F The King [3] answered, That he would take such sufficient Persons, Lords and others, about his Person, as seemed to him most for his Honour and Profit; and as to the Government of his House, it should be done by the Advice of the Lords and others of his Council, in such good order as should seem best, saving his Honour.

[3] Ib. n.  
The King's Answer.



[4] *Ib.* n. 20.  
The Bishop of  
Norwich his  
2d Offer.  
Accepted by  
the King and  
his Council,  
and approved  
by the Com-  
mons.

[5] *Ibm.*

[6] *Walsf. f.*  
291. n. 30. 40.  
The Bishop  
of Norwich  
had Bulls from  
Pope Urban  
for a Croysado,  
against the  
Anti-Pope  
Clement.

[7] *Knighton,*  
col. 2671. n.  
20, 30, &c.  
The Ladies  
give their  
Jewels, Neck-  
laces, Rings,  
&c. toward  
this Croysado.

[8] *Ibm.*  
to be pardon-  
ed and absol-  
ved from their  
Sins.

[9] *Append.*  
n. 5.  
The Form of  
the Absoluti-  
on.

[1] *Walsf. f.*  
298. n. 30. 40.  
The Bishop  
passeth be-  
yond Sea  
with his Ar-  
my.

[2] *Ibm. f.*  
301. lin. 11.  
*Knigh.* ut su-  
pra, n. 50, 60.  
His great  
Success.  
He besieged  
Ypre.

[3] *Knigh. ib.*  
His Army  
left the Siege,  
and revolted  
from him.

[4] *Ibm. col.*  
2672. lin 3.

The Bishop of Norwich [4] having had time to consider of his first Profer, makes a second, To serve the King one Year with 2500 Men at Arms, and 2500 Archers well Arrayed and Mounted, for the whole Fifteenth granted by the Laity; of which Number, 1000 Men at Arms, and 1000 Archers, should be ready to pass the Sea for the Relief of Gaunt and the Country of Flanders, within 20 Days after the first Payment; and that he would take upon him to pay the Charge of Shipping, and other Charges. [5] This Profer was accepted by the King and his Council, and much approved of by the Commons.

This Bishop some time before had received [6] Bulls from Pope Urban for a Croysado, and to sign all with the Cross that would go with him into France for the Destruction of the Anti-Pope, who called himself Clement; and to Sanctifie the War against all his Adherents; which were the [7] French, Scots, Flemings, and many other Nations. By virtue of these Bulls, he collected a great Sum of Money, besides Jewels, Necklaces, Rings, Dishes, Spoons, and other Silver Implements, especially of Ladies and other Women: And many gave [8] beyond their Ability (as it was believed) to obtain the Benefit of Absolution and Pardon for their Sins: For otherwise they were not absolved, unless they contributed according to their Ability. Many found Men at Arms, others Archers, and many went in their own Persons. The Form of Absolution was this:

By Apostolic Authority to me committed, [9] I do Absolve thee A. B. from all thy Sins which thou dost with a contrite Heart confess, or would confess if thou didst remember them; and give thee a Full Remission of them, the Retribution of the Just; and do promise the Increase or Addition of eternal Salvation. And I Grant to thee the same Privileges that are Granted to such as go to the Defence of the Holy Land; and do impart to thee the Benefit of the Prayers and Suffrages of the Holy Catholic Church.

To publish this Croysado, and to absolve according to this Form, there were a sufficient number of Preachers sent beyond Sea, and all England over, besides all the Mendicant Friars, to stir up the People to contribute, with a Cleric to take the Names, and receive Money of the Contributors, not omitting Labourers. *Knighton,* Col. 2673.

Toward the latter end of [1] May, the Bishop passed the Sea with his Army, staid a few Days at Calais, besieged Graveling, and took it by Assault. Dunkirk yielded without much trouble, where some Flemings joining with the French and Britans, to the number of 30000, came toward the Town; [2] against whom the Bishop, tho' but with a small Number in respect of theirs, marched out of Dunkirk and gave them Battel, taking many, and killing 3000; *Walsingham* says 12000. Afterwards he took in Cassal, Dixmude, Burburgh, Fern, Newport, and Popering. Then he besieged the [3] Town of Ypre a long time, assaulted it often, and was always repulsed and beaten off; and at length, without his Knowledge, the Army left the Siege, and Revolted from him. The Battering Engines were all left behind, with one great Gun called Canterbury-Gun [4] (*cum una magna Gunna vocata Gunna Cantuariensis.*)  
The

A

B

C

D

E

F



The Bishop followed his Army, and went to *Dunkirk*, with Sir Hugh Caverse and part of it, and from thence to *Gravelin*. Sir Thomas Trivet, Sir William Elingham, and others, went to *Burburgh* with other part of the Army, and fortified it. [5] The King of France comes suddenly upon them with a great Army, besieged the Town, assaults it, and was beaten off with loss: Yet within few Days they treated, and yielded the Town to the King of France, upon Condition to march away with Horse and Arms, and all their Goods; and so they did to *Calais*.

[5] *Ibm.* n. 10, 20, 30. The King of France takes *Burburgh*,

After [6] *Burburgh* was taken, the French Army marched before *Gravelin*, and summoned the Bishop to yield the Town. The French offered him 15000 Marks to quit the Town, with liberty to demolish it, and to depart and go whither he would, and all with him, with all their Goods. He desired Time to consider of the Terms, and appointed a Day to give his Answer; and in the meant time sent to *England* for Relief; which not coming at or before that Day, he accepted the Terms, levelled the Town to the ground, and came for *England* after *Michaelmas*. And thus ended the *Croisado*, or the *Pontifical War*.

[6] *Walf. f.* 304. n. 50. & f. 305. n. 10, 20, 30. and *Gravelin*.

Before the Return of the Bishop of *Norwich*, Writs Dated the 20th of *August* had been [7] sent forth for a Parlement to meet on *Monday* before *All-Saints*. In which Writs, notice was given, That by Advice and Assent of the Council the Parlement was called, for their Mediation and Assistance in a Treaty of Peace to be had then, between the King, his Kingdom, Dominions and Subjects on the one part, and Robert King of *Scotland*, his Lands, Dominions, and Subjects on the other part; and for other Difficult and Urgent Business which concerned him, the State and Defence of the Kingdom, and Church of *England*.

[7] *Claus. 7 Ric. II. M. 37. Durs. A. D. 1384.* A. Parlement called. The Reasons of calling it given in the Writ of Summons.

Sir Michael de la Pole then Chancellor, [8] shewed the Causes of Parlement to be, for that the Truce with the Scots was to end at *Candlemas* next; and whereas the Duke of Lancaster had been sent to renew it, he was returned, and brought back, That the Scots would send Commissioners to *London*, to manage the Treaty about it.

[8] *Rot. Parl. 2 Ric. II. n. 3.* The same and other Causes of Summons declared by the Chancellor.

Another Cause was [9] to provide against Three Powerful Enemies, *Spain*, *France*, and lately *Flanders*: And here he offered several Reasons to prove it was better for us to begin and make War upon them, than they upon us, or suffer them to invade us: Further shewing, That these Wars were not to be imputed to the King, seeing that with the Crown they descended to him.

[9] *Ib. n. 4, 5*

And the last Cause was [1] for the Maintenance of good Laws, and Security of the Peace, when he put them in mind of giving Aid to support these great Charges.

[1] *Ib. n. 6.*

When the Duke of Lancaster [2] was sent to Renew the Truce with *Scotland*, it was agreed, That for the Ease of both Nations, and to save Charges, there should be sent Commissioners of both Nations to every Parlement of either Nation, who should represent the Injuries done to each other upon the Borders, and receive Satisfaction according to the Judgment of the Lords. The Scots sent not to this Parlement, but did much Injury upon the Borders, and received a Force from *France*, to join with them against the English: But hearing there were Preparations making against them toward, or just after the end of the Parlement, they sent their

[2] *Walf. f.* 309. n. 20, 30, 40. Commissioners to be sent to the Parlement of *Scotland* from *England*; and the same from *Scotland* to English Parlements. The Scots kept not this Agreement.



their *Commissioners*, who were rejected, and sent home without Treaty.

[3] *Ret. Parl.*  
7 Ric. II. c. 11.  
The Chancellor quickens  
the Lords to  
dispatch the  
King's Business,  
Laying aside  
other Debates.

The *Chancellor* [3] spake to the *Lords* a second time, and told them, The *King* commanded them to have due Consideration of the necessary Matters that had been declared to them, and of the apparent importable Mischief, and of the great Necessity he had for Money to prevent them: And that they would Treat by themselves diligently upon these things with as much speed as might be, laying aside the Debate of any other Matter in the mean time, and to report their Advice from time to time to him: And said farther, the *King* commanded them to treat from Day to Day, and dispatch what they came for, and not to depart from Parlemt without his special Licence, under the Peril that might happen.

A

[4] *Ibm. n. 12,*  
13.  
The Lords  
and Commons  
grant a half  
15ths.

And then [4] the *Lords* and *Commons* considering the outrageous Charge the *King* was to be at, by reason of the War on every side then open, granted two half Fifteenths, upon Condition the Clergy would contribute and grant as became them.

B

[5] *Ibm. n. 18.*  
The Bishop of  
Norwich accused  
by the  
Chancellor.  
His Crime  
and Punishment.

In this Parlemt [5] the *Bishop* of *Norwich* was accused by the *Chancellor* in several Articles, for his *Miscarriages* in his late Expedition: One was, That he had promised to serve the *King* with such a Number of Men for a whole Year, and served but half a Year; and then returned with his Army ruined, &c. Of which Article he could not clear himself; [6] and therefore was adjudged to make Fine and Ransom at the *King's* Pleasure, and the *Temporalities* of his *Bishoprick* to be seized for that Purpose.

C

4 Knights accused  
for selling Fortref-  
ses.

Sir *William Ellingham*, Sir *Thomas Trivet*, Sir *Henry de Ferrers*, and Sir *William de Harnedon*, were accused in Parlemt before the *Lords*, [7] for receiving Money for the Delivery of several Fortresses, the Sums in the whole amounting to 20000 *Franks* in Gold. They all made pitiful Excuses, and craved the *King's* Mercy. [8] Judgment was pronounced by the *Chancellor*, That they should refund what they had received to the *King*, and remain in Prison until they had made Fine and Ransom to him.

D

[8] *Ibm. n. 25.*  
The Judgment  
against  
them.

Before [9] *Christmas*, the *Duke* of *Lancaster* went into France to Treat of Peace between the Two Kingdoms; but brought back with him a Truce only until *Midsummer* next following, when he was to return again upon the same Errand.

E

[9] *Wals. l.*  
308.  
n. 10.  
A Truce with  
the French for  
half a year.

In the beginning of February, [1] *John Northampton* alias *Comberton*, who had been Major the Year before, moved Sedition in the City of London, and went up and down the Streets often with great Numbers of People following him; and when the present Major Sir *Nicholas Brembre* prepared to oppose him, a Shoemaker, one of his Favourers, moved the Rabble to stand by him; who by the Advice of Sir *Robert Knolles*, was taken out of his House, and had his Head cut off. Which Act stayed the Insurrection and Commotion of People at that time, who, as it was then said, had conspired to Murther the Major and many other worthy Men of the City.

F

[1] *Ibm. n. 20,*  
30.  
Sedition moved  
in the City  
of London.  
A Shoemaker  
the great Promoter  
of it.  
How it was  
stayed.



This Shoemaker's Name was *John Constantyn*, who was the Cause of great Disturbances, Commotions, and Insurrections in the City; who was not drawn out of his House, and presently beheaded by the Advice of Sir Robert Knolles, tho' very probably he might be the Person that did seize, or ordered him to be seized; [2] but was taken on the 11th of February at the Head of the Rabble, and carried presently to the Guild-Hall, and arraigned as one of the first Movers of Sedition, by Witnesses sworn and examined, and his own Confession, was adjudged to Death, and had his Head cut off; which Judgment was presently Recorded, and was afterward confirmed by the King, [3] on the 9th of February preceeding. John Northampton was sent to Corfe-Castle, there to be kept Prisoner until the King, by Advice of his Council, should otherwise dispose of him.

In Lent the Duke of Lancaster, [4] and his Brother the Earl of Buckingham, went with a very great Force towards Scotland, of Knights, Esquires, and Archers; but staid so long upon the Borders, as all the Victuals were consumed, whereby the Inhabitants received more Injury than by the Invasion of the Scots. Toward Easter he entred Scotland, where by his Delays the Scots had time enough to secure their Goods and Persons; and finding nothing but Hunger and Cold, returned with a hard Report, having lost many Men and Horses. After their Departure, the Scots invaded the North Parts, plundered the Country, and burnt Towns, as the English had done in Scotland.

This Year [5] there was another Parlement holden at Salisbury, on the Friday after St. Mark, or 25th of April. In this Parlement, says Walsingham, Fol. 309. n. 20, 30, 40, 50. a Carmelite Frier accused the Duke of Lancaster, that he designed to kill the King and usurp the Kingdom. The Duke desired he might be secured until he made good the Accusation against him; and was so: But the Night before the Day on which he was to do it, he was most barbarously murdered. Tho' he says he was accused in Parlement, yet as he relates the Story, it was before the Council; and must be so; for there is nothing of this Accusation on the Parlement-Roll.

About the [6] beginning of August, the Duke of Lancaster went into France to Treat about a Peace, or Truce. He staid there long with many Noblemen, and made a Truce only to the first of May next coming; and then returned, after the Expence of 50000 Marks.

While the \* Duke was in France, the King called many of the Noblemen together at Reding, where John of Northampton was Tried for his late Practices in London, when he was Convicted by the Testimony of his Clerc; and Sentence was to be given upon him in the King's Presence. He said such Judgment ought not to pass upon him in the Absence of his Lord the Duke; which brought ill Suspicions upon him. The Judge told him, That he was to acquit himself by Duel of the Crimes laid against him, or by the Laws of the Land to be Drawn, Hanged, and Quartered. To which making no Answer, he was condemned to perpetual Prison above 100 Miles from London, and sent to Tintagel-Castle in Cornwall, and the Goods to be seized to his King's Use.

[2] Pat. 7 Ric.  
II. M. 16. p. 2.

[3] Claus. 7  
Ric. II. M. 9.

[4] Wals. E.  
308. n. 40, 50.  
& f. 309.  
The Duke of  
Lancaster march-  
ed with a  
great Force  
into Scotland.

Returns with  
a hard Re-  
port.

[5] Rot. Claus.  
7 Ric. II. M.  
10. Dors.

A. D. 1385.  
A Parlement  
at Salisbury.

The Duke of  
Lancaster ac-  
cused of Treas-  
on by a Friar.

The Friar  
murdered be-  
fore he came  
to make good  
his Informa-  
tion.

[6] Wals. f.

310. n. 30.

A. D. 1385.

8 Ric. II.

The Duke of  
Lancaster goes  
into France;  
makes only a  
Truce for 3  
quarters of a  
year.

His extrava-  
gant Expens-  
es.

\* Ib. n. 40, 50.

John of Nor-

thampton's

Trial and

Judgment.



\* *Ibm.* f. 314.  
n. 50.  
The Duke of  
*Lancaster*  
was to have  
been Arraign-  
ed of High-  
Treason.

[7] *Rot. Parl.*  
8 Ric II. n. 1,  
2, 3.  
A Parlement.  
The cause of  
Summons.

[8] *Ibm.* n. 10.  
Two 15ths  
granted.

[9] *Ibm.* n. 13.  
The Judg-  
ment against  
*Alice Perrers*  
repealed.

[1] *Ibm.* Ro.

[2] *Knights col.*  
2674. n. 60.  
The French  
and Scots join  
to invade Eng-  
land.

[3] *Ibm.* col.  
2675. n. 10.  
The King  
marcheth in-  
to Scotland  
with a great  
Army.

[4] *Ib.* n. 20,  
30, 40.  
The Scots fly  
into the  
Woods and  
High-lands.

Some time after, the King \* intending to *Arraign* the Duke of *Lancaster* upon several Articles of Treason before Sir Robert *Tristilian* Lord Chief Justice, whereas he ought to have been Tried by his Peers; he Victualled and Manned his Castle of *Pontfract*, and stood upon his Guard, until his Peace was made by the *Princess of Wales* his Mother.

On the [7] morrow of St. Martin, or 12th of November, a *Parlement* assembled at *Westminster*. The Chancellor shewed the King's great Care of the Church, Commons, and Laws of England; and further shewed how the Nation was invironed with Enemies, the French, Spaniards, Scots, and Flemings; and that the chief cause of calling the Parlement was, to provide for the Safety and Defence of the Kingdom; and to consider how this Provision might best and most speedily be made, and so as the poor People might be least burthened; and withal let them know the King offered to go in his own Person for Defence of the Kingdom, against any Enemy, by the Advice of his Council.

These things considered, [8] the Lords and Commons granted the King, for the Defence of the Kingdom, the Safeguard of the Sea and Marches of Scotland, Two Fifteenths; one to be paid at Lady-Day next coming; the other at Midsummer; upon condition, that the last half Fifteenth granted at *Salisbury* might not be paid: And in case the King went not in his own Person against his Enemies, or that Peace or Truce should be made with them, then the latter of these Two Fifteenths not to be Levied.

In this Parlement [9] *Alice Perrers*, the Wife of Sir *William Windsor*, petitioned to have the Judgment and Order made against her in the 50th of Edward III. and the Judgment and Statute made against her in the first of this King, to be repealed; and that she might be restored to all her Lands and Tenements. [1] Which was granted by Advice and Assent of the Lords and Commons, so as the Gifts and Grants of any of the Lands, Tenements, and Houses repealed, may remain in force.

There is nothing more concerning Scotland and England in our Historians for this Year, but alternate Invasions, as they found or made Opportunities, and burning and plundering each others Countries.

Next Year [2] *John de Vienna* Admiral of France, came from thence with a great Fleet, and in June transported an Army into Scotland to join with the Scots to invade England. The King prepares an Army to march into Scotland, and sends the Duke of Lancaster with a good Force before to secure the Borders.

[3] On the 7th of July, the King was at Leicester, and the Queen with him; and there went before, came with, and followed him the Flower of the English Militia, Earls, Barons, Knights, Esquires, Valets, and others to a vast Number. With this Royal Army the King marched into Scotland; but could not find the Scots, or at least could not follow them into the Woods, Forests, Fastnesses, or the High-lands, whither they drove with them their great Cattel. [4] Finding nothing in the Country, he burnt Edinburgh, and many other Towns, cut down Woods, and burnt them likewise. While these things were doing by the English toward the High-lands, about Edinburgh, and in the East-

A

B

C

D

E

F



East-Marches, the Scots and French slipt the English, entred the West-Marches, burnt Penreth, plundered the Country, took many Captives, and made an Attempt upon Carlisle; but hearing of the coming of the English, got again into their own Country, [5] carrying more out of England, than the King with his Royal Army carried out of Scotland.

- A While the English Army was in Scotland, the King of France was providing a mighty Fleet and Army at Sluis in Flanders to invade England. Froyfart [6] says this Navy was Twelve hundred and eighty seven Ships in September, 1386. at Sluis and Blanqueberg; and adds, since God created the World there was never seen so many great Ships together. The Land-Forces were according to this mighty Fleet, and the King having notice of these vast Preparations, provided accordingly both by Sea and Land, to intercept them or hinder their Descent. [7] The Wind held contrary, so as they could not pass toward England until after St. Andrew, or 30th of November, when a Council being called it was resolved, it being so late in the Year, the Expedition was laid aside until April or May following. [8] Froyfart says he had an Account of the great Provision the Dauphin of Avergn made for this Voyage from himself.

- C In the 9th of this King, a Parlement was [9] holden at Westminster on the Friday next after St. Luke, in which the Lords, Great Men, and the Communities of Counties, Cities, and Burghs [1] (*Memorandum quod Domini, Magnates, ac Communitates Comitatum, Civitatum & Burgorum concesserunt Domino Regi, &c.*) granted to the King for the Voyage of John King of Castile and Leon Duke of Lancaster into Spain, and safe keeping of the Sea and Marches of Scotland, a Tenth and Fifteenth, and half a Tenth and Fifteenth; the 10th and 15th to be paid at Candlemas, and the half 10th and 15th to be paid at Midsummer; for the receipt and expending whereof, there were special Treasurers appointed in Parlement, and Supravisors to see it done. And this [2] Voyage into Spain was agreed and granted by the King, Prelates, Noblemen, Great Men, and Communities aforesaid in full Parlement.

- D In the King's Entrance into [3] Scotland, the King conferred several Honours upon the Persons following, at Hounslow-Lodge in Trivdale, says the Record, which were confirmed in this Parlement.

- E The King's Uncle [4] Edmond Earl of Cambridge being created Duke of York, was confirmed in that Title, and had from the King 1000 l. a Year to support his Dignity, to be paid out of the Exchequer to him and his Heirs Male, until the King could settle Lands upon him and his Heirs of the like Value.

- Then also was [5] Thomas Earl of Buckingham and Essex the King's Uncle, being created Duke of Gloucester, confirmed in that Title, with the like Gift and Settlement to support his Dignity.

- F Michael de la Pole [6] being created Earl of Suffolk, was confirmed in that Dignity, and had for the support of his Honour 20 l. a Year out of the Farm of the County, and 500 l. a Year out of the Estate of the former Earl (which had escheated to the King for want of Heirs) after the Decease of the Queen and Isabelle Countess of Suffolk.

The French and Scots march into England, [5] Wal. f. 317. n. 30. and do more Mischief there than the King with his Army did in Scotland. A mighty Fleet prepared by [6] Vol. 2. cap. 53, 53, 54. the King of France to invade England.

[7] Ib. c. 59.

[8] Ib. c. 60.

[9] Claus. 9 Ric. II. M. 45. Dors. A. D. 1386. [1] Rot. Parl. 9 Ric. II. n. 10. A Tax granted for the Duke of Lancaster's Voyage into Spain.

[2] Ib.

[3] Knighton, col. 2675. n. 50.

[4] Rot. Parl. 9 Ric. II. n. 14. Several Titles and Honours confirmed in Parlement.

[5] Ib. n. 15.

[6] Ib. n. 16.



[7] Ib. n. 17.

The *Earl* of [7] *Oxford* being created *Marquess* of *Dublin*, was confirmed in that Title, by *consent* of the *Prelates*, *Lords*, and *Commons*, and had by the *same consent*, the *Land* and *Lordship* of *Ireland*, &c. except some *Royalties* belonging to the *Crown*, paying 5000 Marks yearly into the *Exchequer*.

[8] Ib. n. 32.  
The Commons Petition the King's Household might be viewed every year, and if need were Regulated.

In this Parlement the [8] Commons Petition the King, That the State of his Household might be viewed every year, by the *Chancellor*, *Treasurer*, and *Clerk* of the *Privy Seal*, and what was amiss to be mended at their Discretion; And also, That the *Statutes* of ancient time made concerning the *Household*, might be kept and duely executed in all their Points.

[9] Ib. Ro.  
The King's Answer.

As to the *first Article* of the [9] *Petition*, The *King* will do it when he please; As to the second, *Le Roy le Voet*, The *King* Willeth.

[1] Ib. n. 33.

It was also then *Enacted*, [1] That all *Lords* and other Persons, having any *Lands* on the *Marches* beyond *Tine*, do dwell thereupon, saving that the *King* may shew favour when he please.

[2] Ib. n. 39.

The *Commons* desired to know, [2] who should be the *King's* Chief Officers, and *Governors* of the State of the Kingdom.

[3] Ib. Ro.

The Answer [3] was, The *King* hath enough sufficient Officers at present, and will *change* them at his *pleasure*.

[5] *Knigh-ton*,  
col. 2676. n.  
30, 40, 50, 60.  
A. D. 1387.  
The Duke of  
*Lancaster's*  
[6] *Ibm.*  
Voyage into  
*Spain*, and  
what he did  
there.  
[7] *Ib.* col.  
2677. n. 10,  
20.

On *Easter* [5] Day next following, the Duke of *Lancaster*, with his Wife, came to take his Leave of the *King*, to whom he gave a *Crown* of *Gold*, and the *Queen* gave another to his Wife, and the *King* commanded all about him, to call and Honour him as *King* of *Spain*. [6] On the 9th of *July*, all things being prepared for the Expedition, he set sail with 20000 Men for *Spain*, whereof in the *Marshall's Roll* 2000 were Men at Arms, and 8000 Archers, in which Army several very great Men were the Chief Officers. [7] He had with him his Wife *Constance*, the *Eldest Daughter* of *Peter King* of *Castile*, &c. for his Tyrannies called the *Cruel*, who died without Issue Male, by whom he claimed that Kingdom, and *Katherin* his only Daughter by her, and Two Daughters by his first Wife *Blanch*, Daughter and Heiress to *Henry Duke* of *Lancaster*, *Philip*, and *Elizabeth*. *Peter King* of *Castile* was Son of *Alphonso* the Sixth, *King* of *Castile*, &c. upon whom *Henry II.* a *Bastard* Son of *Alphonso*, usurped the Kingdom. He Married his Daughter *Philip*, by his first Wife *Blanch*, to the *King* of *Portugal*; and his Daughter *Katherin*, the true Heiress of the Kingdom of *Castile*, by his Wife *Constance*, to *John* the Son of *Henry* the *Bastard* and Usurper, [8] but so as if they had no Issue, the *Inheritance* of the *Crown* was to be and remain to the Son of *Edmond Duke* of *York*, Brother to the Duke of *Lancaster*, who had Married *Isabel* the Younger Daughter of *King Peter* the *Cruel*. Upon these Terms, and a mighty Sum of Money paid by *Henry* the *Bastard* to the Duke, and an Annuity of 10000 l. a year to him and his Dutche's *Constance* for their Lives, a Peace was concluded between the *Usurper* and the Duke, and the Affair of *Castile* or *Spain* settled; after which he went into *Aquitain*, and stayed there and in *Spain* more then Two years, and then returned into *England* in the beginning of *November* 1389. *Knigh-ton* [9] says, the Money paid down to the Duke of *Lancaster*, was an immense Sum, and that he was told by one of his Family and

[8] *Walsingh.*  
f. 342. n. 30,  
40.

[9] *Ut supra.*

Retinue



Retime in this Voyage, that for the second Payment the King of Spain sent him Forty seven Mules laden with Gold in Chests. [1] As he sailed into Spain, he landed some Forces in Britany, and relieved Brest, that was then besieged by the Duke of that Country.

[1] *Walſingham*. f. 323. n. 60, &c. *Knighron*, ut *ſupra*, n. 40, 50, 60.

A This year Writs were iſſued for calling a Parlement on the First of October at Westminster, dated [2] Aug. 8. wherein Michael de la Pole Earl of Suffolk, and then Chancellor of England, was impeached by the Commons in ſeveral Articles; [3] The first and chief Article was, That he was Sworn as Chancellor to procure the Profit of the King, That he purchaſed of the King Land, Rents, and Tenements to a great value, contrary to his Oath, not conſidering the Neceſſity of the King and Kingdom, and that he being Chancellor at the time of the Purchase, cauſed the yearly Rent of the Lands to be undervalued, very much in  
B deceit of the King. The reſidue of the Articles were much of the ſame Nature, for Deceiving the King, but in leſs Matters, except one, wherein he was charged, That by his fault ſome of the Tax given laſt Parlement was diverted to other Uſes then for which it was given, ſo as the Sea was not ſo well Guarded as it ought to have been.

[2] *Rot. Clauſe* 10 Ric. II. M. 42. *Derſ.* The Duke of Suffolk, Michael de la Pole, [3] *Rot. Parl.* 10 Ric. II. n. 6. impeached by the Commons.

C To this he Answered, [4] That while he was Chancellor, he neither purchaſed any Lands of the King, nor did he give any to him, unleſs when he made him an Earl, yet confeſſed he had 400 Marks a year of the King by way of Exchange; for ſo much he had by inheritance out of the Customs of Hull, whereof ſome part was aſſigned to him by one Tydeman de Limbergh, and others before he was Chancellor, and ſome part came to him by Deſcent; and his Brother in Law Sir Richard le Scrop, ſhewed the ſaid Earl, by his Valiant Acts in ſundry Battles, and his Worthy Behaviour and Counſel in ſeveral Offices at home, did juſtly deſerve what he had; He Answered to every Article;  
D [5] he ſufficiently proveth the Oath had another intendment then what was then put upon it, and further proveth, that notwithstanding his Oath, he did both lawfully take and buy. But the Commons were not ſatisfied with his Answers, and therefore at their Request, by the King's Command, he was Arreſted, and committed to the Conſtable of England, and afterward let to Mainpriſe; and had further [6] Judgment, That for Breach of  
E his Oath contained in the first Article, all the Lands he had of the King's Gift in that Article ſhould be ſeiſed into the King's Hand, to have to him and his Heirs for ever, together with all the Mean Profits and Iſſues of the ſame, ſaving to him the Name and Title of an Earl, and 20 l. a year granted out of the Profits of the County of Suffolk. [7] The like Judgment was given in every Caſe and Article, where he was charged with Deceit of the King.

[4] *Ib.* n. 7. His Answer to the Articles.

[5] *Ib.* n. 10. The Commons not ſatisfied with his Answer.

[6] *Ib.* n. 13. The Judgment againſt him.

[7] *Ib.* n. 14, 15, 16.

F Sitting this Parlement the King was at [8] Eltham, his preſence was deſired there, and by aſſent of the whole Parlement, Thomas Duke of Glouceſter, and Thomas Arundell Biſhop of Ely, were ſent to him, who ſaluting him on behalf of the Noblemen and Commons, related to him their Thoughts or Requeſts, in Words to the ſame ſenſe that the Hiſtorian writes their Speech in, [9] *Qui ſalutarent eum ex parte procerum & Communium Paramenti ſui*

[8] *Knighron*, col. 2681. n. 30. The King ſent for to come to Parlement, by the Duke of Glouceſter and Biſhop of Ely [9] *Ib.* n.



Their Speech  
to the King  
upon this Oc-  
casion.

[1] *Ib.* n. 40,  
50, 60, &c.

[2] *Ib.* Col.  
2683. l. 1.

[3] *Ib.* l. 3.

\* The Case of  
*Edw.* II.

[4] Clause  
10 Ric. II.  
M. 35.  
The great  
Officers of  
State chang-  
ed.

[5] *Par.* 10 Ric.  
II. p. 1. M. 16.

[6] *Par.* 10 Ric.  
II. p. 1. M. 7.  
Eleven Com-  
missioners ap-  
pointed to  
Govern the  
Kingdom.  
Their Names.

*sub tali sensu verborum ei referentes vota eorum*; and then be-  
gins the Speech, which was in such Language as Subjects in any  
times did not use towards their Kings and Princes, so that 'tis  
most probable Knighton was both the Author of the Words,  
and Speech, as indeed most Historians are of the Speeches and  
Orations found in them. [1] The Speech reckons up all King  
Richard's Faults most severely, and what Wicked and Evil Coun-  
sels he followed, and what desperate Courses he intended to pursue,  
in delivering what he had in France to, and putting himself un-  
der the Protection of that King, threatening him several times  
with an old Statute, and a laudable and approved Custom they  
had, which could not be gainfayed, to warrant what they said  
to him, and urged him to perform; [2] And at last the Speech-  
maker, whether the Duke of Gloucester, or Thomas Arundell Bishop  
of Ely, or Knighton, tells King Richard, they had one thing  
more to intimate to him on behalf of the People in these  
Words; [3] *Habent enim ex antiquo Statuto, & de facto non longe  
retroactis temporibus experienter, quod dolendum est, habito, si Rex ex  
maligno Consilio quocunque vel inepta Contumacia aut Contemptu seu  
proterva voluntate singular aut quovis modo irregulari, se alienaverit  
a populo suo, nec voluerit per jura Regni & Statuta ac laudabiles ordi-  
nationes cum salubri Consilio Dominorum & procerum Regni gubernari  
& Regulari, set Capitoſe in suis insanis Consiliis propriam voluntatem  
suam singularem proterve Excercere, extunc licitum est eis cum Communi  
assensu & consensu populi Regni ipsum Regem de Regali solio abrogare,  
& propinquiorem aliquem de stripe regia loco ejus in Regni solium subli-  
mare*; That is, For the People have it by an old Statute, and  
by \* Fact, (which cannot be expressed without Grief) by Expe-  
rience not very long since committed, That if a King, by any  
Malignant Counsel whatever, or foolish Contumacy or Con-  
tempt, or froward arrogant Wilfulness, by any singular or ir-  
regular Means, did alienate himself from his People, nor would  
be Governed or Ruled by the Laws, Statutes, and Laudable Or-  
dinances of the Kingdom, with the wholesom Advice of the  
Lords and Noblemen, but like a Blockhead frowardly exercise  
his own singular Will in his Mad Counsels, then it was lawful  
for them, with the Assent and Consent of the People of the  
Kingdom, to Dethrone that King, and place in the Throne in his  
stead some one more near a-Kin to him of the Royal Family.

On the 24th of October next following, Thomas Arundell, Bishop  
of [4] Ely, was made Chancellor in the place of the Earl of Suf-  
folk; and on the same day John Gilbert, Bishop of Hereford, was  
made [5] Treasurer instead of John de Fordham, Bishop of Dur-  
ham; John de Waltham was also made Keeper of the Privy Seal.

In the [6] Patents of this year, of his own free-will, at the  
Request of the Lords and Commons, the King changed these Great  
Officers; and further, by advice and assent of the Lords and Com-  
mons in full Parlement, in aid of the good Government of the  
Kingdom, the good and due Execution of the Laws, and in Re-  
lief of his own Estate, and that of his People, he appointed  
Eleven Commissioners, William Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, Alexander  
Arch-Bishop of York, his Uncles Edmond Duke of York, and Tho-  
mas Duke of Gloucester, William Bishop of Winchester, Thomas Bishop  
of Excester, Nicholas Abbat of Waltham, Richard Earl of Arundell,  
John



John Lord Cobham, Richard Lescrop, and John Devereux, to be his great and Continual Council for one year next coming after the date of these Letters Patents; by which he gave them Power to Survey and Examine all his Officers, Courts, Household, and the Government of the whole Kingdom; To receive all his Revenue, as also all Subsidies, Taxes, and other Payments; To do what they would in the Kingdom, and to amend all things according to their Discretions; and these Powers, greater perhaps then any King ever exercised, were given to any Six of them, with his Three Great Officers; Willing, That if diversity of Opinion happened between his Counsellors and Officers, that the Matter should be determined by the greater part of them; commanding and charging all Prelates, Dukes, Earls, Barons, the Steward, Treasurer, and Controller of his Household, the Justices of one Bench and the other, and other his Justices whatsoever, Barons, and Chamberlains of the Exchequer, Sheriffs, Escheators, Majors, Bayliffs, and all other his Officers, Ministers, and Lieges whatsoever, that they be attending, obedient, counselling, and aydant to the said Counsellors and Officers, so often and in what manner they should direct. Dated at Westminster the 19th day of November. Upon this Commission a Statute was made, and the whole Recited in it. See Statutes at Large, Cap. 1. in the Tenth of Richard the Second, the Parlement Roll of this year, and the Pleas of the Crown in the Parlement the 21st of this King.

This Parlement ended on the 20th of [7] November, and the last thing entred upon the Roll before that Memorandum is, That the King made open Protestation in full Parlement with his own Mouth, That for any thing was done [8] in that Parlement, he would not that prejudice should come to him or his Crown, but that the Prerogative and Liberties of his Crown should be safe and preserved.

This year Richard Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel, was made [9] Admiral of the whole Fleet in the West and North parts of the Kingdom; he got ready the Fleet, and put to Sea early in the Spring, and on the 24th of March discovery was made of a great [1] Navy of Flemings, French, and Spaniards, laden with Wine, and well Guarded with Men of War; after a sharp Engagement, wherein he took many Armed Ships, killed and took many Soldiers of different Quality, the rest fled; he pursued them two days, and in the whole took an Hundred and more Ships great and Small, wherein were Nineteen thousand Tuns of Wine. [2] Knighton in his Relation of this Engagement says, there were One hundred twenty six Ships taken, in which were about Twelve or thirteen thousand Tuns of Rochel Wine, and that the Admiral of Flanders was taken with many others; [3] He refitted his Ships, and sailed into Britany, and relieved Brest besieged the second time by that Duke, demolished the Castles he had built about it, and between Lady-Day and Midsummer took One hundred and sixty Ships well laden.

This Summer the King with his Queen went [4] a Progress into the West and North Parts of the Kingdom; in his Return he held a Council at Nottingham on the 21st of August, where many Questions about the Commission and Statute made last Parlement, and those that procured and forced the King to grant them, and how they were to be punished, were propounded to the Two Chief Justices

And Power.

[7] Rot. Parl.  
10 Ric. II.  
n. 36.  
The King's  
Protestation  
in Parlement.  
[8] Ib. n. 35.

[9] Rot. Franc.  
10 Ric. II.  
M. 13. and  
M. 18.

[1] Walsingham,  
f. 326. n. 10,  
20, 30, 40.  
The English  
take an Hun-  
dred and  
more Ships  
from the Fle-  
mings, French,  
and Spaniards.  
[2] Col. 2692.  
n. 40, 50, 60.

[3] Ib. and  
Col. 2693.  
n. 10.

A. D. 1388.

[4] Ib. n. 20,  
30, 40, 50, 60.  
The King  
and Queen's  
Progress.  
The Commis-  
sion and Sta-  
tute made last  
Parlement  
Questioned.



Justices, and other Judges, who answered, they ought to be punished as Traytors, as will be more fully related in the following Account of this year. In this Council were present, Alexander Arch-Bishop of York, Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, Michael de la Pole Earl of Suffolk, Robert Tresilian Chief Justice of the King's Bench, and Nicholas Brembre of London, Knight, his great Favourites and Advisers in all things, who were heard before all others, and according to common fame only they.

[5] Ib. Col.  
2696. n. 40.  
50, 60.

The King  
splendidly re-  
ceived by the  
Major and  
Citizens of  
London.

The Duke of  
Glocester, Earls  
of Arundel  
and Warwick,  
march with a  
great Force  
toward Lon-  
don.

[6] Ib. Col.  
2699. n. 30,  
&c.

Their Letter  
to the Major,  
Sheriffs, and  
Aldermen of  
the City.

On the [5] 10th of November the King came to London, where he had a Wonderful Splendid Reception by the Major and Citizens, who went out to meet him, says the Historian, with an innumerable Multitude of Horsemen richly Clad, and conducted him and his Queen to St. Paul's Church, and from thence to his Palace at Westminster, his great unhappy Favourites accompanying him; Next day, on the Feast of St. Martin, the King and his Favorites had notice the Duke of Glocester, the Earls of Arundel and Warwick, were marching toward London with a great Force, from Haringay Park near Highgate, who wrote [6] to the Major, Sheriffs, and Aldermen of the City, to let them know, They were and always would be Obedient and Loyal Lieges to the King, and that they ought not to wonder at their assembling in such a manner, for that in the last Parlement it was ordained by the King, That certain Lords there appointed and Sworn for the Honour of God, the good of the King and Kingdom, to have the Government of his Council and the Realm for one year; which Government had been, and was then greatly disturbed by Alexander Arch-Bishop of York, Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, Michael de la Pole Earl of Suffolk, Robert Tresilian false Justice, and Nicholas Brembre false Knight of London, all and every one false Traytors to the King and Kingdom, who falsely and Traiterously by their Engines, Counsel, and Conduct of the Honourable Person of the King, carried him into divers Parts far from his Council, in the Ruin of him and his Realm, and falsely Counsell'd him against their Oath to do divers things in Disberitance and Dismembring his Crown, being in point to loose his Heritage beyond Sea, to the great infamy and destruction of the whole Nation; and falsely made several Differences between the King and Lords of his Council, so as some of them were in fear and danger of their Lives, as they had informed the King by the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, the Duke of York, the Bishops of Winchester, and Ely, and divers other great Lords. To Redress these things, and Punish the Traytors according to Law, they were assembled, Requiring and Charging them (the Major, &c.) by vertue of their Allegiance, That they should make full Proclamation (vous requirons & chargeoms par vertue do vostre legiance que vous eut facez plein proclamation, &c.) thro' the whole City, that this is our intent and no other, and that for the Honour, Profit, and Salvation or Safety of the King, Kingdom, and all his Loyal Lieges, and that you will be Aiding and Comforting with all your Endeavour and Power, not favouring or aiding the Traytors, nor any of them, as you desire the Honour of God, the King and Kingdom, and the safety of your City, and that you neglect not this as you will avoid the danger that may happen in time to come, and that you certifie us in this Matter on Friday next, which was the 15th of November.

On



On that day the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, the *Bishop* of *Ely*, and other *Lords*, were [7] sent from the *King*, to inquire after the *Duke* and *Earls*, and having found them, the *Duke* and *Earls* Agreed to come to the *King* on *Sunday* following, when the *King* sat Two hours in his *Throne* in *Westminster-Hall* expecting them: The Reason of their Stay was, they had been informed, that at the *Mews*, and in the *Arch-Bishop* of *York's House*, there were Men placed to surprize them, which and all other suspicious Places being searched, they came into the *King's* presence, many *Lords*, *Great Men* and *Commons* accompanying them: When they came into the Hall, and first saw the *King*, they saluted him on their *Knees*, and coming to the foot of the *Steps*, or *Stairs*, up to the *Throne*, they again saluted him on their *Knees*, and the *King* making Signs to them to come up the *Steps*, at the top of them they the Third time saluted him on their *Knees*: The *King* arose, and took every one by the Hand, as his Friend, and sat down again. They then Excused themselves to the *King*, saying, They did not think or intend any Evil against his Person, and told him their Grievance was concerning the *Five Traytors*, and gave the *King* a full Account in Writing what they charged them with; He then promised publickly, That he would cause them to appear next *Parlement*, and stand to the Judgment of the *Laws* of the Land, and prefix't a day for the meeting of the *Parlement*; [8] and set forth a Proclamation on the 19th of *November* to Excuse the *Duke* and *Earls*, and that he thought them not *Traytors*, as he had been told by some of his secret Advisers, but *Worthy Men*, and took them into his special Protection; signifying also to the People, That *Alexander Arch-Bishop* of *York*, *Robert Vere Duke* of *Ireland*, *Robert Tresilian Justice*, and *Nicholas Brembre Knight* of *London*, were also in his Protection until the next *Parlement*, when they were to Answer what could be objected against them; and therefore commanded, That no Man under any pretence should do them any Injury, or give them any Trouble. The *Five Favourites* absented themselves, and lay privately where they could; [9] only the *Duke* of *Ireland* went into *Lancashire* and *Cheshire*, where, as 'tis said in this Author, the *King* wrote to *Sir Thomas Molineux*, *Sir Ralph Vernon*, *Sir Ralph Radcliffe*, the *Sheriffs* and other *Great Men* of those *Shires*, to Raise a Force, and Condukt him to him, which they did to the number of Five thousand Men. The *Duke* of *Glocester*, the *Earls* of *Derby*, *Arundel*, *Warwick*, and *Nottingham* hearing of it, with what speed they could raised a great Force; in the mean time the *Duke* of *Ireland*, on the Eve of *St. Thomas* the *Apostle*, or Twentieth of *December*, was come into *Oxfordshire*, and intended to pass [1] the *River Isis* at *Radcot-Bridge*, upon which the *Duke* of *Glocester* had placed a Guard, and so Broken it, as it was impassable; when the *Duke* of *Ireland*, seeing the great Force of his Enemies, with very great danger adventured to pass the *River* on Horseback, and made his Escape.

The *Duke* of *Glocester* and *Earls* [2] went to *Oxford*, where they consulted what to do; from thence they marched to *St. Albans*, and staid there on *Christmas-Eve* and *Day*, with their Forces. On *St. Stephen's Day* they marched towards *London*, and shew themselves before the *City* in the *Fields* near *Clerkenwell*, with a

delectable

[7] Ib. col. 2700. n. 10, 20, &c. Several Persons sent to inquire after the Duke and Earls.

They Agree to come to the King.

They pretend there were People placed in several Places to surprize them, which were searched.

The manner of their Address to the King. His Kind Reception of them.

And Promise to them.

[8] Ib. col. 2071. n. 10. He Excuseth the Duke and Earls by Proclamation.

[9] Ib. col. 2072. n. 20, 30, &c. The Duke of Ireland sent into Lancashire and Cheshire, to raise Forces for the Security of the King.

The Duke of Glocester, the Earl of Derby, &c. raise a great Force.

[1] Ib. col. 2703. The Action at Radcot-Bridge.

[2] Ib. col. 2704. n. 10, 20, &c. The Duke & Earls march with their Army to London.



The Major  
send them the  
Keys of the  
Gates.

What they  
did in the  
City.  
[3] Ib. n. 40.

They go into  
the Tower to  
the King.  
Their Dis-  
courses with  
him.  
[4] Ib. n. 50,  
60.  
He granted  
what they  
asked.

They shew  
the King from  
the Tower-  
Walls their  
Numbers.

[5] Ibm. col.  
2705. n. 10,  
20, 30.  
Many sent to  
Prison;  
Others remo-  
ved from  
Court.

[6] Ibm. col.  
2706. n. 10.  
The Judges  
taken off the  
Benches, and  
sent to the  
Tower.

[7] Claus. 11  
Ric. II. M. 24.  
Darl.  
A Parlement  
called.  
The Cause of  
Summons.

[8] Rot. Parl.  
11 Ric. II. n. 1.  
part 1.

delectable and incredible Force (*cum delectabili & incredibili Armata manu*) divided into Three Bodies. From hence Two Knights and some Squires were sent to the Major and other Chief Persons of the City, to come to the Lords, to certifie them, Whether they would stand with them, and with the *Commons* of the Kingdom (*& cum Communibus Regni*) or with the Duke of Ireland, and with the Traitors of the King and Kingdom. The Major Nicholas Exton, with the Best Men of the City, came to them, delivered the Keys of the Gates, submitted themselves to them, and offered them free Passage into the City with all their People. But before they entred, they sent in some Knights and Squires to search the Gates, Towers, and Strong Places, lest by Treachery they might be assaulted; and when all things were found secure, they entred and staid there. When it was agreed between the King and Lords they might come and speak with him in the Tower, where he then was; [3] the King sent them the Keys of the Gates, and all the Munitions: And here again they sent Knights and Squires to search all Places before they entred, lest there should be any secret Practices and Treachery against them; and when they thought themselves secure, the Duke of Gloucester, the Earls of Derby, Arundel, Warwic, and Nottingham, went into the Tower, and left their Army with the Rabble in the Plain before it. After Salutation, the King took them into his Chamber, where they had a long Discourse about what they came for; and he seeing the imminent Dangers, favoured them in what they desired. [4] They asked of him, That all of his Court suspected of Treason and Falsity (*de prodicione & falsitate suspecti*) might be seized, and every one imprisoned in several Castles. The King granted what they asked. The Earl of Derby persuaded the King to go upon the Tower-Wall to view the People gathered together for saving of himself and the Kingdom. When he saw them, he wondred at the Number and Strength of the Kingdom. Then the Duke of Gloucester told him, there was not the Tenth Part of the People that would join with them to destroy the false Traitors of the King and his Kingdom.

After this, [5] the King commanded many there named to be sent to the Castles of Nottingham, Dover, Bristol, Rochester, Gloucester, &c. to be kept until next Parlement to answer their Demerits. There were also then Removed from the Court John de Fordham Bishop of Durham, the Lords Beaumont, Zouch, Burnel, and Lovell, Sir Thomas Camoys, the Son of the Lord Clifford, Sir Baldwin Beresford, the Bishop of Chichester the King's Confessor, the Lady Mohun, the Lady Poynings, and the Lady Molinex. [6] And on the first Day of the Parlement, Sir Roger Fulthrop, Sir Robert Belknap, Sir John Cary, Sir John Holt, Sir William Burgh, all Judges, and John Loketon Serjeant at Law, were taken off the Benches doing their Offices, and sent to the Tower.

On the 17th of [7] Decemb. Writs were issued for a Parlement to meet on the 3d of February, or on the morrow of the Purification of the Virgin Mary next coming. On that Day Thomas Fitz-Alan Bishop of Ely and Chancellor of England, Brother to the Earl of Arundel (from whence his Name of de Arundel from that Title) declared the cause of Summons to be, [8] To consider by what means the Troubles in the Kingdom for want of good Govern-  
ment

A

B

C

D

E

F



ment might be ended, the King better Advised, the Realm better Governed, Misdemeanours more severely punished, and good Men better encouraged; how the Kingdom best defended, the Sea best kept, the Marches of Scotland best guarded, Guyen preserved, and how the Charges of these things was most easily to be born. And then gave notice, That who would complain in that Parlement of such things as could not well be redressed by the Common Law, might carry their Petitions to the Clerks in Chancery, there named, appointed to receive them.

A

Thomas Duke of Gloucester [9] kneeled before the King, and said he understood the King had been informed, that he was about to depose him, and make himself King; and profered to stand to the Award of his Peers in Parlement. The King declared openly, That he did not think him Guilty, and had him fully excused.

B

The Lords Spiritual and Temporal then present, \* claimed as their Liberty and Franchise, That all great Matters moved in that Parlement, and to be moved in other Parlements in time to come, touching Peers of the Land, should be discussed and judged by the course of Parlement, and not by the Law Civil, or the Common Law of the Land used in lower Courts of the Kingdom: Which Claim, Liberty, and Franchise, the King (benignement) kindly allowed and granted in full Parlement.

C

The Five [1] Lords Appellants Thomas Duke of Gloucester, Henry Earl of Derby, Richard Earl of Arundel, Thomas Earl of Warwick, and Thomas Earl of Nottingham and Earl-Marshal, made open Protestation in full Parlement, That what they did touching their Appeal and Suit in that Parlement, and had done before, and all the Men and People being in their Company (or of their Retinue or Assembly) and with them in all that Affair, was done principally to the Honour of God, and in Aid and Safety of the King and all his Kingdom, and the Safety of their Lives.

D

The Lords and Commons [2] granted half a Tenth, and half a Fifteenth before the Parlement ended, with Protestation, That it was done of Necessity; and that it might be no Prejudice to the Lords and Commons in time to come, because it was granted: And further they pray the King, That notwithstanding the Grant so made, the Parlement might hold on its course, and be Adjourned, if need were; and that all things touching the said Parlement might be done and executed as if the Grant had not been made, until the end of the Parlement in manner accustomed. And the King granted their Request, as a thing he ought to do of Reason.

E

Friday the 21st of March, which was the 46th Day of Parlement, [3] the Prelates, Lords, and Commons made the Oath following upon the Cross of Canterbury in full Parlement.

F

You shall [4] Swear, That you will keep and cause to be kept the good Peace, Quiet, and Tranquillity of the Kingdom: And if any will do to the contrary thereof, you shall oppose and disturb him to the utmost of your Power. And if any People will do any thing against the Bodies of the Persons of the Five Lords; that is to say, Thomas Duke of Gloucester, Henry Earl of Derby, Richard Earl of Arundel and

A a a

Surrey,

[9] *Ibm.* n. 6.  
The Duke of Gloucester's suspicion of himself.

The King declares him not guilty.

\* *Ibm.* n. 7.

[1] *Ibm.* n. 8.  
The Protestation of the 5 Lords Appellants.

[2] *Ibm.* n. 11.  
Half a tenth and half a 15th granted.

[3] *Ibm.* n. 12.  
in fine.  
The Prelates, Lords, and Commons swear.

[4] *Append.* n. 106.  
Their Oath.



Surrey, Thomas Earl of Warwic, and Thomas Earl-Marshal, or any of them, you shall stand with them to the end of this present Parlement, and maintain and support them with all your Power, to live and die with them against all Men, no Person or any other thing excepted, saving always your Legiance to the King, and the Prerogative of his Crown, the Laws and good Customs of the Kingdom.

The Subsidy of Leather, Wooll, &c. [5] Rot. Parl. 117 Ric. II. n. 16. granted upon condition.

[6] Ib. n. 23. The Commons Request to the King.

[7] Ib. n. Ro. His Answer.

[8] Ib. part 2. Alexander A. Bp. of York, the Duke of Ireland, and Earl of Suffolk, accused.

The Lords and Commons grant to the King, in Defence of the Realm, a Subsidy upon Leather, Wooll, and Woolfells, [5] upon Condition the Five Lords Appellants should have out of it 20000 l. by Assent and Grant of the King, for their Costs and Labour, and Expences before that time, for the Honour, Profit, and Safety of the King and whole Kingdom.

The Commons [6] pray, That no Person, of what Estate soever, do intermeddle with the Business of the Kingdom, nor the Council of the King, but those assigned in his Parlement, unless it be by Order of the Continual Council. And prayed also, That they might have Power to remove all Persons from the King which they thought fit to remove, and put others in their Places.

As to the first Point of this Article [7] (*le Roy le voet*) the King granteth it. As to the second, if any Lord of the Council, or other Lord of the Kingdom, will inform the King that he had about him any Person not Sufficient, or Honest, he wil- leth, That if it be proved, he shall be put away and re- moved, and another Sufficient, by Advice of himself, put in his Place.

In this [8] Parlement, Thomas Duke of Glocester, Constable of England, Henry Earl of Derby, Richard Earl of Arundel and Surrey, Thomas Earl of Warwic, and Thomas Earl-Marshal, did accuse and appeal Alexander Arch-Bishop of York, Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, and Michael de la Pole Earl of Suffolk; saying,

I. ' That as False Traitors and Enemies to the King and King- dom, taking Advantage of his tender Age, and the Innocency of his Person, informed him, and put upon him for Truth false things of their own Invention, against Loyalty and Good Faith, and made him entirely their own: so as they had his Love, firm Faith, and Credit, while he hated his Loyal Lords and Lieges, by whom he ought to have been Governed: And encroaching to themselves Royal Power, in Disfranchising the King (*en Defranchisantz nostre dit Seigneur le Roy*) blemishing his Sovereignty, and lessening his Prerogative and Royalty, and made him so Obedient, as he was Sworn to be Governed, Counsell'd, and Conducted by them; by virtue of which Oath, they kept him in Obedience to their false Imagina- tions and mischievous Deeds, contained in the following Articles.

II. ' Also whereas the King is not bound to make any Oath but on the Day of his Coronation, or for the Common Profit of himself and Kingdom, the aforefaid Alexander, Robert, and Michael

A

B

C

D

E

F



' *Michael, False Traitors, and Enemies to the King and Realm,*  
' made him Swear and Assure them, That he would Maintain,  
' Support, and Live and Die with them: And also whereas the  
' King ought to be of more free Condition than any other of his  
' Kingdom, they have put him more in Servitude than any one,  
' against his *Honour, Estate, and Royalty*, against their *Legiance*  
' as Traitors to him.

A III. ' Also the said *Robert, Michael, and Alexander*, by the  
' Assent and Counsel of *Robert Tresilian* false Justice, and *Nicholas*  
' *de Brembre* false Knight of *London*, by their false Contrivance  
' would not suffer the Great Men of the Kingdom, nor good  
' Counsellors to come near the King, nor would suffer him to  
' speak with him, unless in their Presence and Hearing, accroach-  
' ing to themselves *Royal Power, Lordship, and Sovereignty* upon  
' the Person of the King, to the great Dishonour and Peril of the  
B ' King, the Crown, and his Realm.

IV. ' Also the said *Alexander, Robert, Michael, Robert Tresilian*  
' false Justice, and *Nicholas de Brembre* false Knight of *London*, by  
' their false Wickedness evilly advised the King, so as his appea-  
' rance he ought to make to the Great Lords and his People Liege,  
' and the Favours and Right, to which they requested his Ans-  
' wer, were not to be obtained, but at their Pleasure and Al-  
' lowance, in staying the King from his Duty, and against his  
C ' Oath, and turning the Hearts of the Great Lords from him,  
' with Design to estrange his Heart from the Peers of the Land,  
' to have amongst them the sole Government of the King-  
' dom.

V. ' Also by the said Encroachment of *Robert de Vere Duke of*  
' *Ireland*, and *Michael de la Pole*, by the Advice and Counsel of  
' *Alexander Arch-Bishop of York*, caused the King, without As-  
' sent of the Kingdom, by their Abetments, without any De-  
D ' ferts of the Persons, to give divers Lordships, Castles, Towns,  
' and Mannors, as well annexed to his Crown as others, as the  
' Land of *Ireland*, the Town of *Okeham*, and the Forest thereof,  
' and other Lands which were the Lord *Audley's*, and other great  
' Estates, to the said *Robert de Vere*, and others, whereby they  
' are greatly enriched, and the King become poor, and had not  
' wherewith to support and bear the Charges of the King-  
' dom, unless by Impositions, Taxes, and Tributes, put up-  
E ' on his People, in Disheriting his Crown, and undoing the  
' Realm.

VI. ' Also by the Encroachment of the said *Alexander, Robert,*  
' and *Michael*, by the Assent and Advice of *Robert Tresilian* false  
' Justice, and *Nicholas Brembre* false Knight of *London*, caused  
' the King to give divers Lands, Mannors, Tenements, Rents,  
' Offices, and Bailiwics, to People of their Kinred, and other  
' Persons, of whom they received great Bribes; and also to  
F ' make them of their Party in their false Quarrels and Purposes;  
' as in the Case of *Robert Mansfield Clerc, John Blake, Thomas*  
' *Uske*, and others, to the undoing of the King and King-  
' dom.

VII. ' Also, *Robert de Vere, &c. Michael de la Pole, &c. Ale-*  
' *xander Arch-Bishop, &c.* by Assent and Counsel of *Nicholas*  
' *Brembre, &c.* encroaching to themselves Royal Power, caused



the King to give very great Sums of Gold and Silver, as well of his own Goods and Jewels, as the Treasure of the Kingdom, as *Tenths, Fifteenths*, and other *Taxes*, granted by divers Parlements, to be expended in Defence and Safeguard of the Kingdom, and otherwise, which amounted to the Sum of 100000 Marks and more, to *Robert Vere Duke of Ireland*, and others : And further, they caused many good Ordinances and Purposes made and ordained in Parlements, as well for the Wars as Defence of the Kingdom, to be interrupted, to the great Injury of the King and Kingdom.

A

VIII. Also by the said Encroachment, and by great Bribes taken by the said *Robert, Michael*, and *Alexander*, divers Persons not sufficient or fit, had the Guard and Government of divers Lordships, Castles, and Countries of War, as in *Guyen* and elsewhere, as well on this side as beyond the Sea ; whereby the People and Countries of those Parts, Liege and Loyal to the King for the greater Part, were destroyed, and great Dominions of late rendred into the hands and possession of the Enemy, without Assent of the Realm, which were never in the hands of the Enemy since the Conquest of them, as in the Marches of *Scotland* and elsewhere, in Disherison of the Crown, and great Injury of the Realm, as in the Case of *Harpedene, Craddock*, and others.

B

IX. Also by the Encroachment of the foresaid *Alexander, Robert, Michael, Robert*, and *Nicholas*,, divers People have been hindred of the Benefit of the Common Law of *England*, and put to great Delays, Losses, and Costs ; and Statutes, Judgments, justly made upon the necessary Causes in Parlement, have been reversed and nulled, by Procurement of the said Misdoers and Traitors, and this by Reason of the great Bribes by them received, to the greatest Injury of the King and Kingdom.

C

X. Also the Five aforesaid accroaching to them Royal Power, as false Traitors to the King and Kingdom, caused and counselled the King to grant Charters of Pardon for horrible Felonies and Treasons, as well against the State of the King as of the Party, against the Law and Oath of the King.

D

XI. Also, whereas the Great Lordship and Land of *Ireland*, hath been beyond Memory Parcel of the Crown of *England*, and the People thereof for all that time have been the King's Lieges without mean to him or his Royal Progenitors ; and our Lord and his Noble Progenitors King's of *England*, in all their Charters, Writs, Letters, and Patents, and also under their Seals in Augmentation of their Names and Royalty, stiled themselves *Lords of Ireland* ; the foresaid *Robert Duke of Ireland, Alexander, &c. Michael, &c.* as false Traitors to the King by the said Encroachment, gave Advice that the King, inasmuch as was in him, had granted, that *Robert de Vere* should be King of *Ireland* ; and to accomplish this wicked Purpose, the foresaid Traitors counselled and excited the King to send Letters to the Pope to ratifie and confirm their Traiterous Intention, without the Knowledge and Assent of the Kingdom of *England*, or Land of *Ireland*, in parting the King's Legiance in respect to both Nations, in decrease of the Honourable Name of the King, and in open Disherison of his Crown of *England*.

E

F



‘land, and full Destruction of his Loyal Lieges and the Nation  
‘of Ireland.

A XII. ‘Also, whereas by the Great Charter, and other good  
‘Laws and Usages of the Kingdom, no Man ought to be taken,  
‘put in Prison, or to Death, without due Process of Law, the fore  
‘said *Nich. Brembre* false Knight of *London*, took by night certain  
‘Persons out of the Prison of *Newgate*, Chaplains and others,  
‘to the Number of Twenty two, some Debtors, others accused  
‘of Felony, and some Approvers in the Case of Felony, and  
‘some taken and imprisoned there upon suspicion of Felony,  
‘and led them into *Kent* to a Place called the *Foul Oke*, and  
‘there encroaching to himself Royal Power, as a Traitor to the  
‘King, and without Warrant or Process of Law, caused their  
‘Heads to be cut off, all but one, who was Appealed of Fe-  
‘lony by an Approver, and him he suffered to go at large at the  
B ‘same time.

XIII. ‘Also the foresaid *Alexander, &c. Robert, &c. Michael,*  
‘*&c. Robert, &c. Nicholas, &c.* Traitors to the King and King-  
‘dom, took great Bribes in many Cases, in the Name of the  
‘King, for Maintenance of Quarrels or Suits; and one time  
‘took Bribes of both Sides or Parties, as shall be more fully  
‘shewed, if need be.

C XIV. ‘Also these Five caused some Lords and others Loyal  
‘Lieges to be put out of the King’s Council, and so as they  
‘dare not speak in Parlement about the good Government of  
‘the King’s Person or Kingdom.

D XV. ‘Also, whereas in the last Parlement all the Lords, Sages,  
‘and Commons there assembled, seeing the imminent Ruin of  
‘the King and Kingdom, by the Perils and Mischiefs aforesaid,  
‘and for that the King had forsaken the Counsel of the King-  
‘dom, and holden himself altogether to the Counsel of the said  
‘Five Evil-doers and Traitors; and also for that the King of  
‘*France* with his Royal Power was Shipped at Sea, ready to  
‘have Landed in *England*, to have destroyed the Kingdom and  
‘Language thereof; and there was no Ordinance then made, or  
‘Care taken for the Safety of the King and Kingdom; They  
‘knew no other Remedy than to shew the King fully how he  
‘was ill Governed, Led, and Counsell’d, by the Traitors and  
‘Ill-doers aforesaid; requiring him most humbly as his Loyal  
E ‘Lieges, for the Safety of him and his whole Realm, and to  
‘avoid the Perils aforesaid, to remove from his Presence the said  
‘Evil-doers and Traitors, and not to do any thing after their  
‘Advice, but according to the Counsel of the Loyal and Dis-  
‘creet Sages of the Realm: And hereupon the said Traitors and  
‘Evil-doers, seeing the Good and Honourable Opinion of the  
‘Parlement, to undo this Good Purpose, by their false Counsel  
‘caused the King to Command the Major of *London* to kill and  
F ‘put to death all the said Lords and Commons, except such as  
‘were of their Party; to the doing whereof, these great Traitors  
‘and Evil-doers should have been Parties, and present, in undo-  
‘ing the King and Kingdom.

XVI. ‘Also, That those Five Traitors, &c. when the Major  
‘and Good People of *London* utterly refused, in the Presence of  
‘the King, to Murder the Lords and Commons, by their said  
‘Trai-



‘ Traiterous Accroachment, falsly Counsell’d the King, and prevailed with him to leave the Parlement for many Days; and caused him to certifie (*& fist certifier*) That he would not come to the Parlement, nor Treat with the Lords and Commons of the Busines of the Kingdom, for any Peril, Ruin, or Mischief that might happen any ways to him or the Realm, if he were not first assured, by the Lords and Commons, that they would not speak or do in that Parlement against any of the Misdoers, saving that they might proceed on in the Proceſs which was then commenced against Sir *Michael de la Pole*; to the great Ruin of the King and Kingdom, against the ancient Ordinances and Liberties of Parlement.

XVII. ‘ Also the said Lords and Commons, after they understood the King’s Mind, by the wicked Excitation and Counsel of the Five, *&c.* was such, as he would not suffer any thing to be commenced, pursued, or done, against the said Mis- or Evil-doers (*mesfours*) they dare not speak or proceed against the King’s Will; and then in Parlement was read the Counsel and Advice of the Lords and Justices, and other Sages and Commons of Parlement, how the Estate of the King and his Royalty might be best saved, against the Perils and Mischiefs aforesaid, and they knew not how to find any other Remedy than to ordain, That Twelve Loyal Lords of the Land should be the King’s Council for One Year; and that there should be made such a Commission and Statute, by which they should have full and sufficient Power to Ordain, *&c.* according to the Effect of the Commission and Statute; by which Commission and Statute, no Man was to Advise the King against them, under Forfeiture, for the first Offence, of his Goods and Chattels; for the second Offence, Life and Member: Which Ordinances, Statute and Commission were made agreeable to the Assent of the King, the Lords, Justices, and other Sages and Commons assembled in the said Parlement, to save the King, his Royalty and Realm: The said Traitors and Misdoers, by their Evil, False, and Traiterous Informations of the King, that the said Ordinance, Statute, and Commission were made to Defeat his Royalty; and that all those who procured and counselled the making of them, and those who excited the King to Consent to them, were worthy to be done to Death as Traitors to the King.

XVIII. ‘ Also, after this, the said Five Misdoers and Traitors, caused the King to assemble a Council of certain Lords, Justices, and others, many times without the Assent and Presence of the Lords of the Great Council; and made divers Demands of them very suspicious, of divers Matters; by which the King, Lords, and Common People were in great Trouble, and the whole Realm also.

XIX. ‘ Also to accomplish the said High Treason, the Misdoers and Traitors, *Alexander, &c. Robert, &c. Michael, &c.* by the Assent and Counsel of *Robert Tresilian*, and *Nicholas Brembre*, caused the King to go through the Kingdom with some of them, and into *Wales*, and caused him to make come before him the Lords, Knights, and Esquires, and other good People of those Parts, as well of Cities and Burghs, as other Places; and made some to

‘ enter



‘ enter into Bond, others by their Oaths, to stand with him  
 ‘ against all People, and to effect his Purpose, which at that time  
 ‘ was the Will and Purpose of the said Misdoers and Traitors,  
 ‘ by their false Imaginations, Deceits, and Accroachments  
 ‘ abovesaid: Which Securities and Oaths were against the  
 ‘ Good Laws and Usages of the Land, and against the Oath  
 ‘ of the King, to the great Ruin and Dishonour of the King and  
 ‘ Kingdom.

A

XX. ‘ Also by force of such Bonds and Oaths, all the Realm  
 ‘ was put into great Trouble by the said Evil-doers and Trai-  
 ‘ tors, and in peril to have suffered many importable Mis-  
 ‘ chiefs.

XXI. ‘ Also, to bring about their Traiterous Purposes, the  
 ‘ said Five caused the King to go into several Parts of the  
 ‘ Kingdom for some long times, whereby the Lords af-  
 ‘ signed by the said Ordinance, Statute, and Commisfi-  
 ‘ on, could not Advise with him about the Business of the  
 ‘ Kingdom; so as the Purport and Effect of the Ordinance, Sta-  
 ‘ tute, and Commission, were Defeated, to the great Ruin of the  
 ‘ King and Kingdom.

B

XXII. ‘ Also the said *Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland*, by the  
 ‘ Counsel and Abet of the other Four Traitors, accroaching to  
 ‘ himself Royal Power, without the King’s Commission, or other  
 ‘ sufficient usual Warrant, made himself Justice of *Chester*, and  
 ‘ by himself and Deputies held all manner of Pleas, as well  
 ‘ Common, as of the Crown, and gave Judgments upon them,  
 ‘ and made Execution thereof; and also caused many Original  
 ‘ and Judicial Writs to be sealed with the Great Seal used in  
 ‘ those Parts: And also by such Accroachment of Royal Power,  
 ‘ he caused to rise with him a great Part of the People of that  
 ‘ Country, some by Threats, others by Imprisonments of their  
 ‘ Bodies; some by seizing of their Lands; others by many  
 ‘ Dishonest Ways by colour of the said Office; and all this,  
 ‘ to make War upon, and destroy the Lords, and other the  
 ‘ King’s Loyal Lieges, in undoing the King and whole  
 ‘ Realm.

C

XXIII. ‘ Also the said Traitors *Robert de Vere, &c. Alexander,*  
 ‘ *&c. Michael, &c.* by the Counsel and Abet of *Robert Tresilian*  
 ‘ and *Nicholas Brembre*, incroaching to themselves Royal Power,  
 ‘ caused to be delivered *John de Blois* Heir of *Britan*, who was  
 ‘ Prisoner and Security to the King and Kingdom, without Assent  
 ‘ of Parlement and the King’s Great Council, and without War-  
 ‘ rant, to the great Strengthening of the Adversary of *France*,  
 ‘ the great Ruin of the King and Realm, and against the Sta-  
 ‘ tutes and Ordinances aforesaid, made in the last Parle-  
 ‘ ment.

E

XXIV. ‘ Also, the said Five Traytors caused the King to have  
 ‘ a great Retinue of late, of divers People to whom he gave  
 ‘ Badges, which was not done in ancient time by any Kings his  
 ‘ Progenitors, that he might have Power to perform their false  
 ‘ Treason aforesaid.

F

XXV. ‘ Also the aforesaid Five Misdoers and Traytors, in full  
 ‘ accomplishment of all their Treasons aforesaid, and to make  
 ‘ the King give Credit to them and their Counsel, and hold  
 ‘ them



‘ them more Loyal and greater Sages then others of his Kingdom,  
 ‘ and the more to colour their false Treasons, they caused the  
 ‘ King to make come before him in several Places of the King-  
 ‘ dom, divers Justices and Lawyers, *Robert Tresilian, Robert Belk-*  
 ‘ *nap, John Cary, John Holt, Roger Fulthorp, William Burgh, his Ju-*  
 ‘ *stices, and John de Loketon, Serjeant at Law,* and with them *John*  
 ‘ *Blake Referendary,* and others; which Justices, Serjeant, and  
 ‘ *John Blake,* being asked in the presence of the King by the Mis-  
 ‘ doers, Whether the foresaid Ordinance, Statute and Commis-  
 ‘ sion, were made in Derogation of his Royalty and Preroga-  
 ‘ tive or not? and divers other Questions; To which they an-  
 ‘ swered in manner following.

Be it Remembred, That on the Twenty first day of *August*, in  
 the Eleventh year of *King Richard* the Second, at the *Castle* of  
*Nottingham* before the King, *Robert Tresilian* Chief Justice, and  
*Robert Belknap* Chief Justice of the *Common-Pleas, John Holt, Ro-*  
*ger Fulthorp,* and *William Burgh, Knights, Justices Associate* of  
*Robert Belknap,* and *John Lokeson* the King's Serjeant at Law, in  
 the presence of the Lords and other Witnesses underwritten,  
 personally there being, were required by the King upon their  
 Faith and Allegiance to answer faithfully to certain Questions,  
 and speak the Law concerning them, according to their Dis-  
 cretion.

The Opinion  
 of Judges, &c.  
 concerning  
 the Statute  
 and Commis-  
 sion.

*First,* ‘ It was demanded, Whether the new Statute, Ordi-  
 ‘ nance, and Commission made in the last Parlement at *Westminster*,  
 ‘ did derogate to or from the King's Royalty, and Prerogative?  
 ‘ They unanimously answer, It did, especially for that they were  
 ‘ contrary to the King's Will.

2. ‘ Also it was demanded, How those were to be punished  
 ‘ that procured the Statute, Ordinance, and Commission to be  
 ‘ made? They unanimously answer, With Death, unless the  
 ‘ King would shew them favour.

3. ‘ Also it was demanded, How they were to be punished that  
 ‘ Excited the King to Consent to the making of that Statute, Or-  
 ‘ dinance, and Commission? They unanimously answer as to the  
 ‘ last Question.

4. ‘ Also they were demanded, How they were to be punish-  
 ‘ ed, that forced or straitned the King (*qui compulerunt sive Archa-*  
 ‘ *runt Regem*) to consent to the making of the Statute, Ordi-  
 ‘ nance, and Commission? They unanimously answer, They  
 ‘ were deservedly to be punished as Traytors. Likewise they  
 ‘ were demanded, How they were to be punished, who hindred  
 ‘ the King from Exercising those things which belonged to his  
 ‘ Prerogative and Royalty? They also unanimously answer, They  
 ‘ were to be punished as Traytors.

5. ‘ Also it was demanded, Whether after the Parlement was  
 ‘ met, and the Business of the Kingdom, and the Cause of the  
 ‘ Meeting of the Parlement, by the King's Command, declared,  
 ‘ and certain Articles appointed by the King, upon which the  
 ‘ Lords and Commons ought to proceed, if the Lords and Com-  
 ‘ mons would proceed upon other Articles, and not upon the  
 ‘ Articles limited by the King, until they had the King's Answer  
 ‘ to



A ' to their own Articles, notwithstanding the King had enjoined  
' them to the contrary? Then, Whether the King ought to  
' have the Government of the Parlement, and indeed to govern  
' effectually, so as upon the Articles limited by the King, they  
' ought first to proceed? Or, Whether the Lords and Com-  
' mons ought first to have Answer from the King to their own  
' Articles, before there were further Proceedings? (*Nunquid*  
' *Rex debeat habere in ea parte Regimen Parliamenti, & de facto Re-*  
' *gere & effectum, quod super Articulis limitatis per Regem primo de-*  
' *beant procedere, vel an Domini & Communes primo debeant habere Re-*  
' *sponsum a Rege super Articulis per eosdem expressis, antequam ulterius*  
' *procedatur*) They unanimously answer, That in such Case the  
' King should have the Government, and so in order in all other  
' Articles touching the Parlement to the end of the same; and  
' if any one acted contrary to this Government of the King, he  
B ' was to be punished as a Traytor.

6. ' Also it was demanded, Whether the King when he pleased  
' might not Dissolve the Parlement, and Command his Lords  
' and Commons to depart from thence? They unanimously an-  
' swer, He might, and if any one afterward proceeded as in  
' Parlement against the King's Will, he was to be punished as a  
' Traytor.

C 7. ' Also it was demanded, Whether when the King pleased  
' to Remove any of his Justices and Officers whatsoever, and  
' Judge and Punish them for their Faults, the Lords and Com-  
' mons without the King's Consent or Pleasure, impeach those  
' Officers in Parlement for their Offences? They unanimously an-  
' swer, They cannot, and if any one acted to the contrary he  
' was to be punished as a Traytor.

D 8. ' Also it was demanded, How he was to be punished who  
' moved in Parlement, that the Statute might be sent for, by  
' which *Edward* the Second, the King's Great Grandfather, was  
' adjudged in Parlement, by the Inspection of which Statute,  
' the new Statute, Ordinance, and Commission, were conceived  
' in Parlement? They answer unanimously, That as well he  
' who so moved, as the other who by pretext of that Motion,  
' carried that Statute to the Parlement, were deservedly to be pu-  
' nished as Criminals and Traytors.

E 9. ' Also it was demanded, Whether the Judgment given in  
' the last Parlement at *Westminster* against the *Earl of Suffolk*,  
' was Erroneous and Revocable? They answer unanimously,  
' That if it were now to be given, the Justices and Serjeant  
' aforesaid would not give it, because it seemed to them it was  
' Revocable as Erroneous in every part of it.

F In Testimony of all which the Justices and Serjeant aforesaid  
put to their Seals, these being Witnesses, the Reverend Fathers  
*Alexander Arch-Bishop of York*, *Robert Arch-Bishop of Dublin*, *John*  
*Bishop of Durham*, *Thomas Bishop of Chichester*, *John Bishop of*  
*Bangor*, *Robert Duke of Ireland*, *Michael Earl of Suffolk*, *John Ryp-*  
*pon Clerc*, and *John Blake Esq;* Dated in the Place, Day, Month,  
and Year aforesaid.

Witnesses to  
the Opinions  
of the Ju-  
stices.



XXVI. ' These Five are Accused, That they drew away the  
 ' Heart, and Good Will of the King from the said Lords and  
 ' others which agreed to make the Commission and Ordinance  
 ' in the last Parlement, who accounted them his Enemies and  
 ' Traytors, and being sure the Justices favoured their Design,  
 ' contrived that those Lords and others should be Arrested, En-  
 ' dicted, and Attainted, by false Enquests of Treason, and put  
 ' to Death, and they and their Blood or Issue Disherited; and  
 ' these false Arrests, Endictments, and Attainders, should be  
 ' made in *London* or *Middlesex*, and for that cause they made a  
 ' False and Wicked Person, one *Thomas Husk*, Under-Sheriff of  
 ' *Middlesex*, who by their Assent, Procurement and Command,  
 ' undertook the said false Endictments and Attainders should be  
 ' made and accomplished, (*Emprist que les ditz faux enditements &*  
 ' *atteinders serroient faitz & accompliez.*) And for the better ac-  
 ' complishment of their Treason, the said Traytors caused the  
 ' King to write Letters of Credence by one *John Rypon* false  
 ' Clerc of their Covin, to the Mayor of *London*, to Arrest the  
 ' Duke of *Gloucester* and others, and by force of those Letters,  
 ' one *John Blake* carried to the Mayor a Bill of Information a-  
 ' gainst them, by which they were to be Indicted and Attainted;  
 ' The Effect of which Bill was, That it seemed for the better that  
 ' certain of the Lords, Knights, and Commons of the last Par-  
 ' lement, which were notoriously impeachable, (*les queux sont*  
 ' *notoirement empeschable*) should be privately Endicted in *London*  
 ' and *Middlesex* of Conspiracy and Confederacy, for that they  
 ' at a certain day there, Falsely and Traiterously Conspired be-  
 ' tween themselves, and Confederated themselves to make in the  
 ' same Parlement a Statute and Commission against the Royalty  
 ' of our Lord the King, and in Derogation of his Crown, and  
 ' procured the same Statute there afterwards at a certain day to  
 ' be made, and also procured our Lord the King to assent against  
 ' his Will to have it made, and also constrained him to have it  
 ' made against his Will; and they Traiterously against their Li-  
 ' geance hindered the King from using his Royalty, to the great  
 ' Disherison of him, and Derogation to his Crown, against  
 ' their Ligeance, swearing to maintain each other in this Mat-  
 ' ter.

' And further, the said Evil-Doers and Traytors, (*Mesfours &*  
 ' *Traytours*) set a Watch to give notice of the Duke of *Lan-*  
 ' *caster's* landing in *England*, that he might be Arrested just upon  
 ' his arrival.

XXVII. ' Also these Five Evil Doers and Traytors after having  
 ' informed the King, so as he believed the Statute, Ordinance,  
 ' and Commission, were made in Derogation of his Royalty and  
 ' Prerogative, they strongly possessed him that all those, who  
 ' made or caused to be made the said Statute, Ordinance, and  
 ' Commission, had a purpose to Degrade and Depose him; and  
 ' that they would not give over that purpose, until they had  
 ' perfected it; for which Cause the King held them as his Ene-  
 ' mies and Traytors.

XXVIII. ' Also, after this False and Traiterous Information,  
 ' when the Five aforesaid had procured the King to hold the  
 ' Loyal Lords as Enemies and Traytors, the said Misdoers and  
 ' Traytors



' Traytors advised him by every way possible, as well by the  
' Power of his own People, as by the Power of his Enemies  
' of *France*, and others, to destroy and put to Death the said  
' Lords, and all others who assented to the making of the said  
' Statute, Ordinance, and Commission, and that it might be done  
' so privately as none might know it but such as did it.

A XXIX. ' Also, to accomplish the High Treason aforesaid, *Alex-*  
' *ander*, &c. *Robert de Vere*, &c. and *Michael*, &c, by their Advice,  
' caused the King to send his Letters of Credence to his Adver-  
' sary the King of *France*, some by one *Nicholas Southwell* Valet  
' of his Chamber, and others, by other Persons of small Account,  
' well Strangers as *English*, requesting and praying the King of  
' *France*, That he would with all his Power and Advice be Aid-  
' ing and Strengthening him to Destroy and put to Death the  
' Lords and other *English*, which the King held to be his Enemies  
B ' and Traytors as above, to the great Trouble and Dissatisfaction  
' of the whole Kingdom.

XXX. ' Also the last named Three, encroaching to themselves  
' Royal Power, caused the King to promise the King of *France*  
' by his Letters and Messages, That for the Ayd and Power he  
' was to receive from him, to accomplish this High Treason and  
' Murder, he would give and surrender, and give unto him the  
' Town and Castle of *Calais*, and all other Castles and Fortresses  
C ' in the Marches or Confines of *Picardy* and *Artois*, the Castles  
' and Towns of *Cherburgh* and *Brest*, to the great Dishonour,  
' Trouble and Ruin of the King and Kingdom.

XXXI. Also, after the last named Three were sure of having  
' Ayd and Assistance from the King of *France*, by Excitation  
' and Contrivance of the said Traytors, a Conference was to  
' have been in the Marches of *Calais* about a Truce for Five years,  
' between the Two Nations, at which Conference both Kings  
D ' were to be present, and also the *English* Lords, which the King  
' then held to be his Traytors, and there *Thomas* Duke of *Glo-*  
' *cester* Constable of *England*, *Richard* Earl of *Arundell* and *Surry*,  
' and *Thomas* Earl of *Warwick*, and others, were to be put to  
' Death.

XXXII. ' Also, for performance of this High Treason, the  
' last named Three caused the King to send for Safe-conducts to  
' the King of *France*, some for himself, some for the Duke of  
E ' *Ireland*, and some for *John Salisbury*, *John Lancaster*, Knights,  
' with other People, with them, to go into *France*, to put in  
' Execution this Wicked Purpose and Treason; which Safe-con-  
' ducts were ready to be produced.

XXXIII. ' Also the foresaid *Nicholas Brembre* false Knight of  
' *London*, by Assent and Advice of *Alexander*, &c. *Robert de*  
' *Vere*, &c. *Michael*, &c. and *Robert Tresilian* false Justice, en-  
' croaching to themselves Royal Power as before; some of them  
F ' went Personally into *London*, and without the Assent and Know-  
' ledge of the King, there openly in his Name, made all the  
' Crafts of that City to be Sworn to hold and perform divers  
' Matters not Honest, as is contained in the said Oath upon Re-  
' cord in Chancery, and amongst other things, That they should  
' keep and uphold the King's Will and Purpose, to their Power,  
' against all such as were or should be Rebels, or against the



King's Person or his Royalty, and that they were ready to live and die with him, in destruction of all such, who did or should design Treason against the King in any manner, and that they should be ready, and come readily to their Mayor, for the time being, or that afterwards should be, when and what hour they should be required, to resist so long as they lived, all such as did or should design any thing against the King in any of the Points afore said; at which time the King by Evil Information of the said Misdoers and Traytors, and by the false Answer of the Justices, firmly held the said Lords and others, who contrived the Statute, Ordinance and Commission, to be his Rebels, Enemies and Traytors, which Information was then unknown to the People of *London*; and also, That by obscure Words contained in the Oath, the Intent of the Misdoers and Traytors was to engage the People of *London* to raise their Power to destroy the Loyal Lords.

XXXIV. Also, the said *Nicholas, Alexander, Robert de Vere,* and *Michael*, Traytors to the King and Kingdom, encroaching to themselves Royal Power, of their own Authority, without Warrant from the King or his great Council, caused to be proclaimed thro' the City of *London*, That none of the King's Lieges should Ayd or Comfort *Richard Earl of Arundell* and *Surry*, a Peer of the Land, and one of the Lords of the King's great Council, during the Commission, or to sell him Armor, Victuals, or other things necessary, and to avoid all of his Party as Rebels, upon forfeiture of whatever they could forfeit to the King, shewing a Patent from the King, for making such Proclamation, in \_\_\_\_\_ of the King's Loyal Lieges.

XXXV. Also, the said *Nicholas Brembre*, by Assent and Counsel of *Alexander, Robert de Vere,* and *Michael*, made to be proclaimed in the City of *London*, That no Person should be so hardy to speak one Word of ill of the said Misdoers and Traytors, upon pain to forfeit whatever they could forfeit to the King, also encroaching to themselves Royal Power.

XXXVI. Also, the said Five Traytors to the King and Kingdom, caused the King to send to his Council certain Persons to be Sheriffs thro' the Kingdom, named to him by the Evil-Doers and Traytors, to the intent they might make such Parliament Knights, as they should name, to the undoing of the good Loyal Lords, and the good Commons, and also the good Laws and Customs of the Kingdom.

XXXVII. Also, the Five Misdoers and Traytors, during the time of Protection, to hinder the Appeal, falsely Counselling, and caused the King to Command by his Letter divers Knights and Esquires, his Sheriffs, and other his Ministers of divers Counties, to levy and assemble all the Power they could to come with the Duke of *Ireland* against the Lords Appellants, to make sudden War upon and destroy them.

XXXVIII. Also, during the time of Protection of the said *Robert de Vere, &c. Michael, &c. Alexander, &c. Nicholas, &c.* caused the King by his Letters to notify to the Duke of *Ireland*, they were all appealed of Treason, by *Thomas Duke of Gloucester* Constable of *England*, *Richard Earl of Arundell* and *Surry*, and *Thomas Earl of Warwick*, and how he had given them day  
until



A 'until the next Parlement, and how he had taken into his special Protection both Parties, with all their Goods and Chattels; and it was further contained in the King's Letters, That if the Duke of Ireland had sufficient Power, he should not cease to march on with all his Force to come to him; and soon after they caused the King to write to that Duke, That he should take the Field, with all the Force he could get together, and that he would meet him with all his Power, and that he would adventure his Royal Body with him, and that he was in great danger, and also the whole Nation, if he was not relieved by him; and this the Duke ought to discover to all the People with him, and that the King would pay all his Wages and Costs, and of all the People assembled with him. By force of which Letters, the Wicked and Traiterous Excitations, as well of the Duke and his Adherents, and all the other Misdoers and Traytors, he raised a great number of Men at Arms, and Archers, as well in the Counties of Lancaster and Chester, and in Wales, as other Places of the Kingdom, to destroy and put to death the Lords and all others who ordered and assented to the making of the Statute, Ordinance and Commission, to the Ruin of the King and his Kingdom.

B XXXIX. 'Also, the said Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, false Traytor to the King and Kingdom, assembled a great Power of Men at Arms and Archers in Lancashire, Cheshire, Wales, and many other Places, to the intent to have Traiterously destroyed with all his Power the said Lords, Thomas Duke of Gloucester Constable of England, Henry Earl of Derby, Richard Earl of Arundel and Surry, Thomas Earl of Warwick, and Thomas Earl Marshal, and other the King's Lieges, to the Undoing and Ruin of the King and whole Kingdom, and so Rod or Marched with a great Force of Men at Arms and Archers, from the County of Chester to Radcot-Bridge, accroaching to himself Royal Power, displaying the King's Banner in his Army, against the State of the King, and his Crown.

E 'This Impeachment was Exhibited on Monday the first [1] day of the Parlement, being the 3d of February, when the Lords Appellants affirmed they were ready to prove every Article as it should be awarded in Parlement, to the Honour of God, the Honour and Profit of the King, and the whole Realm; whereupon the Appealed were called in Parlement before the King and Lords, to appear and make Answer to the Appellants; and the same Demand of their Appearance was made in Westminster-Hall, and at the great Gate of the Palace of Westminster, to come and Answer the Appellants; and because they came not, being so solemnly called, the Duke of Gloucester and the other Appellants prayed the King, and Lords, to Record their Default, and proceed to Judgment; Thereupon, [2] the King and Lords Deliberate upon their Demands until next day, being Tuesday, when the Justices, Serjeants, and other Sages of the Law of the Kingdom, and also the Sages of the Law Civil, were charged by the King to give their Loyal Counsel to the Lords of Parlement, how they should proceed in the Case of Appeal. The said Justices, Serjeants, and Sages of both Laws having

[1] Rot. Parl. II Ric. II Part 3. This Roll is not numbered. The Appealed summoned to appear.

[2] Ibid.



How they  
were to be  
Tryed.

[3] *Ibm.*

[4] *Ibm.* and  
*Append. n.*  
108.

[5] *Ibm.*  
The Appealed  
appear not.

having Deliberated, answered the Lords in Parlement, That they had noted and well understood the Tenor of the Appeal, and that it was done, neither according to the Order of one Law or the other; Upon which the Lords in Parlement Deliberated, and by the common assent of the King and Lords, it was declared, That in such high Crimes which touched the Person of the King, and the State of the whole Realm, perpetrated by Persons that were Peers of the Realm, with others, the Case could not be brought under other Judicature then that of Parlement, nor other Law then the Law and Course of Parlement, and that it belonged to the Lords in Parlement, their Franchise, and Liberty, of ancient Custom of Parlement, to be Judges in such Cases, and to Judge of such Cases by the assent of the King, to the [3] intent that the King and Lords of Parlement shall not be Ruled or Governed by the Civil Law, and also that so high a Case should be no where Tryed but in Parlement, by Process or Order used in any Inferior Court of the Kingdom, which Courts are but the Executors of the ancient Laws and Customs of the Realm, and Ordinances and Establishments of Parlement, and the Lords were advised by assent of the King, That this Appeal was made and affirmed, well and duely Stated, and the Process of the same good and effectual according to the Laws and Course of Parlement; Upon which the Appellants press the King and Lords again to Record the Default, and that *Nicholas Brembre*, who was only in Custody, might be brought to answer; The Appealed were again called to come and Answer to the said Appellants, and came not, nevertheless the King and Lords advised for their better Deliberation until the Morrow, being *Wednesday* the 5th of *February*, at which time the said Appellants prayed the King and Lords in Parlement they would Record the Default of the Appealed as before: Whereupon the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* for himself and all other Bishops his Suffragans, and all other Lords Spiritual of his Province, made [4] Protestation, and delivered it in Writing into Parlement, for the saving of their Right of Peerage Sitting and Voting in Parlement, tho at present there were such Matters there in Agitation as by the Sacred Canons they might not be present.

Then the Appealed [5] by Command of the King and Lords, were solemnly called to appear as before, and the Appellants alledging they had full notice of the Appeal, and the King and Lords being satisfied it was so; by reason they came not, their Default was Recorded, whereupon the Duke and Earls Appellants, prayed the King and Lords as before, they might be Judged Convict of the High Treasons contained in the Appeal, and the said *Nicholas* brought to Answer. The King and Lords took time to Consider and Examine the Articles, whether they could give such Judgment in this Case as should be to the Honour of God, the Honour and Profit of the King, and the whole Kingdom. The King Commanded the Lords to Examine the Articles, who did, with great labour and diligence, until *Thursday* the 13th of *February*, and then declared many of the Articles contained Treason, as the First, Second, Eleventh, Twelfth, Fifteenth,

A

B

C

D

E

F



teenth, and Sixteenth, as also the Eighteenth, Twenty ninth, Thirtieth, Thirty first, Thirty second; the Thirty seventh, Thirty eighth, and Thirty ninth were Treason. And then upon due Information of their Consciences, pronounced the Appealed Guilty, and Judged them to be [6] Drawn and Hanged as Traitors and Enemies, to the King and Kingdom; and that their Heirs should be Disherited for ever, and their Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattels forfeited to the King; and that the Temporalities of the Arch-Bishoprick should be taken into the King's hands: And for that the like Case had not been seen in the Kingdom concerning the Person of an Arch-Bishop or Bishop, the Lords would Advise by Assent of the King, what they may best do for the *Honour of God*, and of *Holy Church*, and the *Safety of the Laws of the Land*.

[6] *Ibm.*  
Their Judgment.

Then the Duke and Earls Appellants prayed Sir Nicholas Brembre might be brought to Answer; and on Monday the 17th of February, the Constable of the Tower brought him into Parlement, [7] where the Articles of Appeal were read to him; to which he pleaded Not Guilty in any Point of them; and said he was there ready to make good what he said by his Body, as a Knight ought to do. The Lords answered, Battel did not lie in that Case; and that they would examin the Articles touching the said Nicholas, and take due Information by all true, necessary, and convenient Ways, that their Consciences might be duly informed what Judgment to give in this Case, to the *Honour of God*, the *Honour and Profit of the King and his Kingdom*, as they would answer it before God, according to the Course and Law of Parlement.

Sir N. Brembre brought to answer.

[7] *Ibm.*

During this Examination, on Wednesday the 19th of February, Sir Robert Tresilian was taken, and brought into [8] Parlement; and being asked if he had any thing to say which had happened since Judgment passed upon him, why execution thereof should not be made; for that he had nothing to say, it was commanded he should be carried to the Tower, and from thence drawn through the City of London, and forward to the Gallows at Tyburn, and there to hang by the Neck, and that the Execution should be done by the Marshal of England, taking to his Assistance the Major, Sheriffs, and Aldermen of London: And he was Executed the same Day.

[8] *Ibm.*  
Sir R. Tresilian taken and brought into Parlement.

On the morrow, [9] which was the 20th Day of February, Sir Nicholas Brembre was brought into Parlement, when the Lords, by diligent Examination, due Proof and Information, found him Guilty of High Treason; and they Awarded, by Assent of the King, as a Traitor and open Enemy to the King and Kingdom, he should be Drawn and Hanged, his Heirs for ever Disherited, and his Lands, Tenements, Goods and Chattels forfeit to the King: And he was Executed on the same Day, and in the same manner as was Robert Tresilian.

Sentence and Executed.  
[9] *Ibm.*  
Sir N. Brembre Sentence and Executed.

It was the Intention [1] of all the Lords of Parlement, Spiritual and Temporal, as well the Lords Appellants as all others, and by them agreed, That considering the tender Age of the King before that time, and the Innocency of his Royal Person, that nothing contained in the Appeal, nor in any Article thereof, nor in the Judgments given, should be accounted any Fault or

[1] *Ibm.*  
The Parle-  
ment Judge  
the King in-  
nocent, not  
withstanding  
the Appeal  
and Articles.

Disso-



Dishonesty in his Person in no manner, for the Cause above-said, nor should turn in Prejudice of his Person by any Contrivance or Interpretation whatever; but that the false Treason and Default above-said, should be charged upon the Appealed, and that the Judgments given against them, should have full Force and Virtue; notwithstanding any thing could be said or alledged to the contrary.

[2] *Ibm.*  
Several others  
impeached by  
the Commons.

Upon [2] Monday the 2d Day of March next following, Sir Robert Belknap late Chief Justice of the Common Bench, Sir Roger Fulthorp, Sir John Holt, Sir William Burgh, late his Companions of the same Bench, Sir John Cary, late Chief Baron of the Exchequer, and John Loketon, late Serjeant to the King, were accused and impeached by the Commons in Parlement, for putting their Hands and Seals to the Questions and Answers afore-said, by the Procurement of the Appealed and Convicted Persons of Treason, to cover and affirm their High Treasons, &c. (*pour coverer & affermir leur hautes Tresons*) a Copy whereof was exhibited and read before them; and they were answered, as was furnished by the Commons, in the said Copy; and they answered, They could not gainsay it, but that the Questions were such as were asked them; but the Answers were not such as they put their Seals to.

[3] *Ibm.*  
Sir R. Belknap  
his Excuse.

Sir Robert [3] Belknap pleaded, That the Arch-Bishop of York, in his Chamber at Windsor told him, That he devised the Commission and Statute, &c. That the King hated him above all Men; and that if he found not some way to make void the Statute and Commission, he should be slain as a Traitor. He answered, That the Intention of the Lords, and such as assisted at the making of them, was, That they should be for the Honour and good Government of the State of the King, &c. That he twice parted from the King dissatisfied, and was in doubt of his Life; and said the Answers were not made by his Good-will, but contrary to his Mind, by the Threats of the Arch-Bishop of York, Duke of Ireland, and Earl of Suffolk; and that he was Sworn and Commanded in the Presence of the King, upon pain of Death to conceal this matter, as the Counsel of the King: And prayed for the Love of God he might have Gracious and Merciful Judgment.

[4] *Ibm.*  
Sir J. Holt  
made the  
same Excuse.

Sir John Holt [4] alledged the same matter of Excuse, and made the same Prayer.

[5] *Ibm.*  
Sir W. Burgh  
and Sir J. Cary  
the same.

Sir William [5] Burgh and Sir John Cary pleaded the same matter of Excuse, and made the same Prayer.

[6] *Ibm.*  
Sir R. Fulthorp  
and J. Loketon  
the same.

Sir Roger [6] Fulthorp and John Loketon make the same Excuse and Prayer.

[7] *Ibm.*  
Notwithstanding  
their Excuses,  
the Commons pray  
they may be  
Judged, Con-  
victed, and  
Attainted as  
Traitors.

To which [7] the Commons answered, They were taken and holden for Sages in the Law; and the King's Will was, That they should have Answered the Questions as the Law was, and not otherwise, as they did, with Design and under colour of Law to Murder and Destroy the Lords and Loyal Lieges, who were Aiding and Assisting in making the Commission and Statute in the last Parlement, for the good Government of the State of the King and



and Kingdom; and therefore the *Commons* pray they may be Adjudged, Convicted, and Attainted as Traitors.

A Upon [8] which the *Lords Temporal* took time by good Deliberation to examin the Matter and Circumstances of it, and for that they were at, and knew of the making of the *Statute* and *Commission*, which they *knew* were made for the Honour of God, and for the good Government of the State of the King and whole Kingdom; and that it was the King's Will they should not have otherwise Answered than according to Law, and had Answered as before. They were by the *Lords Temporal*, by the Assent of the King, adjudged to be Hanged and Drawn as Traitors, and their Heirs Disherited, their Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattels to be forfeit to the King.

[8] *Ibm.*

Their Judgment.

B On [9] Tuesday, March 3. John Blake and Thomas Usk were brought into Parlement; and first John Blake was impeached by the *Commons*, That being retained of Council for the King, drew up the Questions to which the *Justices* made Answer, and contrived with the Persons Appealed, that the *Lords* and others the King's Loyal Lieges, that caused the *Commission* and *Statute* to be made in the last Parlement, to have them indicted in London and Middlesex for Treason; and that they might be arrested, and falsly, traiterously and wickedly murdered; and that he was aiding and advising in the Treasons aforesaid, to the Appealed.

[9] *Ibm.*  
J. Blake impeached.

C Then Thomas [1] Usk was accused for procuring himself to be made Under-Sheriff of Middlesex, to the end to cause the said *Lords* and Loyal Lieges to be Arrested and Indicted, as hath been said before, and was Aiding and Counselling the Appealed in the Treasons aforesaid.

[1] *Ibm.*  
T. Usk accused.

D John [2] Blake answered, he was retained of Counsel for the King by his Command, and sworn to keep secret his Advice; and whatever he did was by the King's Command, whom he ought to obey. And Thomas Usk gave the same Answer. Whereupon the *Lords Temporal* took Deliberation until the morrow being the 4th of March, when the said John and Thomas were again brought into Parlement; and good Advice and Deliberation having been taken by the *Lords*, pronounced them Guilty of the things whereof they were accused. [3] And whereas they alledged for their Excuse the King's Command, it made their Crime the greater; for that they knew well, that the Appealed and Adjudged accroached to themselves Royal Power, as said is before, and it was their Command, and not the King's; and then the *Lords* Awarded, by Assent of the King, they should both be Drawn and Hanged as Traitors and open Enemies to the King and Kingdom, and their Heirs Disherited for ever, and their Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattels forfeited to the King; and they were Executed the same Day.

[2] *Ibm.*  
Their Answers,[3] *Ibm.*  
And Judgments.

F On [4] Friday the 6th of March, Sir Robert Belknap, Sir Roger Fulthorp, Sir John Holt, Sir William Burgh, Sir John Cary and John Loketon were brought into the Parlement; and the *Lords* were advised, That they were at the making of the *Commission* and *Statute* in the last Parlement, and Sir John Cary knew well they were made to the Honour of God, and the good Government of the State of the King and the whole Kingdom; and so on as before.

[4] *Ibm.*  
Sir R. Belknap and 5 others.



By the Medi-  
ation of the  
Bishops, had  
their Lives  
spared.

And then they had Judgment again passed on them as before; and at that very Moment came the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, and all the Bishops of both Provinces, and prayed the *Lords Temporal*, the Execution as to their Lives might be respited, that they might obtain their Lives of the *King*. He ordered Execution should be stayed, and granted them their Lives: As to the other part of their Sentence, that was to remain in force, and their Bodies in Prison during the *King's* Pleasure; until the *King*, by Advice of the *Lords*, should direct otherwise concerning them.

[5] *Ibm.*  
The Bp. of  
*Chichester* and  
the *King's*  
Confessor im-  
peached.

On the same [5] *Friday*, *Thomas Bishop* of *Chichester* and the *King's Confessor*, impeached and accused by the Commons, That he was present at the Places and Times, when the Questions were put to the Justices, &c. and the Answers made, and excited them by Threats to answer as they did, knowing the false Purposes and Treasons designed by the Traitors adjudged; and aided and assisted them, and would not make Discovery to any of the Lords that caused the Commission to be made last Parliament, whereby Remedy might have been had for the Safety of the King and Kingdom. [6] To which the *Bishop* answered of his own free Will, That he did not excite them to do or say any thing: And further said, They were not excited or charged to say any thing but what the Law was. And touching the Concealment of the Treasons, he had made such Assurance and Affiance as he could not discover. And said further, That the Traitors were about the *King*, and had such Power over him, before he had so great Interest in the *King*, as to prevent such Mischiefs as might come upon him. The Commons replied, He had upon the Matter confessed himself Guilty, and prayed he might be Attainted. Upon this Answer of the *Bishop*, the Replication of the Commons, and all Circumstances of the Accusation, the Lords took time to give such Judgment as might be for the Honour of God, and Profit of the King and Kingdom. [7] During which time, on the 12th of *March*, *Simon Burley Kt.* *John Beauchamp of Holt, Kt.* *John Salisbury Kt.* and *James Barners Kt.* were brought into Parliament, and at the Request of the Commons impeached.

[7] *Ibm.*  
*Sir S. Burley*  
and 3 others  
impeached.

[8] *Ibm.*  
The Articles  
against them.

The Articles exhibited against them were Sixteen: [8] The first Article in the Appeal was the first Article in this Impeachment. In the second Article they are accused as Traitors and Enemies of the Kingdom, for that they knew of all the Treasons in the Appeal mentioned, and that they were Aiding, Assisting, Counselling and Assenting to all the Traitors attainted; and that *Simon Burley* and *John Beauchamp*, were Principal Actors in all the Treasons. In the eighth Article they were accused for Conspiring and Designing, with the Five Appealed, to destroy and put to Death those who were Assenting to the making of the Commission and Statute in the last Parliament. The rest are of less moment; but all relating to the Articles of the Appeal. [9] They all answer, Not Guilty. The Commons replied, They were Guilty. The Lords take time to examin and consider the Impeachment. Upon this, and the *Bishop* of *Chichester's* Impeachment, the Lords Temporal until *Friday* the 20th of *March*, on which Day the Parliament was Adjourned unto the *Monday* next after,

[9] *Ibm.*



A after, or on the morrow of the Quinden of *Easter*, or 13th of *April*. On which *Monday*, the Lords Temporal took time to Deliberate upon these Matters until the 5th of *May*, when *Simon Burley* was brought into the Parlement, and the Lords by due and sufficient Examination and Information, found him Guilty of what he was Impeached in the eighth Article, which had been adjudged Treason; and by Assent of the King Awarded he should be Drawn, Hanged, and his Head Chopped off. The King Pardoned his Drawing and Hanging; but his Head was Chopt off the same Day on *Tower-Hill*: His Heirs were Disherited for ever, and his Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattels forfeit to the King, as part of the Judgment.

The Judgment against *Sir S. Burley*, who was executed.

B On the 12th of [1] *March*, *John Beauchamp*, *John Salisbury*, and *James Barners*, were brought into Parlement, and had the same Judgment. *Beauchamp* and *Barners* had their Drawing and Hanging Pardoned, and had their Heads struck off on *Tower-Hill*; and were all Executed on the same 12th of *March*.

[1] *Ibm.*  
The 3 others had the same Judgment, and executed.

C On the same Day the [2] *Bishop of Chichester* was sent for into Parlement, where the Lords Temporal found him Guilty of Treason, as it was laid in the Impeachment, and by Assent of the King they Awarded his Heirs should be Disherited, his Lands, Tenements, Goods and Chattels forfeit to the King, and the Temporalities of his Bishoprick seized into the King's hands. As to his Person, the Lords would advise what to do for the Honour of God and Holy Church, and the Safety of the State of Prelacy, and of the Laws of the Land. And then in the same Parlement it was [3] Ordained, That this *Bishop*, *Sir Robert Belknap*, *Sir Roger Fulthorp*, *Sir John Holt*, *Sir William Burgh*, *Sir John Cary*, and *John Loketon*, should be sent into *Ireland* to several Towns and Places, there to remain during their Lives. [4] And it was also then Ordered, That *Sir Robert Belknap* and *Sir Roger Fulthorp*, for their support during their Lives, should have Forty Pounds a Year; *Sir John Holt* and *Sir William Burgh* Forty Marks a Year; *Sir John Cary* and *John Loketon* Twenty Pounds a Year of the King's Gift; and each of them to have Two Servants to wait on them: And that the *Bishop of Chichester* might have annually Forty Marks for his Sustenance during his Life, if any of his Friends would give him so much.

[2] *Ibm.*  
Judgment against the Bp. of *Chichester*.

[3] *Ibm.*  
He was with 6 others banished into *Ireland*.

[4] *Ibm.*  
Their allowance from the King by Order of Parlement.

E Upon [5] Petition of the Commons, the Ordinance and Commission made the last Year, were confirmed, and all that was done in that Parlement; and also what the Duke of Gloucester, Earls of Warwick and Arundel did, and all that the same Duke and Earls, with the Earls of Derby and Marshal, or any of them did, or any other of their Company, or of their Aid, or of their Adherents, or any of them, by their Assemblings, Ridings, Marchings in Arms, Appeals, and Pursuits, as things done to the Honour of God, the Safety of the King, Maintenance of his Crown, and Safety of the whole Kingdom. And also in pursuance of the same Petition, had a full Pardon for all things they had done or committed.

[5] Stat. at Large, 11 Ric. II. c. 1.  
Four Petitions of the Commons, *Ret. Parl.* 11 Ric. II. part 1. n. 37.  
That the Commission and Statute should be confirmed.  
Also what the Duke of Gloucester, Earls of Warwick, Arundel, Derby, and Nottingham did.



[6] Ib. chap. 2.  
n. 38.  
That several  
should be par-  
doned.

[7] Ib. chap. 3.  
n. 38.  
That what  
was done in  
the last Parle-  
ment should  
be confirmed,

That what  
was done in  
that Parle-  
ment, not to  
be drawn in-  
to Example  
for the time  
to come.

[8] Ib. chap. 3.  
& n. 38, 39.  
That none of  
the Appealed  
or Impeached  
to be restored  
to the Law.

The K. grants  
all four Peti-  
tions.

[9] Ib. & Re.  
Parl. 11 Ric.  
II. n. 10. n. 39.  
Re.

[1] Ret. Parl.  
11 Ric II. n. 46.  
The Com-  
mons petition  
the King to  
renew his Co-  
ronation-  
Oath, the Pre-  
lates their  
Fealty, and  
Lords Tem-  
poral their  
Homage.

[2] Ib. n. 47.  
Which was  
done.

Upon a second Petition of the Commons, [6] all those that had been of the Retinue, Company, Force, Aid, Counsel, Assent, or Adherence, of them that were Attainted or Judged in this Parlement, for all things they had done were pardoned, except some there named.

A third [7] Petition was delivered in the same Parlement, That the Appeals, Pursuits, Accusations, Process, Judgments, and Executions made and given in this Parlement, be Approved, Affirmed, and Established, notwithstanding the Lords Spiritual were absent; and that by Imagination, Interpretation, or any other Motion, none of the same be reversed, broken, or annulled in any manner. And whosoever should make pursuit to break, annul, or reverse any of them, shall be judged to have Execution as a Traitor: Provided always, that this Acceptance, Approbation, Affirmance, and Stablishment touching the Assemblies, Appeals, Pursuits, Accusations, Process, Judgments, and Executions, be in force in this Case only, and that they be not drawn into Example or Consequence in time to come. And though divers Points were declared for Treason in that Parlement, which were not declared by Statute before, That no Justice have Power to give Judgment of other Case of Treason, nor in other manner than they had before the beginning of this Parlement.

A fourth [8] Petition was then also delivered, That none of the Traitors attainted by the Appeal or Accusations of the Commons, who were alive, should be reconciled or restored to the Law, by Pardon or any other manner, saving the Grace and Pardon that was made in this Parlement; and any one that should endeavour to have such a thing done, should be Judged and have Execution as a Traitor.

The [9] Answer to all these Petitions, was, That the King, upon the Assent of the Lords and Commons, granted the Petitions in all Points, and willed his Grant should be firm and stable, according to the Contents of the Petitions, without blemish for ever.

Then the [1] Commons humbly pray the King, for the nourishing of greater Love, Peace, and Quiet for the future in all Parts of the Nation, That he would please to renew his Coronation-Oath; and that the Prelates might renew their Fealty, and the Lords Temporal their Homage, notwithstanding they had done it before.

The Preparation and Introduction to this great Ceremony, was the Mass of the Holy Ghost sung in the Church of [2] Westminster, on Wednesday the 3d of June, and in the 121st Day of the Parlement; and a Sermon Preached by the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, when the King of his Free-will, after Mass and Sermon were done, did renew His Oath with great Solemnity in the said Church, (*le Roy de sa Franche volunte, renouvella son dit serement ove grant Solemnity en la Eglise de Westminster*) at which time the Prelates sware Fealty to him, and the Temporal Lords did him Homage. This done, the Prelates, Lords Temporal, and Commons, made openly a New Oath, as followeth:



You shall [3] Swear, That you shall not Assent or Suffer, as much as in you is, that any Judgment, Statute, or Ordinance made in this present Parlement, shall in any manner be annulled, reversed, or repealed, in any time to come; and further, That you shall support the Good Laws, and Usages of the Kingdom, and to your Power firmly keep, and cause to be kept, the good Peace, Quiet, and Tranquillity of the Kingdom, without disturbing it in any manner. So God help you, and the Saints.

[3] Append.  
n. 107.  
A new Oath.

And the [4] Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and Prelates, Excommunicated all such as should break the Peace and Quiet of the Realm, and do contrary to this Oath. On the next day this Parlement ended, being Thursday the 4th of June, which, says Knighton, was called the Unmerciful Parlement, Parliamentum sine Misericordia, Col. 2701. line 2.

[4] Ret. Parl.  
11 Ric. II.  
n. 49.  
Those that  
brake the  
new Oath  
Excommuni-  
cated.

This Oath was urged [5] upon all Gentlemen and Dignified Persons of the Clergie in all Counties in England, and upon all the Majors, Bayliffs, and Aldermen of all Cities, Burghs, and Towns, by the King's Writ directed to the Sheriff, and one special Commissioner to administer it, dated June the 4th, 11th of Richard II.

[5] Clause  
11 Ric. II.  
M. 13 or 14  
Dors. in Cedula.  
This Oath  
generally ad-  
ministrated to  
Gentlemen,  
&c.

This year the [6] Scots invaded the West Marches of England near Carlisle, burnt and plundered the Country, and carried away with them Three hundred Persons. They also about the beginning of August invaded the East Marches, and burnt, plundered, and wasted the Country. In this Invasion were many of the most considerable Men in Scotland, with the Chief Strength of that Kingdom; Henry Percy, Son and Heir to the Earl of Northumberland, called Hotspurre, opposed, and fought with them near Newcastle, he with his own Hand killed Earl Douglas, the most Potent of the Scots, and Mortally wounded the Earl of Murray, yet he himself was taken, with his younger Brother, and Twenty one Knights, and many other Men at Arms and Archers, and carried into Scotland. There were also many Scots taken, amongst whom was James Lindsey, the Queen's Brother. This Fight was on the [7] Wednesday before St. Lawrence, or 10th of August, in the 12th of Richard the Second. The number of the Slain were Eleven hundred.

[6] Knighton,  
col. 2728. n.  
40.  
The Scots en-  
ter England,  
burn and  
waste the  
Country.  
A Battel be-  
tween the  
English and  
Scots.

This year there was a Truce concluded at Leu Lingham, a Place between Calais and Boloign, from the First of August, A. D. 1389, to the Sixteenth of August 1392, between the King of France and all his Allies, the Kings of Spain, of the Romans, Portugal, the King of Scots, &c. And the King of England and all his Allies, [8] confirmed by the King of Scots at Perth on the 16th of July 1390.

[7] Ib. c. 2729.  
l. 2.  
A. D. 1389.  
12 Ric. II.  
A Truce  
made at Leu-  
lingham for 3  
years, 13 Ric. II.

About the [9] beginning of November this year, the Duke of Lancaster returned from Gascony into England, where and in Spain he had been Three years; and about the beginning of December the King was at Reding, [1] where he called a great Council; The Duke of Lancaster being there, reconciled the Mind of the King to the Great Men, and their Minds to him; and so as they seemed after the Dissolution of the Council to depart satisfied.

[8] The Ori-  
ginal in the  
Chapter-  
House at  
W. Minst. r.  
[9] Walsingh.  
t. 342. ff. 10.  
The Duke of  
Lancaster's Re-  
turn into  
England.  
[1] Ib. n. 40.  
He reconciles  
the King and  
Great Men.



[2] Rot. Clause  
13 Ric. II. M.  
5. Desf.

A. D. 1390.  
A Parlement  
called.

The King de-  
clared to be  
of Age.

[3] Rot. Parl.  
13 Ric. II.  
n. 1.

And takes  
upon him the  
Government.

[4] Ib. n. 6, 7.  
The Chancel-  
lor and Treas-  
urer quit  
their Places,  
as also all  
Privy-Coun-  
sellors.

The King re-  
ceives them  
again into  
their Places,  
and the Privy-  
Council.

[5] Ib. n.  
n. 21, 22.  
John Duke of  
Lancaster  
made Duke of  
Aquitain.

[6] Ib. n. 23.  
Edward, Son  
to the Duke  
of York made  
Earl of  
Rutland.  
The Two  
Arch-Bishops  
and

[7] Ib. n. 24.  
Clergy's Pro-  
testation not  
to assent to  
any Law  
made against  
the Pope.

[8] Rot. Parl.  
14 Ric. II.  
n. 1.

A. D. 1391.

[9] Ib. n. 12.  
The Dukes of  
York and Glo-  
cester desire  
1000 l. a year  
to be settled  
on each of  
them.

The King while he was at Reding issued his [2] Writs on the 6th of December for a Parlement to meet at Westminster on the Monday next after the Feast of St. Hillary, William of Wickham, Bishop of Winchester, was then Chancellor, who by the King's Command, in opening the Cause of Summons before all the Estates, declared the [3] King of full Age, and that he intended to Govern his People in Peace and Quiet, and to do Justice and Right to all Men, and that as well the Clergie as Layty should enjoy all their Liberties.

On the 20th of [4] January, and Fourth day of the Parlement, the Bishop of Winchester delivered the Seal to the King, and the Bishop of St. David's being Treasurer, delivered the Keys of the Exchequer to the King, and all the Lords of the Council prayed the King to be discharged, and that others might be put in their Places; When they were discharged, they required openly in Parlement, That if any Person could, he would Complain of any thing ill done by them; both Lords and Commons affirmed all things well done; Whereupon the King delivered the Seal again to the Bishop of Winchester, and the Keys of the Exchequer to the Bishop of St. Davids, and received those to be his Counsellors that were so before, together with his Uncles of Lancaster and Gloucester, and made Protestation, That for any thing then done, he would at Pleasure retain, or put out of their Offices those Counsellors.

In this Parlement [5] John Duke of Lancaster was made Duke of Aquitan by the King, with Consent of the Prelates, Lords Temporal and Commons, to hold the Dukedom of the King as of the King of France, saving only to him as to the King of France the Direct Dominion, Superiority, and Resort of the same Dutchy: He there did Homage to the King, and Humbly and Heartily Thanked him for it, and the Honour he did him, and declared, That tho' he could not maintain the State of the Dukedom in time of War without the Aid of the King and Realm, yet he would do what he could to the utmost; The King told him, the Charges should be born, as between the Duke and his Council should be agreed; To which the Commons assented.

The King by assent of [6] Parlement created Edward, the Eldest Son of the Duke of York, Earl of Rutland, and gave to him during the Life of his Father 800 Marks issuing out of the Castle, Town and Dominion of Okeham in that Shire, and the Office of Sheriff.

The Arch-Bishops of Canterbury and York, for themselves and whole Clergy of their Provinces, made their Protestation in open Parlement, [7] they intended not, nor would assent to any Statute or Law to be made against the Pope's Authority, which at their Request was entered upon the Roll.

In the [8] Parlement on the Morrow of St. Martin, or 12th of November, in the Fourteenth of this King, the Bishop of Winchester Chancellor, declaring the Cause of Summons, took notice of the Truce with France, and that about Candlemas the King would send to make a final Peace.

The Duke of [9] York and Gloucester desire the King's Assistance of a Thousand Pounds a year to each, according to his Promise, in Tale special; He ordered the Justices to draw such Assurance, and commanded they might be readily paid.

And

A

B

C

D

E

F



A And it is to be remembred, ([1] *Fait a Remember, &c.*) That the Prelates, Lords Temporal and Commons, prayed the King in full Parlement, That the Royalty and Prerogative of him and his Crown, might always be safe, and preserved, and that if any thing had been done or attempted contrary to them, it might be Redressed and Amended; and further, That he should be as Free in his time, as any of his Noble Progenitors, Kings of England, were in their times; Which prayer seemed Honest and Reasonable to the King, and therefore granted it in all points.

B The Judgment against [2] John of Northampton, late Major of London, Repealed upon the Petition of the Commons, and Oath made by the then Major, and all the Aldermen of London, That he was not guilty of the Treasons, &c. for which he was condemned.

These things done, the Lords and Commons [3] gave humble Thanks to the King for his good Government, and his Zeal shewn to them, and he gave them Thanks for the Grants to him made.

C In the Parlement holden on the 2d of November, in the 15th of King Richard, the [4] Commons propound to the King, Monsieur de Guyen, (that is, the Duke of Lancaster) to go Treat with his Adversary of France about a Peace, and it was granted.

D The Commons Petition the King, That no Native or [5] Villan, of Bishops, Abbats, or other Religious Persons, might purchase Lands in Fee; and, That no Villan might put his Son to School, whereby he might obtain Learning, and this for the maintenance and safety of the Honour of all the Freemen of England. To this it was Answered, *Le Roy sad visera*: The King will Advise, which was a Denial.

E The Knights of Shires [6] Petition the King and Lords, That such Lords whose Villans went from them into Cities and Burghs, where they lived as Freemen under the protection of their Franchises, and were detained by the Inhabitants of those Places, might have power to enter such Places, and seize and bring away their Villanes. The Answer was the same with the foregoing.

F According to the Request of the Commons the [7] Duke of Lancaster went into France to Treat of a final Peace, he was splendidly received at Amiens, by the King, and chief Nobility of that Kingdom, who met him there; The Issue of the Treaty was, That the Truce should continue for One year longer; for the Observation of which both Kings made Oath.

The King about this time wanted Money, and sent to the City of London to borrow a Thousand Pounds, who [8] denied to lend him it, and abused and beat a Lombard so grievously, that offered to lend it, as they near killed him; for this and other things, by advice of a great Council held at Nottingham, their Liberties

[1] Ib. n. 15. The Prelates, Lords and Commons pray, That if any thing had been done against his Prerogative, it might be redressed.

[2] Ib. n. 36. The Judgment against John of Northampton repealed.

[3] Ib. n. 37. The Lords and Commons Thank the King for his Good Government, &c.

[4] Ib. n. 15 Ric. II.

A. D. 1392. The Duke of Lancaster sent into France to Treat of Peace.

[5] Ib. n. 39. The Commons Petition Villans may not purchase Land in fee, nor send their Sons to School. The King's Answer.

[6] Ib. n. 51. The Knights of Shires Petition Villans may not have the Privilege of Cities and Burghs. The King's Answer.

[7] Walsingham. t. 347. n. 10, 20. Mezeray, f. 413.

The Truce between England and Fr. continued for a year longer.

[8] Knighton, Col. 2740. n. 10. &c. Walsingham, ut supra. n. 50. &c. The City of London deny to lend the King a Thousand Pounds.

And almost killed a Lombard that lent it him.



Their Liberties seized.  
The Major and Sheriffs imprisoned.  
Their Liberties restored by the Mediation of the Duke of Gloucester.

The Earl of Arundel against the Duke of Lancaster.

[9] *Rot. Parl.*  
17 Ric. II.  
n. 11.

A. D. 1393,  
1394.

He asks the Duke's Pardon in Parliament.

[1] *Ib.* n. 16.

The King, Lords, &c. assent to a Peace to be made with France.

[2] *Ib.* n. 17.

Three Points too high for the Commons to give their Advice in.

\* The Original in the Chapter House at Westminster.

berties were seized, and being convinced they had forfeited them, the Major and Sheriffs were sent to Prison, and Sir Edward Dallyngrug was made Guardian of the City; On the Assumption of the Virgin Mary, or 15th of August, the King with a great Train of the Nobility, with his Queen, went into the City, where he was most Honourably and Nobly Received, and Presented, both himself and Queen; and not long after, by the Mediation of Friends, especially the Duke of Gloucester, the Liberties of the City were Restored, with Power of choosing a Major as before.

In the Parlement holden on the Quindene of St. Hillary, in the Seventeenth of this King, the Earl of Arundel declared several things the King had done for the Duke of [9] Lancaster, that were against his Honour and Profit, but they were such as the King answered them all himself, and justified them; and he was by the King and Lords ordered to ask his Pardon in full Parlement, which was done.

The King, Lords, Knights of Honour, and Justices in this Parlement, [1] assented to a Peace, so as the King did not make Homage Liege, and saving also and always, the Liberty of his Person and the Crown of England, and of his Lieges of the same Kingdom; and that he and his Heirs might Resort and have Regress to the Name, Title, and Right of the Crown and Kingdom of France, if the Peace should be broken by his Adversary and his Heirs; and also, That such Moderations and Modifications should be made, that no Confiscation (that is, seizure of the Dutchy of Guyen) might happen. Knighton says, this was only a Truce for Four years and four months, as well by Sea as Land, Col. 2741. n. 20.

The King charged the Commons, to give their [2] Advice in this Matter; They Answer by a Schedule given in by the Hands of Mr. John Buffy their Speaker, wherein the said Articles of Peace between the King and his Adversary of France, were read, and partly understood by them, and they had considered Three Points that were too high for them, upon which they dare not Treat or give Advice; to wit, Homage Liege, Sovereignty, and Resort, yet referring all, and giving their Consent (for the good of Peace) to what the Lords, Knights of Honour, and the Justices had consented to before, so as Homage should be done for, and have Relation to the Dutchy of Guyen only, and in no wise to the Crown and Kingdom of England. What the Articles of this Peace were, it doth not appear upon the Parlement Roll.

But the next year, by Edward Earl of Rutland, Thomas Earl Marshall and of Nottingham, and Messire William Lescrop Commissioners for the King of England, and the Dukes of Berry, Burgundy, Orleans, and Bourbon, or any other Two or three of them, Commissioners for the King of France, \* there was a Truce general by Sea and Land, agreed for 28 years, which was to begin at Michaelmas 1398, when the Truce at Leulingham, and the prolongations of it were to end. During which Truce, all taking of Prisoners, Goods and Chattels, Fortified Towns, Fortresses, and other Places, all Pillagings, Robberies, Burnings, Demolishing Houses, and Walls, destroying Fruit Trees and others, and all other Feats of War, (*& tout autre faits de Guerre*) were to cease between the Kingdoms, Lands, and Seigneuries on both Parts, and between the

A

B

C

D

E

F



A the Kingdoms, Lands, Seignuries, and Subjects of their Friends, Allies, Aydants, and Adherents whatsoever: And that there should be freedom of Intercourse, Commerce, Trading and Merchandising between the People and Subjects of one Party and the other. In this Truce there is not any mention of *Homage Liege*, *Sovereignty*, or *Resort*: The Treaty, Agreement, and Articles thereof was Ratified by the King of France on the Eleventh of March 1395, and was afterwards Ratified by the King of England, and the Ratifications Exchanged in the year 1396, when on the Feast of St. Simon and Jude, or 28th of October, both Kings at an Interview not far from Calais, sware to the performance of them.

B John Duke of [3] Guyen and Lancaster Steward of England, and Thomas Duke of Gloucester Constable of England, Petition the King and Lords for Judgment against Sir Thomas Talbot, and others not named, for Conspiring their Deaths, and raising Force to do it in the County of Chester; That they would Declare the Nature of the Offence, and ordain Punishment for it. The King was informed and advised, the Matter contained in the Bill or Petition was open and High Treason, and that it touched him and all the Realm; and he and all the Lords Judged and Declared it to be so. And because the Matter contained in the Bill of Complaint, was notorious and open known to the King and Lords, and all the States of Parlement, and thro' the whole Kingdom, and therefore it was ordered and awarded that Writs should issue returnable into the Kings-Bench, to take his Body; That Proclamation should be made for him to render himself to stand to the Law, if not he was to be holden for Convict, as attainted of Treason, and all who received him were to incur the same Pain and Forfeiture he ought to do.

D If the [4] Suggestion of a Bill in Chancery was not true, the Chancellor had Power given him to award Damages at his Discretion. See Stat. at Large, 17 Rich II. Cap. 6.

E In the Eighteenth of his Reign the \* King about Michaelmas, went with an Army into Ireland, to subdue the Irish, who were then in Rebellion, and with him went the Duke of Gloucester, the Earls of March, Nottingham, and Rutland. The Duke of York Guardian of the Kingdom in his absence, \* called a Parlement to meet Fifteen days after St. Hillary, to Consider of the Prosperous and Happy Government of Ireland, and to that purpose sent the Duke of Gloucester over into England, to procure Money from the Parlement; and the Lords and Commons \* granted to the King a Tenth and Fifteenth for the Conquest of that Country; and in May next following, having settled that Nation, and left the Earl of March Deputy, returned into England.

F In the Twentieth of King Richard, in the Parlement [5] holden on the Feast of St. Vincent, or 22d of January, the Commons had framed certain Articles in a Bill, as the King told the Lords he was informed, against his Royalty and Liberty, such as his Progenitors enjoyed, which he was Resolved to uphold and maintain; and Commanded the Lords Spiritual and Temporal to let the Commons know it; and Commanded the Duke of Lancaster to Charge Mr. John Buffy, the Speaker, upon his Allegiance, to tell who brought in the Bill. That which moved and troubled the King therein, was about the Expences of his House, and the Bishops and

[3] Ib. 20, 21. The Dukes of Lancaster and Gloucester pray Judgment against Sir Thomas Talbot and others, for Conspiring their Deaths.

[4] Ib. n. 52. \* Knighton's Col. 2742. n. 10. Walsingham, f. 351. lin. 2. The King went into Ireland with an Army. \* Rot. Clause 18 Ric. II. M. 23. Dors. A Tenth and Fifteenth given. \* Rot. Parl. 18 Ric. II. n. 6. A. D. 1395. The King settled Ireland.

[5] Ib. 20 R. II. n. 14, 15, 16. The Commons frame certain Articles against the King's Royalty and Liberty. The Speaker charged to tell who brought in that Bill.



[6] Ib. n. 16.  
The Commons deliver the Bill to the Lords.

Thomas Haxey brought the Bill into the House of Commons.

The Commons Excuse and Submission.

[7] Ib. n. 17.  
The King fully Excuseth them.

Thomas Haxey Judged a Traytor.

[8] Ib. n. 23.

[9] Ib. m.  
The Arch-Bishop and Bishops make Protestation, the King's Royalty ought to be preserved. They beg the Life, Body, and Custody of Thomas Haxey, which were granted them.

[1] Ib. n. 40. and Stat. at Large, 20 Rich. II. Cap. 6.  
Sir Robert Belknap, &c. called out of Ireland.

Ladies that frequented the Court. The Commons made their Excuse and Submission to the King in manner following.

On Saturday, the Morrow of the Feast of Candlemas, [6] the Lords Spiritual and Temporal were with the Commons, and shew them the Will and Command of the King, and they delivered the Bill to the Lords, and the Name of him that brought it to them, to wit, Thomas Haxey; Which Bill was afterwards delivered to the Clerk of the Crown by the Clerk of the Parlement by the King's Command, and presently after the Commons came before the King in Parlement by his Command, and there with all Humility and Obedience they could, shew great Grief, as appeared by their Countenances, for that the King had taken such conceit against them, Humbly praying the King, to hear and accept their Excuse; That it never was their Intent or Will to speak, shew, or do any thing which should be an Offence, or Displeasure to his Majesty, nor against his Royal Estate or Liberty, and especially about this Matter touching his Person and the Government of his House, or about the Lords and Ladies in his Court, nor of any other Matter that touched himself, knowing well that such things do not belong to them, but solely to the King himself, and his Ordering; and that their Intention was, for the great Affection they bare to the King as faithful Lieges, That the Lords might pray the King, to consider his Honourable Estate, and do concerning it what he pleased; And upon this the Commons submit themselves to the King's Will and Favour, humbly praying his Royal Majesty to have them Graciously Excused, being always ready to save his Royal Estate and Liberty, and to perform in Body and Goods as Loyal Lieges are bound, what shall be for the Honour and Safety of his Royal Majesty.

Whereupon [7] the Chancellor, by Command of the King, told the Commons, That upon his Royal Benignity, and Gracious Seignoury, he had them fully Excused.

On Wednesday after Candlemas, Thomas Haxey, Clerc, was in Parlement Judged to [8] Death as a Traytor; and soon after Sentence, the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, (Thomas Arundel) and all the other Prelates, came before the King in Parlement, with great Humility, and made full Protestation, That their intire and full Intention was, and always should be, That his Royal Estate and Royalty should be always saved and preserved without diminution, [9] (*Et maintenant apres de Juggement rendu devers Thomas Haxey Clerc en Parlement a la mort come traitour viendrent avant le Roy en Parlement ovek grant humilite Lerceveque de Canterbris & touz les autres Prelates & firent plein protestation, que leur entier & plein intention est & tout dis ferraque le Royal Estate & Regalie du Roy soit tout dis savez & Gardez sanz Blemissement.*) And then they pray the King to give them the Life of Thomas Haxey, and the Custody of his Body, not as of right belonging to them, but of his special Grace. Both which the King granted.

The King by assent [1] of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commons, of his Special Grace granted to Robert Belknap, John Holt, and William Burgh, Knights, Banished into Ireland, that they might return into England, and practise Law there without impeachment, notwithstanding the Statute made in the Eleventh year of the King's Reign, saving always against them all the other Points contained in the Statute.

In

A

B

C

D

E

F



In the 21st of *King Richard's Reign*, [2] he summoned a Par-  
lement to meet on the *Monday* after the Exaltation of Holy Cross,  
or 14th of *September*.

It was made into a [3] Statute this Parlement, That *Holy*  
*Church*, the *Lords Spiritual and Temporal*, and all *Cities, Burghs*,  
and other *Commonalties* of the *Realm*, should have and enjoy all  
their *Liberties*, and *Franchises*, as they had reasonably had and  
enjoyed them in the time of his Noble Progenitors Kings of *England*.

For that several *Judgments* were heretofore undone, [4] be-  
cause the *Clergie* were not present, the *Commons* prayed the *King*,  
they might appoint a *general Proctor*, who might have sufficient  
Authority to act for them.

The Two [5] *Arch-Bishops*, and the *Clergie* of both *Provinces*,  
constituted and appointed *Sir Thomas Percy* their *Procurator*, as  
by their Instrument doth appear.

The *Commission* and *Statute* made upon it in [6] the *Eleventh*  
year of this *King*, are repealed, and made void at the prayer of  
the *Commons*, as being made *Traiterously*, by *constraint* and *com-*  
*pulsion*, against the *King's Will*, his *Royalty*, *Crown* and *Dignity*, and  
it was *Ordained and Established* by the *King*, with the *Assent* of the  
*Lords and Commons*, That no such *Commission*, or the like, should  
be made, and that he that should *indeavour*, or *procure* any such  
to be made, or the like, in time to come, &c. being thereof  
duely *Convict*, should suffer as a *Traitor*.

The *Pardons* granted to the *Duke* of [7] *Glocester*, and *Earls* of  
*Arundel*, and *Warwick*, in the Parlement of the *Eleventh* of this  
*King*, are made void, as done by force only against the *King's Will*,  
as also the *Pardon* granted to the *Earl* of *Arundel* at *Windsor*, in  
the 17th year of this *King*, is *revoked* and annulled.

On the \* 20th of *September*, the *Commons* made *Protestation*  
to the *King* in full Parlement, That tho they would *show* and *de-*  
*clare* certain *Matters* and *Articles* they had then *Advised* of, and  
*Agreed* amongst themselves, nevertheless it was, and is their *In-*  
*tent* and *Will*, by *Leave* of the *King*, to accuse and impeach  
*Person* or *Persons* as often as they should think fit, during the  
time of this Parlement; (*ne nit meins il feust & est leur intent &*  
*volonte par conge de nostre Seigneur le Roy d'accuser & empescher person*  
*ou persons a taunts de foitz come leur sembleroit affair, durant le temps*  
*de cest present Parlement*) And they prayed the *King* he would  
please to accept their *Protestation*, and that it might be *entered* of  
*Record* on the *Parlement Roll*, which the *King* granted, and *com-*  
*manded* it to be done.

Then on the [8] same day, before the *King* in full Parlement,  
they accused and impeached *Thomas Arundel Arch-Bishop* of *Canter-*  
*bury* of *High Treason*, for that he being *Chief Officer* of the *King*,  
(to wit) his *Chancellor* (when he was *Bishop* of *Ely*) was *Traite-*  
*rously aiding*, *procuring*, and *advising* in making a *Commission* directed  
to *Thomas Duke* of *Glocester*, *Richard Earl* of *Arundell*, and others,  
in the Tenth year of the Reign of the *King*, and made and pro-  
cured himself as *chief Officer* of the *Realm* to be put into it, to have  
Power with the other *Commissioners* to put it in *Execution*;  
Which *Commission* was made in *prejudice* of the *King*, and openly a-  
gainst his *Royalty*, his *Crown* and *Dignity*, and that the said *Thomas*  
put in *Use* and *Execution* the said *Commission*.

A Parlement  
summoned.

[2] Clause  
21 Rich. II.  
Part 1. M. 27.  
Dors.

[3] Stat. at  
Large, 21 R. II.  
Cap. 1.

Holy Church,  
the Lords, and  
all Comonal-  
ties, to enjoy  
their Liber-  
ties and Fran-  
chises.

[4] Rot. Parl.  
21 Ric. II.  
n. 9.

[5] Ib. n. 10.  
Sir Thomas  
Percy general  
Procurator  
for the Cler-  
gy.

[6] Stat. at  
Large,  
21 Rich. II.  
Cap. 2. This  
agrees with  
the Record.

The Commis-  
sion and Sta-  
ture made in  
the 11th year  
of the King  
Repealed.

[7] Rot. Parl.  
21 Rich. II.  
n. 12, 13.

The Pardons  
to the Duke  
of Glocester,  
Earls of A-  
rundel, and  
Warwick,  
made void.

Ib. n. 14.

The Com-  
mons declare,  
with the  
King's Leave,  
their intent  
was to accuse  
Persons dur-  
ing the time  
of this Parle-  
ment.

They had the  
King's Leave.

[8] Ib. n. 15.  
The Arch-  
Bishop of Can-  
terbury accus-  
ed of Treas-  
on.



[9] *Ibm.*

Also, for that [9] the said *Thomas Arch-Bishop*, in the Eleventh year of the King, procured and advised the Duke of Gloucester, and the Earls of Warwick and Arundel, to take upon them Royal Power, and to Arrest the King's Lieges, *Simon Burley*, and *James Barners*, and Judge them to Death contrary to the Will and Assent of the King; and upon this the said Commons pray the King, the said *Thomas* may be put in safeguard in an honest manner.

[1] *Ibm.*

And the King [1] said, because the Accusation and Empeachment touched so high a Person and Peer of the Realm, he would be advised.

[2] *Ib. n. 16.*

The Commons pray Judgment against the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury.

Also the Twenty first day of [2] September next following, the Commons prayed the King, That as they had Empeached and Accused the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, that he had assented, or was in the Contrivance to cause the Commission to be made (*quel feust d'assent de fair faire la dit Commission*) on the Nineteenth of November, in the Tenth year of the King, and of the Execution of the same, which was expressly against the King, his State, and Dignity, That he would please to Ordain such Judgment against him as the Case required; Hereupon the King caused to be Recorded in Parlement, That the Arch-Bishop was before him in the presence of certain Lords, and confessed, (*que en la use de la dit Commission il soy misprist, & luy mist en la Grace du Roy.*) That he was mistaken or erred in the use of the Commission, and put himself under the King's Grace.

[3] *Ibm.*

He was adjudged Traytor, and to be Banished.

Whereupon the [3] King and all the Lords Temporal, and Monsieur *Thomas Percy*, having sufficient Power from the Prelates and Clergie, as appeared upon Record, in the said Parlement, adjudged and declared the Article, which the Arch-Bishop confessed to be Treason, and touched the King himself, and also judged and declared him a Traytor; and thereupon it was awarded in Parlement, That he should be Banished out of England, his Temporalties seized, and his Goods and Chattels forfeited to the King, who was to appoint the time of his Exile.

[4] *Ib. n. 17.*

And then the King [4] assigned him time of Passage from the Eve of St. Michael until Six weeks next following, from the Port of Dover into France; and further, That he should forfeit all his Lands, Tenements and Possessions which he had in Fee Simple, by Descent, Purchase, or otherwise, at the day of the Treason committed or after, or that any one held to his use, to the King and his Heirs for ever.

[5] *Ib. n. 26.*

The Commons interceed with the King for such as were named in the Commission, and did not act.

The Commons interceeded with the King for his Favour toward such as were named in the [5] Commission, and made Commissioners, but neither procured it, consented to it, or acted in the Execution of it; Three whereof were alive, the Duke of York, the Bishop of Winchester, and Richard Lescrop Knight, and Four dead, William late Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, Alexander late Arch-Bishop of York, Thomas late Bishop of Excester, and Nicholas late Abbat of Waltham, whose Loyalty and Innocency was acknowledged in Parlement; The Declaration whereof was made a Statute by the King, with the Advice and Assent of the Lords, at the Prayer of the Commons.

They



A They further [6] humbly beseech the King, That he would please to consider how at the time when *Thomas Duke of Gloucester, Richard Earl of Arundel, and Thomas Earl of Warwick*, did rise (*soy leverent*) and march against their Allegiance and the King, the said Duke and Earls would have come and marched to have searched out the King, if he could be found in England, and to have killed a very great Number of his Lieges; and to have accomplished their evil Purpose and Intent, if they had not been disturbed by the Honourable Persons of the King's Blood, *Henry of Lancaster, Earl of Derby, and Thomas de Mowbray Earl of Nottingham*, conceiving and understanding the Actions of the Duke and Earls were notoriously against their Legiance, and the Estate of the King; and therefore willing to do their Duty to him, departed from their Company, and came to the Honourable Presence of the King. It would please him, the Commons having specially recommended the Persons of the Earls of Derby and Nottingham to him, openly to declare in this Parlement, their Estate, Name, and Fame, and the Loyal Behaviour of them (*leur Estate, & le Noun, & le Fame, & le Loyal Port de eux.*) Whereupon the King sitting in his Royal Dignity in Parlement, answered, This matter was better known to him than any other; and witnessed and declared the good Behaviour, Loyalty and Fame of the Two Earls, and held them for Loyal Lieges, and that they should be reported for such amongst all his Lieges through the Realm; and that they should be excused without Impeachment, Molestation, or Grievance for the Cause aforesaid in any time to come. And further, That the King, by Assent and Advice of all the Lords in Parlement, and at the Prayer of the Commons, Ordained and Established, That this Declaration and Grant should have the force of, and be holden for a Statute.

That all Judgments, \* Ordinances, Declarations, and Establishments of this Parlement shall have the force of Statutes.

D On Michaelmas-Day, being Saturday, [7] the King in Parlement Created *Henry Earl of Derby Duke of Hereford, Edward Earl of Rutland Duke of Albemarle, Thomas Holland Earl of Kent Duke of Surrey, John Holland Earl of Huntington Duke of Excester, Thomas Mowbray Earl of Nottingham Duke of Norfolk.* The same Day *John Beaufort Earl of Somerset* was Created Marquess of Dorset, *Thomas de Spenser Earl of Gloucester, Ralph Nevill Earl of Westmerland, Thomas Percy Earl of Worcester, and William le Scrop Earl of Wiltshire.*

E On the same Day the King [8] Adjourned the Parlement unto the 15th of St. Hillary, or 27 of January next coming, to *Shrewsbury*, all things to remain in the same Condition they were, to be there finished and determined.

F The next Day being Sunday, [9] the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, after Mass Celebrated in the Abby-Church at *Westminster*, upon the Altar, before the Shrine of St. Edward, made Oath in the presence of the King, in the Form following. The Prelates first, saving the Honesty of their Estate (*savant L'onesté de leur Estat*) That is to say,

[6] Ib. n. 27.

The Commons move the King in behalf of the Earls of Derby and Nottingham.

The King's Kindness and Favour to them.

\* Ib. n. 32.

[7] Ib. n. 35. Henry Earl of Derby created Duke of Hereford. Several others created Dukes and Earls.

[8] Ib. n. 36. The Parlement adjourned to *Shrewsbury*.

[9] Ib. n. 37. The Lords Spiritual and Temporal Swear before the King.



The Bishops  
first.

*The Arch-Bishop of York,  
The Bishop of London,  
The Bishop of Winchester,  
The Bishop of Ely,  
The Bishop of Duresme,  
The Bishop of Salisbury,  
The Bishop of Excester,  
The Bishop of Bangor,  
The Bishop of Worcester,  
The Bishop of Hereford,*

*The Bishop of Chichester,  
The Bishop of St. Asaph,  
The Bishop of Carlile,  
The Bishop of Landaf,  
The Prior of St. John of Jeru-  
salem,  
The Abbat of Westminster,  
The Abbat of Canterbury,  
The Abbat of St. Albans,  
The Prior of Canterbury.*

A

### The O A T H.

[1] Ibm.n.38.  
& Append.  
n. 109.

*You shall [1] Swear, That well and truly you shall Hold, Sustain,  
and Maintain, without Fraud or Deceit, all the Statutes, Establish-  
ments, Ordinances, or Judgments made or given in this Parlement,  
without doing any thing to the contrary of any of them, or the Depend-  
encies on, or Parcel of them; nor that you will ever Repeal, Revoke,  
Cassate, make Void, Reverse, or Admull, nor ever suffer them to be  
Repealed, Revoked, Cassated, made Void, Reversed, or Admulled, so  
long as you live; saving to the King his Royalty, Liberty, and the  
Right of his Crown.*

B

[2] Ibm.n.39.  
The Lords  
Temporal  
take the same  
Oath.

*And so soon as they had Sworn, the Lords [2] Temporal, in the  
same Place, in the Presence of the King, made the same Oath;  
that is to say,*

C

*The Duke of Guyen and Lan-  
caster,  
The Duke of York,  
The Duke of Hereford,  
The Duke of Albemarle,  
The Duke of Surrey,  
The Duke of Excester,  
The Duke of Norfolk,  
The Marques of Dorset,  
The Earl of Oxford,  
The Earl of Stafford,  
The Earl of Northumberland,  
The Earl of Salisbury,  
The Earl of Gloucester,  
The Earl of Westmerland,  
The Earl of Worcester,  
The Earl of Wilts,  
The Lord de Camoys,  
The Lord de Bourgchier,  
The Lord de Powys,  
The Lord Fitz-Walters,*

*The Lord de Roos,  
The Lord de Harrington,  
The Lord de Burnell,  
The Lord de Berkely,  
The Lord de Darcy,  
The Lord de Willoughby,  
The Lord Grey of Codnore,  
The Lord Grey of Ruthin,  
The Lord de Scales,  
The Lord de St. Amand,  
The Lord de Furnivall,  
The Lord de Ferrers,  
The Lord de Seymour,  
The Lord de Lovell,  
The Lord de Bardolph,  
The Lord de Morley,  
William Beaumont, Lord of  
Burgavenny,  
Ralph de Cromwell,  
Ralph de Lumly,  
Philip le Dispenfer,*

D

E

F

And did Swear further in these Words :

[3] Ibm.n.40.  
& Append.n.  
110.

*[3] You shall Swear, That in time to come you shall never suffer any  
Man living to do any thing contrary to the Statutes, Establishments,  
Ordi-*



Ordinances, and Judgments, made or given in this present Parlement, nor to any Dependencies on, or Parcell of them: And if any one shall do so, and be duly Convicted, you shall use your entire Power and Diligence, without Fraud or Deceit, to prosecute him before the King and his Heirs Kings of England, and cause him to have Execution as an High and False Traitor to the King and Kingdom; saving to the King his Regalie or Royalty, Liberty and Right of his Crown.

The Addition-  
al Oath of  
the Lords  
Temporal.

A

Then the King asked the Knights of Shires there present for the Parlement, If they [4] would hold and keep the same Oath? Who promised with loud Voices to keep it, holding up their Hands on high, as a Sign of their Affirmance of their said Oaths.

[4] *Ibm. n. 41.*  
The Knights  
of Shires af-  
firm the said  
Oaths.

B

And immediately after, Monsieur Thomas de Percy [5] made thesame Oath the Lords Temporal had made, for and in the Name of the Clergy, as their Procurator General, and by Authority above-  
said.

[5] *Ibm. n. 42,*  
43.

Sir Tho. Percy  
made the  
same Oath for  
the Clergy.

C

This done, the King, the Prelates, and Lords Temporal [6] went from the Shrine of St. Edward, and came before the High Altar of the Church, and there for the Establishment and Affirmance of these things, the Prelates and Ordinaries of the Provinces of Canterbury and York, with one Assent did pronounce the Sentence of the greater Excommunication, against all and every of the Subjects of both Provinces, that openly or privately, by Deed, Counsel, or Advice, should contravene or do against any of the foresaid Premises, the King's Royalty and Prerogative in all things saved.

[6] *Ibm.*  
The great Ex-  
communicati-  
on pronoun-  
ced against  
any one  
should do con-  
trary to the  
Premises.

D

According to the Adjournment [7] the Parlement met at Shrewsbury on Monday after the Quinden of St. Hillary, when the Chancellor told them, That at first this Parlement was Summoned for the Honour of God, and that Holy Church might enjoy all its Liberties and Franchises; and that all the Lords, Knights, Citizens, and Burgeffes, should have and enjoy all their Liberties and Franchises, as they reasonably enjoyed and used them in former times. [8] Also that there should not be more Governours in the Kingdom than One; and that the Laws might be duly obeyed and executed, as it was more fully contained in the Beginning and Pronunciation of the Cause of this Parlement.

[7] *Ibm. n. 44.*  
21 Ric. II.  
A. D. 1398.  
The Parle-  
ment met at  
Shrewsbury.

[8] *Ibm.*

E

Also the [9] Chancellor shewed to the Commons, the King would be informed by them how the Charge should be born for the Defence of England, Ireland, Guyen, the March of Calais, and also the March of Scotland, in case they kept not the Truce made for four Years, which was to end at Michaelmas next coming.

[9] *Ibm.*  
The King de-  
sired to know  
how the  
Charge for  
the Defence  
of the War  
should be  
born.

F

The Lords Appellants in this Parlement, [1] Edward Duke of Albemarle, Thomas Duke of Surrey, John Duke of Excester, John Marquess of Dorset, John Earl of Salisbury, Thomas Earl of Gloucester, and William Earl of Wiltshire, Prayed the King, and shewed that certain Lords Convict and Attainted, the Duke of Gloucester, the Earls of Arundel and Warwic, by Coertion and Compulsion made him Summon a Parlement at Westminster, on the morrow after Candlemas, in the 11th Year of his Reign; and then reciting what had been done that Year, and particularly the Questions and Answers put to, and made by Sir Robert Tresilian, the other Judges,

[1] *Ibm. n. 47.*  
& Stat. at  
Large, 21 Ric.  
II. c. 12.  
The Lords  
Appellants in  
this Parle-  
ment,  
Moved the  
Parlement in  
the 11th of  
this King,  
might be re-  
voked.



Judges, and King's Serjeant at Nottingham, that the whole Parle- ment might be revoked, the *Commons* joined with them in the same Prayer, to which the *Lords Spiritual and Temporal As- sented*.

[2] *Ibm.*  
The An-  
swers made to  
the Questions  
propounded  
at Nottingham,  
judged good  
and lawful.  
The Judges,  
Justices, and  
Serjeants of  
that Opinion.

After the Reading the [2] *Questions and Answers*, as well be- fore the *King and Lords*, as *Commons*, all the *Estates* of Parle- ment were asked, What they thought of the *Answers*? And they said, They thought the *Justices* made and gave their *Answers* duly and lawfully, as good and lawful Liege People of the *King* ought to do. And Sir *Thomas Skelton*, Learned in the Law, *William Hanke- ford*, and *William Brenchly*, the *King's Serjeants*, said, The *Ans- wers* were good and lawful, and that if the same *Questions* had been put to them, they would have given the same. *William Thirning*, Chief Justice of the *Common Bench*, said, The *Declaration of Treason* not declared, belonged to the *Parlement*; but if he were a *Lord or Peer of Parlement*, if he had been asked, he would have said in the same manner. In like manner said *William Rikehyll*, a Justice of the *Common Pleas*; and Sir *Walter Clopton*, Chief Justice of the *King's Bench* said the same thing. Wherefore the *Answers* were judged and affirmed to be good and sufficient in that *Parlement*.

[3] *Ibm.*  
The Parle-  
ment as above  
annulled.

Whereupon by Assent of the *Lords Spiritual and Temporal*, the *Procurators* of the *Clergy*, and *Commons*, and by Advice of the *Justices and Serjeants* aforesaid there being, it was [3] *Awarded and Judged, Ordained and Stablisbed*, That the *Parlement* holden in the said 11th Year, shall be clearly annulled, and holden for none, as a thing made without Authority, and against the Will and Liberty of the *King*, and the Right of his *Crown*; and that all the *Judgments, Statutes, and Ordinances* made in the same, with all things depending upon them, shall be *revoked and annulled, reversed and repealed*, and holden for none; and that all *Lands, Tenements, Fees, Advousons*, and all other *Possessions* seized as for- feit by colour of the said *Judgments*, shall be *restored and delivered* to them which were judged or put out, or to their Heirs, and to them that have in other manner Cause of Action, or Title of Right, with all manner of Liberties or Franchises as they had at any time, with Restitution of Goods and Chattels.

[4] *Ibm. n. 51.*  
The *Commons*  
desire, that  
the greatest  
Security that  
can be, may  
be given, for  
not undoing  
what was  
done in this  
*Parlement*.

On Wednesday the third Day of this Meeting, [4] *John Bussy* the *Speaker* alledged, That before that time, many *Ordinances and Statutes* made in divers *Parlements*, had been *reversed by di- versity of Opinions*, and other *Reasons and Subtilties*; and on be- half of the *Commons* prayed the *King*, That the greatest Security that could be given, might be taken for the not undoing the *Or- dinances and Judgments* made in this *Parlement*. Whereupon the *King* charged all the *Estates* in *Parlement* to give them their Ad- vice for the best and most firm Security in this case. The *Lords Spiritual and Temporal* answered, That they had *Sworn* before to hold and keep the said *Judgments, Establishments, and Statutes*, \* which they would maintain with all their Power, as much as in them was. The *King* also demanded of the *Justices and Ser- jeants*, If they knew any other more secure way for the perpetual keeping and observing of the *Ordinances and Judgments, &c.* Who answered, The greatest Security that could be, was esta- blished by *Parlement*. And then the *Lords Temporal and Spi- ritual*

\* This Salvo  
was not in  
their Oaths.



ritual renewed their Oaths before the King in Parlement upon the Cross of Canterbury; and also the greatest part of the Commons held up their hands in Affirmance of their Oaths; and likewise the Proctors of the Clergy, and the Knights being about the King. And then after Proclamation had been made in audience of all the People, To know if they would [5] Consent to this manner of Security? To which they answered, (lifting their Hands on high, and crying with loud Voices, It pleased them well, and fully consented thereunto.

Thomas le Despensers Petitions \* the King in full Parlement, wherein he recites the Petitions of Hugh the Father, and Hugh the Son, to the King in full Parlement holden at York three Weeks after Easter, in the 15th Year of Edward II.

In which Parlement the Exile and Disberison of both were annulled for these Reasons: First, They were not Appealed, or called to Answer, nor due Process made against them according to Law. Secondly, Because the Prelates who were Peers of the Realm (*Et que les Prelatz que estoient Piers du Royalm*) did not Consent to the Exile and Disberison (*A dit agard de Disberison & Exile ne assenteront point.*) Thirdly, Because it was against Magna Charta, that any Man should be Exiled or Tryed, or otherways Destroyed, without Judgment of his Peers. This Adnullation was afterwards made void in 1 Edw. III. They pray that Statute may be made void; and it was made void, and all the Articles and things contained in it, for the Reasons abovesaid.

*Et sur ceo le Roy fist examiner diligement les Prelatz, Ducs, Barons, & Comunes Summonez a son Parlement, what they thought, whether the Statute of Edward III. was defeasable? Who upon good Deliberation said it was, for the Causes before exprest; also considering that the Repeal made by King Edward III. was at such time as his Father Edward II. was living, being very King, and in Prison, that he could not resist the same.*

The Record of this matter is long; and also the Proceedings against the Spencers in the 14th and 15th of Edward II. and Statute the first of Edward III. are recited, which see in those Years.

On [7] Thursday the last Day of the Parlement, the Duke of Hereford in full Parlement humbly kneeled before the King, and said to him, *My Liege Lord, I know well that many Riots, Disturbances, and evil Deeds have been made and done within your Kingdom, to the Offence of you and your Royal Estate, in the which I my self was present amongst others; not with an ill Intent or Purpose to offend you, not knowing then it was any Fault or Offence against you. But, Sir, since I now know well, and confess my Offences and evil Deeds in so doing, I cry you Mercy, and beg your Pardon.* Whereupon the King graciously accepted the humble Prayers and Confession of the Duke, and granted him Pardon in full Parlement, for what he had done in the things abovesaid, and what belonged to him for the same. And further, the King granted him to be his Good Lord: And this he declared to all the Estates in Parlement, how he had given him full Pardon for the Matters aforesaid.

Lords Spiritual and Temporal renew their Oaths.

[5] Ibid. The People Consent to these things.

\* Ib. n. 55. to the end of n. 66.

The Repeal of the Judgments against the Despensers, 14th & 15th of Ed. II. confirmed, and the Reverse of that Appeal in the 1st of Ed. III. repealed.

[7] Ibid. n. 67. The Duke of Hereford's Submission and Confession to the King on his Knees. He begs pardon.

The King's Mercy and Pardon to him.



[8] Ibm. n. 75.  
The Subsidy  
of Wooll, &c.  
granted to  
the King for  
Life, with a  
xth and half  
and xvth and  
half.

[9] Ibm. n. 76.  
Out of which  
the Commons  
pray the Suf-  
ferers of Ra-  
c-t-bridge, &c.  
may have 3  
or 4000  
Marks.

[1] Ib. n. 77.  
& Stat. at  
Large, 21 Ric.  
II. c. 15.

A General  
Pardon,

[2] Ibm. n. 78.  
Upon Condi-  
tion.

[3] Ibm. n. 74.  
& 80. & Stat.  
at Large, 21  
Ric. II. c. 16.  
A. D. 1398.  
Certain Per-  
sons appoin-  
ted to deter-  
mine all mat-  
ters undis-  
patched this  
Parlement,

And all other  
matters, ha-  
ving the  
whole Power  
of Parlement  
deputed to  
them.

The *Commons* on the same Day by [8] *Assent* of the *Lords Spi-ritual* and *Temporal*, granted to the *King* the *Subsidy* of *Wooll*, *Leather*, and *Woollfells* for his Life, and one 10th and 15th, and half a 10th and 15th.

Upon which *Grants*, [9] the *Commons* prayed the *King* to be-  
stow 3 or 4000 Marks on those that suffered at *Ratcot-bridge*, and  
to pay the *Lords Appellants* their *Expences*.

And then the same Day follows a [1] *General Pardon*, for all  
things done before that Day, which was *Thursday*, as above,  
the last of *January*, and last Day of *Parlement*; provided that they  
who rode and gathered themselves forcibly against the *King*, in  
the 11th Year of his Reign, with the *Lords* then *Convict* and  
*Judged*, should have no *Benefit* of the *Pardon*, if they *Sued* not  
forth their *Charters* between that and *Midsummer*.

Upon the Grant of this *Pardon*, [2] the *King* by his own  
Mouth declared, That if the *Lords* and *Commons*, which in time  
to come shall Sit in *Parlement*, should lett or disturb him in the  
Collection of the *Subsidy* of *Wooll*, *Leather*, and *Woollfells*, so  
granted as above, it should be void.

Also the same [3] *Thursday* (the last Day of the *Parlement*)  
the *Commons* prayed the *King*, That whereas they had before  
them divers *Petitions*, as well for special Persons as others, not  
Read or Answered; and also many other Matters and Things  
had been moved in the Presence of the *King*, which for short-  
ness of time could not well be determined; It would please the  
*King* (*que plerroit au Roy, &c.*) to commit full Power to certain  
*Lords* and others whom he pleased, to *Examin*, *Answer*, and *Dis-  
patch* the *Petitions*, *Matters*, and *Things* abovesaid, and all *De-  
pendencies* on them. To which Prayer the *King Assented*,  
and thereupon by *Authority* and *Assent* of *Parlement*, Ordained  
and Assigned *John Duke* of *Lancaster*, *Edmond Duke* of *York*, *Ed-  
mond Duke* of *Albemarl*, *Thomas Duke* of *Surrey*, *John Duke* of  
*Excester*, *John Marquess* of *Dorset*, *Roger Earl* of *March*, *John Earl*  
of *Salisbury*, *Henry Earl* of *Northumberland*, *Thomas Earl* of *Glo-  
cester*, *Thomas Earl* of *Winchester*, and *William Earl* of *Wiltshire*,  
or Six of them; *John Hussy*, *Henry Green*, *John Russell*, *Henry  
Chelmswike*, *Robert Tey*, and *John Golofre*, *Knights*, coming for  
the *Commons* of the Kingdom to that *Parlement*, or Three of them,  
shall *Examin*, *Answer*, and fully *Determin* all the said *Petitions*,  
and the *Contents* of them, (*come tontz autre Matiers & Choses moe-  
vez en Presence du Roy, &c.*) as all other Matters and Things  
moved in the Presence of the *King*, and all other *Dependencies*  
upon them not *Determined*, as they shall think best by their  
Good Advice and Discretion in this behalf, by *Authority* of the  
said *Parlement*: And then it was *Diffolved*.

On *Wednesday* the 30th of *January*, and Day before the *Parle-  
ment ended*, the *Duke* of *Hereford* accused the *Duke* of *Norfolk* of  
*Words, &c.* spoken against the *King's Person*, as will more fully  
appear in the *Pleas* of the *Crown* of this *Parlement*.

On



On the first of *August* this Year at *Nottingham*, [4] before the King sitting with his Crown on, in the Great Hall of the Castle there, *Edward Earl of Rutland*, *Thomas Earl of Kent*, *John Earl of Huntington*, *Thomas Earl of Nottingham*, *John Earl of Somerset*, *John Earl of Salisbury*, *Thomas Lord Despenser*, and *William le Scrop* the King's Chamberlain, brought a Bill of Appeal of Treason, against *Thomas Duke of Gloucester*, *Richard Earl of Arundel*, and *Thomas Earl of Warwic*. [5] The Bill having been read, by Advice of the Lords and those of his Council about the King, they had Day given them to the Parlement, which was to begin on the *Monday* next after the Exaltation of *Holy Cross*, or 14th of *September*, which was that Year on the *Friday*; so as the Parlement began the 17th of that Month.

First, the Bill [6] sets forth, That the Duke of Gloucester and Earl of Arundel, designing to accroach and have the Government of his Royal Person and Kingdom, his Liberties and all his Dignities, as well within the Kingdom as without, when the Parlement sate at *Westminster* in the 10th Year of his Reign; sent a Peer of the Land to him, who on their Behalf and by their Command told him, That if he would not Consent to make to Them, and Others they should Name, such a Commission, whereby they might have the Government, as above, he should be in Danger of his Life; and the Lords and Commons of Parlement would depart without his Leave; and then he should see in what a strait Condition he would be in. So that by their Power, and for Fear, he granted such a Commission as they desired. And then follows the Commission Dated at *Westminster*, Nov. 19. in the 10 of his Reign; by virtue whereof the Commissioners took the Government upon them.

Also, [7] the Duke and Earl of Arundel, to accomplish their Traiterous Purpose, and to have your Person ordered as they pleased, and the Government of your whole State, Laws, Majesty, and Dignity, prevailed with *Thomas Earl of Warwic* and *Thomas Mortimer* to join with them in their Traiterous Design; who by Agreement, as Traitors to the King and Kingdom, all met and assembled on the 13th of *November*, in the 11th Year of your Reign, at *Haringay* in *Middlesex*, with a great Number of People Armed and Arrayed: And made divers of your Liege People, in several Parts of your Realm, to rise, and march with them against you, contrary to their Legiance: And would not come before your Presence, until they were secured by your Oath they might come and return safely; which notwithstanding, they all came before you in your Palace at *Westminster*, with great Force of Armed Men, and traiterously Constrained you to take them into your safe Protection against your Will.

Also, [8] the Duke, the Earls of Arundel and Warwic, and *Thomas Mortimer*, continuing their Traiterous Purpose, by Force of People, did take and imprison divers of your Liege People, and amongst others *Sir Simon Burley*, and brought him to your Parlement held on the morrow of the Purification, in the 11th of your Reign, and there suggested divers Points of Crime and Treason against him. And the Advice of every Lord then present was asked, concerning the Crimes of the said *Simon*; and

[4] Pleas of the Crown, 21 Ric. II. on the Parlemen<sup>t</sup> Roll.  
The Duke of Gloucester and Earls of Arundel appealed of Treason.  
[5] *Ibm.*

[6] *Ibm.*  
The Effect of the Bill of Appeal, and the Articles against them.

[7] *Ibm.*

[8] *Ibm.*



‘ afterwards the Duke and Earls would know your Advice or  
 ‘ Opinion, (*volont savoir vostre avis*) and you answered plainly,  
 ‘ He was not Guilty in any Point objected against him. And  
 ‘ after that, the Duke and Earls caused you to come into a secret  
 ‘ Place at *Westminster*, and shew you the Points of the Crimes  
 ‘ abovesaid. To whom you then answered, The said *Simon* was  
 ‘ not any ways Guilty of any of those Points. And there they  
 ‘ took upon them traiterously to have you constrained to have  
 ‘ consented to the Judgment they designed against him; and  
 ‘ you would not consent to any Judgment to be given against  
 ‘ the said *Simon*. Yet nevertheless, the said Duke and Earls took  
 ‘ upon them Royal Power, in Prejudice of you, and in Dero-  
 ‘ gation of your Crown, and without your Assent, and contrary  
 ‘ to your Will, in your Absence, and in the Absence of many  
 ‘ other Peers of Parlement, without their Assent, and against  
 ‘ their Wills, awarded the said *Simon* should be Drawn, Hang-  
 ‘ ed, and Decollated; and thereupon they caused his Head to be  
 ‘ struck off traiterously, against your Peace, Crown, Majesty, and  
 ‘ Dignity.

[9] *Ibm.*

‘ Also, [9] the foresaid Duke, Earls, and *Thomas Mortimer*,  
 ‘ continuing their Malicious, False and Traiterous Purpose and  
 ‘ Force, at *Huntington*, on *Thursday* after the Feast of *St. Nicholas*  
 ‘ (or 6th of *December*) in the said 11th Year, Traiterously agreed  
 ‘ and intended to have gone with their Force to any Place of  
 ‘ the Kingdom where they might have found you, to have  
 ‘ surrendred to you their Homage Liege, and to have Deposed  
 ‘ you; and this they would have done, had they not been  
 ‘ hindred by *Henry de Lancaster* Earl of *Derby*, and *Thomas Mow-  
 ‘ bray* Earl of *Nottingham*. And the Duke and Earls continuing  
 ‘ their Traiterous Intention and Force, by Agreement between  
 ‘ them, caused the Records in your Treasury, of the Time of  
 ‘ your Great Grandfather King *Edward*, to be searched, how he  
 ‘ Demised himself of his Crown (or Quitted his Crown) and  
 ‘ they shew to you in Writing the Causes of the Demise of his  
 ‘ Crown, in your Palace at *Westminster*, in the time of Parle-  
 ‘ ment, in the 11th Year (*comment vostre dit besail soy demyst de sa  
 ‘ Coroun, & monstrent en escript a vous tres redoute Sr. les causes del  
 ‘ demys de sa Coroun deinz vostre Royal Palys de Westminster a dit  
 ‘ Parlement lan unzisme.*) And they said falsly and traiterously,  
 ‘ That they had Cause sufficient to Depose you, but for the Re-  
 ‘ verence they had for your most Noble Grandfather and most  
 ‘ Noble Father: And said also, That in hopes of your better Go-  
 ‘ vernment, they would suffer you to continue in your Royal  
 ‘ Estate and Regalty.

[1] *Ibm.*

‘ Which [1] Treasons so imagined (or contrived) done and  
 ‘ perpetrated, by the foresaid Duke, Earls, and *Thomas Morti-  
 ‘ mer*, against your Royal Person, Estate, Majesty, and Dig-  
 ‘ nity, as is above declared; We Appellants (there named) your  
 ‘ Loyal Lieges, have been and are ready to prove against the  
 ‘ said Duke, the Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwic*, and *Thomas Morti-  
 ‘ mer*, as you, most Dread Lord, and this High and Honourable  
 ‘ Court your Parlement shall Order. Thus far the Articles of the  
 ‘ General Appeal against these Four Persons.

Which



Which having been read, [2] the *Appellants* prayed the King the *Appealed* might be brought before him in *Parlement* to make their Answer: And accordingly *Ralph Lord Nevill Constable* of the *Tower* there present, had Order to bring before the *Parlement* *Richard Earl of Arundel*, then his Prisoner; and did so on the 21st of September. On the fourth Day of the *Parlement*, when by Command of the King and the *Peers*, the *Duke of Lancaster* Steward of England, told him, That he was *Appealed* of divers *High Treasons*; and the *Appeal* having been read to him, his Answer, That he had a *General Pardon* in the *Parlement*, holden in the 11th of the King's Reign, and a *Charter of Pardon* made to him within six Years, and prayed the Allowance of them. To whom it was said by the *Duke of Lancaster*, by Command of the King, and Advice of all the *Peers of Parlement*, That the *Pardon* made in the 11th Year, was made by constraint upon the King, by the *Duke, Earls, and others* of their Party, accroaching to themselves *Royal Power*, in Prejudice of the King, his *Royal Estate*, his *Crown and Dignity*: And that the *Charter of Pardon* was made in Deceit of the King, and expressly against him, his *Royalty* (*sa Regalie*) and *Dignity*; wherefore the said *Pardon and Charter*, by Assent of the King and all *Estates of Parlement*, upon the Request of the *Commons*, had been in this *Parlement* Repealed and made Void. And then the *Earl* was asked if he would say any other thing; and *Sir Walter Clopton Chief Justice of the King's Bench*, by the King's Command, declared to him the Law, and the Punishment he must undergo, if he said nothing else; and told him if he did not plead further, he would be *Convict* and *Attainted* of all the *Matters* objected against him. Notwithstanding this, and the Repeal of the *Charter and Pardon*, he demanded the Allowance of them. The *Appellants* in their proper Persons prayed the King it would please him to give Judgment upon him, as *Convict* of all the Points he was *Appealed*. Whereupon the *Duke of Lancaster*, by Command of the King and all the *Lords Temporal*, and *Sir Thomas Percy* having Power sufficient from the *Prelates and Clergy*, as appeared by Record in this *Parlement*, Awarded the *Earl of Arundel* Culpable and *Convict* of all the Points of which he was appealed, and adjudged him *Traitor* to the King and *Realm*; and that he should be *Drawn, Hanged, Headed, and Quartered*; and because the *Treasons* were so high as to have surrendered their *Homage Liege*, and *Deposed* the King, and the *Levy* of War having been so notorious, the said *Duke of Lancaster*, by Command of the King, the *Lords Temporal*, and *Monsieur Thomas Percy*, having Power as above, by Assent of the King, Awarded, That all the *Castles, Mannors, Lands, Tenements, Reversions, Fees, Advousons, and every other manner of Inheritance*, as well in *Fee-taile* as *Fee-simple*, which were the *Earl of Arundel's* on the 19th of November, in the 10th Year of the King, or afterwards; and also all the *Lands and Tenements*, of which other Persons were *infeoffed* to his Use the said 19th of November, or afterwards, should be forfeit to the King and his Heirs; and also all his *Goods and Chattels* should be forfeit to the King, who pardoned the Execution of his Judgment to be *Drawn, Hanged, and Quartered*, but was *Beheaded* near the *Tower of London* on the same Day. The King and *Lords*, as well *Spiritual and Temporal*, would not, nor was it their Intention,

[2] *Ibm.*

The Trial of the Earl of Arundel.

His Plea.

Over-ruled.

His Judgment.

The Aggravation of his Treasons.



tehtion, that the *Lands, and Tenements, Fees, Advowsons, Reversions, or any other Inheritance* the said Earl of Arundel was *infeſſed* to the *uſe* of another, by *reaſon* of this *Judgment* ſhould in any *manner* be *forfeit*.

[3] Append.  
n. 111.

A Warrant  
to the Earl  
Marſhall to  
bring the Bo-  
dy of the  
Duke of Glo-  
ceſter into Par-  
liament.

On the ſame day the *Earl of Arundel* was [3] brought into *Parlement*, *Tried and Conviſted*, the *King* directing his *Warrant* to *Thomas Earl Marſhall Captain of the Town of Calais*, and to his *Lientenant*, That he ſhould bring the *Body of Thomas Duke of Gloceſter* in his *Cuſtody*, with all ſpeed he could, to *Answer to divers Articles of Treason in Parlement*, according to the *Law and Cuſtom uſed in England*, objected againſt him by the *Appellants*; and to do further, and receive what ſhould be ordered by him and his *Council* concerning him in *Parlement*. Dated at *Westmiſter* the 21ſt of *September*, in the 21ſt year of his *Reign*, by the *King* and *Council* in *Parlement*.

A

[4] Ibm.  
The Earl  
Marſhal re-  
turned he was  
dead.

The [4] *Answer* of the *Earl Marſhall* was, That he could not bring him before the *King* and his *Council* in that preſent *Parlement*, for that he being in his *Cuſtody* in the *King's Priſon* at *Calais* died there. This *Return* was made *September 24*.

B

[5] Pleas of  
the Crown,  
21 Ric. II.

Upon [5] *Reading* of this *Writ and Return* in *Parlement*, the *Appellants* in their proper *Persons* prayed the *King*, That the *Duke of Gloceſter* might be declared *Traytor and Enemy* to him, as having levied *War* in the *Kingdom* againſt his *Person*, contrary to his *Ligeance*, and that all his *Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattels*, as they ought in this *Caſe*, notwithstanding his *Death* might be *forfeit*; Whereupon the *Commons* alſo of this *Parlement* prayed the *King* and *Lords*, That it being notoriously known to the *King* and all the *Eſtates* of the preſent *Parlement*, and to all the *Kingdom*, that the *Duke* and others of his *Party* aſſembled at *Haringay* in the *County of Middleſex*, with a great number of *People Armed and Arrayed*, to make *War* againſt the *King*, contrary to their *Ligeance*, and came with ſuch *Force* into the preſence of the *Person* of the *King*, which was to levy *War* againſt their *Liege Lord*; That he might be adjudged *Traytor*, and that his *Lands, Tenements, Goods and Chattels* might be *forfeit*, notwithstanding his *Death*, as they ought in this *Caſe*. Upon this all the *Lords Temporal, and Monſieur Thomas Percy*, having *Power* as aboveſaid, having been fully *Examined*, ſaid, That the ſaid *Crime and Treason* were notoriously known to them, and the whole *Kingdom*; wherefore all the *Lords Temporal, and Monſieur Thomas Percy*, by aſſent of the *King*, declared him guilty of levying of *War*, and *Traytor*, and adjudged all his *Caſtles, Mannors, Lands, &c.* which he was poſſeſſed of on the 13th of *November*, in the Eleventh year of this *Reign*, as in the *Earl of Arundel's Judgment*, forfeit to the *King* and his *Heirs*; And that none of his *Issue, or Heirs* of his *Body, or their Issue or Heirs*, in time to come, ſhould ever bear the *Royal Armes* of *England* intire, nor with difference, (*ne ove deference*) or in other manner whatſoever, nor ſhould inherit the *Crown* of *England*.

C

D

E

F

His Judg-  
ment.

[6] Ibm.

Upon [6] the 25th of *September* the *Appellants* in full *Parlement* prayed the *King*, That if there were any thing upon *Record*, whether by *Confession* of any *Person* appealed, or other *Person* whatſoever, touching their *Appeal*, that it might be openly known, and declared in full *Parlement*; Then by *Command* of the *King*,  
and



and Advice of all the Lords Temporal, [7] a Commission bearing Date the 17th of August this year, was read, directed to Monsieur William Rickhill one of the Justices of the Common Bench, and a Confession made before him by Thomas Duke of Gloucester by force of that Commission; and the Return of that Commission was then also Read, which follows in these Words:

[7] Append.  
n. 112.  
The Confession of the Duke of Gloucester, when Prisoner, before Sir William Rickhill.

*This is the Answer [8] of William Rickhill to the Commission of his Liege Lord.*

[8] Pleas of the Crown in Parliament, 21 of Ric. II.

**A**

**B** *Thomas Duke of Gloucester be the name of Thomas of Woodstok the zer of the King Richard Twenty one, in the Castle of Cales, by vertue of a Commission of the King, as it is more plainly declared in the same, directed to William Rickhill Justice hath \* I know and confessed to fore the same William all the Matters and Points I wrote (that is, wrot) in this great Roll annexed to this Scedule, the which Scedule and great Roll both Sealed under the Seal of the aforesaid William, and all the Matters and Points I know (that is, declared) and confessed by*

**C** *the foresaid Duke in the Castle of Cales, the foresaid Duke be his own Hand fully and plainly I wrot, delivered it to the same William Rickhill in the presence of John Lancaster, and John Lovetot, and all that ever the foresaid William Rickhill dede touching this Matter, it was I doe (that is done) in the presence of the foresaid John and John, and in none other manner.*

\* Declared.

**D** *I Thomas of Woodstok [9] the Zer of my Lord the King twenty one, be the vertue of a Commission of my Lord the King the same Zer directed to William Rickhill Justice, the which is comprehended more plainly in the foresaid Commission, knowleche that I was one with sterynge of other Men, to assent to the making of a Commission, in the which Commission I among other restreyned my Lord of his freedome, and took upon me among other Power real, (that is, Royal)*

**E** *truly not knowing ne witting that time that I did against his Estate nor his Royalty, as I did after and do now; And forasmuch as I knew afterward that I had done wrong, and take upon me more then me ought to do, I submitted me to my Lord, and cried him Mercy and Grace, and yet do as truly and as meekly as any Man may, and put me high and low in his Mercy and in his Grace, as he hath always been full of Mercy and Grace to all other.*

[9] Ibid.

**F** *Also, in that time that I came Armed into my Lord's presence, and into his Palace, howsoever that I did it for drede of my Life, I knowlech for certain that I did Evil, and against his Regalte, and his Estate, wherefore I submit me lowly and meekly to his Mercy and to his Grace.*

\* Also,



At Radcot  
Bridge.

‘Also, in that I took my Lords \* Letters of his Messages, and opened them against his leave, I knowlech that I did Evil, wherefore I put me lowly in his Grace.

‘Also, in that, that I sleaundred my Lord, I knowlech that I did Evil and Wickedly in that that I spake to him in sleaundrous wise in audience of other folk, bot by the way that my Soul shall too, I meant none Evil therein, nevertheles I wot and knowlech that I did evil and unkindly, wherefore I submit me high and low in his Grace.

‘Also, in that I among other communed and asked of certain Clerks whither that we might give up oure Homage for dread of our Lives or not, and whither that we were assentid thereto for to do it, trewly and be my troth, Ine have now none full mind thereof (that is, he did not remember it) but I trowe rather yee, then nay, wherefore I submit me high and low evermore in his Grace.

‘Also, in that that I was in place there it was communed, and spoken in manner of deposal of my Liege Lord trewly I knowlech well, that we were assentid thereto for two days or three, and then we for to have done our Homage and our Othes, and put him as highly in his Estate as ever he was, but for sooth (that is, sooth) there I knowlech that I did untrewly and unkindly as to him that is my Liege Lord, and hath been so good and kind Lord to me, wherefore I beseeche to him notwithstanding myn unkindnesse, I beseeche him evermore of his Mercy and of his Grace as lowly as any Creature may beseeche it unto his Liege Lord.

‘And as of any new thing or Ordenance, that ever I should have witting or known, ordained or assentid, privy or appert, that should have been against my Lord’s Estate, or his Lust, (that is, Will) or any that longeth about him, fyth that day that I swore unto him at *Langeley* on God’s Body, trewly and by that Ooth that I there made, I never knew of gathering against him, ne none other that longeth unto him.

‘And as touching these Points that I have made *Confession* of, to for *William Rickhill* Justice, in the which I wot well that I have offended my Lord, unkindly and untrewly as I have said before, how that I have in all these Points offended him, and done against him, trewly and as I will answer before God, it was my meaning and my weaning (that is, weening or thinking) to do the best for his Persone and for his Estate; Nevertheles I wot well, and know well now, that my Deeds and my Workings were against my intent, bot by the way that my Soul shall to, of these Points and of all other the which that I have done of negligence and of ununning it was never myne intent, ne my will, ne my thought for to do thing that should have been distresse or harmeing against salvation (that is, safety) of my Liege Lords Persone, as I will answer before God at the Day of Judgment.

‘And therefore I beseech my Liege and Sovereign Lord the King, that he will of his high Grace and Benignity accept me to his Mercy and his Grace, as I that put my Life, my Body, and my Goods wholly at his Will, as lowly as meekly as any Creature can do, or may do to his Liege Lord, beseeching to his



A ' his high Lordship that he will for the Passion that God suffered  
' for all Mankind, and the Compassion that he had for his Mo-  
' ther on the Crosse, and the Pitty that he had of *Mary Magda-*  
' *len*, that he will vouchsafe for to have Compassion and Pitty,  
' and to accept me to his Mercy and to his Grace, as he that  
' hath ever been full of Mercy and of Grace to all his Lieges,  
' and to all other that have nought been so nigh unto him as I  
' have been, though I been unworthy.

B After this *Return* to the *Commission* had been read, the *Apel-*  
lants prayed, That *William Rickbill*, approved for his *Loyalty* and  
*Discretion*, might be commanded by the King upon his Ligeance,  
to declare the truth touching this *Confession*, who in the presence  
of the King, the Lords *Spiritual* and *Temporal*, and *Commons*, in  
Parlement, said, and declared, That about *Eight of the Clock* be-  
fore Noon, he came within the *Castle of Caley* to the *Duke of*  
Glocester, being then in good *Memorie* and out of *Prison*, (*este-*  
*ant alors en bone memorie & hors de dureste de prison*) and shew him  
the *Commission* and the cause of his coming to him in the presence  
of *John Lancaster* and *John Lovetost*, and prayed him that what he  
had to say he would put down in *Writing*, and then departed. Then  
returning to him about *Nine of the Clock* afternoon the same day,  
the *Duke* read in writing the said *Confession* with his own Mouth,  
C and gave the same to *William Rickbill* with his own Hand. And  
further, *William Rickbill* said to the *Duke*, if there was any thing  
more touching this Matter he would speak it in satisfaction to the  
King, for the knowledge of the whole Truth of the Matter,  
whereupon the *Duke* said he had forgot one thing that then came  
into his Memory, to wit, That he said to the King, that if he  
would be King, he must not intercede for *Sir Simon Beurle* to save  
him from Death, and prayed *William Rickbill* he would shew this  
D to the King by Word of Mouth, (*& pria le dit William Rickbill*  
*quil verroit Monseigneur ceste Matire au Roy par Bouch.*)

E On [1] Friday the 28th of September, the *Constable* of the *Tower*  
brought into the Parlement *Thomas Earl of Warwick*, who was  
told by the *Duke of Lancaster* *Steward of England*, by Command  
of the King, and all the Lords *Temporal*, That he was appealed by  
*Edward Earl of Rutland*, and the other *Appellants* there named, of  
divers *High Treasons*, which were comprehended in Two only  
Articles, That of assembling with Force and Armed Men at *Har-*  
*ringay*, &c. and that about *Sir Simon Beurley*, and were drawn up  
in the same Words as in the *Earl of Arundel's Case*. To which he  
answered, That he well understood those Treasons and Wicked Deeds,  
and was Guilty of them, and put himself in the King's Grace.  
Wherefore the *Duke of Lancaster*, by Command of the King,  
all the Lords *Temporal*, and *Monseigneur Thomas Percy*, having Power  
as aforesaid, pronounced the very same Judgment against him in  
all things as he had done against the *Earl of Arundel*; Which  
F the King moved with Pity, to the Reverence and Honour of God,  
at the prayer of the *Appellants*, the *Commons* of Parlement, and the  
Lords *Spiritual* and *Temporal*, Remitted and Pardoned, and granted  
him his Life; and his Sentence was, That he should remain Prisoner  
in the Isle of Man so long as he lived, upon Condition, That if  
any Means were made to the King, or his Heirs, for any further

*William Rick-*  
*bill declares*  
in Parlement  
the manner of  
the Duke of  
Glocester's  
Confession.

[1] Item.  
The Tryal of  
the Earl of  
Warwick.

H: pleads  
Guilty, and  
puts himself  
in the King's  
Grace.  
His Judg-  
ment the  
same with  
the Earl of  
*Arundel's*.  
Which the  
King Pardon-  
ed by the Me-  
diation of the  
Parlement  
and Appel-  
lants.  
Being to re-  
main Prisoner  
in the Isle of  
Man during  
his Life.



[2] *Ibm.*  
*Thomas Mortimer* impeached by the Commons. He fled to the *Irish Rebels*. Proclamation agreed in Parliament to be made for his Return and Appearance in Parliament.

His Judgment in his Absence.

[3] *Ibm.*  
*Sir John de Cobham* impeached by the Commons.

favour, or if he should make his Escape, then the Judgment should be put in Execution, and the King's Grace should be void.

The Commons [2] before the King in Parliament affirming the Appeal to be Good and Lawful, impeached *Thomas Mortimer* of Treasons comprised in the said Appeal; but he being in Ireland, fled unto the Mountains to the *Irish Rebels*: Proclamation was agreed in Parliament to be made in England and Ireland, That he should be in England within Three Months to answer to the impeachment of the Commons, or be declared Traitor, and all his Mannors, Castles, Lands, Tenements, &c. which he was possessed of on the 13th of November, in the Eleventh of the King, together with all his Goods and Chattels, forfeited to the King. The Appellants and Commons had time given them until the meeting of the Parliament adjourned to Shrewsbury to the Quinden of St. Hilary, or 27th of January, when he not appearing, the Duke of Lancaster, and all the Lords Temporal, and William Lescrop Earl of Wiltshire, having sufficient Power from the Prelates and Clergie, as appeared by Record in Parliament, by assent of the King, gave Judgment against him according to the Tenor of the Proclamation.

On the [3] 28th day of January the Commons in the Parliament at Shrewsbury shew the King, how in the Parliament at Westminster they had accused and impeached *John de Cobham* Knight, for that he had been counselling, aiding, and procuring the Commission to be made, and caused himself to be put into it, being made in prejudice of the King, and openly against his Royal Dignity and Crown, and for that in the Eleventh year of the King, with others Convict in this Parliament, accroaching to themselves Royal Power, sitting in Judgment, awarded, That the King's Lieges, *Simon de Buerle*, and *James Bernes*, Knights, should be Drawn, Hanged, and Beheaded, without the King's assent, and contrary to his will, in his absence, and in the absence of many Peers of Parliament, who arose, and would not sit in such Judgment, and against their Will traiterously against the Peace, the King, his Crown, Majesty, and Dignity; And the same day the Duke of Surry, in whose Custody he was, brought him into Parliament to answer, who was told by the Duke of Lancaster, that he was accused and impeached by the Commons of the Treasons aforesaid, and commanded him to answer at his Peril; Who hearing the Impeachment, said, That as to the making of the Commission, he was not guilty, and touching the use and exercise of the same, he said he would not use or meddle with it without the King's Command, and therefore he went to the King and told him, he with others were made Commissioners, but would not act according to the Commission without his Command, who commanded him to act: To that the King answered, he was under such Government at that time, that he could say no otherwise, by reason of such as were then about him; and that the Commission was made against his Will, the said *John Cobham* could not gainsay it. Touching the Judgments and Award made against the said *Simon* and *James*, he said he was told by those that then were Masters, that it was the King's Will such Judgments and Award should be made. Then the Commons prayed the King to give Judgment against him as Convict and Attaint of the use and exercise of the Commission and the Judgments and Award given and made against the said *Simon* and *John*, notwithstanding his

A

B

C

D

E

F



*his Answers*; Whereupon the Duke of Lancaster, by Command of the King, all the Lords Temporal and William Lescrop Earl of Wiltshire, having sufficient Power from the Prelates and Clergie, as abovesaid, by assent of the King, awarded the said John de Cobham Convict and Attaint of the use and exercise of the Commission, and the Judgments and Award traiterously made against the said Simon and James, and therefore adjudged him Traytor, and to be Drawn, Hanged, Headed, and Quartered, and that all his Castles, Mannors, Lands and Tenements, &c. which he had on the 19th day of November, in the Tenth of the King's Reign; and so on according to the Judgments given in the Earl of Arundel's Case. All which Judgments the King of his special Grace Pardoned, yet so as he was to be Prisoner in the Isle of Jersey during his Life, and upon the same Conditions the Earl of Warwick was to be Prisoner in the Isle of Man.

His Judgment.

Which was Pardoned by the King. Being to remain Prisoner in the Isle of Jersey during Life.

**B** On Wednesday the [4] 30th day of January, in the Parlement as above, Henry of Lancaster Duke of Hereford, came before the King with a Schedule in his Hand, and said to the King he came by his Command into his presence at Haywode, where he told him, he understood Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolk, had spoken many dishonest Words in slander of his Person, and that they were spoken to him as he was informed; Upon this the King charged him upon his Ligeance, That he should truly repeat the Words as they were spoken. The Duke of Hereford, not thro' Malice or Enmity, or other Cause, but only to obey the King's Command, as he was bound, (*come il est tenuz*) wrote down the Words which the Duke of Norfolk spake to him, as before he had conceived and born them in his Memory, and were in the Schedule which he delivered to the King; With Protestation to add or diminish at all times, and when he pleased, as it should be needful, saving always the substance of the Libel: Which was this; 'Sir, in the Month of

[4] *Ibm.* The Duke of Hereford accused the Duke of Norfolk by a Schedule in Writing.

**C** 'December, in the Twenty one year of your Reign, the Duke of Hereford Travelling between Bramford and London, the Duke of Norfolk, with a great Train, met and Discoursed with him of divers Matters, amongst which he told him they were in Point to be undone, and the Duke of Hereford demanded why? and he answered, for the Fact at Radcot Bridge; The Duke of Hereford said, How can this be, for he hath done us favour, and declared us in Parlement to have been good and loyal towards him. The Duke of Norfolk answered notwithstanding that; it will be done by us, as had been done by others before, for he will vacate this Record. The Duke of Hereford replied, This would be a great Wonder, since the King had said it before the People, that he should afterwards make it be annulled. And further the Duke of Norfolk said, This was a Marvellous World and false, for I know well faith he, That if

The Tenor of the Schedule.

**D** 'Monfieur, your Father, and you, had been taken or killed, when you came to Windsor after the Parlement; and that the Dukes of Albemarle and Excester, the Earl of Worcester and he, were agreed never to undo any Lord without just Cause and Reasonable; and that the Malice of this Fact was in the Duke of Surrey, the Earl of Wiltshire, and Earl of Salisbury, drawing to them the Earl of Gloucester, who had Sworn to undo Six other Lords, that is to say, the Dukes of Lancaster, Hereford,

**E** 'taken or killed, when you came to Windsor after the Parlement; and that the Dukes of Albemarle and Excester, the Earl of Worcester and he, were agreed never to undo any Lord without just Cause and Reasonable; and that the Malice of this Fact was in the Duke of Surrey, the Earl of Wiltshire, and Earl of Salisbury, drawing to them the Earl of Gloucester, who had Sworn to undo Six other Lords, that is to say, the Dukes of Lancaster, Hereford,

**F** 'Six other Lords, that is to say, the Dukes of Lancaster, Hereford,



ford, Albemarle, and Excester, with the Marques and himself. And also he said they purposed to Reverse the Judgment of Earl Thomas of Lancaster; and hereby we and many others should be Disherited. The Duke of Hereford said, God forbid; for it would be a great wonder if the King should Assent to this; for it seemed to him, by his chearful Countenance, and his promise of being a good Lord, and also that he knew he had sworn by St. Edward to be a good Lord to him, and all the others. The Duke of Norfolk answered, He had done the same to him many times, and sworn by the Body of God; and that for this he was never the better to be trusted. And further said to the Duke of Hereford, That the King was about to draw the Earl of March and others, to the Agreement and Purpose of the said Four Lords, to destroy the others afore-said. The Duke of Hereford replied, If it be so, we can never trust them. The Duke of Norfolk said, For certain not; for although they cannot accomplish their Design at present, yet they will be contriving ten Years from this time to destroy us in our Houses.

Matters contained in the Schedule how to be determined.

Hereupon, Thursday the 31st of January (and last Day of the Parlement, it was Ordained by the King, with the Assent of all the Estates in Parlement, That the Matters comprised in this Schedule, should be determined and ended by the Good Advice and Discretion of the King, and certain Commissioners assigned by Authority of Parlement, as it doth appear in the Roll of Parlement; to wit, the Duke of Lancaster, the Duke of York the Dukes of Albemarle, Surrey, and Excester; the Marques of Dorset; the Earls of March, Sarum, Northumberland, and Glocester, or Six of them; the Earl of Worcester, or the Earl of Wiltshire, Procurators of the Clergy, or one of them; John Bussy, Henry Grene, John Russel, Robert Teye, Richard Chelmsmyk, and John Golafree, Knights of the Parlement, Four or Three of them.

The Dukes of Hereford and Norfolk appear before the K. at Oswaldstre. Their Case to be tried by Chivalry or Duell.

And afterward, on the 19th Day of March next following, after the Dukes of Hereford and Norfolk had been before the King at Oswaldstre, it was agreed by the King, and the Lords and Knights abovesaid, That the Procefs in the Determination of these Matters, should hold the course of the Law of Chivalry, if sufficient Proofs could not be found, until it should be determed between the Dukes by course of Law.

[5] Ibm.  
22 Ric. II.  
A. D. 1398.

Wherefore [5] on the 16th Day of September, in the 22d of the King's Reign, at Coventry, the Dukes of Hereford and Norfolk were told by the King's Command, That on Wednesday next after the Quinden of St. Hillary, or 27th of January, in the Year of the King's Reign Twenty one, in the Parlement at Shrewsbury. The Duke of Hereford delivered the King a Bill, the Tenour whereof follows; and was the same Word for Word with the Schedule before translated from the French Record.

And then it follows, That after this Parlement was ended, the Dukes appeared at Oswaldstre the 23d of February, when Day was assigned them to be at Windsor on Sunday the 28th of April, where they both appeared, and had the next Day assigned. In the

A

B

C

D

E

F



the mean time, the King and his Council held at Bristol, perusing the Act at Oswaldstre, by Advice of Those that had the Authority of Parlement, Ordained Battel between them, if sufficient Proofs could not be found. And on Monday the 29th of April they both appeared, when the Battel was joined (*a quell Lundy fuist la Bataille joint*) by Advice of the Dukes, Earls, Barons, Banerets, and Chivalry of England there in great Number assembled for this cause, as well as of those who had the Authority of Parlement; and this because no sufficient Proofs could be found in the mean time. On the 16th of September, the Dukes were ready at Coventry (*pour faire leur Devoir*) to perform what was ordered, when the King of his Especial Grace took the Battel into his hand; (*nostre Seigneur le Roy come Droituel, Naturel, & Sovereign Seigneur de sa Grace especial prist la Batail en sa mayn;*) And it was said to the Duke of Hereford, That the King by full Advice, Authority, and Assent of Parlement (*le Roy par plein Avys, Auctorite, & Assent du Parlement*) Willed, or Ordained, and Adjudged, for the Peace and Tranquillity of him, his Kingdom, and Subjects, and to eschew Debates and Troubles, especially between the Dukes, their Friends, and Well-willers, That the Duke of Hereford should go out of the Kingdom for Ten Years, and be gone within Eight Days after the Day of St. Edward the Confessor, or 13th of October, upon pain to incur Treason by Authority of Parlement. Also it was Ordained by Authority, and under the pain aforesaid, That the Duke of Hereford should not come in the Company of Thomas Duke of Norfolk, nor of Thomas Arundel, nor send or cause to be sent, or receive or cause to be received, by Message or otherwise, to or from either of them.

It was then also [6] said to the Duke of Norfolk, That forasmuch as at Windsor the 29th of April, in the 21st of the King, he had confessed certain Points of the Appeal, or Schedule aforesaid, which he had denied at Oswaldstre, on the 23d of February foregoing; which were very likely to have bred great Trouble within the Kingdom; The King desiring to punish as Rightful Lord all such as were the Authors of such Troubles and Debates, and also willing to avoid the Occasions of them, Adjudged and Ordained by the same Advice, Authority, and Assent of Parlement, That Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolk should void his Realm (*voidera son Roialme*) for term of Life, and that he shall be out of the Kingdom by the 20th of October next coming, and remain in Germany, Bohemia, and Hungary, and in other Parts of Christendom, upon pain to incur Treason by Authority aforesaid; and that he should not come in the Company of the Duke of Hereford, nor of Thomas Arundel, nor send or receive, &c. as before in the Duke of Hereford's Case, upon the same pain. And it was Ordained by Authority of Parlement, as above, That if either of the Dukes, or any other, do procure any thing to be done against the least point, in the Ordinance, or what was done on the 16th of September, shall incur the pain of Treason, as if it had been done against any Ordinance of the Parlement begun at Westminster, and adjourned to Shrewsbury; or if they or any other for them shoulk seek for any manner of Pardon or Licence to return home, they were to incur the same pain by the same Authority.

Battel ordered between the two Dukes.

The Battel joined between them.

The Dukes ready to perform what was ordered them at Coventry.

The King, by Advice of those who had the Authority of Parlement, stayed the Battel:

And banish'd the Duke of Hereford for 10 years.

Note, the Duke of Hereford's Father, John Duke of Lancaster, was chief in this Advice and Judgment.

[6] Ibid.

The Duke of Norfolk banish'd by the same Advice and Authority.



[7] Stat. at Large, 21 Ric. II. c. 16. These things, though in the 22d year, are entred on the Parlement Roll 21st, as part of that Parlement. Ordinances and Statutes made at Bristol.

[8] Rot. Parl. 21 Ric. II. n. 85. so entred, though it was in the 22 Ric. II. Not to be repealed under pain of Treason.

The Oaths of the Bishops and Lords enlarged.

[9] Ibid. n. 86. The Additions to the Bishops Oath.

[1] Ibid.

The Addition to the Oath of the Lords Temporal.

On Tuesday, on the morrow of St. Edward, the 14th of October next following, the King with the [7] Dukes of Lancaster, York, Albemarle, Surrey, and Excester; the Marquess of Dorset, the Earls of March, Salisbury, and Gloucester; John Buffy, Henry Green, and John Russel, by Virtue and Authority to them committed in Parlement at Bristol, made certain Ordinances and Statutes, Five whereof are printed in the Statutes at Large, Cap. 16, 17, 18, 19, 20. the last whereof relating only to our Purpose, and varying in Print somewhat from the Roll, I have added to it what was wanting: 'Also the King on the same Tuesday, on the morrow of St. Edward, by the same Assent of the Lords and Knights of Counties so assigned by the said [8] Authority of Parlement, doth Ordain, That every Person that procureth or pursueth to Repeal or Reverse any of the said Statutes or Ordinances made by the King, by the Assent of the said Lords and Knights, assigned by Power and Authority of Parlement, and that duly proved in Parlement, shall be Adjudged and have Execution as a Traitor to the Kingdom, in like manner as they which Pursue or Procure to be Repealed the Statutes and Ordinances made during the time of the said Parlement.

After this Provision made for the sure keeping of the Statutes and Ordinances made by the King, with the Assent of the Lords and Knights assigned by Power and Authority of the Parlement, the Oath of the Bishops, when they received their Temporalities of the Temporal Lords, when they had Livery of their Lands and Tenements, were enlarged with these Additions:

To the Bishops Oath was added,

[9] You shall Swear, That well and truly (vous jurez que Bien & Loyalment, Tendrez, Sustaindez, & Esterrez sanz fraud on mal Engyn ove touz les Estatutes, Establisments, Ordenances, & Jugements faits, &c.) you will Hold, Uphold, and Stand with, without Fraud or Deceit, all the Statutes, Establisments, Ordinances, or Judgments made and rendred in the Parlement summoned and begun at Westminster, on the Monday next after the Exaltation of Holy Cross, in the Year of the Reign of our Lord King Richard II. after the Conquest Twenty one, and from thence adjourned to Shrewsbury, to the Quinden, or 15 Days after St. Hillary then next coming, and there ended. And also all the Statutes and Ordinances made after the said Parlement, by the King and Lords, and Knights of Shires coming for the Commons to that Parlement, without going or doing to the contrary of any of them, or the Dependants on, or Parcel them; nor that you will ever Repeal, Revoke, Cassate, make Void, Reverse, or Adnull, nor ever suffer them to be Repealed, Revoked, Cassated, made Void, Reversed, or Adnulled, so long as you live; saving to the King his Regaly, Liberty, and Right of his Crown.

To the Oath of the [1] Temporal Lords, was this further Addition:

You shall Swear, That you will never suffer in time to come any Man living to go or do anything to the contrary of any of the Statutes, Establisments, Ordinances, and Judgments above-said, nor any Dependants on, or

Parcell



Parcell of them: And if any one shall do so, and be thereof duly Convict, you shall use your utmost Power and Diligence, without Fraud or Deceit, to prosecute him before the King and his Heirs Kings of England, and cause him to have Execution as an High Traitor to the King and Kingdom; saving to the King is Regalie, Liberty and Right of his Crown.

A At Handenstank, on the 26th of October this Year, Commissioners for both Nations met: For Scotland, Sir William Bortwic, Sir John of Remorgny, Knights, and Adam Forster Esquire: For England, John Bussy and Henry Green Knights, William Feriby Clerc, and Laurence Drew Esquire. Their Business was to take care of the Release and Exchange of Prisoners that had been taken on both sides since the Truce of Leulingham in the Year 1389. and to regulate the Practices of the Borders on both sides, and secure them from Rapin, Thefts, Robberies, Burnings, and taking and carrying away Prisoners into either Country, during the time of the late Twenty Eight Years Truce between England and France, which was effectually done in Eleven Articles. The Instrument it self under the Seals of Scots Commissioners, in true Scottish Language, being with the Under-Chamberlains in the Exchequer, in a little Box, tituled *Scotia*.

B About [2] Candlemas next following, John Duke of Lancaster died, and the King, with the Committee that had the Authority of Parlement, met at Westminster on Tuesday the 8th Day of March, when it was declared, That Henry Duke of Hereford, [3] after the Judgment given against him at Coventry, had procured Letters Patents from the King, that during his absence, by his Attorneys he might Sue and have Livery of any Lands descended to him, and his Homage respited. Which Letters Patents were declared to be against Law. Whereupon the King, by Advice of the Committee, and Assent of Parlement, Revoked those Letters Patents, as also the like Letters Patents made to the Duke of Norfolk.

D On [4] the same Day Robert Plesington Knight, though dead before, was adjudged Traitor for being in the Action with the Duke of Glocester, Earls of Arundel and Warwic, at Haringey, and all his Castles, Mannors, Lands, Tenements, Goods and Chattels to be forfeit. After which, many Bishops and Lords Temporal Swore as follows.

E Which [5] Judgments, Ordinances, and Establishments, so Made, Ordained, and Agreed on the said Tuesday the 18th of March, and all the Statutes, Establishments, Ordinances, and Judgments, Made and Rendred in the said Parlement, or at Coventry, or otherwise, by Virtue and Authority of the same Parlement, firmly to hold and keep, as well the Lords Spiritual as Temporal, and certain Knights for Counties, by Authority of Parlement there being, the same Tuesday were Sworn in the Presence of the King upon the Cross of Canterbury (*de les tenir, sustenir, & de esteer ove ycelles*) to hold, uphold, and stand with them without Fraud or Deceit, according to the Form and Effect of the Oaths by them made before, as contained in the Parlement-Roll.

A. D. 1398.  
22 Ric. II.  
Commissioners of England and Scotland to take care of the Articles of the late Truce.

[2] Hypodig.  
Neustr. l. 553.  
lin. 5.  
The Death of the Duke of Lancaster.  
[3] Rat. Parl.  
n. 87, 88.

[4] Placit. Coron. 21 Ric. II.  
n.  
Judgment against Sir R. Plesington.

[5] Append.  
n. 113.  
The Oath of the Bishops, Lords, and Knights.



The Names of the *Bishops, Lords, and Knights*, do here follow:

<i>The Arch-Bishop of Canterbury,</i>	<i>The Duke of Albemarle,</i>	
<i>The Arch-Bishop of York,</i>	<i>The Duke of Excester,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of London,</i>	<i>The Marquess of Dorset,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Winchester,</i>	<i>The Earl of Stafford,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Ely,</i>	<i>The Earl of Salisbury,</i>	A
<i>The Bishop of Norwich,</i>	<i>The Earl of Northumberland,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Excester, Chancellor,</i>	<i>The Earl of Gloucester,</i>	
	<i>The Earl of Westmerland,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Rochester,</i>	<i>The Earl of Worcester,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Hereford,</i>	<i>The Earl of Wiltshire, Treasurer,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Salisbury,</i>	<i>The Earl of Suffolk,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Lincoln,</i>	<i>The Lord Grey of Ruthin,</i>	B
<i>The Bishop of St. Asaph,</i>	<i>The Lord Ferrers of Groby,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of St. Davids,</i>	<i>The Lord Lovell,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Chester,</i>	<i>The Lord Camoys,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Chichester,</i>	<i>Sir John Buffy,</i>	
<i>The Bishop of Landaff,</i>	<i>Sir Henry Green,</i>	
<i>The Abbat of Westminster,</i>	<i>Sir John Russell,</i>	
<i>The Abbat of St. Edmondsbury,</i>	<i>Robert Teye,</i>	C
<i>The Duke of York,</i>		

After this, the *Chancellor* by the *King's Command* required openly all those that had been Sworn, and would observe the *Judgments, Oath, and Ordinances*, should hold up their *Right Hands*; which was done by all the *People* in the *King's Presence*.

[6] *Placit. Coron. ut supra, n.*  
The Judgment of  
H. Bowet.

On the 23d of April [6] following, the *King*, and *Committee* that had the *Authority* of *Parlement*, were at *Windsor*, where *Henry Bowet* Clerc, was brought before them; where it was shewn the *King*, That the *Duke of Hereford*, since the *Judgment* given against him at *Coventry*, had by *Petition* amongst other things, obtained from the *King* Letters Patents, That if any Lands of *Inheritance* descended or fell to him in his absence, for which he ought to do *Homage*, he might by his *Attorneys* Sue for, and have *Livery* of them, and his *Homage* and *Fealty* respited: Which Letters Patents being granted by *Inadvertency*, without due *Advice*, or mature *Deliberation*, as they ought to have been, and being then viewed and diligently examined, it was found that they were clearly against the said *Judgment*, because the *Duke of Hereford*, after that *Judgment*, was not a Person capable to have or receive *Benefit* by the *Letters Patents*; and for that they had been adjudged void, as appeared by the *Parlement-Roll*: And therefore because *Henry Bowet* Clerc, had been the *Chief Contriver* and *Manager* of the said *Petition*, the *King*, by the *Assent* of the *Committee* who had the *Authority* of *Parlement*, adjudged him *Traitor*, and to be *Drawn, Hanged, Headed, and Quartered*; and all his *Lands* and *Tenements*, as well in *England* as *Gascony*, and all his *Goods* and *Chattels* to be forfeited. But because he was the *King's Chaplain*, he pardoned the *Execution* of the *Judgment*, and granted him his *Life*, with this, That he should be *Banished England* for ever.

While



While these things [7] were doing here, there came News from Ireland, That Lieutenant Roger Earl of March was there slain by the Irish; To Revenge whose Death, and subdue the Irish, the King levied a considerable Force, and went into Ireland with several Bishops, and many of the Nobility. Toward which Expedition he Raised Money by undue Ways, and taking up Carriages, Victuals, and other Necessaries, without paying for them, by which and many other Imprudent, Rash, and Unadvised Practices, he had made himself and Government uneasy to the People.

The Duke taking advantage of King Richard's absence, thinks of coming for England [8] to demand his Inheritance, with Thomas Arundel Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and the Son and Heir of the Earl of Arundel, and a small Company, he took Ship in France, and hovering a while about the English Coast to spie whether there were any ready to resist them, at length landed at Ravenspur in Yorkshire, where there came into him Henry Percy Earl of Northumberland, and Henry his Son, Ralph Earl of Westmerland, and other Lords, so as in a short time he had an Army of 60000 Men; They marched speedily to Bristol, and besieged the Castle, and took it, and within it William Lescrop Treasurer, Sir John Buffy, and Sir Henry Green, all the King's Counsellors, who the next day by the Clamor of the People had their Heads struck off. The Duke of York, the King's Uncle, and Guardian of the Kingdom, with several Bishops, Noblemen, and the King's Council, consulted how they might oppose the Duke, but could do nothing.

King Richard, when he heard in Ireland of his Landing, [9] secured the Sons of the Duke of Lancaster and Gloucester in Trim Castle, and with the Dukes of Albemarle, Excester, and Surrey, the Bishops of London, Lincoln, and Carlisle, and many others, Shipped themselves with all speed, that they might raise such a Force as might hinder the Duke's Progress. But when he landed, understanding his own Condition, That the People and greater part of the Lords had forsaken him, and gone in to Duke Henry, he laid by all thoughts of Fighting, and likewise dismissed his Family, giving them notice by his Steward Sir Thomas Percy. That they might provide for, and reserve themselves for better Times. The King shifting up and down, here and there for many days, the Duke always following him with his Army, at length fixed at Conway Castle, and desired to have Discourse with the Arch-Bishop and Earl of Northumberland, to whom he declared, He would quit his Government, if he might have his Life secured, and an Honourable Provision made for himself, and Eight Persons he should Name; These things granted and confirmed, he went to Flint Castle, where after a short Discourse with the Duke of Lancaster, they mounted their Horses, and went to Chester Castle that night, the Duke's numerous Army following him.

At Chester [1] summons were issued in King Richard's Name for the meeting of a Parlement on the Morrow of St. Michael, or 30th of September, dated there on the 19th of August, in the 23d of his Reign. In the mean time the King was brought to, and secured in the Tower of London until the Parlement should sit:

[7] Hypotygm.  
Nuslr. t. 552.  
n. 50.

The King  
goes into Ire-  
land.

[8] Walsingh.  
Hist. fol. 358.  
n. 10, 20, 30.  
The Duke of  
Hereford lands  
in England.

[9] Ibem.  
n. 40, 50.  
The Nobility  
and People  
desert King  
Richard.

He offers to  
Quit his Gov-  
ernment, his  
Life and an  
Honourable  
Maintenance  
secured.  
Which was  
Granted.

[1] Clause  
23 Ric. II. M.  
3 Dors.  
Writes for a  
Parlement in  
King Ri-  
chard's Name:  
He is secured  
in the Tower  
of London.



[2] Chronicle, f. 501. a. col. 2. The Duke's Obedience to King Richard at their first meeting. And Declaration of the Cause of his coming into England. The Duke received at London with great Rejoycing. The Instruments of the King's Relinquishment and Deposition contrived by his Order.

Holingshed tells us, [2] the Duke at the first meeting of King Richard, which was at Conway Castle in Carnarvonshire, as he came towards him, made a Reverend Obedience, and going on, did so a second, and third time, the King taking him by the Hand, and bidding him Welcome; whereupon humbly Thanking him, said, The Cause of his coming was to have Restitution of his Inheritance, unto which the King readily assented; and called for Wine, and when they had drank, mounting their Horses, they rode to Flint, and to Chester, where they stayed two or three days, and went from thence to Nantwich, and so the common Rode to London, where the Duke was received with all imaginable Expressions of Joy, and the King sent to the Tower, where we hear no more of him until Michaelmas-Day, against which time the Instruments of his Cession, Relinquishment, and Deposition, with the Articles against him, were prepared; which are here recited from the Parlement Roll exactly Translated.

*The Roll of Parlement summoned and holden at Westminster in the Feast of St. Faith the Virgin (or 6th of October) in the Year of King Henry the Fourth after the Conquest the First. Membrane xx.*

*The Record and Proceß of the Renunciation of King Richard the Second after the Conquest, and the Acceptation of the same Renunciation likewise, with the Deposition of the same King Richard, as it here follows.*

This Record is Printed in X. Authors, Col. 2744. and in Pryn's Plea for the Lords, p. 425. which I have compared with the Original.

[1] Rot. Parl. 1 Hen. IV. N. 10.

[2] Ib. n. 11.

BE it Remembred, [1] That on Monday in the Feast of St. Michael the Archangel, in the Twenty third year of the Reign of King Richard, the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and other Notable Persons; That is to say, The Lord Richard le Scrop Arch-Bishop of York, John Bishop of Hereford, Henry Earl of Northumberland, and Ralph Earl of Westmerland, the Lord Hugh Burnell, Thomas Lord Berkley, the Prior of Canterbury and Abbat of Westminster, William Thyrninge Kt. and John Markham Justices, Thomas Stow, and John Burbache, Doctors of Law, Thomas de Erpingham, and Thomas Gray, Knights, William de Feryby, and Dionyse Lapham, Publick Notaries, being Deputed to that purpose, came into the presence of King Richard within the Tower of London about Nine of the Clock, when the Earl of Northumberland said before the King, That at [2] Conway in North-Wales, and then at Liberty, He promised to Thomas Arch-Bishop of Canterbury and himself, That he would Quit the Crown of England and France, and Renounce all Right to it,



A ' it, and to Kingship, for the Causes there by himself confessed  
 ' of his Inability and Insufficiency, and this he would do after  
 ' the best Manner and Form he should be Advised by the Skilful  
 ' in the Law. The same King before the said Lords and others  
 ' above-named, kindly answered, That he would with Effect  
 ' perform, what he had promised, but first desired to have Con-  
 ' ference with his Cousin Henry Duke of Lancaster, and the Arch-  
 ' Bishop of Canterbury, before he did it; and desired a Copy of  
 ' the Renunciation he was to make might be delivered to him,  
 ' to Deliberate upon, which was done, and the Lords departed.  
 ' [3] On the same day after Dinner, the King much desiring the  
 ' coming of the Duke of Lancaster, and long expecting him, at  
 ' length he and the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, with the Lords  
 ' and Persons above-named, came to his presence in the Tower,  
 ' the Lords Roos of Willoughby, and Abergavenny, and many o-  
 ' thers then being present. And after he had Conference with  
 ' the Duke of Lancaster and Arch-Bishop, looking about him  
 ' with a Chearful Countenance, as it seemed to the People about  
 ' him, the King called them all to him, and said publickly he  
 ' was ready to make his Renunciation as he had said before; and  
 ' presently taking the Parchment Schedule of his Renunciation  
 ' into his Hands, tho it was told him, to spare the Labour and  
 ' Trouble of Reading it, he might have it done by another, he  
 ' said he would read it himself, which he did distinctly, and ab-  
 ' solved his Lieges, Renounced, Quitted, and Sware, Read and  
 ' Said other Things, and Subscribed his Name with his own  
 ' Hand; as 'tis more fully contained in the Latin Record, the Tenor  
 ' of which follows.

[3] Ib. n. 12.

### The Resignation of Richard the Second.

D  
 E  
 F IN [4] Name of God Amen, I Richard by the Grace of God  
 King of England and France, and Lord of Ireland, do Ab-  
 solve the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, and other Prelates whatsoever, of  
 Churches Secular or Regular, of what Dignity, Degree, State, or Con-  
 dition they are; Dukes, Marquesses, Earls, Barons, Vassals, Valvas-  
 sores, and my Liege Men whatsoever, Ecclesiastick or Secular, by what-  
 ever Name they are called, from the Oath of Fealty and Homage, and  
 all others to me made, and from all Bond of Ligeance, Regality, and  
 Government or Command, by which they have been, or may be bound to  
 me; and them, their Heirs, and Successors for ever from the same Ob-  
 ligations, Oaths, and other Things whatsoever, I free, release, and quit,  
 and make them free, absolved, and quit, as to my Person, according to  
 the whole Effect of the Law, which may follow from the Premisses, or  
 any of them; And I do purely, freely of my own accord, simply and  
 absolutely, in the best Manner, Way, and Form that I can by this Writing,  
 Renounce, wholly Resign, and by Word and Deed, put from me, and recede  
 for ever, from all Royal Dignity and Majesty, the Crown and Lordship,  
 and the Power of the said Kingdoms, and Lordship, and other my Do-  
 minions and Possessions which may any way belong to me, and to all  
 Right, Colour of Right, and Title, Possession and Dominion, that I  
 ever had, have, or may have, in the same or any of them; also the Go-

[4] Ib. n. 13.



vernment and Administration of the said Kingdoms and Lordship, and all mere and mixt Empire in the same; and to all Honour and Royalty therein, saving to my Successors Kings of England, in the Kingdoms, Dominions, and Premises, for ever their Competent Rights. And I do Confess, Acknowledge, Repute, and truly of certain Knowledge, Judge my self to be insufficient for the Government of the said Kingdoms and Dominions, and for my notorious Demerits not unworthily Deposed. And I Swear by these Holy Gospels of God by me Corporally touched, That I never will Contravene this Resignation, Renunciation, Dimission, and Cession, or will any way oppose them in Word or Deed by my self or others, nor will suffer them to be opposed or contravened, as much as in me is, publickly or privately, but the same Renunciation, Resignation, Dimission, and Cession, will for ever hold firm, and will firmly hold and observe them in the whole and every part, as God and his Gospels help me.

A

Ego Richardus Rex antedictus propria manu hic me subscribo.

B

*I King Richard before said write my self with my own Hand.*

[5] Ib. n. 14.

‘ And [5] presently he added to his Renunciation and Cession, That if it was in his Power the Duke of Lancaster should succeed him, but seeing it was not, he desired the Arch-Bishop of York, and Bishop of Hereford, who he had appointed to declare his Renunciation and Cession to the States of the Kingdom, to intimate his Will and Pleasure to them; and as a further Mark of his Intention, he pulled his Signet Gold Ring off his own Finger, and put it upon the Dukes, desiring it might be made known to all the States of the Kingdom.

C

[6] Ib. n. 15.

‘ On the Morrow, [6] being Tuesday, the Feast of St. Hierom, the Parlement met in Westminster-Hall, where the Arch-Bishop of York, and Bishop of Hereford, publickly declared the King's Cession and Renunciation, with the Subscription of the King's Hand; and also the delivery of the Signet to the Duke of Lancaster. The Cession and Renunciation was first read in Latin, then in English; and the States and People there present were asked, if for their own Interest, and the Profit of the Nation, they would admit the Cession and Renunciation, they unanimously answered, They would admit it.

D

[7] Ib. n. 16.

‘ After [7] which Admission, it was publickly proposed, That besides that, it would be much expedient, and advantageous to the Nation, and to take away all scruples and sinister suspicions, that many Crimes and Defects committed by the said King during the time of his Government, for which, as confessed in his Cession, he might be worthily Deposed, might be drawn up in Writing, and publickly read and declared to the People. The Tenor of all which Articles is such.

E

Here the Entry upon the Roll is confused and impertinent, and such must be the Translation.

F

[8] Ib. n.

‘ The Form [8] of the Oath which the Kings of England usually take at their Coronation follows, which is exacted and received from them by the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, as it is contained



‘ contained in the Pontifical Books of the Arch-Bishops and Bishops ;  
 ‘ Which Oath was received from Richard King of England, the  
 ‘ Second after the Conquest, by the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury,  
 ‘ and afterwards Repealed, as may be found upon Record in the  
 ‘ Rolls of Chancery.

A Thou [9] shalt wholly preserve the Peace of the Church, and People  
 of God, and Concord in God, according to thy Power, and shall Answer, I will preserve them. Thou shalt cause to be done in all thy  
 Judgments, equal and right Justice, and Discretion in Mercy and  
 Truth according to thy Power, and shall Answer, I will do it. Thou  
 dost Grant that just Laws and Customs are to be holden, and dost Promise to Protect and Confirm them to the Honour of God, which the  
 Communalty have chosen, according to your Power, and shall Answer,  
 I Grant and Promise.

[9] Ib. n. 17.

B To these such Questions may be added which are just, which  
 the King is to Confirm by his Oath upon the Altar before all  
 Persons.

C The Objections against the King concerning his  
 Deposition do follow.

D First, [1] It is Objected to King Richard, That for his Evil  
 Government, by giving the Goods and Possessions of the  
 Crown to Unworthy Persons, and indiscreetly dissipating of  
 them ; and for this cause imposing grievous and intolerable Bur-  
 thens upon the People, and otherwise committing other innu-  
 merable Evils : Having by his Assent and Command, by the  
 whole Parlement, chosen and assigned certain Prelates and o-  
 ther Lords Temporal, who with all their Power should faith-  
 fully labour, at their own Costs, about the just Government of  
 the Kingdom, made a Conventicle of his Accomplices, pro-  
 posing to impeach of High Treason the said Lords Spiritual  
 and Temporal, so imployed about the Government of the  
 Kingdom, and violently drew the Justices of the Kingdom to  
 Confirm his Wicked Purpose for fear of Death and Torment of  
 Body, endeavouring to destroy the said Lords.

[1] Ib. n. 18.

E Secondly, The same [2] King lately at Shrewsbury, caused to  
 come before him, and others that favoured him, in a Cham-  
 ber many Persons, and the greater part of the Justices, where,  
 by Threats, and divers Terrors, he induced, caused, and forced  
 F them singly to Answer to certain Questions on his behalf,  
 touching the Laws of his Kingdom, against their Will, and  
 otherwise then they would have answered, had they not been  
 forced ; By Colour of which Answers the same King propound-  
 ed to have proceeded to the Destruction of Thomas Duke of  
 Gloucester, the Earls of Arundel, and Warwick, and other Lords,  
 with whom he was very Angry, especially because they desired  
 him

[2] Ib. n. 19.



- him to be under *Good Government*; but by *Divine Providence*, and the Resistance and Power of the said Lords, the King could not bring his Design to effect.
- [3] *Ibm. n. 20.* *Thirdly*, When the Lords [3] Temporal, in Defence of themselves, resisted his Malice and Craft, the said King prefixed a Day for the Parlement to do them and others Justice, who upon Faith and Confidence therein, remained quietly in their own Houses; the King privately, with his Letters or Commission, sent the Duke of *Ireland* into *Cheshire*, to raise Arms against the said Lords, Great Men, and Officers of the Commonwealth, Publickly exciting his Banners against the Peace he had Sworn to, from whence Homicides, Captivities, Dissentions, and other infinite Evils followed in the whole Kingdom, for which cause he incurred Perjury. A
- [4] *Ibm. n. 21.* *Fourthly*, That although the said [4] King had Pardoned the Duke of *Glocester*, the Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwic*, and all their Assistants in full Parlement, and for many Years had shewn chearful Signs of Peace and Love towards them; yet the same King always bearing Gall in his Heart, taking Opportunity, caused to be seized the Duke of *Glocester*, and the said Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwic*; and sent the Duke to *Calais*, to be imprisoned under the Keeping of the Earl of *Nottingham*, one of his *Appellants*; and without Answer, or lawful Process, caused him to be strangled, and inhumanly and cruelly murdered. The Earl of *Arundel* Pleading his Charter of Pardon, and Demanding Justice in Parlement, was encompassed with great Numbers of Armed Men, and had his Head Damnably struck off; and committed the Earl of *Warwic* and Lord *Cobham* to Perpetual Prison, confiscating their Lands, against Justice, the Laws of the Land, and his expresse Oath, giving them to their *Appellants*. B
- [5] *Ibm. n. 22.* *Fifthly*, At the time [5] when in his Parlement he caused the Duke of *Glocester*, and Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwic*, to be adjudged, that he might more freely exercise his Cruelty upon them; and in others fulfil his injurious Will, he drew to him a great multitude of Malefactors out of the County of *Chester*, who marching up and down the Kingdom with the King, as well within his own House, as without, cruelly killed his Lieges, beat and wounded others, plundering the Goods of the People, refusing to pay for their Victuals; violating and ravishing Men's Wives, and other Women. And although Complaints were made to the King of these Excesses, yet he took no care to apply Remedy, or do Justice in them; but favoured those People in their Wickedness, confiding in them and their Assistance against all others of his Kingdom; wherefore his Good Subjects had great matter of Commotion and Indignation. C
- [6] *Ib. n. 23.* *Sixthly*, Though the said [6] King caused Proclamation to be made through the Kingdom, That he caused his Uncle the Duke of *Glocester*, and the Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwic*, to be Arrested not for any Rebellious Congregations, or marching with Horse within the Kingdom; but for many Extorsions, Oppressions, and other things done against his Regality and Royal Majesty; And that it was not his Intention, that any of



A of their Company at the time of the Congregation and March-  
ching with Horſe aforeſaid, ſhould for that Reaſon be Queſtio-  
ned or Diſturbed : Yet the ſame King afterwards, in his Parle-  
ment, Impeached the ſaid Lords ; not for Extorſions, Oppreſ-  
ſions, or other things aforeſaid, but for Rebellious Tumults and  
Congregations and Marching with Horſe, adjudged them to  
Death ; and cauſed many of their Company for fear of Death,  
to make Fine and Ranſom as Traitors, to the great Deſtruction  
of many of his People ; and ſo he craftily, deceitfully, and  
maliciouſly Deceived the Lords, their Followers, and People of  
the Nation.

B *Seventhly*, After many of theſe [7] Perſons who had paid their  
Fines and Ranſoms, and had obtained his Letters Patents of  
full Pardon ; yet they received no Benefit by them, until they  
made new Fines for their Lives, by which they were much  
impoveriſhed : And this was much in Derogation to the Name  
and State of a King.

C *Eighthly*, In the laſt [8] Parleмент holden at *Shrewsbury*, the  
ſame King propounding to Oppreſs his People, ſubtilly procured  
and cauſed to be granted, That the Power of Parleмент, by  
Conſent of all the States of the Kingdom, ſhould remain in  
ſome certain Perſons, who after the Parleмент ſhould be Diſ-  
ſolved, might Answer the Petitions depending in Parleмент,  
then undetermined, under pretence whereof they proceed-  
ed to other General Matters touching that Parleмент, ac-  
cording to the King's Will, in Derogation to the State of  
Parleмент, great Diſadvantage to the Kingdom, and a pern-  
icious Example. And that theſe Actions might ſeem to have  
ſome Colour and Authority, the King cauſed the Rolls of Par-  
lement to be changed and blotteed, contrary to the Effect of the  
Grant aforeſaid.

D *Ninthly*, Notwithſtanding the ſaid King at his [9] Corona-  
tion ſware, That he would do in all his Judgments equal and  
Right Juſtice and Diſcretion, in Mercy and Truth according to  
his Power ; yet the ſaid King, without all Mercy, rigorouſly  
amongſt other things Ordained, under great Punishments, That  
no Man ſhould intercede with him, for any Favour toward  
*Henry Duke of Lancaſter* then in Banishment ; in ſo doing, he  
acted againſt the Bond of Charity, and raſhly violated his Oath.

E *Tenthly*, That though the [1] Crown of *England*, the Rights  
of the Crown, and Kingdom it ſelf, have been in all times ſo  
Free, as the *Pope*, or any other Foreign Power, had nothing to  
do in them ; yet the ſaid King, for the confirming of his erro-  
neous Statutes, ſuppllicated the *Pope* to confirm the Statutes  
made in his laſt Parlement ; whereupon he obtained his Apo-  
ſtolic Letters, or Bull, wherein were contained grievous Cen-  
ſures againſt all ſuch as ſhould preſume to contravene them. All  
F which things are known to be againſt the Crown and Royal  
Dignity, and againſt the Statutes and Liberty of the Kingdom.

*Eleventhly*, Though *Henry* now Duke of *Lancaſter*, [2] by  
the King's Command, exhibited his Bill or Accuſation againſt  
the Duke of *Norfolk*, concerning the State and Honour of the  
King, and duly proſecuted it, ſo as he was ready to make it  
good by Duel, and the King had ordered it ; yet the ſame  
King

[7] *Ibm. n. 24.*

[8] *Ibm. n. 25.*

[9] *Ibm. n. 26.*

[1] *Ibm. n. 27.*

[2] *Ibm. n. 28.*



His own Father John D. of Lancaster was the First Commissioner in this Judgment. in Parlement.  
See *Pleas of the Crown*.  
21 Ric. II.  
[3] *Ibm.* n. 29.

[4] *Ibm.* n. 30.

[5] *Ibm.* n. 31.

[6] *Ibm.* n. 32.

[7] *Ibm.* n. 33.

[8] *Ibm.* n. 34.

King put it by, and without any lawful Cause Banished the Duke of Lancaster for Ten Years, against all Justice, the Laws and Customs of the Kingdom, and the Military Law, Damnably incurring Perjury.

Twelfthly, After the said King had graciously granted [3] to the now Duke of Lancaster, by his Letters Patents, That while he was in Banishment his Attorneys might sue for Livery of any Inheritance might fall to him for which Homage was due, which should be respited for a reasonable Fine; he injuriously revoked those Letters Patents, against the Laws of the Land, incurring Perjury.

Thirteenthly, Notwithstanding it had been Ordained, [4] That every Year the King's Officers, with the Justices, and others of his Council, should Nominate and Chuse the Sheriffs of all Counties according to their Discretion; yet he Commanded others of his Party, and such as would do as he would have them, to be Sheriffs; to the great Grievance of his People, contrary to the Laws of his Kingdom, notoriously incurring Perjury.

Fourteenthly, That whereas [5] the said King Borrowed several Sums of Money from Lords and others by his Letters Patents, promising faithfully to pay them at a certain Term; he did not perform his Promise; whence his Creditors were much grieved; and not only they, but many others thought him an unfaithful King.

Fifteenthly, Whereas the Kings [6] of England used to live upon the Revenues of the Kingdom, and Patrimony of the Crown in time of Peace, without Oppression of his People; yet the same King during his whole time, gave the greatest part of his Revenue to unworthy Persons, and imposed Burthens upon his Subjects as it were every Year; by which he excessively oppressed his People, and impoverished his Kingdom; not employing these Goods to the Advantage of the Nation, but prodigally wasting them in Ostentation, Pomp, and Glory, owing great Sums for Victuals and other Necessaries of his House, though his Revenues were greater than any of his Progenitors.

Sixteenthly, The same King [7] not willing to keep and protect the Just Laws and Customs of his Kingdom, but do what he pleased; when those Laws were declared to him by the Justices and others of his Council, desiring Justice might be done accordingly, he said expressly with an austere Countenance, That the Laws were only in his Mouth and Breast; and that He only could Make and Change the Laws of this Kingdom. And being so seduced, he would not permit Justice to be done to many of his Lieges; but by Threats and Terrours, forced many to cease from the Prosecution of Common Justice.

Seventeenthly, That whereas [8] Laws made in Parlement do always bind, until revoked by another Parlement; yet the same King, desiring to enjoy such Liberty as no Laws might bind him, and to do what he pleased, he cunningly procured such a Petition, on behalf of the Community of his Kingdom, to be exhibited in Parlement, and to be granted, That he

A

B

C

D

E

F



‘ he might be as free as any of his Progenitors before him. By colour of which Petition and Grant, he often commanded and caused many things to be done contrary to the Laws not revoked, doing expressly and knowingly against the Oath taken at his Coronation.

A ‘ *Eighteenthly*, Though it had been Ordained, [9] That no Sheriff should continue in his Office above a Year, and could not be again Chosen to that Office in three Years after, the same King, for his singular Profit, and sometimes for the Benefit of others, suffered some Sheriffs to remain in their Offices for two or three Years, contrary to the Tenour and Effect of the Statute, incurring Perjury; and this was Notorious, Publick, and Famous.

[9] Ibm.n.35.

B ‘ *Nineteenthly*, Although by Law and [1] Custom, the People ought to be free to Chuse Knights to represent them in Parliament, to *propound* their Grievances, and *provide* Remedies for them; yet the said King, that he might obtain his own rash Will in his Parlements, directed by Writs often to the Sheriffs, to send such as he Named, some of whom he induced by Favours, others by Threats and Terrours, others by Bribes, to consent to things Prejudicial to the Kingdom, and grievous to the People; and especially by granting to him the Subsidy of Wooll for his Life, and another Subsidy for certain Years, too much *oppressing* the People.

[1] Ibm.n.36.

C ‘ *Twentiethly*, The same King, [2] that in all things he might act Arbitrarily, unlawfully made and commanded all the Sheriffs to Swear beyond their usual Oath, That they would obey all his Commands sent to them under the Great Seal, Privy Seal, or Signet; and in case they should know any in their Bailiwicks or Jurisdictions, should speak any Ill publicly or privately to the Disgrace or Scandal of the King's Person, they should arrest and commit them to Prison, there to remain while they received other Commands from the King, as it might be found upon Record; which Practice might likely tend to the Destruction of any of his Subjects.

[2] Ibm.n.37.

D ‘ 21. ‘ The same King, [3] that he might supplant his People, and get their Estates to enrich himself, caused the People of Sixteen Counties, by Letters under their Seals, to submit to him as Traitors; by colour of which, he obtained of them great Sums of Money to procure his Favour: And although to please the People those Letters Obligatory were restored to them; yet their Procurators had full Power to bind themselves for them to the King, which he caused to be done; and so deceived his People, and subtilly extorted their Goods from them.

[3] Ibm.n.38.

E ‘ 22. ‘ Although the same King [4] Sware at his Coronation to Preserve the Liberties granted to the Church of *England*; yet by reason of his Voyage into *Ireland*, he by his Letters Commanded many Religious Persons, Abbats and Priors, some to send him Horses, others Waggons, others great Sums of Money; and by his way of Writing, he forced many by Fear to comply with his Demands; whence they were impoverished and oppressed, in manifest derogation to Ecclesiastic Liberty; by which Pretext he incurred Perjury.

[4] Ibm.n.39



[5] *Ibm. n. 40.*

23. ' In many Great [5] Councils, when the Lords and Justices were charged to Counsel him faithfully, in things that touched his own, and the State of the Kingdom, they were often so sharply rebuked and reprov'd, that they dare not speak Truth, in giving Advice concerning the State of the Kingdom.

[6] *Ibm. n. 41.*

24. ' The Treasure, [6] Reliques, and Jewels of the Crown, which ought to be preserved in the Treasury for the Honour of the King, and Conservation of the Kingdom, if any thing might happen; the said King carried with him toward Ireland, without the Consent of the States of the Kingdom; whence the Kingdom had been greatly impoverished, *if God had not otherwise provided for the taking of those Goods from him against his Will.* And further, he caused the Records concerning the State and Government of his Kingdom to be ras'd, in great Prejudice of his People, and Disinheritance of the Crown, and very likely, as it was believed, for the Support of his ill Government.

[7] *Ibm. n. 42.*

25. ' He was so Variable [7] and Dissembling in Words and Writing, and so Contrary to himself, specially in Writing to the Pope, Kings, and other Lords, without and within the Kingdom, and also to his Subjects, that no Man living, knowing what he was, could confide in him; yea, he was reputed so Unfaithful and Inconstant, that he was not only a Scandal to his own Person, but to the whole Kingdom, and all Strangers that knew him.

[8] *Ibm. n. 43.*

26. ' Though the Lands, Tenements, [8] Goods and Chattels of all Free-men, by the Laws of the Land, ought not to be seized without Forfeiture; yet the said King intending to enervate those Laws, in the Presence of many Lords and others of the Community of the Kingdom, he often said and affirmed, That the Life of every Subject, his Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattels were his, to be disposed as he pleased without Forfeiture; which was altogether against the Laws and Customs of his Kingdom.

[9] *Ibm. n. 44.*

27. ' Although it had been made a [9] Law, which had hitherto been confirmed, That no Free-man might be taken, &c. nor any ways destroyed, nor that the King should proceed against him, but by lawful Trial of his Peers, or the Law of the Land; yet according to the Will, Command, and Appointment of the said King, very many of his Lieges being maliciously accused, for having spoken publicly or privately Words that might tend to the Scandal and Disgrace of the King's Person, were taken, imprisoned, and brought before the Constable and Marshal in the Court Military; where being accused, they could not be admitted to give any other Answer than Not Guilty; and could defend themselves no otherwise than by their Bodies, their Accusers being young Men, lusty, and sound; whereas they were old, impotent, lame, and infirm; from whence not only the Destruction of Lords and Great Men, but of singular Persons of the Community of the Kingdom very likely might have followed: When therefore the said King willingly contravened this Law, it was no doubt but he incurred Perjury.



28. ' Altho the People of [1] *England*, by virtue of their  
' Ligeance, were sufficiently bound to their King, and if they  
' offended in any manner, he might Correct and Punish them by  
' the Laws and Customs of the Kingdom; yet the said King de-  
' siring to supplant and too much oppress his People, that he  
' might more freely execute, and be able to follow the Fancy  
' of his foolish and unlawful Will, he sent his Letters into all  
A ' Counties of his Kingdom, That all his Lieges, as well Spiritual  
' as Temporal, should take certain Oaths in general, which were  
' too burthensome to them, and which very likely might cause  
' the final Destruction of his People, and that under their Let-  
' ters and Seals they should confirm these Oaths; Which Com-  
' mand the People obeyed, lest they should incur his Indignati-  
' on, and for fear of Death.
29. ' When the Parties [2] contending in the Ecclesiastick  
B ' Court, in Causes merely Ecclesiastick and Spiritual, indeavoured  
' to procure Prohibitions to hinder Process in the same from the  
' Chancellor of *England*, who out of Justice refused to grant  
' them, yet the same King often granted them under his Signet,  
' wickedly infringing the Church Liberties granted in *Magna*  
' *Charta*, which he had Sworn to Preserve, damnably incurring  
' Perjury, and the Sentence of Excommunication Pronounced by  
' the Holy Fathers against the Violators of Church Liberties.
30. ' The said King in Parlement, [3] compassed about with  
C ' Armed Men, without Reasonable Cause or Legal Process, con-  
' trary to the Laws of the Kingdom, Banished *Thomas Arundel*  
' Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, and his Spiritual Father, being then  
' absent by his Contrivance.
31. Upon perusal of the said [4] Kings Will under his  
D ' Great Seal, Privy Seal, and Signet, there was in it this Clause.  
' Also we Will, That the Debts of our House, Chamber, and  
' Wardrobe being paid, for which we allow Twenty thousand  
' Pounds, and the Leprose, and Chaplains we appointed to be  
' maintained at *Westminster*, and *Bermondsey*, for which we allow  
' Five or six thousand Marks. The Residue of our Gold shall  
' remain to our Successor, upon Condition he Approves, Rati-  
' fies, Confirms, Holds, and causeth to be Holden and Observed,  
' all Laws, Statutes, Ordinances, and Judgments, made, had, or  
' done, in the Parlement held at *Westminster* on the 17th of Sep-  
E ' *tember*, in the 21st of our Reign, and continued or adjourned  
' to *Shrewsbury*, and all things done at *Coventry* on the 16th of  
' *September*, in the 22d of our Reign, as also what was done at  
' *Westminster* on the 18th of *March*, in the same year, by Autho-  
' rity of the same Parlement. But if he shall Refuse to do these  
' things, then we Will that *Thomas Duke of Surrey*, *Edward*  
' *Duke of Anmarle*, *John Duke of Excester*, and *William le Scrop*  
' *Earl of Wiltshire*, my Debts, &c. as aforesaid being paid, shall  
F ' have the said Residue for the Defence of the Statutes, Ordi-  
' nances, Judgments, and Stabiliments aforesaid, to the utmost  
' of their Power, yea, to Death, if it be necessary. Upon all  
' which things we burthen their Consciences, as they will An-  
' swer it at the Day of Judgment. By which Article it appears  
evidently, That the same King endeavoured pertinaciously to  
maintain those Statutes and Ordinances, which were Erroneous,

[1] *Ibm.n. 45.*[2] *Ibm.n. 46.*[3] *Ib. n. 48.*[4] *Ib. n. 48.*



Wicked, and Repugnant to all Law and Reason, not only in his Life, but after he was Dead, neither regarding the Danger of his Soul, or the utmost Destruction of his Kingdom or Liege People.

[5] Ib. n. 49.

32. ' In the Eleventh year of the said [5] King *Richard*, at his Mannor of *Langley*, in the presence of the Dukes of *Lancaster* and *York*, and many other Lords, desiring, as it seemed, That his Uncle the Duke of *Glocester*, there also present, might Trust and have Confidence in him, of his own accord, Sware upon the Venerable Sacrament of the Lords Body placed upon the Altar, That he would pardon unto him all things which were said to be committed against his Person, and that he should never receive any Damage for them; yet afterwards the said King, notwithstanding this Oath, caused the Duke for those Offences horribly and cruelly to be Murdred, damnably incurring the Guilt of Perjury.

A

[6] Ib. n. 50.

33. ' After a Knight of the Shire, [6] who had a Vote in Parlement, impeached the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* publickly before the King and all the States of the Kingdom, upon certain Defects committed against the King, with little Truth, as 'twas said: Altho he offered presently to answer what was objected against him, and desired to be admitted by the King so to do, sufficiently trusting, as he said, to demonstrate his Innocency, yet the same King contriving by all the Ways and Means he could to oppress and reduce to nothing the State of the Arch-Bishop, as the Event shewed, kindly spake to, and earnestly desired him, that he would say nothing then, but expect a more fit time: That day being past, for five days and more together, the King deceived him, advising and perswading him not to come to Parlement, but to remain at his own House, promising, that in his absence he should not receive injury; but the said King in that Parlement Banished the Arch-Bishop during his Pleasure, being absent, and not called to answer, without any reasonable Cause, confiscating all his Goods against the Laws of the Land and all Justice, by which he incurred Perjury. Further, the King intending to palliate his inconstancy, by flattering Words endeavoured to cast the Injury done him upon others: Whence the Arch-Bishop having Discourse with the King, the Duke of *Norfolk*, other Lords, and Great Men, lamenting said, He was not the first had been Banished, nor should be the last, for that he thought within a short time the Duke of *Norfolk*, and other Lords, would follow him; and constantly told the King, That the Consequences of the Promises would fall upon his own Head at last; To which the King, as if he had been astonished, presently answered, he thought it might so happen, he might be expelled his Kingdom by his Subjects; and further said, if it should be so, he would go to the Place where he was; and that the Arch-Bishop might believe him, he shewed him a great Jewel of Gold, which he would send to him as a Token, that he would not defer his coming to the Place where he was. And that the same Arch-Bishop might have greater Confidence in him, he sent to him, advising him, That he should privately send all the Jewels belonging to his Chapel to be safely kept, lest under the

B

C

D

E

F



- A ' the colour of the Judgment of Banishment they might be  
' seized ; it being so done, the King caused the Goods to be put  
' in Coffers, which he caused to be Locked, and Sealed by one  
' of the Arch-Bishops Clerks, by whom he sent the Keys to him ;  
' and afterwards caused the Coffers to be broken, taking the  
' Goods, and disposing of them as he pleased ; The same King  
' also faithfully promised the Arch-Bishop, That if he would go  
' to the Port of *Hampton*, in order to go out of the Kingdom,  
' that by the Queen's intercession he should be recalled ; And if  
' it should so happen as he should go out of the Kingdom, yet  
' after *Easter* next coming, without fail, he should return into  
' *England*, nor should he any way loose his Arch-Bishoprick :  
' This he faithfully Promised, Swearing to it, touching the Cross  
' of *Thomas* the Martyr Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* : Which Pro-  
B ' mises notwithstanding, the King caused the Arch-Bishop to go  
' out of the Kingdom, and wrote to the *Pope* for his Translation ;  
' and thus, and otherwise, by the Frauds and Cheats of the King,  
' was the Arch-Bishop, a Man of good Faith, craftily Circum-  
' vented.

These were the Thirty three Articles read in the Parlement  
against King *Richard*.

- C ' And because it seemed [7] to all the States of the Kingdom,  
' it being singly and in common propounded to, and asked of  
' them, That these Causes of Crimes and Defects were sufficient  
' and notorious to Depose the same King, his Confession also,  
' and other things considered, contained in his Renunciation  
' and Cession ; all the States aforesaid unanimously consented,  
' to proceed to the Deposition of him, for the greater Security, and  
' Tranquility of the People, and Profit of the Kingdom, and accord-  
D ' ingly appointed certain Commissioners, the Bishop of *Asaph*,  
' the Abbat of *Glastonbury*, the Earl of *Glocester*, the Lord *Berke-*  
' *ley*, *Thomas Erpyngham*, and *Thomas Grey*, Knights, and *William*  
' *Thirnyng* Justice, to pronounce Sentence of Deposition against  
' King *Richard*, from all Royal Dignity, Majesty, and Honour,  
' in the Name, and by Authority of all the States, as in like  
' Cases, according to the ancient Custom of the Kingdom had  
' been observed. The Commissioners take upon them their  
E ' Charge, and the Commission being drawn up in Writing, the  
' Bishop of *Asaph* read it, in these Words :

- F In the Name of God, Amen : [8] We John Bishop of *Asaph*,  
John Abbat of *Glastonbury*, Thomas Earl of *Glocester*, Thomas  
Lord *Berkeley*, Thomas de *Erpyngham*, and Thomas *Gray*,  
Knights, and *William Thirning* Justiciary, by the Spiritual and  
Temporal Peers and Great Men of the Kingdom of *England*, and  
by the Communities of the same, representing all States thereof, being  
specially deputed Commissioners for the things underwritten, duely con-  
sidering the many Perjuries, Cruelty, and many other Crimes committed  
by King *Richard* in the time of his Government, and publicly Exhi-  
bited and Recited before the States, which were so publick, notorious,  
manifest, and famous, as they could no way be denied ; and also his  
Confession, acknowledging, and truly of his own certain knowledge,  
judging

[7] Ib. n. 51.

[8] Ib. n. 52.



judging himself to have been altogether insufficient for the Government of the Kingdoms and Lordship aforesaid; and that for his notorious Demerits he was worthy to be Deposed; which things by his own Will and Command were published before the States. Having had diligent Deliberation upon these things, for the greater Caution to the Government of the Kingdoms, and Dominion aforesaid, the Rights and Appertinences of the same, in the Name and Authority to us committed, do Pronounce, Decree, and Declare, that very Richard to be Deposed deservedly from all Royal Dignity and Honour, and for the like Caution, we Depose him by our Definitive Sentence in this Writing, expressly inhibiting all and singular Arch-Bishops, Bishops, and Prelates, Dukes, Marquesses, Earls, Barons, Knights, Vassals, and Valvassors, and all other Men and Subjects of the said Kingdoms and Dominion or Places belonging to them, for the future to obey the said Richard as King.

A

[9] Ib. n. 53.

‘ Furthermore, the said States [9] desiring there might be ‘ nothing wanting, which was or might be required in this Mat- ‘ ter, being severally asked, agreed to certain Persons to be their ‘ Proctors or Agents, named by the Commissioners, to go to ‘ King Richard to resign their Homage and Fealty had been made ‘ to him, and give him notice what had been concerning his De- ‘ position and Renunciation.

B

[1] Ib. n.

‘ And presently it appeared from the [1] Premisses, and the ‘ Occasion thereof, That the Kingdom of England was vacant, ‘ when Henry Duke of Lancaster rising from his Seat, and stand- ‘ ing so right up, as he might sufficiently be seen of the People, ‘ humbly crossing himself in his Forehead and Breast, first cal- ‘ ling upon the Name of Christ, challenged the Kingdom of ‘ England, being void, with the Crown, and all its Members, ‘ and Appertinences, in his Mother Tongue, (*lingua materna*) in ‘ this Form of Words.

C

[2] Ib. n.

In the Name of Fader, [2] Son, and Holy Ghost, I Henry of Lancaster, chalenge this Rewme of England, and the Crowne, with all the Members, and the Appurtenances, als I am descendit by ryght lyne of the Blode coming fro the Gude Lord King Henry therde, and throghe that ryght, that God of his grace hath sent me, with helpe of my kyn and my frendes to recover it; The which Rewme was in popnt to be ondone for default of Governance, and undoying of the gude Lawes.

D

[3] Ib. n. 54.

‘ After this Claim, [3] as well the Lords Spiritual as Tem- ‘ poral, and all States there present, were asked, one by one, ‘ what they thought of it, who without any difficulty or delay, ‘ unanimously consented the Duke should Reign over them; ‘ and immediately, so soon as he shew the States of the King- ‘ dom, King Richard's Signet, which he gave him as a Token of ‘ his Intention, as was said before, the Arch-Bishop taking King ‘ Henry by the Right Hand, led him to the Royal Throne, and ‘ when the same King had Kneeled, and Prayed a while before ‘ it, the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, the Arch-Bishop of York as- ‘ sisting him, placed him therein, the People for great Joy Shout- ‘ ing mightily.

E

F

When



A ' When the Shouting was over, [4] the Arch-Bishop of Can-  
 ' terbury made a short Preachment, or Collation, as 'tis called  
 ' upon the Roll ; his Text, or Theme, was, *Vir dominabitur Populo*,  
 ' 1 Sam. c. 9. v. 17. The English Version of the whole Verse, ac-  
 ' cording to the Vulgar Edition, runs thus : *And when Samuel saw*  
 ' *Saul, the Lord said unto him, Behold the Man whom I spake to thee of,*  
 ' *this same shall Rule over my People ; Iste dominabitur Populo meo.*  
 B ' In this Collation he makes a Comparison between King Richard,  
 ' who he makes a Child, and his whole Government a Childish  
 ' Acting, and King Henry a Perfect Wise Man. In this Compa-  
 ' rison he makes use of several Places of Scripture, but how pro-  
 ' perly, or how to the purpose, belongs not to this Place to say :  
 ' At length he insinuates, That by Childish Government the Na-  
 ' tion had been in great Danger ; but now they were freed from  
 ' it, because a Man will Reign ; to wit, he that says not as a  
 C ' Child, but one of Perfect Reason : I came not to do my own  
 ' Will, but the Will of him that sent me, that is, God : And  
 ' therefore we may not only say of this Man, That he will think  
 ' of things in Wisdom, but also as a Man, and not as a Child ;  
 ' (*In sensu cogitabit circumspeditionem Dei*) He will in earnest think  
 ' of the Circumspection or Providence of God ; (*id est, circum-*  
 ' *quaque diligenter aspiciet ut Dei voluntas non sua fiat ;*) that is, he  
 ' will look diligently every way about him, that God's Will,  
 ' not his own, may be done ; and so in the Place of a wanton  
 ' Child, a Man Rules over the People, and such a Man, that it  
 ' may be said, The King shall Reign, and he shall be a Wise  
 ' Man, and do Judgment and Justice in the Land.

[4] Ib. n. 55.

' Which Collation ended, [5] King Henry, to quiet the Minds  
 ' of his Subjects, said publicly these Words :

[5] Ib. n. 56.

D S I R E S,

I Thank God and zowe Spirituel and Temporel, and all the Aistates of the  
 Lond, and do zowe to wyte, it es noght my Will that no Man thynk that  
 be waye of Conquest I wold Disherit any Man of his Heritage, Franches, or  
 other Ryghts that hym aght to have, no put hym out of that that he has,  
 and has had by the gude Lawes and Custumes of the Rewme, except those  
 Persons that has ben agan the gude Purpose and the comune Profyt of  
 the Rewme.

E

' And forthwith [6] it being considered that the Throne being  
 ' Vacant, by the Cessation and Deposition of King Richard, the  
 ' Power of all the Justices, Sheriffs, and other Officers through the  
 ' Kingdom ceased, lest Justice might be delayed to the Grievance  
 ' of the People, he Named his Principal Officers and Justices,  
 ' who took the usual Oaths. And forthwith Proclamation was  
 ' made by the King's Command, That on Monday next after the  
 F ' Feast of St. Michael, a Parlement should be held in that Place ;  
 ' and that on Monday next following, on the Feast of St. Edward,  
 ' the Coronation should be at Westminster ; and that who claimed  
 ' any Service, then might put in their Petitions before the  
 ' Steward, Constable, and Marshall of England, where they  
 ' should receive full Justice. And for the shortness of Time as-  
 ' signed for the Sitting of the Parlement, the King made Prote-  
 ' station

[6] Ib. n. 57.



‘ station, it was not his *Intention* it should be any *Prejudice* to the  
 ‘ States of his *Kingdom*, or that it should be made an *Example*  
 ‘ for the future ; but that it was *only* for the *Profit* of the *King-*  
 ‘ *dom*, and specially to spare the *Labour* and *Expences* of his  
 ‘ *Lieges*, and that the *Grievances* of the *People* might have speedy  
 ‘ *Remedy*.

[7] *Ibm.* n. 58.

All which things being finished, [7] the King rose from his  
 ‘ Throne, and beholding the People with a chearful Counte-  
 ‘ nance departed, and the same Day in the White Hall (*in Alba*  
 ‘ *Aula*) he had a great *Entertainment* for the *Noble* and *Gentle-*  
 ‘ *men*, who were there in great Numbers.

A

These things were done on *Tuesday* the 30th of *September*.

[8] *Ibm.*

‘ And afterwards on the next day, [8] being *Wednesday*, the  
 ‘ Deputies or Proctors before mentioned, went to *Richard* late  
 ‘ King in the *Tower*, as they had been enjoined, *William* *Thir-*  
 ‘ *nyng* *Iustitiary*, for himself and Fellow-Proctors, in the Name  
 ‘ of all the *States* and *People*, notified to *Richard*, and fully  
 ‘ declared the *Admission* of his *Renunciation*, and the *Manner*,  
 ‘ *Cause*, and *Form* of the *Sentence* of his *Deposition* ; and presently  
 ‘ *Resigned* the *Homage* and *Fealty* that had been made to the late  
 ‘ King *Richard*, as follows.

B

C

[9] *Ibm.* n. 59.

The Words [9] which *William* *Thirnyng* spake  
 to Monsieur *Richard* late King of *England*,  
 at the *Tower* of *London* in his *Chamber*  
 there, on \* *Wednesday* next after the *Feast*  
 of *St. Michael* the *Archangel*.

D

\* Note, this  
*Wednesday* was  
*Octob. 1.*

S I R E,

**I**T is wele known to zowe, That ther was a *Parlement* somond of all  
 the *States* of the *Reaume* for to be at *Westmynstre*, and to begynne  
 on the *Tuesday* in the morrow of the *Fest* of *Seint Michell* the *Arch-*  
*aungell* that was yesterday, by cause of the whiche *Sommons*, all the  
*States* of this *Lond* were there gadyrd ; the whiche *States* hole made  
 thes same *Persones* that ben comen here to zowe nowe her *Procuratours*,  
 and gafen hem full *Auctorite* and *Power*, and charged hem for to say the  
*Wordes* that we sall say to zowe en her Name, and on their *Behalve* ; that  
 is to wyttyn, The *Bishop* of *St. Asla* for *Ersbissoppes* and *Bisboppes* ; the  
*Abbot* of *Glastenbury* for *Abbotes* and *Priours*, and all other Men of *Holy*  
*Chirche* *Seculers* and *Rewelers* ; the *Erle* of *Gloucestre* for *Dukes* and  
*Erles* ; the *Lord* of *Berkeley* for *Barones* and *Banerettes* ; *Sire* *Thomas*  
*Irpyngham* *Chamberleyn* for all the *Bachelers* and *Commons* of this  
*Lond* be *South*, *Sire* *Thomas* *Grey* for all the *Bachelers* and *Commons*  
 by *North*, and my *Felawe* *Johan* *Markham* and me for to come with  
 hem for all thes *States* ; And so, *Sire*, thes *Wordes*, and the doying  
 that

E

F



that we fall say to zowe, is not onlych our Wordes, bot the Wordes and the Doings of all the States of this Lond, and our Charge and in her Name. And he answered and said, That he wylt wele, that we wold not say but as we were charged. Sire, ze remembre zowe wele, That on Monday on the Fest of St. Michell the Archaungell, ryght here, in this Chambre, and in what Presence ze Renounsed and Cessed of the State of Kyng and Lordeship, and of all the Dignite and Wyrshipp that longed therto, and assoiled all zour Lieges of her Legiance and Obeysance that longed to zowe uppe the Forume that is contened in the same Renunciacion and Cession, whiche ze redde zour self by zour Mouth, and affermed it by zour Othe and zour own Writing; upon which ze made and ordeyned zour Procurators the Ersbyschopp of Zork, and the Byschopp of Hereford, for to notifie and declare in zour Name thes Renunciacion and Cession at Westmynstre, to all the Stotes and all the People that was ther gadyrd bycause of the Sommons forsayd; the whiche was done zesterday by thes Lordes zour Procuratours, and wele herde and understonden, thes Renunciacion and Cession were pleinelich and frelich accepted, and fullich agreed by all the States and People forsayd. And over this, Sire, at the instance of all thes States and People there were certain Articles of Defaults in zour Governance redde there, and though wele herd and pleinelich understonden to all the States forsayd, hem thought hem so trewe and so notoric and knownen, that by the Causes, and by no other os thej sayd, and having consideration to zour owne Wordes in zour own Renunciacion and Cession, that ze were not worthy, no sufficient ne able for to Govern for zour owne Demerites, os it is more pleinerlich contened therein, hem thought that was reasonable und cause for to Depose zowe, and her Commissaries that her made and ordeined, os it is of Record ther declared and decreed, and adjudged zowe for to be Deposed and Pryved, and in dede Deposed zowe and Pryved zowe of the Astate of Kyng, and of the Lordeship contened in the Renunciacion and Cession forsayd, and of all the Dignity and Wyrshipp, and of all the Administration that longed therto. And we Procuratours to all these States and People foresayd, os we be charged by hem, and by hir Auſtorite gyffen us and in her Name, zelde zowe uppe for all the States and People foresayd Homage Liege, and Feaute and all Legeance and all other Bondes, Charges, and Services that longe therto; And that non of all thes States and People fro this tyme forward ne bere zowe Feyth, ne do zowe Obeysance os to thar Kyng. And he answered and seyde, That he loked not therafter; but he seyde, That after all this, he hoped that is Cosyn wolde be good Lord to hym.

And further to compleat his Desigh, on the [1] 30th of September, he, by Information of the Arch-Bishop, That by the Acceptation of the Renunciacion of King Richard, his Cession and Deposition, this Parlement was determined, issued in his own Name Writs to the Lords, and for Eleſtions of Members, Knights, Citizens, and Burgeses of the House of Commons, to meet on Monday next following, being the Day of St. Faith; and all this to be done, and Returns made in six Days time. So as these were the same Members who had been Summoned by King Richard to meet on the morrow of St. Michael, as appears beyond Contradiction from the Writs [2] for their Expences, which were Dated on the 19th of November, the last Day of the Parlement, and they were allowed their Expences for Fifty one Days, besides the time of coming to, and returning from Parlement; in which Fifty one Days

[1] Rot. Claus.  
1 Hen. IV.  
part 1. M. 37.  
Dors.  
Summons of  
Parlement.

[2] Append.  
D. 114.



was included the 30th of September, and all the Days between that and St. Faith's Day, the 6th of October, to make up the Number.

[3] Rot. Parl.  
1 Hen. 4. n. 1.  
Pronunciation  
du Parlement,  
or Declarati-  
on of cause  
of Summons.  
The Cause of  
Summons.

In this Parlement [3] Summoned and Holden at Westminster by King Henry IV. on Monday, the Day of St. Faith, which was the 6th of October, in the first Year of his Reign, sitting on his Royal Seat in the Great Hall at Westminster; in the Presence of him and all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Commons, and many other Gentlemen and Commons in great Number, Thomas de Arundel Arch-Bishop of Canterbury declared the Cause of Summons, and rehearsed how on Tuesday last past, on the morrow of St. Michael, King Richard II. after the Conquest, summoned his Parlement to be then holden, which Summons was of no force or effect, by reason of the Acceptation of the Renunciation made by King Richard, and the Deposing of him, as without doubt he had informed King Henry before he issued his Writs for this Parlement. And then proceeds, That on the same Tuesday,

[4] Ibm. n. 2.

[4] in Presence of King Henry, the Lords Spiritual, Temporal, and Commons, he shewed, that this Honourable Kingdom of England, being the most abounding Angle with Riches, had been a long time Governed by Children and the Counsels of young People, so as the Kingdom was in point of Perdition and great Desolation and Mischief, mightily to be lamented, if it had not been that Almighty God of his Great Grace and Mercy had sent a Knowing and Discreet Man for the Government of the Nation, who by the Aid of God will be Governed and Counsell'd by the Sages and Ancients of his Kingdom, for the Aid and Comfort of himself and the whole People. And said further, That Men ought especially to consider how this Honourable Kingdom could so long continue under such mischievous Government, Waste, and Destruction, which if it had been under Good and Just Government, by Sage and Sufficient Counsel, as it ought of Right, it would have been in Riches, Goods, and other Advantages the most considerable of any Kingdom in the World;

[5] Ibm. n. 3.

[5] (*Et sur ceo mesme Lercevesque prist pur son Theame le Parole de Machabeorum primo in disent Incumbit nobis ordinare pro Regno.*) And then the Arch-Bishop took for his Theme the Words in the first of Machabees, saying, *Incumbit nobis ordinare pro Regno*, 1 Mac. Chap. 6. Vers. 57. They are the last Words of a very long Verse, and nothing to his Purpose, nor what went before, or what follows after. The English Version is thus: *The Affairs of the Realm depend upon us.* But to go on with his Harangue, *Incumbit nobis ordinare pro Regno* (*cest a dire, &c.*) That is to say, It is the King's Will to be Counsell'd and Governed by the Honourable Sages and Discreet Persons of his Kingdom, and by their Common Counsel and Assent, do the best for the Government of himself and his Realm, not desiring to be Governed by his own Will, voluntary Purpose, or singular Opinion, but by Common Advice, Counsel, and Assent, as abovesaid. And the same Arch-bishop said further (*& mesme Lercevesque dit outre*) There was not such a Kingdom in the World, that could live without the Assistance of other Kingdoms, so Honourably, so Graciously, and so Fully (*si honouablement, ne gracionsment, ne plentionsment*) as might the Honourable Kingdom of England, which God keep safe

A

B

C

D

E

F



safe and maintain. [6] And upon this he alledged certain Authority, saying, *Quod inter omnia regna hoc principatum tenet*, Of all Kingdoms this is the chief; and shewed, That to the Government of every Kingdom, Three things especially were required, that is to say, Justice, The Observation of the Laws, And, that every Person should rule and govern himself according to his Estate, and Degree, alledging many Causes for which this Kingdom ought to be graciously cherished and held in the greatest Honour: And said further, it was the King's Will to make good these Three things by the help of God; and further said, That it was the King's Will in especial, that Holy Church should have and enjoy all her Liberties and Franchises; and that all the good Statutes and Ordinances made in the time of his Noble Progenitors, should be firmly observed and kept, and that all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, Cities and Burghs, and all others, should have and enjoy their Liberties and Franchises, according to the Grants made by his Noble Progenitors abovesaid. And that no Man ought to speak of, or Censure any thing done this Parlement, for it was the Will of the King in his Faith and Conscience to do equal Justice to all Parts, according to the Will, Aid, and Grace of God given unto him. This was the Archbishop's Discourse upon his Theme: [7] And then he told the Lords and Commons, That on Monday next King Henry, by the Grace of God, purposed to be Crowned at Westminster, for the Performance of which Solemnity, Advice and Deliberation ought to be had in divers manners the mean time, and therefore on behalf of the King he requested them to continue the Parlement (*de continuer cest Parlement*) until Tuesday the Morrow after the Coronation, and after that day forward the King would use his Diligence for the Exploit of Parlement, (*& que de celle jour en avant mesme le Roy ferroit sa diligence par l'exploit de Parlement*) that is, for the Dispatch of Parlement Business. Whereupon, by the King's Command, Henry Percy Earl of Northumberland and Constable of England, asked all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal and Commons, if they agreed to the Continuance, who severally Examined, (*queux ont severalment examinez*) agreed to the said Continuance.

After this follows the Names of the Triers of Petitions in Parlement, and the whole Process against Richard the Second, tho Transacted on Michaelmas-Day and the day following, a Week before this Parlement began, as hath been shewn.

And immediately the [8] whole Parlement of the 21st of Richard the Second, with all Circumstances and Dependences thereupon, were revoked and annulled for ever.

And the Parlement holden [9] in the Eleventh year of King Richard the Second was revived and confirmed to be kept according to the effect and purport of the same, as being for the good and common profit of the Kingdom (*pur le bien & comune profit du Roialme*.)

The Lords and others, [1] and their Heirs, &c. that were forejudged in the 21st of Richard the Second, are restored to the same State and Condition they were in at the time of their Judgments given.

[6] *Ib. n. 4.*[7] *Ib. n. 5.*[8] *Rat. Parl. 1 Hen IV. n. 66.*

The Parlement 21st of Rich. II. annulled.

[9] *Ib. n. 67.*

The Parlement of the 11th of Richard II. confirmed.

[1] *Ib. n. 68.*

The Lords and others Judged 21st of Rich. II. restored, &amp;c.



[2] *Ib. n. 71.*  
Henry's Eldest  
Son made  
Prince of  
Wales, and  
Heir of the  
Crown.

[3] *Append.*  
*ii. 115.*

[4] *See Appen.*  
*as above.*  
King Richard  
ordered to be  
imprisoned.

The Bishop of  
Carlisle's  
Speech there-  
upon.

[5] *P. 100, 101,*  
*102, &c.*

The Speech.

Upon [2] the Motion of the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, the Lords and Commons having severally been asked about the King's Eldest Son, answered and assented, That *Henry* his Eldest Son should be made Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earl of *Chester*, and also if his Father should dye, he being alive, they would accept him as Right Heir of the Kingdom and Crown, and obey him as their King and Liege.

On *Thursday* the 23d of *October* [3] the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, on behalf of the King, charged all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and all others there, being upon their Allegiance, that what should be then spoken or propounded should be kept secret, and no ways discovered to any Man living; and then it was demanded by the Earl of *Northumberland*, for the security of the King, and all the Estates of the Kingdom, what should be done with King Richard, to keep him in safe-guard, saving his Life, which the King would have done by all means. To which Question all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, whose Names do there [4] follow, being severally Examined, answered it seemed to them, he should be put into safe and secure Guard, and in such a Place where there was no Concourse of People, and that he be kept by sure and sufficient Persons, and that none that had been Servant to him, should be about his Person, and this should be done in the most secret manner that might be.

Upon propounding this Question, *Thomas Merks* Bishop of *Carlisle*, gave his Reasons against these Proceedings in the following Speech, as it is to be found in the First Part of Sir *John Hayward's* [5] *Life of Henry the Fourth*, Printed at *London* 1599.

' This Question, Right Honourable Lords, concerneth a Matter of great Consequence and Weight; the determining whereof will assuredly procure, either safe Quiet, or dangerous Disturbance, both to our particular Consciences, and also to the Common State: Therefore before you resolve upon it, I pray you call to your Considerations these Two things: First, whether King Richard be sufficiently Deposed, or no? Secondly, whether King Henry be with good Judgment, or Justice, chosen in his Place? For the first Point we are to Examine, Whether a King being lawfully and fully instituted by any just Title, may upon imputation either of Negligence, or of Tyranny, be Deposed by his Subjects? Secondly, What King Richard hath omitted in the one, or committed in the other, for which he should deserve so heavy Judgment? I will not speak what may be done in a Popular State, or in a Consular, in which although one beareth the Name and Honour of a Prince, yet he hath not Supream Power of Majesty; but in the one the People have the highest Empire, in the other the Nobility and Chief Men of Estate, in neither the Prince. Of the first sort was the Commonwealth of the *Lacedemonians*, who after the Form of Government which *Licurgus* framed, often-times Fined, often-times Fettered their Kings, and sometimes Condemned them to Death: Such were also in *Cesar's* time, the Petty King's of every City in *France*, who were many times Arraigned upon Life and Death, and (as *Ambiorix* Prince of *Leodienses* confessed)

A

B

C

D

E

F



*Tranquil. in  
Caligula. Tacitus  
in præmio.*

- A ' feth) had no greater Power over the People, then the People  
' had over them. Of the second Condition were the *Roman*  
' Emperours at the first, of whom some, namely, *Nero* and  
' *Maximinus* were openly condemned, others were suddenly sur-  
' prized by Judgment and Authority of the Senate; and such  
' are now the Emperours of *Germany*, whom the other Princes  
' by their Aristocratical Power do not only restrain, but some-  
' times also remove from their Imperial State; Such are also  
' the Kings of *Denmarke*, and *Swevelande*, who are many times  
' by the Nobility dejected, either into Prison, or into Exile;  
' Such likewise are the Dukes of *Venice*, and of some other Free  
' States in *Italy*; and the chief Cause for which *Lewes* Earl of  
' *Flaunders* was lately expelled from his Place, was for drawing  
' to himself Cognisance in Matters of Life and Death, which  
' high Power never pertained to his Dignity.
- B ' In these and such like Governments, the Prince hath not  
' Regal Rights, but is himself subject to that Power which is  
' greater then his, whether it be in the Nobility or in the Com-  
' mon People; but if the Sovereign Majesty be in the Prince,  
' as it was in the Three first Empires, and in the Kingdoms of  
' *Judea* and *Isreal*, and is now in the Kingdoms of *England*,  
' *France*, *Spain*, *Scotland*, *Muscovia*, *Turkey*, *Tartaria*, *Persia*, *Æ-*  
' *thiopia*, and almost all the Kingdoms of *Asia* and *Africk*; altho  
C ' for his Vices he be unprofitable to the Subjects, yea hurtful,  
' yea intolerable; yet can they Lawfully neither harm his Per-  
' son, nor hazard his Power, whether by Judgment, or else by  
' Force; for neither one, nor all Magistrates, have any Autho-  
' rity over the Prince, from whom all Authority is derived,  
' and whose only Prefence doth silence, and suspend all inferiour  
' Jurisdiction and Power. And as for Force, what Subject can at-  
' tempt, or assist, or counsel, or conceal Violence against his  
D ' Prince, and not incur the high and heinous Crime of Trea-  
' son.
- E ' It is a common saying, Thought is free; free indeed from Pu-  
' nishment of Secular Laws, except by Word or Deed it break forth  
' into Action; Yet the secret Thoughts against the Sacred Majesty  
' of a Prince, without attempt, without endeavour, have been  
' adjudged worthy of Death; and some who in Auricular Con-  
' fession have discovered their Treacherous Devices against the  
' Person of their Prince, have afterwards been Executed for the  
' same. All Laws do exempt a Mad Man from Punishment, be-  
' cause their Actions are not governed by their Will and Purpose,  
' and the Will of Man being set aside all his Doings are indiffe-  
' rent, neither can the Body offend, without a corrupt or erro-  
' neous Mind; yet if a Mad Man draw his Sword upon his King,  
' it hath been adjudged to deserve Death. And lest any Man  
' should surmise, that Princes, for the Maintenance of their  
F ' own Safety and Sovereignty, are the only Authors of these  
' Judgments, let us a little consider the Patterns and Precepts of  
' Holy Scripture. *Nebuchadnezzar* King of *Affyria* wasted all *Pa-*  
' *lestine* with Fire and Sword, oppugned *Hiernusalem* a long time,  
' and at last expugned it, slew the King, burnt the Temple, took  
' away the Holy Vessels and Treasure, the rest he permitted to  
' the Cruelty and Spoil of his Unmerciful Soldiers, who defiled all  
' Places



‘ Places with Rape and Slaughter, and ruinated to the Ground  
 ‘ that flourishing City. After all the glut of this Bloody But-  
 ‘ chery, the People which remained, he led Captive to *Chaldea*,  
 ‘ and there erected his Golden Image, and commanded, That  
 ‘ they which refused to Worship it, should be cast into a Fiery  
 ‘ Furnace.

‘ What Cruelty, what Injustice, what Impiety is comparable  
 ‘ to this? And yet God calleth *Nebuchadnezzar* his Servant, and  
 ‘ promiseth him Hire and Wages for his Service: And the Pro-  
 ‘ phets *Jeremiah* and *Baruch*, did write unto the *Jews*, to pray  
 ‘ for the Life of him, and of *Baltazar* his Son, that their days  
 ‘ might be upon Earth as the days of Heaven: And *Ezekiel*  
 ‘ with bitter Terms abhorreth the Disloyalty of *Zedechia*, be-  
 ‘ cause he revolted from *Nebuchadnezzar*, whose Homager and  
 ‘ Tributary he was. What shall we say of *Saul*? Did he not  
 ‘ put all the Priests to Execution, because one of them did Re-  
 ‘ lieve Holy and Harmless *David*? Did he not violently Perse-  
 ‘ cute that his most Faithful Servant and Dutiful Son in Law?  
 ‘ During which Pursuit, he fell twice into the Power of *David*,  
 ‘ who did not only spare, but also Protect the King, and re-  
 ‘ proved the Pretorian Soldiers for their Negligent Watch, and  
 ‘ was touched in the Heart for cutting away the lap of his Gar-  
 ‘ ment; and afterwards caused the Messenger to be slain, who

*Jerem. 25. 9.*  
*Ezech. 29. 18.*  
*Jerem. 29. 7.*  
*Baruch. 1. 11.*

*So did Domitian put to death Epaphroditus, Nero's Li-  
 bertine, because he helped Nero (although in Love) to kill  
 himself. So did Severus kill all the Killers of Pertinax  
 his Predecessor; and likewise Vitellius did put to Death all  
 the Murderers of Galba. Theophilus Emperor of Græcia  
 caused all those to be slain, who had made his Father Em-  
 peror by killing Leo Armenius. And Alexander the Great  
 put to cruel Execution those that had slain Darius, his  
 Mighty and Mortal Enemy.*

*Deut. 17. 12.*  
*Psal. 105.*  
*Exod. 22. 28.*  
*Alf. 23. 5.*  
*Roman. 13.*  
*1. 13.*  
*Titus 3. 1.*  
*1 Pet. 2. 13,*  
*14, 17.*  
*2 Tim. 2. 2.*

*Rom. 13. 2.*  
*John 19. 11.*

*Esay 45. 1.*

*2 Chron. 36.*  
*22.*

‘ upon Request, and for Pitty, had  
 ‘ lent his Hand (as he said) to help  
 ‘ forward the voluntary Death of  
 ‘ that Sacred King. As for the  
 ‘ contrary Examples, as that of  
 ‘ *Jehu*, who slew *Jehoram* and *A-*  
 ‘ *hazia* Kings of *Israel* and *Juda*,  
 ‘ they were done by expresse O-

‘ racle and Revelation from God, and are no more set down  
 ‘ for our imitation, then the Robbing of the *Ægyptians*, or any  
 ‘ other Particular and Priviledged Commandement; but in the  
 ‘ general Precept, which all Men must ordinarily follow, not  
 ‘ only our Actions, but our Speeches also, and our very Thoughts  
 ‘ are strictly charged with Duty and Obedience unto Princes,  
 ‘ whether they be Good or Evil: The Law of God ordaineth,  
 ‘ That he which doth Presumptuously against the Ruler of the  
 ‘ People shall dye: And the Prophet *David* forbiddeth, to touch  
 ‘ the Lords Anointed. Thou shalt not (saith the Lord) rail  
 ‘ upon the Judges, neither speak Evil against the Ruler of  
 ‘ the People. And the Apostles do demand further, That even  
 ‘ our Thoughts and Souls be obedient to Higher Powers. And  
 ‘ lest any should imagine, that they meant of good Princes  
 ‘ only, they speak generally of all, and further to take away all  
 ‘ doubt, they make expresse mention of the Evil. For the Power  
 ‘ and Authority of Wicked Princes, is the Ordinance of God;  
 ‘ and therefore Christ told *Pilate*, That the Power which he had,  
 ‘ was given him from above; and the Prophet *Esay* calleth *Cy-*  
 ‘ *rus*, being a Prophane and Heathen Prince, the Lord's Anointed.  
 ‘ For God stirreth up the Spirit, even of Wicked Princes, to do  
 ‘ his Will, and (as *Johosaphat* said to his Rulers) they execute  
 ‘ not the Judgment of Man, but of the Lord; in regard where-  
 ‘ of

A

B

C

D

E

F



of *David* calleth them Gods, because they have their Rule and Authority immediately from God ; which if they abuse, they are not to be adjudged by their Subjects, for no Power within their Dominion is superior to theirs, but God reserveth them to the forest Tryal : Horribly and suddenly (saith the Wiseman) shall the Lord appear unto them, and a hard Judgment shall they have.

*Psal. 28.*

*Sap. 6.*

The Law of God commandeth, That the Child should be put to Death for any contumely done unto the Parents : But what if the Father be a Robber ? If a Murderer ? If for all excess of Villanies, odious and execrable both to God and Man ? Surely he deserveth the highest degree of Punishment, and yet must not the Son lift up his Hand against him, for no Offence is so great as to be punished with Parricide ; but our Country is dearer unto us then our Parents, and the Prince is *Pater Patrie*, the Father of our Country, and therefore more sacred and dear to us then our Parents by Nature, and must not be violated, how Imperious, how Impious soever he be : Doth he Command or Demand, our Persons or our Purfes, we must not shun for the one, nor shrink for the other ; for (as *Nebemiah* saith) Kings have Dominion over the Bodies, and over the Cattle of their Subjects, at their Pleasure. Doth he enjoin those Actions which are contrary to the Laws of God ? we must neither wholly obey, nor violently resist, but with a constant Courage submit our selves to all manner of Punishment, and shew our Subjection by Enduring and not Performing : Yea, the Church hath declared it to be an Heresie, to hold that a Prince may be Slain or Deposed by his Subjects for any Disorder or Default, either in Life, or else in Government, there will be Faults so long as there are Men ; and as we endure with Patience a Barren year, if it happen, and unseasonable Weather, and such other Defects of Nature, so must we tolerate the Imperfections of Rulers, and quietly expect either Reformation, or else a Change.

*Quintil. in declam. offic. lib. 1.*

*Nahem. 9. 37.*

*Alphonf. a Castro in lib. de heresi, in Verb Tyrannus. Dom. Soto. lib. 5. de iust & iure.*

But, alas, good King *Richard* ! what such Cruelty ? What such Impiety hath he ever committed ? Examine rightly those Imputations which are laid against him, without any false Circumstance of Aggravation, and you shall find nothing objected either of any Truth, or of great Moment. It may be that many Errours and Oversights have escaped him, yet none so grievous to be termed Tyranny, as proceeding rather from Unexperienced Ignorance, or Corrupt Counsel, than from any Natural and Wilful Malice. Oh ! how shall the World be pestered with Tyrants, if Subjects may rebel upon every pretence of Tyranny ? How many good Princes shall daily be suppressed by those by whom they ought to be supported ? If they Levy a Subsidy or any other Taxation, it shall be claimed Oppression : If they put any to Death for Traiterous Attempts against their Persons, it shall be exclaimed Cruelty : If they do any thing against the lust and liking of the People, it shall be proclaimed Tyranny.

But let it be, that without Authority in us, or Desert in him, King *Richard* must be Deposed, yet what Right had the Duke of *Lancaster* to the Crown ? Or, what Reason have we with-



' without his Right to give it to him ? If he make Title as Heir  
 ' unto King *Richard*, then must he yet stay until King *Richard's*  
 ' Death, for no Man can succeed as Heir to one that Liveth. But  
 ' it is well known to all Men, who are not either wilfully Blind,  
 ' or grossly Ignorant, that there are some now alive, lineally de-  
 ' scended from *Lionel Duke of Clarence*, whose Offspring was by  
 ' Judgment of the High Court of Parlement holden the Eighth  
 ' year of the Reign of King *Richard*, declared next Successor to  
 ' the Crown in case King *Richard* should die without Issue.  
 ' Concerning the Title from *Edmund Crouchbacke*, I will pass it  
 ' over, seeing the Authors thereof are become ashamed of so ab-  
 ' surd Abuse, both of their own Knowledge and our Credulity,  
 ' and therefore all the Claim is now made by Right of Conquest,  
 ' by the Cession and Grant of King *Richard*, and by the general  
 ' Consent of all the People. It is a bad Woolf that can take no co-  
 ' lour ; but what Conquest can a Subject pretend against his So-  
 ' vereign, where the War is Insurrection, and the Victory High  
 ' and Heinous Treason ? As for the Resignation which King *Rich-  
 ' ard* made, being a pent Prisoner for the same Cause, it is an  
 ' Act exacted by force ; and therefore of no force or validity to  
 ' bind him ; and seeing that by the Laws of this Land, the  
 ' King alone cannot alienate the ancient Jewels and Ornaments  
 ' pertaining to the Crown, surely he cannot give away the  
 ' Crown it self, and therewithall the Kingdom.

' Neither have we any Custom that the People at Pleasure  
 ' should Elect their King, but they are always bound unto him,  
 ' who by right of Blood is right Successor ; much less can they  
 ' confirm and make good that Title, which is before by Violence  
 ' usurped ; for nothing can then be freely done, when Liberty  
 ' is once restrained by fear. So did *Scilla* by Terrour of his Le-  
 ' gions, obtain the Law of *Velleia* to be made, whereby he was  
 ' created Dictator for Fourscore years ; and by like Impression  
 ' of Fear, *Cæsar* caused the Law of *Servia* to be promulged, by  
 ' which he was made Perpetual Dictator ; but both these Laws  
 ' were afterwards adjudged void. As for the Deposing King *Ed-  
 ' ward* the Second, it is no more to be urged, than the Poysoning of  
 ' King *John*, or the Murdering of any good and Lawful Prince ;  
 ' We must live according to Laws, and not to Examples, and  
 ' yet the Kingdom was not then taken from the Lawful Succes-  
 ' sor : But if we look back to Times lately past, we shall find that  
 ' these Titles were more strong in King *Stephen*, then they are in  
 ' the Duke of *Lancaster* ; for King *Henry* the First being at large  
 ' Liberty, neither restrained in Body, nor constrained in Mind,  
 ' had appointed him to succeed ; (as it was upon good Credit  
 ' certainly affirmed) the People assented to this Designment, and  
 ' thereupon without Fear and without Force, he was Anointed  
 ' King, and obtained full Possession of the Realm : Yet *Henry*  
 ' (Son of the Earl of *Anjoue*) having a nearer Right by his Mo-  
 ' ther to the Crown, (notwithstanding his Father was a Stranger,  
 ' and himself born beyond the Seas) raised such rough Wars  
 ' upon King *Stephen*, that there was no end of spoiling the Goods  
 ' and spilling the Blood of the unhappy People, besides the  
 ' ruines and deformities of many Cities and Holds, until his  
 ' Lawful Inheritance was to him assured. It terrifieth me to re-

member



- member how many Flourishing Empires and Kingdoms have been by means of such Contentions, either torn in pieces with Intestine Division, or subdued to Foreign Princes, under Pre-  
tence of Assistance and Aid; and I need not repeat how fore this Realm hath heretofore been shaken with these several Mis-  
chiefs; and yet neither the Examples of other Countries, nor the Miseries of our own, are sufficient to make us to beware.
- A 'O *Englishmen*! worse bewitched than the foolish *Galathians*!  
'Our unstayed Minds and restless Resolutions do nothing else  
'but hunt after our own Harms! No People more Hated Abroad,  
'and none less Quiet at Home! In other Countries the Sword  
'of Invasion hath been shaken against us; in our own Land the  
'Fire of Insurrection hath been kindled amongst us: And what  
'are these Innovations but Whetstones to sharpen the one, and  
'Bellows to blow up the other?
- B 'Certainly I fear that the same will happen unto us, which  
'*Æsop* fableth to have been fallen unto the Frogs, who being  
'desirous to have a King, a Beam was given unto them: The  
'first Fall whereof did put them in some fear; but when they  
'saw it lie still in the Stream, they insulted thereon with great  
'Contempt, and desired a King of quicker Courage; and then  
'was sent unto them a Stork, which stalking among them with  
'stately Steps continually devoured them. The Mildness of King  
C '*Richard* hath bred in us this Scorn, interpreting it to be Cowar-  
dise and Dulness of Nature. The Next Heir is likewise rejected.  
'I will not say that with greater Courage we shall find greater  
'Cruelty: But if either of these shall hereafter be able to set up  
'their Side, and bring the Matter to Trial by Arms, I do assuredly  
'say, That which part soever shall carry the Fortune of the Field,  
'the People both ways must go to wreck. And thus have I de-  
clared my Mind concerning this Question, in more Words  
D 'than your Wisdom, yet fewer than the Weight of the Cause  
'doth require; And do boldly conclude, That we have neither  
'Power nor Policy, either to Depose King *Richard*, or to Elect  
'Duke *Henry* in his Place; That King *Richard* remaineth still our  
'Sovereign Prince, and therefore it is not lawful for us to give  
'Judgment upon him: That the Duke whom you call King,  
'hath more offended against the King and the Realm, than the  
'King hath done either against him or us; for being Banished  
E 'the Realm for Ten Years by the King and his Council (amongst  
'whom his Own Father was Chief) and sworn not to return again  
'without special Licence, he hath not only violated his Oath,  
'but with impious Arms disturbed the Quiet of the Land, and  
'dispossessed the King from his Royal Estate, and now demandeth  
'Judgment against his Person, without Offence proved, or De-  
fence heard. If this Injury and this Perjury doth nothing  
'move us, yet let both our Private and Common Dangers some-  
F 'what withdraw us from these violent Proceedings.

After they had thus disposed of *Richard* II. and done for *Henry* what he could desire, the *Commons* petitioned, That all such as came into the Kingdom with him, or came to him afterward, and acted with him and against King *Richard*, might not be impeached, grieved, or vexed, but pardoned.



[6] *Rot. Parl.*  
1 H n. IV. n.  
139.  
The Confe-  
derates and  
Followers of  
Henry IV.  
pardoned.

[7]  
K. Richard  
sent to Leeds-  
Castle, and  
from thence  
to Pontfract.

[8] *Append.*  
n. 116.  
King of  
France pre-  
pares to re-  
lieve K. Ri-  
chard.

[9] *Append.*  
n. 117.  
His Death  
changes his  
Mind.

How K. Ri-  
chard was  
Murdered  
not certain.

[1] *Histor. f.*  
363. n. 50.

[2] *Chronic.*  
f. 517. col. 1.

[3] *E.* 567.

[4] *Vol. 2. c.*  
249. f. 319. a.  
col. 1.  
[5] *N.* 9.

The King's Answer was [6] (*le Roy voet fair pardon en maners come fust fait l'an primere le Roy Edward teirce*) The King willeth to give such a Pardon as was made or given in the first Year of Edward III. for which see *Statutes at Large*, 1 Edw. III. Cap. 1. and 1 Hen. IV. Cap. 2. where are both Pardons in the same Words, only what ought to be altered as to Names and Circumstances, was altered.

The Deposed King, after the Sentence of his remaining in secure and safe Custody, was immediately sent to the Castle of [7] Leeds in Kent, and from thence to Pontfract-Castle in York-shire. The King of France, whose Daughter he had Married, prepared a great Fleet, and raised an Army, to invade England, and destroy him and the Church of England, also the People of the Kingdom by Sea and Land, [as 'tis said by King Henry in his Writ [8] to the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, to cause all the Ecclesiasticks of his Province to Arm and Array what Men they could to oppose him. This Writ bears Date January 17. in the first of his Reign. After this, and before the 29th of the same Month, the King of France had notice of King Richard's Death. [9] Upon which Day he confirmed the Truce he had made with him in the Year 1396. for 28 Years.

How this unfortunate Prince died, was killed, or murdered, 'tis uncertain: Many say he had Meat set before him, but not being suffered to eat, he died of forced Famine.

*Walsingham* [1] says, he voluntarily starved himself, and died on St. Valentin's Day, or the 14th of February, in Pontfract-Castle; which agrees not with the Date of the King of France's Instrument, as above, unless it might be given out he was dead before he really was so.

*Hollinshed* [2] tell us, That one Writer (but names him not) that pretends to know more of King Richard's Death than others, reports, That one Day King Henry sitting at Dinner, fetched a great Sigh, and spake these Words: *Have I no faithful Friend that will deliver me of him, whose Life will be Destruction to me, and Disturbance to the Kingdom!* Upon which Speech, one Sir Pierce de Exton presently left the Court, and went with Eight Men all Armed to Pontfract-Castle, entred the Chamber where King Richard was Prisoner, and beat out his Brains.

Mr. Camden in his *Britania*, [3] speaking of Pontfract-Castle, says, *Hic Richardus Secundus Rex Angliæ, quem Henricus Regno spoliavit, fame, frigore, & in auditis tormentis scelerate sublatus est.* Here Richard II. from whom Henry IV. took or robbed him of the Kingdom, with Hunger, Cold, and unheard-of Torments, was wickedly killed.

*Froisfert*, who was then Writing his Chronicle, [4] says, he could not tell by what means King Richard died.

The Parlement [5] Roll, in the first of Edward IV. speaks thus That Henry IV. taking upon him Usurpously the Crown and Name of King of England, and Lord of Ireland, and not therewith Satisfied or Content, but more grievous Things attempting, Wickedly of Unnatural, Unmanly, and Cruel Tyranny, the same King Richard Anointed, Crowned, and Consecrated, and his Liege and most High Lord in the Earth, against God's Law, Man's Alle-

A

B

C

D

E

F



Allegiance, and Oath of Fidelity, with utmost Punition attorning, murdered and destroyed with most vile, heinous, and lamentable Death.

## Church-Affairs.

**A**S in the last Reign, so in this, the Pope practised his Encroachments upon the Church and State. In the First Parliament of this King, the [1] Commons Petition, That whereas in the Treaty between King Edward and the Pope, he granted to abstain from all manner of Provisions, by way of Reservation of Benefices, especially of such Dignities as were Elective; yet the Court of Rome had no regard to the King's Messengers sent thither about this matter; and the Pope continued his Practice, contrary to the Treaty, Grant, and Accord with King Edward, to the great Prejudice of the King and his Subjects, whereof they pray Remedy.

**C**What Remedy they had, I find not; but next Year against certain Rebel [2] Cardinals, there was an Act passed, That Urban was duly Chosen Pope, and that he was True Pope, and as so, and Head of Holy Church, ought to be Accepted and Obeyed: And to this all the Prelates, Lords, and Commons Agreed.

**D**The next Year the People [3] Complained and Petitioned, shewing, 'That Cathedral and Collegiate Churches, Abbeyes, and 'Priories, and other Benefices of the Kingdom, were filled with 'Men of another Language, and of strange Lands and Nations, 'and sometimes Enemies of the King and Kingdom, which never 'made Residence in the same, or perform'd the Charge thereof: 'Whereupon the King, by Advice and Common Assent of all 'the Lords Temporal, Ordained, That none of his Liege People, 'of what Condition soever they were, should take or receive 'any Procuracy, Letter of Attorney, Farm, or other Admini- 'stration by Indenture, or in any other manner of any Benefice 'within England, but only of the King's Subjects, without his 'special Licence by Advice of his Council; nor send out of the 'Kingdom any Gold, Silver, or other Treasure or Commodity, 'by Bill of Exchange, Merchandise, or any other manner; 'And those that did the contrary, to incur the Pain and Punish- 'ment contained in the Statute of Provisors.

**F**This Prohibition, upon Complaint and Petition of the Commons, by Assent of the King and Lords Temporal, proved ineffectual for the End intended, and therefore it was reinforced: And it was agreed by the King in his 7th Year, the Lords Temporal and Commons, that the same [4] Statutes shall keep his Force and Effects in all Points; and that all Aliens that have purchased or shall purchase any Benefice, Dignity, or Thing of Holy Church, and in his

[1] Rot. Parl.  
1 Ric. II. n. 77.

[2] Ib. 2 Ric.  
II. n. 78.

[3] Stat. at  
Large, 3 Ric.  
II. c. 3.

[4] Ib. 7 Ric.  
II. c. 12. &  
Rot. Parl. 7  
Ric. II. 49.



Proper Person take Possession of the same, or use it himself within the Kingdom to his own Benefit, or of any other without special Licence of the King, shall be comprised in the same Statute.

[5] *Ibm.* 12.  
*Ric. II.* c. 15.

But this Reinforcement had not its due Effect; [5] and therefore it was Ordained and Assented, That no Liege-man of the King, of what Estate or Condition that he be, great or little, should pass over the Sea, or send out of the Realm of England, without special Leave of the King himself, to provide or purchase for himself Benefice of Holy Church, with Cure or without Cure: And if any do, and by virtue of such Provision, accept by him or any other, any Benefice of the same Kingdom, that at that time the same Provisor shall be out of the King's Protection, and the same Benefice void; so that it should be lawful to the Patron, as well Spiritual as Temporal, to present to the same an able Cleric at his Pleasure.

[6] *Ibm.* 2d  
Statute made  
13 *Ric. II.* c. 2.  
& *Rot. Parl.*  
n. 32.

Nor could this hinder Provisions, Gifts, and Sale of Benefices of all sorts by the Pope; for in the [6] next Year, the Commons require the King the Statute of Provisors, made in the 25th of Edward I. might be recited in Parlement; and then it was Ordained and Established, That if any make Acceptation of any Benefice of Holy Church, contrary to that Statute, and duly proved, and be beyond Sea, he should abide Exiled and Banished out of the Realm for ever, and his Lands and Tenements, Goods and Chattels forfeit to the King: And if he be within the Kingdom, he should be also Exiled and Banished, and incur the same Forfeiture, and avoid the Realm within six Weeks next after such Acceptation. And if any one receive such Person after that six Weeks, he shall be Banished, and incur the same Forfeiture.

[7] *Ib.* c. 3. &  
*Rot. Parl.* n. 44.

And it was then also [7] Ordained and Established, That if any Man brought or sent within the Kingdom or the King's Power, any Summons, Sentence, or Excommunication against any Person, of what Condition that he be, for the cause of making Motion, Assent, or Execution of the Statute of Provisors (as above) he should be Taken, Arrested, and put in Prison, and forfeit all his Lands and Tenements, Goods and Chattels for ever; and moreover incur the Pain of Life and Member. And if any Prelate make Execution of such Summons, Sentences, or Excommunications, That his Temporalities be taken and abide in the King's hands, till due Redress and Correction be thereof made: And if any Person of less Estate than a Prelate, of what Condition that he be, make such Execution, he should be Taken, Arrested, and put in Prison, and make Fine and Ransom by Discretion of the King's Council.

[8] *Ibm.* 16.  
*Ric. II.* c. 5.  
& *Rot. Parl.*  
n. 20.

Notwithstanding this Care, and these Laws made against the Pope's Practices in this Kingdom, [8] the Commons in the Parlement, in the 16th of this King, shewed unto him, grievously Complaining, That forasmuch as he and all his Liege People ought of Right, and of old time were wont to Sue in the King's Court to recover their Presentments to Churches, Prebends, and other Benefices of Holy Church, to which they have Right to Present, the Comisance of Plea of which Presentment belongeth only to the King's Court, of the old Right of his Crown used in the time of his Progenitors Kings of England; and when Judgment was given in



- in the same Court upon such a Plea and Presentment, the Arch-Bishops, Bishops, and other Spiritual Persons which had Institution of such Benefices within their Jurisdictions, were bound and had made Execution of such Judgments by the King's Commands all the time aforesaid without interruption; for no Lay Person could make such Execution; and also were bound of Right to make Execution of many other of the King's Commands, of which Right the Crown of England hath been peaceably seized until this Day. But now of late divers Processess have been made by the Bishops of Rome, and Censures of Excommunication upon certain Bishops of England, because they had made Execution of such Commands, to the open Disherison of the Crown, and Destruction of the King, his Laws, and all his Kingdom, if Remedy be not provided. [9] They further Complain of the Pope's Translation of Bishops from Bishoprick to Bishoprick, and sending some out of the Kingdom who were fit to be of the King's Council, and able to give him Advice without his Assent and against his Will. [1] So that the Crown of England which hath been so free at all times, That it hath been in Subjection to no \* Earthly Sovereign, but immediately Subject to God and to none other, in all things touching the Regaly, or Royalty of the Crown, should be submitted to the Bishop of Rome, and the Laws and Statutes of this Realm by him defeated and destroyed at his Will, in perpetual Destruction of the King, his Crown, and Regaly, and all his Realm, which God forbid. Wherefore they [2] declare, That they and all the Liege Commons of the Kingdom, would be with the King his Crown and Regaly in the Cases aforesaid, and in all other Cases attempted against him, his Crown and Regaly in all Points to live and die. [3] And further they pray the King, and him require by way of Justice, That he would ask all the Lords in Parliament, as well Spiritual as Temporal severally, and all the States of Parliament, What they thought of the Cases aforesaid? Whereupon the Lords Temporal so asked, answered every one by himself, That the Cases aforesaid were clearly in Derogation of the King's Crown, and of his Regaly, as it was well known, and had been a long time known, and that they would be with the Crown and Regaly in these Cases especially, and in all others which shall be attempted against them in all Points, with all their Power. The Answer of the Lords Spiritual to the King's Demands, much to the purpose of that of the Lords Temporal, will best appear from the Arch-Bishop's Protestation (so called) upon the Parlement-Roll, as 'tis transcribed in the Appendix, n. 118. and there translated.
- After which Answers given, [4] the King, by Assent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, at the Prayer of the Commons, Ordained and Established, That if any Purchase or Pursue, or cause to be Purchased or Pursued in the Court of Rome or elsewhere, any such Translations, Processess, and Sentences of Excommunications, Bulls, Instruments, or any other things which touch the King, against him, his Crown, Regaly, or Kingdom, as is aforesaid; and they that bring them within the Realm, or receive them, or make thereof Notification, or any other Execution within the Kingdom, or without, they, their Notaries, Procurators, Maintainers, Abettors, Faintors, and Counsellors, shall be put out of the King's Protection, their Lands and Tenements, Goods and Chattels forfeited, and also attached by their Bodies, if to be found, and brought before

[9] *Ibm.*[1] *Ibm.*

\* So the Words in the Parlement-Roll, 16 Ric. II. n. 20.

[2] *Ibm.*[3] *Ibm.*[4] *Ibm.*



before the King and his Council, there to answer; or that Process be made against them by *Premunire facias*, in manner as it is Ordained in other Statutes of Provisors. After this, there is nothing further that I have seen about these Controversies, the Pope being quiet all his Reign; yet I shall take notice of some things done by the King relating to these Affairs, which were omitted in their due Place.

[5] Rot. Claus.  
12 Ric. II. M.  
39. Dors.

He caused James Dardain [5] the Pope's Collector in England, to Swear he would be Faithful to him and his Crown; That he would not do, permit, or procure to be done any thing Prejudicial to him, his Kingdom, Laws, and Rights; And that he would not put in Execution any Papal Letters or Mandates, or permit them to be put in Execution, that were Prejudicial to the King, his Regaly or Royalty, Laws or Rights, or to his Kingdom; That he would not receive or publish any of the Pope's Letters, but such as he should deliver to the King's Council as soon as he could; That he would not send any Money or Plate out of the Kingdom, unless he had special Licence from the King or his Council; nor that he would introduce any Novelties by or without Command, without the King's Licence; And that he would keep the King's Laws and Rights without violation. This Oath was taken August 27. in the 12th of Richard II. before his Council, as appears by the Record it self.

[6] Ib. 13 Ric.  
II. part 1. M.  
17. De decimis  
Pape non sol-  
vendis.

Then he wrote to [6] William Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, That he could not but know that he was bound by Oath, for the Conservation of the Rights and Customs of the Kingdom, and for the Indemnity and Right Government of his People; and also that no Impositions upon the People could be made or levied any ways whatsoever, without Common Counsel or Consent of the Kingdom. And further, That he had been Petitioned by the Commons lately assembled in Parlement at Westminster, to provide Remedy against the Impositions upon the Clergy, at that time published and exacted by the People: And also that any one that should bring in any Pope's Bulls to levy such Impositions or create such Novelties not formerly used, which might bring Damage to him or his Kingdom, nor should publish such Impositions and Novelties, or collect or levy them, should be adjudged and suffer as a Traitor to him and his Kingdom. And it was granted by him, with Assent of the same Parlement, nothing should be levied or paid that might tend to the Burthen and Damage of the Kingdom or Liege People. This notwithstanding, he was informed of a new Imposition upon the Clergy by the Pope, which by his Authority, or the Authority of his Suffragans by his Command, was to be levied without Common Advice and Assent of the Kingdom, which he might not suffer to be done, saving his said Oath: And then Commanded, by the Faith in which he was bound to him, and under forfeiture of all he could forfeit, to revoke all that had been done for the levying and exacting of this Imposition, and to return what had been paid and levied, enjoining him not to pay or contribute any thing to this Subsidy or Imposition, under the foresaid Faith and Forfeiture. Witness the King at Westminster, the 10th Day of October.

The



The like *Writ* and of the same Date [7] was directed to the Arch-Bishop of York, and all the other Bishops of England, as also to the Guardians of the Spiritualities of the vacant Bishoprics; and several Collectors of this Imposition.

[7] *Ibm.*

The like *Writ* was likewise directed to James Dardain, then the Pope's Nuncio; Rex [8] *Jacobo Dardain Nuncio Domini summi Pontificis in Anglia, &c. to desist in exacting of this Imposition, sub forisfactura Vitæ & Membrorum*, under the Forfeiture of Life and Members, and all things he could forfeit. Witness as before.

[8] *Ibm.*

This Imposition was the Payment of a Tenth by the Clergy to the Pope, by him laid upon them, as appears by the Todding or Title of the Record, *De Decimis Papæ non solvendis*, Concerning Tenths not to be paid to the Pope.

B ' In the 14th of his Reign, [9] he caused Proclamation to be  
C ' made through England, to call from Rome, under forfeiture of  
' Life and Member and all they could forfeit, many Persons  
' that went thither to procure the Nulling and Vacating of di-  
' vers Statutes made by him, and his Progenitors, with Consent  
' of Parlemtent, for the Common Profit of the Kingdom; and to  
' perpetrate many other Evils there, to the Contempt and Pre-  
' judice of his Person, to the great Damage of the Kingdom and  
' People, and to the manifest Cassation of the Laws and Customs  
' thereof; That they should be in England by the Feast of St. Mar-  
' tin in Winter (or 11th of November) at furthest: And that  
' no Man, of what State or Condition soever he was, should  
' bring any Pope's Bulls, Processes, or Instruments for the Adnul-  
' ling or Vacating of any the Statutes, Laws, or Customs aforesaid,  
' or obey them, or put them in Execution under the Forfeiture  
' aforesaid. Witness the King at Westminster the 3d Day of May.  
By the King Himself and Council.

[9] *Ibm.* 14.  
*Ric. II. M. 13.*  
*Dors. De Pro-*  
*clamatione.*

D This Proclamation [1] was directed to the Sheriff of Kent, and all other Sheriffs of England; to his Uncle John Duke of Lancaster, or his Chancellor in that Dukedom; and to John Stanley his Justiciary in Ireland, or his Lieutenant; and also his Justiciary of Chester, or his Lieutenant.

[1] *Ibm.*

E The Statutes the Persons recalled by this Proclamation, went to Rome to have made void by the Pope, were the Statute of Provisors last made; the Statute of *Quare impedit*, and *Præmunire facias*, and others like to them, which the Pope said were against and injurious to Ecclesiastic Liberty. For the particular Account whereof, see Walsingham's History, Fol. 344. n. 40, 55. and Fol. 345. n. 10. A. D. 1391. 14 Ric. II.

F In the 20th Year [2] of his Reign, on the 19th of September, he caused Lewis Bishop of Aultura in Apulia, the Pope's Collector, to take the same Oath before himself in Chancery which James Dardain had taken in the 12th of his Reign before his Council.

[2] *Ibm.* 20  
*Ric. II. M. 3.*  
*Dors.*



## John Wyclif and his Followers.

[1] *Spelm.*  
Council. Vol.  
2. f. 267.

[4] *Ibm. f.*  
629, 630, 631.

THE Opinions of John Wycliff prevailed very much in the University of Oxford, and not a few Learned Men maintained them in the Schools, and Preached them up there, and in many other Places and Countries. In the 4th of this King, 1381. William de Berton, [3] Chancellor of the University, calling together many Doctors of Divinity, and many Professors of, and Skilful in the Canon-Law, they Judged upon Examination of those Opinions, That they were Erroneous, Repugnant to the Determinations of the Church, and Contradictory to Catholick Verity; and therefore forbade every one, of what Degree or Condition soever, under the pain of the greater Excommunication, publickly to Hold, Teach, or Defend the same in the University.

Upon the further spreading of these Opinions, amongst the Great Men and Populacy, [4] William Courteney Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and Seven other Bishops of this Province, Fourteen Doctors of Canon and Civil Law, Seventeen Masters of Divinity, and Six Baccalaurs of Divinity, on the 17th of May, 1382. met in a Chamber of the Frier-Preachers in London, where having considered and deliberated upon the Conclusions and Opinions then divulged, unanimously, on the 27th of the same Month, Declared and Decreed some of them Heretical, others Erroneous, and contrary to the Determinations of the Church.

## The Heretical Opinions were these :

That the material Substance of Bread and Wine, remained after Consecration in the Sacrament of the Altar.

Also, That the Accidents do not remain with a Subject after Consecration in the same Sacrament.

Also, That Christ is not in the Sacrament of the Altar, Identically, Truly, and Really in his proper Corporeal Presence.

Also, That if a Bishop or Priest be guilty of mortal Sin, he can neither Ordain, Consecrate, or Baptize.

Also, That if a Man were duly Contrite, all external Confession was superfluous and unprofitable.

Also, Pertinaciously to assert that Christ Ordained Mass, had no Gospel-Foundation.

Also, That God ought to Obey the Devil.

Also, If the Pope be an ill Man, and by consequence a Member of the Devil, he hath no Power over the Faithful of Christ given him by any one, unless perhaps by Cæsar.

Also, That after Urban VI. no Man is to be received as Pope, but we ought to live as the Græcians under our own Laws.

Also, To assert, That 'tis against Holy Scripture, that Ecclesiastics should have Temporal Possessions.



The Pernicious Erroneous Conclusions were these :

*That no Prelate ought to Excommunicate any one, unless he first knew he was Excommunicated by God.*

*Also, That any one who did so Excommunicate, became thereby an Heretic, and Excommunicate himself.*

A *Also, A Prelate Excommunicating a Cleric, who Appealed to the King and his Council, is in very Deed a Traitor to God, the King, and Kingdom.*

*Also, They that leave off Preaching or Hearing the Word of God, or Gospel Preached, for the Excommunication of Men, are Excommunicated, and shall be had for Traitors to God in the Day of Judgment.*

B *Also, To assert that 'tis lawful for any one, tho' a Deacon or Priest, to Preach the Word of God, without Papal or Episcopal Authority, or other which sufficiently appeareth.*

*Also, To assert that none is a Civil Lord, none is a Bishop, none is a Prelate, while he is guilty of Mortal Sin.*

*Also, That Temporal Lords may at their Pleasure take away Temporal Goods from Ecclesiastics, being habitual Delinquents, or that the Populacy, when they will, may correct Delinquent Lords.*

C *Also, That Tythes are pure Alms, and that the Parishioners for the Sins of their Curates may detain them, and as they please give them to others.*

*Also, That particular Prayers applied to one Person, by Prelates or Religious, are no more Benefit to that Person, than general Prayers are to him, ceteris paribus, all other things being equal.*

*Also, In that very thing, that any one takes upon him whatsoever private Religion, he is made more unfit and unable to observe God's Commandments.*

D *Also, Saints instituting whatever private Religions, as well those with Possessions, as Mendicants, they have sinned in so instituting.*

*Also, That Religious, living in Private Religions, are not Christians.*

*Also, That Friars are bound to get their Food by the Labour of their Hands, and not by Begging.*

E *Also, He that gives Alms to Friars, or to a Frier-Preacher, is Excommunicate, and he that receives it.*

F On the 20th Day of June, [5] in the same Year and Place, Nicholas Hereford, Philip Rappington a Canon Regular, both Professors of Divinity, and John Aylston Master in Arts, and Scholar in Divinity, the Chief Followers of Wyclif, appeared Personally before the Archbishop, the Doctors, and others. When Nicholas and Philip were commanded to answer, and to speak fully and plainly what they thought of the Conclusions above, they gave in their Answers in Writing, protesting as otherwise they had done, That they intended to be Humble and Faithful Sons of the Church, and of Holy Scripture, and obey in all things the Determinations of the Church; and if they should commit any Error against this Intention in Word or Deed, they submitted themselves to the Correction of the Archbishop, and all

[5] Ib. m. f.  
631, 632.



others to whom it belonged to Correct them. This Protestation premised, they Answer, That the Substance of material Bread and Wine remains in the Sacrament of the Altar after Consecration; *Ad sensum contrarium isti Decretali, Firmiter Credimus, Concedimus, quod est Hæresis.* To the contrary Sense of the Decree, we firmly believe (that is a Decree that began with those Words, *Firmiter Credimus*) *We grant 'tis Hæresie.*

To the Second Conclusion, That the Accidents do not remain without a Subject after Consecration in the same Sacrament; *Ad sensum contrarium isti Decretali, Cum Marthe a Decree in the Decretals that began with those Words) Concedimus quod est Hæresis.* To the contrary Sense of that Decretal, *Cum Marthe, We grant it Hæresie.*

To the Third Conclusion, *Quod Christus non sit in eodem Sacramento, identicè, verè, & realiter in propria præsentia corporali*; That Christ was not in the same Sacrament Identically, Truly, and Really, in his proper corporal Presence: They answer, (*Licet ista conclusio sit ad verba incompressa & intelligibilia, tamen ad sensum contrarium illi Decretali in Clementinis, Si Dominum* (a Decretal that began with those two Words) *Concedimus quod est Hæresis.* Although that Conclusion consists of uncouth and unintelligible Words, yet to the contrary Sense of that Decretal in the *Clementines* (*Si Dominum*) *We grant it Hæresie.* And briefly, as to the whole Matter of the Sacrament of the Altar, and every other, we profess we will, as well in Words as Sense, Agree with the Holy Scripture, the Determinations of the Church, and Opinions of the Holy Doctors.

The Fourth and Fifth Conclusions they plainly granted to be Hæresies.

To the Sixth, That God ought to Obey the Devil, they answer, *Ad hunc sensum, quod Deus in propria Persona vel Essentia debet obedire Diabolo obedientia necessitatis, concedimus est Hæresis*; According to this Sense, that God in his proper Person or Essence ought to Obey the Devil with an Obedience of Necessity, *We grant it is Hæresie.* And thus *Evasively* and *Sophistically* they Answered to most of the Conclusions or Opinions, both *Heretical*, as they are termed, and *Erroneous*.

Their Answers pleased not the Archbishop and his Assessors; they desired them more express. They said they then knew not how better to Answer to the Three First, because they answered in Writing, and would Answer no otherwise.

To the Sense and Text of the Sixth Conclusion, because they had not answered fully and expressly, they were asked, Whether God ought any Mode or Manner of Obedience to the Devil; *Interrogati an Deus debeat aliquem modum Obedientia Diaboli, respondetur quod sic.* They answered, Yea; to wit, the Obedience of Charity; *scilicet Obedientiam Charitatis*; because he loved him, and punished him as he ought; *Quia diligit eum & punit eum ut debet.* And to prove that God ought thus to Obey the Devil, they offered themselves against any Man, under pain of being burnt; *Obtulerunt se sub pœna incendii ad quemcunque.*

After



After these first and second Answers, the Archbishop asked all the Doctors, what they thought of them, who said one by one, That the answers to the first, second, third, and sixth Conclusions, were insufficient, heretical, and deceitful, and to the others erroneous and perverse.

A Whereupon the Archbishop again admonished them to answer fully, plainly, and expressly, without subtle, sophistical, or logick words, and gave them eight days time to do it, but they refused to do it; and there is nothing more of them in this place. Ashton answered more impertinently, and nothing to the purpose, as if he understood not what was demanded of, or said to him.

B The first we hear of them further is from the King's [6] Writ, dated July 13. in the Sixth of his Reign, which was July next following, in which and in several others about this Matter, the King takes upon him the Title of Defender of the Faith, before the Pope's pretended gift of that Title to Henry the Eighth. This Writ was directed to the Chancellor and Proctors of the University of Oxford, to inquire after all such of whatever Profession, or Degree, or others within the Limits and Jurisdiction of the University, that favoured or believed any Heresies or Errors, and especially such as had been condemned by William Archbishop of Canterbury, and his Assessors, or that believed, held, or defended any of those Heresies, Errors, or the like, or that received John Wyclif, Nicholas Herford, Philip Reppon, or John Ashton, or any one noted of the same Heresies or Errors, into their Houses, or conversed with them, or defended, and shew them favour. And if they found any such, to banish and expell them the University and Town of Oxford, within seven days after they knew any of them, until before the Archbishop of Canterbury for the time being, by manifest Purgation, or denial of their Opinions, they shew their Innocency; and they were further to search the Colleges and Halls for Books Composed by John Wyclif, and Nicholas Herford, and to do all this upon the Faith and Eigeance they were bound to the King, and under forfeiture of the Liberties and Privileges of the University, and what else they might or could forfeit; With Command to the Sheriff of the County, and Major of Oxford, and all other Sheriffs, Majors, Bayliffs, Officers, and other his Subjects, to obey and assist them in the Execution of the Premises.

E Mr. Wood in his History and Antiquities of Oxford, [7] tells us, That John Ashton made his Recantation and Confession before the Archbishop of Canterbury on the 19th of July following in Latin and English, whereupon, by his Letters, he was restored to his University Exercises and Reading in the Schools, which he performed without the least touch of Heresie.

F Henry de Knighton Reports [8] the Recantations and Confessions of Nicholas Herford, and others, and of John Ashton, in the English of those times.

' In the Name of God, Amen. Wytes alle cristen men that  
' we Nichol of Herford, and my fellow Pristus, unworthy in  
' presence of our gostely fader the Erchebishop of Canturbery the  
' nyingtende day July, zeer of grace a thousand thre undred

[6] Append.  
n. 119.[7] Lib. 1.  
fol. 192. col.  
2.[8] Col. 265.  
256.



' fourscore and two, in the house of the Freres prechoures at  
 ' London, when we weren required to sayne what we felyde of  
 ' diverse conclusions we maden this Protestation and zit we  
 ' maken, That our entent was and is to be trewe fones and meke  
 ' of holy Chirche and zif happy as God schilde that we erren  
 ' agaynes this entent in wordus or in workus, we submytte us  
 ' mekelyche to the correction of oure forsayde fadur the Erche-  
 ' bishop of *Canturbery*, and of alle other to whom it longyth to  
 ' redresse them that erren and asturwarde to wam were requirede  
 ' to say oure beleve of the Sacrament of the autere as to zoure  
 ' understondyng onth the peple we knowleche fyrst that the  
 ' Prist takus in his hondes thorowe the vertue of the Sacramen-  
 ' tal wordus is made and turnyde veralyche into Christus body,  
 ' tho same that was taken and ben of the mayden *Marye*, and  
 ' that sufferide deth on the crosse for man kynde, and that laye  
 ' in the sepulcre, and that ros fro deth to lyve the thridde day,  
 ' and stey up into hevene and syttes in joye in the blisse of the  
 ' fadur, and that schal come at the day of dome, to dome the  
 ' quikke and the dede, and the wyne is also turnyde verayliche  
 ' into his blode, so that leves astur the consecration of brede and  
 ' wyne none other substance than that ilk that is Christus flest  
 ' and blode. And furthermore we beleve that the hole body of  
 ' Christ is hole in the Sacrament, and hole in everyche partye  
 ' of the Sacrament of the autere. And also we beleve that  
 ' Christ is verayliche in the same Sacrament in his bodely pre-  
 ' sence to savacion to alle hem that worthelyche receyven that  
 ' same Sacrament, to hem that unworthelyche receyven to her  
 ' dampnation, and this oure beleve, and in this we bene thorou  
 ' grace of God, we will dye in remission of our synnes. And  
 ' therefore we pry alle cristen men to whom this confession schal  
 ' come to that ze bere us witnes of this beleve at the day of dome  
 ' before the heyzest judge Jhesu Christ, and pray for us for  
 ' charite.

' In the Name of God, *Amen*. Y *John Aston*, Prist, unwor-  
 ' thely required of my Lord the Erchebishop of *Canturbery* the  
 ' nyntene day of *June* in the zer of grace, *&c. ut supra*, in the  
 ' hous, *&c.* to say what I felyde in the matyr of the Sacrament  
 ' of the autere. Y have knowlechyde & zit I do that the selfe  
 ' bred that the Prist holdes in his hondes is made thorou the vertue  
 ' of the Sacramental wordus verely the self cristus body that  
 ' was borne of the maden *Marye*, and takun and suffrede deth on  
 ' the Crosse, and thre days lay in the sepulcre, and the thridde  
 ' day ros from deth to the lyve, and steyed up into Heven, and  
 ' syttes on the ryght hond of God, and in the day of dome  
 ' schal come to dome the quikke and the ded, and over this I  
 ' beleve generally alle that holy writte determynet in worde and  
 ' in understonding, or what ever holy Kirke of God determynes  
 ' of all this, when I was required specially to say what I felde  
 ' of this proposition: Material brede leves in the Sacrament  
 ' astur the Consecration. I make this protestation, that I never  
 ' thouzt ne tauzt ne prechide that proposition. For I wote wele  
 ' that the mater and speculation thereof passës in heyzte myn un-  
 ' derstondyng, and therefore als mykele tellys openly for to leve  
 ' in



in this matyr I beleve and of this matyr or of any other touching the ryght beleve of holy Kirke, that is nouzt expresse in holy writte, I beleve as our modur holy Kirke beleves, and in this belyve I will dye, and of this thing I beseeke all men and alle wymmen to whom this confession come to, to bere me witnesse before the highest juge at the day of dome.

A As *Wyclif's Followers* increased very much, their *Opinions multiplied*, and they Published and Preached *different Opinions* one from another. [9] The same Author *notes* above *Sixty* he heard preached at *Leicester*, different from, or over and above what were first published by *Doctor Wyclif*.

[9] Col. 2657.  
n. 60. 2658,  
2659, 2660,  
2661.

B And further this Author Reports, [1] That the number of the *Lollards* mightily increasing, they also taught many new and very strange Opinions, *Twenty five* he notes, whereof several not taught before, amongst which, with some others, the *Sixteenth* is that of the *Quakers* about Swearing. *Quod non licet aliquo modo jurare*; it is not lawful to swear in any manner, and when they witnessed any thing, these were their Words, *I am sykyr it is soth*, I am sure it is Truth; Or thus, *Without doubt it is so*.

[1] Col. 2706.  
n. 60. 2707,  
2708.

C All I find further of the *Wyclifists* or *Lollards* in this Reign, are chiefly several *Writs* or *Commissions* upon the *Arch-Bishop's* *Petition* granted to him, and his *Suffragans* and others, to imprison the *Preachers* and *Dispersers* of *Errors* and *Heresies*, *Pat. 9. Ric. II. M. 12.* Also a *Commission* to certain Persons to search for, and seize *Books* containing *Heresie*, &c. and bring them before the *Council*, and make *Proclamation*, That none should buy or sell them under Pain of Imprisonment, and to arrest and imprison all such as complied not with the *Proclamation*, *Pat. 11. Ric. II. M. 20.* There were many in the City of *London* about this time, that frequented *Conventicles* in *Private Places*, where the *Opinions* and *Conclusions* of *Wyclif* and his Followers were Debated and Taught. The King sends his *Writ* to the *Major* and *Sheriffs* of *London*, to make *Proclamation* from time to time within the *City* and *Liberties*, That no one of whatever State, Degree, Sex, or Condition they might be, should presume to make any such *Conventicles* or *Meetings* under pain of forfeiting, whatever they could forfeit, and imprisonment of their Bodies, during the King's Pleasure. *Claus. 15. Ric. II. M. 18. Dors.* in all these *Writs* and *Commissions*, King Richard took upon himself the Title of *Defender of the Faith*, in these Words, as an Introduction to what he would do against *Errors* and *Heresies*, (*Nos zelo fidei Catholice, cujus sumus & esse volumus Defensores*) We for the Zeal of the *Catholick Faith*, of which we are, and will be *Defenders*. I shall mention one Record more of a *Memorandum* of an unusual Oath taken by some of this sort of Men, when they relinquished what they had defended and taught, and returned to the *Practices*, *Opinions*, and *Usages* of the then Church.

F Be it remembered, [2] that on the First day of September, in year of the Reign of King Richard the Second after the Conquest the 19th, *William Dynett*, *Nicholas Caplour*, *Nicholas Poucver*, and *William Steyner* of *Martingham*, personally appearing in *Chancery*, every one by himself took an Oath in the Form following:

[2] Clause  
19 Ric. II.  
M. 18.



' I **W**illiam Dpnett befor yhowe Worschipfull Fader and  
 ' Lord Archbithp of **E**bozke, and yhour Clergie, with my free  
 ' will and full avysede swere to God and to all his Seyntes upon  
 ' this holy Gospelle, that fro this day forthward I shall worship  
 ' ymages with preying and offeryng unto hem in the worshipp of  
 ' Seintes that they be made after. And also I shall never more  
 ' despyse pygremage ne states of Holy Chyrche in no degree.  
 ' And also I shall be buxum to the Lawes of Holy Chyrche, and  
 ' to yhowe as myn Arch-Bishop, and to myn other Ordinaries  
 ' and Curates, and keep tho Lawes upon my power and meyn-  
 ' teyn hem. And also I shall never more meyn-teyn ne techen  
 ' ne defenden errours, conclusions, ne techynges of the *Lollards*  
 ' ne swych conclusions and techynges that men clepeth *Lollards*  
 ' Doctryne. Ne I shall her books ne swych books, ne hem or  
 ' ony suspect or diffamede of *Lollardery* resceyve ne company with-  
 ' all wittingly or defend in tho Matters: And if I know ony swych,  
 ' I shall withall the hast that I may do yhowe, or els your ner officers  
 ' to wyttyn and of her bokes. And also I shall excyte and stirr  
 ' all tho to good Doctryne, that I have hindered with myn  
 ' Doctryne upp my power. And also I shall stonde to your de-  
 ' claration wych es heresie or errour and do thereafter. And  
 ' also what penance yhe woll for that I have done for meyn-teyn-  
 ' ing of this false Doctryne, - - - I shall fulfill it, and I sub-  
 ' mit me thereto up my power. And also I shall make no other  
 ' Glose of this myn oth, but as the words stonde. And if it be  
 ' so that I come agayn, or do agayn this oth, or any party  
 ' thereof, I yhelde me here cowpable as an Heretyk, and to for-  
 ' feit all my goods to the Kings will without any other procefs of  
 ' Law, and thereto I require the Notary to make of all this,  
 ' which is my will, an instrument agayns me.

*Et ex habundanti idem Willelmus Dpnett eodem die vo-  
 luit & recognovit quod omnia bona & catalla sua mobilia  
 nobis sunt forisfacta in casu quo ipse juramentum predictum,  
 seu aliqua in eodem juramento contenta de cetero contravenerat  
 ullo modo.*

And moreover the same **W**illiam Dpnett, the same day,  
 granted and acknowledged, that all his Goods and  
 Chattels were forfeit to us, in case he any ways con-  
 traven'd the said Oath, or did any thing against what  
 was contemned in it.



## Taxes in this KING's Reign.

**A** **T**HE Lords and Commons perceiving the great danger of Destruction the Nation was in, by reason of the great Wars, as well by Sea as Land, for the defence of the Kingdom, and resistance of its great Enemies, they granted to the King Two Fifteenth without Cities and Burghs, and Two Tenths within Cities and Burghs, for Two years: Praying the King, that as well the Money of the Tenths and Fifteenths, as the Tenths granted by the Clergy, and Money for the Subsidy of Wooll, might be in the keeping of Especial Treasurers, by the King's appointment, which were William Walworth, and John Philypott, Merchants of London, who were to give an Account of their Receipts and Disbursements in manner as the King and his great Council should order.

Rot. Parl.  
1 Ric II. n. 27.

**B** In this Parlement the Commons, for the arduity of their Charge and feebleness of their Powers and Knowledge, prayed the King to have John King of Castile, and Leon Duke of Lancaster, and Four Bishops, Four Earls, and Four Barons, there named by them, for their Ayd, and to confer with them about the hasty and good exploit, or dispatch of the things wherewith they were charged.

Ib. n. 11, 12.

**C** In the Second of Richard the Second in Quindena pasche, part 2. n. 13. upon Condition the Marc a Sack added upon Wooll, and Sixpence the Pound upon Merchandise given in the last Parlement at Glocester, might be remitted, the Lords and Commons granted the Subsidy of Wooll, as it was before that Parlement, for One year, from Michaelmas next coming, and likewise a Sum upon divers Persons of the Kingdom, for which see the Appendix, n. 102.

Rot. Parl.  
2 Ric II. n. 13.  
in quindena  
Pasche.

**D** The Prelates, Lords, and Commons, perceiving the great Perils with which the Land was environ'd, and the great and outrageous Expences the King was to be at for the salvation and defence thereof, granted to him the Subsidy of Wooll, Leather, and Woollfells for Three years, of Wooll 43 s. 4 d. the Sack, of Woollfells as much for every Two hundred and forty, (accounting Sixscore to the Hundred) and for Leather 4 l. 6 s. 6 d. every Last which were exported by Denizens and Strangers; and as an additional Grant they gave more 13 s. 4 d. for every Sack of Wooll, as much for every Two hundred and forty Woollfells, and for every Last of Leather 26 s. 8 d.

Rot. Parl.  
2 Ric II. Die  
Mercurii prox.  
post Festum  
Sancti Luce,  
p. 2. n. 29.

**E** Also they gave Sixpence in the Pound for every Pound value of Merchandise, as well of Denizens as Strangers, imported or exported, for One year.

Ibm. n. 30.

**F** The Lords and Commons upon the same Reasons and Suggestions, as in the last Parlement, granted the King One Fifteenth and half without Cities and Burghs, and One Tenth and half within.

Rot. Parl.  
3 Ric II.  
n. 16 Die  
lune prox. post  
festum sancti  
Hilar.  
Ibm. n. 17.

And seeing the King could not Maintain the Charge of the War without them, they granted the Subsidy of Wooll, Woollfells, and Leather for One year, after the Term the last granted should expire.



Rot. Parl.  
4 Ric. II. Die  
Luce prox. post  
Festum omnium  
Sanctorum.

Rot. Parl.  
4 Ric. II. n.  
40. and 67.

The Lords and Commons gave Three Groats of every Lay Person of the Nation, Males, and Females, except very Beggars, and so as the richer or more sufficient in every Town, should help the poorer, so as no one paid above Forty Groats.

In the Fifth year the Parlement began on the Morrow of All-Souls, or 3d of November, in which the Lords and Commons granted the Subsidy of Wooll, Woollfells, and Leather, as it was last granted, until Candlemas next: On the 25th of February, it being then expired, they grant the same Subsidy as it was last received, to Midsummer next following, and from that time for Four years.

Rot. Parl.  
6 Ric. II.  
n. 15.

Ib. 7 Ric. II.  
n. 13.

Ib. 7 Ric. II.  
n. 10.

In the Sixth of Richard the Second, in the First Parlement that year, the Lords and Commons perceiving the danger the Nation was in, granted a Fifteenth, and a Tenth.

In the Seventh of Richard the Second, in the First Parlement that year, the Commons with the assent of the Lords, gave Two half Fifteenths.

In the Second Parlement this year holden at Salisbury, the Lords and Commons considering the great Charge the King had been, and was to be at for Maintaining his Estate, his many Wars, and Defence of the Kingdom, granted Half a Fifteenth, and Half a Tenth.

Ibm. n. 10.

Ibm. n. 10.

In the Eighth of Richard the Second, the Lords and Commons grant Two Fifteenths upon Conditions there mentoned.

In the Ninth of Richard the Second, the Lords, Great Men, and Communities of Counties, Cities, and Burghs, granted to the King for the Voyage of the Duke of Lancaster into Spain, keeping of the Sea, and Marches of Scotland, a Tenth and Fifteenth, and Half a Tenth and Fifteenth.

Ibm. n. 11.

And then the Prelates and Noblemen, and Great Men, (Proceres & Magnates) and the Communities afore said, granted to the King the Subsidy of Wooll, Woollfells, above the ancient Custom of 6 s. 8 d. a Sack, 42 s. 4 d. of Denizens, and 46 s. 8 d. of Strangers, and of Leather and Pelts or Woollfells, (pellibus lanutis) in like manner according to the Rate.

Ibm. n. 18.

In the Tenth of Richard the Second, the Lords and Commons grant to the King Half a Tenth, and Half a Fifteenth, also Three Shillings per Tun upon Wine, and Twelve pence in the Pound upon other Merchandise, coming in and going out, upon Condition the the Commission made to Fourteen continual Counsellors might no ways be repealed, and that they might execute the Power granted by that Commission without disturbance.

Ibm. n. 11.

In the Eleventh of Richard the Second, the Parlement began on the Morrow of the Purification, or 3d of February: The Lords and Commons then granted Half a Tenth, and Half a Fifteenth.

Ibm. n. 12.

The Lords and Commons also grant until Whitsunday next coming 3 s. per Tun upon Wine, and a Shilling in the Pound upon Goods; also they grant the Subsidy of Wooll, Leather, and Woollfells, for the same time, as it was last paid.

Rot. n. 16.

The Lords and Commons then likewise grant to the King 43 s. 4 d. the Sack upon Wooll, above the ancient Custom upon Denizens, and 46 s. 8 d. upon Strangers, upon every Two hundred and forty Woollfells, or Woollskins, the same Duty, upon both Denizens and Strangers, as upon Wooll.

Upon



Upon every *Last* of *Leather* Six Marks, and 6 s. 8 d. upon *Denizens*, besides the ancient Custom, and upon *Strangers* Seven Marks besides the ancient Custom, from *Whitsunday* (which was this year the 23d of May) until *Midsummer*, and from thence to *Midsummer* next following.

The Lords and Commons grant a Subsidy of *Wooll Transported*, &c. 33 s. 4 d. the *Sack* upon *Denizens*, and 36 s. 8 d. the *Sack* upon *Aliens*.

In the Fourteenth of *Richard* the Second, the *Lords* and *Commons* grant the *King* for Three years a Subsidy of *Wooll*, &c. Three *Shillings* upon every *Tun* of *Wine*, and *Twelve Pence* upon every *Pound* of *Merchandise*, as in the *Eleventh* year, so as the same may be only employed for the defence of the *Realm*, &c.

In the Fifteenth of *Richard* the Second, the *Lords* and *Commons* grant Half a *Fifteenth*, and Half a *Tenth*, if the *King* went into *France* in his own Person to *Treat* of *Peace* or *Truce*; and besides a whole *Fifteenth* and *Tenth* if there should be *War*.

In the Sixteenth of *Richard* the Second, the *Commons* by assent of the *Lords* *Spiritual* and *Temporal*, grant to the *King* for Three years the Subsidy upon *Wooll*, &c. Three *Shillings* the *Tun* upon *Wine*, *Twelve Pence* per *Pound* upon *Merchandise*.

In the Seventeenth of *Richard* the Second the *Lords* and *Commons* grant to the *King* for Three years, Six *Pence* upon every *Pound* of *Merchandise*, and One *Shilling* and six pence upon every *Tun* of *Wine*.

In the Eighteenth of *Richard* the Second, the *Lords* and *Commons* grant to the *King* a *Tenth*, and a *Fifteenth* for the *Conquest* of *Ireland*.

The *Commons* by assent of the *Lords* *Spiritual* and *Temporal*, granted to the *King* *Twelve Pence* in the *Pound* of all manner of *Merchandises*, and Three *Shillings* of every *Tun* of *Wine* for Three years.

The *Commons* on the last day of the *Parlement* at *Shrewsbury*, which was *Thursday* the last of *January*, by assent of the *Lords* *Spiritual* and *Temporal*, granted to the *King* the Subsidy of *Wooll*, *Leather*, and *Woollfells* during his *Life*, and One *Tenth*, and One *Fifteenth*, and Half a *Tenth*, and Half a *Fifteenth*.

### His Wives.

THE First was [1] *Ann*, Daughter to *Charles* the Fourth *Emperor* of *Germany*, who having been his Wife [2] Twelve years, died without Issue.

His Second was [3] *Isabell*, Eldest Daughter to *Charles* the Sixth *King* of *France*, to whom he was Married the 28th of *October* 1396, being then not above Seven or Eight years of Age, and therefore never Bedded her, having been Dethroned and Murdered about Three years after.

Rot. Parl.  
13 Ric. II.  
n. 20.

Ib. n. 14 Ric. II.  
n. 16, 17.

Ib. 15 Ric. II.  
n. 10.

Ib. 16 Ric. II.  
n. 11.

Ib. 17 Ric. II.  
n. 12.

Ib. 18 Ric. II.  
n. 6.

Ib. 20 Ric. II.  
n. 18.

Ib. 21 Ric. II.  
n. 75.

[1] *Walsingh.*  
f. 281 n. 40.

[2] *Ib.* f. 350.  
n. 40.

[3] *Ib.* f. 353.  
n. 30.







# The INDEX.

A.

		Fol.
A	<b>A</b> Bbeys in England to pay no Taxes to foreign Houses	87, D
	Adam Bishop of Hereford accused of High Treason	147, DE
	His Excuse for not answering	Ib.
	His Lands adjudged to be seized	148, A
	His Endeavours to incense the Nobility against the Spencers, and the Queen against the King	Ib. BC
	His motion in Parlement whether King Edward II. or the Prince his Son should Reign over them	161, D
B	He, with the Bishops of Winchester and Lincoln, the Contrivers of King Edward's Deposition	162, E
	Adolphus the Emperor deposed, and the manner of it	63, D
	The occasion of his being deposed	Ib. F
	Alexander III. King of Scotland dies without Issue Male	14, F
	His Grand-daughter Margaret the Maid of Norway his Heir,	Ib.
C	Anglesey Isle, when taken	7, F
	Appellant Lords in Richard II.'s Reign, with their Protestation,	371, C
	The Lords and Commons Oath to stand by them,	Ib. F
	Their Articles against several Lords and others,	372, &c.
	Their Impeachments exhibited	383, E
	They desire that what was done in Parlement,	Iith of
	King Richard, might be revoked,	401, F
	Appealed Lords and others refuse to appear,	384, E
	Judgment pronounced against them	385, A
D	None of them to be restored,	390 C
	Ard betrayed to the French	333, D
	Articles of Peace between King Edward III. and John King of France,	263, &c.
	Artois (Robert de) his Advice to Edward III. to claim the Crown of France	198, E
	Arundel (Richard Earl) restored by Edward III. to the Blood, Lands, and Goods of his Father	191, C
E	He is made Admiral, and his great Success at Sea	367, DE
	One of the Appellant Lords in Richard II.'s Reign	371, C
	Is appealed of High Treason,	405, A
	His Trial and Judgment	407
	(Thomas) Bishop of Ely made Chancellor	366, E
	Is Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and Impeached of High Treason,	397, B
	Is adjudged a Traitor, and to be Banished	398, C
F	His Preachment upon the Deposition of King II.	433, A
	His Speech at the opening the first Parlement of Henry IV.	436, A
	Ayston (John) a Wyclivite in Oxford	459, F
	Proceedings against him	460, 461
	His Confession and Recantation	462



# The I N D E X.

B.		Fol.
Baliol (John) and Brus (Robert) their Titles to the Crown of Scotland, how to be Examined; the main Question and their Pedigrees	25, A C E	
John his Title adjudged good by Edward I. King of England,	28, D	A
Possession granted him by King Edward's Writ	29, A	
He swears Fealty to King Edward	1b. C	
The Form of his Homage, and by whom Witnessed	1b. E	
He appears at London on the Earl of Fife's Complaint	31 E	
His Plea granted by King Edward	32, A	
He excuses his Appearance in the English Parlement	1b. F	
His Demands of Satisfaction for Injuries	33, A	B
He Confederates with the King of France	1b. C	B
He returns his Homage, and defies King Edward	34, D	
He is beaten, and submits: He renounces all Confederacies against King Edward	36, C E	
He is committed to the Tower at London	38, A	
He is again released, and on what Conditions	66, A	
His Character of the Scots	1b. C	
Edward his Son claims and recovers the Crown of Scotland	194, E F	C
He does Homage and Fealty to Edward III. King of England	195, A B	
His Grant to King Edward for his Assistance	196, A B	
His ill Usage by his Subjects, and Grant of the Crown of Scotland to King Edward	256, B C	
Ball (John) his Speech to the Rabble	349, E	
Bannock-Bourn Battel	120, B	
Barons. See Nobility.		D
Bateman (William) Bishop of Norwich his Death	253, B	
Beauchamp (Sir John) made Governour of Calais	246, F	
Belnap (Robert) and other Judges Opinions concerning the Statute and Commission	378, C	
The Witnesses to their Opinions	379, F	
They are accused of High Treason	380, A	
His Excuse	386, C	
Sentence against him	387, A	E
His Life spared upon Mediation of the Bishops	388, A	
He is Banished into Ireland	389, C	
He is again recalled	396, F	
Bereford (Simon) adjudged a Confederate of Mortimer's, and executed	190, B C	
Berkley (Tho.) acquitted of the Murther of Edward II.	191, B	
Bertrand de Guesclin made Constable of France	290, C	
Berwick surprized by the Scots, and retaken by the English	256 A. 339 A	F
Bigod (Roger) Earl of Norfolk and Marshal grants his Lands, &c. to the King and his Heirs	74, D	
He surrenders his Earldom and Marshalship, with the occasion of it	75, A B	
Regranted to him by the King	1b. C	



# The INDEX.

		Fol.
	Bintly (Sir Walter) <i>his Victory over the French</i>	251 C
	Blake (John) <i>Impeached, with his Answer and Sentence</i>	387, BD
	Bohun (Humphrey) <i>grants his Lands, Honours and Offices to the King</i>	76, D
	<i>He is restored upon Marriage of the King's Daughter</i>	ib. E
A	Bouler (Robert) <i>made Lord Chancellor</i>	211, B
	<i>The Arch-Bishops Letter to him to preserve the Liberties of the Church</i>	ib. C
	Bowet (Henry) <i>adjudged a Traitor for his Advice to King Richard, in favour of the Duke of Hereford</i>	418, D
	Brabason (Roger) <i>his Answer to the Scots Petition to King Edward,</i>	30, C
	Brember (Sir Nicholas) <i>accused of Treason by the Lords Appellants</i>	373, 374
B	<i>He pleads Not Guilty, but is Condemned and Executed</i>	385, BE
	Bristol taken by Queen Isabel	158, C
	Brittans offer to yield their Towns and Castles to the English	339, D
	<i>Their Duke's Alliance with King Richard</i>	ib. E
	<i>He sends to England for Assistance and makes a Peace with the French King</i>	342, AD
C	Bruce alias Brus (Robert) <i>his Title to the Crown of Scotland</i>	26, B
	<i>He is excluded by King Edward I.</i>	ib. E
	<i>He is made King of Scotland, and Crowned</i>	84, B
	<i>He is put to flight by the English</i>	85, A 92 C
	<i>He reduced the greatest part of Scotland to obey him</i>	119, E F
	<i>He is Excommunicated, but doth not regard it</i>	123, E
	<i>His Confederate Thomas Earl of Lancaster</i>	135, E
	<i>He obtains a Truce with England for 13 Years</i>	147, A
D	David <i>his Son denies Homage to Edward III.</i>	196, E
	<i>He submits, and owns him his Superiour</i>	198, C
	Burgh (Sir William) <i>impeached of High Treason</i>	386, A
	<i>His Excuse in answer to it</i>	ib. E
	<i>He is condemned</i>	387, A
	<i>His Life spared</i>	388, A
	<i>He is banished into Ireland</i>	389, C
	<i>He is recalled</i>	396, F
E	Burley (Simon) <i>and others impeached</i>	388
	<i>He is found Guilty, Condemned, and Executed</i>	389, A

## C.

F	<b>C</b> alais <i>besieged by Edward III. King of England</i>	237, E
	<i>Is in great distress</i>	241, E
	<i>Is surrendered</i>	242, D
	Cambridge <i>Rioters their Practices against the University</i>	354, A
	<i>How punished</i>	ib. E
	<i>(Edmund Earl) the King's Unkle created Duke of York</i>	369, E



# The INDEX.

	Fol.	
<i>Cardinals Pentionars to King Edward I.</i>	76, A	
<i>Nine Months in Chusing a Pope</i>	78, C	
<i>Carlisle (Tho. Merks Bishop) his Speech in behalf of Richard II.</i>	438, D	
<i>Cary (Sir John) impeached, his Answer and Excuse</i>	386, A E	
<i>Sentence against him</i>	387, A	
<i>His Life spared</i>	388, A	
<i>He is banished into Ireland</i>	389, C	A
<i>Cavendish (Sir John) Lord Chief Justice Beheaded by Rebels</i>	348, D	
<i>Caverly (Hugh) Governour of Calais</i>	333, F	
<i>His Success against the French by Sea</i>	Ib. & 339, C	
<i>Chandois (Sir John) Governour of King Edward III.'s Dominions in France</i>	281, B	
<i>Is made Constable of Aquitaine</i>	282, F	
<i>Charles Crowned King of France</i>	283, B	
<i>His Declaration of War against England, and on what account</i>	285, D	B
<i>He sends out Preachers to justifie his Cause</i>	289, A	
<i>His great Preparation both by Sea and Land</i>	294, A	
<i>His Policy in marching his Army</i>	295, D E	
<i>His Death</i>	341, E	
<i>Charles his Son succeeds</i>	Ib.	
<i>He prepares a great Fleet to invade England</i>	363, A	
<i>Charter of the Forest and the Great Charter, with some Articles added, confirmed</i>	59 D, 67 E F, 72 F	C
<i>To be published four times in the Year by the Sheriffs</i>	59 D	
<i>Three Knights chosen to see them performed</i>	69 A	
<i>Of London, its Interpretation belongs to the King and Council</i>	334, C	
<i>Church-Affairs in the Reign of Edward I.</i>	93, &c.	
<i>In the Reign of Edward II.</i>	165, &c.	
<i>In the Reign of Edward III.</i>	308, &c.	D
<i>In the Reign of Richard II.</i>	445, &c.	
<i>Clergy deny King Edward I. a Subsidy</i>	40, E	
<i>He shuts up their Barns and Granaries</i>	Ib. F	
<i>Their Reasons for not granting an Aid</i>	44, A	
<i>Their Lay-Fees seized, and are put out of the King's Protection</i>	45, A B	
<i>Those of York, and many others, comply, and are received,</i>	Ib. E F	E
<i>What they payed for the King's Protection</i>	49, B	
<i>Are forbidden to Ordain any thing in their Synods against the King or his Affairs</i>	50, C	
<i>Are imprisoned for publishing the Pope's Bull, and on what Terms released</i>	51, A	
<i>Would not grant an Aid without the Pope's Licence</i>	73 A	
<i>They write to the Pope about their Oppressions</i>	90, A	
<i>Such as oppressed them declared Excommunicate</i>	211, D	F
<i>They refuse to be Taxed by the Commons</i>	344, C	
<i>They protest against any Law to be made against the Pope's Authority</i>	392, E	
<i>Cobham (Sir John) impeached</i>	412, C	
<i>Judgment given against him pardoned</i>	413, A	
	Colpe-	



# The INDEX.

	Fol.
Colepepper (Tho.) Executed	134, B
Commissioners sent from England to the Scots Parlement	359, F
Appointed by King Richard II. to govern the Kingdom	366, F
Their Names and Power	367, A
Declared Traiterous and void by the Judges, &c.	368, A
A      Their Names that were appointed to Depose King Richard	431, D
Commission : See Statute	
Committee of Lords and Commons how chosen	338, A
Common People refuse to pay an Ayd given by Parlement to Edward II.	120, F
Their Complaints and Petition in Parlement to Edward III.	239
B      Commons in Parlement assembled grant an Ayd upon Conditions	245, 250
Their Petition against Churchmen being made great Officers,	291, E
Their Complaint against Evil Councillors, and ill Management of the King's Revenue	300, 301
They Impeach several for Mismanagement	lb.
Their Petition about Justices of the Peace, and for Allowance of Wages	302, D
C      Their Petition to remove Foreigners	305, F
They desire a Committee of Lords for their Assistance	327 B
Their Petition about the Government of the Realm	328, D, &c.
The Answer they received	329, A, &c.
They pray that Great Officers may be chosen in Parlement during King Richard II's Minority	332, B
D      Their Complaint against Villans	lb. F
They Petition for a Parlement to be held every year	333, A
Their Reasons against granting an Ayd	336, A
They require to know how Money granted was Expended	337, A
The Answer they received by Richard le Scroope	lb.
Their Proposals to Excuse an Ayd	338, C
They grant a Tax of Three Groats on every Person	344, D
E      Their Complaint of ill Government	351, E
Their Petition for Three sorts of Pardons	352, E
They refuse to grant any Tallage	353, D
They Protest against a Breach with Spain	355, D
They Petition for a yearly Review of the King's Household	364, A
They Swear to stand by the Lords Appellants	371, F
They confirm the Statute and Commission, and their Proceedings	389, F
F      They would not have what was done made a President	390, B
They Assert King Richard's Prerogative, and Thank him for his good Government.	395, A, B
They Petition that Villans may not have the Privilege of Cities and Burghs	lb. E



# The INDEX.

	Fol.	
<i>The Three Points they thought too high for their Advice</i>	394, D	
<i>They frame Articles against the King's Royalty</i>	395, F	
<i>Their Excuse and Submission for the same</i>	396, B	
<i>They declare void the Statute and Commission</i>	397, B	
<i>Their Petition to the King in behalf of several Lords</i>	398, F	
<i>They Petition in behalf of such as came along with Henry the IVth. into England</i>	451, F	A
<i>Competitors for the Crown of Scotland</i>	21, A, 23, F	
<i>Comyn (John) Pardoned by King Edward I.</i>	82, F	
<i>Is Murdered by the Scots</i>	84, B	
<i>His Murderers Excommunicated</i>	85, E	
<i>Cressy's great Battle</i>	237, B	

B

## D.

<b>D</b> Agworth (Tho.) <i>his Victory in Bretagne</i>	241, D	
<i>Is slain</i>	247, E	
Darby (Henry Earl of) <i>sent with an Army into Gascony by King Edward III. with his Success</i>	235, E	
<i>His great Victories there</i>	240, D, E	C
<i>Is one of the Lords Appellants</i>	371, C	
Dardain (James) <i>the Pope's Collector and Nuncio in England, his Oath to King Richard II.</i>	448, A	
David, <i>Brother to the Prince of Wales, Judicially Condemned and Executed</i>	11, A	
<i>King of Scotland overthrown and taken Prisoner</i>	240, F	
<i>He is sent to the Tower at London</i>	241, A	
<i>Is released of his Imprisonment, and on what Conditions</i>	259, A	D
<i>He returns into Scotland, and punished Deserters</i>	260, E	
<i>He declares Robert Steward his Successor</i>	261, A	
Despencer : <i>See Spencers</i>		
Dynet (William) <i>accused for being a Wyclivite.</i>	463, F	
<i>His Oath of Abjuration</i>	464, A	

E

## E.

<b>E</b> dward I. <i>beyond Sea when his Father died.</i>	1, C	
<i>The Nobility Swear Fealty to him when absent</i>	1b.	
<i>He doth Homage to the French for Aquitain</i>	2, F	
<i>He received the Homage and Service of his Vassals there</i>	3, A	F
<i>His Return into England, and Coronation, and Inquiry into the Rights of the Crown</i>	1b. C, D	
<i>Is Summoned into France, and sends his Excuse</i>	1b. E	
<i>He Prorogues his first Parlement before their Meeting</i>	4, A	
<i>Excellent Laws made in his first Parlement</i>	1b. E, &c.	
<i>His Usage of the Welch</i>	7, A	
<i>The</i>		



# The INDEX.

		Fol.
	The Earldom of Poictou comes to him by his Queen	8, A
	He gives up his Right in Normandy	Ib. B
	His Summons to the several Counties, Cities, and Burghs	10, A
	He demands a Subsidy, and enjoins the Form of it	Ib. E, F
	He undertakes the Croysado, and forbids the sending the Money collected for it to the Pope	11, C, D
A	His Answer to the Pope's Letter	12, A
	His Son Prince Edward born in Wales	13, F
	He goes into France, and stays there 3 years	14, E
	He punishes his Justices at his return for Bribery	Ib. F
	He demands Margaret, Grand-daughter to Alexander III. King of Scotland, for his Son	15, A
	His Concessions to the Scots for promoting the Match	16, F
B	He appoints a Lieutenant in Scotland for Queen Margaret	17, C
	He Claims the Crown of Scotland on Queen Margaret's Death	18, A
	His Title.	19, A
	He receives and restores the Guardianship of Scotland	22, F
	The Scots Swear Fealty to him	23, A
	His Sentence against Ten of the Competitors	27, E, F
C	He Adjudges the Right to John Baliol	28, D
	He grants him Possession, and receives his Fealty	29, A, D
	His Protestation to the Scots Petition	30, E
	He hears and grants the King of Scots Plea	32
	He is Defied by the King of Scotland	34, D
	He Beats the Scots to a Submission	36, A
	He sends their King to the Tower, and appoints them a Governour	38, A
D	The Peace between him and the French broken	Ib. C
	His Alliance with the Emperor	Ib. F
	He shuts up the Barns and Granaries of the Clergy for refusing him a Subsidy	40, E
	His Alliance with the Earl of Flanders	42, A
	His Son Prince Edward to Confirm it, when at Age	43, A
	He is angry with the Clergy	45, A
	His Pilgrimage to Wallingham in Norfolk	44, D
E	His Writs to restore the Clergy that complied	46
	And against Spreaders of False News and Publishers of Ex-communications	47, 57
	His Orders for fitting out his Fleet	51, E
	All of 20 l. per Annum to provide to go with him	52, A
	His Summons to his whole Military Service	Ib.
	Several Lords refuse their Duty and Service	53, E
	His Grant of a general Protection to the Clergy	54, A
F	His Unwarrantable Ways to Raise Money	Ib. F
	His Declaration concerning such as refused their Duty and Service	55
	They present him their Grievances	57, D
	He goes into Flanders, and Promises Remedy at his Return	58, D

He



# The INDEX.

	Fol.	
<i>He confirms the great Charter</i>	59, F, 64, 65	
<i>A Truce between him and King Philip</i>	60, C, &c.	
<i>The Names of his Allies and Confederates</i>	Ib. D	
<i>He overthrows the Scots at Falkirk</i>	64, B	
<i>His Marriage with the French King's Sister Margaret</i>	67, B	
<i>He grants the Statute of Articles upon the Charters</i>	68, B	A
<i>His march into Scotland with an Army</i>	70, D	
<i>His Answer to the Pope's Claim of the Kingdom of Scotland</i>	71, C	
<i>His Title to Scotland sent to the Pope, with an Account of their Perfidiousness</i>	73, C	
<i>He grants a Truce to the Scots, and returns into England</i>	74, A	
<i>His Messengers to the Pope</i>	75, F	B
<i>He concludes a Peace with France</i>	77, A, B	
<i>He accuses the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury of Treason</i>	81, B	
<i>His Ordinances for the Security of Scotland</i>	85, F	
<i>He Banishes Piers Gaveston</i>	92, A	
<i>His Death</i>	Ib. D	
<i>His Wives and Issue</i>	98, 99	
<i>Prince Edward, Eldest Son to Edward I. made Guardian of England</i>	59, A	C
<i>Is Contracted to Isabel, Daughter to the French King</i>	65, E	
<i>Is made Prince of Wales, and Earl of Chester</i>	73, F	
<i>Is Knighted with 300 more</i>	84, F	
<i>His Familiarity with Piers Gaveston displeased the King</i>	92, A	
<i>II. began his Reign</i>	100, B	
<i>His Marriage and Coronation, and Favours to Gaveston</i>	101, A	D
<i>Ordinances for the Government of his Household</i>	102, 103	
<i>His Confirmation of them</i>	110, E	
<i>He recalled Gaveston</i>	112, E	
<i>He appoints Commissioners to Correct the Ordinances</i>	113, E	
<i>He goes to Newcastle with Gaveston</i>	114, F	
<i>His Request to the Lords to spare Gaveston, refused</i>	115, D	
<i>He Prohibits his Lords coming to him Armed</i>	116, F	
<i>He makes a Peace with them</i>	117, D	E
<i>He is overthrown by the Scots</i>	120, B	
<i>His Promise to observe the Ordinances</i>	121, E	
<i>He Summons his whole Military Service against the Scots</i>	122, A	
<i>His good will towards the Earl of Lancaster</i>	Ib. C	
<i>His Indenture of Agreement with him</i>	124, C	
<i>He allowed the Lords Petition</i>	125, F	
<i>He Pardoned the Earl of Lancaster and his Followers</i>	126, B	F
<i>And the Lords that Acted without Law against the Spencers</i>	133, D	
<i>He besieged Leeds Castle, and takes it</i>	134, A	
<i>He revoked the Spencer's Banishment, and marched with an Army against the Lords</i>	Ib. D	
<i>He</i>		



# The INDEX.

		Fol.
A	<i>He made a Truce with the Scots for 15 years</i>	147, A
	<i>He excused his Homage to the French King, and made a Truce</i>	Ib. B, C
	<i>He quits Aquitaine and Ponthieu to his Son Prince Edward</i>	149, A
	<i>His Message to his Queen and Son to return into England</i>	150, 151
	<i>His Queen's Behaviour towards him</i>	152, A
	<i>He writ to the Pope about the Affair of his Queen</i>	Ib. F
	<i>He Proclaims Mortimer a Traytor, but without effect</i>	154, F, 155, B
	<i>He retired into Wales</i>	157, B
	<i>He sent the Great Seal to the Queen and Prince</i>	159, A
	<i>He is carried Prisoner to Kenelworth</i>	161, A
B	<i>He is Deposed, and for what Reasons</i>	Ib. E, F
	<i>His Resignation to his Son Prince Edward</i>	163, C
	<i>Is Inhumanely Treated and Murdered</i>	164, C, D, E
	<i>His Issue</i>	181, C
C	<i>Prince Edward, Eldest Son to Edward II. contracted to the Earl of Haynault's Daughter</i>	154, D
	<i>Is made Guardian of the Kingdom</i>	158, F
	<i>III. is declared King</i>	161, D
	<i>His unwillingness to accept the Crown</i>	163, B
	<i>His Affairs Managed by his Mother and Mortimer</i>	182, C, 186, A
	<i>He Pardoned those that came over with the Queen</i>	Ib.
	<i>He sent Mortimer and his Adherents to the Tower</i>	186, B
	<i>He Tryed and Executed several of his Father's Murderers</i>	190, 191
	<i>The Reward he gave for taking Mortimer</i>	191, D, E
	<i>He Propounds to his Parlement the Business of France and Ireland</i>	Ib. F
D	<i>The Advice he received</i>	192, A, B, 194, B, C
	<i>He assisted Edward Baliol to recover the Crown of Scotland</i>	Ib. F
	<i>He received his Homage and Fealty</i>	195, A, B
	<i>And 2000 l. per Annum for Assistance</i>	196, A, B
	<i>He besieged Berwick, and beat the Scots</i>	Ib. F
	<i>He concludes a Peace with them</i>	197, A
	<i>He is advised to claim the Crown of France</i>	198, E, F
	<i>The Alliances he made in order to it</i>	199
	<i>He appoints Commissioners to Treat of his Right</i>	200, B
	<i>He Constitutes the Duke of Lorrain Vice-Roy of France</i>	Ib. C
E	<i>He is made Vicar-general of the Empire</i>	201, D
	<i>His Title to the Crown of France</i>	Ib. F
	<i>He enters the French Dominions</i>	202, C
	<i>He acquaints his Parlement with it, and demands an Ayd</i>	203, A
	<i>His Debt to his Allies</i>	204, C
	<i>An Ayd granted to clear it, and the Commons Request to him</i>	Ib. D, E
	<i>His great Victory over the French Fleet</i>	205, C
	**	His



# The INDEX.

	Fol.	
<i>His Letter to his Parlement for more Money, which was granted</i>	206, A, E	
<i>He Besieged Tournay, and Challenged Philip of Valois</i>	207, A, B	
<i>He concludes a Truce</i>	208, B, C	
<i>At his return into England he sent several of his Council to Prison</i>	209, E	A
<i>He is reproved by the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury</i>	210, D	
<i>His Letter concerning the Arch-Bishop, and his Crimes</i>	212, E	
<i>His Letter answered, and called a Libel by the Arch-Bishop</i>	215, B	
<i>His Reply to the Arch-Bishop's Defence</i>	218, B	
<i>He presses for further Supplies</i>	219, D	
<i>His Answer to the Statutes and Conditions</i>	220, A	B
<i>His Revocation of them confirmed in Parlement</i>	222, C	
<i>He refused the Emperor's Mediation for a Peace</i>	223, E, F	
<i>He received the Homage of John Earl of Montfort for the Dukedom of Bretagne</i>	224, E	
<i>He Married his Daughter to the Duke's Son</i>	225, E	
<i>He enters Bretagne with an Army</i>	226, A	
<i>He agrees to a Truce with France for 3 years</i>	Ib. D	
<i>He acquaints his Parlement with it, and their Agreement to it</i>	227, 228	C
<i>He appoints Commissioners to Treat of Peace without effect</i>	229, A	
<i>His Parlement prays an end of the War, and grant an Ayd</i>	231, E	
<i>He again sent Defiance to Philip of Valois</i>	232, C	
<i>He Complains to the Pope against him, and the Pope's Answer</i>	Ib. E, F, 233, C	D
<i>The Success of his Arms in Gascoigny</i>	235, E	
<i>He and his Son Prince Edward land in Normandy</i>	236, A	
<i>His great Successes there</i>	Ib. B, &c.	
<i>His Victory over the French at Cressy, and the Number slain</i>	237, B, &c.	
<i>His Answer to the Commons Petition in Parlement</i>	240, A	
<i>He beats the French Army, and takes Calais</i>	242, C, D	E
<i>His Usage of the Calefians</i>	Ib. E, 243, A	
<i>He agrees to a Truce</i>	243, B	
<i>The Number of his Army, and their Pay</i>	Ib. C	
<i>He refused the Offer of the Empire</i>	255, F	
<i>He prevents the betraying of Calais</i>	246, D	
<i>His Usage of the French Prisoners</i>	Ib. E	
<i>He Institutes the Order of the Garter</i>	247	
<i>His Title to France set forth in Parlement</i>	248, E	F
<i>He offered Terms of Peace to the French</i>	252	
<i>His readiness to Remedy his Subject's Grievances</i>	250, 251	
<i>His Agreement to Peace refused by the French</i>	253, A, B	
	261, D	
<i>His Expedition into France</i>	254, F	
<i>His Army wast and destroy the French Country</i>	262, A	
<i>He</i>		



# The INDEX.

		Fol.
	<i>He concludes a Peace with France</i>	1b. C, D
	<i>The Articles of the Peace</i>	263, &c.
	<i>He sent his Commissioners to take possession of what was granted him by the Peace</i>	278, F
	<i>Some French Lords refuse to become his Subjects, but are forced to it</i>	281
A	<i>His Kindness to the French Hostages</i>	283, A
	<i>He assumed the Title of King of France by the Advice of his Parlement</i>	287, E
	<i>His Offer to such as would Maintain his Title</i>	288, B
	<i>His Letter of Indemnity sent into Aquitain</i>	1b. D
	<i>His Voyage into France unfortunate</i>	293, A, B
	<i>He sent Assistance to his Son Prince Edward</i>	289, C
	<i>His Answer to the Commons Petition</i>	292, A
B	<i>His Fleet beaten nigh Rochell</i>	1b. D
	<i>His Town in Aquitain Revolt</i>	297, D
	<i>He agreed to a Truce with the French King</i>	298, A
	<i>His Answer to the Commons and Londoners Petitions</i>	302, 303, 305, 306
	<i>His Death</i>	308, B
	<i>His Issue by Queen Phillippa</i>	323
C	<i>Prince Edward, Eldest Son to Edward III. made Guardian of England</i>	204, F
	<i>His great Victory over the French at Cressy</i>	237, C
	<i>He prevents the betraying of Calais</i>	246, C
	<i>His Expedition into France, and his Success</i>	255, E
	<i>His Victory over the French at Poitiers</i>	257
	<i>His Civilities to King John and his Son Philip</i>	258, A
	<i>He is made Prince of Aquitain</i>	282, E
	<i>He ayds the King of Castile, and restores him</i>	284 C
D	<i>His Illness, and return to Aquitain</i>	1b. D
	<i>His Necessities for want of Money</i>	285, A
	<i>The Complaint of the French Nobility against him</i>	1b. B
	<i>His Answer to the French King's Summons</i>	1b. D
	<i>He taketh Limoges by Storm</i>	290, A
	<i>He returns ill into England</i>	1b. B
	<i>His Death</i>	302, C
	<i>Ellys William impeached for Extortion</i>	302, B
E	<i>England's Superiority over Scotland</i>	35, B
	<i>How to be divided if Conquered by France</i>	238, F
	<i>English Women imitate the French in their Apparel</i>	246, A
F.		
F	<b>F</b> itz-Alan (Richard) Earl of Arundel Admiral of the English Fleet	367, D
	<i>He takes above 100 of the Enemies Ships</i>	1b. E
	<i>Is one of the Appellant Lords</i>	371, C
	<i>Flint Castle when and by whom built</i>	7, A



# The INDEX.

	Fol.
French King's Charge against King Edward I.	38, D
<i>He seized on Gascony</i>	lb. F
<i>He provides to invade England</i>	39, D
Fulthorpe (Sir Roger) impeached, and his Answer	386, A E
<i>Sentence against him</i>	387, A
<i>His Life spared</i>	388, A

A

## G.

<b>G</b> arter. See Order.	
Gascony restored to King Edward I.	77, C
Gaston Vicount Bearn refused his Homage to Edward I.	3, A
Gaveston (Piers) his Familiarity with Prince Edward	91, F
<i>Is banished by the King</i>	92, A
<i>His return into England, and is made Earl of Cornwall,</i> <i>and Lieutenant of the Kingdom</i>	100, D E
<i>His Destent and Marriage with the King's Neece</i>	101, B
<i>Is made Lieutenant of Ireland</i>	lb. E
<i>The Nobility contrive to destroy him</i>	lb. F
<i>He fled out of the Kingdom, and is recalled</i>	112, D
<i>He yields himself to the Lords</i>	115, D
<i>He is Executed without Judgment</i>	116, A
Gloucester (Thomas Duke) with other Lords march with great Forces <i>towards London</i>	368, A
<i>Their Letter to the Mayor and Sheriffs</i>	lb. BC
<i>Their Approach to the King, with the manner of their Ad-</i> <i>dress and Reception</i>	369, A, B, C
<i>They are excused by Proclamation, yet march on towards Lon-</i> <i>don</i>	lb. F
<i>The Keys of the City-Gates delivered to them</i>	370, A
<i>They go to the King, and obtain what they asked</i>	lb. BC
<i>He offers to purge himself, and is declared Guiltless</i>	371, A
<i>His desire to have 1000 l. per Ann. settled on him by the</i> <i>King</i>	392, F
<i>His Grants in Parlement repealed</i>	397, C
<i>He is appealed of High Treason</i>	405, A
<i>His Death at Calais</i>	408, B
<i>Is adjudged a Traitor</i>	lb. D
<i>His Confession before his death</i>	409, D
Godfrey of St. Omar Founder of the Order of the Templars	165, A
Gournay (Tho.) one of the Keepers and Murderers of Edw. II.	164 C
<i>Judgment against him for the same</i>	191, A
Grievances of the Kingdom presented	57 D, 58
Guardians of the Kingdom, who	1, D
<i>They proclaim the King's Peace</i>	lb.
<i>They do the same for Ireland</i>	2, A
<i>Their Writ to assess Tallage, and suppress Tumults</i>	lb. C
Guines surprized by the English	248, C
Guy Earl of Flanders his Alliance with Edward I.	42, A
Hales	

B

C

D

E

F



# The INDEX.

## H.

		Fol.
	<b>H</b> ales (Sir Robert) <i>Beheaded by the Rebels</i>	346, C
	Haynault (Earl of) <i>furnisheth Queen Isabel with Ships and Forces</i>	154, D
A	Haxey (Thomas) <i>his Bill in the House of Commons against the King's Royalty</i>	396, A
	<i>Is adjudged a Traitor</i>	lb. D
	Hereford (Henry Duke) <i>his Submission to King Richard</i>	403, E
	<i>He accused the Duke of Norfolk</i>	404, F
	<i>The Schedule of his Accusation</i>	413, B
	<i>The matter contained in it to be determined by Duel,</i>	414, D
B	<i>The King prevents the Battel, and banishes him</i>	415, BC
	<i>He lands in England</i>	419, B
	<i>The Nobility and People join him</i>	lb. CD
	<i>His Obeisance to King Richard, and Reception at London</i>	420, A
	<i>He claims the Crown</i>	432, D
	<i>His Speech to the Lords and Commons</i>	433, D
	<i>He summons a Parlement in his own Name to be returned in six Days</i>	435, E
C	<i>His Eldest Son made Prince of Wales</i>	438, A
	<i>His Followers and Confederates pardoned</i>	452, A
	Adam (Bishop.) <i>See Adam.</i>	
	(Nicholas) <i>a Professor of Divinity in Oxford, a Wiclivite</i>	459, F
	<i>The Proceedings against him</i>	460, 461
	Higden (Ran.) <i>his Character of the Earl of Lancaster</i>	139, C
D	Holt (Sir John) <i>impeached, and his Answer</i>	386, A E
	<i>Sentence against him</i>	387, A
	<i>His Life spared</i>	388, A
	<i>He is banished into Ireland</i>	389, C
	<i>He is again recalled</i>	396, F
	Hugo de Paganis <i>one of the Founders of the Order of the Templars</i>	165, A
E	Hungerford (Tho.) <i>Speaker of the Commons, prays the reverse of several Impeachments</i>	306, E

## I.

	<b>J</b> ews <i>hanged for Clipping and Coining</i>	8, C
	<i>Maintenance allowed to the Converted</i>	lb.
	<i>The Obstinate are Banished</i>	9, A
F	John Duke of Bretagne <i>died without Issue</i>	224
	<i>The Competitors for his Dukedom</i>	lb. C
	<i>King of France Crowned,</i>	247, F
	<i>He is Overthrown by Edward the Prince of Wales</i>	257
	<i>He and his Son Philip taken Prisoners</i>	lb. E
	<i>They</i>	



# The I N D E X.

	Fol.	
<i>They are brought to London</i>	258, D	
<i>And sent to the Tower</i>	261, F	
<i>He agrees to a Peace with Edward III.</i>	262, E	
<i>His return into England, Errand, and Death there</i>	283, B	
<i>Isabel Queen to Edward II. denied entrance into Leeds-Castle</i>	134, A	A
<i>She writes to the Pope to Saint the Earl of Lancaster</i>	138, E F	
<i>She built a Chapel on the Hill where he was Executed</i>	140, A	
<i>She obtains Leave to get into France</i>	148, E	
<i>Her Excuse to the King for staying there</i>	149, 150	
<i>She takes Mortimer into her Service</i>	lb. D	
<i>Her Behaviour towards the King</i>	152, A	
<i>She leaves France, and goes to the Earl of Haynault</i>	154, A	B
<i>She lands at Harwich, and is joined by the Nobility</i>	lb. E F	
<i>The Increase of her Army and her Cause carried on by false Reports</i>	155, C D	
<i>Her Care of Holy Church</i>	157, E	
<i>She takes Bristol, and marches into Wales to find out the King</i>	158, C D	C
<i>She held a Parlement with the Prince her Son</i>	161, B	
<i>Her seeming Sorrow for the King her Husband</i>	163, A	
<i>She and Mortimer hath the whole Government</i>	186, A	

## K.

<b>K</b> <i>Ent (Edmund Earl of) Uncle to Edward III. adjudged to death in Parlement, and for what</i>	185, D	D
<i>His Son restored to his Blood and Lands</i>	lb. F	
<i>Kilwardy (Robert) Elected Arch-Bishop of Canterbury without the King's Licence</i>	93, B	
<i>His Election protested against</i>	lb. E	
<i>Knights Four summoned for every County</i>	10, B	
<i>Knivet (Sir John) Chancellor his Declaration in Parlement of the Necessities of Edward III.</i>	293, 294, 296, A	E
<i>Knolls (Sir Robert) Ravages and Burns the Country about Paris</i>	290, A	
<i>His great Care to suppress Tumults</i>	361, A	

## L.

<b>L</b> <i>Ancafter (Thomas Earl of) resolved to defend Holy Church</i>	114, E	F
<i>He demanded Gaveston of King Edward II.</i>	lb. F	
<i>He marched after the King and Gaveston</i>	115, A	
<i>A great Admirer of Robert Winchelsey Arch-Bishop of Canterbury</i>	119, D	
	He	



# The INDEX.

	Fol.
A	<i>He refused to serve the King against the Scots</i> 120, A
	<i>Is made Chief of the Council to Edward II.</i> 122, E
	<i>And General of the Army against the Scots</i> 123, C
	<i>The Agreement between him and the King</i> 124, C
	<i>He joins with the Earl of Hereford</i> 134, F
	<i>Is taken Prisoner, Condemned, and Executed</i> 135, B
	<i>Miracles done by him after his Death</i> 136, A
	<i>His Image adored at St. Paul's</i> 138, A
	<i>Queen Isabel writes to the Pope to Saint him</i> lb. DE
	<i>The Arch-Bishop of Canterbury doth the same</i> 139, A
B	<i>His Character by Higden</i> lb. CD
	<i>(Henry) his Son shews Compassion to Edward II.</i> 164, B
	<i>His Submission to Edward II. and Queen-Mother</i> 185, B
	<i>He died of the Plague</i> 282, D
	<i>(John Duke) made Governour of Aquitaine</i> 290, C
	<i>His Title to the Kingdom of Castile</i> 292, A
	<i>Is made the King's Lieutenant in France</i> 295, A
	<i>His ill Conduct in his Army</i> lb. C
	<i>The three Great Offices he claimed at King Richard's Coronation</i> 326, C
	<i>His Retirement from Court</i> 327, A
C	<i>His Challenge to his Accusers</i> lb
	<i>He is chosen Head of the Committee for the Assistance of the Commons</i> lb.
	<i>He sets out a Fleet, and is beaten by the Spaniards</i> 134, A B
	<i>His Expedition against the Scots</i> 342, F
	<i>He concludes a Truce with them</i> 350, F
	<i>The Quarrel between him and Northumberland ended</i> 351, A
	<i>His Proposals to go into Spain</i> 355, A
	<i>His Expedition against the Scots unsuccessful</i> 361, B
	<i>He is accused of Treason by a Fryer</i> lb. D
	<i>His extravagant Expences in France</i> lb. E
D	<i>His Voyage into Spain, and Claim of that Crown</i> 364, C
	<i>He is created Duke of Aquitaine</i> 392, C
	<i>The Earl of Arundel asks his Pardon in full Parlement</i> 394, A
	<i>He is made Lord High Steward at the Trial of the Earl of Arundel and others</i> 407, A
	<i>He was First Commissioner in the Judgment given against his Son Henry Duke of Hereford</i> 415, 426, in the Margin.
	<i>Latimer impeached by the Commons</i> 301, F
	<i>Laws made in the First Purlement of Edward I.</i> 4, C
	<i>Letters Pattents of Edward I. for the Establishment of Scotland</i> 82, A
	<i>Lewelin Prince of Wales summoned to take the Oath of Fealty to Edward I.</i> 1, F
	<i>His Marriage of Sim. Monfort's Daughter</i> lb. F
E	<i>He surprized the King's Justiciary, and is slain</i> 9, BE
	<i>Limoges delivered to the French</i> 289, F
	<i>Is retaken by Prince Edward</i> 290, A
	<i>Lin-</i>



# The INDEX.

	Fol.
Lincoln (Henry Earl) <i>his Speech about Holy Church to Thomas Earl of Lancaster</i>	114, B
Littlister (John) <i>King of the Commons, his Pretences and Practices</i>	348, E
Loketon (John) <i>impeached, his Answer and Excuse</i>	386, A E
<i>Sentence against him</i>	387, A
<i>Is banished into Ireland</i>	389, C
Londoners <i>join with the Lords in refusing to pay Taxes to Edward I.</i>	58, F
<i>They refuse to assist King Edward II.</i>	155, F
<i>They Murder the Bishop of Exeter, and a Servant of the Spencers</i>	156, B
<i>They compel the Bishops to swear to defend their Rights</i>	164, A
<i>They present their Grievances to Edward III.</i>	302, E F
<i>Their Patent from him, and Petition about their Coroner</i>	305, A E
<i>They deny to lend King Richard II. a Thousand Pounds</i>	393, F
<i>Their Liberties seized by him, and restored</i>	394, A
Lords. <i>See Nobility.</i>	
Lyon (Rich.) <i>impeached by the Commons, and his Punishment</i>	301, F

## M.

<b>M</b> Agdulph Earl of Fife <i>his Appeal to King Edward I.</i>	31, C
Maltrovers ( John ) <i>one of the Keepers and Murderers of Edward II.</i>	164, C
Marchall (John) <i>Servant to the Spencers, murdered, and by whom</i>	156, A
Margaret Maid of Norway, <i>Grandchild and Heir to Alexander III. King of Scotland</i>	14, F
<i>Articles of Marriage between her and Prince Edward</i>	1b
<i>She died in her Voyage to England</i>	17, F
<i>Marshal and Constable take Possession of the City-Gates</i>	59, C D
Mautravers (John) <i>his Practices against the Earl of Kent punished</i>	190, D E
Merks (Thomas) <i>Bishop of Carlisle's Reasons against the Proceedings in Parlement against King Richard II.</i>	438, D
Montacute (Will.) <i>his Reward for taking Mortimer</i>	191, D
Monfort <i>his Controverse with the Earl of Blois for the Dukedom of Bretagne</i>	124, 125
Mortimer (Roger) <i>taken into Queen Isabel's Service</i>	149, D
<i>Is proclaimed a Traitor by Edward II.</i>	154, F
<i>His Familiarity with the Queen</i>	159, B
<i>His Management of Affairs under Edward III.</i>	182 B, 186 A
<i>He agrees to a shameful Peace with the Scots</i>	184, F
<i>He is sent to the Tower</i>	186, C
<i>The Articles in Parlement against him</i>	187, A
<i>Is condemned by his Peers, and executed</i>	189, F
Mowbray	



# The INDEX.

		Fol.
	Mowbray (Tho) Duke of Norfolk accused by the Duke of Hereford	413, B
	The matter contained in his Accusation to be determined by Duel	414, D
	The King prevents the Battel, and banished him	415, B C D
A	<hr/>	
	N.	
	<b>N</b> Ants beseged by the English	342, B
	Nevill's Crofs Battel	240, F
	Nobility swear Fealty to Edward I. when beyond Sea	1, C
	Their Petition against the Pope's Exactions	88, C
B	And against sending Money out of England	89, C
	Their Murmurs and Contrivance against Gaveston	101, D F
	Their Ordinances for the Government of the King's Household	103, &c.
	Are angry at recalling of Gaveston	112, F
	They order him to be executed without Trial	116, A
C	They demand of the King the Execution of their Ordinances, and encourage the People to join them	1b. C E
	They treat with the King about Peace	117, D
	Their Petition to him in Parlement	125, D
	Their Confederacy against the two Spencers	127, &c.
	Their Message to the King to banish them	129, A
	They come armed to Parlement, and their Award against them	1b. B C
D	They desire Security for their acting without Law,	132 D
	Many of them Executed with the Earl of Lancaster	135, F
	They join with Queen Isabel against Edward II.	154, D
	Several of them Executed by Queen Isabel's Order	159, B
	They judge King Edward II. unfit to Govern	163, A
	They renew their Fealty and Homage to King Richard II.	390, F
	The Oath they then took	391, A
E	Such as broke it to be Excommunicated	1b.
	They again renew their Oaths to King Richard	400, 403
	They join Henry Duke of Hereford and Lancaster	419, C D
	Northampton (John) a Mover of Sedition in London, and how ap- peased	360, F
	His Trial and Judgment	361, F
	Judgment against him repealed	393, B
F	Nottingham (Thomas Earl) one of the Lords Appellants	371, C



# The INDEX.

	Fol.	
<b>O.</b>		
<b>O</b> aths taken by the Lords Spiritual and Temporal	391, A	
Administred to all Gentlemen, &c.	Ib. B	
Renewed to King Richard II.	400	
The Breakers thereof Excommunicated	401, B	A
Great Officers of the Kingdom to be sworn in Parlement	220, E	
To be chosen by the Lords in King Richard's Minority	332, C	
They resign their Places to the King, and receive them again from him	392, B	
Ordainers appointed, their Names	103	
They decline to Treat with the King's Commissioners	114, A	
Order of the Garter instituted, when, and by whom	247, B	B
Ordinances of King Edward I. for Security of Scotland	85, F	
For Government of Edward II. his Household	102, B	
Are confirmed by the King in Parlement	103, 110, 111, A	
Are examined and annulled	146, A	
Of Normandy, what it was	238, D	

	Fol.	
<b>P.</b>		
<b>P</b> arliaments held in the Reign of Edward I.	96, 97, 98	
In the Reign of Edward II.	180, 181	
In the Reign of Edward III.	321, &c.	
In the Reign of Richard II.	465, &c.	
That held in the 11th of Ricard II. annulled	402	
That again confirmed, and that held 21 Rich. II. annulled	437, E	D
Pavy (Amery de) made Governour of Calais	243, B	
His Design to betray it prevented	246, C	
He is removed from the Government of it	Ib. F	
Peacham (John) made by the Pope Arch-Bishop of Canterbury	94, A	
His Letter to the King about Church-Liberty	95, A	
Perambulation of the Forest settled and confirmed	72, F	E
Percy (Henry) his Promise in behalf of Gaveston	116, A	
(Thomas) made General Procurator for the Clergy	401, B	
Perrers (Alice) banished	302, B	
She is accused in Parlement	329, F	
She is found Guilty	331, E	
Her Sentence and Punishment not to be made a Precedent	Ib.	
Repealed in Parliament	362, D	
Peter King of Castile Excommunicated by the Pope	284, A	F
He craves and receives Aid from Edward Prince of Wales	Ib.	
He refused to pay the Prince's Army	Ib.	
Is slain by Henry Bastard of Castile	289, D	

Philip



# The INDEX.

		Fol.
	Philip the French King remonstrates against the Pope's Bull prohibiting Taxes	55, B
	His Clergy doth the like	lb.
	His Protestation against the Pope's Power to make a Truce between him and Edward I.	61, F
	He corrupts the German Princes	63, C
A	Of Valois his Alliances against Edward III.	200, A
	His Commissioners appointed to Treat of Peace	lb.
	His Fleet beaten by the English	205, C
	His Answers to Edward III.'s Challenge	207, D
	He is overthrown by him at Cressly	237, B
	His attempt to relieve Calais unsuccessful	242, B
	His Death	247, F
	Philpot (John) set out Men of War at his own Charge	334, C
B	Is questioned for it, and discharged	lb.
	Pickering (Sir James) his Petition in behalf of the Commons	335, C
	Plefington (Sir Robert) adjudged a Traitor	407, D
	Pole (Sir Michael) made Lord Chancellor	359, D
	He accuseth the Bishop of Norwich	360, C
	His Sentence against Four Knights	lb. D
	Is made Earl of Suffolk	363, F
C	He is impeached; his Answer and Judgment	365, ACE
	Is accused of High Treason	372, D
	Pope prohibits the Clergy from paying Taxes to Secular Princes	41, A
	His Explanatory Bull	54, C
	He by his own Power declared a Truce for Two Years between England and France	61, D
	Protested against by the French King	lb. F
D	Accepted as Mediator, and not as Judge	62
	His Award between the Two Kings	64, 65
	He sent a Nuncio to compleat it	66, E
	His Claim to the Kingdom of Scotland	70, E
	He suspended the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury	81, C
	He appointed Receivers of his Temporalities, but refused by the King	lb. F
	He absolved Edward I. from his Oath	84, C
E	His Exactions in England Petitioned against by the Nobility	88, C
	He mediates a Peace between Edward III. and King Philip	200 F, 202 D
	His Reservation of the Bishopric of Rochester to the Apostolic See	319, B
	Price of Provisions set by the King	120, C
	Revoked again by him	121, D
F	Probi Homines in Scotland, who they were	31, F



# The INDEX.

R.

	Fol.	
Rapynghdon (Philip) <i>Professor of Divinity in Oxford, a Wyclivite</i>	459, F	
<i>Proceedings against him</i>	460, 461	
Reading (Sim.) <i>Executed for speaking ill of Q. Isabel</i>	159, C	
Reynolds (Walter) <i>Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, writes to the Pope to Saint Tho. Earl of Lancaster</i>	139, A	A
Richard, <i>Eldest Son to Edward Prince of Wales, Guardian of England</i>	293, C	
<i>Is Created Prince of Wales</i>	302, D	
<i>II. his Coronation</i>	326, B	
<i>His Command to his Parlement to dispatch their Business</i>	337, D	
<i>His Necessities forced him to Pawn his Jewels</i>	343, A	
<i>His Mercy to the Followers of Wat. Tiler</i>	347, B	B
<i>He Knighted the Lord Mayor, and other Citizens of London, for their Services in Suppressing them</i>	350, D	
<i>His Grants of Liberties and Manumissions to Villans, revoked in Parlement</i>	351, B	
<i>He appoints certain Lords to Examine into Mismanagements of his Affairs</i>	352, A	
<i>He Excepted several Towns and Persons out of his General Pardon</i>	352, F	C
<i>His Offer to go in Person with an Army into France</i>	356, E	
<i>The Parlement Advise him to the contrary</i>	357, C	
<i>His intent to Arraign the Duke of Lancaster</i>	362, A	
<i>His Expedition into Scotland</i>	Ib. F	
<i>His Answers to the Commons Petition about his Household</i>	364, A	
<i>He is sent for to Parlement by the Duke of Gloucester and Bishop of Ely</i>	365, F	D
<i>He changed the Great Officers of State</i>	366, E	
<i>He appointed Commissioners to Govern the Kingdom</i>	Ib. F	
<i>His Protestation in Parlement</i>	367, C	
<i>He questioned the Commission and Statute made in the last Parlement</i>	Ib. F	
<i>His Judges Opinions of them</i>	368, A	
<i>His Reception by the Mayor, and City of London</i>	Ib.	
<i>He Excused the Duke of Gloucester and others by Proclamation</i>	369, C	E
<i>He granted their Requests</i>	370, C	
<i>He sent the Judges, taken off the Benches, to the Tower</i>	Ib. E	
<i>His grant of the Commons Petitions</i>	390, D	
<i>The Lords Spiritual and Temporal renew their Fealty and Homage to him, and he his Coronation Oath</i>	Ib. F	
<i>Is declared to be of full Age</i>	392, A	
<i>He seized, and restored the Liberties of the City of London</i>	394, A	F
<i>He concluded a Peace with France</i>	Ib. B	
<i>He goes into Ireland</i>	395, D	
<i>His Kindness to several Lords</i>	399, B, C	
<i>He made several Dukes and Earls</i>	Ib. D	
<i>The Lords and Commons Oaths to him</i>	400, 401	
<i>He</i>		



# The I N D E X.

		Fol.
	<i>He Pardoned the Duke of Hereford</i>	403, F
	<i>He appointed, at the Commons Request, certain Persons to determine Matters undispatched in Parlement</i>	404, D
	<i>He prevented Battle between Hereford, and Norfolk, and banished them</i>	415, B
A	<i>Statutes and Ordinances made by him and others appointed</i>	416, A
	<i>He goeth again into Ireland</i>	419, A
	<i>His Nobility and People desert him, and join Hereford</i>	lb. D
	<i>He offered to quit the Government</i>	lb. E
	<i>He is sent to the Tower, and a Parlement summoned in his Name</i>	lb. F
B	<i>The Process of his Renunciation, and Resignation</i>	420, 421
	<i>Articles objected against him</i>	423, &c.
	<i>William Thyrning's Speech to him in the Tower</i>	434, E
	<i>Bishop of Carlisle's Speech in his behalf</i>	438, D
	<i>He was removed to Ludlow, and from thence to Pontfract</i>	452, A
	<i>The French King attempts his Relief, but without effect</i>	lb. B
	<i>The manner of his Death uncertain</i>	lb. D, &c.
C	<i>His Wives</i>	467
	<i>Rickhill (Sir William), appointed to take the Confession of the Duke of Gloucester at Calais</i>	409, A
	<i>His Declaration of the same in Parlement</i>	411, B
	<i>Rioters how to be prosecuted</i>	193
	<i>Rochellers declare for the King of France</i>	292, F
	<i>Roger Earl of March slain in Ireland</i>	419, A
D	<i>Rushook Tho. Bishop of Chichester, Confessor to Richard II. impeached by the Commons</i>	388, A
	<i>His Answer</i>	lb. B
	<i>Is found guilty and banished</i>	389, C

## S.

E	<b>S</b> cotland and Scots, their Agreement with Edw. I. about Margaret, King Alexander III's Grandchild and Heir	15, 16
	<i>K. Edward's Concessions to them about the Match</i>	lb.
	<i>Their Nobility desire time to Consider of King Edward's Claim of the Crown of Scotland after Margaret's Death</i>	18, D, E
	<i>The Competitors produce nothing against his Claim</i>	20
F	<i>Their Names and Submission to King Edward's Decision, and how their Rights were to be tried</i>	21, A, B, D
	<i>The Guardianship of the Kingdom committed to King Edward</i>	22, E
	<i>They Swear Fealty to him</i>	23, B
	<i>How the Right of Succession to be determined</i>	24, F
	<i>The Kingdom not partible</i>	27, B
	<i>They send for Absolution to the Pope</i>	35, A
	<i>They</i>	



# The INDEX.

	Fol.	
<i>They Command the English to quit Scotland</i>	1b. D	
<i>They enter England, are beaten, and then they submit</i>	1b. & 37, E, & 64, B	
<i>They again Revolt and Submit</i>	53, A	
<i>They force the English out of Scotland</i>	59, A	
<i>They apply themselves to the Pope</i>	70, E	
<i>The Terms of Peace granted them by King Edward</i>	77, F, 78, E	
<i>The Names of Persons excepted</i>	79, C, D	
<i>What Number to come to the English Parlemt</i>	80, C, D	
<i>The Settlement they made of the Kingdom</i>	81, A	
<i>The Articles of the Establishment</i>	82, 83	
<i>They break their Oaths, and Crown Robert Bruce</i>	84, B	
<i>Are routed, and many Tried for Perjury, and Rebellion</i>	85, B	B
<i>Their Submission, and Homage to King Edward renewed</i>	86, D	
<i>They Ravage the English Borders</i>	120, A, 340, A	
<i>Their great Victory over King Edward II.</i>	1b. B	
<i>The Kingdom Interdicted</i>	123, E	
<i>They agree to a Truce for Two years, continued for 13 years</i>	124, A, 147, A	
<i>They break the Truce</i>	184, B	C
<i>A Peace concluded with them by Mortimer</i>	1b.	
<i>Their Country wasted and burnt by Edward III.</i>	197, A	
<i>They agree to a Peace with him</i>	1b. B	
<i>Their Alliance with the French</i>	335, A	
<i>Their Barbarity in the English Borders</i>	341, C	
<i>Their Commissioners sent to the English Parlemt rejected</i>	359, F	
<i>They join the French to invade England</i>	362, E	D
<i>And are beaten</i>	391, C	
<i>Scrope (Richard) Lord Chancellor, charged the Commons with untruth</i>	336, E	
<i>His Answer to their several Petitions</i>	337, B	
<i>The Great Seal taken from him</i>	355, E	
<i>(Tho.) Earl of Wiltshire, made Procurator for the Clergy</i>	412, B	
<i>Segrave (John) made Guardian of Scotland</i>	76, F	
<i>Sharewell (Sir William) set forth K. Edward III's Title to France</i>	248, E, F	E
<i>Soldiers how raised against the Scots, and payd</i>	121, F	
<i>Southwell (Nic.) Valet to King Richard II.</i>	381, A	
<i>Spanish Fleet beaten by the English</i>	248, A	
<i>Spencer (Hugh) blamed for the Loss the English sustained from the Scots at Bannock-bourn</i>	120, B	
<i>Is made Chamberlain to Edward II.</i>	126, E	
<i>His Fathers Character</i>	1b. F	F
<i>How they provoked the Nobility</i>	127, B, C	
<i>The Lords Award against Father and Son</i>	129, C	
<i>Their Banishment revoked</i>	134, D	
<i>Outragious Practices against them</i>	141, 143	
<i>Errors of the Award against them assigned</i>	142, A	
<i>And why it ought to be revoked</i>	144, B	
<i>The</i>		



# The INDEX.

		Fol.
	<i>The Award voided in Parlement</i>	145, C
	<i>The Father made Governor of Bristol</i>	147, C
	<i>He is taken and Executed</i>	148, C
	<i>The Son Executed</i>	149, B
	<i>The Judgment against them both reversed</i>	403, B
	<i>(Henry) Bishop of Norwich his great Courage and Conduct</i>	349, A
	<i>His Offer for the Relief of Flanders</i>	357, D
	<i>His Proffer accepted by the King and Council</i>	358, A
	<i>He Published a Croysado against the Antipope</i>	lb. B
	<i>His great Success against the Flemings</i>	lb. F
	<i>He surrendered Graveling, and returned into England</i>	359, B
	<i>His Accusation, and Punishment</i>	360, C
B	<i>Statute of Bigamy on what account made</i>	5, B, D
	<i>Of Winchester proclaimed</i>	68, F
	<i>And Conditions where to be found</i>	220, E
	<i>Are revoked by the King</i>	221, C
	<i>Statutes and Commission what and when made</i>	367, A
	<i>Declared void in Parlement</i>	397, B
	<i>And Ordinances made by the King and others appointed out of Parlement</i>	416, A
	<i>Not to be repealed under pain of Treason</i>	lb.
C	<i>The Bishops and Temporal Lords Swear to observe them</i>	417, F
	<i>Sterling Castle delivered to the Scots</i>	67, D
	<i>Besieged by, and yielded to King Edward I.</i>	78, A
	<i>Steward (James) his Submission to King Edward I.</i>	37, C
	<i>Stratford (John) Arch-Bishop of Canterbury his Behaviour to Edward III.</i>	210, 215
	<i>He submitted, and begged the King's Pardon</i>	218, D
D	<i>Proceedings against him vacated</i>	219, A
	<i>Is forbidden to enter the Painted Chamber</i>	222, F
	<i>Is permitted upon Mediation of some Great Men</i>	223, A
	<i>Straw (Jack) his Pretences and Practices</i>	345, 348
	<i>His Tryal and Execution</i>	349, C
	<i>His Confession at his Execution</i>	350, A
	<i>Sudbury (Simon) Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, beheaded by the Rebels</i>	346, C
E		
	T.	
	<i>Talbot (Sir Tho.) accused for Conspiring the Death of the Dukes of Lancaster and Gloucester</i>	395, B
	<i>Tarleton (Adam Bishop) See Adam</i>	
F	<i>Taxes granted in the Reign of Edward I.</i>	96, 97
	<i>of Edward II.</i>	180
	<i>of Edward III.</i>	321, &c.
	<i>of Richard II.</i>	465, &c.
	<i>Templars by whom founded, their Original, and Suppression</i>	165, &c.
	<i>Testa (William) the Pope's Agent, convict of Crimes against the Crown</i>	89, D
	<i>His</i>	



# The I N D E X.

	Fol.
<i>His Officers questioned</i>	90, B
<i>The King granted him Protection, and License</i>	lb. D. F
Thyrning (William) <i>his Speech to Richard II. in the Tower</i>	434, E
Tiler (Wat.) <i>his Pretences and Practices</i>	345
<i>His Insolent Behaviour to the King</i>	346, F
<i>His Death</i>	347, A
<i>His Followers pretended the King's Authority for what they did</i>	348, B
Trefilian (Robert) <i>Lord Chief Justice, accused of Treason by the Lords Appellants</i>	373, 374
<i>His, and the other Judges Opinions concerning the Statute and Commission</i>	378, &c.
<i>The Witnesses to their Opinions</i>	379, F
<i>Is brought into Parlement, Sentenced, and Executed</i>	385, D
Truffell (William) <i>his Speech against Hugh D'espencer the Son</i>	159, E
<i>He resigned up the Nobility's Homage to Edw. II.</i>	162, D

## V.

<b>V</b> Alentia (Aymer) <i>sent against the Scots</i>	84, F
<i>His Success against them</i>	85, A
Vere (Robert) <i>Duke of Ireland, raised Forces in Lancashire and Cheshire, for Richard II.</i>	369, D
<i>He is accused of Treason</i>	372, D
Usk (Tho.) <i>impeached; his Answer, and Judgment</i>	387, C, D, E

## W.

Walworth (Wm) <i>Lord Mayor of London, slew Wat. Tiler</i>	347, A
<i>He is Knighted by Richard II. for his Service</i>	350, D
Walys (Wm) <i>chosen by the Scots for their Leader</i>	53, A
<i>Is beaten, and flee's into the Woods</i>	64, C
<i>Is taken and Executed</i>	83, F
<i>Was one that encouraged the Lords against Edw. II.</i>	119, C
Warren (John) <i>appointed Governor of Scotland</i>	38, A
<i>He suppressed the Scots</i>	53, B
Warwick (Tho. Earl) <i>one of the Appellant Lords</i>	371, C
<i>His Pardon revoked</i>	397, C
<i>Is appealed of High Treason</i>	405, A
<i>Is Tried, and pleaded Guilty</i>	411, E
<i>His Life granted him by the King</i>	lb. F
Welch routed, <i>and their Prince slain</i>	9, C
<i>Are totally subdued</i>	11, B
<i>Writ for sending the same Knights, Citizens and Burgeses who were sent last Parlement</i>	69, F
Wyclif (John) <i>Convented before the Arch-Bishop, and Bishop of London</i>	307, F
<i>He Explains himself concerning the Sacrament of the Altar</i>	320, A
<i>The Heresies laid to his Charge</i>	lb. F
<i>Proceedings against his Followers in Rich. II's Reign</i>	458

# F I N I S.



## APPENDIX.

**E**dwardus Dei Gratia Rex Angliæ, Dominus Hiberniæ, & Dux Aquitaniæ, Vicecomiti Eborum Salutem. Cum Defuncto jam celebris memoriæ Domino **Henrico** Rege Patre nostro, ad nos Regni gubernaculum Successione Hereditariâ, \* ac Procerum Regni voluntate, & Fidelitate nobis præstita sit devolutum, per quod Nomine nostro qui in exhibitione Justitiæ & Pacis conseruatione omnibus & singulis de ipso Regno sumus exnunc debitores, pacem nostram dicti Magnates, & Fideles nostri jam fecerant Proclamari. Tibi præcipimus quod per totam Ballivam tuam in singulis Civitatibus, & Burgis, Feriis, Mercatis, & locis aliis pacem nostram publicè clamari, & firmiter teneri facias inhibendo omnibus & singulis sub periculo exheredationis, vitæ & membrorum pacem nostram infringere præsumat. Nos enim omnibus & singulis in omnibus Juribus & rebus ipsos contingentibus contra quoscunq; tam majores quam minores parati sumus & erimus plenam auctore Domino Justiciam exhibere. Testibus *W. Ebor. Archiepiscopo, E. Cornub. & Gloucest. Comitibus apud Westm. vicesimo tertio die Novemb. Anno Regni nostri primo.*

*Consimiles literæ diriguntur singulis Vicecomitibus per Angliam.*

**E**dwardus Dei Gratia Rex Angliæ, Dominus Hiberniæ, & Dux Aquitaniæ, omnibus ad quos præsentis literæ pervenerint Salutem; Cum defuncto jam celebris memoriæ Domino **Henrico** Rege Patre nostro (cujus animæ propitiatur Altissimus) ad nos Regni gubernaculum Successione hereditariâ pervenerit, ob quod pacem nostram nomine Regio firmiter observandam solempniter & publice fecimus proclamari, ac **Prelati, Comites, Barones, & cæteri, Proceres** regni Sacramentum fidelitatis, & alia quæ ratione coronæ & dignitatis regiæ, ab ipsis fieri seu præstari, nobis in absentia nostra potuerunt, plenarie & sine omissione aliqua \* **prompte & libenti animo** nobis præstiterint; Ac dilectus & fidelis noster **Leulinus filius Griffini Principis Walliæ**, nobis consimile Sacramentum fidelitatis præstare teneatur, dedimus dilectis nobis in Christo, *Abbatibus de Dore, & de Hagenham*, nomine nostro potestatem recipiendi fidelitatem ipsius **Leulini**. Ita tamen quod si non ambo ipsorum *Abbatum* potuerint interesse, alter eorum, qui præsens fuerit, nihilominus plenam habeat potestatem recipiendi nomine nostro fidelitatem **Leulini** prædicti. In cujus rei testimonium has literas nostras fieri fecimus Patentes. Datas per manum **Walteri de Berton Cancellarii nostri** apud novum Templum *Londini, 29 die Novemb. Anno Regni nostri primo.*

N. 1.  
Claus. 1. Ed. 1.  
M. 11. de pace  
Regis Edwar.  
Proclamandâ.  
\* See the meaning of the Words (ac procerum Regni voluntate) in the next Record.

N. 2.  
Bundela Bre-  
vium, &c. An.  
1. Ed. 1. N. 1.  
in the Tower.

\* These words (prompte & libenti animo) expound and give the meaning of the Words in the former Writ, (ac procerum Regni voluntate) i. e. readily, freely, on their own accord, without Direction, or Command.



## The Return to this Writ.

**E**Xcellenti viro, & omni veneratione dignissimo, Domino **W.** de **Berton.** Domini Regis Cancellario; suus semper R. **Speing-**  
**hose** Constabularius de **Montgomeri** Salutem, & devotam cum omni ho-  
nore Reverentiam. Venerandæ Dominationi vestræ duxi significandum.  
Quod viri religiosi de **Dore** & de **Hagenham** Abbates juxta Mandatum  
Domini Regis per vos eis directum, in Octab. Sancti **Hilarii** persona-  
liter accesserunt ad vadum ultra **Montgomeri**, obviam Domino **L. filio**  
**Griffini Principis Walliæ**, ad accipiendum ab eo, nomine dicti Domini  
Regis Sacramentum fidelitatis, quibus associavi quosdam de homini-  
bus Ballivæ meæ, qui apud dictum vadum multum ultra Horam Nonæ  
(*much beyond Noon*) adventum dicti Domini expectantes: nec ipse  
venit, nec aliquod Mandatum eis direxit (*sent them any Message*) va-  
leat Veneranda dominatio vestra semper in Domino.

N. 3.  
Pat. 1. E. 1.  
M. 18. de Tal-  
lagio assidendo

**R**EX Magistro **Richardo** de **Clifford** Eschætori suo citra **Tren-**  
**tam**, salutem. Sciatis quod assignavimus vos ad assidendum  
**Tallagium** in Villâ **Bristoll**, & ad talliandum omnes illos in eadem  
Villâ separatim per capita, vel in Communi prout in aliis tallagiis villæ  
prædictæ fieri consuevit. Et ideo vobis mandamus, quod præmissa  
faciatis in formâ prædictâ. Mandavimus enim omnibus & singulis de  
Villâ prædictâ quod vobis ad hoc intendentes sint, & respondentes  
sicut prædictum est. In cujus, &c. Dat. per manum **W. de Berton**,  
apud **Westm.** vicesimo septimo die **Januarii**.

N. 4.  
Pat. 1. E. 1.  
M. 16. de con-  
servatione pa-  
cis per Angl.

**R**EX Vicecomiti **Surr' & Suffex** salutem. Intelleximus ex cla-  
mosâ & gravi querimoniâ multorum, quod plures Malefactores in  
Ballivâ tuâ commorantes, & per eam discurrentes, *deprædationes, ho-*  
*miciidia, & alia enormia* perpetrant, contra pacem nostram, quam tu  
ipse in prædictâ Ballivâ tuâ specialiter conservare teneris. Et quia sa-  
tis constat, quod hujusmodi malefactores diu in Ballivâ tuâ morari, &  
receptari non possent, si tu pro pace nostrâ ibidem conservandâ diligen-  
tiam apponeres, sicut deberes; de sicut posse Comitatum prædicto-  
rum in hujusmodi necessitatibus, ad tuam esse summonitionem & di-  
strictionem. Tibi præcipimus, quod sicut teipsum diligis, & sicut de  
receptione & consensu prædictorum malefactorum esse volueris liber  
& immunis, & ne ad te tanquam inde culpabilem nos capere debe-  
amus, talem & tantam diligentiam contra hujusmodi malefactores ap-  
ponas, tam per te, quàm per posse Comitatum tuorum prædictorum,  
ne tibi post præsens mandatum nostrum imputari debeat, quod per tuam  
negligentiam & consensum talia in tuâ Ballivâ amodo perpetrentur.  
Scire etiam facias omnibus Ballivis, sive in libertatibus, aut alibi in  
Comitatibus tuis, & clamari quod ipsi eandem diligentiam pro con-  
servatione pacis nostræ in suis custodiis apponant, & taliter se habeant  
in hac parte, ne pro hujusmodi *deprædationibus, homicidiis, & trans-*  
*gressionibus* ad eos tanquam inde culpabiles nos capere debeamus. Et  
si qui de Comitatibus prædictis, sive de libertatibus, aut alii in hoc  
negligenter se habuerint, aut tibi ad tuum mandatum ad hoc assistere  
noluerint, tu hoc nobis sicut teipsum indempnem & absque periculo  
conservare volueris, sine dilatione significes, ut contra eos, tanquam  
hujusmodi *deprædationibus, & homicidiis* consentientes exinde proce-  
damus. In cujus, &c. Dat. &c. apud **Westm.** sexto die **Junii**.

**Edwardus**



**E**wardus Dei gratia Rex Angliæ, Dominus Hiberniæ, & Dux Aquitaniæ dilecto Clerico & Cancellario suo **Waltero de Berton** Salutem. Super diligentiam, quam circa nostra & Regni nostri negotia apposuitis *Grates* vobis referimus *speciales*, rogantes, quatenus id, quod laudabiliter inchoastis, feliciter continuare curetis, in his, quæ ad officium vestrum pertinent. Cuicumq; facientes *Iustitiam* exhiberi, alios autem ad id pariter inducentes; non *parcentes conditioni* aut *Statui* cuiuscunq;. Quin *Rigor* Juris ipsos coherceat, quos *equitatis suavitas* nequit ab injuriis cohibere. Ea namq; quæ ritè feceritis circa ista faciemus (disponente Altissimo) robur firmitatis constantissimè obtinere. Dat. apud **Melun**. Super *Seckene* (i. e.) (*super Sequanam*) or the River *Seyne* in *France*. Nono die Augusti, Anno Regni nostri primo.

N. 5.  
Bundela Bre-  
vium in Turri  
Lond. N. 11.

**B** **R**egi Franc. Rex Angl. Salutem. Mandatum vestrum nuper recepimus continens, quòd ad instans *Parliamentum* vestrum, omnium Sanctorum, viz. in *Craftino* quindennæ Festivitatis *Beati Martini* in hieme *cognitioni* causæ, quæ vertitur in *Curiâ* vestrà inter nobiles viros, **Robertum**. Ducem *Burgundiæ*, ex unâ parte, & **Robertum** Comitem *Nivernensem*, & **Pobendam** uxorem ejus Comitissam *Nivernensem*, ex alterâ super *Ducatum* de *Burgundia* ac pertinentias, nec non processibus super hoc habendis *personaliter* interessemus; verum quia ob *ardua Regni nostri negotia*, quæ habemus tractanda ad illum diem tunc vobis accedere non valemus; *Dominationi* vestræ supplicamus, quatenus absentiam nostram in hac parte si placet habere velitis favorabiliter excusatam, dantes insuper, dilectis & fidelibus nostris **Mauritio** de **Credome**, **Ottoni** de **Grandisono**, & **Rogero** de **Clifford**. hujusmodi excusationem nostram plenius faciendam, cum nostro mandato speciali *plenariam potestatem*. Teste Rege apud *Westminster* undecimo die Novembris.

N. 6.  
Pat. 3. Ed. 1.  
M. 2

**D** **R**EX Vicecomiti Norf. & Suff. salutem. Quia **Lewelinus** filius **Griffini**, & alii *Walenses Complices* sui inimici, & *Rebelle* nostri, totiens temporibus nostris, & *Progenitorum* nostrorum Regni Angliæ, pacem Regni turbant, & rebellionem suam, & maliciam jam resumptam continuare non desistunt, animo indurato, propter quod negotium, quod ad ipsorum versutiam reprimendam jam incepimus *de consilio procerum*; & *magnatum* regni nostri, necnon & totius *Communitatis* ejusdem ad præsens proponimus, ad nostram & totius regni pacem & tranquillitatem perpetuam Domino concedente finaliter terminare commodius etiam & decentius esse perpendimus; quòd nos & incole terre nostre ad ipsorum maliciam totaliter destruendam, pro communi utilitate laboribus & expensis fatigemur, hac vice licet onus difficile videatur, quàm hujusmodi *turbatione* per *Walenses* ipsos nunc habitâ pro voluntate sua futuris temporibus cruciari, prout tempore nostro, & *Progenitorum* nostrorum contigit. Manifestè tibi præcipimus, *firmiter injungentes* quod venire facies coram nobis in *Octab. Sancti Hilarii* apud **Northampton**, aut coram fidelibus nostris, quos ad hoc duxerimus deputand. Omnes illos de *Balliva* tua ad arma potentes & aptos, qui habent ultra viginti libratas terre & qui nobiscum in expeditione nostrâ Wall. non existunt, & *quatuor milites* de utroq; Comitatu prædicto pro *Communitatibus* eorund. Comitatum habentes plenariam potestatem. Et de *qualibet Civitate, Burgo, Villa Mercatoriâ*, duos

N. 7.  
Rot. Wall. 11.  
Ed. 1. M. 4.  
Dors. N. 1.



homines similiter potestatem habentes pro *Communitatibus* eorund. ad audiend. & faciend. ea, quæ sibi ex parte nostra faciemus ostendi. *Et nulli de Ballivâ tua ultra viginti libratas terre habenti, & ad arma potenti, & apto, amore, favore, & munere, seu timore, vel alia quacunque ratione parcere vel differre præsumas. Nec etiam aliquem ultra viginti libratas terre non habentem, licet ad arma aptus, seu potens fuerit, coram nobis, vel fidelibus nostris prædictis aliquatenus venire facias ex causa prædicta.* Et de nominibus omnium illorum, quos sic venire feceris, Nos vel prædictos fideles nostros, ad prædictos diem & locum per præfatos quatuor milites reddas certiores & habeas ibi nomina quatuor militum illorum. Et hoc breve & hæc omnia sicut te & tua diligis facere non omittas. Teste Rege apud Rothelan. vicesimo quarto die Novembris.

Eodem modo mandatum est Vicecomitibus, Nott. & Derb. Salop. Staff. Cant. Hunt. Essex. Hertf. Buck. Bedf. Somerset. Dorf. Surr. Suff. War. Leic. Oxon. Berk. Lanc. Midd. Northampt. Rotel. Lincoln. Cornub. Devon. Wilts. Heref. Wigorn. Glouc. & Southt. quod venire facias apud Northampt. & Vicecomitibus Eborum, Cumbr. Westmer. Northumbr. & Lanc. quod venire facias, &c. apud Eborum.

N. 8.  
Clauf. 10. Ed.  
1. M. 4. intus  
de decima ex-  
tra Regnum  
non deferenda.

**R**EX dilecto Consanguineo & Fideli suo **Edmundo, Comiti Cornubiæ** salutem. Quia quibusdam certis de causis, nolumus quod decima sex annorum nuper a Clero Regni nostri in subsidium terræ sanctæ concessa & jam in eodem Regno collecta, ad præsens extra idem Regnum deferatur, vobis mandamus quod venire faciatis coram vobis omnes mercatores London. tam de Societatibus quàm alios, & eisdem injungatis, & sub periculo amissionis vitæ & membrorum, & omnium bonorum suorum, quæ possident in Regno nostro, inhibeatis ex parte nostrâ, ne Pecuniam de dictâ decima proveniente, nullo modo deferant, aut deferri faciant, seu permittant extra Regnum. Et si quos Mercatores aut alios Pecuniam de dictâ decima proveniente, extra dictum regnum deferre volentes inveniri contigerit, tum ipsos cum dictâ Pecuniâ arrestari, & salvo custodiri faciatis, donec aliud inde a nobis habueritis in mandatis. Teste rege apud Hertlebir. 24 die Maii. Et mandatum est Majori & Vicecomitibus London. &c. Item mandatum est Stephano de Penchestre Custodi Quinq; Portuum, &c.

N. 9.  
Pat. 17. Ed. 1.  
M. 3. 4.

**R**EX Prælati, Magnatibus, ac toti Communitati Regni Scotiæ salutem & dilectionem sinceram. Quia negotia quæ contingunt Karissimam Consanguineam nostram, **Margaretam Dominam, & Reginam regni ejusdem** ad honorem Dei, & tranquillitatem totius Communitatis ejusdem regni, ac commodum & prolectum ipsius consanguineæ nostræ, bene & fideliter prosperari, totis desideriis peroptamus; vos requirimus & rogamus attentè, quatinus Custodibus ad regimen dicti regni nomine prædictæ nostræ consanguineæ deputatis, taliter intendentes sitis & obedientes. Quod nos & Domina vestra antedicta possumus & debeamus fidelitatem vestrum merito habere commendatam, proponimus siquidem, &c. ad partes Scotiæ aliquos de nostro consilio destinare per quos, ac etiam per ipsius terræ custodes de statu ejusdem regni, quem appetimus tranquillum & pacificum semper esse, certificaverimus, Deo dante. Dat apud Clarendon. sexto die Novembr.

*These Letters were also entred upon the Close Roll.*



**R**EX venerabilibus Patribus *Willielmo Sancti Andree, & Roberto Glasneusi Episcopis*, ac nobilibus viris *Johanni Comyn, & Jacobo Senescallo Custodibus Regni Scotie, cæterisque Episcopis, Abbatibus, Prioribus totique Clero, Comitibus, Baronibus, ac toti Communitati regni ejusdem salutem.* Cum ad leges & consuetudines *Regni Scotie* observandas, ex Sacramenti, præstiti debito teneamus, Nos de probata fidelitate, & notâ industriâ prædilecti nostri *venerabilis Patris, Domini Antonii, Dei Gratia Dunelmensis Episcopi* plenissimè confidentes, ad pacem, tranquillitatem, & prolectum totius regni *Scotie*, ac etiam ad Supportationem oneris cæteris ipsius regni *Scotie* incumbendis, eundem Episcopum ad vos mittimus, & tenore præsentium assignamus, ad tenendum in eodem regno locum, charissimæ consanguineæ nostræ, *Domine Margareta, filiæ magnifici Principis Domini Erici, Dei Gratia Regis Norwegie illustris, Domine & Regine vestræ*, ac charissimi nati nostri *Edwardi* & ad justificandum, & ratificandum regnum prædictum, una cum cæteris ipsius custodibus, de consilio *Prelatorum & Magnatum* ejusdem regni, secundum leges & consuetudines inibi hætenus observatas. Quare *Universitatem vestram* attentius requirimus, & rogamus, quatinus ob honorem nostrum, *Domine vestræ, & nati nostri*, eundem Episcopum ad præmissa benignè & Curialiter, sitis intendentes, & obedientes eidem in hiis omnibus, quæ ad *Gubernationem & statum* ipsius regni *pacisum* requiruntur. In cujus, &c. Dat. apud North. 28 die Augusti.

N. 10.  
Pat. 18. Ed. 1.  
M. 9.

**A** Tous iceulx qui ceste present Lettre verront ou orront *Florence Counte de Holland, Robert de Brus Seigneur du val Danaund, Jan Baliol Seigneur de Galewie, Jan de Passings Seigneur de Abergenne, Jan Comyn Seigneur de Badenaw, Patrique de Dun bar, Counte de la Marche, Jan Alesy pur sen pere, Michol de Seules, & Guillaume de Ros, Saluz en Dieu.* Con nous entendons d'aver Droyt en Royaume de Escoce celle droyt munstrer, chalanger & averer devant celuy qui plus de poer Jurisdiction, & reeson eust de trier nostre droyt, & le noble Prince Sire *Edward* par le Grace de Dieu, Rey d'Angleterre nous eit enforme per bons & suffisant reesons que a ly appent & aver dict la Sovereing Seignorie du dit Royaume d' Escoce, & la conifance de Oir, Trier, & Terminer nostre Droyt. Nous de nostre propre volonte sans nulle mane de force ou distresse volons, otrions, & grantons de receiver droyt devan luy come Sovereing Seigneur de la terre. Et volons ja le menis, & promettons que nous averons etendrons ferm & stable son fait, & qui celuy empertera le Royaume a qui droit le durra devant luy. En Testimoyne de ceste chose nous avons mis nous Seales a' cest Escript fait & donne a' Norham le Mardi prochien apres le ascenscion l'an de Grace 1291.

N. 11.  
Rot. de Superioritate Regis Anglie in regno Scotie, &c. Annis 19, 20, 21, 22, 23. Ed. 1. in Tur. Lond. Et Mat. West. fol. 415. N. 10, 20.

**A** Tous iceulx, &c. (as above) *Florence Counte de Holland, &c. (as before)* Saluz en Dieu. Com nous avons otrie & grant de nostre bon volonte, & com une assent sans nulle destresse a Noble Prince Sire *Edward*, par la Grace de Dieu Rey d' Angleterre quil come *Sovereign Seigneur de la terre D'escoce* pensoier, trier & terminer, nos *Chalenges & nos Demandes* que nous entendons *Munstrer & Averrer* pur nostre droyt en la Royaume D'escoce & droyt receiver devant luy, Come *Sovereign Seigneur de la terre* promettant Sale meins que son fet aurun & tendaron terme & stable, & qui

N. 12.  
Ib. in Rot. &c. & Mat. West. N. 40, 30.



qui l'emportera le Royaume a qui droyt le durra devant luy. Mes pur ceo que l'avant dit Rey d'Angleterre, ne püst nule manere conifance fair ne accomplier sans judgement ne dict estre sauns execution, ne execution ne peut il feire duement sauns la possession & seysine de nefme la terre, & de chasteaus : Nous volons, otrions, & grantons, que il come Sovereine Seigneur a per fair les chose avant dits & a la seysine de soule la terre & de chasteaus D'escocce, tant que droyt soyt fait & performy a Demandons en tel manere que avant ceo qu'il & la seysine avant dit face bon fuerte & suffisant as demandans, & a Gardeins, & a comune de Royaume D'escocce, a feir la reversion de mesme la Royaume, & chasteaus ou toute la Royaunte, Dignite, Seigneurie, Franchices, Custume, Dreitures, Leys, Usages & Possessions, & toutes maneres de apurtenances en mesmes, l'estat q'il estoient quant la seysine luy fust baille & livere a celuy qui le droyt emportera par jugement de la Royaume save au Rey d'Angleterre, le homage de celuy qui serra Roy Isynt que la reversion soit fait dedens les de uzmois, aprez le jour que le droyt sera trie & affirme & que les issues de mesme la terre en le sone tens receus soient sauvement, mis en depos & bien garder par le maine le Chamberleyn D'escocce qui ore est & de celuy qui serra assigne a luy de par le Rey d'Angleterre, & de sous lour seaus saune renable sustenance de la terre & des chasteaus & de Ministers du Royaume, en Testimoyne de ceste chose avant dit nous avons meis nos seaus a' cest escript fait & donne Norham le Mercredie, apres l'Ascension l'an du Grace 1291.

*This also was sent to several Monasteries by the King's Command, to be Inserted into their Chronicles for perpetual memory.*

N. 13.  
In Rot. de superioritate  
Reg. Angl. &c.

**E** **D**wardus, Dei Gratia, Rex Angliae, &c. & Superior Dominus Regni Scotiae dilectis & fidelibus suis **W**illielmo Sancti Andreae, & **R**oberto Glasguensi Episcopis, **J**ohanni Comyn, **J**acobo Seneschallo Scotiae, & **B**riano, filio Alani, Custodibus suis Regni Scotiae, salutem. Cum **J**ohannes de **B**aliolo nuper in Parlamento nostro apud **B**erewicum super **T**wedam, venisset coram nobis, & petivisset praedictum Regnum Scotiae sibi per nos adjudicari & seisinam ipsius regni sibi ut proximiori **H**eredi **M**argaritae filiae Regis Norwegiae, Dominae Scotiae & **N**eptis, quondam **A**lexandri ultimi Regis Scotiae jure Successionis liberari. Ac nos auditis, & intellectis Petitionibus, & rationibus tam praedicti **J**ohannis quam aliorum petentium praedictum regnum. Et eisdem Petitionibus, & rationibus diligenter examinatis, invenerimus praefatum **J**ohannem de **B**aliolo esse propinquiores **H**eredem praedictae **M**argaritae quoad dictum Regnum Scotiae obtinendum, propter quod idem regnum Scotiae & seisinam ejusdem eidem **J**ohanni salvo jure nostro & haeredum nostrorum reddimus. Vobis mandamus quod seisinam praedicti regni Scotiae cum omnibus pertinentiis suis infra idem regnum existentibus, & quae ad manus nostras tanquam ad Superiorem Dominum ipsius regni Scotiae post mortem praefatae **M**argaritae devenerunt, sine dilatione praedicto **J**ohanni de **B**aliolo deliberari faciatis, salvo jure nostro & haeredum nostrorum cum voluerimus inde loqui. Salvis & etiam nobis **R**elevis & **D**ebitis quibus cunq; quae de exitibus supradicti regni Scotiae, usq; ad diem confecti-  
**F**onis praesentium debebantur seu deberi poterunt quoquomodo. Teste me ipso apud **B**erewick super **T**wedam, 13 die Novembris, regni nostri vicefimo.

In



**I**N Nomine Domini Amen. Anno à Nativitate ejusdem 1296. in dictione nonâ Mensis Maii 13. præsentibus venerabili in Christo Patri Domino **Antonio** permissione divina *Episcopo Dunelmensi*, ac nobilibus viris Domino **Johanne Warren**, **Rogero Northfolch**, **Pumphredo Hereford**, **W. de Warwick**, **Patricio de Dunbar & Marchiâ**, **Gilberto de Anegos Comitibus**, **Testibus vocatis**, & rogatis cum aliis tam *Baronibus*, quam *Militibus*, quam *Clericis & Laicis* in multitudine copiosa, præsentem etiam me **Notario** Subscripto. Nobilis Vir Dominus **Jacobus Seneschallus Scotiæ Miles**, non vi, nec metu coactus, ut dicebat, sed spontaneâ sua & libera voluntate venit ad fidem & voluntatem Domini Regis Angliæ, & confederationes, contractus, conventiones, & pacta quocunq; nomine censeantur, si quæ ipsius nomine vel consensu cum Rege Francorum vel sibi adhærentibus contra dictum Dominum suum, Dominum Regem Angliæ unquam initæ extitissent, quantum in ipso fuit & ipsum contingebant vel contingere poterant quovismodo pro se & suis perpetuo annullavit, & invalida, & nulla fore pronunciavit, sponteq; purè & absolutè quatenus de facto processerant, eisdem cum omni commodo, quod exinde sibi & suis poterit aliquàlter pervenire expresse renunciavit organo vocis suæ. Et tactis Sacrosanctis, & osculatis Dei Evangeliiis dicto Domino suo Regi Angliæ fidelitatem fecit in subscriptâ formâ & super fidelitate suâ sic factâ suas Patentes Literas sub nomine suâ conceptas conficiens, veri sui Sigilli impressione pendente consignavit; quarum Literarum tenor in omnibus & per omnia est talis.

N. 14.  
Rot. de jurament. Homag. & Fidelit. &c.  
Rot. Scot. 24.  
Edw. 1. pecia prima.

**A** Tous ceaus qui cestes Lettres verront ou orront **James Seneschal D'escocce** saluz, pur ceo que nous sumes venit a la foy e la volente du autres Noble Prince Chier Seigneur Sire **Edward**, par la Grace Dieu Roy D'engleterre, Seigneur D'irland, & Duc's D'aquitaine, nous promettons pur nous e pur nos Heires sur peïn de Cors e D'avoir e sur quant que nous pensoms encoure que nous ferroms en sa eide, e li serveiroms bien & Leawment contre totes gentz qui perront vivre & morir totes les foiz que nous ferroms requis ou garniz de par nostre Seigneur le Roy D'engleterre avant dit ou de par ses Heires; E que nous leur Damage ne scavoms que nous nel destorbeoms a tot nostre poer e le leur faceoms affavoir, e a cestes Choses tenir e garder obligeoms nous e nos Heires e tous nos biens e outre ceo avoms jurez sur Seints Evangelies. En Testmoyance de que chose nous avoms fait faire cestes Lettres overtes Seales de nostre Seal. Donees a **Rocksburgh** le trezim jour de Maii, lan de regne nostre Seigneur le Roy D'engleterre avant dit vintisme quart.

**P**OST hæc vero (*That is, after the King, and the Steward of Scotland, with many Noblemen, and others, had Renounced, done Homage, and Sworn Fealty,*) Indictio Domini Regis Angliæ Parlamento consentientibus utriusq; Regni Nobilibus & Prelatis in Octavis assumptionis Beatae Mariæ Virginis, Anno Domini & Indictione prænotatis (i. e. 1296 Indictione 9.) apud **Berwic super Twede**, congregatisq; ibidem prædicti regni Scotiæ tam *Episcopis*, *Abbatibus*, *Prioribus* cum aliis Ecclesiarum Prelatis quam Nobilibus viris **Comitibus**,

N. 15.  
Ibid. Rot. Scot.  
24, 25, 26. Ed.  
1. de juramen.  
& fidelit. &c.



bus, Baronibus, & aliis Militibus, & Proceribus dicti regni cum Communitatibus Civitatum & Villarum, vicesimo octavo die Augusti, presentibus Nobilibus viris Domino Johanne Warrenie, Domino Rogero Northfolck, Domino Willielmo de Warwic, Patrio de Dunbar & Marchia, & Domino Gilberto de Anegos Comitibus: Domino Johanne de Hastings, Domino Johanne Wake, Domino Hugone le Despenser, Domino Briano filio Alani, Domino Petro Corbett, Radulpho, filio Gulielmi, Johanne, filio Marmaduci, Waltero de Hundercumbe, & Roberto de Hilton. Baronibus, cum Domino Rogero Brabanson, Milite & Magistro, Johanne de Cadomo, Publico autoritate Papæ Notario, Testibus ad Subscripta vocatis specialiter, & rogatis cum aliis tam Militibus & Clericis quam Laicis in Multitudine copiosa, & me Notario Subscripto, (i. e. Andrea Gulielmi de Tang, Clerico, &c.) venerunt in dicto Domini Regis Angliæ Parlamento memorato, non vi, nec metu coacti set spontaneâ & liberâ suâ voluntate supradicti Nobiles & Prælati dicti Regni Scotiæ, nec non & Milites, Proceres, & Regnicolæ, qui præfato Domino Regi Angliæ fidelitatem fecerunt, ut præmittitur, diebus & locis subscriptis, unâ cum omnibus, & singulis nominatis inferius, & fidelitatem eandem prædicto Domino Regi Angliæ prius factam ut prædicitur, cum revocatione, cassatione, irritatione, & annulatione, confederationum, contractuum, conventionum & pactorum quorumcunq; nomine censeantur, si quæ unquam suo nomine vel consensu clâm, vel palâm, cum Domino Philippo Rege Francorum, contra dictum Dominum Regem Angliæ initæ tuerant, qualitercunq; sive per ipsorum vel Domini Johannis de Baliolo, quondam Regis Scotorum Procuratores vel Nuncios, generales vel speciales destinatos in Franciam; & renunciaciones easdem factas (ut superscribitur) innovarunt, omologarunt, laudârunt & etiam approbarunt. Et de communi omnium Prælatorum, & Nobilium dicti regni Scotiæ consensu unanimi, & voluntate præfato Domino Regi Angliæ Fidelitatem iteratâ & Homagium pro omnibus Terris suis infra dictum regnum Scotiæ existentibus fecerunt, & tactis Sacrosanctis & osculatis Dei Evangelis in forma Subscriptâ fidelitatem suam firmarunt corporalis vinculo juramenti, & super fidelitatibus suis & homagiis sic factis, sicut infra patet, iterum suas Literas Patentes fecerunt suis Sigillis pendentibus consignatas. Quarum Literarum incipiendo primo ad Prælatos, Episcopos, Abbates, & Priores, subsequenter vero ad Nobiles, Comites, Barones, & alios Milites, & sic ultimo descendendo ad Communitates Villarum, & alios Incolas regni Scotiæ memorati seriatim in omnibus & per omnia Tales sunt Tenores.

**A** Touz ceaus qui cestres Lettres verront ou orront Robert Evesq; de Glasca, Henry Evesq; de Abirden, Thomas Evesq; de Candida Casa, saluz. Pur ceo que nous sumes venuz a la foi, e a la volunte due tres Noble Prince nostre Chier Seigneur Sire Edward par la Grace de Dieu, &c. Nous promettons par nous e pur nous Successors sur peine de Cors, e d'avoir, &c. (and as in that before of James, Seneschal of Scotland, verbatim) e a cestres choses tenir, e garder nos Obligioms nous, e nos Successors e tous nos biens, e oultre ceo avoms jurez sur Saints Evangils, &c. En Testimoignance des ques choses nous avoms fait fair cestres Lettres overtes de nos Seales. Donez a Berwic sur Twede, le vint Eutisme jour d' August



gust lan du Reign nostre Seigneur Roy D'engleterre avant dit vintisme quart.

*After this manner are all the Fealties of the Bishops, Abbots, Priors, Earls, Barons, Knights, Communities of Cities, and Towns, and other Inhabitants of Scotland Recorded.*

re  
1

A

**R**EX Venerabili in Christo Patri R. eadem gratia Cantuariensi Archiepiscopo totius Angliæ Primati, salutem. Vestra Paternitas plene novit qualiter vos, & alii *Prælati & Clerus* regni nostri apud Westminster (*On Sunday before St. Andrew, or the thirtieth of November, then last past, before the date of this Writ*) ultimo congregati in concessione decimæ Redituum, & Beneficiorum vestrorum Ecclesiasticorum pro defensione regni ejusdem usq; ad Festum Sancti Michaelis proxime futurum nobis facta, & a nobis sub spe uberioris subsidii in futurum a vobis & aliis præstandi admista, bonum & sufficiens nobis pro futuro tempore subsidium ob eandem causam, nisi interim inter *Regem Franciæ & Nos* pacem reformari vel treugas iniri contingeret dare promissistis unanimiter liberaliter & libenter; cujus quidem reformationi Pacis vel initioni treugarum dictus Rex Franciæ hæcenus non consensit; Quocirca vobis Mandamus in fide, & dilectione quibus nobis tenemini firmiter injungentes quod in crastino animarum proximè futuro apud *Sanctum Edmundum* personaliter interfitis præmunientes Priorem & Capitulum Ecclesiæ vestræ Archidiaconum, totumq; Clerum vestræ Dioceseos facientesq; quod Idem Prior & Archidiaconus in propriis Personis suis & dictum *Capitulum* per *Unum*, idemq; Clerus per *duos idoneos* Procuratores plenam & sufficientem potestatem ab ipsis Capitulo & Clero habentes una cum vobiscum interfint modis omnibus tunc ibidem *ad Ordinandum de quantitate & modo subsidii memorati*. Teste Rege apud Berwick super Twede, vicesimo sexto die Augusti.

N. 16.  
Claus. 24. Ed.  
1. M. 7. Dors.  
de Parliament.  
tenendo.

D

**B**enefacius, &c. Ad perpetuam rei memoriam; Clericis Laicos infestos opido tradit antiquitas: Quod & præsentium experimenta temporum manifeste declarant, dum suis finibus non contenti nituntur in vetitum, & ad illicita sua fræna relaxant, nec prudenter attendunt quomodo sit iis in Clericos Ecclesiasticave Personas & bona interdicta potestas: quinimmo Ecclesiarum *Prælati, Ecclesiasticave Personis regularibus & secularibus* imponunt onera gravia, ipsos talliant & eis collecta imponunt, & ab ipsius suoq; proventuum vel bonorum dimidiam decimam seu vicesimam vel quamvis aliam portionem aut quotam exigunt & extorquent, eosq; moliuntur multipharie subjicere servituti, & suæ subdere ditioni. Et quod dolendo referimus nonnulli Ecclesiarum *Prælati, Ecclesiasticave persone* trepidantes ubi trepidandum non est, transitoriam pacem quærentes, plus timentes *Majestatem Temporalem* offendere, quam *æternam*, talium abusibus non tam temerariè quam improvide adquiescunt, *sedis Apostolicæ Auctoritate* non optentâ. **N**OS igitur talibus actibus obviare volentes de fratrum nostrorum consilio *Apostolicâ Auctoritate statuimus*, quod quicumque *Prælati Ecclesiasticave persone*, religiosi vel seculares, quorumcumq; ordinum, conditionis, sive status, *collectas vel tallias*, dimidiam, decimam, vicesimam seu centesimam suorum & Ecclesiarum suarum proventuum vel bonorum Laicis solverint, vel se soluturos con-

N. 17.  
H. de Knighton, Col. 2489.  
N. 60. & in  
Biblioth. Cot.  
Tiber. E. 4. N. 2

F

B

cesserint,



cesserint, aut quamvis aliam quantitatem, portionem, aut quicquam ipsorum proventuum vel bonorum æstimationem vel valorem ipsorum *sub adjutorii mutui, subventionis, subsidii, vel doni nomine*, seu quovis alio timore vel modo vel quæsito colore, absq; auctoritate sedis ejusdem, necnon **Imperatores, Reges seu Principes, Duces, seu Comites, vel Barones, Proceres, Capitanei, Officiales vel Rectores**, quocumq; nomine censeantur, civitatum, castrorum, vel quorumcumq; locorum constitutorum ubilibet & quivis alius cujuscumq; Provincie, conditionis, & status qui talia imposuerint, & exegerint vel receperint, aut apud ædes sacras deposita Ecclesiarum vel Ecclesiasticarum personarum ubilibet arellaverint, seiserint, vel occupari mandaverint, aut occupata, seisa, seu arellata receperint, necnon omnes qui scienter in prædictis dederint consilium, auxilium, vel favorem publice vel occulte, eo ipso **Sententiam Excommunicationis** incurrant. **Universitates** quæ in hiis culpabiles fuerint **Ecclesiastico** supponimus **interdicto**.

*Prælati & Ecclesiasticis Personis* in virtute obedientie & sub depositionis pœnâ districte mandantes ut talibus absq; expressa licentiâ dictæ sedis nullatenus adquiescant. Quodq; prætextu cujuscumq; obligationis, promissionis, & concessionis factarum hætenus vel faciendarum in antea priusquam hujusmodi constitutio, prohibitio, seu præceptum ad noticiam ipsorum pervenerit nil solvant, nec supradicti seculares aliquod quoquo modo recipiant. Et si solverint vel prædicti receperint, in sententiam Excommunicationis incidant ipso facto. A supradictis autem Excommunicationis & interdicti sententiis nullus absolvi valeat, præterquam in mortis articulo, absq; sedis Apostolicæ Auctoritate & Licentiâ speciali. Cum nostræ intentionis existat tam horrendum secularium potestatum *absum*, nullatenus sub dissimulatione transire, non obstantibus quibuscumq; privilegiis, sub quibuscumq; tenoribus seu modo aut verborum conceptione concessis *Imperatoribus, Regibus, & aliis* supradictis, quæ contra præmissa in nullo volumus alicui vel aliquibus suffragari. Nulli igitur hominum liceat hanc paginam nostræ constitutionis, prohibitionis seu præcepti infringere seu ausu temerario contraire. Dat. Romæ ad Sanctum Petrum VI. Kalendarum Marcii, Pontificatus nostri Anno secundo.

Feb. 25. 1297.  
24. Ed. I.

N. 18.  
Clauſ. 25. Ed.  
1. M. 23. De  
Laicis feodis  
Cleric. capiend.  
in man. Reg.

**R**EX Vicecomiti Lincoln. Salutem. Propter aliquas certas causas tibi precipimus, quod omnia *Laica feoda* totius *Cleri* de Balliva tua tam **Archiepiscoporum, Episcoporum, & Religiosorum** quam aliorum *Clericorum* quorumcumq; cujuscumq; status existant una cum *bonis & catallis* in eisdem inventis, sine dilatione capias in manum nostram & ea salvo custodire facias, ita quod nec ipsi, nec aliquis per ipsos manum ad ea apponant, donec aliud inde preceperimus. Et hoc nullatenus omittas. Teste Rege apud Ely, duodecimo die Februarii.

Eodem modo mandatum est singulis Vicecomitibus per Angliam. Teste ut supra.

Edwardus



**E**Dwardus, &c. Capitaneo Marinariorum & eisdem Marinariis ac omnibus Ballivis & fidelibus suis ad quos presentes literæ pervenerint, salutem. Cum *Prælati & Clerus Ebor. & Karliolen. Civitatum & Dioecesium* prudenter intuentes inevitabilis necessitatis angustias quibus Ecclesiæ suæ & totum regnum Angliæ oculata fide exponuntur, & subjacent hiis diebus, usq; ad quintam partem Beneficiorum & bonorum suorum istius anni juxta taxationem nuper factam de Beneficiis Ecclesiasticis de quibus decima, ultimo in subsidium Terræ Sanctæ concessa, data fuit, ordinaverint & constituerint se ponere ad defensionem suam, & Ecclesiarum suarum, & ad *resistendum* machinationibus & invasionibus hostium, qui alias applicantes in dictum Regnum, Dei timore postposito, *Ecclesias combusserint, vasa sacra & alia ornamenta* divino dedicata cultui rapuerunt, personas Ecclesiasticas etiam decrepitas in eisdem inhumaniter trucidarunt, quiq; raparatis prioribus & novis & incognitis eidem regno navium & armorum adinventis generibus, ad invadendum regnum illud se fortius solito præpararunt. Nos ipsorum circumspectam providentiam commendantes, suscepimus in *protectionem & defensionem nostram specialem*, prædictos *Prælatos & Clerum*, & singulos eorundem homines, terras, res, redditus, & omnes possessiones suas: Et ideo vobis mandamus, quod prædictos *Prælatos & Clerum* & singulos eorum homines, terras, res, redditus, & omnes possessiones suas manuteneatis, protegatis, & defendatis, non inferentes eis, vel inferri permittentes injuriam, molestiam, dampnum, aut gravamen. Et si quid eis forisfactum fuerit, id eis sine dilatione emendari faciatis. In cujus, &c. usq; ad festum omnium sanctorum futur. prox. duratur. Nolumus autem, sed firmiter inhibemus, ne de *bladis seu aliis bonis & catallis* prædictorum *Prælatorum & Cleri*, seu alicujus eorum ubicunq; consistant ad opus nostrum aut aliorum quorumcumq; *sine licentia & voluntate* eorundem *Prælatorum & Clericorum* aliquid interim capiat, seu capi faciat, quo minus de eisdem bonis & catallis suis liberè disponere & ordinare, ac commodum suum facere possint, prout sibi melius viderit expedire. Teste meipso apud Walsyngham, 6 die Februarii, Anno regni nostri vicessimo quinto.

**R**EX omnibus Ballivis & Fidelibus suis ad quos, &c. Sciatis quod suscepimus in *protectionem & defensionem nostram specialem* dilectum *Clericum nostrum Itherium de Ingolisma Archidiaconum Bathon.* homines, terras, res, redditus & omnes possessiones suas. Et ideo vobis mandamus quod ipsum *Itherium*, homines, terras, res, redditus, & omnes possessiones suas manuteneatis, protegatis, & defendatis. Non inferentes eis vel inferri permittentes injuriam, molestiam, dampnum aut gravamen. Et si quid eis forisfactum fuerit, id, eis sine dilatione faciatis emendari. In cujus rei testimonium has literas nostras fieri fecimus patentes usq; ad festum omnium sanctorum proximo futurum duraturas. Nolumus autem sed firmiter inhibemus, ne de *bladis seu aliis bonis & catallis* ipsius *Itherii* ubicunq; consistant ad opus nostrum aut aliorum quorumcumq; *sine licentia & voluntate ejusdem Itherii* aliquid interim capiat, seu capi faciatis quo minus de eisdem *bladis, bonis, & catallis* suis liberè disponere & ordinare, ac commodum suum facere possit, prout sibi melius viderit expedire. Teste Rege apud Langeley decimo octavo die Februarii.

N. 19.  
Pat. 25. Ed. 1.  
M. 14. intus. It  
passed under  
the Great Seal  
Feb. 18. that  
Year.

N. 20.  
Pat. 25. Ed. 1.  
Part. 1. M. 15.  
de protectione  
Clericorum.



*Consimiles literas de protectione habent subscripti, videlicet.*

Johannes de Metingham.	Will. de Burn, Clericus.	A
Lambertus de Trikingham.	Egidius de Barenton.	
Magister Johannes de Lacy.	Magister Thomas de Erlee.	
Radulphus de Staunford, Capellanus.	Ricar. le Hostage de Loutheburgh.	
Johannes de Drokenesford.	Galfr. de Norwico, Clericus.	
Henricus de Lem.	Ricardus de Merton, Clericus.	
Robertus de Walmesford.	Audoenus de Monte Gomeri.	
Thomas de Hoyvill, Clericus.	Johannes Skip de London.	
Robertus de Scardeburgh.	Robertus de Bardelby.	
Ricardus de Roffen.	Henricus de Thurston.	
Willielmus de Burnton.	Magister Reginaldus de Braundon.	B
Magister Edmundus de London.	Raulphus de Rimnale.	
Magister Thomas de Sodinton.	Petrus de Lyndeseye.	
Magister Adam de Aumodesham.	Richar. Bernard de Hunnewyk.	
Henricus de Gudeford, Clericus.	Johannes filius Johannes de Arderne.	
Elias de Bekingham.	Et idem Reginaldus habet aliam	
Magister Thomas de Hale, Clericus.	prtectionem pro nomine suo so-	
Humfr. de Waleden.	lum.	
Henricus de Lichefeld.	Bartholomeus de Florentino.	
Nicolaus Tutwyn de Louseby.	Magister Jacobus Sinebaud.	C
David le Graunt.	Priorissa de Haliwell.	
Henricus de Stanton.	Will. de Caruil.	
Magister Thomas de Lichefeld.	Magister Radulphus de Juyngbo.	
Magister Thomas de Abberbiry.	Gilbertus de Robiry.	
Will. Bathon, & Wellen. Episcopus.	Walterus de Wengham.	
Will. de la Dane.	Johannes Baldok.	
Nicolaus de Bolyngbrok.	Magister Thomas de Abberbury.	
Will. de Felstede.	Will. de Norwico.	
Nicolaus de Misterton, Clericus.	Thomas de Basing, Clericus.	D
Johannes de Berwyk.	Robertus de Heriere.	
Adam de Osgodby.	Galfridus de Farham.	
Will. de Langele.	Simon de Farham.	
Henricus de Dunolm.	Priorissa Sancte Helene London.	
Prior de Wymondham.	Rogerus de Skermynger, Clericus.	
Radulphus de Alegate.	Johannes de Silverston.	
Magister Robert. de Sancto Albano.	Magister Walterus de Downbrigge.	
Nicolaus de Misterton.	Egidius de Audenardo.	
Robertus de Middleton.	Magister Andreas de Farentino.	E
Ricardus de Keston.	Magister Will. de Essex, Clericus.	
Hugo de Hengham.	Magister Thomas de Skerunge, Cler.	
Andreas de Kenebolton.	Thomas de Lavenham.	
Johannes de Stafford.	Walterus de Leycestr.	
Robertus de Aete, Clericus.	Rogerus de Leycestr. Clericus.	
Henricus de Skenholt.	Magister Simon, Parsona Ecclesie de	
Adam de Waldingfeld.	Heyford Waryn.	
Johannes de Certesey, Clericus.	Henricus de Hales.	
Magister Petrus Aimerici, Parsona	Walterus de Felstede, Clericus.	F
Ecclesie de Pecham.	Will. de Byrlay.	
Magister Guido de Tillebrok, Cleric.	Will. de Troubragg, Clericus.	
Johannes Episcopus Wynton.	Hugo de Notingham, Clericus.	
Phillippus de Wilughby.	Magister Henr. de Bray, Clericus.	

Magister



	<i>Magister Petrus de Dene.</i>	<i>Magister Ricardus de Gravesend,</i>
	<i>Simon de Wovecoto, Clericus.</i>	<i>Archid. London.</i>
	<i>Hugo de Roubury, Clericus.</i>	<i>Walterus de Norwico.</i>
	<i>Willielmus Eliensis Episcopus.</i>	<i>Henricus de Balthorp, Clericus.</i>
	<i>Johannes de Kirkby, Parsona Ecclesie</i>	<i>Nicolaus de Remyn, Clericus.</i>
	<i>de Northmimmes.</i>	<i>Nicolaus de Hatfeld, Clericus.</i>
	<i>Robertus de Mar.</i>	<i>Johannes Chaynell.</i>
A	<i>Robertus de Corneberth.</i>	<i>Abbas de Hyda Wynton.</i>
	<i>Johannes de Wengham, Precentor</i>	<i>Nicolaus de Burton.</i>
	<i>Ecclesie Sancti Pauli London.</i>	<i>Nicolaus de Sparkford, Clericus.</i>
	<i>Magister Johannes de Sancto Claro.</i>	<i>Magister Edmundus de London, Par-</i>
	<i>Wil. de Persoure.</i>	<i>sona Ecclesie de Whitlisford.</i>
	<i>Henricus de Rolling.</i>	<i>Idem Edmundus Canonicus libere</i>
	<i>Henricus de Fodringey.</i>	<i>Capelle Regis beate Marie in ca-</i>
	<i>Johannes de Reda.</i>	<i>stro Regis Hastings.</i>
B	<i>Edmundus de Hoo.</i>	<i>Richardus de Bereford, Clericus.</i>

**R**EX Vicecomiti Westmerland, salutem. Licet tibi nuper preceperimus quod *Laica feoda Archiepiscoporum, Episcoporum,* & totius *Cleri* in Balliva tua una cum bonis & catallis in eisdem inventis in manum nostram caperes, & ea salvo custodires quousq; aliud inde precepissemus. Quia tamen dilectos nobis in Christo *Priorem & Fratres Hospitalis Sancti Johannis Jerusalem in Anglia* per litteras nostras patentes duraturas usq; ad festum omnium Sanctorum proximo futurum suscepimus in *protectionem & defensionem* nostram specialem, omnibus & singulis inhibentes ne de equis vel aliis averiis suis, carectis vel cariagio, seu bladis, lardario, aut aliis bonis vel rebus suis quibuscumq; ubicumq; consistant ad opus nostrum aut aliorum, quorumcumq; *sine licentia & voluntate* ipsorum *Prioris & fratrum*, aliquid interim capiant, seu capi faciant, quo minus de eisdem equis, & aliis averiis suis, carectis, cariagio, bladis, lardario, & aliis bonis & rebus suis libere disponere & ordinare, ac commodum suum facere possint, prout sibi melius viderint expedire. Tibi precepimus quod *Laica feoda* ipsorum *Prioris & fratrum* in Ballivâ tuâ in manum nostram pretextu mandati nostri predicti capta una cum bonis & catallis in eisdem inventis eisdem *Priori & fratribus* sine diminutione aliqua restituens, nichil de equis, vel aliis averiis, carectis, cariagio, bladis, lardario, aut aliis bonis, seu rebus suis predictis capias, seu capi facias contra tenorem protectionis nostre predictæ. Teste rege apud Ambresbury, vicesimo quinto die Februarii.

*Consimiles litteras habent iidem Prior & fratres singulis Vicecomitibus per Angliam. Teste ut supra.*

**E**DWARD par la Grace Dieu, &c. a Monsieur Adam de Welles, & au Visconte de Nichole, saluz. Come nad gueres vers aucuns Clerks de seinte Eglise de nostre Roiaume demorantz en nostre protection e en nostre defense, qui du tot refuserent a faire aide a la defense de tot le Reaume e de Leglise dengleterre, cussoms concevue pas sauwez deserte rancour e indignacion. Nous ja leit ce quil cent este meyns remembrantz, e meyns conisantz les perils que porroient avenir a tot le Reaume e a Leglise dengleterre e a eus meismes aussint par

N. 21.  
Pro Priore Hospital. Sancti Johannis Jerus. in Anglia.  
Clauſ. 25. Ed. 1. M. 22.

N. 22.  
Pat. 25. Ed. 1.  
Part 1. M. 12.  
De Recogniti-  
onibus à Præ-  
latis & aliis  
Personis Eccle-  
siasticis recipiend.



par lur defaute lur voillantz faire especiale Grace a ceste foiz tot nel eussent il deervie, Avoms assigne vous ambedeux, ou le un de vous, si ambedeux ne pussiez estre ensemble a receyure en nostre noun reconisaunce de Prelatz e dautres Persones de seinte Eglise qui quil soient en le Conte avantdit solouc lur richesses qui vodront aver nostre protection en la furme que vous est baillee & enjoynte de par nous, e a certifier nostre Chancelier des nouns de ceus qui teus reconisances averont faites e a certifier ausint le Tresorier & les Barons de nostre Eschequier de tieux reconisances eussint receues. Issint ne por quant que tieux maneres de reconisances soient faites entre cy ce la Pasque procheynement avenir e ne mye outre. E pur ceo vous mandoms que les avantdites choses faces en la forme desufdite. En tesmoignance de que chose nous avoms fait faire cestes nos Littres overtes a durer par le tenz avantdit. Don a Clarendon le premer jour de Marz, lan de nostre Regne vintyme quint.

De promulgantibus Sententias & Excommunicatones in Ministros Regis capiendis & imprisonandis.

**E**Dward, &c. A Monsieur Adam de Welles e au Viscunte de Nicole, saluz. Nous aparcevantz que troneurs de nouvelles par les queux descord purreit surdre entre nous, nos Prelatz, nos Contes, nos Barons, & nos autres grantz gentz, safforcent a la subversion de nostre Roiaume e a la destourbaunce de nostre pees nient meyns que ceux qui safforcent dassailler nous e nostre Roiaume par mortele enemiste e par force darmes. Ne voillantz teu manere de malice passer saunz estre refrenee, Assignoms vous pur enquerre e serchier en totes les maneres que vous peussiez plus diligeaument queux meffeseours e disturbeours de nostre pees conteront nouvelles & destraxions en la fourme avantdite ou qui desturberont ou vouderont ou procuront desturber lexecucion de nos maundementz, ou qui durront sentences de escamenge ou feront monicions ou les sentences donees ou monicions faites priveement ou apartement pronuncieront ou voudront pplier contre nos Ministres e nos sugges ou, contre queux autres quil soient acordauntz a nous e a nostre foi qui feront execucion de nos maundementz pur le profit de nostre Roiaume, ou contre persones de seinte eglise qui se mettent en nostre protection pur sauver e defendre eux e lur Eglises, ou qui feront rien ou voudront faire par art ou par engyn, par quey la paisiblete de la pees e du Roiaume seit destarbee e lexecucion de nos maundementz qui nous eoms commaundez pur le pru du Roiaume e de tot nostre poeple soit rerie ou empeschie en nule manere. E pur ceo vous maundoms que touz ceux de quel estat ou condicion quil soient, qui des choses avantdites ou daucune de eles troesiez copables, preignez e en nostre prison sauvement gardez taunt que vous eneez autre maundement de nous. E voloms que si vous ambedeux ny peussiez entendre adonk lautre de vous qui ferra plus pres des parties ou nules des choses avantdites avendront face reddement e saunz delay lexecucion de cestes bosoignes en la fourme avantdite.

E feat a remembre que les Chivalers, e les Viscontes de souz escriptz sont assignez en auteuz fourmes de suis escriptes en les Contees de souz, escriptz, cest asavoir.

Aleyn Plokenet e le Visconte de Sumers e de Dors en memes les Contiez.

Bueges de Knouil e le Visconte de Salopshire e de Stafford en memes les Counteez.

Johan



Johan Tregoz e le Visconte de Hereford en meme la Countee.  
Thomas de Berkeley e les Viscontes de Glouc. & Wynecestr. en memes les Counteez.

Johan de Segrave e le Visconte de Warr. e de Leyc. en memes les Counteez.

Robert Fitz Pain e le Visconte de Wiltshire en meme la Countee.

Rauf Pipard e le Visconte de Bedf. & de Buk. en memes les Counteez.

A Johan Lovel e le Visconte de Oxenford e de Berk en memes les Counteez.

Thomas de Furnival e le Visconte de Derb. en meme la Countee.

Johan de Bretun e le Visconte Middlesex en meme la Countee.

Robert de Tateshale e le Visconte de Norff. & Suff. en memes les Counteez.

Johan Engayne e le Visconte de Northt. e de Rotel. en memes les Counteez.

B Henr. Tregoz e le Visconte de Surr. e de Suffex en memes les Counteez.

Robert Fitz Roger e le Visconte de Essex e de Hertf. en memes les Counteez.

Reynald de Argentem e le Visconte de Cantabr. e de Hunt. en memes les Counteez.

William de Leyburne e le Viscount de Kent en meme le Countee.

Henr. Tieys e le Visconte de South. en meme la Countee.

C Geffrey de Cammill e les Viscontes de Cornewayll e Deveneshire en memes les Counteez.

Johan de Lancastr. e le Visconte de Lancastr. en meme la Countee.

Reynard de Grey en la Countee de Cestr. oue les quatre Cantredz.

Johan de Havering en Norwales.

Willame de Brehuse e Wauter de Pederton en Westwales.

Fet a remembrer que les avantditz *Chivalers* e *Viscountes* frount le choses sus escrites solome les articles que sensiwent.

D Ordene est que les *Baneretz* e les *Viscountez* qui sont a ceo assignez en les *Counteez* preignent peggés des gentz lays tieux que seient suffisauntz pur les somes reconues. E que les *Clerks* qui peggés lays ne poent trouer Baillent en le poer le Visconte de lur chateus taunt com le graunt quil frount amontera jekes a taunt quil cent paieiz.

E E fait la chose demandee e prise en ceste fourme pur la defense de eus memes e de lur Eglises e pur le commun profist du Reaume e pur la proteccion aver, cest asaver de chescun *Prelat* ou *parson* de *Eglise* ou *Clerk* beneficie, al amuntaunce du double del eyde que chascun fist darrein au Roi, pur taunt que la busoigne est ore dassiez greignure que adonk ne fu.

F E facent les *Baneretz* e les *Viscontes* enrourer les sommes reconues e chescun noun e les nouns de peggés ou de la seurte que serra prise issint que cel roule seit livre al *Eschekier* pur les deners fere lever.

E facent les *Baneretz* e les *Viscontes* a chescun *Clerk* qui avera reconu en la fourme avantdite, bille, seale de lur seaus au *Chaunceler* pur la protexion le Roi aver, e pur les autres briefs qui lour covendront.



**R**EX Coronatoribus suis in Comitatu Surr. salutem. Mittimus vobis duo paria literarum nostrarum patentium una cum forma presentibus interclusa & tradenda **Henr. Gregoz & Vicecomiti** nostro Surr. & **Suffex** vobis mandantes quod prædictas literas una cum forma prædicta eisdem **Henrico & Vicecomiti** vice nostra tradatis & juramentum ab eis recipiatis quod ea ad que per nos assignantur per easdem literas secundum dictam formam fideliter facient & complebunt. Teste ut supra.

*Consimiles litere diriguntur Coronatoribus in Comitatibus subscriptis quod in forma subscripta juramentum recipiant, &c. ut supra, videlicet.*

Coronatoribus in Comitatu **Derb.** quod a **Tho. de Furnival & Vicecom.** **Derb.** juramentum recipiant, &c.

Coronatoribus in Comitatu **Northampton.** quod a **Johanne Engayne, & Vic. Northampt. & Rotel. &c.**

Coronatoribus in Comitatu **Essex** quod a **Roberto filio Rogeri, & Vic. Essex & Hertford, &c.**

Coronatoribus in **Com. Middlesex** quod a **Johanne le Bretun, & Vic. ejuldem Comitatus, &c.**

Coronatoribus in Comitatu **Kantie** quod a **Willielmo de Leyburn, & Vicecomite, &c.**

Coronatoribus in Comitatu **Lancastr.** quod a **Johanne de Lancastr. & Vicecomite, &c.**

**A**U noble Peer discret *Chanceler* nostre Seignur le Roi, ou a son Lieutenant le seon **Gilbert de Knobil** Viscount de Devon si luy plect, saluz. E quant quil poet e fet de Reverence e d'onur sachez sire que le *Abbe* de seint **Dogmael** pur les *Procuraturs* **Robert de la Pitte,** e **William de Culecumb** vint a moi le primer jour de **Averill,** e ad graunt a nostre Seigneur le Roi le double del eyde que il fist derreinement pur le defense de luy memes e de les Eglises e pur le commun profit du Roy-eaume e pur le protection averre de ceo ma il trovee mainpernour. En testimoniaunce de queu chose jeo mis Envoy cest ma lettre patent e close.

A Sire **Johan de Langeton** *Chaunceler,* nostre Seignur le Roi, **Johan de Segrave,** e le *Viscounte* de **Warwick** e **Leyc.** saluz. Sachez nus aver recia Mestres **Robert de Craft,** *persone* de **Bedeworth,** e de **Eylmerthorpe** a la protection nostre Seignur le Roi. En temoigne de quele chose nus vos Enviomus ceste Bill ensele de nostre Seil.

**William** de **Plympton** *persone* de **West Bedesford** devant. Seir **Aleyn** de **Plokenet,** e le *Viscounte* de **Somerset,** ad fet fine de 8 s. ke est a Double de la Dyme solom la Reconufance pur la protection le Roi aver e pur la defense de luy e la Eglise e pur le commun pru du Reaume plegg. de la fin **Thomas** de **Kynghammere,** e **Adam Aincen** lays. En temonaunce de ceste chose l'avantdit Seir **Aleyn** ad mis sun Seel a ceste Bylle.

Venerandæ discretionis viro **Domino J. de Langeton** Domini Regis Cancellario, **Adam** de **Welle** & **R. le Aener** Vic. **Linc.** ad recogniti-  
nes cleri in **Com. Linc.** accipiendas Deputari, salutem. Sciatis quod **Willielmus** de **Brumpton** finem fecit cum Domino Rege pro protectione habenda, & laico feodo rehabendo & hoc vobis significamus.



**A** Sire Johan de Langeton Chaunceler nostre Seignour le Roy, **penr.** de **Chiffelden** Viscounte de Oxenford, saluz. Cum nageres ke **William** Vikere del Eglise de Wytteneve vint devant moy a Oxenford a la foy nostre Seignour le Roy e la fin fist pur *dise set souz e quatre deners*, ki est a la double de la Dyme, de la Vicarie a ce que il dit. Jeo a memes cely **William** ceste Bille ay done pur la *protection* nostre Seignour le Roy aver, selee de mon Seal. Donec a Oxenford le 12 jour de Mars le an du Reign le Roy Edward vintyme quint.

**B** Edward par la Grace de Dieu Roy D'engleterre, &c. As honorables Peeres en Dieu *Ercevesq; Evesq; & as autres Prelatz*, & a touz ceus de la Clergie qui a ceste demy quaresme prochain avenir ferront a Londres assemblez, saluz. Nous defendoms a vous touz & a chescun de vous, sur quanq; vous nous peussiez forsaire que vous ne nul de vous *nules choses* ne ordenez, ne faciez, nassentez a nul ordeyement a la dite assemblee que peussent tourner a prejudice ou a grevance de nous, ou de nul de nos *Ministres*, ou de ceus qui sont a nostre pees & a nostre foy & en nostre protection, ou de nos adherantz ou a nul de eux. Donec a Sturmenistrum le 21 jour de Marz.

**C** REX Vicecomiti Devon. salutem. Precipimus tibi quod *Capellanos* illos quos nuper pro publicatione cujusdam sententie & aliis transgressionibus contra nos & Coronam nostram per ipsos factis, ut dicitur, cepisti & in prisona nostra detines, sine dilatione aliqua deliberes, ab eadem recepta prius securitate ab eisdem de emendis nobis faciendis pro transgressionibus predictis, si que fuerint cum inde loqui voluerimus versus ipsos, secundum quod tibi injunximus plenius oretenus. Teste Rege apud Plympton undecimo die Aprilis.

**D** REX Vicecomiti Cornubie, salutem. Precipimus tibi quod si dilectus nobis in Christo *Willielmus* de Bodrugan, Archidiaconus Cornubie, velit manucapere coram te de habendo Magistrum *Clement* de Rupe, Magistrum *Radulphum* de Treredenek, *Willielmum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Sancta Sevara, Magistrum *Marfilium*, *Johannem* Vicarium Sancti Pauli, *Reginaldum* Vicarium de Sancta Crewenna, *David* Capellanum Ecclesie Sancte Beriane, *Radulphum* Capellanum Ecclesie Sancti Winieri, *Ricardum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Launantha, *Johannem* le Petit Parsonam Ecclesie Sancti Melani, *Ricardum* Vicarium de Morwinstowe, *Petrum* Capellanum de Kylkampton, *Robertum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Stratton, *Sampsonem* Vicarium Ecclesie de Pokkewille, *Philippum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Launceles, *Robertum* Capellanum de Marwinchurche, *Ricardum* Capellanum de Wike, *Willielmum* Capellanum de Jacobstowe, *Thomam* Capellanum de Wyteston, *Ricardum* Capellanum de Tamerton, *Paganum* Capellanum de Boyton, Magistrum *Ricardum* de Tolisford, *Simonem* Capellanum de Egloftos, *Nicolaum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Sancto Austolo, *Johannem* Vicarium Ecclesie de Sancto Claro, *Philippum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Sancto Winoco, *Gilbertum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Dinloo, *Reginaldum* Capellanum de Laureyhton, *Willielmum* Glise Capellanum de Autone, *Johannem* Capellanum de Esse, *Johannem* Olivere Capellanum de Sancta Dominica, *Vincentium* Capellanum de Suthylle, *Ricardum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Sancto David, & *Willielmum* Vicarium Ecclesie de Sancto Genasio,

N. 23.  
Pat. 25. Ed. 1.  
P. 1 M. 9 De-  
fensio Regis  
ne Prelati ali-  
quid ordinent  
in prejudic. re-  
gis.

N. 24.  
Claus. 25. Ed.  
1. M. 19. De  
capellanis de-  
liberandis a  
prisona.

N. 25.  
Cl. 25. Ed. 1.  
M. 18. De Cle-  
ricis deliberan-  
a prisona per  
Manucaption.



nasio, captos & detentos in prisiona nostrâ de Launceneton pro publica  
tione cujusdam litere Papalis, ut dicitur, coram nobis ad voluntatem  
nostram pro emendis de transgressionibus, si quas contra nos fecerint  
in hac parte nobis faciend. tunc ipsos Rectores, Vicarios, Presbyteros,  
& Clericos, a prisiona prædicta, si eâ occasione & non alia detineantur  
in eadem sine dilatione facias deliberari per manucaptionem prædictam.  
Et hoc pro alio brevi nostro de manucaptione ab ipsis prius pro facto  
illo capiend. tibi directo, nullatenus omittas. Teste Rege apud Plym  
pton decimo septimo die Aprilis.

N. 26.  
Cl. 25. Ed. 1.  
M. 18. De Ser-  
vitio & Navib.  
de Hast. &c.

**R**EX dilectis & fidelibus suis *Baronibus & probis hominibus* portus  
sui de *Hastings*, salutem. Propter aliqua arduissima negocia, nos  
& vos & omnes alios fideles nostros de nostro regno tangentia hiis  
diebus: Vobis mandamus in fide quâ nobis tenemini firmiter injun-  
gentes quod *totum servitium* quod nobis debetur de vobis & de navi-  
bus portus vestri prædicti habeatis coram nobis apud *Winchelse* in  
crastino Sancti Johannis Baptiste proximo futuro *promptum & paratum*  
& bene *munitum* ad eundum ubi tunc precipiemus. Ita quod pro de-  
fectu servitii vestri prædicti dicta negotia nullatenus retardentur. Ce-  
terum vos rogamus mandantes quod preter servitium vestrum præ-  
dictum, omnes alias naves de portu vestro prædicto tam *quadraginta*  
*dolia vini*, quam *quadraginta dolia*, & supra portantes coram no-  
bis ad prædictos diem & locum venire faciatis promptas & paratas &  
bene munitas ad eundum cum aliis navibus vestris in nostrum servitium  
ut prædictum est. Volumus autem & concedimus quod adventus ista-  
rum navium ultra servitium vestrum prædictum tunc ibidem trahi  
non possit in consequentiam in futurum. Intentionis nostre siquidem  
non existit. Teste Rege apud Plympton vicefimo septimo die Aprilis.

*Consimiles literæ diriguntur Baronibus & probis hominibus portuum  
subscriberum, videlicet.*

Baronibus & probis hominibus de Faversham.  
Baronibus & probis hominibus de Sandwico.  
Baronibus & probis hominibus de Hethe.  
Baronibus & probis hominibus de Winchese.  
Baronibus & probis hominibus de Hastings.  
Baronibus & probis hominibus de Romenhale.  
Baronibus & probis hominibus de Dovorr.  
Baronibus & probis hominibus de Rye.

N. 27.  
Cl. 25. Ed. 1.  
M. 15. cedula  
Dorf. De Sum-  
monitione eo-  
rum qui ha-  
bent 20 libra-  
tas per annum.

**R**EX Vicecomiti Eborum, salutem. Cum pro dampnis & peri-  
culis que nobis & toti regni nostro per insidias inimicorum no-  
strorum evenire possent cautius præcavendis nuper tibi precepimus  
quod scire faceres omnibus illis de balliva tua infra libertates & extra  
*qui habent viginti libratas terre & redditus per annum*, & illis simi-  
liter qui plus habent, videlicet tam illis qui non tenent de nobis in  
capite, vel de quocunq; tenent, ut de equis & armis sibi providerent  
& se prepararent indilate. Ita quod sic essent prompti & parati ad  
veniendum ad nos & eundum cum propria persona nostra pro sal-  
vatione & defensione ipsorum & totius regni nostri quandocumq; pro  
ipsis mandarem, ac nos passagium nostrum ad partes transmarinas  
pro salvatione hujusmodi jam duxerimus statuendum. Tibi precipi-  
mus



mus in fide qua nobis teneris firmiter injungentes quod omnes & singulos de Balliva tua tam infra libertates quam extra, viginti libratas terre & redditus & amplius habentes ut prædictum est de quocumq; teneant, sine dilatione roges ex parte nostrâ & requiras, firmiterque injungas eisdem quod sint ad nos ad *Londonum* die Dominicâ proximo post Octabas Sancti Johannis Baptiste, proximo futuras cum equis & armis, videlicet, quilibet eorum prout statum suum decuerit, parati transfretare cum corpore nostro ad partes prædictas, ad Dei, nostri & ipsorum honorem, pro salvatione & communi utilitate dicti regni. Et ita te habeas in hoc mandato nostro celeriter exequendo, ne si contingat, quod absit, transfretationem nostram per defectum tuum impediri, ad te graviter capere debeamus. Teste rege apud Londres quintodecimo die Maii.

A

B

*Consimiles literæ diriguntur singulis Vicecomitibus Angliæ, & Reginaldo Grey Justiciario Cestriæ.*

C

D

**R**EX Vicecomiti Lincoln. salutem. Cum nuper tibi preceperimus quod omnes & singulos de Balliva tua infra libertates & extra, tam illos qui *viginti libratas terre & redditus per annum habent*, quam illos similiter qui plus habent, de quocumq; teneant, sine dilatione rogares & specialiter requireres ex parte nostrâ firmiterq; injungeres eisdem quod essent ad nos *London* die Dominica proxima post Octabas Sancti Johannis Baptiste proximo futuro, cum equis & armis, videlicet quilibet, eorum prout decuerit statum suum parati transfretare cum corpore nostro ad partes transmarinas ad Dei, nostri & ipsorum honorem ut speramus & pro salvatione & communi utilitate regni nostri. Tibi precipimus firmiter injungentes quod mandato nostro prædicto diligenter & celeriter executo, nos de nominibus omnium illorum de Ballivâ tuâ quos sic rogaveris ad dictam diem Dominicam distincte & aperte sub sigillo tuo certiores reddere non omittas. Teste rege apud Portesmouth vicesimo quarto die Maii.

*Consimiles literæ diriguntur Reginaldo de Grey Justiciario Cestriæ, & singulis Vicecomitibus per Angliam.*

E

F

**R**EX Vicecomiti Cantuariæ, salutem. Licet tibi nuper præceperimus quod omnia *laica feoda* Archiepiscoporum, Episcoporum, & totius Cleri de Ballivâ tua una cum bonis & catallis in eisdem inventis sine dilatione caperes in manum nostram & ea salvo custodires donec aliud inde præcepissemus. Volentes tamen ad instantem requisitionem Prælatorum Cantuariensis Provinciæ venerabili Patri **R. Cantuar. Archiepiscopo**, totius Angliæ *Primate*, gratiam facere specialem: Tibi præcipimus quod eidem **Archiepiscopo** omnia *laica feoda sua*, una cum *bobus, carucis & omnibus aliis bonis & catallis suis in eisdem existentibus*, quæ prætextu mandati nostri prædicti in manum nostram cepisti in eo statu quo nunc sunt restitui facias indilate. Teste rege apud Westm. undecimo die Julii.

*Consimiles literæ diriguntur Vicecomiti Surr. Suffex. Midd. & Essex.*

N. 28.  
Cl. 25. Ed. 1.  
M. 16. Dorf.  
De certificand.  
Regi de nom.  
habent. viginti  
libratas Terræ  
& redditus.

N. 29.  
Claus. 25. Ed.  
1. M. 21. Pro  
Cantuar. Arch.  
de Laicis Feod.  
restituendis.



N, 30.  
Clauſ. 25. Ed.  
1. M. 9. Dorſ.  
pro clero pro-  
tectionem  
Regis non ha-  
bente.

**R**EX Vicecomitibus London. salutem. Licet aliqui de *Clero* qui sunt infra Ballivam vestram protectionem nostram forsitan non habuerunt tempore retroacto, ad instantiam tamen & rogatum venerabilium Patrum R. *Archiepiscopi Cantuar.* & aliorum *Episcoporum* & *Prelatorum* regni nostri nobis pro eodem *Clero* supplicantium. Volentes *Clerum* eundem ab omni molestia & inquietantia indebita videlicet protegi & defendi. Vobis mandamus quod omnes & singulos, de *Clero* prædicto, homines, terras, res, redditus & omnes possessiones eorundem in Ballivâ vestrâ deinceps manuteneatis, protegatis, & defendatis, non permittentes quantum in vobis est, quod Præfato *Clero* aut eorum alicui in personis & rebus inferatur injuria, dampnum, molestia, vel gravamen, non obstante quod aliqui de *Clero* prædicto protectionem nostram non habuerunt, sicut prædictum est. Teste rege apud Sanctum Paulum London. tricesimo primo die Julii.

A

B

N. 31.  
Pat. 25. Ed. 1.  
P. 2 M. 7.

**P**UR ceo que le Roy desire tuz jours la pees & la quiete e la bon estat de tutes les gentz de sun Reaume e nomement que apres sun passage quil ly ore fayre al honur de deu e pur recoverir sun dreit heritage dunt il est par graunt fraude deceu par le Roy de France, e pur le honur e le commun profit de sun Reaume tutes encheifours par queles la dite pees ou quiete pussent estre en nul manere troubleez, soient du tut otes acunes gentz purroient dire & fere entendre au Puple aucunes paroles noun verrois des queles le mesme Puple purroit estre mu de eux porter enuers lur seyng. liege autrement que fair ne dussent come endroit de coe, que le Count de Hereford, e le Counte Marechal, se aloyngerent nad guers de lui, ou endroit de autres choses lui Rois sur ceo e sur lestat de lui e de sun Reaume e comment les busoignes du Reaume sunt alees ja une piece, fait asavoir & voet que tuz enfachent la verite la quele senfeut. Nad guers quant graunt partie de gentz darmes D'engleterre les uns par priere, les autres par somons du Roy vindrent a Lundres, le Roi voillaunt purveer a la delivraunce de mesme les gentz, e aleviance de lur despens e de lur deseres: Maunda au ditz Counteez come a Conestable e Marechal D'engleterre quil venissent a lui a certain jour pur ordiner la delivraunce des dites gentz, au queu jour le dite Conte de Hereford e Monsieur Johan de Segrave qui escusa le Conte Marechal par maladie vindrent au Roi, e en lour presence e par lur assent fust ordene quil feissent crier parmy la Cite de Londres que tutes les gentz que estoient illoques venuz par somons ou par priere fussent lendemain a seynt Poul devant les ditz Conestable e Marechal pur savoir e metere en remembraunce coment e de cumbien chescun de eux voleit servir ou eyder le Roi en cest veyage de la outre, e lur dist le Roi que selon la dite ordinaunce la quele lur fust baylle en escrit il feissent faire la dite crie. Et eux receu le dit comaundement e la dite bille sen alerent, puis mesme le jour a la nuyt les dites Contes enveyerent au Roi par Monsieur Johan Esturmi Chivaler, une bille escrit en ceste forme. Pur ceo chier sire que vous mandastes au Marechal par le Conestable e par une bille quil feist crier parmy la Vile de Londres que tuz iceux que sunt venuz par vostre somounse ou par priere fussent demayn devant eux a seint Poul a hour de prime e quil feissent metere en roule combien des chivaus des uns e des autres e coe vous faissent asavoir. Vous prient vostre Conestable e vostre Marechal que ceste chose venssiez comander

C

D

E

F



maunder a autre de vostre *Hofel*. Et pur ceo sire que vous bien savez que eux sunt cy venuz par vostre priere e ne mye par somonse, sil ceo faissent il entroyent en lur office pur service fere, par quay il vous prient que vous les voillez comander a autre. Et le Roi resceu la dite bille e en conseil sur ceo, pur ceo quil lui semble quil avoient meyns avisement maunde e ne volayt mye quil en fussent surpris, envoya a eux *Monfieur Geffrey de Geneville*, *Monf. Thomas de Berkeley*, *Monf. Johan Tregez*, le *Conestable de la Tur*, le *Gardeyn de Lundres*, *Monf. Roger Brabazon*, e *Monf. Willame de Beresford*, pur eux meuz aviser sur ceo e quil purvessent en teue maniere quil ne feissent chose que peust turner en prejudice du Roi ne de lur estate demeyne, e si autrement ne se voulessent aviser que lors lur fust demande sil avoueynt la dite bille & les paroles illoques contenues les queles il avouerent tut outre. Et quant ceste avouement fust reporte au Roi il en sur ceo conseil mist en lu du *Conte de Hereford Conestable*, *Monf. Thomas de Berkeley*, e en lu du *Conte Marechal*, *Monf. Geffrey de Geneville* pur ceo que les ditz Contes aveynt requis que le Roi comandaist a autres si com il est contenu en la dite bille e sur ceo senaloyngerent les Contes du Roi e de la *Curt*. Et tost apres ceo le *Ercevesk de Caunterbur.* e plusieurs *Eveskes* D'engleterre vindrent au Roi e lui prierent quil peussent parler as ditz Contes e le Roi lur granta, par quay le dit *Ercevesk* & les autres *Prelatz*, prierent as ditz Contes quil lur faissent asavoir ou il lur plerroit devenir pur parler a eux, e les Contes remaunderent par lur lettres quil serroint a *Waltham* le vendredi Lendemain de la feste de *Seint Jak*, au queu jour les ditz *Ercevesk* & *Eveskes* vindrent a *Waltham* e les ditz Contes ne vindrent mye, mes envoyerent illoques *Monf. Roberd le fiz Roger*, e *Monf. Johan de Segrave Chevalers*, que distrent de par les Contes, quil ny purroyent venir adunk par aucuns refus. E pus a la priere des ditz *Prelatz* e des ditz *Chevalers* qui vindrent au Roi a *Seint Auban* le dimayng procheinement, suant le Roi granta sauf conduct as ditz Contes e enbaylla ses lettres a ditz *Chevalers* conteneantz suffisent terme denz le quel les ditz Contes peussent sauvement e fuz sun conduyt venir au Roi & demorer e retourner e ovesques celes leteres se departirent les ditz *Chevalers* du Roi a cele foiz mes unques puis les Contes au Roi ne vindrent, ne envoyerent, ne uncore, ne venent, ne enueyent que le Roi sache; ore puit estre que acunes gentz unt fait entendaunt au pueple que les Contes mustrent au Roi certains articles pur le comun profit du pueple e du Reaume e que le Roi les deveit aver refuse e escundit tut outre, de quey le Roi ne fait riens, kar riens ne lui mustrent nene firent multier, nene fait pur quey il se retrestrent. Eynx entendi de jour en jour quil venissent a lui. Entre les queux articles contenu est a coe que hom dist de acunes grevances, que le Roi ad fait en son Reaume les queles il coneyt bien con des eydes quil ad demande soventeez de ses gentz la quele chose lui ad convenu fere par encheison des guerres, qui lui unt este meues en *Gascogne*, en *Cales*, e en *Escoce* & ayllurs des queles il ne poeyt lui ne son Reaume defendre sauhz eyde de ses bones gentz, dunt il lui poyse mult, quil les ad taunt grevez & taunt travaillees, e leur prie quil lui envoyllent avoir pur excuse, com celui que ad les choses mises ne mye pur achater terres ne tenementz, ne chasteus, ne viles, mes pur defendre lui e eux meismes e tut le Reaume.

Et si Dieu lui doynt james retourner du veyage quil fait coe il voet bien que tuz sachent quil ad volente e grant desir del amender bone ment a la volente de Dieu e au gre de son pueple tauntavant ou il devera.



devera. E fil avenist quil ne returnast mye il vyt ordener que son  
**Heir** le fra ausi com sil meismes returnast de ceo que sera amender,  
 que son car il seit bien que nul nest tant tenuz au Reaume nedeamer les  
 bones gentz de saterre come il meismes. Dautre part puis quil ont enpris  
 depassier le outre pur eyder le Conte de Flandres, qui est son alliez e nome-  
 ment pur metere en la busoigne de lui e de son Reaume tele fin com  
 Dieu vodra kar meuz vant de mettre syn in le busoigne au plus tost  
 que hom purra, que de languy ensi longement les graunt Seigneurs, A  
 qui nad guers furent a Lundres oue lui pur ceo que il virent bien quil  
 ne poait nene puyt si graunt chose pursuier ne meyntenir du soyn, e  
 que le veyage est si hastif pur le graunt peril en quey les amys le Roy  
 de dela sont, par les queux fil perdissent le Reaume purrayt chayr en  
 graunt peril apres qui Dieu defende. E pur avec le confermement de le  
 graunt Chartre des Fraunchises D'engleterre e de la Chartre de la Forest,  
 le queu confermement le Roys leur ad graunt bonement, si li graunte- B  
 rent un commun doun tel com lui est mult besoynable en poynt de ore.  
 Dunt il prie a tutes les bones gentz e a tut le pueple de son Reaume  
 qui unques ne lui faillarent que ceste doun ne leur envoie mye puy  
 quil veyent bien quil ne esparnye son cors, ne ceo que ils ad pur aleg-  
 ger eux e ly de graunte suffreytes quil unt suffert e suffrent uncore a  
 graunt meschief de jour en autre e puy quil scyvent ausint que la bu-  
 soigne est plus graunde quele ne estoit unques mes a nul jour. E pur  
 ceo que par cest aler avendra si Dieu plect bone pees e pardurable par  
 unt chescun, se deit meyns tenir agrevez de cest doun e par qui il C  
 purrout estre le plus tost delivers des angusses e de travaus quil unt e  
 unt en avant ceste heure. E si nuls feissent entendauntz avant le pays  
 que le Roy eust refuse Articles ou autre chose contre le commun profit  
 du Reaume pur son pueple honir e destrure, ou quel eust autrement  
 overe envers les Contes que en la manere de susdite, il prie que hom ne  
 luy creye mye. Kar ceo est le droit processe e outre la verite co-  
 ment les choses sunt aler deskes a ore. E se avise chescun coment  
 graunt descord ad este autre foiz en cest Reaume par iceles paroles D  
 entre le Seyng<sup>r</sup> e ses gentz de une parte e dautre e les damages que  
 ensunt avenuz. E si hom crust coc cestes autrement que eles ne sunt  
 purroit avenir que ryote ensurdroit, la quele serroit plus perillouse e  
 plus greve que nestoit unques mes nule en ceste terre. E sunt escu-  
 mengez tuz iceux qui troblent la pees de ceste Reaume en quele ma-  
 nere, que ceo soit e tuz iceus qui as turbeurs en argent ou en chivaus  
 ou en armes, ou autrement dountent ou sunt eyde ou favour privement  
 ou apertement, de quelques condicion ou estat quil soient de la quele E  
 sentence descumenge, nuls ne puit estre asouz saunz especial comaunde-  
 ment del Apostoil, forsque en article de mort sicome pert par une bulle  
 que le Roy ad du temps le Pape Clement, la quelle graunt partie les  
 Prelatz & des autres grauntz Seigneurs de ceste terre unt bien entenduz.  
 Par quey il est mestier que chescun sen gard. E prie le Roy tutes les  
 bones gentz de son Reaume que pur ceo quil al honur de Dieu e de lui  
 e de eux e du Reaume e pur par-durable pees e pur metere en bon estat  
 son Reaume ad enpris cest veyage asere e il ad graunte asiaunce, que F  
 les bones priers de ses bones gentz lui purrunt multeyder e valer a me-  
 tere ceste busoigne a bon syn, quilz voillent prier e fere prier ententive-  
 ment pur lui & pur ceux qui ovesk lui vient. En tesmoigne, &c.  
 Donez a Odymere le xii jour de Aug. Au tele lettres sont envoiz a  
 tous Viscontes de Engleterre.



- R**EX venerabili in Christo Patri R. eadem gratia Cantuar. Archiepiscopo totius Angliæ Primati, salutem. Cum nos inevitabili necessitate cogente pro Regni & Hæreditarii juris nostri per Regem Francie & alios inimicos nostros invasi & hostiliter impugnati defensione ac Ecclesie Anglicane & Personarum tam ecclesiasticarum quam aliarum ejusdem regni presidio & tutelâ *de bladis & aliis bonis* earumdem personarum, capi fecerimus & ad capiendum seu capi faciendum pro salvatione nostrâ & suâ dictiq; regni adhuc eadem necessitas nos compellat; *de quibus bladis & bonis volumus & firmiter proponimus satisfactionem ut res exegerit facere congruam & condignam*, & jam intellexerimus quod vos contra Ministros nostros, bladorum & bonorum prædictorum de mandato nostro captores intenditis quandam *Excommunicationis* sententiam fulminare vel ipsos Excommunicatos facere nunciari, quod si sic fieret in gravem & enormem *dignitatis & coronæ* nostre Regie lesionem, ac populi scandalum manifestius redundaret & nichilominus ex hoc ejusdem Ecclesie destructio & totius regni subversio verisimiliter sequi possit. Vobis prohibemus sub debito fidelitatis & juramenti quibus nobis tenemini ac forisfactura omnium que de nobis tenetis firmiter injungentes, ne in Ministros nostros *Clericos* aut *Laicos*, aliquam Excommunicationis Sententiam promulgetis seu etiam publicetis aut promulgari seu publicari aliquatenus occasione hujusmodi captionis faciatis, vel eisdem Ministris gravamen aliquod inferatis maxime cum *parati simus satisfacere ut est dictum*. Teste rege apud Winchelse decimo nono die Augusti.

*Consimiles litere diriguntur singulis Episcopis Angliæ. Teste ut supra.*

- R**EX venerabili in Christo Patri R. eadem gratia Cantuar. Archiepiscopo Angliæ totius primati, salutem. Quia super quibusdam arduis & urgentibus negotiis nos & vos ac totum regnum nostrum tangentibus, volumus quod **Edwardus** filius noster carissimus tenens locum nostrum in Anglia vobiscum *Colloquium* habeat & *tractatum*. Vobis mandamus in fide & dilectione quibus nobis tenemini firmiter injungentes quod in instanti crastino Sancti Michelis London, ad eundem filium nostrum modis omnibus personaliter intersitis cum *eodem & ceteris de consilio nostro* qui ibidem aderint super dictis negotiis tractaturi, & vestrum consilium impensuri. Et hoc sicut honorem Regis diligitis. Apud Sanctum Paulum London nono die Septembris.

*Consimiles literæ diriguntur subscriptis, videlicet.*

- F** *W. Bath. & Well.* }  
*O. Lincolnensi* }  
*R. Herefordensi* } *Episcopis.*  
*R. Norwicensi* }  
*Roffensi* }  
*S. Electo Sarum* }

*Abbati*

N. 32.  
 Claus. 25. Ed.  
 1. M. 8. Dorf.  
 Prohibitio Regis contra Excommunicat.

N. 33.  
 Claus. 25. Ed.  
 1. M. 6. Dorf.



*Abbati de Sancto Edmundo.*  
*Abbati Sancti Augustini Cantuar.*  
*Abbati de Waltham.*  
*Abbati de Sancto Albano.*  
*Abbati Westmonasteriens.*  
*Abbati de Evesham.*  
*Abbati de Burgo Sancti Petri.*  
*Abbati de Abyndon.*  
*Abbati de Ramsey.*

*Priori Sancti Suithini Wintoniens.*  
*Priori Ecclesie Christi Cantuariens.*  
*Priori Eliens.*  
*Priori Norwicens.*  
*Priori Hospitalis Sancti Johannis*  
*Jerusalem in Angliâ.*

*Magistro Militie Templi in Angliâ.*  
*Johanni de Segrave.*  
*Johanni Lovell.*

*Abbati de Thorney.*  
*Abbati de Malmesbury.*  
*Abbati de Cyrencester.*  
*Abbati de Croyland.*  
*Abbati de Bardenay.*  
*Abbati de Rading.*  
*Abbati de Glaston.*  
*Abbati de Gloucester.*

*Roberto filio Rogeri.*  
*Roberto de Tatefbale.*  
*Fulconi filio Warini.*  
*Edmundo de Mortuo Mari.*  
*Alano la Zuscbe.*  
*Nichelo de Segrave.*  
*Rogero le Bigod Comiti Norfolcien-*  
*si, & Maraschallo Anglie.*  
*Humfrido de Bohun Comiti Here-*  
*fordensi & Essexensi.*

N. 34.  
 Rot. Stat. in  
 Turri Lond.  
 M. 18. 25. Ed. 1

**E**Dward par la Grace, &c. Sachies que come de par nos amez & feaux *Humfrey de Bohun, Conte de Hereford & de Essex, & Connestable D'engleterre, & Roger Bygod, Conte de Norff. & Mareschall D'engleterre* nous seit fet entendaunt quil se doubterent que nous eussions conceu vers eux rancour & indignation pur aucunes desobesances quil avoient fetes, ne ad geres, a ceo que hom disoit i'en ce quil ne vindrent pas a nous a nostre comandement, & a ce que hom disoit quil avoient aucuns de nos Comandementz destrurbez & targez & aucunes aliances & assemblees des gentz darmes faites countre nostre volunte & deffense; Nous regardantz que des choses avantditz nul maffait nest per eus sui uncore, coment que paroles eent este dite a la request & priere especiale de **Edward** nostre chier suiz & nostre Lieutenant en Engleterre, & des honourables peres *Willame Evesq; de Ely, Willame Evesq; de Ba & de Welles, Richard Evesq; de Londre, Wauter Evesq; de Coventre & de Lichef. & Henry Elit de Everwyke, & des nos ames & feaux Edmond Conte de Cornwaill, Johan de Garenne Conte de Surreye & de Suffex, Willame de Beauchamp, Conte de Warrewyke, & des autres de nostre Conseil demorantz en Engleterre* pres de lavantdit nostre suiz releissoms & pardonoms pleinement as ditz Contes, & a *Johan de Ferrers, & a toutz leur menengs, & toutz leur aliez, tote manere de rancour & de indignation* qui nous avoms conceu vers eus si nule ensoit per les enchesons avantdites ou nule de eles. Issint que nul des dits Contes ne *Johan de Ferrers, ne null de leur menenges, ne de leur aliez avantditz, ne soient chalenges, encheisonez ne grevez* par nous ne par nos heirs en null temps pur nule des choses avantdites. E ausi pardonoms & releissoms a toutz autres de nostre Roiaume qui furent somons ou priez de passer ovesq; nous, & ne passerent, totes maneres de rancour & de indignation, si nule eussions conceu vers eus per cele encheson. En tesmoignance des queux choses nous avoms fait fair cestes nos Lettres overtes. Donees a Gaunt le quint jour de Novembr. L'an de nostre Regne vintisme quint.

R E X



- R**EX dilectis & fidelibus suis *Wilhelmo Inge, & Johanni de Coke feld*, salutem. Cum nuper ante transfretationem nostram in Flandriam habuerimus voluntatem & desiderium gravamina populo regni nostri nomine, nostro facta, facere emendari & super hoc miserimus literas nostras patentes, per Comitatus singulos dicti regni, Nos hujusmodi negotium effectui debito mancipari volentes assignavimus
- A** vos in Comitatibus *Lincoln, Roteland, Northampton, Norff. & Suff.* una cum Clericis & religiosis quos locorum *Diocesani* ad hoc duxerint deputandos ad inquirendum per Sacramentum proborum & legalium hominum de Comitatibus prædictis per quos rei veritas melius sciri poterit: super hujusmodi gravaminibus, veluti de rebus captis in Ecclesiis, necnon de lanis, pellibus, coriis, bladis, animalibus, carnibus, piscibus, & omnimodis aliis rebus in Ecclesiis, & extra similiter captis, & asportatis per Comitatus prædictos tam de Clericis quam de Laicis, siue pro custodia maris vel alio modo quocumq; post guerram inter nos &
- B** *Regem Franciæ* inchoatam, & ad ea omnia & singula audienda & terminanda, tam ex officio vobis per presentes commissio, quam ad sectam cujuslibet conqueri se volentis & ad faciendum ulterius in premissis juxta formam ordinationis per nos & consilium nostrum inde factæ, quam sigillo nostro vobis mittimus consignatam, & prout de jure, & secundum legem & consuetudinem regni nostri fuerit faciendum. Et ideo vobis mandamus quod ad certos dies & loca quos ad hoc provideritis premissa faciatis in forma prædicta, salvis nobis amerciamentis & aliis ad nos inde spectantibus. Mandavimus enim Vicecomitibus nostris Comitatum prædictorum quod ad certos dies & loca, quos eis scire faciatis, venire faciant coram vobis tot & tales probos & legales homines de Ballivis suis, per quos rei veritas in premissis melius sciri poterit, & inquire, & similiter locorum *Diocesanis*, quod hujusmodi Clericos & Religiosos cum vos vel alter vestrum eis scire feceritis vel fecerit una vobiscum deputent ad premissa. In cujus, &c. Teste rege
- D** apud Westmonasterium, quarto die Aprilis.

*Eodem modo assignantur subscripti in singulis Comitatibus subscriptis, videlicet.*

- Willielmus de Den*  
& *Roger Bryan*, in } *Essex, Hertf. Cant. Huntind. Middlesex.*  
*Comitatibus*
- E** *Johan. le Savage*  
& *Joh. de Bonquell*, } *Kanc. Suffex, Surr. Sutht. Wilt.*  
*in Comitatibus*
- Johannes Randulf*  
& *Ric. de Coleshull*, } *Berk. Somers. Dorf. Devon. Cornub.*  
*in Comitatibus*
- F** *Ad. de Crokedayk*  
& *Rob. de Knittele*, } *Glouc. Wigorn. Heref. Salop. Staff.*  
*in Comitatibus*

D

Willielmus

N. 35.  
Pat. 26. Ed. 1.  
M. 21. De in-  
quirendo super  
Gravaminibus  
populo Regni  
factis, in singu-  
lis Comitati-  
bus Angliæ.



Wil. de S. Quintino }  
 & Petrus Becard, }  
 in Comitatus

Eborum, Lanc. Notting. & Derb.

Johannes de Burne }  
 & Joh. de Toyleby, }  
 in Comitatus

Boking. Bedf. Oxon. Leyc. Warr.

Ibid.  
 Articles of In-  
 quiry.

Come le Rey avant son passage vers Flaundres eust volonte & de-  
 sir, de faire redrescer & amender les grevances faites a son peo-  
 ple, en noun de luy, e sur ceo envoiait ses Lettres par tuz les Contes  
 D'engleterre, pur ceste chose mettre en effect ordene est par ly e par  
 son conseil que les enquerours que sont assignez pur enquerre de tieu  
 manere des grevaunces enquerrent des choses prises hors de seinte  
 eglise e des prises de leines, peaus, quirs, bles, bestes, chars, peffons,  
 & de tutes autres maneres des choses parmi le Roialme des Clers, &  
 de Lais, puis la guerre commencie entre nous & le Rey de France fust ceo  
 pur garde de la mer ou en autre maniere. E enquerrent meismes ceaus  
 par queux & as queux & de quei, & de combien, & de la value,  
 & coment, & queu maniere ices prises & grevances, lurent seites au  
 poeple. E cestes choses oont & terminent ausibien par office come  
 a sute de partie e quant la verite de ces choses serra atteinte, le quel  
 que ceo soit par garaunt ou saunz garaunt, ceo que serra pris saunz ga-  
 rant soit returne a ceaux que le damage ount receu, si le tortesant  
 cient de quey e outre ceo puniz pur le trespasse. E sil neient de quey  
 ceaus as queus les garantz & le Commissions sont venuz come Vis-  
 cuntes, Clers, assignez, Baillifs, & autre tieu manere de Ministres  
 respoignent pur leur surmis qui averont fait tieu prises. E que  
 de ceo que serra trove pris par garaunt le Rey soit certifie e il entra-  
 taunt quil se tendront apaiez par reson. Et fuerunt inde septem paria  
 & fuerunt Patentes.

N. 3.  
 Brevia 26. 27.  
 Ed. 1. in Tur.  
 Lond. Pryns  
 Ed. 1. F. 797.

A Tous ceus qui ces Lettres verront ou orront, Renaud par la suf-  
 france de Dieu, Evesque de Vicence, Messages nostre Seignour l'  
 Apostoille, saluz en Dieu pardurable. Nous faisons savoir a vostre uni-  
 versite que venant a Whitesand en Royaume de France a nostre pre-  
 sence Monsieur Robert de Bourghersh Chivaler Conestable de Dore, &  
 procurator de trefnoble Prince & Roy D'engleterre, establiz en ceste  
 fourme Edward par la Grace de Dieu Roy D'engleterre, Seignour  
 D'irland, & Ducs D'aquitaine, a touz ceux qui cestes presentes ver-  
 ront ou orront, saluz. Saches que nous felons ordenoms, & esta-  
 blissons nostre ame & feal Robert de Bourghersh nostre Conestable de  
 Dore, nostre certain Procuratour, & li donoms plener poair par ces  
 presentes de baillier & delivrer en nostre noun a Whitesand Johan  
 de Baillol, au reverent Piere Renaut, par la Grace de Dieu Evesque  
 de Vicence, Message l'Apostoille en la fourme que sensuit. Cestass-  
 voir que li dit Apostoille peusse dire & ordener tant soulment de la  
 persone le dit Johan & des terres les queles meismes celi Johan ont  
 jadis en Engleterre, sicome il plerra a la bone volonte du dit Apostoille  
 en mesme la manere que nous purriens dire, se meisme celui Johan  
 demorast vers nous personnelment en Engleterre. Saube a nous & a  
 nos Heirs Rois D'engleterre, le Royaume Descote, les hommes, les  
 inhabitantz & totes les appourtenances des meisme le Royaume. En tes-  
 moignance



moignance des queux choses nous avoms fait faire cestes nos Lettres overtes. Donces a *Canterbir* le quattezime jour de juygnet, l'an de nostre Regne vint & septisme. Rechercea & leust les paroles desouz esclrites. En noun de Dieu, Amen. Come Sire **Johan de Baillol** qui est ici presentz par devant vous reverent *Piere Evesque de Vicence*, Message de nostre Seignour l' *Apostolle* pur multz de *trespass e treisons* Inhumement demonstrez & faitz par li a tresgrant Prince son

A *Souveraigne Seignour sanz meyn* Sire **Edward** par la Grace de Dieu *Roy D'engleterre* encontre son hommage, & le devoir de sa feaute purement par son gree & sanz condition souz meist du tot a la volente du dit *Roy* le *Royaume Descote* du quel il estoit jadis Rois, & tout le droit quil avoit en cel, ou a cel & au pueple de meisme le *Royaume* & a ce touz ses biens, sauve tout soulement a li vie & membre, & non emprisonement. E que puis il par son agreable corage & par sa *franche volente purement & sanz condition*, se rendest a

B son *Seigneur* avantdit *Roi D'engleterre*, & le dit *Royaume Descote*, oue les *hommes* & les autres *droitures* & apertenances univeseles & sa *Royale Dignitie*, & son *Royale* honneur & outre ce toutes ses terres & totes ses possessions, oue touz ses moebles & non moebles & foi movants, sicome appiert par un *Instrument publique* fait de ce, a la requeste du dit **Johan de Baillol**, je **Robert de Bourghersh** *Procureur* du devantdit *Roy D'engleterre*, par commandement de li & come *Procureur*, bail & assigne lavantdit **Johan** present, a vous

C Sire Reverend *Evesque de Vicence*, Message nostre Seignour l' *Apostolle*, pur la Devotion, reverence, & honneur du *tres Seint Piere* nostre Seignour l' *Apostolle* & de la *Seint Eglise de Rome*, es maneres & es conditions que sensivient. Cest assavoir que nostre l' *Apostolle* peusse due & oideiner tant soulement de la persone le meisme **Johan**, & des terres les queles meismes celi **Johan** ont jadis en *Engleterre*, sicome a plerra a la bone volente de nostre Seignour l' *Apostolle*, en mesme la manere que mon Seignour li Rois *D'engleterre* porroit dire si meismes celi **Johan** demorast vers luy personelment en *Engleterre*.

D Saube a mon Seignour le *Roy D'engleterre*, & a ses *Heirs* Rois *D'engleterre* le *Royaume Descote*, les *hommes*, les *Inhabitantz*, & totes les apertenances de mesme le *Royaume*. Cest assavoir & entendre que nostre Seignour l' *Apostolle* ne peusse oideiner ne dire du avantdit *Royaume Descote*, des *hommes*, des *enhabitantz*, ne des apertenances de mesme le *Royaume* pur le devantdit **Johan de Baillol**, ne pur ses *Heirs*, qui sont, ou qui purroient estre, ne pur nul de ses appurtenances par quecunque cause, que ce soit. Et nous

E avantdit *Evesque*, le desusdit **Johan de Baillol** a nous baille avoms ensi resceu en lieu & en noun de nostre Seignour l' *Apostolle*. En tesmoign des queux choses nous avoms mis nostre seal a ces presentes Lettres. Donces a *Whitefand* le Samady devant la fest Nostre Dame la *Magdalene*, au quel jour nous resceumes le devantdit **Johan de Baillol** en la manere desusdite par le *Procureur* devantdit, l'an de nostre Seignour, 1299.

F



N. 37.  
In Tur. Lond.  
A. D. 1298.  
Pryn Ed. 1.  
Fol. 665.

**I**N Nomine Domini, Amen. Anno à Nativitate ejusdem millesimo ducentesimo nonagesimo octavo, Indictione undecimâ prima die Mensis Aprilis in Camera Hospitii venerabilis Patris A. Episcopi Dunelmensis extra London, ipse de statu & conditione Regni Scotiæ & inhabitantium idem regnum coram nobili viro Domino **Johanne de Balliolo** verba faciens— Idem **Johannes** motu proprio in præsentia mei notarii & testium subscriptorum inter alia quædam verba dixit & protulit Sermone Gallico, hunc habentia intellectum, videlicet, quod dum ipse dictum regnum Scotiæ, ut *Rex & Dominus* ipsius regni tenebat atque regebat, tantam invenit in hominibus ejusdem regni *malitiam, fraudem, prodicionem, & dolum*, propter eorum *malignitatem, nequitiam, dolositates*, & alia nonnulla execrabilia & detestabilia facta ipsorum, qui eum tunc *Principem* eorum *potionari*, sicut veraciter intellexerat, machinabantur, intentionis suæ non est prædictum regnum Scotiæ, ingredi vel intrare aliquo tempore in futurum, seu de ipso regno, aut pertinentiis suis per se, vel per alium, aut alios intromittere ullo modo. Nec etiam dictis & aliis multis de causis aliquid habere commune cum *Scotis*. Adjiciens idem Dominus **Johannes** quod alias rogaverat præfatum Dominum **Episcopum Dunelmensem** ut magnifico *Principi & Domino suo*, Domino **Edwardo** Regi Angliæ illustri, hanc suam esse intentionem, voluntatem, & firmum propositum explicaret, & adhuc sibi cum instantia supplicat, quatenus præmissa eidem Domino Regi ex parte suâ dignetur & velit exponere & plenius aperire. Actum Anno, indictione, die & loco prædictis, præsentibus memorato Domino **Episcopo Dunelmensi**, & Nobili viro **Radulpho de Sandwyco**, Constabulario Turris London, & nonnullis aliis existentibus tunc ibidem.

Et ego **Johannes Erturi de Cadomo**, Apostolicæ sedis autoritate *Notarius Publicus*, hiis omnibus interfui, propria manu scripsi, & mei signi annotatione, in hanc publicam formam redegei.

N. 38.  
Clauf. 34. Ed.  
1. M. 6. intus  
Pryn ut supra  
F. 1124.

**R**EX Vicecomiti Suth'ton. salutem. Quia inimicum, *rebellem, & proditorem* nostrum **Willielmum Episcopum Sancti Andree** mittimus ad Castrum nostrum **Wynton**, carcerali custodiæ mancipandum, exigente hoc multiplici culpa sua, Tibi precipimus quod dictum Episcopum in tuam custodiam recipias & corpus ejus infra turrim dicti Castri in loco tutiori, & fortiori ejusdem turris includas, & salvo ac securè in *compedibus ferreis* custodias, sub forisfacturo vitæ & membrorum ac omnium terrarum & tenementorum, bonorum & catallorum tuorum quæ ex nunc forisfacta censemus, si de custodia hujusmodi aliquod periculum immincat in futurum. Proviso, quod locus prædictus intus & exterius taliter muniatur, & firmetur quod de custodia ipsius inclusi nullum timeatur periculum, quodq; ad accedendum ad ipsum seu videndum, vel etiam ad alloquendum nemini possit patere aditus vel facultas, set nec ipse *Episcopus* quemquam videat, seu etiam alloquatur, præter illos quos ad deserviendum ei necessario tuo periculo deputabis, & quos per singulos menses mutare & alios subrogare poteris ad cautelam, si pro securitate tuâ videris expedire, ut cujuslibet conspirationis & collusionis suspicio evitetur. Et ut custodia ejus securior habeatur, omnes aditus & Portæ Turris prædictæ securius firmentur, & pons versatilis levetur continue, & claudatur;

ad



ad quam custodiam, fideles & bonos assignabis sub fidejussoria cautione custodes, pro quibus tu ipse nobis volueris sub prænотatis pœna & periculo respondere. Ad hæc quia complicem suum consimili vel fortè majori infamiâ maculatum **Robertum** scilicet *Episcopum Glasguensem* fidelitatem suam erga nos & coronam nostram frequenter & temerè violantem, mittimus ad Castrum nostrum *Porcester*, incarcerandum ibidem, Tibi precipimus, ut posito prius in tuto in turri *Wynton*, præfato **Episcopo Sancti Andreae** modo & forma præexpressis, dictum *Episcopum Glasguensem* in propria persona tua, ducas salvo & securè usq; *Porcestre*, & juxta tuam & Custodis nostri Castri prædicti circumspeditionem industrem, ipsum *Episcopum* in tuciori & fortiori loco Castri prædicti, in *compedibus ferreis* includas, locum insuper prædictum muniri & firmari vestro & ipsius Custodis Castri prædicti periculo facias, modo quo superius exprimitur de *Episcopo Sancti Andreae*, seu etiam meliori, quia tam te quam prædictum custodem Castri nostri prædicti de custodia ipsius *Episcopi* volumus æquanimiter onerari. Et ut fortius & firmitus custodiantur, volumus & mandamus, ut adjungas tibi & Custodi nostro castri prædicti aliquos homines fideles, & idoneos, terras tenentes de visneto castri prædicti vel loco viciniore, quos ad hoc sufficientes videris, qui dictam custodiam una vobiscum recipiant & habeant, sub pœnis & periculis prænотatis. De sustentatione vero dictorum *Episcoporum* famulantium eis & Custodum suorum, quam per te exhiberi volumus secundum Indenturam quam tibi mittimus præsentibus interclusam cujus altera pars remanet penes Thesaurarium nostrum, allocationem debitam tibi habere faciemus. Qualiter autem, & quam provide & secure ordinaveris de custodia prædicta, & quot & quos terras tenentes, tibi & dicti Custodi Castri de *Porcestre* adjunxeris ad eandem, dicto Thes. nostro sub tuo & illorum sigillis qui una tecum onus subibunt Custodiæ memoratæ significes, sine mora. T. R. apud Dunolm. 7 die Aug.

**C**UM in Parlamento Domini Regis apud Karliolum in Octabis Sancti Hillarii, Anno Regni Domini Regis **Edwardi** 35. propositæ fuerunt petitiones per Comites, Barones, & alios Magnates, & Communitatem totius Regni Angliæ pro statu Coronæ Regiæ, necnon terrarum ipsius Regis Scotiæ, Walliæ, & Hiberniæ, & tota communitate prædicta super variis novis & intollerabilibus gravaminibus, oppressionibus, injuriis & extorsionibus præfatis Comitibus, Baronibus, Magnatibus, & communitate, autoritate & mandato Domini Papæ, ac etiam per Magistrum **Willielmum Cesta**, Domini Papæ Clericum, necnon ejusdem Magistri **Willielmi** Commissarios, Ministros, seu Vices-gerentes & ipsius nomine illatis, multipliciter in regno, & terris prædictis, prout in articulis contentis in prædictis petitionibus, qui tales sunt, inseritur.

**F**HÆC omnia ad extrahendam à regno pecuniam, ad exinanitionem Ecclesiæ manifestam, & ad ditandum alienigenas, spoliatis indigenis, tendere dinoscuntur, nisi exurgat Deus & dissipentur inimici ejus, ut per secularem Principem & ipsius Consilium de consensu Procerum & Magnatum tanta malicia reprimatur.

N. 39.  
Rileys Placita  
Parl. F. 379.

N. 40.  
lb. F. 381.



Super quibus *oppressionem, gravaminum, & extorsionum & injuriarum Articulis* prælati Magister **Willielmus Cessa** quatinus ipsum contingunt in pleno Parlamento prædicto allocutus, convictus extitit, nec inde se potuit aliquo modo excusare, nisi tantum quod dixit, quod *authoritate Domini Papæ* præmissa fuerat executus. Et quia facta Magistri **Willielmi Cessa** in præmissis, si tolerarentur, manifeste cederent in divini cultus diminutionem, & Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ exinanitionem, necnon in præjudicium, læsionem, & exhæredationem *Coronæ, potestatis, jurisdictionis, & dignitatis Regiæ Anglicanæ, destructionemq; totius communis prædictæ, ac status regni, legum & consuetudinum ejusdem subversionem*, quod absit, perpetuam. Et unde majora pericula possent processu temporis evenire.

Demum, consideratis periculis prædictis, ex *assensu Domini Regis, ac toto Consilio Parliamenti prædicti*, provisum fuit, concordatum, ordinatum, & consideratum, quod præmissa gravamina, oppressiones, injurias & extorsiones fieri non permetterentur in regno, & terris prædictis, & prohibitum est prædicto Magistro **Willielmo** in Parlamento prædicto, quod de cætero contra provisionem, concordiam, considerationem, prædictas, nec procedat, nec per se, seu alium quemcumq; in præmissis intromittat vel aliquo præmissorum. Et Injunctum est eidem Magistro **Willielmo**, quod quicquid per ipsum, Collegas, Commissarios, Ministros, Vices-gerentes, aut alios quoscunq; sibi adhaerentes, seu intendentes attemptatum est, actum seu executum in præmissis, & quolibet præmissorum revocet, ut cassum, irritum, & inane, & totam pecuniam per eos in hac parte levatam, salvo custodiri faciat, & secure infra regnum prædictum, quousq; *Dominus Rex*, de Consilio prædicto, aliud super hoc duxerit ordinandum. Et ad majorem hujus rei evidentiam, ordinatum est, & concordatum per *Dominum Regem & Consilium prædictum*, quod *Nuncii* experti ad dictum *Dominum Papam* ex parte dicti *Domini Regis, & totius communis prædictæ*, transmittantur ad prædicta gravamina, oppressiones, extorsiones, & injurias notificanda & exponenda. Et præceptum est singulis Vicecomitibus regni prædicti, quod per sacramentum proborum & legalium hominum de Ballivis suis, per quos rei veritas melius sciri poterit, diligenter inquirent de nominibus Commissariorum, & aliorum Ministrorum prædicti Magistri **Will. Cessa**, qui præmissa, oppressiones, gravamina, extorsiones, & injurias in Comitibus prædictis, taliter perpetrarunt aut fecerunt necnon, de nominibus eorum, qui coram dictis Commissariis, vel Ministris, aliquem aut aliquos, citari vel vocari fecerunt, seu dicta gravamina executi fuerunt. Et omnes illos quos in præmissis culpabiles invenerint, attachient per corpora eorum, ita quod eos habeant coram Rege in Octabis Sanctæ Trinitatis ubicunque tunc fuerit in Anglia, ad respondendum tam *Domino Regi*, quam aliis inde conqueri volentibus super præmissis. Et ad faciendum & recipiendum quod *Curia Regis* consideraverit in hac parte, & Vicecom. habeant ibi nomina eorum quos inde culpabiles invenerint, & Brevia.



- R**EX omnibus ad quos præsentēs literæ pervenerint, salutem. Sciatis quod ob reverentiam sedis Apostolicæ, & affectionem quam erga Sanctissimum in Christo Patrem Dominum **Clementem** Divina Providentia *Summum Pontificem* gerimus & habemus, *concedimus* quantum in nobis est, quod dilecti nobis, Magister **Willielmus Testa** Archidiaconus Dravensis, in Ecclesia Coventrensi, & **Petrus Amalmeni** Canonicus Burdegalensis, sedis Apostolicæ nuncii *fructus primi* anni a tempore reservationis inde per Dominum **Papam** sibi factæ, de beneficiis Ecclesiasticis cum cura & sine cura, vacantibus in regno nostro provenientes usq; ad triennium secundum mandatum Apostolicum, non obstantibus quibuscunq; *Prohibitionibus* in Parlamento nostro inde factis: Ita videlicet, quod de *fructibus* de *Abbatibus* seu *Prioratibus* vacantibus in eodem regno provenientes se nullatenus intrōmittant, ad *opus* dicti Domini summi Pontificis, modo debito colligere custodireq; valeant & tenere. Hoc tamen observato, quod pecuniam inde proveniente[m] extra idem regnum præterquam per *vi-am Cambii* non deferant seu deferri faciant, quovis modo sine licentia speciali. Teste Rege apud Carliolum quarto die Aprilis, Anno regni 35.

Per ipsum Regem.

- C** **P**Rætextu quarum literarum præfati Clerici Domini **Papae** non habentes respectum ad *prohibitiones* eis inde in dicto Parlamento factas ad omnia prædicta extorsiones & gravamina facienda reverterunt; & quia dicti Clerici postea occasione prohibitionum illarum per plures de regno impediti fuerunt, quo minus extorsiones suas & gravamina sicut prius facere possent: Et idem Clerici in Concilio Domini Regis apud Westmonasterium, ad festum Sanctæ Trinitatis proximo sequentis, quasdam *petitiones* super impedimento eis facto porrexerunt, & protulerunt coram Concilio ibidem literas suas supradictas. Et quia compertum fuit per easdem, quod Dominus Rex nichil revocavit de prædicta Ordinatione facta in Parlamento nec aliquid eisdem Clericis concessit per literas prædictas nisi quod primos fructus Ecclesiarum vacantium, quantum in Rege fuit colligere, possint & habere, & super hoc quod nichil facerent, nec attemptarent, quod cederet in præjudicium Coronæ seu dignitatis Regiæ, aut aliorum fidelium Regis, & quod singula gravamina prædicta in præjudicium Regis & aliorum fidelium suorum cedunt, de mandato Domini Regis tunc apud Karliolum existentis. Concordatum fuit in eodem Concilio quod præfati Clerici nulla de gravaminibus prædictis facerent nec primos fructus Ecclesiarum de patronatu Regis, pro eo quod in præjudicium Regis Coronæ cederet, nec aliorum haberent. Intelligentibus autem dictis Clericis de concordia huiusmodi, *petitiones* suas ulterius in Concilio prosequi, seu ibidem ad responsionem earundarum habenda accedere noluerunt. Ideoque ordinata fuit & facta eisdem prohibitio subtrus scripta.

N. 41.  
Pat. 35. Ed. 1.  
M. 19. Riley  
ut supra. F.  
383.

N. 42.  
Riley ut supra,  
F. 384.



N. 43.  
Cl. 25. Ed. 1.  
M. 13. Dorf.

**F**ET a remembrer que le dimeine le xxvi. jour de Feuerer a *La-  
nercoft* nostre Seigneur le Roy ordena e comanda par acunes re-  
sons que maintenant apres les tres simeins apres le prochein *tornement*  
que serra ore a la Quinzeine de Pasque prochein avenir Monsieur  
**Piers de Sabaston** soit prest a passer la Mer a *Dovre* vers *Gascoign* a  
demoergey sanz revenir pardecea tant que au repel nostre Seigneur le  
Roy avantdit & par son conge, e a cele ordinance tenir sanz venir en-  
contre en nul point, le dit Monsieur **Piers** fit Serment au jur e au leu  
desusditz. Sur le cors Dieu, sur la croiz neitz, e, sur les autres reliques  
nostre Seigneur le Roy. E outre ceo Monsieur **Edward Prince** de  
*Gales* fiz nostre Seigneur le Roy fit sur le Serement sur le cors Dieu e sur  
les autres Reliques quil ne receitret, ne retendroit pres de li ne ovesque  
li le dit Monsieur **Piers** contre *Lordenance* avantdite sanz repel ou sanz  
conge de nostre Seigneur le Roy sicom est avantdit. E par comandement  
du dit nostre Seigneur le Roy feust ordenez que le dit Monsieur **Piers**  
eit par au en aid de ses Despens tant come il demorra es parties de  
dela a la volente & au repel nostre Seigneur le Roy sicom est avantdit,  
*Cen Mars Desterlings* ou la value des *chipoteis* a recevoir des issues de  
la terre de *Gascoigne*. E doit le primer an commencer le jour apres  
ceo qui serra passe la mer a *Dovre* jusques a *Whitesand* pur aler en  
*Gascoigne* a demorer y solonc la dite ordenance & dite prendre la  
dite summe a la volente le Roy e tant que le Roy eit fit enquere ceo  
que le dit Monsieur **Piers**, ad pardecea e pardela e des profitz quil  
ad eu puis quil vint en Engleterre issint que quant lechose serra ben  
enquise e que le Roy ensoit pleinement avise quil puisse ordener dacrestr  
ou damenuler *lestat* du dit Mons. **Piers** solonc ceo que plerra au Roy  
e quil vorra que bon soit.

N. 44.  
Clauſ. 1. Ed. 1.  
M. 11. Dorf.  
Prynſ Ed. 1.  
F. 122.

**C**UM Ecclesiis Cathedralibus in regno Angliæ viduatis, & de  
jure debeat & solet de consuetudine provideri per electionem Ca-  
nonicam ab hiis potissimè celebrandum Collegiis, Capitulis, & perso-  
nis ad quas jus pertinet eligendi, *petita tamen prius ab Illustri Rege An-  
gliæ super hoc licentia & optenta, & demum celebrata electione, persona  
Electi eidem Regi debeat presentari, ut idem Rex contra personam ipsam  
possit proponere, si quid rationabile habeat contra eam.* Videtur eidem  
Domino Regi, & suo consilio, quod sibi & Ecclesiæ Cantuariæ, cujus  
ipse patronus est pariter & defensor fiat præjudicium in hac parte, præ-  
cipue si res trahitur in aliis Ecclesiis Angliæ in exemplum, quod  
**Summus Pontifex** hiis omiſſis in hoc casu, ubi nec in materia,  
nec in forma electionis inventum est fuisse peccatum, nec in ipsius lit-  
teris expressum *potestatem sibi assumpserit ipsi Ecclesiæ providendi.* Unde  
ne de cætero ad consimiles provisiones procedat Romana Ecclesia: Et  
si ad eas processerit, nec dicto Domino Regi per eas præjudicium gene-  
retur, ut Temporalia alicujus Ecclesiæ Cathedralis sic proviso reddere  
teneatur, Domine Electe Cantuariensis Temporalia Cantuariensis Ec-  
clesiæ idem Dominus Rex vobis *concedit* ad præsens de gratia sua spe-  
ciali. Et ego *Iternus Bernard* ejusdem Domini Regis Clericus vice &  
nomine ipsius *protestor*, quod *concessio* Temporalium in casu consimili  
facta Domino **Nicholao Wintoniensi Episcopo**, cum protestatione ta-  
men, & nunc in persona vestra denuo iterata, cum protestatione con-  
simili, ad consuetudinem vel exemplum futuris temporibus minime  
pertrahatur. Facta autem & lecta fuit ista protestatio apud West-  
monastr



monastr. in Capella Sancti Stephani die Lunæ in vigilia Sanctæ Lucie Virginis, in præsentia fratris **Roberti de Kilwardby** Cantuar. Electi. præsentibus & ad hoc specialiter vocatis venerabili Patre W. Dei Gratia Exon. Episcopo; & discretis viris Dominis **W. de Berton** Canc. Angliæ, Magistro Johanne de Chistall Decano Sancti Pauli London. R. Burnell Eborum Archidiacono, Herveo de Borham, fratre Johanne de Derlington, Magistro Willielmo de Cornera, Johanne de Kirkeby, Willielmo de Saham, & Johanne de Shalesmesford, Monacho Cantuar. & multis aliis. Anno Domini 1272.

**M**emorandum, quod venerabilis Pater J. Cantuar. Archiepiscopus, venit coram Rege & consilio suo in Parlamento Regis Sancti Michaelis, anno regni Regis septimo apud Westmonastr. & confitebatur & concessit quod de statutis, provisionibus & declarationibus eorundem, quæ per ipsum promulgatæ fuerunt apud Rading. mense Augusti anno eodem, inter quasdam Sententias Excommunicationis quas idem Archiepiscopus ibidem promulgavit: Primo, deleatur & pro non pronunciata habeatur, illa clausula in prima sententia Excommunicationis quæ facit mentionem, de impetrantibus literas Regias ad impediendum processum in causis quæ per sacros Canones, &c. Secundo, quod non excommunicentur Ministri Regis licet ipsi non pareant mandato Regis, in non capiendo Excommunicatos. Tertio, de illis qui invadunt Maneria Clericorum, ut ibi sufficiat pœna per Regem posita. Quarto, quod non interdicat vendere victualia Eboracensi Archiepiscopo vel alii venienti ad Regem. Quinto, quod tollatur Magna Charta de foribus Ecclesiarum. Confitetur etiam & concessit, quod nec Regi nec Hæredibus suis, nec regno suo Angliæ, ratione aliorum Articulorum in concilio Rading. contentorum, nullum generetur præjudicium in futurum.

**R**EX Venerabili in Christo Patri J. Cantuar. Archiepiscopo totius Angliæ Primati & omnibus Episcopis & aliis Prælatibus & absentium Procuratoribus London. conventuris, salutem. Dilectos & fideles nostros Rogerum Extraneum & Hugonem filium Ottonis Seneschallum hospitii nostri ad vos duximus transmittendos ad appellandum pro nobis ne in Concilio seu Congregatione nuper apud London. convocata, contra Coronam & Dignitatem nostram aliqua statuere præsumatis. In cujus, &c. Teste Rege apud Wynton. 6. die Januarii. Anno Regni nostri octavo.

**R**EX Venerabilibus in Christo patribus J. eadem gratia Cantuariensi Archiepiscopo totius Angliæ Primati & omnibus Episcopis & aliis Prælatibus in instanti concilio de Lambeth conventuris, salutem. Vinculo juramenti nobis estis (ut nostis) astricti, quo nobis in omnibus ad Coronam & dignitatem nostram spectantibus omnem quam poteritis fidelitatem observare debetis. Quapropter vobis mandamus in fide & fidelitate quibus nobis tenemini firmiter injungentes, quod ad defensionem & conservationem Jurium nostrorum & regni nostri, omnem quam poteritis diligentiam adhibere curetis, & sub vinculo juramenti memorati, & pœna amissionis Temporalium quæ de nobis tenetis, vobis omnibus & singulis firmiter inhibemus, ne in præjudicium nostri vel ejusdem regni in concilio nunc apud Lambeth convocato, nec etiam contra nos vel jura nostra, quibus prædecessores nostri Reges Angliæ &

N. 45.  
Clauſ. 7. Ed. 1.  
M. 1. Dorf.

N. 46.  
Pat. 8. Ed. 1.  
M. 10. intus.

N. 47.  
Pat. 9. Ed. 1.  
M. 6. intus.



nos ex antiquâ & approbatâ consuetudine usi sumus, procurare vel attemperare aliqua præsumatis, aut etiam alicui hujusmodi procurare seu statuere volenti, assensum præbeat, sic ergo vos habeatis in hac parte, quod vos debeamus potius specialiter commendare, quam de contrariis quod absit, increpare. Teste Rege apud Lyndhurst 18. die Septembris.

*De Custode Regni Angliæ constituto.*

N. 48.  
Rot. pat. 1. Ed.  
2. parte 1. M. 2.

**R**EX Archiepiscopis, Episcopis, Abbatibus, Prioribus, Comitibus, Baronibus, Militibus, libere Tenentibus, Communitatibus, Vicecomitibus, & omnibus aliis Ministris, Ballivis & fidelibus suis ad quos presentes littere pervenerint, salutem. Sciatis quod cum nos pro quibusdam negotiis, nos & statum Regni nostri tangentibus sumus ad partes transmarinas favente Domino in proximo profecturi. Nos de circumspectione & industria & fidelitate dilecti & fidelis nostri **Petri de Gavaston** Comitis Cornubiæ specialiter confidentes, ipsum **Comitem Custodem nostrum** dicti Regni ac locum nostrum in eodem Regno Tenentem pro pace & tranquillitate Populi dicti Regni nostri melius conservanda, constituimus per presentes, quamdiu in dictis partibus transmarinis moram fecerimus vel aliud inde duxerimus ordinand. Et ideo vobis mandamus quod eidem **Comiti** tanquam **Custodi** nostro dicti Regni & locum nostrum tenenti in eodem, in hiis quæ ad dictam custodiam pertinent, intendentes sitis & respondentes. In cujus, &c. quamdiu nobis placuerit duratur. Teste Rege apud Westmonasterium, dce xxvi. Decemb.

*De potestate data Custodi Angliæ, ordinandi de custodiis & conferendi Beneficia.*

N. 49.  
Rot. pat. 1. Ed.  
2. parte 2.  
M. 28.

**R**EX Omnibus ad quos, &c. Salutem. Sciatis quod nos de fidelitate & industria dilecti & fidelis nostri **Petri de Gavaston** Comitis Cornubiæ, quem **Custodem** nostrum Regni nostri, dum nos in partibus transmarinis ad quas jam profecturi sumus, morari contigerit, vel aliud inde ordinandum duxerimus, constituimus specialiter confidentes eidem **Comiti** concedendi, vice nostra *licentiam eligendi*, omnibus illis qui *licentiam* hujusmodi ad futuros sibi eligendi *Pastores*, tam in *Ecclesiis Cathedralibus* quam *Conventualibus*, quas interim *Pastorum* solatio destitui contigerit in forma debita petierint, & postmodum *Electi* onibus illis *assensum* nostro nomine adhibendi, necnon ab *Electis* hujusmodi, cum *Electi* ones de ipsis faciendas confirmari contigerit, *fidelitates* capiendi ac eisdem *Temporalia* quæ ipsis restituenda fuerint restituendi, & similiter *Prebendas Ecclesias* & alia *beneficia* quecumque interim vacantia quæ ad nostram *Collationem* seu *presentationem* pertinuerint nostro nomine conferendi, seu ad ea præsentandi & etiam *ordinandi* de *custodiis* & *maritagiis* que nobis interim accidere contigerit, prout sibi per nos plenius est injunctum, necnon *fidelitates heredum* illorum qui de nobis tenent in capite vel alio modo, & quos interim decedere contigerit, cum hæredes illi plene ætatis fuerint, capiendi & eis terras & tenementa sua prout justum fuerit nostro nomine reddendi plenam tenore præsentium concedimus & committimus potestatem. In cujus, &c. Teste Rege apud Dovor. xviii. die Januarii.

*Per ipsum Regem.*



**L**E Roy a touz ceux qui cestes lettres verront ou orront saluz. Come nous al honur de Dieu, & por le bien de nous, & de nostre Roiaume, coms grantez de nostre fraunche volunte as Prelatz, Contes & Barons de nostre dit Roiaume quil puissent *essire* certaines persones des Prelatz, Contes & Barons & des autres les queux il leur semblera suffisauntz dappeller a eux, durant les temps de leur poiar, cest a savor jelsques a la feste de seint Michel procheine avenir, & de la dite feste en un an prochein suiant, *per ordener & establir lestat de nostre hostel, & de nostre Roiaume*, solonc droit & reson : Nous grantoms par cestes nos lettres a ceux qui deyvent estre esluz, queux quil soient, par les ditz Prelatz, Contes & Barons, plein poair de ordener lestat de nostre hostel, & de nostre Roiaume desusditz, en tien manere que leur ordenances soient faites al honur de Dieu, & al honur & au profit de seint Eglise & al honur de nous & a nostre profit, & au profit de nostre people, solonc droit & reson & le serment que nous seismes a nostre coronnement. Et voloms que les esluz & touz ceux qui sont de nostre seigneurie, & de nostre ligeance les ordenances que faites seront par les Prelatz, Contes & Barons qui a ce seront esluz, & autres par eux a ce appelez, tiegnent & gardent en touz leur pointz, & quil se puissent a ce assurer, lier, & entrejurer, sanz chalonge de nous. Et si par aventure aviegne que partie de ceux qui seront esluz, pur les dites ordenances faire soient destorbez par mort, ou par maladie, ou resnable encheson que Dieu deffende, per quei il ne puissent les dites ordenances prefaire, que adonques bien lyt a eux qui seront presentz pur meismes les ordenances faire, daler avant en les dites ordenances par eux, on appeller autres a eux, a celes ordenances faire solonc ce quil verront que-ce soit plus a honur de nous, & au profit de nous, & de nostre people. Et en tesmoignaunce de queu chose nous avoms fait faire cestes noz lettres overtes. Don a Westm. le xvi. jour de Marz.

**A**Touz ceuz que cest lettre verront ou orront R. par la soeffrance de Dieu Ercevesque de Canturburi &c. R. de London. J. de Nichol. S. de Sarum. H. de Wync. J. de Norwyz. J. de Baa & Wells. J. de Cicestre. W. de Wyr. W. de Excestre. V. de Saynt Davi. par mesmes le soeffrance Esvesques. G. de Clare de Gloucestre & de Hertf. T. de Lancastr. H. de Lacy de Nichol. Humfr. de Bounde Heref. & Essex. J. de Britania de Richmond. Adomar. de Valencia de Penbrok. Guy de Beauchamp de Warwic & E. de Arundel Countes : H. de Lancastr. Henr. de Percy, Hue de Ver, Roberd de Clifford & Roberd Fiz Payn, Will. le Mareschal, John Lovel, Rauf le fiz Will. Peyn de Tipetot, John de Botourt. Barth. de Badlesmer, J. de Grey, John de Crumwell salut in nostre Seygnr. Come nostre treschier Seygnr par la grace Dieu Roy de Engleterre & al honor de Dieu & pur bien dit Seygnr le Roy, e de son Royaume ait Grante de la Franche volunte a nos e as autres Prelates, Countes e Barons du dit Royaume : Que nous puissouns eslire certains persons de nos & des autres les queux il nos semblera suffisauntz de Apeler a nous durant le temps de nostre poer, cest a savor, jelsque la feste saynt Michel prochein avenir, e de la dite feste en un an proscheyn suiant ; *per Ordener Establir lestat del ostel du dit nostre Seygnr. le Roi, e de son Roiaume* solom Droyt e reson, e que ceux qui deivent estre eslutz qui quil soient eyent pleyn poer de ordener lestat del ostel du dit nostre Seygnr. le Roi e de son Roiaume desusditz en tieu manere, qui les ordenances soient faites al honor de Dieu e al honor, e profit de seynt Esglise e al honor

N. 50.  
Pat. 3. Ed. 2.  
M. 16. intus.  
Ryley. plac.  
Parl. fol. 526.

N. 51.  
Registrum  
Winchelsey  
fol. 15. b. at  
Doctors Com-  
mons. Note  
that in this  
Register,  
things are En-  
tered Con-  
fusedly, nei-  
ther according  
to the time  
when done, or  
Order of the  
folio's.



honor du dit nostre Seygn<sup>r</sup> le Roi, è a son profit, è al profit de soen poeple solom droyt & resoun è la serment que le Dit nostre Seygn<sup>r</sup> le Roi fist à son Coronnement. E a ceo le dit nostre Seygn<sup>r</sup> le Roi eyt volu que les eslutz e touz ceux qui seynt sa seignurie è de la liaunce, les ordenances que faites serrunt per les Prelates, Countes, & Barons qui a ceo serrunt eslutz è autres par eux a ceo appelez Teignent & Gardent en touz lur poinz, è quil ceo puissent a ceo a seurer, — lier, & entrejurer saunz chaleng du dit nostre Seygn<sup>r</sup> le Roy ou de soens, e si aventure aveygne que partie de ceux qui serront eslutz pur les dites ordenances faire soient desturbez par mort, ou par maladie, ou resonable enchesoun, que Dieu defende, par quoy il ne puissent les dites ordenances parfaire que a donk bien lit a eux qui serront presents pur mesmes les ordenances faire de aler avant en les dites ordenances per eux ou apeler autres á eux a ces ordenances faire solom ceo quil veront que ceo soit plus al honor del dit nostre Seygn<sup>r</sup> le Roy è al profit de luy e de soen poeple, sicome plus pleynment este continues en les lettres overtes que nostre dit Seygn<sup>r</sup> le Roy nous ad fet sur les choses desusdites; Nous Grantounz è pro mittons pur nos, nos successeurs è nos heyres, Que le grant que nostre Seygn<sup>r</sup> le Roy ad fait en le manere desusdits ne soit autrefois tret en custome, ne en usage ne ne Turne en prejudice du dit nostre Seygn<sup>r</sup> le Royne de ces heyres, ne de nos, nos successeurs & nos heyres.

- Rotulus Parliamenti de Anno quinto Edwardi Secundi.

N. 52.

**L**E Roy a tous ceux as queux cestes lettres vendront Saluz. Sachez que come le seissizme jour de Marz l'an de nòtre regne tierce, al honeur de Dieu & pur le bien de nous & de nostre royaume eussoms graunte de nostre fraunche volunte par nos lettres overtes as Prelats, Counts & Barons de dit Royaume quil puissent eslire certains persones des Prelats, Counts & Barons les queux il lour sembleroit suffisant appeller a eux & eussoms auxint graunte par mesmes les lettres a ceux qui deussent estre esluz, queux quil fussent, par les ditz Prelatz, Countees & Barons plein poar de ordeiner lestat de nòtre hostiel & de nostre royaume desusditz en tieu maniere que leur ordinances fussent faites, al honeur de Dieu & al honeur & profit de seint Eglise, & al honeur de nous & a nòtre profit, & au profit de nòtre poeple solonc droit & resoun, & le serement que nous feimes a nòtre coronnement, si come plus pleinement est contenuz en nos dittez lettres, & lonourable Pierre en Dieu Robert par le grace de Dieu Ercevesque de Cantebirs Primat de tote Engleterre, Evesques, Countes, & Barons a ceo esluz par le vertu de nos dites lettres eient ordeine sur les dites choses en la forme que ce ensuit. Por ceo que par mauvais conseil & deceivant nòtre Seigneur le Roy & tous les soens sont en tores terres deshonorez & estre de la Coronnement des pointz abeissée & demembrez & ses terres de Gascoigne, Dirland & Descoce en point destre perduz si Dieu — ment & son Royaume Dengleterre: en point de reveler pur oppressions, prises & destruccions les queux choses sewes — nòtre Seigneur le Roy de sa fraunche volunte graunta as Prelatz, Countes, & Barons, & as autres bons gentz — de son Royaume que certain gentz fussent esluz de ordeiner & establir lestat de son hostiel & de son Royaume, si come plus pleinement piert par la commission nòtre Seigneur le Roy de ce faite dounte nous Robert par



par le grace de Dieu Ercevesque de Canterbirs Primate de tote Engleterre, Evesques, Countes, & Barons esluz par la vertu de la dite commission ordinoms al honneur de Dieu & de seint Esglise & lonur de Roy & son Royaume en la manere que ce ensuit.

- A** 1. **Supprimes nous ordenoms que les ordinances avant faites** par nous & monstrez au Roy soient tenuz & gardees les queux sont prescheinement souz escriptz. Enprimes ordeine est que seinte Esglise eit totes ces franchises si avant come ele deit avoir. De franchise de seint Esglise.
- B** 2. **Derechief ordeine est que la pees le Roy soit fermement garde** par tout le royaume issent que chescune puisse lauvement alier, venir, & demorir solonc la ley & lusage du royaume. De la pees le Roy garder.
- C** 3. **Derechief ordeine est par les dettes le Roi acquitier & son estat relever & le plus honourablement maintenir,** que nul doun de terre ne de rente, ne de franchise, ne deschite, ne de garde, ne de mariage, ne baille, se face a nul des ditz ordenours durant leur poar del dit ordeinement, ne a nul autre saunz conseil & assent des ditz ordenours ou de la greinour partie de eux ou sis de eux, au miens mes totes les choses des queux profitz poetz surdre soient en prucez al profit le Roy jusques son estat soit avenaument releve & autre chose soit sur ce ordeine al honur & profit du Roy. De douns faites par le Roy sanz assent des Ordenours.
- D** 4. **Derechief est ordeine que les Custumes du Royaume soient** gardees, & receüz par gentz du royaume meismes & non a pas par aliens, & que les issues & les profitz de mesmes les custumes ensemblement ove totes autres issues & les profits issauntz du royaume, des queux choses que ces soient entierment viegnent al Eschequier le Roy & par le Tresorer & les chamberleins soient liveriez pur loustiel le Roy meintenier & aillours a son profit, issint que le Roy puisse vievre du soen saunz prisez faire autres que ancienes dues & acustumez & totes autres ceissent. Des custumes liverer a Leschequir.
- E** 5. **Derechief ordeine est que toutes les Marchantz aliens qui** ont receuz les profitz des custumes du royaume ou des autres choses appartenances au Roy puis la mort Roy Edward pere nostre Seigneur le Roy qui ore est, soient arestuz ove leur biens ou quil soient trevez denz le poer le Roy Dengleterre, jusques il eient renduz resonable acounte de quant quil eient recuz des issues du roialme deinz le temps avantditz, devant le Tresorer & les Barons del Eschequier, & autres jointz a eux par les ditz ordeinours. De Marchantz aliens arestoir.
- F** 6. **Derechief ordeine est que la graund Chartre soit gardee en** toutz ses pointz en tiex manere que sil yeit en la dite Chartre nul point oseur ou dotif soit deselaree par les ditz ordeinours & autres que il verront a eux a ce appeller quant il verront temps & deurant leur poer. De la graunde Chartre tenir.
7. **Et puis derechief pur ce que la Corone est tant abeillee & de-** membree par diverses douns, nous ordenoms que tous les douns que sont donez au damage du Roy & distresse de la Coronne puis la Commission a nous faite de chasteux, villes, terres, & tenements, & baillies, gardes & mariages eschetes & reles, queconques queles soient, aussibien

De douns le Roy repeller.



aussibien en Gascoigne, Irlande, Gales & Escoce, come en Engleterre soient repellez. Et nous les repellons de tout sanz estre redonnez a meismes ceux sanz comun assent en Parlement. Et que si tieu manere des douns ou reles soient desoreines donez encountre la fourme avantdite sanz assent de son Baronage & ce en Parlement tant que ses dettes soient acquittes & son estat avenauntment relevez soient tenuz pur nuls & soit le parvoar puny en Parlement par egard del Baronage.

A

De totes maneres issues du royaume liverer a Eschequier.

8. **Poz ceo que autrefoiz fut ordein que les coustumes du royaume** fussent resceuz & gardez par gentz du royaume & non pas par aliens, & que les Issues & les profitz des meismes les custumes ensemblement ove totes les autres issues & profitz issantz du royaume, queux que eux fussent, entierment venissent al Eschequier le Roy & par le Tresorier & les Chambreleins fussent resceuz & liverez pur l'oustiel le Roy maintenir & aillours a son profit issent que le Roy puisse vivre de soen, sans prisez fair autres que aucienes dues & droitureles, les queux choses ne sont mye tenues dount nous ordeinons que les dites custumes ensemblement ove totes les issues du royaume, come avant est dit, soient resceuz & gardez par gentz de royaume & liverez al Eschequier en la forme susdite.

B

Que le Roy ne alier hors du royaume.

9. **Poz ceo que le Roy ne doit emprendre fait de guerre contre** nul y ne alier hors du son royaume sanz comune assent de son Baronage pur moult des perils que purront avenir a lui & a son royaume, nous ordeinons que le Roy desoremes ne aile hors du son roialme, nemprenge contre nul y fait de guerre sanz comune assent de son Baronage & ceo en Parlement & si autrement le face, & si sur cele emprise face somoundre son service soit la somme pur nule, & si il aveigne que le Roy empreigne fait de guerre contre nully ou aile hors de terre par assent de son dit Baronage & busoigne quil mette Gardein en son royaume, dount le mette par commune assent de son Baronage, & ceo en Parlement.

C

D

Que totes prises cessent.

10. **Et poz ceo quil fait a dotier que le people de la terre se** leve pur prises & diverses oppressions taites einz ces heures, nomenment pur ceo que autre foiz estoit ordeine que nostre Seigneur le Roy resquist de soen sanz prises faire autres que les aucienes dues & accust & totes autres se cessassent & noun pas pur ceo prises sont faites de jour en jour contre cel ordeinement come avons, nous ordeinons que totes prises cessent desoremes sauves les prises aucienes droitureles & dues au Roy & as autres as queux eles sont dues de droit, & si nules prises se facent encountre lordeinement suisdit par qui que ce soit ou de quele condition quil soit, cestassavoir, si nul par colour de purveiance faire al oeps nostre Seigneur le Roy ou a autre preinge blees, mers merchandises ou autre manere des biens contre la volente de ceux a qui il sont & ne rend. maintenant les deniers a la verroie value si ne puisse de ceo avoir respite de la bone volente le vendour solonc ce que est comprise en la grande Charte des prises taites par Conestables des Chasteaux & leur bayliffs & estre la forspise des prises dues suisdites nient contrecsteant commission que il eit, soit levee sur si la menee par huy & cry & menes a la prescheine gaole le Roy,

E

F

&amp;



& de luy soit fait commune ley come de Rebour ou de laron si de ce soit atteint.

- 11. Ensement nobelles custumes sont levees & auncienes** enhauncees, come sur leyns, draps, vins, avoir de poiz & autre choses par quoy les Marchauntz vieignent pluis rielment & meins de bien meignent en la terre & les Marchauntz estrangers demorant plus  
**A** longes quil ne soleint faire, par la quele demore les choses sont le plus encheries quil ne soleint estre au damage du Roy & de son poeple, nous ordeinoms que totes maneres des custumes & maltoutes leveez puis le coronement le Roy Edward fiz le Roy Henry soient entierment oustees & de tot esteintz par toutes jours, nient contrecesteant la Chartre que le dit Roy Edward fist as Marchantz aliens, pur ceo que il fut fait contre la grand Chartre & encontree la fraunchise de la Citee de Lundres & saunz assent del Baronage. Et si  
**B** nuly de quele condition quil soit rien preigne ou leve outre les auncienes custumes, dues & droitureles, ou destourbance face pay quey les Merchantz ne peussent de leur biens faire leur volunte, Et de ceo soient atteintz soient agardez as pleintifs leur damages eauntz regard al purchase al a suite as coustages & per ces que il averont en & al offence de la grande Chartre & eit le Trespassour la prisone solonc la quantite du trespass & solonc descretion des Justices, & mes ne soit en service le Roy sauve nequedent au  
**C** Roy les custumes de leyn, peaux, & de quirs, cestassavoir, de chescun Saack de leyne demy mark, & de CCC. peaux lanuz demy mark, & de last de Cuir un mark, si avoir le doit & desoremes vieignent demoergent & aient les estraunges Merchantz solonc les auncienes custumes & solonc ce que auncienement soleint faire.

De noveles custumes & maltoutes leveez.

- 12. Al honneur de Dieu & de seint Eglise encountre ceux qui** par malice purchalent prohibitions & attachements encountre ordeineurs de seint Eglise en cause de corrections de peche & des  
**D** autres purement espirituelles que nule manere partieignent a la ley court, Nous ordeinoms que par les Justices que atteignent tieu malice & que ancienement les malicious plaintiffs soient agardes damages as ordeiners a tort travailles, ou si les ditz plaintiffs neient dount paier, soit agarde prisone du temps solonc la grievance maliciousment procuree sauve lestat du Roy & de la Corone & autre droit.

De damages aver de lattauteur.

- 13. Et pur ceo que le Roy ad essee mal guide & conseillez** par mauveis conseillets come est susdit, Nous ordeinoms que tous les mauvais conseillets soient oustees & remuez de tourz issuit que eux ne autres tieux ne soient mes pres de luy. ne en office le Roy retenez, & que autres gentz convenables soient meis en lour lieux. Et en meisme la manere soit fait des menengs & des gentz de office que sont en loustiel le Roy que ne sont pas convenables.

De mal conseillets le Roy ouster.

- 14. Et pur ceo que moultz des mauz sont abenuz par tieux** conseillets & tieux Ministers, Nous ordeinoms que le Roy face Chancellor, Chiefe Justice del une Banke & de lautre, Tresorier, Chancellier & Chief Baron del Eschequir, Seneschal de son hostiel, Gardeyne de la Gardrobe & Contreroller, & un Clerk convenable pur garder son Privie Seale, un Chiefe Gardeine de ses Forestes  
**F** de

De officers & Ministers da Roy faire.



de cea Trent & un autre dela Trent & aussi un Escheatour de cea Trent & un autre dela, Chief Clerke le Roy en le commune Banke par le conseil & consent de son Baronage & ceo en Parlement. Et si aviegne par aucune aventure que il covient mettre ascuns des ditz Ministres avant ceo que parlement soit dunque le Roy permettre par le bon conseil que il averoit de li jusques au Parlement. Et issint soit fait desoremes des tieux Ministres quant mestier ferra.

Del Gardeyns  
des Cynkports.  
Membre, secun-  
dà.

De Ministres  
faire en terres.

De Viscountes  
faire en coun-  
ties.

De Gardeyns  
de forestes.

**15. Ensentment nous ordeinoms que touz les chief gardeyns** des portz & chasteaux sur la mere ierront mis & faitz en la fourme susdite, Et que ceux gardeins soient de la terre mesmes.

**16. Et pur ceo que les terres de Gascoigne, Dierland &** Descoce sont en peril destre perdues per defaute des bones ministres, nous ordeinoms que bones & suffisantz ministres soient mis a la gard faire en les dites terres en la fourme contenue en la second Article precheine.

**17. Estre ceo nous ordeinoms que Viscountz soient de-** formes mis par la Chaunceller & Treiorier & les autres de conseil qui ferront presents. Et si Chanceller ne soit present soient mys par le Tresorer & Barons del Eschequir & par les Justices de Bank, Et que tieux soient mis & faitz qui soient convenables & suffisantz & qui eient terres & tenements dount il pussent respondre au Roy & au people de lour faitz & que nuls autres que tieux ne soient meis & que eux eient comission desouz le grant Seale.

**18. Por ceo que commune fame est & obesque cemeinte** de mounstrance ad este fait que diverse oppressions come desheritaunces, faux enditements & emprisonements sur ce grevous raunceo & des autres moultz de maneres des grevaunces que Gardeyns, Bayliffs, Ministres des forestes & autres ount fait par colour de lour Baylies & de lour offices, des queles grevances le people que tant est grevez ne seose overtement pleindre ne leur pleintz faire en la Court le Roy, tant come ils sont en leur baillies & offices. Nous ordeinoms que des touz Gardeins, Bailiffs Ministers, des forestes que avant le temps le Roy qui ore est soleient estre remuables a la volonte le Roy, aussi bien de ceux as queux leur baillies & offices sont voluntriement grantees a terme de vie, nuncountre esteant tieu grant come des autres leur baillies & offices soient seises en la main le Roy, Et que bones gentz & loiaux soient assignez Justices denquere sur les grevances avantdites, & de oier & determiner toutes les grevances & les pleints de touz i ceux qui devers les ditz Gardeins, Bailiffs, Ministres des Forestes suivre vodront pur le Roy ou pur eux mesmes solonc la ley & la custume de royaume, Et si avant come ley le soeffre soient les pleints terminees entre cy & la Pask precheinavenir ou avant cy home poet & bone manere solonc ley, & si les ditz Gardeins, Bayliffes & Ministres soient trouvez coupables des grevances avant dites adonques soient remuez pur touz jours, & si non recient leur Baillies & Offices.

19. Et



N. 19.  
Des Endite-  
ments de la  
Foreste.

Et pur ceo que plusieurs gentz sont desheritez, reinte & destruite par les lovraines gardeins des forestes de cea Trent & de la, & par les autres ministres cointre la fourme de la Chartre de la Foreste & encointre la declaracion que le Roy Edward fiz le Roy Henry fist en la fourme que ensuyt cestavoir nous volouns & grantouns pur nous & pur nos heires que de trespass faitz en nos forestes de vert & de venison que les forestiers en qui baillies tieux trespass seront faitz presentent mistmes les trespass as procheinnes Swainemotes devant Forrestiers, Verdours, Regardours, Agistours & autres Ministres de mistmes les forestes sur & tieux presentments devant les Forestiers, Verdours, Regardours, Agistours & autres Ministres avantdites par searment auslibien des Chevaliers come des autres prodes homes & loiaux & ne my suspicionons des parties veisinaux & plus procheinnes en tieu trespass seront issint presentez purra la verite mientz & plus pleinement estre enquis, & tiele verite issint enquis soient tieux presentments par commune accord & assent de touz les ministres avantdites sollempnement afforciez & de leur seaux ensealez. Et si en autre manere soit nul enditement fait soit deforme a nul tenoz, & pur ceo que les chiefs Gardeins les forestes ne eant my la cite fourme tenoz jusques en cea nous ordeinons que desormes nul ne soit pris nempriionee pur vert ne pur venison, sil ne soit trovez a main oeuvre, ou en la fourme avaunt dite enditez & adunque si lelle le Souverain Gardein de la Foreste a meinprise jusques al dire de la Foreste sans rien prendre pur la deliverance. Et si le dit Gardein faire ne le voile eit brief en Chancellerie que ancienement fut ordenee pur tieux enditez destre a meinprise jusques en Eyre. Et si le dit Gardein apres le dit brief resceu ne face tieux enditez sanz delay deliverer a mainprise sanz rien prendre dunque eit le Plantiff brief en Chancellerie au Viscount dattacher le Gardein devant le Roy a certeine jour a respondre per quoi il nad replein celui qu'est en si pris & le viscount appelez les Verdiers face deliverer celui que est pris per bone mainprise en la presence des Verdiers & les nouns des meinpernours face liverer a mistmes les verdiers a respondre en Eyre devaunt Justices. Et si le chief Gardein de ceo soit atteint soient agardeez as Pleintifs ses damages au treble & le dit Gardein a la prisone & reinte a la volonte le Roy & mes ne soit en office le Roy & desormes soit escrit a eux come as chiefs Gardeins de la Forest pur ceo que Justices ne devient il estre ne recordavoir forsque en Eyre. Et pur ce que home dit que les chiefs Gardeins des Forestes encointre la fourme suisdite ont pris & leves fines, Amerciements, & raunceons, nous ordeinons que les ditz Gardeins & les autres chiefs Gardeins rendent leur accomptes des prises suisdites devant le Tresorier & le Barons d'Leschequir entre cy & le Noel prochein avenir.

Pur ceo que come chose est que par l'examinement de Prelatz, Counts & Barons, Chivaliers & autres bones gentz du royaume trovez que Piers de Gaveston ad malmenez & mal conseilez nostre Seigneur le Roy lad entice a malfaire en diverses maneres & deceivances en accointant a luy tout le Tresor le Roy & lad esloigne hors du royaume en accreaunt a luy roial poer & roial dignitee come en alliance faire degentz par serementz de vivre & morir ouisque li encointre toutes gentz, & ceo par le tresor que il purchase de jour en jour enseignant sur lestat le Roy & de la Corone en destruccion du Roy

N. 20.  
De Piers de  
Gaveston.



& du Peuple, & especialment enloignent le cuer de seigneur de ses liges gentz en despisaunt leur conseils, nient soeffrant bones ministres faire ley de terre en ostant les bones ministres mettant ceux de sa coviegne aussibien aliens come autres que a sa volunte & a son commandement offendent droit & ley de terre en pernant terres tenements & Baillies du Roy a luy & a ses heires & ad fait que le Roy ad done terres, tenements, de la corone as divers gentz a grant damage & descrece de lestat le Roy & de la corone & ceo aussibien puis lordeinement que le Roy granta as ordeinons de faire au profit de li & de son people come devant encountre lordeinement des ordeinours & maintient Robbeours, homicides & les faites avoir le Chartre le Roy de pees endonant hardement a melfours de pis faire & menant le Roy en terre de guerre sanz commune assent de son Baronage du peril de son corps & en destruccion du roiaume & en fesaunt sealer blanches Chartres desous le grant seal du Roy, en deceite et desheritance du Roy & de la corone & encountre son homage, & felonement, fauxement & traireusement ad fait les choses suisdites a grant deshonour du Roy & desheritison de la corone & a destruccion du people en molts maneres, & ovesque ce nous tantz regard a les faitz le trenoble Roy pere le Roy qorest par qui agarde lavantdite Pieres forsjurra le roiaume Dengleterre & voleit que notre Seigneur le Roy son fiz forsjurast a touz jours la compagnie de lui & qui puis par commune assent de tout le roiaume & du Roy, & de lui mesmes Prelatz Countes, & Barons autrefoitz estoit agardez de meisme le royaume voider & voida, & que son retourner nestoit unques par commune assent, mes soulement par assent des ascunes persones qui sous condicions sibien se portast apres son retourner a ce se assenterent & ore certainement est troves son malport pur queu port & pur les grauntz mauveistes suisdites & pur plusours autres que purront avenir a nostre Seigneur le Roy & a son people & pur bon accord nurrier entre le Roy & ces gentz & moltes maneres de discords & perils eschivre nous ordinoms per vertue de la Comission nostre Seigneur le Roy a nous grantee que Pieres de Gaveston come piert Enemy de Roy & de son people soit de tout exilez auxibien hors du royaume Dengleterre, Delcoce, Dirland, & de Gales come de tote la Seignourie nostre Seigneur le Roy aussibien dela la mere come de cea, a touz jours sanz james retourner. Et quil voida le royaume Dengleterre & totes les terres suisdites & tout outrement la Seignourie nostre seigneur le Roy entre cy et la feste de touz seintes preschein avenir & luy donoms port a Dover en la fourme suisdite, & nule part aillours a passer & a voider & si le dit Piers demoerge en le roiaume Dengleterre ou nule part aillours en la Seignourie nostre Seigneur le Roy outre le dit jour que done luy est de voider & de passer come est suisdite, adunque soit fait de luy come del enemy du Roy & du Royaume & de son people, Et que tous ceux desormes tount encontre cest ordeinement en droit du dit Exil oue la peine que sensuyt soit fait de eux solonc ceo que y appent, si de ceo soient atteintz.

N. 21.  
De Emery Fil-  
combe.

Ausint nous ordeinons que Emery & ceur de la compagnie de Friscomband viegnent a laccout rendre en manere que fut ordone & publice non contrestant laccout que il se dient avoir renduz deinz la quinzeme de la seint Michel prechein avenir & soient mis en arrest touz les corps & touz les biens de la Compagnie de ceux de Friscomband que purront estre trovez en le poer le Roy Dengleterre,



A terre, Et que totes les terres le dit Emery soient siefiz en le main le Roy ou quil soient en le dit poer le Roy. Et si le dit Emery ne viegne deinz le jour assigne pur ceo que par lui est lordeinement suisdite enfrentz. Et pur sa substrete il rend soi memes coupable & suspect, nous ordeinoms que il soit bany hors del poer du Roy, & de cele heur enavantz soit tenuz a enemy et de luy soit fait come del enemy du Roy & du Royalme, si nul part soit trovez en le poer le Roy auxibien de la, come de cea.

B Ausint pur ceo que **Wonsier Henry de Beaumont** ad pris de notre Seigneur le Roy au damage & deshonour du Roy puis le temps del ordeinement dez ordeinours a quel le Roy se agrea le roiaume de Man & autres terres, rentz, franchises & Baillies & procure de doner as autres terres & tenements franchises & Baillies contre cel ordeinement, Et pur ceo qu'il ad mal conseillez le Roy & contre son serement Nous ordeinons qu'il soit oustez du Conseil le Roy pur touz jours, & que pres du Roy mes ne viegne nule part fil ne soit a commune somons du Parlement ou en guerre, si le Roy le voet avoir fil ne soit par commune assent des Ercevesques, Evesques, Countes & Barons, & ceo en plein Parlement, & totes les autres terres qu'il tient de deinz le roiaume **Dengleterre** soient pris en la main le Roy **Dengleterre** & tenues tanque le Roy eit relceuz des issues de celes terres la value de touz les elpees que le dit Sire Henry ad pris des terres resceuz contre le dit ordeinement. Et si le avant dit Sire Henry viegne en nul point contre cest ordeinaunce soit desheritez pur toutz jours de toutes les terres qu'il ad en Engleterre du donn le Roy.

D Pur ceo que trobe est par examinement des Prelatz, Countes & Barons que la Dame de Vescy ad procure le Roy a doner a sire Henry de Beaumont son frere & as autres terres & franchises & Baillies au damage & Deshonour du Roy & apert disherite son de la corone & ausint procure demander hors lettres desus la targe contre ley & lentencion du Roy. Nous ordeinoms que ele aile a son meson & ceo deinz la quinzeme de saint Michel prochein avenir sanz james returner al la court pour demore faire & que pour toutes cestes choses avantdites, & pur ceo que home entent que le chastel de Banburgh est de la corone, Nous ordeinoms ausint que cel chastel soit repris deluy en la main le Roy, & que mesne soit baillie a li ne a autre forsque a la volunte le Roy.

E Et pur ceo que le poeple se sent moult grebez par diverses dettes que leur sont demandez al oeps le Roy pur somons del eschequir les queux dettes sont payez dont les gentz out diverses acquittances, les unes par tailles & par brefs & les unes par diverses franchises, & leur sont grauntez per faitz des Roys que sont alloweables, Nous ordeinoms que desoremes sur laccout de chescun Viscount & d'autres Ministers le Roy que a count devient rendre at Eschequir soient tieux maneres des tailles brefs & franchises allowez que allowables sont sur laccout si les dites acquittances soient mounstrez a la Court issint que mes ne courgent en demaunde par defaut de allowance, Et si le Tresorier & les Barons de Leschequir ne le facent en la fourme avantdite eient les Pleintiffs leur recovier par petitions en Parlement.

N. 22.  
De Monf. Hen.  
Beaumont.

N. 23.  
De la Dame  
de Vescy.

N. 24.  
De Acquit-  
tances en Lesc-  
hequir.



N. 25.  
De plez tenir  
en Eſchequir.

Pur ceo que communes Merchantz & autres plusours du people sont resceuz de pleder a Lefchequir ples de dette & de trespas par le reson qu'il sont avoues par les Ministres de la dite place plus avant que estre ne deveroient dount les accomptes & les autres choses touchantz le Roy sont se puis delaiez, & ouesque ceo moltz gentz du people grevez, Nous ordeinoms que desormes ne soient tenuz plees en la dite plees del Eſchequir, forsque les plees touchantz le Roy & ces Ministres que sont responsables en Lefchequir par la reson de lour offices & les Ministres de meisme la place & pour & lour servants que tout le puis sont demourantz ouesque mesnengs eux en les lieux ou Lefchequir demort. Et si nul soit resceu par avouerie de la dite place de pledier en la dit Eſchequir encontre la fourme suisdit eiet le empledez leur recoverier en parlement.

A

N. 26  
De plez tenir  
en la Maref-  
chaux.

Ensement pur ceo que le people se sent moult grevez que Seneschau & Marechaux tiegnent moultz des plees que a leur office ne appendent & auxi de ceo que eux ne voient recevoir Attournez auxibien pur les Defendents come pur les Pleintiffs, Nous ordeinons que desormes rescevent Attournez auxibien pur les Defendents come pur les Pleintiffs, & que il ne tiegnent plez de frantenement ne de dette ne de covenant ne de contract, ne nul commune plee des gentz du people fors tant soulement de trespas del houstiel & autres trespas faitz de deinz la verge & de contractes & covenantes que ascun del houstiel le Roy avera fait as autres de meisme loustiel & en meisme loustiel & nemy aillours, Et que nul play de trespas ne pledent autre que ne soit attache par eux avant que le Roy isse hors de la verge ou la trespas ferra fait, Et les plederont hastivement de jour en jour issint que il soient par pledez & terminez avant ceo que le Roy isse hors de les boundes de cele verge ou le trespas fut fait, Et si per cas dedeinz les boundes de cele verge ne poent estre terminez seissent tieux ples devant le Seneschall & se purchasent les pleintiffs par la commune ley ne desoremes ne preigne le Seneschall conifance de dettes ne dau tres choses forsque des gentz del hostiel avantdire & encontre gentz del hostiel avantdit, ne nul autre plai ne tiegnent par obligation fait a la distres du Seneschall & des Marechalx ne que nul de loustiel ne qui suivent loustiel soient mis en Enquest devant eux forsque la ou les Pleintiffs & les Defendents sont du dit hostiel & des faitz faitz en meisme loustiel. Et si le seneschal & Marechal rien facent contre cest ordeinement soit lour fait tenuz pur nul. Et que ceux que se sentiront grevez contre la dite ordenaunce eient bref en ehancellarie pledable en bank le Roy & recoverent lour damages vers eux que tiegnent le play & que les ount tret en play par discretion des Justices eauntz regard a lour purchale, costages, grevances & perts solonc la quantitee du trespas, Et mes ne soient en service le Roy.

B

C

D

E

N. 27  
De office de co-  
roner deinz la  
verge.

Et pur ceo que avant ces heures moltz des felonies faitz de deinz, la verge ount este despunies pur ceo que les coroners du pays ne se sont pas entremys denquere de tieu manere des felonies de deinz la verge mes le Coroner del houstiel le Roy de quel issue nad my este fait en due manere ne les felons mis en exigendz ne utlegez ne rien de tiel felonie presentee en lire que est a grand damage le Roy & a meinz bone garde de sa pees, Nous ordeinoms que desoremes en cas de mort de homme en office de Coroner appent & les vewes des corps morts & as Enquestes de ceo faire soient mandez les Coroners du Pais

F

ou



A ou des franchises par la ou les morts ferront trovez qui ensemblement ove le Coroner del houftiel face l'office que append & le mette en son roulle, et ceo que ne purra mye devant le Seneschal estre terminez pur ceo que les felons ne purront estre attachez ne trovez ne pur autre enchelon demoerge le proces a la commune ley. Issint que les exigendes & les Utlagaries & les presentments de ceo faitz soient monstrez en lire par le Coroner du pais ainsi come des autres felonies faites dehors la verge, mes pur ceo ne soit lessé que les Attachements ne soient faitz freschements sur les felonies faites sil peussent trovez.

B **P**or ceo que le people se sent molt grevez de ceo que gentz sont embandiz de tuer les gentz et robber per tant que le Roy par mauvais conseil leur donee si legerment sa pees contre fourme de ley Nous ordeinoms que nul felon de futif ne soit covert ne defendus desoremes de nul manere de felonie par la Chartre le Roy de sa pees a lui grantee ne en autre manere, si noun en cas ou le Roy poet faire grace selonc son serement, & ceo par proces de ley & la custume de roiaume, & si nule Chartre soit desorenavant grantez & fait en autre manere a nuly rien ne vaile & pur nul soit tenu, et que nul appert melfesour encountre la Coronours & la pees de la terre par nuly soit eidez ne meintenuz.

C **P**or ceo que moltz gentz sont delayez en la court le Roy de leur demand par tant que la partie allegge que les demandantz ne devient estre responduz sanz le Roy & auxint moltz de gentz grevez par les ministres le Roy encontre droiture des queles grevancez homme ne purra avoir recoverier sanz commune Parlement. Nous ordeinoms que le Roy tiegne Parlement une foiz per an ou deux foiz si mestier soit & ceo en lieu covenable, et que en meismes les Perlements soient les plds que sont en la dite fourme dez laiez & les pledz la ou les Iustices sont en diverses opinions recordez et terminez & en mesme la manere soient les billes terminez que liverez ferront en Parlement si avant come ley & reson le demande.

E **P**or ceo que a toutes les foites eschange de moneye se fait el roialme tout le people est grantment grevez en moltz des maneres, Nous ordeinoms que quant mestier ferra & le Roy voille eschange faire quil la face par commune conseil de son Baronage, & ceo en Parlement.

F **E**nsement nous ordeinoms que touz les estatutz que sont faitz en amendment de la leie & au profit du people par les Auncestres nostre Seigneur le Roy soient gardez & maintenuz, si avant come estre devient par lei & reson. Issint que eux ne soient pas contraires a la grand Chartre ne a Chartre de la foreste nencountre les ordeinments par nous faitz. Et si nul Estatut soit fait countre la fourme susdite, soit tenuz pur nul, & tout outrement defaitz.

**P**or ceo que la ley de la terre & commune droit ount esse souvent delayez par lettres issues dessus la privie seal le Roy a graunt grevance du people Nous ordeinoms que desoremes la ley de la terre ne commune droit ne soient delayez ne destourbez par lettres du dit seal. Et si rien soit fait en nule des places de la court nostre Seigneur le

N. 28.  
De les Chartres  
le Roy de sa  
pees.

N. 29.  
De Parlement  
tenir de an en  
an.

N. 30.  
De eschange  
de moneye.

N. 31.  
De touz esta-  
tuz gardir.

N. 32.  
Que ley de ter-  
re ne soit de-  
layez par Let-  
tres du privie  
seal.



le Roy ou aillours par tieles lettres issues desous la privie seal encontre droiture ou ley de terre, rien ne vaille & pur nient soit tenuz.

N. 33.  
De lestatut de  
Marchants.

Doz ceo que moultz des gentz du people autres que Marchants conuz se sentent moultz grevez & reinte par lestatut des Marchants fait a Acton Burnell, Nous ordeinoms que desoremes celestatut ne se tiegne mes forsque entre Marchants & Marchants, & des Marchandies entre eux faitz & que la reconissance se face sicome est contenue en le dit Estatut. Et par tesmoignance de quatre prodes hommes & loyaux conuz & que leur nouns soient entrez en la reconissance pur tesmoigner le fait, & que a nuly soient autres terres livreez a tenir en noun de franc tenement par la vertue del dit estatut forspris Burgages des Marchants & Marchants conuz Marchants oustre ceo nous ordeinoms que les seals le Roy que sont assoignes par tesmoigner les dites reconissances soient baillies as plus riches & plus sages des villes soulditz a cele garde esleuz par les Communautes de meismes les villes, Cestassavoir a Noeuf chastell sur Tyn, Everwyk & Notynham pur les Countees de la Trent & les Marchants illoeques venantz & demorantz, a Exestre, Bristear & Southampton pur les Marchants venantz & demorantz es parties del Suth & del West, a Nichole & Northampton pur les Marchants venantz & demorantz illoeques, a Loundres & Canterbirs pur les Marchants venantz & demorantz en celes parties, a Salop pur les Marchantz venantz & demorantz en celes parties, a Norwiche pur les Marchantz venantz & demorantz en celes parties & les reconissances per aillours faitz que en les dites villes ne tiegnent nul lieu desoremes.

N. 34.  
De gentz ap-  
pelles pur  
trover main-  
prise.

Doz ceo que moltz des prisons debiegnent Appellours par leur vies esloignez & par diverses grevances & peines que viscounts & Gaoliers leur sount en qui gard-el sont & les enforment de appeller les plus riches du pais & gentz de bone fame les queux il sont attacher & mettre en vile & dure prison & pernent greve raunceon de eux des queles routes & prises nul avantage ne accrest au Roy. Nous ordeinoms que desoremes que ceux sont de bone fame appelez des appellours que de droit deusseint avoir nul voies ne soient mis en prison per quei quil pussent trovoir bone meinprise destre en la procheine deliverance de Gaole de estre a la ley & eux acquiter de la fame solonc lusage du roiaume saunz rien prendre en soen destre a meinprise & a totes les foiz que deliverance de Gaole se delaie par absence de Justice ou par autre Encheson soit leisse par la dite meinprise ou par autre iustissiance jusques a la venue des dites iustices en la fourme suifdit, Ensemblement nous ordeinoms que ceux que deviegnent appellours que eux ne soient eiz de nul home appeller plus longues que trois jours les plus prochains apres le temps quil deviegnent Appellours.

N. 35.  
De gentz Ut-  
lagez en forein  
pays.

Ensemblement pur ceo que moltz des gentz terretenents sont appelez par malice des diverses felonies en les Countees ou il ne ont terres ne tenements & par malicious suit utlagez en pert de leur vies & en disheritaunce de eux & de leur heires, Nous ordeinoms que desoremes nul homme par tiel malicious suite utlage en Counte la ou il nad terres ne tenements ne soit mys a la mort ne desheritez par quei que par tiele suite sont utlagez se rendent a la prison le Roy & se puissent acquitter par les Countees en les queux il seurent utlegez des feloni-

es



A. es & dautre trespas par les queux il feurent utlegez, & que leur terres leur soient renduz quand il ferront acquitez si il soient en la main le Roy. Et si autre que le Roy soit Tenaunt des ditz tenements par brief dentre forme sur le dit cas eient lour recoverir. Et ceux a qui suit il feurent issint utlagez soient pris & forsjurent le roiaume & sil ne soient trovez soient mys en exigend & utlagez. Per ceo que plusours gentz par faux tesmoignance de Viscounts tesmoignantz que eux ne sont mye trovez ne ount terres ne tenements par ount il parront estre destraintz en lour bailliez tout eient il en auties Countees du roiaume terres & tenements, & per tant sont mys en exigend en les Countees la ou ne ount terres ne tenements & per cas utlagez en peril de lour vies & en desheritaune de eux & de leur lievies sil soient utlagez pur felones, par quei nous ordeinoms que les gentz en tieu manere utlagez ne soient mys a la mort, ne de leur terres desheritez par quei que il se rendent a la prisone le Roy, & se puissent acquitier par les Countees en les queux il feurent issint utlagez que eux ne sont pas coupables de felonies ne de trespas que leur sont mis sur eient recoverier de leur terres & leur damages en la fourme suisdite.

C. Ensemblement pur ceo que moltz des gentz sont plus enbandez de tuer les gentz & de robber de tant que les appeaux pursuiz en la Court nostre Seigneur le Roy sont par trop legieres causes abatuz & les appellours pris & emprisonnez & reintz a la volonte le Roy & les appellez a la suit le Roy plus legierement acquites que il ne ferroient si les appeaux ne feussent abatuz. Nous ordeinoms que desoremes les appeaux des felones ne soient abatuz del heure que les appellours sont mention en lour appeaux del jour & del heure & del lieu & de quel arme il fut tuez & de queu manere de biens il fut robbez. Et si les appellez se puissent acquiter des dites felonies eient leur recoverir sur les abettours & les appellours solonc ce questcontenuz en lestatur sur les abettours de faux appaux, si les appellez ne soient enditez des dites felonies par solempne enquest.

E. Pur ceo que moltz des gentz sont delaiez de leur suits en le Court le Roy par protection grantez as gentz que se saignent daler en service le Roy & ne le sont mye mesq pur delaier la suite le pleintiff ausibien en playde terre come en play de dette & de trespas & pur tiele malice restraindre, Nous ordeinoms que si le Tenant en plee de terre usee la protection nostre Seigneur le Roy apres appearance & le demandant peusse averer que le tenaunt ne fut mye en service le Roy le jour que la parole demurra saunz jour pur la protection soit labsence le tenaunt tourne en un defaut, Et si le tenaunt use sa protection avant appearance bien list a le demandant sil entende son profit faire de prendre bref en Chancellerie sur le tenaunt daverer quil ne fut my en service le Roy le jour que sa suit fut delaie pur la protection. Et si le Tenant de ceo soit atteint soient agardez ad demandant ses damages par descretion des Justices cauntz regard a son purchase custages mises & pertes & soit le Tenant jugee a la prisone pur la deceite fait au Roy & a la Court a demurrer un an & un jour & soit reint a la volonte le Roy. Et si la dite deceite soit atteint en play de dette ou de trespas soit le Defendent puny ausibien devers le pleintiff come devers le Roy en la fourme suisdite.

N. 36.  
De Appeaux  
abbatre.

N. 37.  
De deceite fait  
par la pro-  
tection.



N. 38.  
De la grand  
Chartre & la  
Chartre de la  
Foreste.

Ensement nous ordeinoms que la grant Chartre de Franchises & la Chartre de la Forest, que le Roy Henry Fiz le Roy Johan fist soient tenuez en touz leur pointz, & que les pointz que sont dotifs en les dites Chartres des franchises soient esclareriz en le prochein parlement apres cesti par lavilement de la Baronage & des Justices & des autres sagez gentz de la leie, & ceste chose soit fait pur ceo que nous ne avions mye en poer le faire le durant nostre temps.

N. 39.  
De serement  
de Ministres.

Ensement nous ordenoms que Chancelour, Tresorier, Chief Justices de lun Bank & de lautre, Chauncellour de Leshequier, Tresorier de la Gardrobe, Seneschal del houstiel le Roy, toutes Justices, Viscontes, Elchetours, Conestables, Enquerours a queu chose que ceo soit & touz autres Baillifs & Ministres le Roy soient jurez a toutes les fois quil receivent leur baillies & offices de gardier & tenir toutes les ordinaunces faites par les Prelarz Countes & Barons a ceo esluz & assignez & chescun de les saunz venir coudre nul point de les.

N. 40.  
De gentz assignez  
en parlement.

Ensement nous ordenoms que en chacun Parlement soient assignez un Eveque, deux Countes & deux Barons doier & terminer totes les plaintes de ceux qui pleindre se vodront des ministres le Roy queux quil soient qui ierront contrevenuz les ordinaunces susdites, Et si les dites Eveque Countes & Barons ne puissent touz entendre ou soient destourbez de oier & terminer les dites plaints ad unque le facent trois ou deux de eux & ceux qui sont trovez contrevenuz encontre les dites Ordenances soient puniz devers le Roy & devers les Pleintiffs par la descretion des dites assignez.

N. 41.  
De commune  
ordenance  
publier.

Ensement nous ordenoms que les Ordenances susdites soient maufutenuz & gardez en tous leur pointz & que notre Seigneur le Roy les face mettre desous son grant seale & envoyer en chescun Counte Dengleterre a publier tenir et fermement garder aussibien deinz franchises come dehors. Et en meisme la manere soit maunde au Gardein de Cynk Portz quil par mye totes sa baillie les face publier, tenir et garder en la fourme avantdite.

Nous meismes celes ordeinances a nous monstrees & le Lundy preschein devant le fest de seint Michel dreinpasse publiez agreans acceptoms et affermons et voloms et grantoms pur nous et pur nous heires que toutes les dites ordeinances et chescune de les faire. solonc la fourme de nos lettres avantdites, soient publiez par tout nostre roiaume et deloremes fermement gardez et tenuz. En tesmoignance de queux choses nous avoms fait faire cestes nos lettres patents donez a Loundres le quint jour Doctobre lan de nostre regne quint.

*Finis de Anno 5<sup>o</sup> Ed. 2<sup>di</sup>.*

Le



A Le Roi au Visconte *Deverwyke* saluz. Come Monsieur *Peres* de *Gaveston* Counte de *Cornewall*, nadgueres fust exile hors de nostre Reaume contre les leis & les usages des mêmes le Roiaume as queus garder et maintenir nous sumes tenus par le serment que nous feismes a nostre coronement en le quel exil il fu nome autre que bon & leal & meismes celui Counte par nostre maundement feit ja revenu a nous en dit Reaume prest destier a droit devant nous a touz que de rien li vodront chalonger selon les leis & les usages avantditz par quei nous li tenoms bon & loial & a nostre fei & a nostre pees & unques a autre ne li tenismes nous de nostre real poer vous commandoms que por tel li teignuz & ceste chose facez par tote vôte baillie publier. Don a *Everwyk* le xviii jour de *Janevoir*.

B Au tieles lettres sont maundes as chiescunes Viscontes *Dengleterre*. Et a remembrer que le dit forme fu fete par le Roy meismes & le seal et les breefs par lin liure a lespigurnel pur sealer le jour et le lieu contenuz es ditz breefs et il tantost quant les breefs furent seales en sa presence les prist en sa maine et les mist sur son lit.

C Rex vicecomiti *Ebor*. Salutem. Quia inter cetera nostris curis incumbencia, corditer affectamus, et in summis desideriis reportamus quod pax nostra ubique infra regnum et potestatem nostram inviolabiliter observetur, et quod omnes leges et consuetudines que in eodem Regno temporibus progenitorum nostrorum quondam Regum Angliæ usitatae fuerunt et approbate, ac etiam quod omnes ordinationes nuper facte ad honorem Dei & sancte Ecclesie & nostrum & ad commodum nostrum & populi regni ejusdem que in dampnum seu prejudicium nostri aut corone nostre non redundant & legibus & consuetudinibus supradictis non contrariantur, teneantur & observentur, tibi præcipimus, firmiter injungentes quod præmissa omnia in pleno Comitatu tuo nec non in civitatibus, Burgis, villis mercatoriis et locis aliis quibuscunque in eodem Comitatu tam infra libertates quam extra, ubi expedire videris facias publice proclamari, et hec sicut te ipsum indempnem conservare volueris nullo modo omittas. Teste Rege apud *Eboracum* xxvii die Januarii. per ipsum Regem.

Eodem modo mandatum est singulis Vicecomitibus per Angliam.

E Rex omnibus ad quos &c. salutem, Sciatis quod cum quedam ordinationes per Prelatos, Comites, & Barones regni nostri ad id electos nuper facte fuissent, et per nos sub certa protestatione concessæ viz. quod si in dictis ordinationibus aliquæ nobis dampnosa seu prejudicialia seu alias contra formam commissionis eis per nos in hac parte factæ contigerit inveniri ea pro non concessis & non confirmatis haberentur, reservata nobis in eadem protestatione potestate hujusmodi dampnosa & prejudicialia per bonum consilium dictorum ordinatorum & aliorum corrigendi, reformandi, prout in Instrumento publico inde confecto plenius continetur. Nos de circumspeditionis industria ac fidelitate probata venerabilis patris. *J. Norwycen Episcopi*, et dilectorum et fidelium nostrorum *Guidonis Ferre*, *Johannis de Crumkewell*, *Hugonis de Aldeley*, *Willielmi Deyncourt*, *Henrici Spigurnel*, *Henrici le Scroop militum*, ac dilectorum Clericorum nostrorum Magistrorum *Thome de Cobham*, *Roberti de Pikering*, *Walteri de Thorp*, *Gilberti de Middleton*, *Johannis Fraunceys*, &

G

Andree

N. 53.  
Claus 5. Ed. 2.  
m. 15. Dors.

N. 54.  
ibidem.

N. 55.  
Par. 5. Ed. 2.  
part. 2. m. 17.  
intus. Ril. placita parl. f. 530.



*Andree de Brigges* plenam fiduciam optinentes, ipsos *Episcopum, Guidonem, Johannem, Hugonem, Willm. Henric, Henric, Thomam, Robertum, Walterum, Gilbertum, Johannem, Andream*, veleorum aliquos quos adesse contigerit ad tractandum cum dictis *Prelatis, Comitibus, & Baronibus*, electis super ordinationibus premissis, et ad corrigenda et reformanda per bonum consilium eorundem omnia huiusmodi prejudicialia et dampnosa, ac contra formam dicte commissionis facta, si que fuerint assignamus, et tenore presentium deputamus. In cujus &c. T. R. apud Eborum viii die Marcii.

A

N. 56.  
pat. 6. Ed. 2.  
parte 1. m. 21.

Rex dilecto et fideli suo *Johanni de Houbray Custodi suo Comitatus et civitatis Eborum*, salutem. Quia *Henricus de Percy* nuper per scriptum suum et coram nobis in presentia nostra sub forisfactura vite et membrorum terrarum et tenementorum ac omnium que nobis forisfacere poterit, manucepit *Petrum de Gaveston* tunc *Comitem Cornubie* de salvando et sine dampno conservando eundem *Petrum* usque ad certum tempus sub certis modis et conditionibus quibus idem *Petrus* se prefato *Henr.* et aliis reddidit extra *Castrum* nostrum de *Scardeburgh* in quo morabatur, idemque *Henricus* postmodum interfecto prefato *Petro* ante tempus predictum et contra modos et condiciones supradictas ad nos non accessit, set a nobis se omnino subtraxit per quod in premissis reddidit se suspectum, vobis mandamus firmiter injungentes quod corpus ipsius *Henrici* sine dilatione capiatis, et ipsum ad nos ubicunque fuerimus salvo et secure ducatis, Et hoc nullatenus omittatis. Teste Rege apud London. xxxi die Julii.

B

C

N. 57.  
ibidem m. 20.  
intus Rileys  
placita parl.  
fol. 541.

Rex dilecto et fideli suo *Johanni de Benstede*, salutem. Cum quedam ordinationes per *Prelatos, Comites et Barones* Regni nostri ad id electos nuper facte fuissent et per nos sub certa protestatione concessae, viz. quod si in dictis ordinationibus aliqua nobis dampnosa seu prejudicialia, vel alias contra formam commissionis eis per nos in hac parte facte contigerit inveniri, ea pro non concessis et non confirmatis haberentur, reservata nobis in eadem protestatione potestate huiusmodi dampnosa et prejudicialia per bonum consilium dictorum ordinatorum et aliorum corrigendi et reformandi, prout in Instrumento publico inde confecto plenius continetur. Ac nos postmodum quosdam fideles nostros ad tractandum cum dictis *Prelatis, Comitibus et Baronibus* electis tunc apud London existentibus super ordinationibus premissis, et ad corrigenda et reformanda per bonum consilium eorundem, omnia huiusmodi prejudicialia et dampnosa ac contra formam dicte commissionis facte, si que essent per nostras patentes ilteras duxerimus assignandos. Qui quidem *Prelati, Comites & Barones* huiusmodi tractatum habere super dictis ordinationibus in nostri absentia se quibusdam de causis excusantes, nobis tunc responderunt, quod in nostri presentia quandocunque nobis placeret cum ipsis super ordinationibus predictis tractatum habere et ipsi per nos inde essent premuniti, parati forent ad faciendum ea que secundum formam protestationis nostre predictae et alterius consimilis protestationis per ipsos facte tempore publicationis dictarum ordinationum forent facienda in premissis: Nos volentes huiusmodi dampnosa et nobis prejudicialia si que sint in dictis ordinationibus, corrigi et reformari juxta formam protestationum predictarum, Assignavimus vos et vobis tenore presentium dedimus

D

E

F



- dimus potestatem premuniendi Thomam Lancastrie, Humfridum de Bohun, Herefordie & Esserie, et Guidonem de Bella Campo Warwici, Comites qui fuerunt de *ordinatoribus* predictis, quod sint coram nobis apud *Westm.* vel *London.* die dominica proxima post *festum* sancti Bartholomei Apostoli proximo futurum, quo die apud alterum dictorum locorum esse intendimus ad *tractandum* in nostri presentia super *ordinationibus* predictis et ad corrigenda et reformanda dampnosa et nobis prejudicialia, si que in eisdem contigerit inveniri. Et ideo vobis mandamus firmiter injungentes quod ad prefatos Comites sine dilatione aliqua accedatis, et eos ex parte nostra premuniatis in forma predicta, eis ex parte nostra in fide et homagio quibus nobis tenentur et sub forisfactura omnium que nobis forisfacere poterunt, firmiter injungendo *ne cum equis & armis* ad nos ad dicta loca aliququaliter tunc accedant. Et premissa sub gravi forisfactura nostra modis omnibus faciatis. In cujus &c. Teste Rege apud Cantuariam. 4<sup>o</sup> die Augusti.

- R**EX venerabilibus in Christo Patribus *J. Norwici* et *J. Bathon' & Well'* eadem gratia *Episcop.* ac dilectis et fidelibus suis *Johanni de Britanni' Comiti Richemund'* Consanguineo suo carissimo *Radulpho de Monte Hermerii*, et *Edmundo Deynour*. Salutem. Cum nuper assignavimus dilectum et fidelem nostrum *Johannem de Benstede*, et ei per literas nostras parentes dederimus potestatem premuniendi Thomam Comitem Lancastrie, quod esset coram nobis apud *Westm.* vel *London.* die Dominica proxima post festum Sancti Barth. Apost. proximo preteritum ad *tractandum* in nostri presentia super *Ordinationibus* nuper per predictum Comitem et alios Comites, Prelatos et Barones Regni nostri ad hoc electos, factis, et ad corrigenda et reformanda dampnosa et prejudicialia nobis, si que in eisdem contingeret inveniri, et ad injungendum eidem Comiti ex parte nostra in fide et homagio quibus nobis tenetur et sub forisfactura omnium que nobis satisfacere possit, *ne cum Equis et armis* ad nos ad dicta loca accederet quoquo modo ad quos diem et loca idem Comes coram nobis non venit, nec aliquem pro se misit, licet prefatus Johannes ipsum Comitem super premissis ex parte nostra premunisset et sibi injunxisset premissa in formâ supradictâ, ac jam intellexerimus quod idem Comes et Comites *Heref.* et *Warr.* cum *Equis et armis* in magna multitudine armatorum sunt versus nos venientes in gravem terrorem populi nostri, unde admiramur quamplurimum et movemur. Nos volentes dampnis et periculis que per hujusmodi accessus ad nos evenire poterunt forsitan precavere, Assignavimus vos Quatuor Tres et Duos vestrum et vobis omnibus quatuor, tribus et duobus vestrum tenore presentium dedimus potestatem inhibendi prefatis Comitibus et eorum cuilibet in fide et homagio quibus nobis tenentur ne ipsi vel aliquis eorum sub forisfactura omnium que nobis forisfacere poterunt vel poterit, versus nos cum equis et armis accedant vel accedat propius quoquo modo, et si iidem Comites hujusmodi inhibitioni noluerint obedire, ad inhibend. omnibus vel singulis secum venientibus ne ipsi sub forisfactura predicta cum prefatis Comitibus aut eorum aliquo versus nos cum equis et armis veniant vel accedant. Et ideo vobis mandamus firmiter injungentes quod ad prefatos Comites accedatis, et eorum cuilibet inhibitionem hujusmodi ex parte nostra factam in forma supradictâ, et si ipsi inhibitioni eidem noluerint

N. 68.  
Rot. pat. 6.  
Ed. 2. parte 1  
m. 20.



riat obedire, tunc aliis secum venientibus inhibitionem ex parte nostra factam in forma superius annotata. In cujus, &c. Teste Rege apud Westm. iii. die Septembris.

*Litera Comitis Lancastrie pro miraculis Domini Roberti Archiepiscopi.*

N. 59.  
Registr. Eccles.  
Christi Can-  
tuar. f. 227.

**A** Gentz de honourable religioun et nos chers amis le Priour et Convent del Esglise de Centerbire Thomas Counte de Lancastre et de Leycestre Seneschal Dengleterre, saluz, et cheres.

Sires nous vous prions come avant les heures vous avons prie que vous voilles *tesmoigner* per voie notoire et per vos lettres patentes queux *miracles* Dieux *oevere* par *Lercevesque Robert de Canterberi* quei darrein feust, et ad *oevere* par ly ausi bien en sa vie come apres sa mort, Et les *miracles* que pendent en *escriit* devant sa tombe. Et vous enveyoms Sires nostre ame *Clerk* Mestre *Rauf de Houghton*, a qui Sires vous prions que vous voillez doner credence des choses que il vous dirra de par nous touchantz la dite besoigne. Sires nostre seigneur vous gard. Don a nostre *Chasiel* de Pountfr. le 7. jour daveril.

There is no Answer to this Letter to be found in the Register noted in the Margin, nor any Account of the Archbishop's Miracles.

N. 60.  
Rot. Pat. 8.  
Ed. 2. parte 2.  
m. 12 Dors.

**R** E X Ballivis, Ministris et omnibus Ballivis et fidelibus suis de Comitatus Stafford et Salop, tam infra libertates quam extra ad quos presentes Litere pervenerint, salutem. Cum nuper assignavimus dilectos et fideles nostros *Johannem Giffard de Chylington*, et *Johannem de Perton* in dicto Comitatu *Staff.* *Willielmum de Lodelowe*, et *Reginaldum Charles* in dicto Comitatu *Salop.* ad vicestimam nobis nuper in Parlamento nostro per *Communitates Comitatum Regni nostri* concessam assidend. et taxand. juxta formam ipsis inde ex parte nostra liberatam et ad pecuniam de predicta vicesima convenientem colligend. et levand. et ad Scaccarium nostrum certis terminis liberand. unam viz. medietatem in Quindena sancte Trinitatis proximo preterita et aliam medietatem in Crastino Exaltationis sancte Crucis proximo sequente, ac iidem *Johannes, Johannes, Willielmus*, et *Reginaldus* nobis significaverint, quod quidam ipsos quominus vicestimam predictam ad opus nostrum Levare possunt impediunt, preteritantes dictam vicestimam nobis per *Communitates* predictas sub certis conditionibus concessam fuisse, viz. quod nos *magnam Cartam de libertatibus Anglie*, *Cartam de Foresta*, et *ordinationes per Prelatos, Comites et Barones de Regno nostro factas et per nos approbatas observari* ac *Perambulationem de Forestis nostris fieri faceremus*, et quod nos premissa nondum fecimus executioni debite demandari, super quo cogimur admirari vehementer, *presertim cum nos Cartas et Ordinationes predictas in omnibus suis Articulis observari mandaverimus et quosdam fideles nostros assignaverimus in singulis Comitibus Regni nostri ad Perambulationes de Forestis nostris predictis faciend.* Nos tam super impedimento predicto, quam super nominibus impediendum certiorari volentes, Assignavimus dilectum Clericum nostrum *Adam de Limbergh* ad informand. se una cum dictis Collectoribus super premissis et ad inquirendum si necesse fuerit per Sacramentum proborum, et legalium hominum partium illarum, per quos rei veritas melius sciri poterit, super omnibus et singulis Articulis premissa contingentibus plenius veritatem et ad nos inde distincte et aperte certificandos. Et ideo vobis mandamus quod eidem

*Ade*



*Ade et Collectoribus* predictis, in omnibus et singulis premissis sitis intendentes, consulentes, et auxiliantes, quociens et quando per ipsum *Adam* ex parte nostrâ super hoc fueritis premuniti: Mandavimus enim vicecomiti nostro Comitatum predictorum quod eisdem *Ade et Collectoribus* in premissis pareat et intendat, et coram eis ad certos dies et loca quos idem *Adam* eidem vicecomiti scire faciet venire faciet, tot et tales probos et legales homines de Balliva sua per quos, &c. Teste Rege apud Thunderle viii. die Junii.

*Per ipsum Regem & Concilium.*

**F**ait a remembre que come nadgaires certains *Prelatz, Countes* et *Barons* de la volente nostre Seigneur le Roy et assent des plusours grantz du Roialme et autres du conseil le Roy lors estauntz a Norhampton fuissent alez devers le Counte de Lancastre de parler et treter ovesques lui sur le profit et lonur nostre Seigneur le Roy et de son Roialme, et en la parlance et tretiz entre les ditz *Prelatz, Countes* et *Barons* et le dit Counte de Lancastre parle et trete fust, que *Evesques, Counts* et *Barons* fuissent demorantz devers nostre Seigneur le Roy pur lui conseiller es besoignes que li touchereient tantq; en son prechein Parlement et de ceo et dautres choses endenture fait en la forme que sensuit. Ceste endenture tesmoigne coment les honorables *Pieres L'ercevesque de Dyvelz*, et les *Evesques de Norwicz, Ely, et Cicestre*, et les *Countes de Pembroke, et Arundel, Monsieur Roger de Mortimer, Monsieur Johan Somery, Sire Bartholm. de Badlesmere, Monsieur Rauf Basset et Monsieur Johan Botetourt* de la volente et lassent nostre dit Seigneur le Roy, unnt parle od le Counte de Lancastre sur les choses touchantes le profit nostre Seigneur le Roy et du Roialme en la forme que sensuit, cest a saver que les *Evesques de Norwicz, Cicestre, Ely, Salesbury, seint David, Kardail, Hereford, et worcestre*, les *Countes de Pembroke, Richmond, Hereford et Arundel, Sire Hugh de Courteny, Sire Roger de Mortimer, Sire Johan de Segrave, Sire Johan de Grey, et un des Banretz* le Counte de Lancastre quil voudra nomer, por un quartier, demoergens pres de nostre Seigneur le Roy tantq; a prechein Parlement, issint que deux des *Evesques*, un des *Countes*, un des *Barons* et un des *Banretz* le dit Counte de Lancastre au meins demoergent pres du Roy adesseement, et que tutes choses que a charger facent, ce porront et deveront faire sanz Parlement, se facent par lour assent, et si autrement soient fait, soit *tenuz por nient et adresce en Parlement*, par agard des *Peers*, et toutes choses covenables soient redressez par eux et au Parlement soient essuz de eux et des autres qui deyvent demorer pres de nostre Seigneur le Roy par *quarters*, selonc se quil serront essuz et assigne en Parlement, a faire, et conseiller nostre Seigneur le Roy en la forme avantdite. Et les sulditz *Prelatz, Countes* et *Barons* de la volente et lassent nostre Seigneur le Roy unt enpris que le Roy fra au dit Counte de Lancastre et a ses gentz et ses meignes reles et acquitances de totes maneres de *felonies et trespasss* faitz cointre sa pees, tantq; au jour de *seint Jak* cest an, et que les *chartres de reles et acquitances* soient simples et sanz condicion, et si meillur fuerte pust estre trove por eux au dit prechein Parlement soit faire a eux, et illuques asserme devant nostre Seigneur le Roy, et son *Barnage*. En le avant dit Counte de Lancastre ad graunte quil fra reles et

N. 61.  
Claus. 12. Ed.  
2. m. 22. Dors  
Rilueys placit  
parl. f. 560.



acquitances a touz ceaux qui devers nostre Seigneur le Roy sonnt  
 qui demander le vodront de ce que a lui apent de *trespas* fait a  
 la persone, et ce a tost come cestes choses avantdites soient  
 afermees, et ne fra feute de felonie vers nul deux, des houre  
 quil auront les lettres, *saue* au *counte* de *Lancastre* totes les  
*querelles*, *accions*, et *sutes* quil ad vers le *Counte* de *Garenne*, et a  
 touz y ceux qui furent assentanniz et aidanntz as felonies et  
*trespas* que le dit *Counte* de *Garenne* lui ad fait countre la pees A  
 nostre Seigneur le Roy, et que les *ordinances* soient *tenuz* et *gar-*  
*dees* solonc ce que eles sont contenues souz le grant Seal nostre  
 Seigneur le Roy, et que cestes choses susditz se fionnt et tendront  
 en touz pointz come avant est dit, unt leument enpris de volente  
 et lassent nostre Seigneur le Roy, les honeurables *Piers* en Dieu  
*Lercedisqz* de *Cantebury* et de *Dyuelyn*, et les *Evesques* de *Nor-*  
*wicz*, *Ely*, *Cicestre*, *Salisbury*, *Cestre*, *Wincestre*, *Hereford*, et *Wir-*  
*cestre*, et les *Countes* *Mareschal*, *Edmond* son frere, et les *Countes* B  
 de *Pembrok*, *Richemund*, *Hereford*, *Ulnester*, *Arundel*, et *Anegos*,  
*Sire Roger* de *Mortimer*, *Sire Johan* de *Somery*, *Sire Johan*  
 de *Hastings*, *Sire Johan* de *Segrave*, *Sire Henri* de *Beaumont*,  
*Sire Hugh* le *Despenser* le fuitz, *Sire Johan* de *Grey*, *Sire Ri-*  
*chard* de *Grey*, *Sire Bartholm* de *Badlesmere*, *Sire Robert* de  
*Mohant*, *Sire Rauf Basset*, *Sire Wauter* de *Norwicz*. En tes-  
 moignance de queu chose les *Prelatz*, *Countes* et *Barons* avant-  
 ditz unt mys lour *seals* al une partie de cest endenture et le dit C  
*Counte* de *Lancastre* al autre partie ad mis son seal. Escritz a  
 Leek le ix jour Daugst lan du Regne du dit Roy *Edward* duzif-  
 me. Et ore a comencement de cesty Parlement le dite enden-  
 ture eit este Jewe en presence de touz assembleez a meisme le  
 parlement, et totes choses contenues en meisme lendenture par  
 eux diligeamment regardeez, les *Prelatz*, *Countes* et *Barons* se assen-  
 terent por le honneur du Roy & profit du lui & de son roialme de luy  
 priere et requerer que pur les grosses busoignes que lui touchent D  
 et avenent de jour en autre, lui pleise dassenter que deux *Eve-*  
*que*, un *Counte*, un *Baronn* et a ceux un *Baronn* ou *Banret* du  
*mesnage* le dit *Counte* de *Lancastre* por meisme le *Counte* en noun de  
 lui, par les *quartiers*, soient adesslement pres du Roy entendantz  
 a *deliverer* et *conseiller* en due manere sur totes busoignes charge-  
 aantz que le Roy avera a faire et que se purront et deveront  
 deliverer sanz *Parlement* tantque autre foiz en *Parlement* soit au-  
 trement ordeine, issent que riens de teux choses ne soit delivers E  
 saunz le *conseil* & lassent des *Prelatz*, *Countes*, & autres qui enfi  
 demorreynnt pres du Roy solonc la *fourme* de la dite endenture, &  
 si teles choses autrement feissent, fussent *tenuz* por nules sicome  
 en meisme lendenture est contenu. Et de cestes choses requistrent  
 nostre Seigneur le Roy, Nostre Seigneur le Roy entendue cele re-  
 quest desirant estre *conseille* par toutes les maneres que point et dey-  
 vent tourner al honneur & a profit de lui & de son Roialme, et eant  
 regard a ce que au temps quil rescue le gouvernement de son F  
 Roialme, il trova sa terre *Descece* de guerre contre lui, la quele  
 guerre se ad puis en cea contenue et fait uncore, et estre ce puis  
 son temps ad guerre este mue contre lui en sa terre *Dirland* &  
 plusurs autres empeschementz avenuz la & aillurs en sa Seigneu-  
 rie, en oncore avenent, dunt il lui semble quil ad bien busoigne  
 par celes enchesons de avoir pres du lui, plus grant & plus suffisant  
 con-



conseil, se accord et voet aver pres de lui Prelatz, Countes et Barons  
 de lui conseiller en la fourme avantdite, issent totes foitz que les  
 ministres jalemeins facent lur offices solonc ce que faire deveront  
 solonc la ley et les usages du Roialme, et come en la dite en-  
 denture soit contenue, que les Prelatz, Countes et Barons en cele  
 endenture nomez de la volente et lassent nostre Seigneur le Roy  
 A aveient en pris que le Roy freit al dit Counte de Lancastr. et a ses  
 gentz et les meignes reles et acquitances de totes maneres de fe-  
 lonies et trespasss fait contre sa pees tantque al jour de seint Jak  
 cest an, et que les Chartres de reles et acquitances fussent simples  
 et sanz condicion, et si meillur seurte purreit estre trove por eux  
 al prechein Parlement fust fait a eux et illuques a ferme devant  
 nostre Seigneur le Roy et son Barnage: Nostre Seigneur le Roy par  
 assent des Prelatz, Countes et Barons et communantez de son Roi-  
 alme en son dit Parlement granta de pardonner au dit Counte et a  
 B ses meigneas la suite de sa pees & quantque a lui appendeit par  
 reson de la fute de tutes maneres de felonies, et de trespasss  
 faitz contre sa pees jesques a septisme jour Daugst drein passe et de  
 pardonner de utlagarie a ceaux qui le demandreient si nule fust pro-  
 nuncie en eux avant la faceon le lour chartres et comaunda al  
 avantdit Evesque de Ely adunques son Chancellor, quil de se feist  
 Chartres lountz son grant seal simples et sanz condicion por le dit  
 Counte de Lancastr. et por ceux qui le dit Counte par les lettres  
 C nomereit al dit Chancelles. Item come en mesme l'endenture soit  
 contenue que les ordinances soient tenuz et gardez solonc ce que  
 eles sont contenues souz le grant seal nostre Seigneur le Roy, meis-  
 me nostre Seigneur le Roy voet et grant que eles soient tenues  
 et gardez en la fourme avantdite. Et que tutes les choses de-  
 susecrites soient enrroulez en rouble de Parlement, et de illoesques  
 envoie en la Chancellerie et illuesques enrroulez et de illuques  
 par bref de son grant seal envoie a les pace s del Eschekir et del  
 D un Bannk et del autre od comandement de enrrouler les illoques  
 et a tenir et a garder en la fourme avantdite.

Pat. 2. E. 3. p. 1. m. 17.

Rex omnibus ad quos &c. salutem. Inspeximus recorda et pro-  
 cessus habita in Parlamento nostro apud Westm. ultimo convoca-  
 to in hec verba. Henricus de Lancastr. frater et heres Thome quon-  
 dam Comitum Lancastr. venit in Parlamento isto et exhibuit coram  
 E ipso Domino Rege proceribus et Magnat. regni et consilio ipsius Domini  
 Regis tunc ibidem existentibus quandam petitionem in hec verba.  
 A nostre Seignour le Roy & son conseil prie Henry de Lancastr. fre-  
 re & heir Thomas jadis Counte de Lancastr. que come le dit Tho-  
 mas nadgairs devant Sire Edward jadis Roi Dengleterre pier nostre  
 Seigneur le Roi qore est et son conseil a Hountfreit lan de son regne  
 quinzisme non resonablement estoit juge a la morte par un proces er-  
 royne contre lui adonques fait par quel juggement il feut mys a la  
 morte & per cause de mesme le juggement eis heirs desheritez dont  
 F le record & proces sont en Chancellerie quil plese a nostre Seigneur  
 le Roi comander au Chancellor quil fait venir les record et proces del  
 juggement avantdit cy en Parlement & quils soient recitez et examinez  
 issint que erreur si nul y soit, duement soit redresse & au dit Henry  
 come a frere & heir le dit Counte droit en soit fait & son heritage  
 a lui liere. Pretextu cujus petitionis dictum fuit Cancellario per  
 ipsum



ipsum Dominum Regem quod scrutatis rotulis Domini Regis E. patris Domini Regis nunc de Cancellaria sua de anno predicto deportare faceret hic in Parlamento, &c. recordum et processum predicta; qui quidem Cancellarius postea recordum et processum predicta protulit hic in hec verba. *Placita Cozone* coram Domino Edwardo Rege filii Domini Regis Edwardi tenta in presentia ipsius Domini Regis apud Pontem tractum *die Lune proximo ante festum Annuntiationis beate Marie Virginis anno regni sui quintodecimo.* Cum *Thomas Comes Lancast.* capius et prodicionibus homicidiis incendiis depredationibus et aliis diversis felonis ductus esset coram ipso Domino Rege presentibus *Edmundo Comite Kane. Johanne Comite Richemond, Adonaro de Valentia Comite Pembr. Johanne de Clarencia Comite Surr. Edmundo Comite Arundel, David Comite Athol, Roberto Comite Daneges, Baronibus & aliis Magnatibus regni, Dominus Rex* recordatur quod idem Thomas homo ligens ipsius Domini Regis venit apud Burton super Trentam simul cum Humfrido de Bohun nuper Comite Hereford proditore Regis et regni invento cum vexillis explicatis apud Pontem Burgi in bello contra Dominum Regem et ibidem interfecto et Rogero Damory proditore adjudicato & quibusdam aliis proditoribus & inimicis Regis & regni cum vexillis explicatis ut de guerra hostiliter resistebat & impedivit ipsum Dominum Regem homines & familiares suos per tres dies continuos quo minus Pontem dicte Ville de Burton transire potuerunt prout debuerunt, & quosdam homines ipsius Domini Regis ibidem felonice, interfecit, *ob quod Dominus Rex* propter predictam malitiam & resistantiam dicti Comitis & aliorum reprimend. & pro tranquillitate & pace regni & populi et jure Corone sue regie manutenend. & ad repellend. et amovend. vim predictam seditione taliter congregatam quesivit transitum aliunde ultra aquam de Trente et potenter exinde equitavit versus predictos Comitem & alios, et predictus Thomas Comes hoc perpendens simul cum aliis predictis proditoribus ut proditor et inimicus Regis et regni poluit ignem in Villa de Burton predicta et partem domorum et bonorum ejusdem Ville felonice combussit et extunc predictus Comes simul cum aliis predictis proditoribus exiit Villam predictam usque in Campum ibidem vexillis explicatis et acies suas bellicosas direxit hostiliter ad debellandum ipsum Dominum Regem contra homagium fidelitatem et ligeantiam suam quibus eidem Domino Regi erat astrictus expectando adventum Domini Regis in eodem campo, et super hoc cum dictis Thomas Comes perpendisset ipsum Dominum Regem venire et ipsis appropinquare cum magna potentia, idem Thomas Comes simul cum aliis comproditoribus suis predictis confusus posuit se in fugam et fugit et sic fugiendo Domino Rege ipsos potenter prosequente fecit *diversas depredationes & roberis, quousque* idem Thomas Comes simul cum predictis proditoribus cum equis et armis ac vexillis explicatis venit ad pontem Burgi ubi quidam fideles Domini Regis, plenam potestatem a Domino Rege habentes ad resistendum inimicis et proditoribus Domini Regis modis et viis omnibus quibus possint, pro Domino Rege interfuerunt, et predictus Thomas Comes simul cum aliis proditoribus cum equis et armis et vexillis explicatis insultum fecit hostiliter in predictos fideles Domini Regis ibidem existentes et quosdam de ipsis fidelibus Domini Regis felonice interfecit et eos debellavit, quousque idem Tho-



- mas Comes simul cum aliis proditoribus predictis ibidem confusus captus fuit et quidam ex illis proditoribus capti et quidam interfecti fuerunt et quidam fugam fecerunt, et sic non remansit in predicto Thoma Comite quin ipse simul cum aliis proditoribus suis ipsum Dominum Regem superasset et devicisset. Que quidem prodiones homicidia combustiones depredationes debellationes hostiles cum equis et armis et vexillis explicatis manifesta sunt et notoria et nota Comitibus Baronibus et aliis Magnatibus et populo regni. Et ideo consideratum est quod predictus Thomas Comes pro predicta prodione trahatur, et pro predictis homicidiis depredationibus incendiis et roberiis suspendatur, et pro predicta fuga in hac parte decapitetur. *Et super hoc licet predictus Thomas Comes temporibus retroactis nequiter et maliciose contra homagium et fidelitatem et ligeantiam suam pluries male se gesserit et habuerit versus Dominum Regem, scilicet cum Dominus Rex habuisset apud Novum Castrum super Tynam victualia equos, & armaturas, jocalia & alia diversa bona ad magnam summam & quantitatem, que quidem bona predictus Thomas Comes cum equis & armis et magna multitudine armatorum cepit, depredavit & asportavit, quam quidem depredationem et transgressionem ejusdem, Dominus Rex de gratia sua speciali remisit & pardonavit predicto Thome Comiti & aliis malefactoribus ejusdem depredationis ad attrahendum propositum ipsius Thome Comititis in melius, ac insuper predictus Thomas Comes collegatis sibi diversis hominibus vi armata venit ad diversa Parliamenta Domini Regis & pluries impedivit ipsum Dominum Regem tenere Parliamenta prout ad ipsum & coronam suam tenere pertinebat, et pluries ad hujusmodi Parliamenta juxta mandata Domini Regis venire non curavit, set inobedienter contempsit ac etiam diversas congregationes & conventiculas illicitas contra Dominum Regem sepius fecit per loca diversa & contra prohibitionem Domini Regis. Item cum plures malefactores & pacis Domini Regis perturbatores quos dictus Thomas Comes sibi attraxerat & colligaverat homicidia depredationes & alias diversas felonias fecisset per quod judicium mortis subiisse meruerunt, & idem Thomas Comes pro mantenentia & receptamento eorundem malefactorum consimile judicium subiisse meruit secundum legem & consuetudinem regni. Item cum Thomas Comes postea veniens ad Parliamentum Domini Regis tentum apud Eborum cum magna multitudine armatorum induxit Dominum Regem ad pardonandum sectam pacis sue versus ipsum & malefactores predictos in premissis usque circiter numerum mille personarum, quamvis idem Thomas Comes prius juraverat de quibusdam ordinationibus tenendis ne Dominus Rex sectam pacis sue remitteret in hujusmodi casibus emergentibus de morte hominis. Item cum Dominus Rex pro attrahendo ipsum Comitem in bonum ut predicatur ei toto posse suo contrariantem diversa dona magna de terris domini & libertatibus obtulisset per plures vices et quedam dona diversas gratias & pardonationes per Cartas suas eidem Thome Comiti fecisset, idem tamen Comes totis viribus contra Dominum Regem rebellis extitit & inobediens semper in malitia sua facienda perseverans. Item idem Thomas Comes misit quosdam Milites de familia sua ad Civitatem Eborum ad attrahendum communitatem ejusdem Civitatis & custodiam ejusdem in manu ipsius Comititis, ac etiam idem Thomas Comes regalem potestatem diversimode sibi usurpavit &*
- A
- B
- C
- D
- E
- F

† i. e. The Robberies and Spoils they committed in their flight, and setting upon, and Killing the Kings subjects at Burgh Bridge.



usurpare nitebatur ad exheredandum pro posse suo ipsum Dominum Regem in hac parte. Item cum Dominus Rex nuper existens apud Eborum mandasset diversis Magnatibus & aliis regni cum quibus consilium habuisse voluit quod venissent apud Eborum ad tractandum de protectione ipsius Domini Regis ad partes Scotie, dictus Thomas Comes tunc existens in Castro suo apud Pontem Fractum cum magna multitudine armatorum misit homines suos ad impediendum transitum juxta Pontem Fractum tam per vias quam per pontes quominus consilarii Domini Regis ad dictum mandatum Domini Regis venire potuerunt apud Eborum ad approximandum ipsum Dominum Regem. A

*Et cum Dominus Rex a partibus Eborum se divertisset versus partes Australes et venisset cum familia sua transeundo juxta Pontem Fractum, dictus Thomas Comes et homines sui exierunt Castrum predictum et ad despiciendum Dominum Regem acclamaverunt in ipsum Regem vilissime et contemptibiliter cum magno tumultu in magnum contemptum ipsius Domini Regis ac si Dominus Rex fuisset eorum inimicus et non Rex neque eorum Dominus.* B

Item dictus Thomas Comes simul cum predictis Comite Hereford et aliis comproditoribus suis nitebatur habuisse et fecisse confederationem et alligationem cum Roberto de Brus Thoma Randolph Jacobo Douglas et aliis Scotis inimicis Domini Regis et regni, de modo et forma illius confederationis et alligationis inventa fuit quedam indentura penes dictum Comitem Hereford quando occisus fuit ut predictur in hec verba. C

La creance que Johan de Denum doit dire a Robert Roi Descocse et a Monsieur Thomas Randolph Comte de Murryf Seneschal Descocse et a Monsieur James Douglas ou a quel de eux a plus tost ferra troue de par le Comte de Lancastre et le Comte de Hereford et leur Alliez Cest assavoir que le dit Roi Descocse et les ditz Counte de Murryf le Seneschal et Monsieur James oue leur poer vendront as dites Countes de Lancastre et de Hereford et a leur Alliez quel heure quils soient garniz au certain lieu ou ils se pussent entre assembler et damageront a ceux que les ditz Countes de Lancastre et de Hereford et leur Alliez voillent avoir damages et sauveront toutz ceux de damage quils voillent avoir sauvez a leur poer et ensement vendront as ditz Countes de Lancastre et de Hereford en toutz lieux ou ils voillent que ils veignent en Engleterre en Gales et en Irlaund et ovesques eux viure et morir en meyntenance de leur querele sauvez clam conquiste ou Seignurie en les dites terres Dengleterre de Gales et Dirlaund et le dit Roi Descocse et les ditz Counte de Murryf le Seneschal et Monsieur James pur eux et pur leur poer voillent cest chose assurer a faire on se le dit Roi descocse soit destourbe mesme par maladie ou par autre encheson grand per quoi il ne puis en propre persone venir que les avantditz Counte de Murryf le Seneschal et Monsieur James oue leur poer avantdit assurerent et facent ceo que dessus est dit les ditz Countes de Lancastre et de Hereford et leur Alliez assurerent, que jammes ne chiuacherent sur eux en eide du Roi Dengleterre et quel heure que les Countes de Lancastre et de Hereford et leur Alliez eient leur querele finie ils mettront loial peine que bone pees se ferra entre les deux terres Dengleterre & Descocse a leur poer issint quils tendront leur terre descocse auxi peisiblement come eux la leur en Engleterre. D

Et E

F



- Et demum cum predicti proditores ipsius Thome Comitis Castrum & Villam Domini Regis Gloucestr' cum exercitu suo vi & armis nuper ingressi fuissent et eadem Castrum & Villam contra voluntatem Domini Regis occupassent, & ibidem & apud Villam de Briggenorth depredationes incendia et homicidia & alia facinora perpetrassent, ac iidem proditores timentes appropinquantem adventum Domini Regis super ipsos dicta Castrum & Villam de Gloucestr' reliquerunt & exinde divertentes se in fugam ad predictum Thomam Comitem festinanter tanquam ad principale refugium suum & Capitaneum manutentorem accesserunt, qui quidem Thomas Comes prodicionem suam & manutentionem suam in hac parte notorie manifestans ipsos comproditores suos receptavit et eis se adjunxit ad debellandum contra Dominum Regem & ad guerram movend' in regno, ut predictur, et misit homines suos una cum predictis comproditoribus suis ad obsidendum castrum Domini Regis de Tykhil et quedam ingenia ad projiciendum petras grossas super castrum predictum & homines in eodem castro ex parte Domini Regis existentes, qui quidem proditores castrum illud per tres septimanas continue insultando et debellando obsederunt et quosdam homines Regis ibidem interfecerunt, et postmodum predictus Thomas Comes prefatis iniquitatibus celeribus et criminibus sicut predictum est perpetrans predictam fugam fecit *iter irripiendo versus dictos Scotos inimicos Domini Regis* et regni, quousque pervenit ad predictum Pontem Burgi ubi captus fuit, sicut predictum est, unde Dominus Rex habito respectu ad tanta dicti Thome Comitis facinora et iniquitates et ejus maximam ingratitude nullam habet causam ad aliquam gratiam eidem Thome Comiti de penis predictis super ipsum adjudicatis pardonand. in premissis faciendum, quia tamen idem Thomas Comes de parentela excellenti et nobilissima procreatus est Dominus Rex ob reverentiam dicte parentele remittit de gratia sua speciali predicto Thome Comiti executionem durarum penarum adjudicarum sicut predictum est, scilicet quod idem Thomas Comes non trahatur neque suspendatur set quod executio tantummodo fiat super ipsum Thomam Comitem quod decapitetur. Et super hoc in presentia Domini Regis et Procerum et Magnatum regni et aliorum *† hic in Parlamento &c.* existentium recitatis et lectis recordo et processu predictis, questum est a predicto Henrico *ob quam causam* venire fecit hic recordum et processum predicta, qui dicit quod ipse est *frater et heres* predicti Comitis et ob *errores* in eisdem recordo et processu interventus quos petit corrigi &c. venire fecit hic recordum et processum predicta et dictum est ei quod ostendat *errores &c.* qui dicit quod *erratum est* in hoc quod quicumque homo *ligeus Domini Regis* pro *seditionibus homicidiis roberis incendiis et aliis felonis* tempore pacis captus et in quacumque Curia Regis ductus fuerit de hujusmodi *seditionibus et aliis felonis* sibi impositis per legem et consuetudinem regni *arenari debet et ad responsionem poni et inde per legem &c.* convinci antequam fuerit morti adjudicatus, licet predictus Thomas Comes homo *ligeus* predicti Domini Regis patris &c. tempore pacis captus et coram ipso Rege ductus fuisset dictus Dominus Rex pater &c. recordabatur ipsum Thomam esse culpabilem de *seditionibus & felonis* in predictis recordo et processu contentis absque hoc quod ip-

† in Parlement.  
1. Ed. 3.



sum inde arrenavit seu ad responſionem poſuit prout moris eſt ſecundum legem &c. et ſic abſque arenamento et reſponſione idem Thomas erronee et contra legem terre tempore pacis morti extitit adjudicatus: unde cum notorium ſit & manifeſtum quod totum tempus quo impoſitum fuit eidem Comiti predicta mala et facinora in predictis recordo et proceſſu contenta feciſſe et etiam tempus quo captus fuit et quo dictus Dominus Rex pater &c. recordabatur ipſum eſſe culpabilem &c. et quo morti extitit adjudicatus, fuit tempus pacis, maxime cum per totum tempus predictum Cancellaria et alie placee Cur. Domini Regis aperte fuerunt et in quibus lex cuicumque fiebat prout fieri conſuevit, nec idem Dominus Rex unquam in tempore illo cum vexillis explicatis equitabat, predictus Dominus Rex pater &c. in huiusmodi tempore pacis contra ipſum Comitem ſic recordari non debuit nec ipſum abſque arenamento et reſponſione morti adjudicaſſe. Dicit etiam quod erratum eſt in hoc quod cum predictus Thomas Comes fuiſſet unus Parium et Magnatum regni, et in Magna Carta de libertatibus Anglie contineatur quod nullus liber homo capiatur im-  
 priſonetur aut diſſeiſiatur de libero tenemento ſuo vel libertatibus ſeu liberis conſuetudinibus ſuis aut utlagetur aut exulet nec aliquo modo deſtruatur, nec Dominus Rex ſuper ipſum ibit nec ſuper eum mittet niſi per legale iudicium parium ſuorum vel per legem terre, predictus Thomas Comes per recordum Regis ut predictum eſt tempore pacis erronee morti fuit adjudicatus abſque arenamento ſeu reſponſione ſeu legali iudicio parium ſuorum contra legem &c. et contra tenorem magne Carte predictae, unde petit errores predictos corrigi et predictum iudicium tanquam erroneum adnullari &c. et ad hereditatem ſuam ut frater & heres ipſius Thome admitti &c. Et quia inſpectis et plenius intellectis recordo et proceſſu predictis ob errores predictos et alios in eiſdem recordo et proceſſu compertos conſideratum eſt per ipſum Dominum Regem Proceres Magnates et totam communitatem regni in eodem Parlamento quod predictum iudicium contra predictum Thomam Comitem redditum, tanquam erroneum revocetur et adnulletur, et predictus Henricus ut frater et heres eiſdem Thome Comitis, ad hereditatem ſuam petend. et habend. debito proceſſu inde faciendo prout moris eſt admittatur, et habeat brevia Cancellario et Juſticiar<sup>um</sup> in quorum placeis dicta recordum et proceſſus irrotulantur quod eadem recordum et proceſſus irritari faciant et adnullari &c. Nos autem ad maiorem ſecuritatem ipſius Henrici predicta recordum et proceſſus tenore preſentium duximus exemplificand. In cujus &c. Teſte Rege apud Ebor<sup>iam</sup> tertio die Martii.

N. 63.  
 Clauſ. 16. Ed.  
 2. m. 2. Dors.

**R**EX venerabili in Chriſto patri Stephano eadem gratia Epifcopo London, ſalutem. Auribus noſtris intonuit, quod moleſte gerimus quod plerique de populo Dei veſtro commiſſo regimini diabolica fraude decepti ad quandam tabulam in eccleſia veſtra Sancti Pauli London exiſtentem in qua ſtatue, ſculpture, ſeu imagines diverſorum & inter cetera Effigies Thome quondam Comitis Lancaſtr<sup>ie</sup> inimici & rebellis noſtri, ſunt depicte, ſatue accedentes, eam abſque auctoritate Eccleſie Romane tanquam rem ſanctificatam colunt & adorant, aſſerentes ibi fieri miracula, opprobrium totius Eccleſie, noſtri & veſtri dedecus, & animarum populi



- puli predicti periculum, manifestum ac perniciosum exemplum aliorum: quodque vos scientes abusiones hujusmodi in populo vobis *vigere eas connivendo fieri permisistis, quia potius causa questus seu turpis lucri fieri dissimulastis, de quo non mediocriter conturbamur.* Vobis igitur *mandamus firmiter injungentes* quatenus premissis deliberatione provida penlatis advertentesque quod *dicta Ecclesia de nostro patronatu existit*, quodque vos ratione
- A *fidelitatis nobis prestite tenemini honorem nostrum velle salvare, & nostrum dedecus declinare, dictum populum ne ad tabulam predictam accedere, orationes, oblationes, seu alia ad cultum divinum tendentia absque auctoritate ecclesie Romane ibidem facere presumant, modis omnibus cohibeatis, prout ex officii vestri debito ad vos juxta canonicas sanctiones noveritis pertinere.* Taliter vos habentes in hac parte quod *Dei & nostram indignationem* evitare possitis, & populus predictus per vestre doctrine prudentiam salubriter instructus, a predictis abusionibus penitus desistat, & vestre laudis preconium in eodem populo dilatetur ac conceptam erga vos & ecclesiam vestram predictam benevolentiam merito continuare debeamus. Et quid super hiis facere decreveritis nobis per vestras literas absque mora dispendio rescribatis. Teste Rege apud Eborum vicessimo octavo die Junii.
- B

*Eodem modo scribitur Decano & Capitulo Ecclesie Sancti Pauli London mutatis mutandis.*

C

- Sacrosanctissimo in Christo patri domino *Johanni* divina providentia Sacro-Sancte Romane ac universalis Ecclesie *Summo Pontifici, Edwardus* eadem gratia Rex Anglie, Dominus Hibernie & Dux Aquit. devota pedum oscula beatorum. Cum ad extollenda condignis laudibus Sanctorum merita, & veneratione celebri recolenda, cunctis fidelibus sit eo frequentius insistendum quo per ipsorum suffragia placato summo Judice, peccatorum remissio facilius impetratur, ex hac pia meditatione, non autem ex sanguinis vel carnalitatis affectu, Apostolice celsitudini, cui hujusmodi judicandi potestas est divinitus attributa, publicam humiliter presentamus letitiam ac effusam in Ecclesia Dei Divini muneris largitatem. Ecce Dominus Deus noster, qui in sanctis suis semper est mirabiliter gloriosus sidus novum miri luminis splendore conspicuum producensque celitus multiplicis pacis radios salutare, felicitis videlicet recordationis dominum *Thomam* quondam Comitum *Lancastrie* ipsumque consanguineum carissimum in Anglia suscitavit, qui dum rebus agebat humanis, honestus extitit, affabilis, & benignus, justus, providus & fidelis, pie compaciens & misericorditer intelligens super pauperes & afflictos, ac divini nominis amore succensus & in soliditate fidei confirmatus, quadam floruit prerogativa constantie singularis, nam statutis & ordinationibus regni Anglie secundum Deum pro utilitate reipublice & defensione libertatis Ecclesie, digesto regni consilio rationabiliter promulgatis, juratus corporaliter & astrictus promissam Deo fidem inviolabiliter tenuit, & insurgentes ex adverso Regis & Regni perfidos seductores zelo justitie corripuit magnanimitate & contrivit, propter quod ut in mari magno ventis & procellis nimis et indignationibus expositus, oblocutionibus et mendaciis
- D
- E
- F
- at-

N. 64.  
Rot. Rom. 1.  
Ed. 3. no. 15.



attritus, et plerumque fidei allectus blanditiis, nec cessit adversitatibus, nec peccatorum oleo mulcebatur: set tanquam rota regens et dirigens indirecta, inceptum sue navigationis continuabat incessum, *conficiens semper de superni Gubernatoris auxilio*, et demum post plurima atque longa que sic in puritate spiritus et spe celestis retributionis peregit certamina, justus ab injustis capitalem devote subiit sententiam, et sic in Domino feliciter adormivit, qui jam velut fluvius de loco voluptatis ad irrigandum egrediens paradilum in partes divisus terram Anglie *sancti sui sanguinis effusione rubricatam*, rore celesti temperat salubriter & fecundat, *dum ad piam ejus invocationem tot gloriosa supra naturam divinitus finit miracula & infinita satis remedia, favente Deo, per ipsius preces & merita conceduntur*. Super quo fama celebris conciscens ex manifestis judiciis laudabiliter in excelsum, devotionem populorum ad ipsius tumulum in non modica multitudine confluentium in Domino confortat plurimum & accendit. Ne igitur tanta lucerna diutius lateat sub modio, set super candelabrum posita, lucem prebeat ampliolem, *sanctitatem vestram cui tantum negotium credimus divinitus reservatum*, humiliter quo possumus, exoramus, quatinus famam tam publicam quam vos verisimiliter latere non credimus, ex hiis nostris scripturis si placuerit assumentes & ad inquirendum primo canonice de veritate premissorum aliquibus viris idoneis auctoritatem impendentes Apostolice potestatis, circa ipsum probatis, que sufficere poterunt in hac parte ad Dei honorem & decorem Ecclesie exequi dignemini quod vestra decreverit sanctitas opportunum: Digne namque venerari debet ab hominibus, quem Christus tanta decoravit gloria sanctitatis pro cuius quidem prosecutione negotii, dilectos nostros *Magistrum walterum de Burle sacre pagine professorem, Dominum willielmum Trussell militem, ac magistrum Johannem de Thoresby Clericum* vestre beatitudini recommendamus & mittimus ad expeditionem congruam premissorum. Eternitas illa a qua fluunt tempora & momenta, vobis multiplicet successus prosperos et longevos. Dat' London ultimo die mensis Februarii.

N. 65.  
Ibm. no. 15.

*Pape Rex &c.* celestis altitudo consilii Electorum merita tam misericorditer quam juste discernens, multitudinem dulcedinis sue absconditam multifarie depromens, disponit mirifice de mercede. Ecce desiderantissime pater quod felicis memorie Robertus nuper Cant' Archiepiscopus qui super fidei & veritatis fundamento firmatus pressuras varias, contumelias & injurias pro ipsa veritate sustinuit, disponente veritate que Deus est, *varis miraculorum jam fulget insigniis*, ut vite ipsius veritatem, virtutum, & opum veritas manifestet, hec equidem attestetur ipse in carne conversacio, in curam sanctitatis vestre satis nota. *Hec probat languidis innumeris sanitas restituta*. hec referimus, & deferunt in vestre sanctitatis notitiam Prelati & Proceres regni nostri, supplicantes humiliter & devote quatinus ut lapidem tam pretiosum, ab hominibus reprobaturum, a Deo autem electum, & vestris jam temporibus pia Dei miseratione revelatum, ascribere dignetur beatitudo vestra Cathalogo sanctorum venerando. Conservet &c. Dat' apud Westmonast. octavo die Martii.

Rex



**R**EX as touz ceux as queux cestes lettres vendront, saluz.  
 Nous avoms regardez une endenture faite par le *Priour* et le *Covent* de *Pountfreit* personnes del eglise de *Pountfreit* et les *Burgeis* de mesme la ville en les paroles que sensuient: Acorde est et assentu devant nostre Seigneur le *Roy* et ma *Dame* la *Royne*, et le *Counte* de *Lancast.* par le *Priour* et le *Covent* de *Pountfreit*  
 A personnes del Eglise de *Pountfreit*, & les *Burgeis* de mesme le vil-  
 le la ville de la *Pontecoste* que *Johan* de *Ipre Heremyte* demoerge au *Tertre* on le Noble *Counte* de *Lancastre* fust mis a la mort Accreaunt & purchaceaunt les *almoignes* et les *byen faitz* quil purra Aperiaire une *Chapelle* illoeque, Et aussint quil y demurge un *Clerk* que ma *Dame* la *Royne* et le dit *Counte* vodront assigner ovelque un *Moigne* que le dit *Priour* voudra assigner, a receiure et despandre a la fesaunce de la dite *Chapelle* les deners que vendront au dit *Tertre* par apport ou de donor ou en  
 B autre manere que les ditz *Priour* et *Covent* ont graunt a mesme l'overaigne et de ceo le dit *Clerk* rendra loial account. Et aussint acorde est quil y eyt un *trunk* ou *boiste* a trois *loks* que demerge au dit *Tertre* pur recevoir le dit apport et les offrendres que illoesque vendront dount une *clief* demerge devers le *Moign*, que serra depute depar le *Priour* & un autre *clief* devers un *Burgeis* de mesme la ville et la tierce *clief* devers le dit *Clerk*  
 C le quel *Trunk* on *boiste* soit remue de nuyt en nuyt si mestier soit el mys en *Saunete* en la dite *Priorie* de souz la garde de eaux trois et chescun jour report au dit *tertre* et chascune *Symeigne* une foiz ou deux voide en la presence de eaux trois et les devers liveres au dit *Clerk* par endenture a paier as ouerours par la surveue de eaux et que la *Counte* de mesmes les despens soit prise chescune *Symeigne* par les ditz *Moigne* et *Burgeis* que prendrent devers eaux la somme de la *Semaigne* en une roule et si  
 D par cas rien demoerge outre les despens a fin de chescune *Symeigne* soit Countee et mys en *depos* en la *Priorie* de souz les *Seals* de eaux trois a rependre come il verrount mestier, pur les dites overaignes et prendra le dit *Clerk* que fra les acountes et les despens *iiiiid.* le jour et le *Heremite* *iiid.* du dit apport. Et a fin del an soit lacounte oy par ascun que serra depute par ma *Dame* la *Royne* et par le dit *Counte* & que mesme celi que serra assigne *Auditour* eit poer de remuer chescune de eaux fil troesse defaute  
 E en eaux et mettre autre convenable en lour lieu Sauve le *Moigne* que serra remue et assigne a la volente de dit *Priour* pur sauver el garder le stat & les droitz de lour eglise avantdite en tesmoignance de queu chose ma *Dame* la *Royne* le dit *Counte* et le dit *Priour* a cestes endentures entrechangeable ont mys lour seals. Done a *Euerwick* la veille de la *Pentecoste* avantdite lan de reigne nostre Seigneur le *Roy*, *Edward primer.* Nous totes les choses contenues en la dite endenture et chescune de ycelles  
 F quant que en nous est *ratefions*, *approvoms*, et *confermoms* sicome en mesme celle endenture plus pleinement est contenuz en tesmoignance de queu chose nous avoms fait faire cestes nos lettres ouertes. Don a *Euerwik* le quint jour de *Juyn*.

N. 66.  
 Pat. 1. Edw.  
 3 parte 2. m.  
 14.



*De inquirendo de illis qui fingunt Miracula fieri  
circa corpora apud Bristol suspensa.*

N. 67.  
Rot. pat. 17.  
Ed. 2. parte 1.  
m. 12. Dors.

**R**EX dilectis & fidelibus suis Johanni de Docusser, Radulpho de  
Dereford et Johanni le Botiller de Lamiltz, salutem. Scia-  
tis quod cum nuper Henricus de Monte forti, & Henricus de  
Wylington nuper inimici & Rebelles nostri ea occasione per con-  
siderationem Curie nostre per equos tracti & apud Bristol suspensi  
fuissent, & virtute considerationis in furcis pendentes remansuri  
quamdiu corpora eorum subsisterent ut alii vitarent mala & fa-  
cinora talia contra nos perpetrare: Reinaldus de Monte-forti,  
Willielmus de Clyff, Willielmus Turteys, & Johannes frater  
ejus una cum quibusdam aliis malefactoribus & pacis nostre per-  
turbatoribus causas fraudulentas per quas affectionem Populi a nobis  
elongare & Populum eundem contra nos movere possent malitiose fa-  
bricantes apud Bristol ad locum ubi corpora dictorum Inimicorum  
et rebellium nostrorum adhuc suspensa remanent pluries accesserunt,  
& miracula ibidem fieri falso fingentes idolatrie figmenta ibidem fe-  
cerunt & publicarunt, & per alios fieri & publicari procurarunt  
et illos qui ad locum predictum pro hujusmodi figmentis idolatrie  
faciendis accesserunt contra alios qui sic accedentes pro nostre &  
regie dignitatis nostre honores repellere nitebantur, vi & armis  
manutenuerunt & alia enormia ibidem fecerunt, in nostri et re-  
gie dignitatis nostre et considerationis predictae opprobrium et scan-  
dalum manifestum et contra pacem nostram. Nos volentes con-  
temptus et transgressionem predictas, si taliter perpetrati fuerint  
transire impunitos, Assignavimus vos et duos vestrum Justiciarios  
nostros ad inquirendum per Sacramentum proborum et legalium  
hominum de Comitatu Gloucestr. per quos &c. de nominibus ma-  
lefactorum predictorum qui una cum prefatis Reinaldo &c. et Je-  
hanne contemptus & transgressionem predictas perpetrarunt, & de  
contemptibus & transgressionibus illis plenius veritatem & ad  
eosdem contemptus & transgressionem audiendos et terminandos  
secundum legem &c. Et ideo vobis mandamus quod ad certos  
dies & loca quos vos vel duo vestrum ad hoc provideritis inqui-  
sitionem illam faciatis & contemptus et transgressionem predictas  
audiatis & terminetis in forma predicta facturi &c. salvo &c.  
Mandavimus enim Vicecomiti nostro Comitatus predicti quod ad  
certos dies & loca quos vos vel duo vestrum ei scire faciatis, veni-  
re faciant coram vobis vel duobus vestrum tot &c. per quos &c.  
In cujus &c. Teste Rege apud Liverpol xxiiii die Octobris.

N. 68.  
Claus. 20. Ed.  
2. m. 7. Dors.  
Proclamatio  
contra Roge-  
ra De Mortuo  
mari & alios  
Regnum An-  
glie hostiliter  
ingressos.

**L**E Roi au Viscont de Hereford salut. nos vos Mandoms et  
Chargeons firmement, Enjoignant sur queconque vos poes  
forfaire devers nos de corps & d'avoir, que vewes cestes letters  
santz delay as jours de countees, seires, Marcheas, et autre lieux  
per tout deinz vostre Baillie auxibien deins Franchises come de-  
hors au meins deux foites, au trois per checun semain faces so-  
lempnement crier & publier apertment & entendablement les  
choies southescrites, en la manere Southescrite sans Rien ajouster  
on amenufer, issent que la people permisse Clerement saver nostre  
volunte en ceste forme.

Pur



**P**UR ceo que Roger de Mortimer et autres Treitres et enemys de nos & nostre Roialme sont entres nostre Roialme afforcement & ont menez ovelque eux aliens Estrangers, Et se afforcent apprendre Roial poiar sur nos, pur que nos meismes voloms afforcement aler sur nos Enemys, pur les arester et destrure si come affiert & tout ceux qui sont en lour Compaigne on adherdants a eux, *saue la Roigne, son fitz, et le Countee de Kent*, Queux nos voloms, Que soient saues si avant que home poet. Et tout soit, Que en tieu Case chescun de Roialme est tenuz per sa ligeance de venir ove tout sa force, & tout son poer en *defence de nos & de luy meismes & du Roialme*. Jademains noz de nostre Grace elpeciale grant a ore voloms pur le eise de nostre people, Que toutz yceux auxibiens Gentz d'armes, hobelours, & homes a pie armies, come arblasters, archers, & autres homes a pie arraies qui vendront per devers noz daler ovesque noz sur noz ditz Enemys soient a lour valu prestment paieiz de lour Gages. Cest assavoir home d'armes xiiid. le jour, Hobelour viid. home a pie armee de double Garnement iud. & d'une Garnement iiid. Et Archer iid. & auxint voloms noz que tote maner des Grants qui voillent aver nostre Charte de pees pur felonie, ou adherdance a noz Enemys auxibien de temps passe, come a temps ae ore, on pur utlagarie pur queconque cause que se soit, forepris le dit Treitre Roger de Mortimer, & les autres grants mesnours des gents qui sont venues de outre meer en sa Compaigne. Et forspris ceux qui tueront Sir Roger de Beler veignant au Chancellarie, & ejent lour Chartres, issint quils noz suent a noz gages en destruction de noz Enemys. Et si ascun ou ascuns menent ou rendent a noz le corps du dit Treitre Roger de Mortimer, ou noz port la Teste, noz voloms quils eient noz chartres de pees de quiconque felonie adherdance, utlagarie, ou de autre chose faite countre nostre pees, & grantoms de les fair payer mille livres Dasterlings. Et les choses susditz si peiblement & diligeaument enfases. Que defaut ne soit trove en voz pur quoi noz devons a vos prendre grevoisement. Don souz nostre Grant seale a nostre Tower de Londres la xxviii jour de Septembre.

*En mesme le manere est maunde a toutz les Vicountz de Angleterre,*

**I**Sabelle par la grace de Dieu Reyne Dengleterre, Dame Dirlan-de, Contesse de Ponntiff, Et nous Edward ainsie fiz au noble Roy Dengleterre Duces, de Guyenn, Counte de Cestre, de Ponn-tyt & Monstroyl, Et nous Edmund fiz au noble Roy Dengleterre Counte de Kent, a toux iceaux que cestes lettres vendrient salut. Por ceo que conue chose est notoriement que l'estat de Seint Eglise & del Roialme Dengleterre est en moult des maneres durement blemy & abesce par mavoys counsail & abet Hugh le Despenser, que pur orgoil & coveytise de Seigneurier & mestrier sur toux autres ad purpris roial poiar countre droit & reson & sa lige-ance, & en tele manere le ad use par le mavoys consail R. de Baldock & autres adherdants a ly, que seint Eglise est revile, & mise hountoement a grant subjection & les Prelas de seint Eglise de lour biens countre Dieu & dreiture despoilez & en trops des maneres ledenges & dishonurez & le Coronne Dengleterre destrue en divers

N. 69.  
Inter Respon-  
siones Adæ He-  
refordensis E-  
piscopi in Au-  
thor. Decem.  
Col. 1764.



maners, en desheritaunce de nostre Seigneur le Roy & de ces heirs les graunts du Roialme par envie & mavys cruaulte de dit Hugh plusieurs sanz coupe & sanz cause a hountouse mort liveretz, les uns desheritez, les autres enprisonnez, banniez, & exilez; veues, orphayns de leur droit a tort forjugiez & le peuple de la terre par diverses taillages & noun dues exactions tropsovent reyne & par divers oppressions sanz nulle mercy grevetz. Par queax mesprises le dit Hugh se monstre apert tyrant & enemy de Dieu & de saint Eglise de nostre treschier Seigneur le Roy, & de tout le Roialme. Et nous & plusieurs autres que sont oveique nous e nostre Compaignie que loungement avoms este aloignez de la bone voillaunce nostre dit Seigneur le Roy, par la fause suggestion & mavoyz procurement des avant dits Hugh, & Robert & leur adherdaunts sumes venus en ceste terre pur lever lestat de saint Eglise & del Roialme & le peuple de la terre del dits meschiefs, & grevous oppressions garder & mayntener a nostre poiar, lonur & profit de saint Eglise, & nostre dit Seigneur le Roy & de tout le Roialme sicome est desutz dit. Pur quoi nous vos mandoms & prioms pur commun profit de vous toux & chescun de vous endroit de sey nous soietz aidant bien & leument toutz les foiz, que vous verretz lieu & temps, & par toutes les voies que vous faveretz & pourretz a ceo que les choses desutz dites puissent hastivement venir a effect & a bon fin, car soietz certaynes que nous toux, & toux iceaux que sunt en nostre Compaignie ne enpensoms a faire chose que ne serra pur lonur & le profit de saint Eglise & de toute le Roialme sicome la verretz & troveretz par temps, si Dieu plect. Don a wallingford le xv. jour Doctobre, lan del regne nostre treschier Seigneur ly Roy vintysme.

N. 7c.  
Clauſ. 20. Ed.  
2. m. 3. Dors.

**M**emorandum quod vicesimo sexto die Octobris Anno regni Edwardi filii Regis Edward vicesimo, ipso Rege a regno suo Angliæ cum Hugone le Despenser Juniore & Magistro Roberto de Baldeck inimicis Isabelle Regine Angliæ, consortis ipsius Domini Regis & Edwardi filii ejusdem Domini Regis primogeniti, & Ducis Aquitania & aliis eorundem Domini Regis & Ducis & Regni Angliæ notorie inimicis recedente, eodem regno suo sine regimine dimisso; Venerabilis Pater A. Dublinensis Archiepiscopus, J. Wintoniensis, J. Eliensis, H. Lincolnensis, A. Herefordensis, W. Norwicensis, Episcopi, & alii Prelati, & Dominus Thomas Norfolciæ, & Edmundus Cantia, Comites, fratres ipsius Domini Regis, Et Henricus Comes Lancastria & Leycestria, Thomas Wake, Henricus de Bello-Monte, Willielmus la Zouch de Ashbye, Robertus de Monte-Alto, Robertus de Morle, Robertus de Watevile, & alii Barones & Milites tunc apud Bristol. existentes in presentia dictæ Domina Regina ac dicti Ducis, de assensu totius communitatis dicti Regni ibidem existentis, eundem Ducem in Custodem dicti Regni unanimiter elegerunt. Sic quod idem Dux & Custos nomine & jure ipsius Domini Regis patris sui ipso Rege sic absente, dictum Regnum regat ac gubernaret, & idem Dux eodem die regimen dicti regni in forma prædicta idem assumpsit, Et ea quæ juris erant sigillo suo privato in custodia Domini Roberti de Wyvel Clerici sui existente, eo quod aliud sigillum pro dicto regimine non adhuc habuit, exercere incepit. Postmodum vero vicesimo die Novembris proxime sequentis, captis inimicis prædictis, & dicto Domino Rege in dictum Regnum suum



- sum revertente, iidem Domina Regina & Dux, Prelatique, & Proceres predicti, de assensu communitatis predictae tunc apud Hereford existentes, pro eo quod potestas ipsius Custodis per adventum dicti Domini Regis sic infra regnum suum cessavit, predictum Dominum Herefordensem Episcopum ad ipsum Dominum Regem in nuntium miserunt, supplicando eidem Domino Regi, quod et ipse precipere vellet, quod de magno sigillo suo penes dictum Dominum Regem tunc existente, fierent ea quae pro pace in eodem regno conservanda, & iusticia exhibenda essent facienda. Idemque Episcopus Herefordensis dictum Dominum Regem apud Munemuth tunc existentem, & in praesentia dicti Comitis Lancastriae & Leycestriae, & Magistri Thomae Chaundes Archidiaconi Herefordensis, ac aliorum plurimorum, omnia sibi injuncta eidem Domino Regi exposuit per ordinem. Et idem Dominus Rex auditis sic sibi expositis, habita inde aliquali deliberatione, penes se, respondebat quod placuit sibi mittere dictum sigillum suum magnum prefatis consorti suae & filio, Et quod iidem consors & filius dictum sigillum sub privato suo sigillo tunc clausum aperire facerent, & non solum ea quae jure & pace essent facienda, sed etiam quae gratiae forent, sub dicto magno sigillo fieri facerent. Et idem Dominus Rex dictum magnum sigillum liberari fecerit Domino Willielmo le Blunt Militi, deferendum in comitiva dicti Domini Herefordensis Episcopi, ad praedictam Reginam & Ducem praedictum forma iis liberandum. Quae idem Episcopus ad Reginam & Ducem praedictos vicesimo sexto die Novembris proxime sequentis apud Martlee rediens exposuit viva voce. Et nihilominus eadem in quodam instrumento publico inde confecto continentur. Dictus vero Willielmus le Blunt praedictum magnum sigillum sub dicto privato sigillo sic clausum praedicto die prefatis Regine & Duci apud Martley in praesentia dicti Herefordensis Episcopi liberavit. Die vero Dominica proxime sequenti, viz. in \* festo sancti Andreae Apostoli apud Cirencester in Camera ipsius Reginae infra Abbatiam ibidem iidem Regine & Dux existentes, dictum magnum sigillum sic clausum in praesentia Domini Rogeri de Mortuo-Mari, Johannis Comitis Guarenne, dicti Domini Roberti de Wyvell, Richardi de Ellesfold, & Johannis Gifford Clericorum, et aliorum plurimorum tradiderunt ex parte dicti Domini Regis prefato Domino Norwicensi Episcopo, & praeceperunt sibi quod illud aperiret, & faceret quod ad officium Custodis dicti magni sigilli pertineret. Et idem Episcopus dictum magnum sigillum in manibus suis recepit, & eodem die in Capitulo dictae Abbatiae sigillum illud aperuit, & inde Brevia consignavit, & post consignationem sigillum illud sub sigillo suo conclusit. Et sic remansit dictum magnum sigillum in Custodia dicti Episcopi Norwicensis itinerandum per vias versus Wodstocke usque ad \* diem Jovis proxime sequentis, quo die ipse restituit sigillum illud sub sigillo suo prefatis Rogero & Duci apud Wodstocke, Et concurrentibus negotiis apertum fuit idem sigillum pro expeditione eorundem, & post consignationem quamlibet reclusum fuit idem sigillum sub sigillo dicti Norwicensis Episcopi, & restitutum prefatis Rogero & Duci custodiendum. Die vero Mercurii ante festum sancti Thomae Apostoli proxime sequentis Mr. Henricus de Cliffe Custos Rotulorum Cancellarie qui tunc venerat sigillum suum apposuit dicto magno sigillo una cum sigillo dicti Norwicensis Episcopi, & iidem Episcopus & Magister Henricus post consignationes, sigillis suis appositis, dictum sigillum prefatis Regine, & Duci singulis diebus restituere.*

\* i. e. 30. Novembris.

\* i. e. ad quartum Diem Decembris.



N. 71.  
Rot. Claus. 20.  
Ed. 2. m. 4.  
Dors.  
De proroga-  
tione parlia-  
menti.

**R**EX venerabili in Christo Patri J. eâdem gratia *Episcopo Cestr.* salutem. Licet nuper super diversis & arduis negotiis, nos et statum Regni nostri tangentibus, *Parliamentum* nostrum apud *Westm.* in *Quindena Sancti Andreae* proximo futura, teneri & ibidem per *Isabellam Reginam Anglia consortem nostram charissimam* & per *Edwardum* filium nostrum primogenitum, *Custodem* ejusdem Regni, nobis extra idem Regnum agentibus, ac per vos & cæteros *Prelatos, Proceres, & Magnates* Regni prædicti haberi voluissemus colloquium & Tractatum; vobisque mandâssemus, quod dictis die & loco personaliter interessetis, cum præfata Consorte nostra, & dicto filio nostro, *Custode* Regni prædicti, & cum cæteris *Prelatis, Proceribus & Magnatibus*, dicti regni super prædictis negotiis tractaturi. Quia tamen quibusdam de Causis certis necessariis & utilibus, prædictum *Parliamentum & Tractatum usque in Crastinum Epiphaniæ Domini* proximo jam futurum, apud dictum locum *Westm.* tunc tenendum duximus prorogandum, vobis significamus quod ad dictam *Quindenam* apud dictum locum *Westm.* ex causâ *Parliamenti & Tractatus* prædictorum vos accedere non oportet: Vobis insuper in fide & dilectione, quibus nobis tene-  
mini, firmiter injungendo mandamus, quod omnibus aliis prætermis-  
sis, in dicto *Crastino* personaliter sitis apud dictum locum *Westm.* nobiscum, si ibidem tunc personaliter simus, vel in absentia nostra cum præfata Consorte nostra, & cum dicto filio nostro ac cum cæteris *Prelatis, Proceribus, & Magnatibus* dicti Regni super dictis negotiis tractaturi, vestrumque consilium impensuri; præmunientes *Decanum & Capitulum Ecclesiæ vestræ* prædictæ & *Archidiaconos* Clerumque vestræ Dioceseos quod iidem *Decanus & Archidiaconi* in propriis personis suis, dictumque Capitulum per unum, & Clerus prædictus per duos Procuratores, ab ipsis Capitulo, & Clero sufficientem potestatem habentes, dicto loco in dicto crastino inter-  
sint, ad consentiendum hiis, quæ tunc ibidem de communi consilio Regni nostri contigerit ordinari: Et hoc nullatenus omittatis. Teste Rege apud *Ledbury* tertio die Decembris.

The Seal was not at *Ledbury* on the 3d of December, and therefore the Writ could not be sealed there that Day, for the great Seal was then in the Custody of the Bishop of *Norwich*, at *Woodstock* or in his Way thither, as appears by the next preceeding Record. and on the 4th of that Month was delivered to *Roger Mortimer* and the Duke of *Aquitain*, afterwards Ed. 3d. at *Woodstock*, so that in all probability, This Writ Issued without the Kings Privy or Knowledge.

N. 72.  
Auteurs De-  
cem. Col. 2765.  
n. 50. 60.

**A**Ccorde est que sire Edward fiz aïne du Roy ait le gouvernement del Roialme & soit Rois coronne par les causes que sensivent.

1. *Primerement.* Pur ceo que la persone ly Roy nest pas suffisaunt de gouverner. Car en touz son temps ad il este mene & gouverne par autres que ly ount mavoisement consailliez a dishonneur de ly & destruction de seint Eglise, et de tout son peuple saunz ceo que il le voulist veer on conustre le quel il fust bon ou mavoys ou remede mettre, ou faire le voulist quant il fust requis par les graunts & sages de son Roialme, ou souffrir que amende fust faite.

2. *Item*



2. Item. Par tout son temps, il ne se voloît doner a bon counsail ne le croire ne a bon gouvernement de son Roialme meys se ad done tous jours as ouraignes & occupations nient covenables entrelessant lesploit des besoignes de son Roialme.

A 3. Item. par defaute de bon gouvernement ad il perdu le Roialme Descote, & autres terres & Seignuries en Gascoyne & Hyrland, les quex son pere li lessa en pees & amiste ly Roy, du Roy de Fraunce & dets moult des autres graunts.

4. Item. Par sa fierte & qualte & par mavoys consail ad il destruit seint Eglise & les persones de seint Eglise tenuz en prison les uns, et les autres en destresce, & auxint plusours graunts & nobles de sa terre mys a hountouse mort en prisons exuletz & desheritez.

B 5. Item. la ou il est tenuz par son serement a faire droit a tous il ne lad pas volu faire pur son propre profyt & covetyse de ly & de ces mavoys counsailires que ont este pres de ly, ne ad garde les autres pointz del serement quil fist a son coronnement, si com il feust tenuz.

C 6. Item. Il deguerpist son Roialme & fist taunt come en ly fust que son Roialme, & son people fust perduz, & que pys est, pur la cruelte de ly & defaute de sa personne il est trove incorrigible sauntz esperance de amendement, les quex choses sont si notoires quil ne poout estre desditz.

D **V** Era series Procuratorii. Jeo William Trussel *Procuratour des Prelatez, Contez & Barons & autres gentz* en ma procuracye nommes eyant al ceo playne & suffisant pouare, les *homages & fealties* au vous Edward Roy Dengleterre come al Roy avant ces oeures depar les ditz persones en ma procuracye nommes, renk & rebaylle sus a vous Edward & deliver & face quitez les persones avantditz en la meillour manere que *ley et custome* donnent, E face protestacion en non de eux quils ne voillent desormes estre en vostre fealte, ne en vostre lyaunce, ne *cleymen* de vous come de Roy riens tenir. Encz vous *tiegnent* delhorse *privee persone* sanz nule manere de reale dignite.

E **R** EX vicecomiti Eboracensi salutem. Quia Dominus Edwardus nuper Rex Anglie pater noster, de Communitatis consilio et assensu *Pralatorum, Comitum et Baronum*, et aliorum *Magnatum*, nec non *Communitatis* totius regni prædicti *spontanea voluntate* se amovit à regimine dicti regni volens et concedens quod nos tanquam ipsius primogenitus & heres ipsius Regni, *gubernationem et regimen* assumemus; Nosque ipsius patris nostri Beneplacito in hac parte de consilio et advisamento *Pralatorum, Comitum, Baronum, Magnatum, et Communitatum* prædictorum, annuentes, gubernacula suscepimus dicti Regni, et *fidelitates & homagia* ipsorum *Pralatorum, et Magnatum* recipimus, ut est moris. Desiderantes igitur pacem nostram pro quiete et tranquillitate populi nostri inviolabiliter observari, tibi præcipimus quod statim visis presentibus per totam Ballivam tuam, pacem nostram facias publice proclamari universis et singulis *ex parte nostra* inhibendo, sub pœna, et periculo exheredationis et amissionis vitæ et membrorum,

N. 73.  
Knighton. Col.  
2550. N. 10.

ne



ne quis dictam pacem nostram infringere seu violare præsumat, sed quilibet actiones et querelas absque violentia quacunque prosequatur, secundum leges et consuetudines Regni nostri. Nos enim parati sumus et semper erimus omnibus et singulis conquerentibus tam divitibus quam pauperibus in curiis nostris plenam justitiam exhibere. Teste Rege apud Westmonasterium 29 Januarii.

N. 75.  
L'abbé Con-  
cil. Tom. XI.  
part. 2. col.  
1534. B. C. D.  
Puteanus Con-  
demnation des  
Temples. 2. p.  
29. 30. 31.

1. **C**um ordinem cooptabantur in ipsis sacrorum suorum institis Christumne, aut Deum, aut virginem Deiparam, aut Divos abjurassent vel ut abjurarent moniti fuissent, aliosve ipsi ad abjurandum, incitassent?

2. An Christum, vel Jesum, crucive suffixum verum Deum esse, vel passum pro humano redimendo genere negassent?

3. An fuisse pseudo-prophetam, & pro suis ipsis afflictum criminibus affirmassent?

4. An Ordinis magistrum, qui nullis erat sacris initiatus, crederent per poenitentiae Sacramentum eluere animæ sordes, & peccata posse, & an ipse id fecisset?

5. An quæ occulta habebantur in eorum legibus, ea orthodoxæ Romanæ Ecclesiæ vituperationi esse criminaque ac eorum fovere putarent?

6. An in ipso ordinis ingressu docerentur posse inter se luxuriose commisceri, idque esse faciendum, neque ullum ob id perpetrari flagitium, & an hæc Tyrones etiam docerent?

7. An Ordinis, sui amplitudini studere vel contra quam fas esset jurassent ad idque jurandum alios induxissent?

8. An qui cooptabant eos in Ordinem ne spem salutis suæ in Christo Deo positam haberent illis ediceret?

9. An conspuissent crucem imaginemve Christi Dei, aut pedibus protrivissent ac conculcassent, & die veneris sancto, vel alio in eam minxissent?

10. An Cattum craniumve aut simulacrum quodpiam & idolum hujusmodi fictum & commentitium divina veneratione coluissent, in magnis comitiis, aliove fracrum loco: divitiasque ab eo & terrarum arborumve uberes fructus speravissent?

11. An quo cingulo interulam carnemve cingebant, eo idolum quodpiam hujusmodi tetigissent?

12. An Tyrones, adolescentulos præsertim libidinosæ, intemperanterque, atque aliâ quam deceat, parte osculati fuissent?

13. An dum rem divinam facerent sacra mysteriorum, & consecrationis verba omisissent?

14. An scelestum & nefarium facinus ducerent, hæc committere?

N. 76.  
Rot. Claus. 7.  
Ed. 2. M. 11.  
12. Dors.

**C**lemens Episcopus servus servorum Dei Charissimo in Christo filio Edwardo Regi Angliæ illustri salutem & apostolicam benedictionem. Nuper in Generali Concilio per nos Viennæ disponente Domino celebrato post longam deliberationem prehabitam & maturam acceptabilius fore Altissimo magis honorabili fidei orthodoxæ cultoribus & subventioni Terræ sanctæ utilius bona quondam domus & ordinis militiæ Templi ordini Hospitalitatis sancti Johannis Jerusal' concedere quam ordini de nova creando unire aut etiam applicare consilium deliberationis nostræ providit set quia tunc aliquibus asserentibus melius fore bona ipsa ordini noviter creando conferre quam dicti Hospitalis ordini ap-



- A applicare tunc noster affectus speratum effectum super hoc optinere nequivit. Tandem vero sic per Dei gratiam actum fore dinoscitur quod vi. Non. præsentis mensis Maii eodem sacro approbante Concilio Hospitali seu ipsius Hospitalis ordini supradictis præfata bona concedenda & applicanda duximus ac etiam unienda, Bonis ejusdem ordinis militiæ Templi in Regnis & terris carissimorum in Christo filiorum nostrorum, Castelle, Aragonie, Portugallie, & Maioricarum Regum illustrium extra Regnum Franciæ consistentibus dumtaxat exceptis, quæ ab unione, concessione, & applicatione hujusmodi ex certis causis excipienda duximus, & etiam excludenda, ipsa dispositioni nostræ & sedis Apostolicæ specialiter reservantes quousque de illis aliter pro dictæ Terræ subsidio per nostram & dicte sedis providentiam extiterit ordinatum. Quocirca Magnificentiam regiam rogamus & hortamur attentius quatinus pro reverentiâ salvatoris cujus in hac parte negotium promovemus, ac dictæ sedis & nostræ.....Magistro & Fratribus seu Prioribus & Præceptoribus Hospitalis ejusdem in quibuscumque partibus & Provinciis Regni & terrarum tuarum constitutis seu Procuratori vel Procuratoribus eorundem quod prædicta bona in eisdem regno & terris tuis consistentia integre & pacifice valeant assequi & habere regii favoris præstes auxilium prout extiterit oportunit. Et nihilominus omnibus Comitibus, Baronibus, Ducibus, Principibus & aliis nobilibus, Communitatibus & Universitatibus, Senescallis, Ballivis, cæterisque Officialibus dicti Regni quocumque nomine censeantur, & aliis qui ad custodiam bonorum ipsorum de tuo mandato fuerint deputati per literas tuas mandes expresse ut eadem bona Magistro & Fratribus seu Prioribus & Præceptoribus, vel Procuratori aut Procuratoribus antedictis et singulis eorundem a quibus super hoc fuerint requisiti sine diminutione qualibet quantum in eis fuerint restituant & assignent eis circa nanciscendam, habendam, & retinendam possessionem bonorum ipsorum per te & officiales eisdem & aliis executoribus super executione hujusmodi concessionis nostræ deputatis & imposterum deputandis super eadem executione de liberalitate regia efficaciter assistendo, cum pro parte ipsorum extiteris requisitus: sic igitur in præmissis te promptum & liberalem exhibeas quod præter retributionis æternæ premium quod inde mereberis tibi laudis humane proveniat incrementum & nos celsitudinem tuam dignis valeamus in Domino laudibus commendare, Dat' Liberon, Valenti, Dict. xvii. Kal. Junii. Pontificatus nostri anno septimo.
- B
- C
- D
- E

F **S**ANCTISSIMO in Christo Patri &c. Sanctitatis vestræ mandatum sub literis vestris Bullatis clausis xvi. Kalend. Martii Anno Domini 3000. 90. michi per venerabilem patrem Dominum Piat Epm. præsentatum recepi, continens Tenorem qui sequitur: CLEMENS &c. volens autem Mandatum Apostolicum prædictum quantum ad me pertinuit exequi reverenter cum nonnullis fratribus & suffraganeis meis qui mandatum consimile receperunt super executione ejusdem mandati frequentes tractatus habebam. Et post tractatus eosdem ac nonnullos accessus ad palatium Domini E. Dei gratia Regis Angliæ illustris apud *Westmonasterium* juxta London in quo tunc temporis morabatur, quam citius ad ipsius præsentiam accedere potui, quod fuit 30. Kalend. Martii,

N. 77.  
Registrum  
Winchelsey, at  
the Registers  
Office in Drs.  
Commons. fol  
8. a. b.



Martii, eidem in presentia venerabilis patris Domini Patriarchæ Jerusalem & venerabilium fratrum suffraganeorum meorum, scil. Dominorum London. Winton. Sarum, Lincoln, Norwic. Ciceſtrien. Wigorn. Exon. Bathon & Wellen. & Meneven. Ecclesiarum Episcoporum, & aliquorum Comitum & Baronum Regni Angl. contenta in eodem Mandato eidem Domino Regi vice mei & confratrum meorum exposui, & in scriptis tam in latino quam Gallico tradidi, Exhortationes & monitiones feci prout in instrumento publico quod super expositione & traditione ac exhortatione & monitione prædictis fieri feci & sanctitati vestræ transmittito plenius continetur. Et quia idem Dominus Rex dicebat se velle deliberare super expositis eidem & traditis, postmodum Idibus Martii pro habendo Responso accessi una cum aliquibus fratribus meis ad prædictum palatium dicti Regis, in quo tunc temporis præsens fuit, & quia sui præsentiam mihi non exhibuit, post longam expectationem, ad ipsum venerabilem fratrem Dominum, W. Dei gratia Episcopum Thesaurarium suum mittens, Rogavi ut Ecclesie Romanæ & michi congruum & conveniens responsum daret & faceret, ad sibi antea per me exposita, et tradita, de quibus est mentio suprafacta, & tandem idem Dominus Rex michi, & venerabilibus fratribus tunc præsentibus per dictum Dominum Thesaurarium & Johannem de Lonham de ordine prædicatorum Confessorem suum, Mandavit pro tunc Respondere non potuit, pro eo quod contenta in Mandato vestro Apostolico prædicto, non solum ipsum Dominum Regem, sed omnes Comites, Barones, & alios proceres regni sui tangebant, Quorum omnium tunc præsentiam ad tractatum cum eis super mandatis vestris Apostolicis, eidem Domino Regi per me prius tractatis & expositis ad voluntatem suam non potuit obtinere. Et quorum præsentia in Responsionibus faciendis sibi necessaria existeret. Sed sperabat quod super hoc remedium ordinaretur per Dei gratiam infra breve prout in Instrumento publico quod de hoc fieri feci plenius est contentum. Verum idem Dominus Rex cum consilio suo 20. Kalend. Aprilis, respondit sub hac forma. Quod salvo jure coronæ suæ voluit vobis & sanctæ sedi Apostolicæ, sicut Devotus filius Ecclesiæ quatenus poterit in omnibus obedire, adjiciens quod ante notitiam vestrarum literarum, Discordia quædam inter quosdam Proceres Regni sui exorta extitit, quæ usque ad diem prædictum sedata non fuerat vel sopita, propter quod non potuit plenè deliberare, ut ad singula in mandato vestro contenta responsum congruum exhiberet, sed cum dictam Discordiam perpenderet jam sedandam, intendebat Regni sui consilium convocare & super dandis Responsis convenientibus ad singula diligenter tractare, ac per suos proprios Nuncios citra tempus vestri generalis consilii præfinitum, Responsum dare. Deo placens, vobis & sedi Apostolicæ acceptabile, ac sanctæ Ecclesiæ fructuosum, ad ipsius & Regni sui Commodum & Honorem.

*Ne aliquid attemptetur contra Coronam in Congregatione Prelatorum.*

N. 78.  
Rot. pat. 12.  
Ed. 2. part. 2.  
m. 37.

**R**EX venerabilibus in Christo patribus eadem gratia W. Archiepiscopo Cantuar. totius Angliæ Prælati, & omnibus Episcopis Cantuariensis Provinciæ ac aliis Prelatis & Clerici absentis Procuratoribus ejusdem Provinciæ apud London in proximo conven-

tur.



tur. Salutem. Mandamus vobis firmiter inhibentes ne instanti congregatione apud London convocata, aliquid contra *Coronam* seu *Dignitatem nostram*, vel *statum Regni nostri* statuere seu attemptare aliququaliter præsumatis. Si quæ autem statum Ecclesie aut vestram tangentia, seu alias erga nos habueritis prosequenda, ea in *proximo Parlamento* nostro apud *Lincoln*, jam convocato ad quod vos *Prelati* summoniti estis, ad quod quantum bono modo poterimus festinamus, in quo etiam interesse debetis, tractari volumus, & super eisdem tunc ibidem fieri quod de communi consilio ad honorem Dei & Ecclesie sue *salvis statu & dignitate nostris* fide faciendum. In cujus &c. Teste Rege apud Shene xvi die Februarii.

*Per ipsum Regem.*

B **R**EX venerabilibus in Christo patribus W. eadem gratia Archiepiscopo *Cantuariensi*, totius Angliæ Primati, ac cæteris *Episcopis & Prelatis*, Cantuar. Provinciæ ad concilium Provinciale apud London in proximo conventuris: Mandamus vobis in fide & Dilectione quibus nobis tenemini, firmiter inhibentes, *ne in dicto Concilio quicquam in nostri a ut status Coronæ nostræ, vel Regni nostri præjudicium statuatis*, faciatis, seu quomodolibet, ordinetis. Teste Rege apud Pountfreyt super Thamesiam 30. die Novembris.

N. 79.  
Pat. 15. Ed. 2.  
part. 1. m. 8.

*Per ipsum Regem.*

C **R**EX Justiciariis salutem. Circumspecte agatis de negotio tangente Dominum Norwicensem, & ejus clerum non puniendo eos, si Placitum tenuerint de hiis, *quæ mere sunt spirituales*, viz. de Correctionibus quas faciunt *Prelati* pro mortali peccato, viz. pro Fornicatione, Adulterio & hujusmodi pro quibus aliquando infligitur pœna corporalis, aliquando pecuniaria; maxime si convictus fuerit liber homo.

N. 80.  
Spelman. Concil. vol. 2. fol. 486.

Item, si Prælatus puniatur pro Cimeterio non clauso, Ecclesiâ discooperta vel decenter non ornata, in quibus casibus alia pœna non potest infligi, quam pecuniaria.

E Item, si Rector petat a Parochianis suis Oblationes, Decimas debitas, & consuetas, vel Rector agat contra Rectorem de Decimis majoribus, dummodo non petatur quarta pars alicujus Ecclesiæ.

Item, si Rector petat Mortuarium, ubi Mortuarium dari consuevit.

Item, si Prælatus, Advocatus Ecclesiæ petat a Rectore Pensionem sibi debitam, *omnes hujusmodi petitiones faciendæ sunt in foro Ecclesiastico.*

F Item, de violenta manuum injectione in *Clericum*, & in causâ Diffamationis, concessum fuit alias, quod *Placitum* inde teneatur in *Curia Christianitatis*, dummodo non petatur pecunia, sed agatur de correctione peccati. In omnibus predictis Judex Ecclesiasticus cognoscere debet, *non obstante Regia prohibitione*, li-



*et porrigatur, quod non faciat, nisi prius habeat regiam consultationem &c.*

N. 81.  
Clauſ. 1. Ed.  
3. parte prim.  
M. 23. Dors.  
petitiones pro  
illis qui fue-  
runt de Quere-  
la Thomæ Co-  
mitis Lanca-  
ſtriae

**F**ait a Remember que le tierce jour de Feverer lan du Regne le Roi Edward fitz au Roi Edward, fitz au Roi Edward, fitz au Roi Henry primer furent mostrez en parlement & lonques tenu a Westmr. ascunes petitions, per les Chivalers et le Comune de la Querele le Count de Lancastre, en la form que ensuit.

A

A nostre Signeur le Roi &c. prient les Chivalers et le Comune a tort Desheritez, Emprisonnez, Banniz, Exilez questeint de la Querele le noble Counte de Lancastre quils peussent estre Restitutez a leur Terres ove les issues puis le Temps que les furent a tort seïfiz.

A quele peticion fust res pondu per comune assent de tot le parlement que totes les terres et tenz que furent seïfiz, pur cause de la Querele la Counte de Lancastre la Quele pur tot le parlement est afferme bone, auxibien, en Ireland, Gales, come en Engleterre, soient Restitutez ove les issues et arrerages de ferme Dint le Roi ne fust mie seïz.

B

N. 82.  
Rot. Clauſ. 4.  
Ed. 3. M. 19.  
Dors.

**R**EX venerabili in Christo Patri S. eadem gratia Archiepiscopo Cantuar' totius Anglie primati, Salutem. Qualiter negocia nos et statum regni nostri contingencia postquam suscepimus gubernacula regni nostri hucusque in nostrum dampnum et dedecus, et depauperationem populi nostri deducta erant, vestram credimus prudentiam non latere, propter quod non valentes hoc urgente conscientia, ulterius sustinere, set desiderantes toto corde statum et regimen regni nostri secundum juris et rationis exigenciam ad honorem Dei et tranquillitatem et pacem sancte Ecclesie, ac totius populi ejusdem regni reformari ordinavimus, de consilio & assensu Prelatorum, & Magnatum nobis assistentium Parliamentum nostrum apud Westm. die Lune proximo post festum sancte Katerine virginis proximo futuro tenere, et vobiscum, ac cum ceteris Prelatis, Magnatibus et Proceribus dicti regni habere super premissis cum deliberacione plenaria, consilium et tractatum vobis in fide et dilectione quibus nobis tenemini, firmiter injungendo mandamus, quatinus omni excusacione voluntaria cessante dictis die et loco personaliter interfiris nobiscum, & cum ceteris Prelatis, Magnatibus, & Proceribus predictis super premissis tractaturi, vestrumque consilium impensuri. Et hoc sicut nos et honorem nostrum et tranquillitatem dicti regni nostri diligitis nullatenus omittatis, Scientes quod diem summonicionis dicti Parliamenti, ob intentum desiderium quod habemus quod negocia statum ipsius regni nostri contingencia feliciter disponantur, de assensu Prelatorum & Magnatum predictorum abbreviavimus ista vice, & nolumus quod abbreviatio hujusmodi cedat alicui in prejudicium, vel trahatur in consequentiam in futurum. Et premunire facias Priorem & Capitulum Ecclesie vestre Christi Cantuar' Archidiaconos totumque clerum vestre Diocel. quod iidem Prior & Archidiaconi in propriis personis suis dictumque Capitulum per unum, idemque, Clerus per duos Procuratores idoneos plenam & sufficientem potestatem ab ipsis Capitulo & clero habentes dictis die

C

D

E

F



die & loco intersint ad faciendum & consentiendum hiis quæ tunc ibidem de *communi consilio*, divinâ favente clementia, ordinari contigerit super negociis antedictis. Teste Rege apud Leycestr. xxiii. die Octobris.

A Ces. sont les tresors felonies & malveistes a nostre Seigneur le Roi & a son people par Roger de Mortymer, & autres de sa covyne.

B Primerment par la on ordine feust al Parlement nostre Seigneur le Roy prochynement tenuz apres son coronement a Westminster que quatre Evesques, quatre Countes & sys Barons demorerreient pres du Roy pur luy conseylor issint tote foiz que quatre y feussent, cestassauer, un Evesq; un Counte et deus Barons au meyns et que nule grosse busoigne soit faite sanz lur assent, et que chelcun respondesist de ses faitz pur son tems, apres quen parlement, le dit Roger de Mortymer nient eant regard au dit assent accrocha a lui roial poer et le gouvernement du Roialme sur lestat le Roi et ousta et fist outer et mettre Ministres en lostiel le Roi et aillours parmy le roialme a sa volunte de tieux que feurent de son acord, et myst Johan Wyard et autres entour le Roi despier ses faitz et ses ditz, issint que nostre dit Seigneur le Roi feust en tiele manere environ de ces *Enemys* de tieux quil ne poet rien faire de sa volunte forsque come un home que demora en garde.

D 2. Item par la ou le pere nostre nostre Seigneur le Roy fust a Kenilworth par ordenance et assent de peres de la terre a demorer illoques a ses eses parestre servi come afferoit a un tiel Seignour, le dit Roger par le roial poer al acroche ne lessa tant quil le eust par devers lui a sa volunte et ordina quil feust mande au Chastiel de Berkele ou par lui et par les sones feust treterousement feloneusement et falsement murdre et tue.

E 3. Item le dit Roger par le dit Roial poer a lui acroche fist defendre par Brief le Roy desouz le grant Seal que nul ne venist au parlement de Salesbirs a force et armes sur quant quil poet forfaire devers le Roy la vynt le dit Roger od autres de sa covyne a force et armes au dit parlement encountre le dit defens par quoy plusours Peres de la terre, come le Counte de Lancastr' et autres sachantz la manere de sa venue ne vyndrent point, et coment par la ou les Prelates estoient assemblez au dit parlement en une maison de consailler sur les busoignes nostre Seigneur le Roi et son roialme le dit Roger [brisa] debrusa les oens de la Meason ove gentz des armez sur les ditz Prelatz et les manassa de vie et de membre si nul de eux fuissent si hardys a dire ou faire rien que feust a contraire de sa volunte en nul point. Et a meisme le parlement

F par son dit poer fist tant que le Seigneur le Roi lui fist Counte de la Marche et lui dona plusours terres a lui & a ses heirs, en Desheritance de sa Corone. Et puis le dit Roger et ceux de sa covyne menerent le dit nostre Seigneur le Roi armez sur le dit Counte de Lancastre et les autres Piers de la terre tantque a Wyncestr' la ou ils estoient venantz



devers le dit parlement a Salesbirs, pur quoi le dit Counte de Lancastre et autres Pieres, pur elchure le peril quent püst estre avenir a la reverence du Roy lur Seigneur lige departerent & aillerent envers lour pays dolent quils ne poient a lur Seigneur lige parler ne conseiller come ils deveyent.

4. Item le dit Roger par le dit roial poer a luy accroche fist le dit nostre Seigneur le Roi chivaucher forciblement sur le Counte de Lancastre & autres Pieres de la terre questoient ordinez destre pres du Roy pur lui conseiller et tant les chacea par force que le dit Counte et aucuns autres de sa compaignie que voleient le profist le Roi et du roialme se mistrent a la grace du Roi, Sauve a eux vie et membre & quils ne feussent desheritez, ne mettre a trop grand Ransom. Mes fist mettre a si haute ransom come a la value de la moite de totes les terres a vendre a touz jours et les autres fist enchacer hors de terre et seiser lur terres contre la fourme de la grande Chartre et contre lei de terre.

5. Item par la ou le dit Roger savoit bien que le pere nostre Seigneur le Roi estoit mort & enterre, il par autres de sa covyne en deceyvante manere fist entendre al Counte de Kent que le dit pere nostre Seigneur le Roi fist en vie par quoi le dit Counte de Kent feust molt desirous de savor la verite le quel il fust en vie, on nemie, & ce fist espier par totes les bones voies quil savoit tantque le dit Roger par son dit roial poer a lui accroche fist prendre au parlement tenuz a Wyncestr. le dit Counte de Kent et tant procurez et poursuivre par son dit roial poer que le dit Counte fust mis a la mort au dit parlement.

6. Item le dit Roger par son roial poer a lui accroche fist le Roi doner a lui et a ses enfautz et a ses alliez Chastelles, Villes et Manoirs fraunchises en Engleterre, Ireland & Gales en desces de sa coronne.

7. Item le dit Roger en deceyvante manere fist les Chivalers des Countez grauntier au dit parlement de Wyncestre au Roi de chescun Ville Dengleterre que respoint par quatre & le Provost en Eyre un homme darmes a lour coustages en sa guerre de Gascoigne par un an la quele charge le dit Roger avoit compasse a tourner en autre profist pur lui & autres de sa covyne en destruccion du people.

8. Item le dit Roger par son dit roial poer fist mander lettres desouz la targe as plusours grantz Chivalers et autres quils venissent au Roi queu part quil feust et a lur venue les fist charger quils sadressassent daler en Gascoigne ou quils feissent fynz et ransouns a sa volunte, des queux atoms firent fynz et ransouns et tot le plus est devenue au profist le dit Roger et autres de sa covyne.

9. Item le dit Roger faussement & malicieusement mist descord entre le pere nostre Seigneur le Roi et la Roine sa compaignie, et la fist entendre que si ele feust venue a lui quil la eust tue



tue dun cotel ou en autre manere de mordre, par quoi par cele cause et par ses autres sotiltees si fist il tant que la dite Roine vynt poynt devers son dit Seigneur a grant dishonour du Roi et de la Roigne sa miere et grant damage de tut le roialme par cas en temps a venir, que dieux defend.

A 10. Item le dit Roger par le dit roial poer a lui accroche si ad pris et fait prendre pur luy et les autres de sa covyne du tresor le Roi a sa volonte sanz noubre en deniers et jeux en destruccion du Roy, issint que le Roi nad rien de quoi payer pur son viure.

B 11. Item le dit Roger par son dit roial poer si ad fait prendre par devers lui & autres de sa alliance xxl. marcz que sont venuz hors Descocce pur la fourme de la pees sanz ce que riens de ce soit venuz au profit le Roi.

12. Item le dit Roger par son dit roial poer fist ses prises parmy le roialme si come il eust este Roi, et entre lui et ceux de sa covyne mesnerent al double dez gentz et chivalx en la compagnie le Roi, que ne fist nostre Seigneur le Roi en destruccion du people sanz faire payment autre que a lur volonte demeigne.

C 13. Item le dit Roger par son dit roial poer fist le Roi grant a la monntance de CC. Chivalers a ceux Dirland quavoient tuez les Grantz et autres de la terre Dirland que furent a la foi le Roi en celes parties par la ou le Roi devoit plus tost par reson auer veage lur mort & pardone, conntre fourme destatut et assent du parlement

D 14. Item le dit Roger compassa daver destruit les Nurriz le Roy & ceux que furent ses plus secrez des queux le Roi plus sassa & surmist au Roi en la presence la Roigne sa Miere et les Evesques de Nicole et Salesbirs et autres du conseil le Roi que les avantdirz ses secrez lui exciterent destre de la covyne de ses enemys per dela en destruccion de la Roigne sa miere et du dit Roger, la quele chose il afferma tant sur le Roi que le parole le Roi ne poeit estre creu a contraire de son dit et cele Venderdi dedeinz la nuyt quil estoit prisez a la nuyt suant; donc par les causes susescrites et par molt des autres causes que ne sont pas touz a monstrier a ore si fist le dit nostre Seigneur le Roi prendre le dit Roger en la manere et par auisement & eide de ses privetz & Nurriz come il vous ad souent monstre. Dont le dit nostre Seigneur le Roi si vous charge Countes & Barons les Pieres de son roialme que desicome cestes chose touchant principalement a lui a vous et a tout le people de son roialme que vous facez au dit Roger droit et loial jugement come a un tiel d'aver qui de totes les † coupes susescrites si est veritablement coupable a se quil entent et que les dites choses sont notories & conues pur veritables a vous et a tut le poeple du roialme.

† Culpas.  
Culps. Coups.  
Litera. L. in u.  
mutata.

Les queur Countes, Barons & Piers les articles par eur examinez revyndrent avant le Roi en mesme le parlement



ment et disoient trestouz par un des Piers que totes les choses contenues es ditz Articles fuerent notoires et conues a eux et au people, et nomement l'article tochant la mort Sire Edward pere nostre Seigneur le Roi quore est; par quoi les ditz Countes, Barons et Pieres come juges du parlement par assent du Roy en mesme le parlement agarderent et ajugerent que le dit Roger come treitour et enemy du Roy et du Roialme feust treyne et pendu, et sur ce estoit comande au Counte Marechal a faire l'execution du dit jugement, et au Maire Aldermaunes et Viscountes de Lonndres, Conestable de la Tour et auxint la ceux que avoient la garde de lui destre aidantz au dit Counte Marechal a la dite execution faire. La quele execution estoit fait et perfourmy le Jeodi prechein apres le primer jour du parlement que estoit le xxix jour de Novembre.

N. 84.  
Rot. parl. 4.  
Ed. 3. n. 16.

Contra Thomam de Berkele Gloucestr. Wygorn.

**P**Lacita Corone tenta coram Domino Edwardo Rege tertio post Conquestum in pleno Parlamento suo apud Westm. die Lune proximo post festum Sancte Katerine Virginis Anno Regni Regis ejuldem Edwardi Quarto.

**T**homas de Berkele Miles venit coram Domino Rege in pleno parlamento suo predicto & allocutus de hoc quod cum Dominus Edwardus nuper Rex Anglie pater Domini Regis nunc, in custodia ipsius Thome & cujusdam Johannis Mautravers nuper extitit, liberatus ad salvo custodiendum in Castro ipsius Thome apud Berkele in Comitatu Gloucestr. et in eodem Castro in custodia ipsorum Thome et Johannis murdratus extitit & interfectus qualiter se velit de morte ipsius Regis acquietare, dicit quod ipse nunquam fuit consentiens auxilians seu procurans ad mortem suam nec unquam scivit de morte sua usque in presenti Parlamento isto, Et de hoc paratus est se acquietare prout Curia Regis consideraverit, & super hoc quesitum est ab eo ex quo ipse est Dominus Castri predicti & idem Dominus Rex in custodia ipsorum Thome & Johannis extitit liberatus ad salvo custodiendum et ipsi custodiam ipsius Regis receperunt et acceptarunt, qualiter se excusare possit, quin de morte ipsius Regis respondere debeat. Et predictus Thomas dicit, quod verum est quod ipse est Dominus Castri predicti et quod ipse simul cum Johanne Mautravers custodiam ipsius Regis recepit ad salvo custodiendum, ut predictum est, set dicit quod eo tempore quo dicitur ipsum Dominum Regem esse murdratum & interfectum fuit ipse tali & tanta infirmitate apud Bradelye extra Castrum predictum detentus, quod nichil ei currebat memorie. Et super hoc dictum est ei quod ex quo cognovit quod ipse simul cum dicto Johanne custodiam ipsius Domini Regis optinuit, ut predictum est, et ipse Custodes et ministros sub se posuit ad custodiam de eo faciendam si per aliquam infirmitatem se excusare possit quin respondere debeat in hac parte. Et predictus Thomas dicit quod ipse posuit sub se tales Custodes et Ministros in Castro predicto pro custodia facienda, in quibus se confidebat, ut de seipso, qui Custodiam ipsius Regis simul cum predicto Johanne Mautravers inde habuerunt. Unde dicit quod ipse de morte ipsius Domini Regis, auxilio, assensu seu procuratione mortis sue, in nullo est inde culpabilis. Et de hoc de bono et malo ponit se super patriam. Ideo venit inde ju-

rare



A rare coram Domino Rege in Parlamento suo apud Westmonasterium in Octabis Sancti Hillar' proximo futuris &c. ad quem diem venit predictus Thomas coram Domino Rege in pleno Parlamento suo & similiter iuravit, scilicet Johannes Darcy, Johannes de Wysham, Willielmus de Trussel, Rogerus de Swynerton, Constantinus de Mortimer, Johannes de Sancto Philiberto, Richardus de Rivers, Petrus Hufce, Johannes de Brynnton, Richardus de la Rivere, Rogerus de Debenhale, & Richardus de Croupes omnes milites qui dicunt super sacramentum suum quod predictus Thomas de Berkele in nullo est culpabilis de morte predicti Domini Regis patris Domini Regis nunc nec de assensu, auxilio, seu procuratione mortis ejusdem. Et dicunt quod tempore mortis ejusdem Domini E. Regis, patris Domini Regis nunc, fuit ipse tali infirmitate gravatus apud Bradelye extra Castrum suum predictum, quod de vita ejus desperabatur. Ideo idem Thomas inde quietus. Et Juratores quesiti si idem Thomas unquam subtraxit se occasione predicta, dicunt quod non. Et quia predictus Thomas posuit Custodes & ministros sub se, scilicet Thomam de Gurney & Willielmum de Ocle ad custodiam de ipso Domino Rege faciendam, per quos idem Dominus Rex extitit murdratus & interfectus datus est ei dies coram Domino rege nunc in proximo Parlamento suo, de audiendo judicio suo &c. Et predictus Thomas de Berkele interim committitur Radulpho de Nevill Seneschallo Hospitii Domini Regis. &c.

C *In a Box intituled Scotia within a great Chest of the same Title in the old Chapter-house in the Cloyster at Westminster.*

D **D**avid Dei gratia Rex Scotiae omnibus ad quos presentes Literae pervenerint, Salutem. Sciatis ea consideratione quod predecessores & progenitores nostri quondam Reges Scotiae ab antiquioribus temporibus tenuerunt & de jure tenuisse debuerunt regnum Scotiae de Regibus Angliae per legium, homagium & fidelitatem & pro eodem regno simpliciter, pure & sponte, homagia, legia & fidelitates quamplures eorum personaliter fecerunt prout per antiquiora recorda & placita Coronae tam in Parliamentis quam in Itineribus Camerariorum & Justiciariorum predecessorum & progenitorum nostrorum predictorum nobis satis constat. Concessimus & per presentes obligamus nos, haeredes & successores nostros Reges Scotiae tenere praedictum Regnum nostrum Scotiae de excellentissimo Domino nostro & fratre Edwardo Rege Angliae, haeredibus & successoribus suis Regibus Angliae, tanquam de dominis superioribus regni Scotiae per legium, homagium, & fidelitatem, & eisdem fidem tenere ac cum eisdem contra omnes homines vivere & mori in perpetuum, omnibus & omnimodis relaxationibus remissionibus, quietclamantiis & aliis literis quibuscunque per Reges Angliae seu per aliquem eorum in contrarium Regibus Scotiae factis sive concessis non obstantibus. In cujus rei testimonium has literas nostras fieri fecimus patentes in perpetuum duraturas ex consensu & consilio trium statuum regni nostri in praesenti parlamento tento apud Edinburgh existentem in praesentia Henrici de Bellomonte Comitis de Bougham & Constabularii Scotiae, Gilberti Umfraville Comitis de Angus Domini de Prudhow & Mareschalli Scotiae, & Henrici Percy Domini de Alnewick ad hoc specialiter deputatorum per

N. 85. A.



per Dominum Dominum nostrum & fratrem superior' Dominum Scotie.  
Dat. primo Novembris in pleno Parlamento, Anno regni nostri  
quinto.

N. 87. B.  
Rot. Scot. 11.  
Ed. 3. m. 1.

**E**Dwardus dei Gratia Rex Angliæ & Franciæ & Dominus Hiber-  
niæ & Dux Aquitaniæ, nobili & potenti viro *Johanni Duci Bra-*  
*bant & Lotring*, consanguineo suo carissimo, Salutem. Sciatis quod  
cum attendentes inclytum regnum *Francie* ad nos fore jure successō-  
rio legitime devolutum, ipsum regnum ut hereditatem nostram le-  
gitimam agnoverimus ut eidem nos immiscere voluerimus sicut de-  
cet, nos debito regimine dicti regni summe solliciti, ac de vestris pro-  
bitate magnifica, fidelitate solida, & industria circumspēcta intime.  
confidentes vos in regno predicto locum nostrum tenentem *Capitaneum*,  
& nostrum *Vicarium generalem* facimus & præficimus per presentes, con-  
cedentes & committentes vobis merum imperium & gladii potestatem  
ac jurisdictionem omnem, altam & bassam, cognitionem & decisionem  
omnium tam criminalium quam civilium questionum, cum potestate,  
judices & ministros prout expedire videritis deputandi, nec non ple-  
num exercitium omnium & singulorum nobis & nostro regimini in-  
cumbentium in hac parte, & quæ nos facere possemus & deberemus  
si presentes essemus ibidem. Et ideo dilectionem & fidelitatem ve-  
stram attente rogamus quatenus onus & honorem hujusmodi mag-  
nanimiter assumentes circa statum pacificum regionis ipsius ac recu-  
perationem et conservationem nostrorum jurium in eadem, omnem  
solicitudinem quam poteritis efficaciter impendatis ac circa debitum  
et salubre regimen dicti regni et regnicolarum ejusdem, sic instanter  
et proinde laboretis votivum propositum quod ad observationem ju-  
rium dicti regni ut convenit optinemus ipsis nostris fidelibus plenius  
exprimentes ut vestras fidelitatem et prudentiam debeamus merito  
commendare et repensiva retributionis alacrius premiare: Mandavi-  
mus enim *Archiepiscopis, Episcopis, Ducibus, Marchionibus, Comitibus*  
*et personis aliis* quibuscunque in dicto regno existentibus, ut vo-  
bis et deputandis per vos in premissis pareant humiliter et intendant.  
In cujus &c. Dat. apud Westmonast. vii<sup>o</sup>. die Octobris.

Item consimiles commissiones facte fuerunt *Gulielmo Marchioni*  
*Juliacensi* fratri Regis carissimo transpositis dictis nominibus, Rex  
Anglie & Francie, & Rex Francie & Anglie.

Item consimiles commissiones *Gulielmo Comiti Hanov. Holand. &*  
*Seland* ac *Domino Friscie* transpositis verbis &c. ut supra.

Item consimiles commissiones *Wilhelmo de Bohun Comiti North-*  
*ampt.* consanguineo regis carissimo &c. ut supra sub eadem data.

**E**Dwardus Dei gratia Rex Anglie & Francie Dominus Hibernie &  
Dux Aquitaniæ, *Archiepiscopis, Episcopis, Ducibus, Marchionibus,*  
*Comitibus, Baronibus, & personis aliis* quibuscunque in dicto regno  
*Francie* existentibus, Salutem. Cum nos attendentes inclytum reg-  
num *Francie* ad nos fore jure successōrio legitime devolutum, ip-  
sum regnum ut hereditatem nostram legitimam agnoverimus ut  
eidem nos immiscere voluerimus sicut decet, & de debito regi-  
mine dicti regni summe solliciti ac de probitate magnifica, fide-  
litate solida, & industria circumspēcta, nobilis & potentis viri



- Johannis Ducis Brabant. & Lotring.* consanguinei nostri carissimi intime confidentes ipsum in regno prædicto locum nostrum tenentem Capitaneum & nostrum vicarium fecerimus & præfecimus generalem, concedentes & committentes eidem Duci merum imperium & gladii potestatem ac jurisdictionem omnem altam & bassam, cognitionem & decissionem omnium tam criminalium quam civilium questionum cum potestate Judices & ministros prout expedire viderit deputandi, necnon plenum exercitium omnium & singulorum nobis & nostro regimini incumbentium in hac parte, & quæ nos facere possemus & deberemus, si presentes essemus ibidem. *Vobis omnibus & singulis firmiter injungimus, & mandamus quod prefatum Ducem ad exequenda premissa libenter & devota recipitatis & sibi tanquam persone nostre sic pronis affectibus pareatis & intendatis humiliter in premissis ut devotionis vestre promptitudinem debeamus merito commendare, scituri pro certo quod ad humiles esse volumus cum favoris exuberantia gratiosi, & in rebelles prout exegerit vestra protervia sævientes. In cujus &c. Dat. ut supra.*

Item consimilia mandata diriguntur eidem sub nomine Guilielmi Marchionis Juliacen.

- E** *Dward by the grace of God, King of England and Fraunce, and Lord of Ireland, to all those which these Letters shall hear or see, greeting. Know ye, that whereas some People do think, that by the reason that the Realm of Fraunce is devolute to us as right Heir of the same, and forasmuch as we be King of Fraunce, our Realm of England should be put in Subjection of the King, and of the Realm of Fraunce in time to come; we having regard to the Estate of our Realm of England, and namely, that it never was, nor ought to be in Subjection, nor in the Obeisance of the Kings of Fraunce, which for the time have been, nor of the Realm of Fraunce. And willing to provide for the Suretie and Defence of the said Realm of England, and of our liege People of the same: will, and graunt, and stablish for us and for our Heirs and Successors, by assent of the Prelats, Earls, Barons, and Commons of our Realme of England in this our present Parliament summoned at Westminster, the wednesday next after the Sunday in Middle-lent, the XIV. Year of our said Reign of our Realme of England, and the first of Fraunce, that by the cause or colour of that, that we be King of Fraunce, and that the said Realm to us pertaineth, as afore is said, or that we do us to be named King of Fraunce in our Stile, or that we have changed our Seals, or our Arms, nor for Commandements which we have made, or from henceforth shall make as King of Fraunce, our said Realm of England, nor the People of the same, of what Estate or Condition they be, shall not in any time to come be put in Subjection, nor in Obeisance of us, nor of our Heirs nor Successors, as Kings of Fraunce, as afore is said, nor be Subject nor Obedient, but shall be free and quite of all manner of Subjection and Obeisance afore said, as they were wont to be in the time of our Progenitors Kings of England for ever. In witness of which things, &c. Dated at Westminster, &c. the XIV. Year of our Reign of England, and the first of Fraunce.*

N. 86.  
Rot. Parl. 14.  
Ed. 3. parte  
p. 9. 10. Stat.  
at large. 14.  
of Ed. 3.



N. 87. a.  
Avesbury.  
Cap. 31.

**P**hilip de Valois que longe tems avoms purfui devers vos per  
messages toutz altres voies que nos savoms resonables a fin  
que voz noz voulsistez avoir rendu nostre droit heritage de Fraunce  
le quele voz noz avetz longe tems detenu a graunt tort & coupe.  
Et pur ceo que nos veoms bien que voz estes en entente de per-  
severer en votre injurieuse detenue, sauntz noz feare reson de  
nostre demaunde, sumez noz entrez en la terre de Flaunders come  
*Signeur Soveraign de cele & passer permi le pais & voz signifi-*  
*oms que pris ovesque nous laide nostre Seigneur Jhesu Christ &*  
*nostre droit ouesque le poar du dit pais & ouesque noz gentz*  
*et aliez regard le droit que noz avoms a leritage que voz noz*  
*detenez a vostre tort, noz treioms vers vous pur mettre brieve*  
*fin sour nostre droiturele challenge si vous vailletz a proscher.* Et  
pur ceo que si graunt poar des gentz assemblez que vieignent de nostre  
part, et que bien quidoms que voz amesnetz de vostre part, ne se  
purroient mye longment tenir ensemble sauntz faire graunt destruc-  
cion al people al pais, la quele chose chescun *Chrestiens* doit escheure  
et specialement *Princes et aultres* que se teignent *gouverours de gentz,*  
si desirroms moult qui brieve point se preist et pur escheure mortalite  
de *Chrestiens*, ensi come la querele est apparent a noz et voz, que la dis-  
cucion de nostre challenge se feseit entre nos deux corps a la quele chose noz  
voz offrons pur les causes susditz, comment que nos puissions bien veer  
la graunt noblesse de vostre corps vostre sen auxint & avisement, et en  
cas que vous ne vorroiez cele voie adonques soit mys nostre chalange  
pur affiner icelle bataille de voz memes od cent persones des plus suffi-  
sauntz de vostre part & nos mesmes od aultres tauntz de noz gentz lieges.  
Et si vous ne voilletz lune voie ne lautre que vous noz assignez cer-  
tein jour devant la ville de Tourneye pur combatre poar encountre  
poar de deinz et jours prochein apres la date du ceste lettre, et nos  
offrez dez susditz voloms tut le munde estre conutz quest nostre  
desir ne mye pur orguille ne surquidance meas que pur les causes sus-  
dites a fin que la volente nostre Seigneur Jhesu Christ monstre entre nous  
repos poet de puis en puis estre entre Chrestiens que le poar des ene-  
mys Dieux feussent resiste et Christiente enfraunchie et lavoie sour  
ceo que eslire voilletz des offrez des susditz noz voilletz signifier par  
le portour du cestes lettres et par les vostres a lui fesant hastive deli-  
verance. Donc sountz nostre graunt seal a Chyn es Champs de leez  
Tourneye le xxvii. jour du moys de Juyl, l'an de Grace 1340. seelee  
d'un grand seau de cire vert.

*Responsio dicti D. mini Philippi de Valois ad literam superscriptam.*

N. 87. b.  
Avesbury.  
Cap. 32.

**P**hilip par la grace de Dieux Roi de Fraunce a Edward Roy Denglleterre  
Nous avoms veu voz lettres apportez a nostre court de part  
vous a Phelip de Valois en queles lettres estoient contenutz ascunes re-  
questes que vous feistes al dit Ph. de Valois. Et pur ceo que les ditz  
lettres ne venoient pas a nous & que les ditz requestes n'estoient pas faitez  
a nous come apeirt cleirment par le tenor des lettres, noz ne noz feissions  
nul response nient mye pur ceo que noz avoms entenduz par les  
ditz lettres et autrement que voz estes entrez en nostre roialme  
de Fraunce emportant graunt damage a nous et nostre roialme  
et a nostre people, mes de volente sauntz nul reson, & nous regar-  
dant ceo que homme lige doit garder a son Seigneur, car vous estes en-  
trez



- trez encontre vostre homage lige en noz teconniffaunt sicom reson  
est Roi de Fraunce et promis obeissance tiel come lon dit promettre a  
son Seigneur lige si com appeirt pluis clerement par voz lettres pa-  
tentz seales de vostre graunt seale les queles noz avomps depar devers  
noz et de queles vous devez avoir a taunt devers vous nostre en-  
tente si est quant bon nous semblera de voz getter hors de nostre  
roialme al honore de nous et de nostre roialme et en profit de nostre  
A people, & a ceo faire avomps ferme esperance en Jhesu Christ, dount  
tout puissance nous vient quar par vostre entreprise queste de volente  
& nous resonable d'este empeschez la saint voiage doutre meer et  
graunt quantite dez gentz Chrestiens mis a mort le service divine ape-  
titez & seint Eglise en meindre reverence. Et du ceo questscript  
avoiez que vous entendez avoir lost de Flemyngez nous qui doms estre  
certains que les bones gentz et les Comunes du pais se porteront par  
tiele manere par devers nostre Cofin le Counte de Flaundres lor  
B Seigneur sauntz meine et noz lor Seigneur Soveraign quils garderont  
lor honore et lor loialte. Et que ceo quils ount mespris jusques  
a cy ceo aad este par malvais conseil dez gentz que ne regardent pas  
au profit comune ne al honore du pais meas a profit de eaux taunt  
soulment. Done soutez les *Campes* pres de la *Priorie Saint Andreu*  
soutez le seal de nostre secret en l'absence du graunt, le xxx<sup>me</sup>. jour de  
Juyl, l'an du grace. M. CCC. xl.

- C **R** EX venerabili in Christo patri J. eadem gratiâ Archiepiscopo  
*Cantuar.* totius Angliæ primati, salutem. Cum pridem in  
Parlamento nostro apud Westmonast. in Quindena Pasche proximè  
præterito convocato, quedam, legibus & consuetudinibus regni nostri  
Angliæ expressè contraria, & regie dignitati nostre nedum valde pre-  
judicialia set probrosa fuissent minus importune petita, qua nisi per mo-  
dum statuti tunc permissemus consignari dictum parliamentum fuisset  
D sine omni expeditione in discordia dissolutum, & sic Guerre nostre Francie  
& Scotie, quas de Consilio vestro ut scitis principaliter assumpsimus, fui-  
sent quod absit) verisimiliter in ruinâ, & nos ad evitanda tanta pericu-  
la premissis protestationibus de revocando cum possemus commodè que sic a  
nobis quasi invitis extorta fuerint, illa sigillo nostro sigillari permisimus  
illa vice, & postmodum ea de consilio & assensu Comitum & Baronum  
& aliorum peritorum ex causis legitimis, quia defecit consensus noster, de-  
claravimus esse nulla, nec nomen vel vim habere statuti, ac jam accepi-  
mus quod vos unum consilium provinciale in Crafino sancti Lucie proximo  
E futuro apud London convocari mandastis in quo Coepiscopos vestre Provin-  
cie contra nos concitare & aliqua nobis prejudicialia circa roborationem  
dicti pretenso statuti, & in enervationem, depressionem, & diminutionem,  
jurisdictionis, jurium & prerogativarum nostrorum Regalium ad quorum  
conservationem astringimur vinculo Juramenti, nec non circa processum  
inter nos & vos super quibusdam ex parte nostra vobis oppositis pendentem  
statuere, declarare & super hiis censuras graves intenditis promulgare:  
F Nos volentes tanto prejudicio, ut convenit, obviare, vobis districtè pro-  
hibemus ne quicquam quod in derogationem, seu diminutionem regie dig-  
nitatis, potestatis, & jurium corona nostrorum seu legum & consuetudi-  
num dicti regni nostri, aut in prejudicium processus memorati, vel etiam  
in roborationem dicti pretenso statuti, vel alias in contumeliam nostri no-  
minis, & honoris, aut in gravamen vel dispendium consiliariorum, vel  
obsequialium nostrorum cedere poterunt, in dicto consilio vel alibi propo-  
natis, statutis, aut aliquàlter attemptetis, aut attemptari faciatis,

N. 88.  
Rot. Claus. 15.  
Ed. 3. parte 3.  
m. 25. Dors.



*Scituri quod si secus feceritis ad vos ad inimicum nostrum & nostrorum violatorem jurium, gravius quo licite poterimus capiemus. Teste Rege apud Westmonast. primo die Octobris.*

N. 89.  
Rot. parl. 17.  
Ed. 3. n. 23.

**I**tem accordez est & assentuz que le *statut* fait a Westminster a la Quinziem de Paske, l'an du Regne nostre Seigneur le Roy quinzieme soit de tout *Repellez & anientez & perde noun de statut*, come celle qu'est *prejudiciel & contraire a leys & usages du Roialme & as Droights & Prerogatives* nostre Seigneur le Roi, mes pur ce que *ascunes Articles* furent *comprise* en meisme le *statut* que sont *raisonables & accordantz a ley & a reson*, il est accordez per notre Seigneur le Roi & son conseil que des tieux Articles & autres accordez en cest present Parlement soit fait Estatut de novell per l'avis des Justices & autres sages & tenuz a touz jours.

N. 90.  
Avesbury. p.  
97. b. c. 39.

**L**udovicus dei gratiâ Romanorum Imperator semper Augustus, Præclarus, Edwardo Regi Angliæ fratri suo charissimo, salutem, & sinceræ dilectionis affectum. Licet innumera grandiaque negotia nostris incumbant humeris & circa illa multipliciter & assidue distrahamur, tamen cum discordia inter te & preclarum Philippum Regem Franciæ, affinem nostrum perdilectum, ex qua tibi & tuo Regno quamplurima personarum & rerum dispendia ipsa non sedata in futurum poterunt evenire, se nostris representat obtutibus, mentem nostram specialius angit & excitat, ut ad tollendam illam, studium & operam nostræ sollicitudinis apponamus. Propter quod scire te volumus quod præfatus Philippus ad requisitionem nostram dedit nobis suis literis potestatem tractandi inter te & ipsum concordiam super discordiam inter vos suscitata, quam etiam tibi & tuo Regno pensatis diligenter omnibus conditionibus tuis & alligatorum tuorum multipliciter expedire credentes amicitia tuæ persuademus teque cum diligentia exhortamur ut ad hoc tuum assensum præbeas, quod te et ipsum revocare possumus ad concordiam, et inter vos vera pacis fœdera ordinare. Ad quæ libenti animo vacare volumus et impendere operosæ prosecutionis labores in quo si consiliis nostris consentire et acquiescere volueris ut speramus, placet tibi nobis tuis literis dare potestatem præmissam tractandi concordiam et treugas ad annum vel biennium ordinandi. Nec te moveat amicitia inter nos et Philippum Regem Francorum prædictum, inita et contracta, nam ex quo tu treugas et certos terminos ad tractandum de concordia inter te et prædictum Philippum Regem Francorum accepisti absque nostro scitu, voluntate, et assensu de consilio nostrorum Principum qui ligas pacta et uniones nostras, noverint quibus visum fuit quod hoc salvo honore nostro facere possemus, concordiam et amicitiam cum dicto Rege Franciæ contraximus, et unionem inivimus, vicariatumque tibi per nos commissum ex causis revocavimus prævocatis, pro firmo sciturus quod in tractatibus nostris, sic tibi fraternè provideamus, quod si in nostris consiliis acquiescere volueris, causa tua ad finem bonum, mediante nostro auxilio producet. Super quibus tuam amicitiam de nostrâ intentione plenius informandam, religiosum virum Fratrem Eliarhardum lectorem ordinis fratrum heremitarum sancti Augustini, specialem nostræ Curie Capellanum, tuæ fraternitati transmittimus quem petimus super præmissis cum celeri expeditione remitti. Dat. Franchinforde xxv. die mensis Junii, Regni nostri anno xxiv. Imperii nostri.



N. 91.  
ibm. p. 98. 2.

A B C D E F
 Serenissimo Principi Domino *Ludovico* Dei gratiâ *Romanorum Imperatori semper Augusto*, *Edwardus* eadem gratiâ Rex *Francie et Anglia*, et Dominus *Hybernie* salutem, et votivis semper successibus gratulari. Serenitatis vestræ literas reverenter recepimus inter alia continentes quod *præclarus Philippus de Valesio* ad tractandam inter nos et ipsum concordiam dedit vobis ad requisitionem vestram suis literis potestatem. Et si placeret nobis potestatem hujusmodi vobis dare, libenti vacaretis animo ad dictam concordiam reformandum et quod amicitia inter vos et ipsum *Philippum* inita minimè nos moveret. Nam ex quo sine scitu et assensu vestro treugas et certos terminos ad tractandum inter nos et dictum *Philippum* de pace accepimus, dictam amicitiam cum eo de consilio Principum vestrorum quibus visum fuit quod hoc salvo honore vestro possetis facere, contraxistis, vicariatum nobis per vos commissum revocantes. Et quidem zelum quem habetis ad faciendam dictam concordiam plurimum commendamus, volentes vestræ patere notitiæ quod nos pacem resonabilem habere cum dicto *Philippo* semper optavimus, quam in quantum decuit sumus cum justitia prosecuti. Et revera votivum nobis foret admodum & acceptum si posset fieri per tanti mediatoris instantiam pax optata. *Sed quia scimus jus nostrum in Regno Franciæ satis clarum, illud arbitrio dubio non proponimus ducere alicui per literas nostras committendum.* Verum dum attentâ meditatione pensamus qualiter vestra consideratio circumspecta videns patentem nostram justitiam & dicti *Philippi* duritiem obstinatum & injuriam nobiscum, contra dictum *Philippum* vestra gratia ligam fecit in specialem adoptionis filium, de dilectionis exuberantia nos admittentes, ut cum pace vestrâ loquamur, mirari non sufficimus quod præpotens vestra sublimitas quæ ad laudem bonorum & vindictam malorum est divinitus instituta contra nos dicto *Philippo* injuriatori nostro notorio se ligavit. Et id quod dicitur nos sine scitu & assensu vestro cum prædicto *Philippo* treugas & tractatum pacis iniisse, non debuit consideratis facti circumstantiis rationabiliter vos movisse, quia dum obsidebamus civitatem *Tornaceam*, oportuit nos eorum sequi consilia, qui nobis comitivam & auxilium tunc fecerunt, & hyemis subita vicinitas ac locorum distantia vestram super hoc consulere celsitudinem minimè permiserunt, immo nobis alias si recolitis concessistis quod cum opportunitas arrideret tractare possemus de pace, vobis inconsultis, ita tamen quod sine consensu vestro pacem finalem cum dicto *Philippo* nullatenus faceremus, quam nunquam facere proponebamus priusquam super hoc vestrum habuissemus providum consilium & assensum. Sed semper in votis gessimus vobis in omnibus facere quod debuimus juxta vires, sperantes quod fraternæ vestræ plenitudo benevolentia nos ad tempus benignius supportasset: videtur etiam aliquibus quod revocatio dicta vicariatus facta fuerat prematurè cum juxta sponfionem super hoc per imperiales apices nobis factam, non debuisset fieri quousque regnum *Franciæ* vel majorem partem ejusdem pacificè fuisset adepti. Premissa quæsumus velit vestra nobilitas debite ponderare, & ulterius facere quod debet, quia per Dei gratiam vobis & vestris semper juxta mensuram impensæ nobis benevolentia gratam faciemus pro viribus repensivam. Celsitudini vestræ donet Altissimus votivæ felicitatis augmenta. Dat. London. xviii die mensis Julii. Anno regni nostri *Franciæ* ii. regni vero nostri *Angliæ* xv.



N. 92.  
E veteroi Ro-  
tula hujusce  
Temporis pe-  
nes meipsum.

**R**etinentia Regis Edwardi tertii in exercitu suo, in partibus  
Normaniæ, Franciæ, & coram Cales. Anno regni sui  
vicefimo.

Ad 20 s. per diem.	Dominus Princeps.	
Ad 6 s. & 8 d. per diem.	Episcopus Dunolmenfis.	
Ad 6 s. & 8 d. per diem.	Comites. 15.	
Ad 4 s. per diem.	Barones, & Baneretti. 44.	A
Ad 2 s. per diem.	Milites. 1046.	

Ad 1 s. per diem.	{ Scutiferi, Constabularii, }	4022.
	{ Centenarii, & Duçtores. }	

Ad 6 d. per diem.	{ Vintenarii & Sagittarii }	5104.
	{ equites. }	

Ad 6 d. per diem.	Pauncenarii. 355.	
-------------------	-------------------	--

Ad 6 d. per diem.	Hobelarii 500.	B
-------------------	----------------	---

Ad 3 d. Per diem.	Sagittarii, pedites. 15480.	
-------------------	-----------------------------	--

Aliqui ad 12 d. 10 d.	{ Cementarii, Carpentarii, Fa-	} 314.
6 d. 3 d. per diem.	{ bri, Ingeniatores, Pavilona-	
	{ rii, Minarii, Armatores, Gun-	
	natores & Artillarii.	

Unde ducenti Vintenarii 4 d.	{ Wallenses pedites. 4474.
residui ad 2 d. per diem.	

Magistri Constabularii, Marinarii	{ 16000.
& Pagetti 700. Navium, bargea-	
rum, balingearum, & vitelliarum.	

Summa totalis hominum pre-	{ 31294.
dictorum præter Dominos.	

Summa totalis vadiorum guerræ cum vadiis  
Marinariorum a 4<sup>to</sup> die Junii. Anno 20<sup>mo</sup>.  
dicti Regis Edwardi 3<sup>iii</sup>. usque 12<sup>mo</sup> diem  
Octobris. Anno 21<sup>mo</sup>. ejusdem Regis per  
unum Annum et 131. dies. Ut patet in libro  
de particulis Computi, Walteri Wetewange  
tunc Thesaurarii Hospitii. Titulo totale va-  
diorum guerræ in partibus Normaniæ, Fran-  
ciæ, et coram Cales.

l.	s.	d.
127201	--02	--9. 06.

And that at Present we may know how the King in these Times  
was served in his Wars by his Noble Men, and others, I have tran-  
scribed the following Instances.

Domino Edwardo Principi Walliæ existenti in obsequio Dom  
Regis in partibus Normanniæ, Franciæ, et coram Cales, cum reten-  
tione suâ pro vadiis guerre ad 20 s. undecem Baneretti quolibet capi-  
ente per diem 4 s. 102 milites quolibet ad 2 s. 264 Scutiferi, quo-  
libet ad 12 d. 384 Sagittarii equites quolibet ad 6 d. 69 Sagittarii  
pedites quolibet ad 3 d. 513 Wallenses quorum unus Capellanus ad  
6 d. unus medicus unus Proclamator, 5 Standardarii et 25 Vintenarii  
quolibet ad 4 d. et 480 pedites quolibet ad 2 d. per diem.

Domino Henrico Comiti Lancastriæ existente coram Cales in ob-  
sequio Regis cum retentione suâ pro vadiis suis guerræ et unius Co-  
mitis utroque ad 6 s. 8 d. 11. Baneretti quolibet ad 4 s. 193. milites  
quolibet ad 2 s. 512. Scutiferi quolibet ad 12 d. 46 homines ad arma  
equites & 612 sagittarii equites quolibet ad 6 d. per diem.

Do-



Domino Wilhelmo de Bohonn Comiti Northampr. existenti in obsequio Regis in partibus Normanniæ, Franciæ & coram Calles. 2 Baneretti. 46 Milites. 112 Scutiferi. 141 Sagittarii equites ad vadia ut supra.

Domino Thomæ de Hatfeld Episcopo Dunolmensi ad 6 s. 8 d. per diem. 3 Baneretti. 48 Milites. 164 Scutiferi. 81 Sagittarii equites quolibet capiente ut supra.

A Domino Radulpho Baroni de Stafford existenti in obsequio Regis in partibus prædictis cum 2 Banerettis. 20 Militibus. 92. Scutiferis. 90 Sagittarii Equites quolibet capiente ut supra.

Barones cum eorum retentione.

Domino Wilhelmo de Wareyne Militi & aliis. 95 Milites. 313 Scutiferi. 394 Sagittarii, Hobelarii, Pauncenarii, Equites, & 46 Sagittarii pedites. de eorum retinentia quolibet capiente ut supra.

Milites cum eorum retentione.

B *The Retinue of King Edward the third in his Army in Normandy, France, and before Calais in the 20th Year of his Reign*

The Prince by the Day. 20 s.

The Bishop of Durham. 6 s. 8 d.

Thirteen Earls each by the Day. 6 s. 8 d.

Fourty four Barons and Baneretts

C Each by the Day } 4 s.

One Thousand fourty six Knights } 2 s.

Each by the Day. }

Esquires, \* Constables, Captains and } 1 s.

Leaders. 4022. each by the Day. }

Vintenars that had the command of 20 Men } 6 d.  
or as our Serjeants, and Archers on horseback }

5104. each by the Day.

D Pauncenars, they were most strangers, but what } 6 d.  
otherwise I know not, 355. by the Day each. }

Hobelars 500. by the Day each. 6 d.

Archers on foot 15480. by the Day each. 3 d.

Masons, Carpenters, Smiths, Engineers, Tent-makers, Miners,

\* Gunners armed, and those that had the Care of the Artillery.

314. some at a Shilling others at 10 d. 6 d. and 3 d. by the Day.

E Welshmen, foot 4474. whereof 200 Vintenars each by the Day 4 d. the Residue each by the Day. 2 d.

The whole Number of the Men of the Army was besides the Lords 31294. Masters, Captains, Mariners and Boys for 700 Ships, Barges, Balingers and Victuallers 16000.

F The Summ Total of the War, with the Wages of the Mariners from the 4th of June in the 20th Year of Edward the third, to the 12th of October in the 21st Year of his Reign, one Year and a Hundred 31 Days. 127101 l. 2 s. 9 d. ob. as it appears in the Book of particulars of the Account of Walter Wetewange, then Treasurer of the Household. Under the Title of the Total of the Wages of the War in Normandy, France, and before Calais.

† Constables were Officers and Commanders.

\* The English had five pieces of Cannon at the Battel of Cressy. Mezeray. f. 369.



In eodem Ro-  
tulo.

Earls and their  
Retinue.

The Bishop of  
Durham and  
his Retinue.

Barons with  
their Retinue.

Knights with  
their Retinue.

N. 93.  
Look for this  
Number and  
Number 94  
95. and 96. in  
the History,  
and a Para-  
graph or two  
before this  
Number, and  
there are Di-  
rections where  
to find the ori-  
ginals.

*The following Instances makes this Service more plain*

To **Edward Prince of Wales** being in the Kings service in Nor-  
mandy, France and before Calais, with his Retinue for his Wa-  
ges of War 20 s. a Day. Eleven Banerets, every one taking  
4 s. a Day. 102 Knights each 2 s. a Day. 264 Escuires, each  
12 d. a day. 384 Archers on horseback each 6 d. a Day. 69 foot Archers each 3 d. a Day. 513 Welshmen, whereof one  
Chaplain at 6 d. a Day. One Physician, one Herald or Cryer.  
5 Ensignes, 25 Serjeants or Officers over 20 Men each 4 d. a Day.  
480 footmen each 2 d. a Day.

To **Henry Earle of Lancaster**, being in the Kings service be-  
fore Calais with his Retinue, for his wages of War, and one o-  
ther Earle each 6. s. 8. d. a Day. Eleven Banerets each 4. s.  
a Day. 193 Knights each 2. s. a Day. 512 Escuires each 12 d.  
a Day. 46 Men at Armes, and 612 Archers on Horseback each  
6 d. a Day.

To **William Bohun Earle of Northampton** being in the Kings ser-  
vice in Normandy, France, and before Calais. 2 Banerets. 46  
Knights. 112 Escuires. 141 Archers on Horseback. For their Wa-  
ges as above.

To **Thomas Hatfield Bishop of Durham** 6 s. 8 d. a Day. 3 Ba-  
nerets. 48 Knights. 164 Escuires. 81 Archers on Horseback, eve-  
ry one taking as above.

To **Ralph Baron of Stafford**, being in the Kings service in the  
places aforesaid, with 2 Banerets. 20 Knights. 92 Escuires. 90  
Archers on Horseback. Every one taking as above.

To **William de wareyne Knight**, and other 95 Knights, 313  
Escuires. 394 Archers, Hobelars, or Light-horsemen, Pauncenars on  
horseback. and 46 foot Archers of their Retinue, every one tak-  
ing as above.

The **Chiefs of the Forreigners**, and Strangers that were in the  
Kings service, were commonly paid in Groffe. So many Thou-  
sand or Hundred Pounds, for their own Wages and their Mens:  
Pro vadiis suis & hominum eorum, According to their own  
Quality, and the Numbers and Quality of those they brought  
with them.

*Litera super correctione Articulorum.*

**U**Niversis presentes Literas inspecturis *Frater Androynus* mi-  
seratione Divina humilis *Abbas Cluniacen' Apostolica sedis*  
*Nuncius* Salutem in Eo qui est omnium vera salus.

Noveritis quod *Illustrissimus Princeps & Dominus, Dominus Jo-*  
*hannes Dei Gratiâ Francorum Rex* in Pace finali inter ipsum &  
*Excellentissimum Principem & Dominum, Dominum Regem Angliæ*  
noviter reformatâ, Literas suas eidem Regi Angliæ Nobis præsen-  
tibus concessit & tradi fecit sub hac Forma.

**I**Ehan par la grace de Dieu Roy de France scavo'r faisons a  
tous presens & avenir, Que nous avons veu le *Traicte d'*  
*Accort* fait naguies par certains *Traicteurs & Procureurs* entre  
nous & nôtre treschier Frere le Roy d' Angleterre contenue la  
fourme qui s'ensuit.

Charles



Charles ainsine fitz du Roy de France Regent le Royaume Duc de Normandie & D'alpin de Vienn'. A Tous ceuls qui ces presentes Lettres verrent, Salut.

A Nous vous faisons scavoit que de tous les Debas & Descors quelconques menez & demenez entre Monsieur le Roy de France & nous pour lui & pour nous & pour touz ceuls a quil appartient d'une part, Et le Roy d'Angleterre et touz ceuls a quil puit touchier de sa Partie d'autre. Pour Bien de Paix est accordes le viii. Jour de May, l' An Mil trois cens soixante a Bretigny de les chartres en la maniere qui ensuit.

B 1. Premièrement que le Roy d'Angleterre avec ce quil tient in Guenne & in Gascoigne aura pour lui & pour ses Hoires perpetuellement a touz jours tous les Choses qui sensuivent a tenir par la maniere que le Roy de France & son Filz ou aucune de ces Ancestres Roys de France les tindrent.

C Cest ascavoit ce que en demain en demain & que en fie en fie & par le temps & maniere dessus esclarciz la Cite le Chastel la Conte de Poitiers & tout la Terre & le Pais de Poitou, ensamble le fie de Tournay, & la Terre de Belleville, la Cite & le Chastel de Xaintes, et tout la Terre et le Pais de Xaintonge, par de ca et par de la, la Charente et la Cite et le Chastel d'Agen, et la Terre et le Pais d'Agen et la Terre et le Pais d'Agenois, la Cite le Chastel et tout la Conte de Pierregort, et la Terre et le Pais de Pierregort, la Cite et le Chastel de Limoges, et la Terre et le Pais de Limosin, la Cite et le Chastel de Caours, et la terre et le Pais de Caourcin, la Cite le Chastel et le Pais de Tarbe, et la Terre et le Pais et la Conte de Bigorre, la Conte la Terre le Pais de Gaure, la Cite le Chastel d'Angoulesme, et la Conte et la Terre et le Pais d'Angoumois, la Cite & le Chastel de Rodes, la Terre & le Pais de Rouargne & si il y a aucunes Seigneurs comme le Conte de Foix, le D Conte d'Armagnac, le Conte de Lisle, le Count de Pierregort, le Viconte de Limoges, ou autres qui tiennent aucunes Terres ou Lieux dedans les Metes dez diz Lieux, il feront Homage au Roy d'Angleterre, & touz autres Services et Devoirs deus a cause de leurs Terres & Lieux en la maniere quil ont fait, ou temps passe.

E 2. Item aura le Roy d'Angleterre tout ce que le Roy d'Angleterre ou aucunes des Roys d'Angleterre anciennement tindrent en la Ville de Montereul sur la Mer et les Appartenances.

F 3. Item aura le Roy d'Angleterre tout la Conte de Pontieu tout entierment sauf et excepte que se aucunes choses ont este alienees par les Roys d'Angleterre qui ont este par le temps de la dicte Conte et appartenances et a autres Personnes que aus Roys de France le Roy de France ne sera pas tenuz de les rendre au Roy d'Angleterre, et se les dictes alienations ont este faits aus Roys de France qui ont este par le temps sans aucune moyen et le Roy de France les tiegne a present en sa main il les laissera au Roy d'Angleterre entierment, Excepte que se les Roys de France les ont eu par eschange, et autres Terres le Roy d'Angleterre delivrera au Roy de France ce que ou a eu par eschange, ou il li laissera les choses ainsi alieneres. Mais se les Roys de Angleterre qui ont este par le temps en



avoient aliene ou transporte aucunes choses en autres Personnes que aus Roys de France et depuis soient venues es mains du Roy de France eu aussi par partage le Roy de France ne sera pas tenuz de les rendre aussi se les choses dessus dictes devoient Hommage le Roy les baillera a autres qui en feront Hommage au Roy d'Angleterre, et si ils ne devoyent hommage le Roy de France baillera un tenent quil y en fera le devoir dedanz un an prochain, apres ce quil fera partiz de Calays.

A

4. Item le Roy d'Angleterre aura le Chastel & la Ville de Calais, le Chastel et la Ville et la Seigneurie de Merk, les Villes, Chasteaux et Seignories de Sangale, Conloigne, Hames, Wale, et Oye, avec Terres, Bois, Mares, Rivières, Rents, Seignories, advoysons d'Eglises et toutes autres appartenances et Lieux entregisans dedans les Mettes ou Bonnes qui sensuit.

B

Cest ascavoir des Calais jusques au fil de la rivière par devant Gravelingues et aussi per mesme le fil de mesme la rivière tout entour l'Angle et aussi par la rivière qui va par dela Poil et aussi per mesme la rivière qui chiet en grant Laq de Guines et jusques a fretun et dilec par la Valee, entour la Montaigne de Kalkuli, encleant mesme la Montaigne et aussi jusques a la mer avec Sangale et toutes les Appartenances.

C

5. Item le dit Roy d'Angleterre aura le Chastel & la Ville & tout entierement la Conte de Guines avec toutes les Terres, Villes, Chasteaux, Forteresces, Lieux, Hommes, Hommages, Seignories, Bois, Fores, Droitures, dicelles aussi entierement, comme le Conte de Guines derrer mort les tint au temps de sa mort, & obeiront les Eglises & les bonnes Gens, estans dedans les Limitations du dit Conte de Guines, de Calais & de Merk & des autres Lieux dessus diz au Roy d'Angleterre ainsi comme il obeissoient au Roy de France & au Conte de Guines, qui sur par le temps toutes les quelles choses de Merk, & de Calais contenues en ce present Article, & en l'Article prochain precedent le Roy d'Angleterre, tendra en demaine, Excepte les Heritages des Eglises, qui demourront aus dittes Eglises entierement quelque part quil soient assis, & aussi exceptez les Heritages des autres Gens des Pais de Merk & de Calais assis hors de la Ville de Calais, jusques a la Valeur de cent Livrees de Terre par An de la monnoye courant au Pais & au desouz les quels Heritages leur demourront jusques a la Value dessus ditte & au desouz mais les Habitans & Heritages assis en la ditte Ville de Calais avec leurs Appartenances demourront en demaine au Roy d'Angleterre pour en ordener a sa Volente, & aussi demourrent aus Habitans en la Conte, Ville, et Terres de Guines, tous leurs Demaines entierement & yrevendront plenement sauf ce que dit est des Confrontations, Mettes, & Bonnes en l'Article prochain precedent.

D

E

F

6. Item est accorde que le Roy d'Angleterre & ces Hoires auront et tendront toutes les Isles adjacens aus Terres, Pais et Lieux avant nommes ensamble avecques toutes les autres Isles les quelles le dit Roy d'Angleterre tient a present.

7. Item



7. Item accorde est que le dit Roy de France & son ainsnez  
 Fitz le Regent pour eulx et pour touz leurs Hoires et Successeurs  
 au plus tost que lon pourra sanz fraude et sans mal engin et  
 a plus tard dedans la feste saint Michiel prochain venant en un  
 An rendront, bailleront, & delivreront au dit Roy d' Angleterre  
 & a touz les Hoires & Successeurs, & transporteront en eulx tou-  
 A tes les Honneurs, Obediences, Homages, Ligeances, Vasseauls,  
 Fiez, Services, Reconnoissances, Droitures, mere & mixte Impere  
 & toutes manieres de Jurisdicions hautes & basses, Sives-gardes,  
 advoysons et patronages d' Eglises et tout le droit quil avoient,  
 et pouvoient avoir, appartenoient, appartient ou pouent appar-  
 tenir pour quelque cause, titre ou couleur de droit a euls aus Roys  
 et a la Couronne de France pour cause des Cites, Contes, Cha-  
 steals, Villes, Terres, Pais, Isles et Lieux avant nommes, et de  
 B tous leurs Appartenances et Appendances quelque Part quil soient  
 et chascune dicelles aussi manderont lez diz Roy et son ainsnez  
 Filz par leurs Lettres patents a touz Arcevesques, Evesques et  
 autres Prelas de Sainte Eglise et aussi aux Contes, Vicontes, Barons,  
 Nobles, Citoiens, et autres quelconques des Cites, Contes, Ter-  
 res, Pais, Isles, Lieux avant nommez quil obeissent au Roy d'  
 Angleterre, et a ses Hoires et a leur certain commandement en  
 la maniere quil ont obei aus Roys et a la Couronne de France et  
 C par mesmes les lettres, lez quitteront et absoudront au mieulx  
 quil se pourra faire de touz Homages, Fois, Seremens, Obliga-  
 tions, Subjections, et Promesses faiz par aucun deuls au Roy et a  
 la Couronne de France.

8. Item est accorde que le Roy d' Angleterre aura les Contes,  
 Cites, Chasteaux, Terres, Pais, Isles & Lieux avant nomes avec  
 toutes les Appartenances & les Appendances quelque part quil  
 D soient a tenir a lui & a tous les Hoirs et Successeurs heredita-  
 blement & parperuellement en demaine ce que le Roy de France  
 y avoit en demaine & aussi en fie & service ce que les Roys de  
 France y avoient par telle maniere, sauf tout que dit est par des-  
 sus en l' Article de Calais & de Merk & ses des Cites, Contes,  
 Chasteaux, Terres, Pais, Isles, & Lieux avant nomes, Drois mere  
 & mixte Impere & Jurisdicions, & proufiz quelconques, que te-  
 noit aucun Roy d' Angleterre illecques ou en leurs Appartenan-  
 ces & Appendances quelconques aucunes Alienations, donations,  
 E Obligations, ou charges ont este faits par aucun des Roys de  
 France qui ont este par le temps puis lxx Ans, en ca pour quel-  
 que cause ou forme que ce soit, toutes telles Donations, Alie-  
 tions, Obligations & Charges, sont delores & seront du tout rap-  
 peles, cassees & adnullées et toutes choses ainsi donnees, allienees,  
 ou chargees seront realment & de fait rendues & baillées au dit  
 Roy d' Angleterre, ou a ses Deputes especialment en mesme l'  
 F entirete comme il furent aus Roys d' Angleterre depuis lxx. Ans  
 en ca au plus tost que lon pourra sanz mal engin, & au plus  
 tard dedans la Sainte Michiel prochain venant en un An a tenir  
 au dit Roy d' Angleterre & a touz ses Hoirs & Successeurs par-  
 peruellement & hereditablement par maniere que dessus est dit,  
 Excepte ce qui est dit par dessus en l' Article de Pontieu, qui de-  
 mourra en la force, & sauf & excepte toutes les choses donnees



& allienees aus Eglises qui leur demourrant paisiblement en touz les Pais & Lieux ci dessus et dessous nommes, si que les Personnes des dittes Eglises prient diligement pour les diz Roys comme par leurs fondeurs sur quoy leurs consciences en seront chargez.

9. Item est accorde que le Roy d' Angleterre toutes les Cites, Contes, Chasteaux et Pais dessus nomez qui anciennement n'ont este des Roys d' Angleterre, aura et tendra comme le Roy de France ou ses Filz les tiennent a present. A

10. Item est accorde que se dedans les mettes des diz Pais qui furent anciennement des Roys d' Angleterre auroient aucunes choses qui autrefois n'eussent est des Roys d' Angleterre dont le Roy de France estoit en possession le jour de la bataille de Poitiers qui fu le xix. Jour de Septembre l' An Mil. ccc. lvi. Elles seront demourront au Roy d' Angleterre & a ses Hoirs par la maniere que dessus est dit. B

11. Item accorde est que le Roy de France & son ainenez Filz le Regent pour eulx & pour touz leurs Hoirs & pour touz les Roys de France & leurs Successeurs a touz jours au plus tost que se pourra faire sanz mal Engin & au plus tard dedans la Saint Michiel prochain venant & un An, rendront & bailleront au dit Roy d' Angleterre & a touz ses Hoirs & Successeurs & transporteront en eulx touz les Honneurs, Obediances, Hommages, Ligeances, Vasseauls, Fiez, Services, Reconnoissances, Seremens, Droitures, mere & mixte Impere, & toutes manieres de Jurisdicions hautes et basses sauves-gardes, et Seignories, qui appartoient et appartiennent ou pourroient en aucune maniere appartenir au Roy et a la Couronne de France ou a aucune autre Personne a cause du Roy et de la Couronne de France en quelque temps, es Cites, Contes, Chasteaux, Terres, Pais, Isles et Lieux avant nommes, ou en aucune deulx ou leur Appartenances et Appendences quelconque ou es Personnes, Vassaulz et Subgiez quelconques diceulx. C  
D

*The twelfth Article was entirely left out of the Treaty of Peace, Corrected at Calais when the two Kings met there.*

13. Item est accorde a fin que ce present Traicte puisse estre plus briefment acompliz que le Roy d' Angleterre fera amener le Roy de France a Calais dedans trois sepmaines apres la Nativite saint Jehan Baptiste prochain venant, cessant tout juste empeschement aus despens du Roy d' Angleterre hors les frais de l' Ostel du dit Roy de France. E

14. Item accorde est que le Roy de France paiera au Roy d' Angleterre trois Millions d' Escuz d' Or, dont les deux valent un Noble de la Monnoye d' Angleterre & en seront paies au dit Roy d' Angleterre ou a ses Deputez six Cens Mil escuz a Calais dedans quatre Mois acompter depuis que le Roy de France sera venuz a Calais et dedans l' An des lors prochain ensuit en seront paieez quatre Cens Mil Escuz tels comme dessus en la Cite de Londres en Angleterre, & deslors chascun An prochain ensuit iiiii. Mil F



Mil Escuz tels comme devant en la ditte Cite jusques a tant que les diz trois Milions seront parpaies.

15. Item est accorde que pour paient les diz vi. Mil Escuz a Calais & pour baillant les Hostages ci deffous nommes & delivront au Roy d' Angleterre dedans les quatre Mois, acompter depuis que le Roy de France sera venuz a Calais, comme dit est, la Ville le Chastel & les Forteresces de la Rochelle, & les Chasteaux, Forteresces, & Villes de la Conte de Guines avec toutes les Appartenances et Appendances, la Personne du dit Roy sera tout delivre de Prison & pourra partir franchement, mais il ne pourra armer ne ses Gens contre le Roy d' Angleterre jusques a tant quil ait accompli ce qui est tenuz de faire par ce present Traicte et sont Hostages tant Prisonniers pris en la Battaille de Poitiers comme autres qui demourront par le Roy de France ceuls qui senfuit.

- Cest ascavoir Monsieur Loys Conte d' Anjou, Monsieur Jehan-Conte de Poitiers Filz au Roy de France le Duc d' Orleans Frere du dit Roy, le Duc de Bourbon, le Conte de Blois, ou son Frere, le Conte d' Alencon ou Monsieur Pierre d' Alencon son Frere, le Conte de Saint Pol, le Conte de Harcourt, le Conte de Portien, le Conte de Valentinois, le Conte de Breine, le Conte de Vaudemont, le Conte de Foreis, le Viconte de Beauont, le Sire de Coucy, le Sire de Fienne, le Sire de Preaux, le Sire de Saint Venant, le Sire de Garencieres, le Dalphin d' Auvergne, le Sire de Hangest, le Sire de Montmorency, Monsieur Guillaume de Craon, Monsieur Loys de Harcourt, Monsieur Jehan de Ligny. Les noms des diz Prisonniers sont tiels, Monsieur Philip de France, le Conte d' Eu, le Conte de Longueville, le Conte de Pontieu, le Conte de Tancarville, le Conte de Jogny, le Conte de Sancerre, le Conte de Danmartin, le Conte de Vantadour, le Conte de Sailebruche, le Conte de Auxerre, le Conte de Vendosme, le Sire de Craon, le Sire de Rual, le Marechaut d' Andenham, le Sire d' Aubigny.

16. Item est accorde que les dessus diz Prisonniers qui veuront demorer en Hostage par le Roy de France comme dit est seront par mi ce delivres de leurs Prisons sanz paier aucun Raencon par Couvenances faits par avant le tiers jour de May dernièrement passe, & se aucun d' euls est hors d' Angleterre & il ne seront a Calais en Hostage dedans le premier mois apres les dites trois Sepmaines de Saint Jehan cessant juste empeschement il ne sera pas quittez de sa Prisonne mais sera contrains par le Roy de France a retourner en Angleterre comme Prisonnier ou a paier la peine par lui promise, & encorue par default de son Retour.

17. Item est accorde que en Lieu des diz Hostages qui ne vendront a Calais ou qui mourront ou se departiront sanz conge hors du pouvoir du Roy d' Angleterre, le Roy de France sera tenuz d' en baillier d' autres de samble estat au plus pres qu'il pourra estre fait dedans quatre Mois prochain apres que le Bailif d' Amiens ou le Maire de Saint Omer en sera sur ce par Lettres du dit Roy d' Angleterre certifiez. Et porra le Roy de France



France a son departure de Calais en mener en sa Compaignie dix des Hostages tels come les deus Roys accorderont & souffira que du nombre de Quarante dessus dit en demeure jusques au Nombre de Trente.

18. Item accorde est que le Roy de France dedans trois Mois apres ce quil sera partis de Calais rendra a Calais en Hostage quatre Personnez de la Ville de Paris, & deux Personnes de chascun des Villes don les noms sensuivent. C' estascaveir de Saint Omer, Arras, Amiens, Beauvais, Lisse, Douay, Tournay, Reins, Chaalons, Troyes, Chartres, Tholouse, Lionz, Orleans, Compiagne, Roan, Caen, Tours, Bourges, les plus souffisans des dittes Villes pour l'accomplissement de ce present Traictie.

19. Item est accorde que le Roy de France sera amenez d' Angleterre a Calais & demourra a Calais par quatre Mois apres la venue, mais il ne paiera riens du premier Mois pour cause de sa garde & pour chascun des autres Mois ensuivant quil demourra a Calais par default de luy ou de ses Gens il paiera pour ses gardes dix Mil Royauls telz comme il courront a present en France avant son departir de Calais & aussi au future du temps qu' il y demourra.

20. Item est accorde que au plus tost que faire se pourra dedans l' An prochain apres ce que le Roy de France sera partiz de Calais, Monsire Jehan Conte de Montfort aura la Conte de Montfort, avec toutes ses Appartenances en faisant Homage, Lige, au Roy de France, & devoir & service en touz cas comme bon & loyal Vassaul Lige doit faire a son Seigneur Lige a cause la ditte Conte & aussi li seront renduz ses autres Heritages qui ne sont mie de la Duchie de Bretagne en faisant Homage ou autre Devoir, qui il appartendra, & se il veult aucune chose demander en aucuns des Heritages qui sont de la ditte Duchie hors du Pais de Bretagne bonne & brieve Railon li sera faite par la Cour de France.

21. Item sur la Questionne du demaine de la Duchie de Bretagne que est entre le dit Monsire Jehan de Montfort d' une partie, & Monsire Charles de Bloys d' autre partie, accorde est que les deux Roys appelez par devant euls ou leurs Deputes especials les parties principals de Bloys & de Montfort s'enformeront du droit des Parties, & s'enforceront de mettre les Parties a Accord sur tout ce que est en debat, entre eulx, au plus tost que il pourront, Et en cas que les diz Roys par euls ne par leurs Deputes ne les pourront accorder dedans un An prochaine apres que le Roy de France sera arrivez a Calais, les Amis d' une partie & d' autre s'enformeront diligement du droit des Parties, & par maniere que dessus est dit & s'enforceront de mettre les dittes Parties a Accord au mieux que faire se pourra au plus tost qu'il pourront, & se il ne les peuent mettre a Accord dedans demi An adonc prochaine ensuit, il rapporteront aus diz deux Roys ou a leur Deputes tout ce qu'il auront trouve sur la droite des dittes Parties & sur quoy le Debat demourra entre les dittes Parties & adonques les diz Roys par eulx ou par leurs Deputes especial



especial au plus tost qu'il pourront mettront les dittes Parties a Accord en diront leur final avis sur le droit de l'une partie & de l'autre & ce sera exequute par les deux Roys, & en cas qu'il ne pourront faire dedans demi An des lors prochain ensuit, adonc les deux Parties principals de Bloys et de Montfort feront ce qui mieux leur samblera, & les amis d'une Partie & d'autre aideront quelque partie qu'il leur plaira sanz empeschement des diz Roys, & sanz avoir en aucun temps damage, blasme, ne reproche par aucun des diz Roys par la cause dessus ditte, & se ainsi estoit que l'une des dittes Parties ne voulist comparoir souffisamment devant les diz Roys ou leurs diz Deputez, ou temps qui li sera establi, & aussi en cas que les diz Roys ou leurs Deputez auroient ordene & declare que les dittes Parties feussent a Accord ou qu'il auroient dit leurs avis pour le droit d'une Partie, & aucune des dittes Parties ne se voudroit accorder a ce, ne obeir a la ditte, Declaration adonc les diz Roys seront encontre luy de tout leur pouvoir & en ayde a l'autre qui se voudroit accorder & obeir. Mais en nul cas les deux Roys par leur propres Personnes, ne par autre ne pourront faire ne entreprendre Guerre l'une a l'autre pour la cause devant ditte, & touz jours demourra la Souverainete & Homage de la ditte Duchie au Roy de France.

22. Item que toutes les Terres, Pais, Villes, Chasseurs & autres Lieux baillies au diz Roys seront en telles Libertez & Franchises comme il sont a present & seront confermees par les diz Seigneurs Roys ou par leur Successeurs ou par chascun deulx toutes les fois qu'il en seront sur ce deuement Requis se contraire n'estoient a ce present Accord.

23. Item le dit Roy de France rendra & fera rendre & restabli de fait a Monsire Philippe de Navarre & a touz ses adherens en apres au plus tost que l'on pourra sanz malengin & au plus tard dedans un An prochain apres que le Roy de France fera partiz de Calais, toutes les Villes, Forteresces, Chasteaux, Seignories, Drois, Rents, Profis, Jurisdicions, & Lieux quelconques que le did Monsire Philippe tant pour cause de luy que pour cause de sa Femme ou ses diz adherens tindrent ou devoient tenir au Royalme de France & ne leur fera jamais le dit Roy Reproche, damage ne empeschement pour aucun chose faite avant ses heures & leur pardonra toutes Offences & mesprises du temps passe pour cause de la Guerre, & sur ce auront ses Lettres bonnes & souffisans, si que le dit Messire Philippe & ses diz adherens retournent en son Hommage & luy facent les devoirs & li soient bons & loiaux Vassaulx.

24. Item est accorde que le Roy d'Angleterre pourra donner cest fois tant seulement a qui lui plaira en heritage toutes les Terres & Heritages qui furent de sie Monsire Godefroy de Harecourt a tenir du Duc de Normandie au d'autres Seigneurs de qui elles doivent estre tenues par raison parmi les Hommages & Services anciennement accoustumez.

25. Item est accorde que nul homme ne Pais qui ait este en l'obeissance de l'une partie & vendra par c'est Accord a l'obeissance



fance de l'autre Partie ne soit empeschiez par chose faite ou temps pasie.

26. Item est accorde que les Terres des Bannis & adherens de l'une Partie et de l'autre et aussi les Eglises de l'une Roy-aume et de l'autre, et que touz ceulx qui sont desheritez ou Ostes de leurs Terres ou Heritages ou chargez d'aucune Pension, Taille, ou Redevance ou autrement grevez en quelque maniere que ce soit pour cause de cest Guerre, soient restituez entierment en mesme le droit et Possession qu'il eurent avant la Guerre com-mencee, & que toutes Manieres de forfaitures, trespas & mespri-sons faiz par eulx ou aucune d'eulx en moyen temps soient du tout pardonnees, & ces choses soient faites au plus tost que l'on pourra bonnement et au plus tard dedans un An apres que le Roy sera partiz de Calais. Excepte ce que est dit en l'Article de Calais, de Merk, et des autres Lieux nommez au dit Article. Excepte aussi la Viconte de Fronsac, et Monsire Jehan de Ga-lart les quelx ne seront point compris en cest Article, mais de-mourront les biens et Heritages en l'estat qu'il estoient par avant ce present Traictie.

27. Item est accorde que le Roy de France delivrera au Roy de An-gleterre au plus tost qu'il pourra bonnement, et donra et au plus tard dedans un An prochain apres son departir de Calais toutes les Cites, Villes, Paiset autres Lieux dessuz nommez qui par ce present Traictie doivent estre baillees au Roy d'Angleterre.

28. Item est accorde que en baillant au Roy d'Angleterre ou a au-tre par lui par especial Deputez, les villes et Forteresces et toute la Conte de Montfort, les villes et Forteresces et toute la Conte de Ponthieu, la Cite et le Chastel de Xainctes, les Chasteaux, Villes, et Forteresces et tout ce que le Roy tient en demaine au Pais de Xain-tonge, de ca et de la la Charente, le Chastel et la Cite d'Angolesme, et les Chasteaux, Forteresces, et Villes que le Roy de France tient en demaine au Pais d'Angolesmois, avec Lettres et Mandemens des de-laissemens des foy et hommages, le Roy d'Angleterre a ses propres couz et frais delivrera toutes les Forteresces prises et occupees par lui et par ses subgiez, adherens, et allies es Pais de France, de Tou-rainne, d'Anjou, du Maine, de Berri, d'Auvergne, de Bourgoigne, et de Champagne, de Picardie et de Normandie, et de toutes les au-tres partiez, Terres et Lieux, du Royaume de France. Excepte cel-les du Duchie du Bretaigny et de Pais et Terres qui par ce present Traictie doivent appartenir et demourer au Roy d'Angleterre.

29. Item est accorde que le Roy de France fera baillier et delivrer au Roy d'Angleterre ou a ses Hoirs ou Deputez toutes les Villes, Chasteaux, Forteresces, et autres Terres, Pais et Lieux avant nom-mez avec leurs Appartenances aus propres Couz et fraiz du dit Roy de France & aussi s'il y avoit aucuns Rebelles ou Desobeissans de ren-dre, baillier, ou restituir au dit Roy d'Angleterre aucunes Cites, Villes, Chasteaux, Paix, Lieux, ou Forteresces qui par ce present Traictie li doivent appartenir, le Roy de France sera tenuz de les faire delivrer au Roy d'Angleterre a ses despens, & semblablement le Roy d'Angleterre sera delivrer a ses despens les Forteresces qui par ce pre-sent



sent Traictie doyvent appartenir au Roy de France : & seront tenuz les diz Roys & leurs Gens a euls entre ayder quant a ce requis en seront aus gages de la Partie que le requerra, qui seront d'un Florin de Florence par Jour par Chevalier & demy Florin par Escuyer & pour les autres au fuer & du surplus des doubles gages: & est accorde que si les gages sont trop petiz en regard au merchie des vivres en pais, il en fera a l'ordenance de quatre Chevaliers pour c'es leus c'est a scavoir deux d'une Partie & deux d'autre.

30. Item est accorde que les Arcevesques, Evesques, & autres Prelas & Gens de Sainte Eglise a cause de leur temporalite seront subgiez de eelui des deux Roys soubz qu'il tendront leur temporalite, & s'il ont temporalite soubz touz les deux Roys il seront subgiez de chascun des deux Roys par leur temporalite qu'il tendront soubz chascun diceulx.

31. Item est accorde que bonnes, alliances, amitez, & Confederations soient faites entre les deux Roys de France & d'Angleterre & leurs Royaumes en gardent la Conscience & l'honneur de l'un Roy, & de l'autre, non obstant quelconque Confederation qu'il aient de ca & de la avec quelconques Personnes, soient d'Escoce, de Flandres, ou d'autre Pais quelconques.

32. Item accorde est que le dit Roi de France & son ainse Filz le Regent pour eulx et pour leurs Hoires Roys de France, si avant comme il pourra estre fait, se declayront et departiront du tout les Aliances qu'il ont avec les Escoz et prometteront se avant comme faire se pourra que jamais euls ne leurs Hoirs ne les Roys de France qui par le temps seront ne donneront ne feront au Roy ne au Royaume d'Escoce ne aus Subgiez dicelli present et avenir, confort, aide ne faveur contre le dit Roy d'Angleterre, ne contre ses Hoirs et Successeurs, ne contre son Royaume, ne contre ses Subgiez en quelque maniere, et qu'ils ne feront autres Aliances avec les diz Escoz en aucune temps avenir, contre les diz Roys et Royaume d'Angleterre. Et semblablement si avant comme faire se pourra le Roy d'Angleterre et son ainse Filz se declayront et departiront du tout des Aliances qu'il ont avec les Flamens et prometteront que euls ne leurs Hoirs ne les Roys d'Angleterre qui par le temps seront, ne donneront ne feront aus Flamens presens et avenir aide, confort ne faveur contre le Roy de France ses Hoirs et Successeurs ne contre son Royaume, ne contre ses Subgiez en quelque maniere, et qu'il ne feront autre Aliances avec les diz Flamens en aucune temps avenir contre les Roys et Royaume de France.

33. Item accorde est que les Collations & Provisions faites d'une partie et d'autre des benefices vacans tant comme la Guerre adure riennent et soient valables, et que les frais issues, et revenues receuz et levez de quelconque Benefice ou autres choses temporels quelconques es diz Royaume de France et de Angleterre par l'une Partie et par l'autre durant les dittes guerres soient quittes d'une Partie et d'autre.



34. Item que le Roys dessus diz soient tenuz de faire confermer toutes les choses dessus dites par nôtre saint Pere le Pape et seront valles par seremens, sentences, censures de Court de Rome et touz autres Lieux en la plus fort maniere que faire se pourra et seront empitrees dispensations et absolutions et Lettres de la ditte Cour de Rome touchant la perfection et accomplissement de ce present Traictie et seront bailles aus parties au plus tard dedans les trois Sepmaines apres ce que le Roy sera arrivez a Calais.

A

35. Item que touz les Subgiez des diz Royaumes qui voudront estudier es estudes & Universites des Royaumes de France & d'Angleterre joyront des Privileges & Libertes des dites estudes & Universites tout aussi comme il povoient faire avant des presentes guerres & comme il font a present.

B

36. Item a fin que les choses dessus dites Traictees & Parlees soient plus fermes, estables & valables seront faites & donnees les fermetes qui sensuivent.

C'est ascavoir Lettres Seelées de Seauls des diz Roy & des Ainsnez Filz diceuls les meilleurs qu'il pourront faire & ordener par les Conseils des diz Roys, & jureront les diz Roys & leurs Enfans Ainsnez & aussi les autres des Linages des dis Seigneurs & autres Grans des diz Royaumes jusques au nombre de vingt de chascune partie qu'il tendront & aideront a tenir pour tant comme a chascun deuls touche les dites choses traicties & accordees & acompliront sanz jamais venir au contraire sanz fraude et sanz mal Engin, et sanz faire nul empeschement, et se il y avoit aucun du dit Royaume de France ou du Royaume d'Angleterre qui feussent rebelles, ou ne voussissent accorder les choses dessus dites, les deux Roys seront tout leur pouvoir de corps de biens et damis de mettre les diz Rebelles a vraye obeissance selon la fourme et teneur du dit Traictie et avec ce se soubzmettront les diz Roys et leurs Hoirs et Royaumes a la cohercion de nôtre saint Pere le Pape a fin puisse contraindre par Sentences, censures d'Eglise et autres voyes deuez celui qui sera Rebelles selon ce qu'il sera de Raison. Et parmi les Seurtes et Fermetes dessus dites renunceront les diz Roys et leurs Hoirs par foy et par serement a toutes guerres et a touz proces de fait se par desobeissance, rebellion ou puissance d'aucun Subgiez du Royaume de France ou autre juste cause le Roy de France ou ses Hoirs ne povoient acomplir toutes les choses dessus dites le Roy d'Angleterre, ses Hoirs ou aucun pour eulx ne feront ou deuront faire guerre contre le dit Roy de France ses Hoirs ne son Royaume, maistous ensamble s'efforceront de mettre les diz Rebelles en vraye obeissance & d'acomplir les choses devant dites. Et aussi si aucuns du Royaume & obeissance du Roy d'Angleterre ne vouloient rendre les Chasteaux, Villes, ou Forteresces qu'il tiennent au Royaume de France & obeir au Traictie dessus ditte, ou, par juste cause ne povoient acomplir ce qu'ils doivent faire par ce present Traictie, le Roi de France ne ses Hoirs ou aucun par eulx ne feront point de Guerre au Roy d'Angleterre ne a son Royaume

C

D

E

F



aume, mais touz deux ensamble feront leur povoir de recourir les Chasteaux, Villes & Forteresces dessus dites, & que toute obeissance & accomplissement soient fais es Traicties dessus dites & seront aussi faites & donnees d'une Partie & d'autre selon la nature du fait toutes manieres de fermetes & seurtes que l'on pourra & scaura ou pourra diviser tant par le Pape le College de la Court de Rome, comme autrement pour tenir & garder perpetuellement la Paix & toutes les choses par dessus accordees.

37. Item est accorde que par ce present Traictie et Accord, tous autres accors, Traicties, ou Prolocutions le aucun en y a faiz ou pour parlez au temps passe sont nulz et de nulle valeur, et du tout mis au neant et ne senpourront jamais aidier les parties ne faire aucun reproche l'un contre l'autre pour cause diceulx traictiez ou Accors, le aucun en y avoit comme dit est.

38. Item que ce present Traictie sera approuve, jure, & confirme par les deux Roys a Calais quant il y seront en leurs personnes, et depuis que le Roy de France sera partiz de Calais et sera en son povoir, dedans un mois prochain ensuivant le dit departement le dit Roy de France en fera Lettres confirmatoires et autres necessaires ouvertes, et les envoyra et delivrera a Calais au dit Roy d'Angleterre ou a sees Deputez au dit Lieu, & aussi le dit Roy d'Angleterre en prenant les dites Lettres confirmatoires en baillera Lettres confirmatoires pareilles a celles du dit Roy de France.

39. Item est accorde que nul des Roys avant diz ne procurera ne fera procurer par lui ne par autre que aucunes noveletes ou grefs se facent par l'Eglise de Rome ou par autre de Sainte Eglise queleconques qu'il soient contre ce present Traictie sur aucun des diz Roys, leurs coadjuteurs, adherens, ou alliez quelconques qu'il soient, ne sur leur terres, ne de leurs Subgiez pour a choison de la guerre, ou pour autre chose, ne pour services que les diz coadjuteurs ou alliez aient fait au diz Roys ou a aucune diceulx. Et se nostre dit saint Pere ou autre, le vouloient fair les deux Roys le destorberont selon ce qu'il pourront bonnement sanz mal engin.

40. Item des Ostages qui seront bailliez au Roy d'Angleterre a Calais de la maniere & du temps de leur departement les deux Roys en ordeneront a Calais. Et nous Roy de France dessus dit veu & considere le dit Traictie pour bien de Paix fait en nostre nom & pour nous entant comme a nous touche a notre partie aians ferme & agreable ycelui & toutes les choses dessus escriptes, volons loons, ratifions & approvons & de nostre auctorite Royal par deliberation conseil & consentement de plusieurs Prelas & Gens de Sainte Eglise Dux & Contes tant de nostre Linage que autres, & de plusieurs tant Pers de France que autres Grans, Barons, Nobles, Bourgois et autres Sages de nostre Royaume consentons, et confermons le dit Traictie et toutes les choses dessus dites contenues en ycelui, et jurons sur le corps Jehu Christ et en parole de Roy pour nous et pour noz Hoirs iceli tenir garder



der et accomplir sanz jamais venir en contre par nous ou par au-  
 tre, et pour les choses dessus dites et chascun dicelles tenir fer-  
 mement a perpetuete, obligeons nous noz biens presens et avenir,  
 noz Hoirs et Successeurs et leurs biens, et louzmettons quant a  
 toutes ces choses nous et noz Hoirs et Successeurs a la Jurild-  
 tion et Cohertion d'Eglise de Rome, et volons et consentons que  
 nostre Saint Pere le Pape conferme toutes ces choses en donnant  
 monitions, mandemens generals, sur l'accomplissement dicelles contre  
 nous noz Hoirs et Successeurs, et contre touz noz Subgiez, A  
 soient Communes, Colleges, Universitiez, ou Persons seculiers  
 quelconques et en donnant Sentences generals descommuniement,  
 de suspension, et de entredit, pour estre encoruz pour nous et par  
 eulx par celi fait, si tost que nous en eulx ferons ou attempre-  
 rons en occupant Forteresce, Ville, ou Chastel ou autre quelcon-  
 que chose, faisant, ratifiant, ou agreant ou donnant Conseil, con-  
 fort, faveur ou aide secretment ou en appert contre la ditte Pais, B  
 des quelles Sentences il ne puissent estre absoubz jusques a ce  
 qu'ils aient fait pleniere satisfaction a tous ceulx qui par celui  
 fait auroient soustenu ou soustendroient damages. Et avec ce  
 voulons et consentons que nostre Saint Pere le Pape pour ce que  
 plus fermement soit tenue et gardee la ditte Paix a perpetuete  
 toutes pactions, confederations, aliances et couvenances comme  
 que elles puissent estre nommees qui pourroient estre prejudici-  
 ables ou obvier par quelconque voye a la ditte Paix au temps C  
 present ou avenir, suppose qu'elles feussent fermes ou valles par  
 peines ou par seremens et confermees de l'auctorite nostre saint  
 Pere le Pape ou d'autre soient cassees, irritees, & mises au neant,  
 comme contraires a bien commun & au bien de Pais commune, &  
 profitable a tout Chrestiente & deplaisans a Dieu, & touz se-  
 rements faiz en tel cas soient relachiez & soit decerne par le dit  
 nostre saint Pere que nul soit tenuz a tels seremens aliances ou  
 couvenances tenir ou garder & defendre que au temps avenir ne D  
 soient faites telles ou samblables, et si de fait aucun attemptoit  
 ou faisoit le contraire que delmaintenant les casse & irrite &  
 rende nulz & de nulle vertu. Et neantmoins nous les punirons  
 comme violateurs de Paix par peine de corps & de biens, si  
 comme les cas le requerra & que raison voudra et se nous fai-  
 sions procurions ou souffrions estre fait le contraire que Dieu ne  
 vueille nous volons estre tenuz et repete pour desloial et parjure E  
 et volons encourir tel blasme et deffame come Roy sacre doit  
 encourir en tel cas, et les choses dessus dites ferons jurer a te-  
 nir et garder par les Prelas quant il feront les seremens de feaulte  
 et Chiefs de Eglises de notre Royaume, par noz Enfans, par nostre  
 Frere le Duc d'Orleans, par noz cousins et autres Prochains  
 de nostre sangue, par les Pers de France, par les Dux, Contes,  
 Barons et Grant Terriers, par les Maires, Jures, Eschevins et Con-  
 suls et Universitiez ou Communes de notre Royaume et par noz  
 Officers en la Creation de leurs Offices, et qu'il ne feront ne F  
 moveront ou soustendront ou norriont guerre, quelconque haine  
 ou discord entre nous Roys et noz Royaumes dessus diz et les  
 Subgiez diceulx et le dit serement ferons renoverer de cinq Ans  
 en cinq Ans pour en estre plus freche memoire et jamais ne fe-  
 rons Alliances en quelque Personne, Cite, Ville, ou Universite  
 contre



A contre nôtre dit Frere, ne contre ses Enfans ou leurs Terres ou leurs Subgiez ne autrement qu'il n'ensioient expressement exceptes. Et nous avons fait samblement Jurer toutes les choses devant dittes par noz Enfans le Duc d'Anjou et de Maine, le Duc de Berri et d'Auvergne, le Duc de Tourainne, le Duc d'Orleans nôtre Frere, et noz Cousins le Duc de Bourbon, Jaque de Bourbon, Jehan d'Arteis, Pierre d'Alencon, Jehan d'Escampes, Guy de Bloys, le Conte de saint Pol, le Conte de Harecourt, le Conte de Tancarville, le Cont de saint Cerre, le Conte de Joigny, le Conte de Sairebruche, le Conte de Briene, le Sire de Coucy, le Sire de Craon, le Sire de Frioules, le Dauphin d'Auvergne, le Sire de Montmorency, Guillaume de Craon, le Sire de saint Venant. Et facons aussi Jurer samblablement et au plus tost que faire pourrons bonnement la plus grant Partie des Prelas, Pers, Dux, Contes, Barons, et autres Nobles de nôtre Royaume.

B En tesmoing de la quelle chose nous avons fait mettre nôtre Seel a ces Lettres. Donnees a Calais le xxiiii. Jour d'Octobre l'An de Grace, mil trois cens Soixante.

C In quorum omnium Testimonium Sigillum nostrum presentibus Litteris duximus apponendum. Datum apud Calesium Morinen' Dioc. Die xxv. Mensis Octobris Anno Prædicto Millesimo ccc.

*Serment que le Roy fist le xxiiii jour d'Octobre, A Calais sur les Articles ci contenus, confirmant la Traictie.*

D *This Oath was taken again in the very same words and Articles at Bologne, 26th of October without any alteration, as they here follow. With his Son Charles his Confirmation.*

E **J**ohan par le Grace de Dieu, Roy de France a tous ceuls qui ces lettres verront salut. Scavoir faisons que par la paix fait & reformee entre nous & nostre trelchier Frere le Roy d'Angleterre la quelle nous desirons estre fermement & perpetuellement gardee, nous avons fait certains Sermens sur le corps Jesu Christ sacre touchees les saints Evangiles de Dieu, c'est assavoir, que nous consermons & approuuons la paix & tout le Traictie & accord fait a Bretigny par la maniere que il est escript & depuis corrige a Calais & ycellui en touz ses poins & Articles pour tant come il nous touche Accomplirons et enterinerons et ne vendrons encontre.

F Item que nous ferons les Renunciations cessions et Transpors qui sont a faire de nostre partie, et accordees par nostre Conseil et ycelles enverrons et delivrerons au Roy d'Angleterre ou a ses Deputez au jour et lieu contenuz en les accordees des Parties.

Item

N. 94.  
See the Original in the Margin at the beginning of N. 93.



Item que nous surferons de user des souverainetez et Ressors quant aus choses que tient le Roy d'Angleterre et qui li seront baillies et le quelles li doivent demourer par vertu du dit accord et Traicte par la forme et maniere et jusques au temps exprimes et contenuz es Lettres sur ce faites par les Consauls de Parties.

Item que nous deliverons au Roy d'Angleterre les Chasteauls, Villes & Terres qui li doivent estre baillies pour faire voider les Forteresces occupees au Royaume de France par le Roy d'Angleterre, ses alliez, aydans, & adherens, par la forme & maniere & selonc la Moderation continue es lettres sur ce faites & accordees par les Consauls des Parties.

Item que nous deliverons & ferons deliver au Roy d'Angleterre ou a ces Deputez, toutes les Terres, Villes, & Pais que nous le devons bailler & deliver par le dit accord, par le temps, forme, & maniere accordees, par les Consauls des Parties, & li baillerons ou ferons bailler les lettres que bailler & deliver li devons pour la Delivrance des dictes Terres, & que nous paierons toutes les sommes d'or que nous sommes tenuz de paier au Roy d'Angleterre per le temps & maniere accordez per les Consauls des Parties.

Item que nous Renoncons a toute Guerre & proces de fait contre le Roy d'Angleterre & ses hoirs selonc la forme des lettres sur ce accordees.

Item avons Jure comme dit est les Alliances faites au Roy d'Angleterre per la maniere que accordees sont avec le Modification que est faite des Escoz et de Bretagne.

Item que nous ferons et accomplirons par la maniere accordee tout ce que nous devons et sommes tenuz de faire, des Ostages qui bailler devons au Roy d'Angleterre.

Item que nous lairons et deliverons aus Eglises tout ce qui a este occupe du leur, pour occasion de la Guerre, et a touz autres Allies ou adherens au dit Roy d'Angleterre, et leur pardonnerons toutes offenses par la maniere que accordee est.

Item que les Sermens qui sont a faire par noz Enfans ou autres de nostre partie par la dit accord, nous les ferons faire au plus tost que nous pourrons bonnement et devons par le dit Record.

Item que toutes les lettres que nous devons envoyer ou bailler au Roy d'Angleterre avant ou apres la Delivrance de nostre Personne, nous baillerons et enverrons par la forme, temps, et maniere accordee, entre les Parties: et ferons et accomplirons tout ce que faire devons par le dit accord et par la maniere contenue en ycelui, et es lettres accordees par les Consauls des Parties. En Tesmoin de la quele chose nous avons fait mettre

nostre



nostre seal a ses presentes lettres donne a Bouloigne le xxvi.  
Jour d'Octobre l'an de Grace Mil C. C. C. Soixante.

*Par le Roy*

J. Math.

*Under the great Seal hanging at it  
with Silk twisted strings.*

A *There is also the Confirmation of this Oath verbatim (it being  
recited in it) by Charles his eldest Son, this being the last  
clause.*

B **E**T nous volons de tout nostre pouvoir entermer tout ce que  
nostre dit Seigneur et Pere a promis et covenancie promet-  
tons lojaument et en bonne foy et avons jure, et jurons sur le  
Corps Jesu Christ sacre tenir, garder, et accomplir pourtant co-  
me il nous touche et pourra touchir tout et chascun les choses  
contenues es Lettres a dessus Transcripts et par le forme et mane-  
re que compris y est, senz venir ne faire venir pour le temps  
avenir en aucune manere a l'encontre. En tesmoing de ce nous  
avons fait mettre nostre seal a ces presentes lettres. Donne a Bou-  
loigne le xxvi. Jour d' Octobre l'an de Grace Mil C. C. C. Soi-  
xante.

C *Par Monsieur le Duc  
Noevenes*

*with his Seal hanging to it  
with yellow and green silk strings  
twisted.*

D **A**Ndreginus the Pope's Nuntio's Certificate Dated at St.  
Omers 8th of November 1360. That in his presence John  
King of France on the 24th of October 1360. at Calais grant-  
ed and delivered these very Letters or Articles of his Oath reci-  
ted in his Certificat or Testification to Edward King of En-  
gland.

*La Grant Lettre de toutes les Terres.*

*The great Letter of Renunciation of John King of France &c.  
at Bologn 26 October 1360. the 7th. 11th. and 8th  
Articles included, the 12th omitted.*

E **J**Ehan par la Grace de Dieu Roy de France, a touz ceuls qui  
ces Lettres verront, Salut. Scavoir faisons que nous avons  
promis & promettons bailler ou faire bailler & delivrer realment  
& defait au Roy d'Engleterre nostre Frere ou a ses Deputez en  
celle Partie aus Freres Augustins dedenz la Ville de Bruges au jour  
de la Feste de saint Andrieu prochain venont en un An Lettres  
Seelees de nostre grant seal en l' az de Soye & en cire vert en cas  
que nostre dit Frere aura faites les Renunciations que il doit fai-  
re de sa Partie & nostre treschier Neveu son Filz ainse & y'celles  
baillees a noz Genz ou Deputez au dit lieu & Terme par la  
maniere que obligiez y sont des quelles Lettres la Teneur de mot  
a mot sensuit.

Jehan

N. 95  
See for the O-  
riginal in the  
Margin at the  
beginning of  
Number 93.



**J**Ehan par la Grace de Dieu Roy de France a noz bien Amez les Arcevesques, Evesques, Abbez. & autres Prelas, les Doiens, Prevos, Chapitres, & Convenz & autres Personnes d'Eglises, tant Cathedraux & Collegiaux que Conventuaults, & autres Regulieres & Seculieres: Et a noz Amez & Feauls les Dux, Contes, Vicontes, Barons, Chivalers & autres Nobles, les Maires, Eschivins, Jurez, Consuls, Universites & Communantes & autres Personnes tant Nobles que non Nobles noz Subgiez en temporalite & Tenans de nous ou souz nous temporalite de la Cite, Chastel & Conte de Poitiers, & de toute la Terre & Pais de Poitou des Fiez de Thovarz & de la Terre de Belleville de la Cite & Chastel de Xaincts, & de toute la Terre & Pais de Xainctonge par de ca et par de la la Charente, de la Cite et Chastel d' Agen et de la Terre et Pais d'Agenois, de la Cite Chastel et de toute la Conte de Pierregort, et de la Terre et Pais de Pierreguis, de la Cite et Chastel de Limoges, et de la Terre et Pais de Limosin, et de la Cite et Chastel de Caours et de la Terre et Pais de Caourcin, de la Cite, Chastel et Pais de Tarbe, de la Terre Pais et Conte de Bigorre, de la Conte, Terre et Pais de Gaure, de la Cite et Chastel d' Engoulesme, et de la Conte Terre, et Pais d' Engoulesmois, de la Cite et Chastel de Rodeis, et de la Terre et Pais de Rovergne, Salut et Dilection.

**L**ES Guerres qui ont longuement dure entre notre treschier Seigneur et Pere jadis Roy de France lui vivant et apres son Deces entre nous de une Part et le Roy d' Engleterre notre Frere, le quel reclamait soy avoir droit au dit Royalme d' autre part, ont porte mult grans damages non pas seulement a nous & a vous, mais a tout le Peuple de notre Royaume & des Royaulmes voisins et a toute Christiante si comme vous meismes le savez bien, car par les dittes Guerres son maintesfoiz avenues Batailles mortelles, occisions de Gens, Pillemens d'Eglises, destructions de corps & peril de ammes, defloracons de pucelles & de virges, dehonestation de Femmes mariees & autres, Arsures de Villes de Manoirs & Edifices, Roberies & oppressions, Guietennis de voies et de chemins, Justice en est faille et la foy Christianne Refroidie, et Marchandise perie, et tant d' autres malx et horribles faiz senfont ensuiz qu'il ne pourroient estre dis, nombrez ne escripts; Par les quels non pas seulement les deux Royalmes mais les autres Royaulmes par Christiante ont souffert mult d'afflictions et dommages irreparable. Pour quoy nous consideranz et pensanz les mauls dessus diz, et que vraisemblable chose estoit que plus grans senpooient ensuivre en temps avenir, et que le monde souffroit tant d'engoisses et de douleurs par les dittes Guerres; Et aians pitie et compassion de nostre bon et loial Peuple qui si fermement et si loyaument s'est tenu si longuement en vraie constance et obeissance envers nous en exposant leurs corps et leurs biens a tous perilz et sanz eschiver despens et mises dont nous devons bien avoir parpetuel memoire a nous pour ce pieca soustenu paroles et traictie de Paix.

**P**remierement par le moien de honorables Peres en Dieu plusieurs Cardinaux et Messagers de par nostre Saint Pere le Pape



Pape qui a grant diligence et instance y travaillerent pour lors, Et depuis ce y ait en plusieurs traictiez parlez, et plusieurs voies touchees entre nous et le dit Roy d' Engleterre nôtre Frere.

**A** Inablement en mois de May darrein passé vindrent en France, messages de par nôtre Saint Pere le Pape noz chiers et feauls amis L'abbé de Clugny, Frere Simon de Lengres, Maistre en Durante, Maistre de Lorder des Freres prescheurs, & Hugue de Geneve, Seigneur d'Auton Chivaler, ou estoit lors le dit Roy d' Engleterre et son ost, Et tant alerent et vindrent les diz Messages devers Charles nôtre treschier ainsne Filz et devers le dit Roy d' Engleterre nôtre Frere que en plusieurs Lieux s'assemblerent traicteurs d'une part & d'autre pour parler & traictier de Paix entre nous qui lors estions en Engleterre, & le dit Roy d' Engleterre et les Royaumes de l'une & de l'autre, Et au darrein s'assemblerent les Traicteurs & Procureurs de nous & de par nôtre dit Filz aians pouvoir & auctorite souffiser de nous et de nôtre dit Filz. Et les Procureurs et Traicteurs de nôtre Neveu le Prince de Gales Filz ainsne du dit Roy d' Angleterre nôtre Frere aiant pouvoir et auctorite de son dit pere en ceste partie a Bretigny pres Chartres ou quel Lieu fu parlee, traictie et accorde final Paix et concorde des Traicteurs et Procureurs de l'une et de l'autre Partie tous les delcours, dissensions et guerres que nous et le dit Roy d' Engleterre nôtre Frere avions l'une contre l'autre, le quel traictie et paix les procureurs de nous et de nôtre dit Filz pour nous et pour lui par souffiser pouvoir donne a euls sur ce et les procureurs du dit nôtre Neveu le Prince de Gales pour le dit Roy d' Angleterre notre Frere et pour lui, jurerent aus sains Euvangiles tenir et garder et apres ce le jurerent solennement nôtre dit Filz pour nous et pour lui et le dit nôtre Neveu le Prince de Gales, aiant a ce pouvoir pour son dit Pere nôtre Frere et pour lui et nous apres ces choses ainsi faites et a nous raportees et exposees considere que le dit Roy d' Angleterre s'accordoit et consentoit au dit Traictie et vouloit ycelui et la paix tenir et accomplir de sa partie yceuls traictie et paix du Conseil et consentement de de plusieurs de nôtre Sanc et linage et Prelaz et sainte Eglise, Dux et Contes tant Pers de France que autres de et Gens d' Eglise de Barons, Chivalers et autres Nobles, Bourgois et autres Sages de nôtre Royaume pour apaiser les Guerres et les mauls et douleurs dessus diz dont le peuple estoit si malmene comme dessus est dit, plus que pour la delivrance de nôtre Personne a l'onneur et a la gloire du Roy des Rois et de la virge Marie, et pour reverence de Sainte Eglise de nôtre saint Pere le Pape et de ses Messages a nous consenti, & consentons, ratiffions, greons & approvons. Et comme par le dit Traictie & Paix le dit Roy d' Angleterre nôtre Frere pour lui, pour ses Hoirs et Successeurs ait Renuncie expressement a la Succession & eschoite de nôtre dit Royaume qu'il demandoit au nom & a la Couronne dicelui & a tout le droit qu'il reclamoit & pouvoit reclamer & demander en quelque maniere a tous jours & a toutes les choses qui par le dit traictie ne li doivent estre baillies & a toutes autres demandes & actions qu'il nous pouvoit faire & en celle meismes maniere y ait Renuncie le dit Prince de Gales son Filz ainsne notre Neveu & expressement



ment on Renocie a plusieurs Terres, Duches, Contes, Hommages, et Souverainetez de notre dit Royaume que le dit Roy de Angleterre notre Frere demandoit a avoir et es quelles il se disoit avoir droit. Et parmi ce nous li aions octroie et promis a baillier, delivrer, et delaisier pour lui et pour ses Hoirs et Successeurs a tous jours certaines Terres, Cites, Chasteauls, Villes, Contes, & Seigneuries en nôtre dit Royaume si comme plus a plain est contenu en dit Traictie & Accord entre les quelles Terres, Cites, Contes & Seigneuries sont celle qui se apres sont Escripts.

A

1. **P**remierement que le Roy d'Angleterre avec ce qu'il tient en Guienne & en Gascoigne aura pour lui & pour ses Hoirs parpetuellement a tous jours toutes les choses qui s'ensuivent a tenir par la maniere que le Roy de France et son Filz ou aucun de ses Ancestres Roys de France les rindrent, C'est alcavoir ce que en Souverainete en Souverainete ce que en demaine en demaine & par le temps & manieres au dessouz de claires, la Cite & le Chastel & la Conte de Poitiers & tout la Terre & le Pais de Poitou, ensemble les fiez de Thovars & la Terre de Belleville, la Cite & le Chastel de Xainctes & toute la Terre et le Pais de Xainctonge par de ca & par de la la Charente, la Cite & le Chastel d'Agen, & la Terre et le Pais d'Aginois, la Cite et le Chastel & toute la Conte de Pierregort, & la Terre & le Pais de Pierreguis, la Cite & le Chastel de Limoges & la Terre & le Pais de Limosin, la Cite & le Chastel de Caours et la Terre et le Pais de Caourcin; la Cite et le Chastel et le Pais de Tarbe, et la Terre, Pais. et Conte de Bigorre, la Conte, la Terre et le Pais de Gaure, la Cite et le Chastel d'Engoulesme, la Conte la Terre et le Pais d'Engoulesmois, la Cite et le Chastel de Rodeis, et la Terre et le Pais de Rovergue. Et se il y a aucuns Seigneurs comme le Conte de Foix, le Conte d'Armignac, le Conte de Lylle, et le Conte de Pierregort, le Viconte de Limoge ou autres qui tiennent aucun Terres ou Lieux dedens les metes des diz Lieux, il feront Hommage au Roy d'Angleterre et touz autres services et Devoirs deuz a cause de leurs Terres ou Lieux en la maniere qu'il ont fait ou temps passe.

B

C

D

2. **I**tem aura le Roy d'Angleterre tout ce que le Roy de Angleterre ou aucuns des Rois d'Angleterre anciennement tindrent en la Ville de Monstereul sur la mer et es appartenances.

E

7. **I**tem il est accorde que le Roy de France et son ainsne Filz le Regent par euls et pour tous leurs Hoires et Successeurs au plus tost que l'en pourra senz fraude et senz mal engin et au plus tart dedenz la Feste de Saint Michael prochain venir en un an, rendront, bailleront et delivreront au dit Roy d'Angleterre & touz ses Hoirs & Successeurs & transporteront en euls toutes les honneurs, obediencies, hommages, leageances, Vassauls, fiez, Services, Reconnoissances, droitures, mere & mixte Impere, et toutes manieres de Jurisdicions hautes et basses, Reforts et Sauves-gardes, advoaisons et patronages d'Egliès et toutes manieres de Seigneuries et souverainetez et tout le droit qu'il avoient & povoient avoir, appartenoient & peuvent appartenir pour

F



A pour quelque cause, tiltre ou couleur de droit a eux aus Rois ne a la Couronne de France, pour cause des Cites, Contes, Chasteauls, Villes, Terres, Pais, Ylles et Lieux avant nommez et de toutes leurs appartenances et appendences quelque part qu'il soient et chascun dicelles senz y riens retenir a eulx a leurs Hoirs ne Successeurs aus Rois ne a la Couronne de France, & aussi manderont les diz Roy & son ainsne Filz par leurs Lettres patentes a touz Archevesques, Evesques, & autres Prelaz de Saint Eglise & aussi aus Contes, Vicontes, Barons, Nobles, Citoyens & autres quelconques des Citez, Contez, Terres, Pais, Ylles, & Lieux avant nommez qu'il obeissent au Roy d'Engleterre & a ses Hoirs, & a leur certain commandement en la maniere qu'il ont obei aus Rois & a la Couronne de France, & par meismes les Lettres leur quitteront & absoldront aus mieuls qu'il se pourra faire, de touz hommages, foiz, seremens, obligations, subjections, & promesses fais par aucun deuls au Roy et a la Couronne de France par quelconque maniere.

8. **I**tem accorde est que le Roy d'Engleterre aura les Cites, Contes, Chasteauls, Terres, Pais, Ylles, et Lieux avant nommez avec toutes les Appartenances et Appendences quelque part qu'il soient a tenir a lui et a touz ses Hoirs et Successeurs heritablement et parpetuellement en demaine ce que le Roy de France y avoit en demaine et aussi en fie, service, souverainete ou Resort ce que les Rois de France y avoient par tel maniere, sauf tant comme dit est par dessus en l'Article de Calais et de Merk, Et se des Cites, Contes, Chasteaux, Terres, Pais, Ylles et Lieux avant nommez, souverainetez, drois, mere et mixte Impere, Jurisdicions et proffis quelconques que tenoit aucuns Rois d'Engleterre ylleques et en leurs appartenances et appendences quelconques aucuns alienations, donations, Obligations ou charges ont este faites par aucuns des Rois de France qui ont este pour le temps puis Soixante dix Ans en ca par quelque fourme que ce soit, toutes telles donations, alienations, obligations, & charges sont dehors et seront du tout rapellees, cassees & anullees & toutes choses ainsi donnees, alienees ou chargees seront realment & de fait rendues & baillees au dit Roy d'Engleterre ou a ses Deputez especiaulz a mesme l'entierete comme il furent aus Rois d'Engleterre depuis sexante dix Ans en ca au plus tost que l'en pourra senz mal engin, & au plus tart dedens la Saint Michiel prochain venant en un An, a tenir au dit Roy d'Engleterre & a touz les Hoirs et Successeurs parpetuellement & heritablement par maniere que dessus est dit, Excepte ce qui est dit par dessous en l'Article de Pontieu qui demourra en sa force: Et sauf & excepte toutes les choses donnees et alienees aus Eglises qui leur demourront paisiblement en touz les Pais & Lieux ci dessus & dessous nommez si que les personnes des dittes Eglises prient diligemment pour les diz Rois comme pour leurs fondeurs sur quoy leur Consciences en seront chargees.

9. **I**tem est accorde que le Roy d'Engleterre toutes les Cites, Villes, Chasteauls & Pais dessus nommez qui anciennement n'ont este des Rois d'Engleterre aura et tendra en l'estat & aussi comme le Roy de France ou ses Filz tiennent a present.



10. **I**tem est accorde que se dedans les metes des diz Pais qui furent anciennement des Rois d'Engleterre avoit aucuns choses qui autrefois n'eussent este des Rois de Engleterre dont le Roy de France estoit en possession le Jour de la bataille de Poitiers qui fu le xix. jour de Septembre l'An Mil C. C. C. cinquante six, Elles seront et demourront au Roy d'Engleterre & a les Hoirs en la maniere que dessus est dit.

11. **I**tem accorde est que le Roy de France et son ainse Filz le Regent pour euls & pour leurs Hoirs et pour touz les Rois de France & pour leurs Successeurs a touz Jours au plus tost que se pourra faire senz mal engin et au plus tart dedenz la Saint Michiel prochain venant en un an, rendront et bailleront au dit Roy d'Engleterre et a touz ses Hoirs et Successeurs et transporteront en euls toutes les honneurs, legalitez, obediences, hommages, ligeances, vassauls, fiez, Services, Reconnoissances, seremens, droitures, mere et mixte Impere, toutes manieres de Jurisdicions hautes et basses, Ressors, Sauvegardes, Seigneuries, et Souverainetez, qui appartenoient ou pourroient en aucune maniere appartenir au Rois et a la Couronne de France ou a aucune personne a cause du Roy et de la Couronne de France en quelque temps, es Citez, Contez, Chasteauls, Terres, Pais, Ylles, et Lieux avant nommez ou en aucuns deuls et a leurs appartenances et appendances quelconques, ou es Personnes, Vassauls, ou Subgiez quelconques diceuls soient Princes, Dux, Contes, Vicontes, Arcevesques, Evêques et autres Prelaz d'Eglises, Barons, Nobles et autres quelconques senz riens a euls leur Hoirs et Successeurs la Couronne de France ou autre que ce soit retenir ne reserver en yceuls. Pourquoy il, ne leurs Hoirs et Successeurs ou autres Rois de France ou autre que ce soit a cause du Roy ou de la Couronne de France aucune chose ne pourront chalengier ou demander au temps avenir sur le Roy d'Engleterre ses Hoirs et Successeurs ou sur aucuns des Vassauls et Subgiez avant diz pour cause des Pais et Lieux avant nommez aussi que tous les avant nommes personnes et leurs Hoirs et Successeurs parpetuellement seront hommes liges, & Subgiez du Roy d'Engleterre et a touz ses Hoirs et Successeurs et que le dit Roy d'Engleterre, ses Hoirs et Successeurs toutes les Personnes, Cites, Contes, Terres, Pais, Ylles, Chasteauls et Lieux avant nommez et toutes les Appartenances et Appendances tendront et auront et a euls demourront plainement, parpetuellement, et franchement en leurs Seigneurie, Souverainete, et obeissance, ligeance et subjection comme les Rois de France les avoient et tenoient en aucun temps passe. Et que le dit Roy d'Engleterre ses Hoirs et Successeurs auront et tendront parpetuellement touz les pais avant nommez avecques leurs Appartenances et Appendances et les autres choses avant nommees en toute franchise et liberte parpetuelle comme Seigneur, Souverain et lige, et comme voisins au Roy et au Royaume de France sanz y reconnoistre Souverainete ou faire aucune obedience, hommage, Ressort, subjection, et senz faire en aucun temps avenir aucun service ou Reconnoissance aus Rois ne a la Couronne de France, des Cites, Contes, Chasteauls, Terres, Pais, Ylles, Lieux et Personnes avant nommees ou par aucun dicelles.

Nous



**N**ous voulans le Traictie accord et Paix dessus diz tenir, garder et acomplir sur tous les Articles ci dessus escripts et chascun diceulx touz les Pais, Cites, Terres, Contes et choses dessus nommees es diz Articles et toutes les Appartenances et Appendences quelque part que il soient baillons, rendons, delivrons et delaissions pour nous noz Hoirs et Successeurs Rois de France au dit Roy d'Engleterre par ces presentes Lettres pour

**A** lui et pour ses Hoirs et Successeurs et les transportons en lui avecques toutes les honneurs, Regalitez, obediences, hommages, ligeances, Vassaux, fiez, Services, Reconnoissances, seremens, droitures, mere et mixte Impere, & toutes manieres de Jurisdiccions, hautes, moyennes et basses, Ressors, Sauvegardes, Seigneuries & Souverainetez qui appartenoint, appartiennent, ou pourroient en aucune maniere appartenir aus Rois et a la Couronne de France, ou a aucune autre personne a cause de nous & de la

**B** Couronne de France en quelque temps es Cites, Contez, Chasteauls, Terres, Pais, Ylles, et Lieux avant nommez, ou en aucun deuls & a leurs Appartenances & Appendences quelconques, ou es Personnes, Vassauls, ou Subgiez quelconque diceulx soient Princes, Dux, Contes, Arcevesques, Evsques, & autres Prelaz de Eglises, Barons, Nobles, et autres quelconques senz riens a Nous noz Hoirs & Successeurs la Couronne de France ou autre que ce soit Retenir ne Resever en yceuls.

**C** **P**ourquoy nous, ne noz Hoirs et Successeurs ou autres Rois de France ou autre que ce soit a cause de nous ou de la Couronne de France aucune chose ne pourrons chalengier ou demander ou temps avenir sur le dit Roy d'Engleterre ses Hoirs et Successeurs ou sur aucun des Vassauls et Subgiez avant diz pour comme des Pais & Lieux avant nommez, ainsi que tous les avant nommees Personnes et leurs Hoirs et Successeurs parpetuellement seront Hommes Liges et Soubgiez du Roy d'Angleterre & a tous ses Hoirs & Successeurs: Et que le dit Roy d'Engleterre, ses Hoirs & Successeurs toutes les Personnes, Cites, Terres, Contes, Pais, Ylles, Chasteauls & Lieux avant nommez & toutes les Appartenances et Appendences auront et tendront a euls demourront plainement, parpetuellement & franchement en leurs Seigneuries Souverainete, et obeissance, ligeance, et subjection comme les Roys de France les avoient et tenoient en aucun temps

**D** passe: Et que le dit Roy d'Engleterre ses Hoirs et Successeurs auront et tendront parpetuellement touz les Pais avant nommez avec leurs Appartenances et Appendences & les autres choses avant nommees, en toute franchise & liberte parpetuelle comme Seigneur, Souverain, & Lige & comme voisins au Roy et au Royaume de France, senz y reconnoistre Souverainete ou faire aucun obeissance, hommage, Ressort, Subjection, et senz faire en aucun temps avenir aucune service ou Reconnoissance aus Roys

**E** ne a la Couronne de France des Cites, Contes, Chasteauls, Terres, Pais, Ylles, & Lieux et Personnes avant nommees ou pour aucun dicelles. Et se des Cites, Contes, Chasteaux, Terres, Pais, Ylles, & Lieux avant nommez, Souverainetez, drois, mere et mixte Impere, Jurisdiccions et prouffis quelconques que tenoit aucuns Rois d'Engleterre illecques et en leurs appartenances et appendences quelconque aucuns alienations, donations, obligations,

**F**



tions, ou charges ont este faites par aucun des Roys de France qui ont este pour le temps puis Sexante dix Ans en ca par quelconque fourme ou cause que ce soit.

**T**outes telles donations, alienations, obligations, et charges Nous des ores rappelons, cassons & annullons du tout et toutes choses ainsi donnees, alienees, ou chargees, rendrons et baillerons realment et de fait au dit Roy d'Engleterre ou a ses Deputez especiaulx a mesme l'entierete qu'il furent es Roys d'Engleterre depuis Sexante dix Ans en ca au plus tost que l'en pourra senz mal engin et au plus tart dedens la Feste de Toussains prochain venir en un an, a tenir au dit Roy d'Engleterre et a touz ses Hoirs et Successeurs parpetuelment et heritablement, par maniere que dessus est dit. Et toutes les Cites, Contes, Chasteauls et Pais dessus nommees qui anciennement n'ont este des Roys d'Engleterre aura et tendra en l'estat et aussi comme nous ou noz Filz les tiennent a present. Et se dedens les metes des diz Pais qui furent anciennement des Roys d'Engleterre avoit aucunes choses qui autres foiz n'eussent este des Rois d'Engleterre dont nos fussions en possession le Jour de la bataille de Poitiers qui fu le xix Jour de Septembre l'An Mil C. C. C. cinquante six, Nous les baillons, delivrons et delaissons a tous Jours au dit Roy d'Engleterre pour lui et pour les Hoirs en la maniere que dessus est dit, Exceptees toutes les choses donnees & alienees es Eglises qui leur demourront paisiblement en tous le Pais & Lieux dessus nommez. Si que Personnes des dictes Eglises prient diligemment pour nous & nostre dit Frere comme pour leurs fondeurs, Et seront Subgiez les Arcevesques, Evesques & autres Prelaz de sainte Eglise a celui des deux Roys souz qu'il tendront leur temporalite. Et se il ont temporalite souz touz les deux Roys, il seront subgiez de chascun des deux Roys pour leur temporalite qu'il tient souz chascun des deux Roys. Et toutes les Cites, Villes, Chasteaux, Lieux, & Pais dessus diz, & les Eglises, Prelaz, Chapitres, & toutes les Communes & Universites et singulieres personnes dicelles auront toutes leurs libertes, franchises et privileges qu'il avoient au temps du dit Traicte et Paix et enjoiront paisiblement et leur seront confirmees par le dit Roy d'Engleterre se il en est requis le contraires ne sont aus choses dessus dites. Et mandons et estroitement commandons et avec ce se mestier est commettons par ces presentes Lettres a touz noz Seneschaulx et Juges, Baillis, et Prevos, Capitaines, Castellains, gardes des Pais, Villes, et Lieux dessus diz & a chascun d'eulx ou a leurs Lieuxtenants que chascun en la Seigneurie ou Jugerie, Capitaine, Chastellerie et Garde ou il sont establis et es Ressors sur la foy et obeissance qu'il nous doivent, et sur paine d'encourir nostre indignation et d'estre privs de noz Offices contraignent reidement touz les contredisanz, desobeissans, et Rebelles par toutes les voies que en estre sera et que a faire sera a obeir paisiblement, fermement et entierement aus choses dessus escripts et a chascun dicelles selon la Teneur de ces presentes et contraignent les desobeissanz et Rebelles en telle maniere qu'il ny comveigne autrement pourteoir sur toutes les quelles choses et chascun dicelles et es deppendences et appendences. Nous voulons et commandons que touz nos feauls et Subgiez, Capitaines, Chastellains, et Gardes obeissent et entendent a noz  
diz

A

B

C

D

E

F



diz Seneschaulx, Baillis, Juges & Prevoz & a leur Deputez & a chascun deuls & Jurons que jamais ne ferons ne souffrons estre fait par nous ne par autre en prive ne en appert aucune chose contraire es choses devant dites & aucunes dicelles.

A En Tesmoing de la quelle chose nous avons fait mettre nôtre Seel a ces presentes Lettres. Donn a Bouloigne le xxvi Jour d'Octobre l'An de Grace Mil. CCC. Sexante.

B Et pour ce que les dites choses & chascun dicelles soient de point en point & par la maniere & fourme dessus dites tenues & accomplies nous obligeons nous & noz Hoirs & touz les biens de nous & de noz Hoirs de nôtre dit Frere le Roy d'Engleterre & a ses Hoirs, & Jurons aus sainz Euvangiles de par nous corporelement touchees que nous par ferons attendrons & accomplirons en cas dessus dit toutes les devant dites choses par nous promises & accordees comme devant est dit, et voulons ou cas que notre dit Frere et notre dit Neveu auroient faites les dites Renunciations & envoiees & baillies, comme dit est, & les dites Lettres ne fussent baillies a nôtre dit Frere, au lieu & terme & par la fourme et maniere que dessus est dit, des lors au cas dessus est dit nos presentes Lettres et quanque est compris dedenz aient tant de vigueur, effect et fermete comme auroient nos autres Lettres par nous promises a baillier, comme C dessus est dit. Sauf toutevoies et Reserve pour nous noz Hoirs et Successeurs que les dites Lettres dessus incorporees n'aient aucun effect et ne nous puissent porter aucune prejudice ou dommage jusques a ce que nôtre dit Frere et nôtre dit Neveu aurent faites envoiees et baillies les dites Renunciations par la maniere dessus dite et qu'il ne sen puissent aidier contre nous noz Hoirs et Successeurs en aucune maniere se non en cas dessus dit.

D En Tesmoign de la quele chose nous avons fait mettre nôtre Seel a ces presentes Lettres. Donne a Bouloigne le xxvi. Jour d'Octobre l'An de Grace Mil. CCC. Soixante.

*Par le Roy.*

*J. Math.*

E

*Les Amistees & Alliances d'entre les Roys d'Angleterre & de France.*

F

Charles Ainsne Filz du Roy de France, Duc de Normandie & Daphin de Vienne. Scavoir faisons a touz presens & avenir que nous avons veu & diligement avise les Lettres de nostre treschier Seigneur & Pere contenens la Fourme qui sensuit.

Jehan par le Grace de Dieu Roy de France a tous ceux qui ces presentes Lettres verront, Salut. Scavoir faillons que Nous pensanz & consideranz que les Roys & les Princes Chrestiens qui veulent bien gouverner le peuple qui leur est sujet, doivent fuyr & eschiver guerres, dissensions & discordes donc Dieu est offensu

&

N. 96.  
See here for  
the Original  
in the Margin  
at the begin-  
ning of N. 93.



& querre & avier pour eulx & pour leurs Subgez Paix, unite & concorde par la quelle l'amour du Soverain Roy des Roys doit estre acquise, les Subgez sont gouvernez en tranquillite & aux perilz des guerres est obvie: Et Recordans les grans maulx, dommages, & afflictions que nostre Royaume & noz Subgez ont sustenu par long temps pour cause & occasion des guerres & discordes qui ont dure longuement entre nous & nostre trespas Frere le Roy d'Angleterre & les Royaumes, Subgez, Amis, aydenz & alliez d'une partie & d'autre, sur les quelles entre nous & nostre dit Frere finalement est fait bon Accort & bonne Paix reformee. Et desiranz ycelle tenir & garder & perseverer en vraye amour perpetuellement par bonnes & fermes Aliances entre nous & nostre dit Frere noz Hoirs & les Royumes & subgez de l'une, & de l'autre par les quelles pourroit la ditte Paix accordée & bonne amour estre plus fermement & plus entierement en concorde, garde, Justice, mieux estre exercee les droiz & Seignories de l'une & de l'autre mieulx deffenduz les Rebelles, Malfaictours, et desobeissans a l'une et a l'autre estre plus aiselment contrains a obeir et cesser des Rebellions et excès, toute Christiente estre maintenue en plus paisible estat et la Terre Sainte en pourroit mieux estre secourue et aidee, et toutes ces causes et autres attendens et considerans que nostre Saint Pere le Pape ait dispense par grant deliberation avec nous et nostre dit Frere.

C'est ascavoir avec nous et touz noz Subgez tant Genz d'Eglise comme Seucleurs sur toutes les confederations, aliances, Conventions, obligations, Lettres et Seremenz qui estoient entre nous, nostre Royaume et nos subgiez d'une Partie, et nostre trespas Cousin le Roy d'Ecosse son Royaume et ses Subgez d'autre partie comme le bien et l'effet de la ditte Paiz entre nous et nostre dit Frere d'Angleterre les Royaumes et Subgez de l'une et de l'autre, peust estre empeschee par icelles. Et pour ce les ait le dit nostre saint Pere cassees, ostees, anullees et irritees du tout si comme en ses Lettres & es proces sur ce faiz est plus plenelement contenu pour consideration des causes & choses dessus dites: Et aussi voulens accomplir en tant comme toucher nous peut le dit Accort fait sur les dites Aliances si comme ottoie l'avons comme dit est. Eue sur ce tresgrant & meure deliberation avons fait & par ces presentes faisons pour nous, noz Enfans, noz Hoirs, & noz Successeurs, nostre Royaume & noz Terres quelconques & noz Subgiez d'une parte avec nostre dit Frere ses Enfans, ses Hoirs & Successeurs, son Royaume, ses Terres & ses Subgez d'autre partie parperueles Aliances, confederations, amitez, pactions & convenances qui apres s'ensuivent.

C'est ascavoir que nous, noz Enfans, noz Hoirs & Successeurs nostre Royaume, noz Terres & noz Subgez quelconques presents & avenir nez & a naistre serons a tous Jours mais a nostre dit Frere, ses Enfans, ses Hoirs & Successeurs, son Royaume, ses Terres, & Subgez quelconques bons, vrayz & loyaux Amis & alliez & leur garderons de tout nostre pouvoir leurs honours & leurs droiz ou nous les saurons leur dishonneur leur vitupere & leur dommage empescherons loyaument de tout nostre pouvoir a aucuns



A aucuns de leurs Ennemiz presens & avenir nez ou a naistre, quelque il soient, aucun Conseil, confort ou aide encontre eulx ou aucun d'eulx pour quelconques cause ou occasion que ce soit ou puiſt estre par nous ou en appert nous ne donnerons ne ferons, ne yceulx Enemis, au damage ou prejudice de nôtre dit Frere, ses Hoirs ou son Royaume scieument receperons, recevrons, ne receptor ne recevoir ferons ou souffrerons en aucune maniere en notre Royaume ou autres noz Terres ou Seignories, ne par iceux Royaume & Terres, ou aucund'eulx en prejudice ou damage de notre dit Frere, ses Hoirs, Successeurs, son Royaume, ses Subgez & ses Terres leurs diz Ennemiz passer ne demorer scieument souffrerons ne autrement y ceux Ennemis par nous ou par autres en appert ou en repost sous quelconque tiltre ou couleur que ce soit, contre nôtre dit Frere, ses Hoirs & Subgez & son Royaume & autres Terres ne porterons ne soufftendrons  
 B noz Amis & noz Alliez a leur amour & alliance, s'il nous en requierent de nôtre pouvoir, & enduirons, et ne souffrerons aucuns de noz Subgez ne autres quelconques aler, entrer en Royaume ou autres Terres de nôtre dit Frere ses Enfantz, Hoirs, ou Successeurs pour y faire guerre, damage ne offense aucune a gaiges ou service d'autrui ou autrement par quelque maniere & cause que ce soit, aincois les empescherons et destourberons de tout notre pouvoir. Et se aucuns de noz Subgez faisoient le contraire  
 C ou aucune guerre, villenie ou damage a nôtre dit Frere, a son Royaume, par terre ou par mer ne a ses Enfantz, Hoirs, Successeurs ou Subgez, nous les en punirons et ferons punir si grandement qu'il sera exemple a touz autres. Et de tout nôtre pouvoir ferons adrecier & reparer touz les damages attemptaz ou emprises faictes contre ces presentes Alliances se nous en sommes requis, & toutefois que nôtre dit Frere, ses Hoirs ou Successeurs auront mestier de nôtre ayde & il nous en requerront ou feront requierir, nous encontre toute personne qui puiſse vivre &  
 D mourir leur aiderons & dourons tout le bon Conseil, conforte & ayde a leurs propres fraiz & despens que nous ferions & pourrions faire pour nôtre propre fait & besoigne & sanz fraude & mal engin. Non contrestant quelconques autres Alliances, Amities, ou Confederations que nous ou noz Predecesseurs aions eues en temps passe a quelconques autres personnes aux quelles toutes & chascun dicelles nous renoncerons de tout pour nous noz Successeurs, Royaumes, Terres & Subgiez a tous jours, mais par ces  
 E presentes reserve toute fois & excepte le Pape & le saint Siege de Rome, & l'Empereur de Rome, qui ores est les quiex nous ne voulons estre compris en ces presentes Alliances en aucune maniere. Et pour ce que les Alliances, Confederations, convenances, pactions & autres choses dessus dittes et chascun dicelles soient plus fermement tenues, gardees, & accomplies, nous avons  
 F jure sur le Saint Corps Jehu Christ & encores jurons & promettons par la foy de nôtre Corps, & en parole de Roy les choses dessus dittes & chascune dicelles tenir fermement & accomplir a touz jours sanz enfreindre en tout ou en partie en aucune maniere par quelconque cause ou occasion que ce soit. Et se nous faisons, procurions, ou souffrirons scieument le contraire estre fait, ce que Dieu ne vuille, nous voulons estre tenu & repute en touz Lieux & en toutes places & en touz Pais pour  
 P faulx



faux, mauvais, & desloial parjur, & encourir tel blasme & dif-  
fame comme Roy sacre doit encourir en tel cas. Et par ces pre-  
sentes Alliances nous n'entendons ne voulons que aucune preju-  
dice se face a nous a noz Hoirs & Subgez. Pourquoi nous et  
eux pourrions et pourront receptor, porter, et tenir touz les  
Banniz et Fuitifs hors du Royaume d'Angleterre presens et ave-  
nir nez et a naistre par quelconques cause ou occasion que ce  
soit, par maniere que a este fait et acoûtume de faire en temps  
passe. Et souz mettons quant a toutes ces choses nous et noz  
Hoirs et Successeurs a la Jurisdiction et cohercion de l'Eglise de  
Rome. Et volons et consentons que nostre saint Pere le Pape  
conferme toutes ces choses en donnant monitions et mandemens  
generaux sur l'acomplissement dicelles contre nous noz Hoirs et  
Successeurs et contre touz noz Subgez soient Communes, Colle-  
ges, Universitez ou Personnes singulieres quelconques. Et en  
donnant Sentences generaux d'escommeniement de Suspension &  
de intredit pour estre encoruz par nous et par eulx pour celui  
fait si tost que nous ou eulx ferons ou attemperons en occu-  
pant Forteresce, Ville, ou Chastel ou autre quelconque chose fai-  
sant, ratifiant ou agreant ou donnant Conseil, confort, faveur, ou  
aide celeement ou en appert contre la ditte Paix et ces presentes  
Alliances. Et avons fait semblablement Jurer toutes les devant  
dittes choses par noz Treschers Enfans le Duc de Anjou et du  
Manie, le Duc de Berry et d'Auvergne, le Duc de Thouranie  
le Duc d'Orliens, nostre Frere et noz Cousins le Duc de Bour-  
bon, Monsieur Jaque de Bourbon, Jehan d'Artois, Monsieur Pere  
d'Alencon, Monsieur Jehan d'Estampes, Guy de Bloys, le Conte  
de saint Pol, le Conte de Harecourt, le Conte d'Auxerre, le  
Conte de Tancarville, le Conte de Sancerre, le Conte de Joigny,  
le Conte de Salebruche le Conte de Brienne, le Sire de Coucy,  
le Sire de Craon, le Sire de Fiennes, le Dauphin d'Auvergne, le  
Sire de Montmorency, Guillaume de Craon, le Sire de saint Ve-  
nant. Et ferons aussi Jurer semblablement et au plus tost que  
faire pourrons bonnement la plus grant partie des Prelaz, Pers,  
Dux, Contes, Barons, et autres Nobles de notre Royaume. En  
Tefmoing des quelles choses nous avons fait mettre nostre Seel  
a ces presentes Lettres. Donne a Bouloigne le xxvi. Jour d'Oc-  
tobre l'An de Grace Mil. CCC. Sexante.

Et nous Charles dessus dit voulons de tout nostre pouvoir en-  
teriner et acomplir Tout ce que nostre dit Seigneur et Pere a  
promis et convenancie, Promettons loyalment et en bon foy,  
et avons Jure, et Jurons sur le corps Jehu Christ sacre, tenir,  
garder, et acomplir pour tant comme il nous touche et pourra  
toucher, Toutes et chascun les choses contenues es Lettres ci  
dessus transcripts et par la fourme et maniere que compris y est  
fanz venir ne faire venir en aucune maniere alencontre. En Tes-  
moing de ce Nous avons fait mettre nostre Seel a ces presentes  
Lettres. Donne a Bouloigne le xxvi Jour d'Ocobre l'An de Grace  
Mil. CCC. Sexante.

*Par Monsieur le Duc*

*N. de Venes.*

*Papa*



**P**apæ Rex &c. Dum in recto considerationis examine, Nos ex debito suscepti regni nostri gubernaculi ad *defensionem juris et prerogativarum regaliū conspicimus obligatos*, dignum immo verius debitum reputamus, dicta jura deprimere conantibus, viis licitis obviare. Sane licet *donatio dignitatum, Prebendarum* et aliorum *beneficiorum ecclesiasticorum* quorumcumque ubicumque vacaverint, que sede plena ad collationem, presentationem, seu dispositionem aliam *Archiepiscoporum, Episcoporum*, et aliorum *Prelatorum Ecclesiarum Cathedralium et Monasteriorum* regni nostri, quorum temporalia de nobis tenentur in capite pertinerent ipsis Ecclesiis vel Monasteriis vacantibus et ipsarum temporalibus in manu nostrâ existentibus, ad nos et non ad alium de nobili prerogativa et jure Corone nostre notorie pertineat et etiam pertinuit ab antiquo, fueruntque *progenitores nostri Reges Anglie a tempore* *cujus contrarii memoria non existit*, et nos *totis nostris temporibus in plena & pacifica possessione vel quasi juris & prerogative predictorum*, Scientibus & tollerantibus sanctis Patribus summis Pontificibus qui vos in eminentia celsitudinis apostolice precesserunt. Vacantibus tamen dudum una vice tam Ecclesia Cathedrali Eborum per mortem bone memorie Domini J. *Romayn* dudum Eborum *Archiepiscopi*, quam *Thesauraria* dicte Eborum Ecclesie per privationem Domini *Johannis de Columpna* felicis recordationis, Dominus *Bonifacius* Papa octavus predecessor vester, ipsam *Thesaurariam* de facto tantum, cum de jure non potuit, contulit Domino *Francisco Gaytam*, sed *Avus* noster Dominus *Edwardus* tunc Angliæ Rex illustris ipsam *Thesaurariam* Clerico suo Domino *Waltero de Bedewynd* donavit, prout ad ipsum *ratione vacationis Archiepiscopatus* predicti pertinuit illa vice, pro qua donatione regia, servato processu legitimo qui requiritur in hac parte iudicium redditum & diffinitiva fuit lata sententia in *Curia regia*, in qua duntaxat jura & prerogative Regis hujusmodi debent, & non alibi pertractari. Virtute cujus Iudicii idem *Walterus* rite secundum jura regni nostri in dictam *Thesaurariam* inductus & prefatus *Franciscus* amotus extitit ab eadem. Nuper vero quodam colore quesito de jure dicti *Francisci* Capellani vestri in dicta *Thesauraria*, licet nullum jus in ea vel ad eam habuit, ut prefertur, Vestra *Sanctitas* in hoc, ut convincimur, circumventa, dictam *Thesaurariam* tanquam per dimissionem dicti Capellani vestri de jure vacantem reverendo in *Christo* patri Domino *Petro* Dei gratia titulo sancti *Stephani* in Celio Monte Presbitero Cardinali de facto contulit & sibi providit de eadem, qui dilectum Clericum nostrum *Magistrum Willielmum de la Mare* possessioni dicte *Thesaurarie* ex causa permutationis cum Domino *Waltero* supradicto ut dicitur rite facte incumbentem, & in jus dicti *Walteri* succedentem, occasione dicte *provisionis* vestre fatigat multipliciter & molestat in enervationem iudicii predicti, *depressionem juris Corone nostre & regni nostri dampnum inestimabile*, si novitatibus & usurpationibus hujusmodi minime resistatur, quibus nuper in *Parlamento* nostro apud *Westm.* ostensis apercius & detectis, ac super hiis deliberatione prehabita diligenti, *proceribus & peritis* ac toti regni nostri videbatur *consilio* tunc ibidem, quod predictum incumbentem pro conservatione *juris* nostri defendere debeamus. Quocirca vestre beatitudini votivis precibus supplicamus,

N. 97.  
Rot. Romæ 4.  
Ed. 3. n. 2.  
John 21d then  
Pope.



mus, quatenus premissis clementer attentis & æquo libratis examine, *predictam provisionem* de dicta *Theauraria* ut predicatur in juris nostri prejudicium per vos factam, dignemini cautius revocare, dicto Domino *Cardinali* super hoc silentium imponentes, ut cessantibus lituum amfractibus & aliis periculis majoribus que ex novitatibus et usurpationibus hujusmodi possint verisimiliter provenire, cum nimium nos turbaret, si quod absit, corona regia nostris temporibus suorum jurium pateretur eclipsum, in sinu solite dilectionis apostolice domus nostra regia fiducialiter conquiescat, que semper vota sedis apostolice cum fervente devotionis & obedientie promptitudine pro ceteris est hætenus prosecuta, quod quesimus dignetur advertere summe vestre presidentie sanctitudo quam ad salubre gregis sui regimine conservet altissimus per tempora diuturna. Dat. apud Westm. quartodecimo die Decembr.

N. 98.  
Rot. Romæ 10.  
Ed. 3. M. 3.

**P**Ape Rex &c. beatorum. Inter sollicitudines varias que nos distrarunt hiis diebus, id præ ceteris insidet cordi nostro, ut jura corone nostre que progenitorum nostrorum digne recolenda nobilitas magnifice defensavit, sub nostro regimine salva vigeant et illesa; sane dicti progenitores nostri qui dudum *Anglicanam* fundarunt et dotarunt *Ecclesiam*, singulas *Cathedrales Ecclesias* nostri regni vacantes, olim libere contulerunt regio jure suo. Et postmodum ad supplicationem *Cleri*, et reverentiam ac rogatum domini summi Pontificis qui tunc universali presidebat *Ecclesie*, concessit *Dominus Rex Anglie*, qui tunc erat Capitalis *Ecclesiarum Cathedralium* dicti regni, cum *Ecclesie* dicte vacarent potestatem futurum *Episcopum* eligendi, salva sibi et successoribus suis hac prerogativa quod cedente vel decedente loci Pontifice, *Capitulum* ipsius *Ecclesie* significare debet Regi qui foret, pro tempore, vacationem *Ecclesie*, et ab eo petere et habere licentiam futurum *Episcopum* eligendi, et cum sic per licentiam Regis elegerit, teneretur presentare Regi personam electam, et petere ac habere assensum Regium electioni hujusmodi et electo, priusquam electionis sue negotium prosequeretur electus. Et cum esset postmodum confirmatus peteret et reciperet a Rege temporalia ad *Episcopatum* pertinentia et sibi fidelitatem faceret pro eisdem. Et si quid contra dictam formam forsitan actum esset, foret irritum et inane, et licet dicta forma seu prerogativa sit per sedem Apostolicam et especialiter per felicitis recordationis Innocentium Papam tertium predecessorem vestrum ex certa scientia confirmata, et a dicte concessionis tempore inviolabiliter observata, Vacante tamen nuper *Norwicen. Ecclesia* regni nostri per mortem bone memorie W. ipsius *Episcopi*, Prior et *Capitulum* ejusdem ecclesie petita modo quo premittitur et optenta a nobis eligendi licentia, subsequenterque presentata nobis electi persona, et petito ut regium præberemus assensum, cum tam de electione predicta quam ipsius electi persona aliqua nobis fide digna relatione suggesta fuissent, super quibus ante assensum nostrum hujusmodi debuimus plenius informari, ex deliberato peritorum consilio certum diem ipsi electo assignavimus satis brevem ad recipiendum responsum congruum in hac parte, sed idem electus nostrum responsum vel dictum terminum non expectans, præter assensum nostrum dedignanter recessit et ad prosequendum electionis sue nego-



negotium ad *Sanctitatis vestre Curiam*, ut dicitur se divertit, in nostri *contumeliam & contemptum* juris nostri Regii, prerogative nostre predictæ depreffionem et *exheredationis* nostre periculum manifestum, de quo non mediocriter conturbamur. Quam ob rem solidam Apostolice clementie justitiam quam in conservatione jurium nostrorum Regalium invenire confidimus cum grato favore propitiam humiliter imploramus, quatenus premissis in debite considerationis examine revolutis, *electo prefato*, si sit contra *jura nostra Regalia supradicta* que adeo sunt notoria quod nulla tergiversatione celari poterunt, erga vos pro confirmatione electionis sue prosequi voluerit audientiam denegare velitis quousque assensum nostrum in forma predicta meruerit optinere, quem si peteret ut est moris sine difficultate prestabimus, *nisi subsit causa rationalis* propter quam id facere minime debeamus, hoc autem quesimus facere dignetur optentu justitiæ pro conservatione juris nostri Regii, vestra benignitas gratiosa. Nam nimium nos tederet si tam notoria jura nostra Regia tantam paterentur nostris temporibus lesionem, quam etsi sic conniventibus oculis pertransire vellemus, fideles nostri minime tollerarent. Conservet &c. Dat. &c.

**R**EX Vicecomitibus London. Salutem. Cum nuper in *Parliamento* celebris memorie Domini Edwardi quondam Regis Angliæ, *Avi nostri*, Anno regni sui tricesimo quinto apud *Carlisse*, tempore Domini Clementis divina providentia sacrosancte ac universalis Ecclesie tunc Summi Pontificis auditâ petitione coram ipso *Avo nostro & consilio suo*, ibidem per *Communitatem* regni sui exhibitâ, continente quod cum *sacra Ecclesia* in statu Prelacie in regno Anglie per ipsum *Avum nostrum*, & progenitores suos, *Comites, Barones, & eorum Antecessores* fuisset fundata, pro Catholice fidei informatione, sibi & populo faciendum, & orationibus, elemosinis, & hospitalitatibus in locis ubi Ecclesie fundate fuerint, pro ipsorum fundatorum, & eorum heredum & omnium fidelium defunctorum animabus faciendum; Quodque certe possessiones tam in feodo & terris quam advocationibus que ad maximum valorem attingunt per dictos fundatores prelati dicti Regni pro oneribus illis sustinendis fuissent assignate, & de possessionibus maxime *Archiepiscopis, Episcopis, Abbatibus, Prioribus & aliis Domibus religiosis*, per ipsum *Avum nostrum & Progenitores suos, Comites, Barones, & alios Proceres* dicti Regni assignat, iidem *Avus noster, Comites, Barones, ceterique proceres* dicti Regni, tanquam *Domini & Advocati* tempore vacationum, habuissent et habere debuissent hujusmodi vacationum *custodias, Prebendarum, Ecclesiarum, & aliarum dignitatum* quarumcunque de *advocatione Prelatorum* predictorum existentium *presentationes & collationes*. Ac dictus *Avus noster & dicti Progenitores* sui semper hactenus maximam partem Consilii sui de dictis Prelatis ac ceteris indigenis ad hujusmodi beneficia promotis, quod sibi pro Salvatione Regni predicti, fore conveniens videbatur habere consueverint; predictus *summus Pontifex* donationem hujusmodi possessionum, & beneficiorum sibi appropriando, per *provisiones suas* hujusmodi dignitates, *prebendas, & Ecclesias, alienigenis* qui nunquam in dicto regno morabantur ac etiam *Cardinalibus* qui in eodem Regno morare non potuerunt, & aliis tam *alienigenis* quam *indigenis*, ac si ipse *Patronus & Advo-*

N. 99.  
Clauſ. 18. Ed.  
3. p. 1. m. 20.  
Dorſ. De proclamatione faciendi de provisionibus.



*Advocatus* fuisset, cum de jure non extitisset, dederit, concesserit  
 & presentaverit, per que si tollerarentur, vix aliquod beneficium  
 infra modici temporis spatium remaneret, quin omnia beneficia  
 ad donationem hujusmodi Prelatorum spectantia, per *provisiones*  
 hujusmodi in *manibus* essent *alienigenarum* & indigenarum contra  
 piam voluntatem fundatorum eorundem, sicque electiones Archi-  
 episcoporum, Episcoporum, & aliorum religiosorum hujusmodi  
 deessent; orationes, hospitalitates, & elemosine que in locis pre-  
 dictis fieri deberent subtraherentur, iidemque *Abus* noster & alii  
*laici Patroni* hujusmodi vacationum temporibus, presentationes  
 & collationes suas amitterent, dictumque Consilium deperiret,  
 bonaque innumera extra dictum regnum asportarentur, in Sacre  
 Ecclesie Anglicane status adnullationem, necnon dicti *Avi* nostri  
 & *Corone sue*, ac aliorum *procerum* dicti Regni *exheredationem*, &  
 in *offensionem* & *destructionem Legum & Jurium Regni* ejusdem,  
 & predicti populi maximum dampnum & depressionem, & status  
 totius Regni predicti subversionem, ac contra piorum fundato-  
 rum voluntatem & dispositionem, de *assensu Comitum, Baronum,*  
*Procerum* & dicte *Communitatis*, premisis erroribus & dispendiis  
 intime consideratis in *pleno Parlamento* predicto, provisum, or-  
 dinatum, concordatum, decretum, & consideratum fuisset, quod  
 premissa gravamina, oppressiones, & cetera dispendia supradicta  
 in dicto Regno, extunc fieri non permitterentur quovis modo.  
 Et super hoc omnibus quorum tunc interfuit, ex parte dicti  
*Avi* nostri per breviam sua prohibitum fuisset, ne quicquam quod  
 in ipsius Regie dignitatis *lesionem*, seu *Procerum* et populi sui pre-  
 judicium cedere possit attemptarent, seu facerent aliquammodo attem-  
 ptari: et insuper singulis vicecomitibus dicti Regni per hujusmo-  
 di breviam extitit demandatum, quod si quos per inquisitiones inde  
 faciend. contrarium, fecisse inveniri contingeret, tunc eos per  
 eorum corpora caperent et salvo et secure coram ipso Avo nostro  
 ad certum diem tam dicto Avo nostro quam aliis versus eos con-  
 queri volentibus ducerentur responsuros, facturosque et receptu-  
 ros quod *Curia sua* consideraret in premisis. Ac jam in *Ultimo*  
*Parlamento nostro* apud *Westmonasterium* in *Quindena Pasche* proxi-  
 mo preterito tento, ad prosecutionem *Communitatis* dicti Regni  
 per petitionem suam coram nobis et consilio nostro exhibitam  
 nobis suggerentis errores, dispendia, et gravamina, in scandalum,  
 dedecus, et depressionem totius Ecclesie Anglicane predicte, ac *ex-*  
*heredationem nostri & Corone nostre, & aliorum Procerum dicti Reg-*  
*ni, & offensionem & destructionem Legum & Jurium regni ejusdem,*  
*& populi nostri dampnum gravissimum,* et status totius Regni pre-  
 dicti subversionem, ac contra Dei voluntatem, et ipsorum bene-  
 ficiorum, fundatorum piam dispositionem, ac contra ordinationem,  
 concordiam, decretum et considerationem predicta, & provisiones  
 et reservationes beneficiorum hujusmodi per sedem Apostolicam  
 factas multotiens evenisse, et nobis supplicantis ut eidem Ecclesie  
 Anglicane ac nostre *Comitum, Baronum,* ac aliorum *Procerum* et  
*Communitatis* dicti regni nostri indemnitati, et exheredationi  
 prospicere vellemus in hac parte per nos, *Comites, Barones, Pro-*  
*ceres,* et dictam *Communitatem* provisum, ordinatum, concor-  
 datum, decretum, et consideratum, et tam infra libertatem  
 quinque Portuum nostrorum quam alibi per *Castellas Maris* to-  
 tius Regni nostri Anglie et alios *Comitatus Regni* predicti pub-  
 lice



lice proclamatum, et ex parte nostrâ firmiter inhibitu fuisse, ne quis cujuscumque status seu conditionis esset, sive fuerit *Alienigena* sive *indigena* *litteras, bullas, processus, reservationes*, hujusmodi beneficiorum instrumenta, seu aliqua alia nobis seu Populo nostro prejudicialia infra idem Regnum nostrum Angliæ sub gravi forisfactura nostra deferret *Archiepiscopis, Episcopis, Abbatibus, Prioribus, Comitibus, Baronibus* seu aliquibus aliis infra idem regnum nostrum liberanda. Et quod nullus sub forisfactura nostra predicta ea *recipere* presumeret, nec quicquam aliud quod in nostri seu dicti Populi nostri prejudicium vel jurium Corone nostre aut provisionum, ordinationum, Concordiarum, Decretorum, & considerationum predictorum lesionem cedere posset faceret, aut fieri procurarent quoquo modo. Et quod insuper diligens Scrutinium in locis (ubi necesse esset) infra idem Regnum nostrum super omnes & singulos infra dictum Regnum nostrum Angliæ venientes fieret. Et omnes illos quos contra *proclamationem*, et *inhibitionem*, predictas *litteras, bullas, Processus, reservationes* seu *instrumenta* aliqua vel aliud quodcumque quod in nostri, seu dicti Populi nostri prejudicium deferentes contingeret inveniri, statim per eorum corpora attachiarentur & in prisonis nostris salvo custodirentur donec aliud inde precepissemus. Et Litere, bulle, processus, reservationes, & instrumenta predicta ab ipsis caperentur et in *Cancellariam nostram* de tempore in tempus mitterentur. Et nos de nominibus illorum sic arrestandorum et aliorum quos contrarium in premissis constare posset fecisse, in dictam Cancellariam nostram similiter de tempore in tempus redderemur certiores. Quidam tamen *Provisores* tam *Alienigenæ* quam *indigenæ* et eorum *Procuratores* et *Nuncii* dictas provisiones, ordinationes, concordias, Decreta, Considerationes, proclamationes et inhibitiones non considerantes, nec penas in eis contentas timentes, *Litteras, Bullas, Processus, reservationes* et instrumenta, et alia hujusmodi Nobis in dicto Populo nostro sic prejudicialia infra idem Regnum nostrum detulerunt. Et ea *Archiepiscopis, Episcopis, Abbatibus, Prioribus*, et aliis tam *indigenis* quam *Alienigenis* infra dictum Regnum nostrum Angliæ, post et contra *proclamationem* et *inhibitionem* supradictas *liberarunt* exequenda, ipsique *Archiepiscopi, Episcopi*, et alii predicti *Litteras, Bullas, processus* et *instrumenta* hujusmodi *receperunt*, et quamplures *Provisores* et *Procuratores* *Provisorum* ad hujusmodi beneficia *virtute dictarum Litterarum, Bullarum, Processuum, reservationum*, et *instrumentorum* *admisserunt* & *eos in beneficiis illis induxerunt*. Et sic dicti *Provisores* et *Procuratores* dicta beneficia detinent occupata, in nostri et Corone nostre ac dicti populi exheredationem et intollerabile prejudicium et contra formam provisionum, Ordinationum, Concordiarum, Decretorum, Considerationum, Proclamationum et inhibitionum predictorum, et *vos* quicquam contra hujusmodi *proclamationem* et *inhibitionem* attemptantes, hætenus juxta tenorem mandati nostri vobis inde directi *facere non curastis*, unde quamplurimum conturbamur. Nos dicte Anglicane Ecclesie ac nostre et Corone nostre et dicti Populi nostri jura prout vinculo juramenti sumus astricti manutenere et defendere, has etiam provisiones, ordinationes, concordias, decreta et considerationes predicta illesa volentes observare, et impugnatores eorundem debite coercere, *vobis* mandamus firmiter injungentes, quod factis et iteratis



iteratis proclamatione, et inhibitione infra Civitatem predictam in locis ubi decet, quod nullus cujuscunque statûs seu conditionis fuerit, sive fuerit *indigena* sive *Alienigena*, hujusmodi *Literas*, *Bullas*, *processus*, *reservationes*, *instrumenta*, seu aliqua alia Nobis seu dicto populo nostro *prejudicialia*, infra idem Regaum nostrum deferat sub gravi forisfactura nostra, *Archiepiscopis*, *Episcopis*, *Abbatibus*, *Prioribus*, *Comitibus*, *Baronibus*, *Militibus*, nec aliquibus aliis infra idem Regnum nostrum liberanda. Et quod nullus sub forisfactura nostra predicta ea *recipere* presumat, et omnes illos quos hujusmodi *Literas*, *Bullas*, *Processus*, *reservationes*, *instrumenta* seu alia quecunque nobis et populo nostro sic *prejudicialia* postmodum infra dictum Regnum nostrum *deferre*, Et ea alicui infra idem Regnum *liberare*, seu ea ab eis *admittere* et virtute eorundem beneficia aliqua *recipere*, seu aliquos in hujusmodi *beneficiis* occasione predicta *inducere* contigerit invenire. ac etiam illos qui hujusmodi *Literas*, *Bullas*, *processus*, *reservationes*, *instrumenta*, seu aliqua alia nobis seu dicto Populo nostro *prejudicialia* post dictum *Parliamentum* nostrum, et contra *proclamationem*, *inhibitionem*, *provisiones*, *ordinationes*, *Concordias*, *Decreta* et *considerationes* predicta infra dictum regnum nostrum *detulerunt*, et virtute eorundem beneficia aliqua *admisserunt*, seu in hujusmodi *beneficiis* aliquarum hujusmodi *provisionum* virtute se posuerunt, seu ad eadem *admissi* fuerunt, ac etiam illos quos virtute *Bullarum*, *Literarum*, *reservationum* et *provisionum* hujusmodi *appellationes*, *citationes*, vel *processus* aliquos *verius Patronos* seu eorum *Patronorum presentatos* vel alios quoscunque in quibuscunque *Curiis* facere vel *prosequi* vel fieri, aut *procurari*, seu aliud quodcunque quod in *nostris* seu *dictorum Comitum*, *Baronum*, *Procerum*, *Patronorum*, vel *dicte Communitatis* aut *provisionum*, *concordiarum*, *Ordinationum*, *Decretorum*, vel *considerationum* predictorum *lesionem* *cedere* possit facere *præsumperit*, facto in hac parte diligenti *scrutinio*, *habitaque* inde viis et modis quibus poteritis quotiens necesse fuerit *informatione pleniori*, ubicunque eos inveniri contigerit infra *Civitatem* predictam, per eorum corpora capi et *arrestari* faciatis, et eos una cum *Literis*, *Bullis*, *processibus*, *reservationibus*, et *instrumentis* secum vel alibi infra *Civitatem* predictam *inventis* coram nobis et *consilio* nostro statim cum eos capi et *arrestari* contigerit salvo et secure de tempore in tempus duci faciatis, *justitiam* super hoc ibidem *recepturi*. Taliter vos habentes in executione *presentis Mandati* nostri, ne materiam habeamus ad vos tanquam *nostrorum* et *Regni* nostri *inimicorum* *fautores* graviter capiendi. Teste Rege apud *Westmonasterium* tricesimo die *Januarii*, Anno *Regni* sui *Anglie* decimo octavo, et *Francie* Quinto.

*Per ipsum Regem et totum Consilium.*

Eodem modo *Mandatum* est *singulis Vicecomitibus* per *Angliam* sub eadem data, quod *promissa* faciant in *Ballivis* suis tam infra *libertates* quam extra.

Eodem modo *Mandatum* est *Bartholomeo de Burghersh* *Constabulari*. *Castri Dovorr.* et *Custodi* quinque *Portuum* vel ejus locum tenenti.

Ano-



**A** Nôtre Seigneur le Roy et son Conseil praiont *Chevaliers des Countees, Citizeins des Citees, & Burgeys des Burghs*, que sont venuz a ceste Parlement pur la *Communalte* de Royalme et suppliont de par la dite *Communalte* que lui pleise avoir bone consideration as choses deffous escripts et a les defauts que sentuient et ordeigner covenable remedie dicelx *que serra la plus plesance chose a Dieu, & a seinte Eglise plus gracieuse, & plus profitable pur luy et pur son roialme que unques fuit fait*. Et cy est ceo nostre seinte foy et nôtre ferme esperance que ceux que sont plesance chose a Dieu et seint Eglise auront grace de bone esloit en quanque ils auront affaire.

**B** Primes que lui pleise penser & repenser comment ses Progenitors nobles Roys d'Engleterre & autres *grands* de mesme la terre avec l'aide & la devocion de people cristien en auncien temps fesoient les Eglises en Angleterre puis pur grand devocion par deverses foitz & proces de temps donerent as ditz Eglises riches, rents, terres & grands possessions oue diverses franchises & toutes les temporalteez que eles ont, quelles choses ovesque ceo que nostre Seigneur le Roy mesmes ad done & graunte a eux *si amontent a plus que la tierce partie de son roialme*: Et penser comment toutes cestes choses sont donez pro tiele devocion & tiele entent que les profitz ent sordantz deussent estre despenduz sur mesmes les lieux as queux ils sont donez al'honneur de Dieu, come en maintenance des Eglises & places appartenantz en Hospitalitez, en Almoignez & diverses oueres de charitee & del service de Dieu, & de seint Eglise, come en Chappelanies. Clercs & poueres que prirent nuyt & jour pur nôtre seint Pier le Pape & pur l'estat de seint Eglise, pur nostre Seigneur le Roy, & pur l'estat de son roialme, & pur la Pees, pur leur Foundours, Patrons, & pur touz ceux que ont donez les biens as ditz lieux especialement et pur leur almes que la sont entres & touz Cristiens. Et pensez coment les Roys & autre *grands* pur leur grande devocion & les grandes douns qu'ils avoient issint donez a seint Eglise feurent en paisible possession de doner les Eglises & les benefices de seint Eglise, come feist le Roy seint Edward que *donz Levesche de Wyrcestre* a seint *Wulston*, & puis par devocion de Roys fuit grante & par la *Court de Rome* confirme que les *Cathedralz Eglises* avoient frank election de leur *Prelatz* selonc la *ley Dieu* & de seint Eglise ent ordeigne parperpetuelment adurer. Et si soloient les Eveschees et verray election et les autres benefices de seint Eglise per seint consideration & par charite sanz scruple de covetise ou de symonie estre done as gentz plus dignes de Clergie de nette vye, et de seint conversation que pont estre trovez que voient demurrer sur leur benefices precher, visiter, et confesser, leur Parochiens et despendre les biens de seint Eglise, al'honneur de Dieu, en tieux overez de charite, come dessus est dit, et selonc la devocion a la entente des donours. Et si longement come celles bones custumes feurent usez le Royalme fuit pleine de toutes prosperites come des bones gentz et bone loialte des Clerks et de Clergie, des Chivaliers et des Chivalreez sont deux choses que touz jours regnant ensemble de pees et de quiete, de tresour, bledz et de bestail et d'autres richesse assietz. Et puis les bones custumes feurent pervertiez empesche de covetise et de Symonye, le Roialme adeste plein des diverses adversitez, come

N. 100.  
Rot parl. 50.  
Ed. 3. n. 94.  
Bille encontre  
le Pape et le  
Cardinaux.



des guerres et pestilences, feym, moreyns des bestes et de autres grevances par quoi le roialme est si empovery et destruit qu'il ny ad mye la tierce partie des gentz, ne des autres choses susditz, come soloit estre par la cause susdite, et par enche-  
fons desouz escriptz.

Ibm. n. 95.

**I** Tem fait a penser quil ny ad nul homme de mounde que eyme Dieu et de seint Eglise, le Roy et le Royalme d'Engleterre que nad grant matier de penser de tristesse et delermer de ceo que la *Court de Rome*, que deust estre fontaigne, racyne, et source de seintete, et destruction de covetise, de symonie et des autres pecches ad si sotilment de poi en poi et de plus en plus par proces du temps par soeffrance et par Abbet des malveys ore autrement a demesure que unques fuit devant attrer a lui les collations des Archeveschies et Eveschies, dignitez proven-  
dres et des autres benefices de seint Eglise en Engleterre des queux le *taxe* amount a plus que cynk foitz le *taxe* des touz les profitz que appartiennent au Roy per An de tout son roialme. Et de chescun Evesche et des touz autres benefices que le *Pape* donne il voet avoir la *taxe*. Et si Levesque devie devant ceo quil ad paye le *tax* le *Pape* le fait lever ensemblement oue une novel *taxe* de son Successeur et pur plusieurs *taxes* aver le *Pape* fait d'une voidance deux ou trois par voye des translations et tantz des *taxes* il voet aver et quant un Evesque ad ses bulles, et serra tant endette vers la Court de Rome pur le *tax* et autres paymentz et costages qui lui coment vendre les Boys de son Evesche a prompter de ces amys avoir eyde de ses pources tenantz subside de sa Clergie, et tout va en destruction de seint Eglise et de roialme d'Engleterre, et tout ensi voet le *Pape* avoir le *taxe* de chescune dignite et benefice qu'il donne.

Ibm. n. 96.

**I** Tem fait a penser quil y sont plusieurs que quont ils averont purchace un benefice de la *Court de Rome* et paye le *tax* et as *brocours* des benefices demorantz en la *peccherense Cite Davenon* leur sont ils mettent leur benefices a ferme quele ferme serra mande as ditz *brocours* pur ent purchaser plusieurs benefices et greindres et greindres. Et tout einsy par voie de *Simonye* et de *bracage* un cheitif que nul bien soiet et riens ne vant serra avance as Eglises et provandres a la value de mill marce par la un docture de decre, et un meistre de Divinite serra lee dever un petit benefice de xx. marce et issint perdent Clerks esperance d'estre avance per leur Clergie et talen d'apprendre.

Et par mesme la cause gentz lassent de mettre leur enfantz a l'escole et aensy va Clergie quest la substance de seint Eglise, et de notre seint foy et declin et anient.

Ibm. n. 97.

**I** Tem fait a penser coment alienes enemys a ceste terre, et autres demurrantz outre meer ont benefices, riches, reintes de seint Eglise en Engleterre que unques virent ne jammes ne veront leur parochiens que ne sont autre chose de leur benefice forsque southreient le service Dieu & de Seint Eglise et tous oeuvres de charite que soloient estre faits illoques et les places descheier parochiens propier en corps et alme et attreent a eux hors de roialme



alme touz les profitz de ceux benefices en la bone de ceste terre qu'est grande empouerrissement et destruction a seint Eglise et a ceste terre, et si est seint Eglise plus destruyt par tielx malvies Cristiens que par touz les Jewes & Saracyns de monde.

A **I**Tem fait a penser que la leye de seint Eglise est tiele que benefice de seint Eglise doit estre done gracieusement par pure charite sauns pris et saunz prier, et nul homme doit doner, or n'argent ne nul autre chole de monde pur benefice de seint Eglise.

Ibm. N. 98.

B **I**Tem fait a penser come loy et reson et bone foy volent que ceo quest done a seint Eglise pur devotion soit despendu al honore de Dieu solonc la devotion et l'entent de donour et non pas hors de roialme sur nos enemys.

B **I**Tem fait a penser que dieux ad comys ses oweles a nostre seint Pere le Pape a pasturer et non pas a tounder.

Ibm. N. 99.

C **I**Tem fait a penser coment les laïs patrons de seint Eglise veantz tant de covetise & Symonie regner vers gentz de seint Eglise prenent ensample deaux & vendent les Eglises, dont ils sont Patronnes, as gentz que la destruent come une beste, & comme Dieu fuit vendu a les Jewes, qui lui mistrent a la mort.

D **I**Tem fait a penser qu'il ny ad null si riche Roy en toute la Cristiantee quad la quart partie tant de tresore come a de le hors de la roialme d'Engleterre pur benefices de seint Eglise peccherousement par la maniere suldite en empoverissement & destruction de roialme & de seint Eglise par soeffrance & de-faute du Conseil.

Ibm. N. 100.

D **I**Tem fait a penser & grandement a douter que depuis que seint Eglise nostre seint Miere en Dieu de qui nous per nous nostre baptisme quest la porte de tiel espouse Jehu Christ par laquelle nous esperions estre sauvez si peccherousement de mesme & touz les malx de monde venent de pecche, que si null pecche y fust, null male avenist.

E **E**T tout temps ad este & touz jours serra que la ou reigne grande iniquite grande y avera adversite que Dieu veant tant iniquite regner entre nous nous envoit tant dadversite, come nous avons des guerres, pestilences, feym, mortalitez des gentz grandes & petites, moryne de bestail, & autres grevances par meer & par terre accordant a nostre desert pur noz pecchez, & noement pur les pecchez sulditz.

F **P**AR quoi pleise a nostre Seigneur le Roy penser coment il est ore l'an cyngantisme de son roialme quest appele l'an Jubile, c'est assavoir l'an du grace & de joie, & que serra la greindre grace & joie que unques avoient a son Roialme, & la plus plesance chose a Dieu & seint Eglise & as touz ceux que eimient Dieu et seint Eglise que unques fuit fait, d'ordeigner

Ibm. N. 101.



covenable remedie des choses susditz que si destruent le Roialme & seint Eglise & daver la besoigne a coer.

Ibm. N. 102.

**E**T par une lettre dessouth son seal en latyn & par une autre dessouth les sealx des Grands de Roialme en Franceys come autre foitz fuit ordeigne en parlement comprenant ceste matiere prier a nostre seint Pere le Pape que pleise a la seintetee aver bone consideration as choses susditz & nomement a ceo que la ley de seinte Eglise par la quele toute la Christiente doit estre reule est tiel come dessus est dit que benefice de seint Eglise dount estre done graciosement par pure charite sanz rien doner par y ceo. Et auxi aver regarde ceo que ley, reson, & bone foy volent que ceo quest done a seint Eglise soit despendu al honure Dieu & de mesme l'Eglise solonc la devotion & l'entent del donor. Et que pleise a sa Seintetee soeffrer les Cathedralx Eglises avoir franks election de lour Prelatz solonc la dit ley de seint Eglise & solonc la grant & confermement de la Court de Rome suldite, & des autres choses que sont cy nusantz & displefantz faire tiele ordinance quil soit al honure Dieu & de seint Eglise, & al'encrese de la devotion del people Cristien, & par issent que le people puisse avoir devotion de meyntenir ceo qu'est done a seint Eglise, par voie dencre & non pas de toler ceo qu'est done que Dieu desent par les causes susditz & pur defaute de correction dycelx, & que seint Eglise poet estre reulee & gouvernees come ele fuit en temps seint Gregorye & des autres seints que donerent bonez ensamples de bien faire. Et pleise a nostre Seigneur le Roy ordeigner & commander sur peine de forfaiture & d'emprisonement que nul homme soit sy hardye de faire aport ne d'envoier outre meer riens de la bone monie de ceste terre priveement, n'appertement per lettre de Lumbard n'en null autre manere. Et que null Lumbard n'autre face tielx lettres sur mesme la peyne & sur ceo soit bone enquerre par Justices de la pees & d'assises en chescun cession. Et que null homme sur peyne de forfaiture de quanque il ad procurs ne face destourbanee a cest besoigne.

Ibm. N. 103.

Ibm. Rom.

**L**E Roy ad fait ordeigner de remedie suffisant devant ceste heure par estatuz & autrement & est en pursuant devers le seint Pier le Pape pur mesmes les besoignes & est en perfit volonte de faire de temps en temps tantque al final esloit dicelles sibien cestassavoir de celles besoignes comprises en cest groos bille prochein precedente come de celles que sont comprises en le roule prochein ensuant come de celles quelles comprennent tout a poy une mesme matiere.

N. 101.  
In the Regi-  
sters Office of  
the Archbi-  
shop in Drs.  
Commons, Re-  
gistrum Rey-  
nolds fol. 241.  
3.

**J**ohannes Episcopus servus servorum Dei, ad futuram rei memoriam. Cum sicut intelleximus *Ecclesia Rossensis* per obitum bonæ memoriæ *Thome* ipsius *Ecclesiæ* Episcopi vacare noscitur ad præsens. Nos ad bonum statum ipsius *Ecclesiæ* intendentes provisionem ejusdem *Ecclesiæ* hâc vice certis de causis quæ ad id animum nostrum induxerunt, *Ordinationi & Dispositioni* sedis *Apostolica* auctoritate præsentium plenarie reservamus. Decernentes ex nunc irritum & inane si secus contra hujusmodi nostræ reservationis tenorem per quoscunque scienter vel ignoranter quo-

vis,



vis modo contigerit attemptari. Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc *paginam* nostræ *Reservationis & Constitutionis* infringere vel ei ausu temerario contraire, Si quis autem hoc attemptare præsumserit, *indignationem omnipotentis Dei*, ac beatorum *Petri & Pauli* Apostolorum ejus, se noverit *incursum*. Dat. Avinion 14 Kal. Aprilis Pontificatûs nostri primo.

A

John 22d. who was chosen Pope A. D. 1316  
This 14 of the Kalends of April was 9. Edw. 2d  
1316. and the same year he was chosen.

Et memorandum quod 3 Kalend. Maii Publicatio facta fuit apud Arcus London. Et secundo Kalend. Maii subsequente Publicata fuerat apud Roffam coram Monachis.

B

See the History of this Provision in Historia sacra, parte prima. f. 357. in the Historia Roffensis, by *William de Dene*.

C

Item les Seigneurs & Communes du Roialme Dengleterre esteantz a ceste Parlement grantent pur eux & pur tout la Communalte Dengleterre le subsidie des Leynes, quirs, & peaulx lanutz, & un autre Subsidie a prendre des biens des certains perſones permy le Roialme, soubz certains fourme & manere comprifez en un Cedule ent faite & baille avant en Parlement dont le tenour sepsuit de mot a mot.

N. 102.  
Rot. parl. 2.  
Ric. 2. parte  
2. n. 13. apud  
Westmonasterium.

D

LES Seigneurs & Communes du Roialme Dengleterre considerantz les grandes necessitees du dit Roialme, & la malice des Enemys de France, & aillours entendantz grant recoverer au dit Roialme & destruction des ditz Enemys que poent avenir per le grace de Dieu si suffisantie des Gentz d'armes & des Archiers en brief soit envoie entre la Meer sur les ditz Enemys pur eux grever & lour malice aresteer solonc la sage discretion nostre tresredoute Seigneur le Roy et les Seigneurs esteantz a cest present Parlement en lieu ou leur semblera a pluis necessaire et profitable en esloit de nostre Seigneur le Roy et de son dit Roialme grantent que si la Marc du Saak des Leynes & les sys deniers de la Livre que furent grantez au darrein Parlement tenuz a Gloucestr' soient pardonez & adnullex a present la Subside des Leynes aduwer per un An entier apres la Feste de seinte Michel proſchein avenir, cestassavoir de chescun Saak tant come estoit grantez devant le dit Parlement de Gloucestre & un somme d'argent a Lever des diverses perſones du Roialme en manere come ensuit sibien dedeins Franchises realx come dehors, cestassavoir.

E

Le Duc de Lancaſtre et le Duc de Bretagne  
chescun a.

} x. Marcas. lb. N. 14.

F

Item chescun Counte d'Engleterre.

} iiii l.

Item chescun des Countesses veoues en Engle-  
terre a tant come les Countz.

} iiii l.

Item



Item chescun Baron et Baneret ou Chivaler que  
poet a tant dispendre. } xl s.

The Duke of *Lancaster* and the Duke of *Bre-*  
*tagne* each. } x. marks.

Also every Earl of *England*. } iiii l.

Also every Countess that is a Widow in *Eng-*  
*land*, as much as the Earls. } iiii l.

Also every Baron and Baneret, or Knight of as  
good an Estate as a Baron or Baneret. } xl s.

And so on in the *Englisb* exactly Translated from the *French*.

Also every Baroness, that is a Widow, shall pay  
as a Baron, and Baneress as a Banerett. } xl s.

Also every Batchelour, and every Esquire, who  
by Statue ought to be made a Knight. } xx s.

Also every Widow that was the Wife of a Bat-  
chelour, or Esquire. } xx s.

Also every Esquire of less Estate. } vi s. viii d.

Also every Woman, Widow of such an Esquire,  
or sufficient Merchant. } vi s. viii d.

Item chescun Esq; nient possesionez des terres,  
rent, ne Chateaux qu'est en service, ou ad este  
armez. } iii s. iii d.

Also every Esquire without Possessions, Lands,  
Rents, or Goods, that is in Service, or bears  
Arms. } iii s. iii d.

Also the chief Prior of the Hospital of Saint  
John, as a Baron. } xl s.

Also every Commander of the same Order of  
*England*, as a Batchelour. } xx s.

Also every other Brother, Knight of the same Or-  
der. } xiii s. iii d.

Also all other Brothers of the same Order, as  
an Esquire without Possessions. } iii s. iii d.

Also every Justice, as well of the one Bench,  
as of the other, and the chief Baron of the  
Exchequer, each. } s.

Also every Serjeant and great Apprentice of the  
Law. } xl s.

Also



- Also other Apprentices which follow the Law.  $\text{xxs.}$
- Also all other Apprentices of less Estate, and Attourneys, each.  $\text{vis. viii d.}$
- Also the Major of *London* shall pay as an Earl.  $\text{viii l.}$
- Also the Aldermen of *London*, each as a Baron.  $\text{xls.}$
- Also all other Majors of great Towns in *England*, each as a Baron.  $\text{xls.}$
- Also other Majors of smaller Towns, according to the value of their Estate.  $\text{xxs. xs. or vis. viii d.}$
- And all Jurates of good Towns, and great Merchants of the Realm, shall pay as Batchelours, each.  $\text{xxs.}$
- Also other sufficient Merchants,  $\text{xiii s. iii d.}$
- Also all lesser Merchants, and Artificers, Husbandmen, or who live upon Tillage according to the value of their Estate.  $\text{vi s. viii d. iii s. iii d. ii s. xii d. or vi d.}$
- Also every Serjeant and Freeman of the Country according to their Estate.  $\text{vi s. viii d. or xl d.}$
- Also the Farmers of Mannors, Pastures, and Granges, Merchants of Beasts, and other Buyers and Sellers, according to their Estate.  $\text{vi s. viii d. xl d. ii s. or xii d.}$
- Also all Advocates, Notarys, and Proctors who are Married, shall pay as Serjeants of the Law, Apprentices of the Law, and Attourneys, each according to their Estate.  $\text{xls. xxs. or vis. viii.}$
- Also all Apparitors that are Married, according to their Estate.  $\text{iii s. iii d. ii s. or xii d.}$
- Also all Inn-keepers that have not the Estate of a Merchant, shall pay according to his Estate.  $\text{xl d. ii s. or xii d.}$
- Also every Married Man, for himself and his Wife, that have not the Estates above-named, and above the age of sixteen, except very Beggars.  $\text{iii d.}$

And



And every Man and Woman un-  
married, of such an Estate, and  
above the Age aforesaid. } *iiii. d.*

Also every strange Merchant of what  
Condition soever, shall pay ac-  
cording to his Ability, as other  
Denizens. }

N. 103.  
Walsinghami  
Historia fol.  
254. n. 10.

**R**ichardus Dei gratia Rex Angliæ & Franciæ, & Dominus  
Hiberniæ, omnibus ballivis & fidelibus suis ad quos præ-  
sentes literæ pervenerint, Salutem. Sciatis quod *de gratia nostra  
speciali, manumissimus* universos ligeos & singulos subditos nostros,  
& alios *comitatus Hertfordiæ,* & ipsos & eorum quemlibet ab  
omni *bondagio* exuimus & quietos facimus per præsentem, ac eti-  
am *pardonamus* eisdem ligeis ac subditis nostris omnimodas *felo-  
nias, prodiciones, transgressiones & extortiones,* per ipsos vel ali-  
quem illorum qualitercunque factas, sive perpetratas, ac etiam ut-  
legariam vel utlegarias si qua vel quæ in ipsos vel aliquem ipso-  
rum fuerint vel fuerit his occasionibus promulgata, vel promulgata,  
& summam pacem nostram iis & eorum cuilibet inde concedimus.  
In cujus rei testimonium has literas nostras fieri fecimus patentes.

Teste meipso apud London. 15. die Junii, anno regni nostri quarto.

N. 104.  
Ibm. fol. 268.  
n. 10. 20. 30.

**R**ichardus Dei gratia Rex Angliæ & Franciæ & Dominus  
Hiberniæ, universis & singulis *Viccomitibus, Majoribus &  
Ballivis,* & aliis *fidelibus* nostris comitatus N. Salutem. Quia  
datum est nobis intelligi, quod diversi subditi nostri qui contra  
pacem nostram & in turbationem populi in diversis Comitatus  
regni nostri Angliæ se levarunt, & in diversis conventiculis & con-  
gregationibus se posuerunt, & damna plurima fidelibus nostris  
perpetrando populo nostro Comitatum prædictorum, *dant intel-  
ligi & affirmant se dictas congregationes & levationes ex nostris vo-  
luntate & auctoritate fecisse & facere ac damna perpetrare.* Vobis  
innotescimus per præsentem, *quod hujusmodi levationes, congregati-  
ones, & damna ex nostra voluntate seu auctoritate minime processe-  
runt,* prout nec procedere aut fieri debet, sed inde quantum plus  
potest, nobis displicet in immensum, & ea in nostri maximum  
vituperium & coronæ præjudicium & totius regni nostri damnum,  
& turbationem redundare sentimus. Et ideo vobis & cuilibet  
vestrum injungimus & mandamus quod hoc in locis, ubi meli-  
us & celerius pro pace nostra in hac parte conservandâ vobis vi-  
debitur faciendum, publice proclamari, & pro resistentia quorum-  
cunque contra pacem nostram (ut prædictum est) levantium manu  
forti, pro toto posse vestro, si necesse fuerit, taliter ordinari fa-  
ciatis, quod pro defectu hujusmodi proclamationis & resistentiæ,  
damna vel mala aliqua in Comitatus prædictis per hujusmodi  
Congregationes seu levationes, vel alio modo, minime fiant seu  
perpetrentur, & sub forisfactura omnium, quæ nobis forisfacere  
poteritis, nullatenus omittatis. Præcipientes universis & singulis  
ligeis & subditis nostris, quod ab hujusmodi congregationibus &  
leva-



levationibus, & damnis penitus desistentes, ad propria se trahant, & ibidem in pace morentur, sub forisfactura vitæ et membrorum et omnium aliorum quæ nobis forisfacere poterunt.

*Teste Rege apud Londonias 17. die Junii Anno regni nostri quarto.*

A **A**uthoritate Apostolica mihi in hac parte commissa, te A. B. ab omnibus peccatis tuis ore confessis, & corde contritis, & de quibus confiteri velles, si tuæ occurrerint memoriæ, absolvimus, & plenariam peccatorum tuorum remissionem indulgemus, & retributionem justorum ac Salutis æternæ pollicemur augmentum, & tot privilegia quæ in terra sancte subsidium proficiscentibus conceduntur, tibi concedimus, ac Ecclesiæ universalis synodi, & Ecclesiæ sanctæ catholicæ orationum & beneficiorum suffragia tibi impartimur.

N. 105.  
Walsinghami  
Historia fol.  
295. n. 10.

B **V**ous Jurrez que vous garderez & ferrez garder la bone Pees, Quiete & Tranquillite du Royalme, & si aucuns veulle fair encontre cela vous luy contresterrres, & destourberrez a tout vòtre poair, Et si aucuns Gentz veulent Riens fair encontre les Corps des persons des cink Seigneurs, cestasavoir, Thomas Duc de Gloucestre, Henry Count de Derby, Richard Count d'Arundel & de Surrey, Thomas Count de Warwick, & Thomas Count Mareschal, ou auscun de eux, vous efferres ove les dit cynk Seigneurs jusques a l'entier fin de cest present Parlement & eux mainteindrez & sustendrez a tout vòtre poair a vivre & morir ove eux encontre touz, nul persone, n'autre chose except en manere avantdite. Savant tout foits vòtre ligeance envers nòtre Seigneur le Roy & la Prerogative de sa Còrone & les loyes & bones Customs du Royalme.

N. 106.  
Rot. parl. 11.  
Ric. 2. n. 13.

D **V**ous Jurrez que vous ne assenterez ne ne seoffrez en quant que en vous est que aucun Fuggement, Estatute ou Ordenance fait ou renduz en cest present Parlement soit aucunement annullez, reversez, ou Repellez en ascun temps avenir. Et encontre que vous sustendrez les bones Loies & usages du Royalme avant ces heurs faits & usez & fermement Garderez & ferrer Garder la bone pees, Quiete & Tranquillite en le Roialme sanz destourber en aucune manere a vòtre poair, si Dieu vous eid & les Seints.

N. 107.  
Rot. parl. 11.  
Ric. 2. n. 48.

E **I**N nomine Dei amen. Cum de jure et consuetudine Regni Angliæ ad Archiepiscopum Cantuariensem qui pro tempore fuerit, necnon ceteros suos suffraganeos, confratres, & Coepiscopos, Abbates, Priores, aliosque Prelatos quoscumque per Baroniam de Domino Rege tenentes pertineat in Parliamentis Regiis quibuscumque ut Pares regni nostri predicti personaliter interesse ibidemque de regni negotiis et aliis ibi tractari consuetis, cum ceteris dicti regni paribus et aliis ibidem jus interessendi habentibus consulere et tractare, ordinare, statuere, et diffinire, ac cetera facere que Parliamento tempore imminent facienda, in quibus omnibus et singulis nos Wilhelmus Cantuariensis Archiepiscopus totius Angliæ Primas, et Apostolice sedis Legatus pro nobis nostrisque suffraganeis, Coepiscopis et confratribus, necnon Abbatibus, Prioribus, ac Prelatis omnibus supradictis, protestamur, et eorum quilibet protestatur qui per se vel Procuratorem hic fuerit, modo presens publice et

N. 108.  
Rot. parl. 11.  
Ric. 2. n. 9.



expresse quod intendimus et intendit, volumus ac vult eorum quilibet, in hoc presenti *Parliamento* et aliis, ut *Pares* regni predicti more solito interesse, consulere, tractare, ordinare, statuere, et diffinire ac cetera exercere cum ceteris jus interessendi habentibus in eisdem statu et ordine nostris et eorum cujuslibet in omnibus semper salvis. Verum quia in presenti *Parliamento* agitur de nonnullis materiis in quibus non licet nobis aut alicui eorum juxta *sacrorum Canonum instituta* quomodolibet personaliter interesse, Ea propter pro nobis et eorum quolibet protestamur, et eorum quilibet hic presens etiam protestatur, quod non intendimus, nec volumus sicuti de jure non possumus, nec debemus, intendit nec vult aliquis eorundem in presenti *Parliamento*, dum de hujusmodi materiis agitur vel agatur quomodolibet interesse, set nos et eorum quemlibet in ea parte penitus absentare. Jure *Paritatis* nostre et cujuslibet eorum interessendi in dicto *Parliamento* quoad omnia et singula inibi exercenda nostris et eorum cuilibet statui et ordini congruentia, in omnibus semper salvo. Ad hec insuper protestamur et eorum quilibet protestatur quod propter hujusmodi absentiam non intendimus nec volumus, nec eorum aliquis intendit vel vult quod processus habiti et habendi in presenti *Parliamento* super materiis antedictis in quibus non possumus, nec debemus ut præmittitur interesse, quantum ad nos et eorum quemlibet attinet futuris temporibus quomodolibet, impugnentur, infirmentur, seu etiam revocentur. Quelle protestacion lieu en plein parlement al' instance et priere du dit *Ercevesque* et les autres *Prelatz* susdits est enrroullez ycy en roulle du Parlement per comaundement du Roy et assent des *Seigneurs temporels* et *communes*.

*Semblable protestation firent les Evesques de Duresme & Kardoyl, mutatis mutandis.*

N. 109.  
Rot. parl. 21.  
Ric. 2. n. 38.

**V**ous Jurrez que bien & Loyalment tendrez, sustendrez, & esterres sanz fraud ou mal Engyn ove touz les estatutz, establisementz, ordenances, & Judgments faitz ou renduz en cest present Parlement, sanz jamais aler ou fair, a lencontre de null dicell ou dependantz ou parcel dicell, ne que james vous les repellerex, revokez, casserez, irriteres, reverseres, ne adnullerez, ne james soeffrez repeller, revoke, casser, irriter, reverser ne adnuller a vivre & murrir savant au Roy sa Regalie & libertie & la Droit de sa Corone.

N. 110.  
Ibm. n. 40.

**V**ous Jurrez que jamais en temps avenir, vous ne soeffrez nully vivant aler ne fair a lencontre de nul des estatutz, establisementz, Ordenances, & Juggements, faitz ou renduz a cest present Parlement ne a nul Dependances ou percell dicell. Et si nully le face & de ceo soit duement conviët vous ferrez vòtre entier poair & Diligence sanz fraud ou mal Engyn, Et persuerez devers nòtre Seigneur le Roy & ses heires Roys Dengleterre de luy faire avoir execution come haut et faux Traitour a Roy & au Roialme, sauvent au Roy sa Regalie & Libertee, & le droit de sa Corone.

N. 111.  
Placit. Corone in Parlamento 21.  
Ric. 2.

**R**icardus Dei Gratia Rex Anglie & Francie, & Dominus Hibernie carissimo consanguineo suo Thome Comiti Marescallo Capitaneo ville nostre Cales & ejus locum tenenti, Salutem. Cum carissimus frater Edwardus Comes Rutland, dilectus consanguineus noster,



noster, *Thomas Comes Kancie*, carissimus frater noster, *Johannes Comes Huntingdon*, dilecti consanguinei nostri *Thomas Comes Nottingham*, *Johannes Comes Somers*, *Johannes Comes Sarum*, & *Thomas Dominus Despenser* & dilectus & fidelis noster *willielmus Lescrop*, *Camerarius* noster, coram nobis in presenti Parlamento nostro inter alios appellarunt *Thomam Ducem Gloucestr.* in prisiona nostra sub custodia vestra de mandato nostro existentem de diversis Proditionibus per ipsum & alios, contra nos, statum, Coronam, & Dignitatem nostram factis & perpetratis, ipsique appellantes appellum suum predictum se optulerunt in Parlamento nostro predicto, secundum legem & Consuetudinem in Regno nostro Anglie haftenus usitatam prosecuturos, nobis humiliter supplicando, quatenus ipsum Ducem ad respondendum sibi super appello suo predicto coram nobis in eodem Parlamento nostro corporaliter venire jubere volumus, nos supplicationi predictae annuentes, Vobis mandamus firmiter injungentes quod prefatum Ducem coram nobis & consilio nostro in Parlamento nostro predicto cum omni festinatione qua poteritis salvo & secure venire faciatis ad respondendum prefatis appellantibus, super apello suo predicto, secundum legem & consuetudinem predictas, & ad faciendum ulterius & recipiendum quod per nos et dictum consilium nostrum in eodem Parlamento nostro, de eo tunc contigerit ordinari. Et hoc nullatenus omittatis, et habeatis ibi hoc breve. Teste meipso apud Westmon. xxidie Septembris. Anno regni nostri xxi.

C Per ipsum Regem & Consilium

in Parlamento.

Billingsford.

D Responsum Thome Comitis Marecalli infra nominati.

THomam Ducem Gloucestr. infra nominatum coram Vobis et Consilio vestro in presenti Parlamento venire facere non possum ad faciendum prout istud breve exigit et requirit, pro eo quod idem Dux mortuus est, et quem quidem Ducem ex precepto excellentissimi Domini Regis habui in custodia mea in prisiona Domini Regis Ville Cales et ibidem in eadem moriebatur.

E RICARDUS Dei gratia Rex Anglie et Francie et Dominus Hibernie dilecto et fideli suo *willielmo Rykhill* Salutem. Sciatis quod quibusdam certis de causis assignavimus vos ad vos versus Villam nostram *Cales* divertendos & colloquium cum *Thomâ Duce Gloucestr.* ibidem existente habendos, ipsumque de omnibus et singulis que vobis dicere sive exponere voluerit audiendos, et nobis inde ac de toto facto vestro in hac parte in propria persona nostra ubicunque nos fore contigerit, sub sigillo vestro distincte et aperte certificandos, una cum hoc brevi. Et ideo vobis mandamus quod circa premissa diligenter intendatis, et ea faciatis & exequamini in forma predicta. Damus autem *Capitaneo* nostro *Ville* predictae necnon universis et singulis fidelibus et subditis nostris tenore presentium firmiter in mandatis quod vobis in executione premissorum sint prout decet. In cujus rei Testimonium has literas nostras fieri fecimus patentes.

N. 112.  
lbm.



Teste meipso apud Wodstock xvii die Augusti, Anno Regni nostri xxi.

N. 111.  
Rot. parl. 21.  
Ric. 2. n. 89.

**A** Squeux Juggements, Ordenances, et Establissemens ensi faitz ordonez et alientuz le dit Marsdi le xviii jour du Marce et toutz les estatutz, establissemens, Ordenances et Juggements faitz et renduz en dit Parlement, ou a Coventre ou aillours per vertute et Authorite mesme le Parlement fermement tenir et garder si bien les Seigneurs Espirituels come Temporels et certain Chevaliers pur Comtes par auctorite de Parlement y esteants, mesme le Marsdi furent Jurrez en presence du Roy sur la Croice de Cantarbirs, de les tenir & sustenir et de esteer ove ycelles sanz fraud ou mal engyne solonc la form & effet de les serments par eux faitz par devant come contenuz est en Rolle de Parlement. Des queux Seigneurs et Chevaliers les nous cy ensuant, Cestassavoir.

Lercevesque de Cantirbir.  
Lercevesque de Everwyk.  
Levesque de Londres.  
Levesque de Wincestre.  
Levesque de Ely.  
Levesque de Norwic.  
Levesque de Excestre Chancellor.  
Levesque de Roff.  
Levesque de Hereford.  
Levesque de Sarum.  
Levesque de Nicholle.  
Levesque de St. Asaph.  
Levesque de St. David.  
Levesque de Cestre.  
Levesque de Cicestre.  
Levesque de Landaffe.  
Labbee de Westminstre.  
Labbee de St. Esmon.  
Le Duc d'Everwyk.

Le Duc d'Albemarle.  
Le Duc d'Excestre.  
Le Markys de Dorset.  
Le Count de Staff.  
Le Count de Sarum.  
Le Count de Northumberland.  
Le Count de Gloucestre.  
Le Count de Westmerland.  
Le Count de Wincestre.  
Le Count de Wilts Tresorer.  
Le Count de Suff.  
Le Sire de Grey de Ruthin.  
Le Sire Ferrers de Groby.  
Le Sire de Lovell.  
Le Sire de Camoys.  
Monsieur John Bussy.  
Monsieur Henr. Grene.  
Monsieur John Russell.  
Robert Teye.

**E** T apres cestes serements ensi faitz le Chancellor par Comandement du Roy comanda overment que toutz ceaux que furent Jurrez & vorroient tenir cestes Juggements, Serements & Ordenances adresseroient en haut leur maynes Dextres. Quele chose seust fait & assentuz par tout le Peuple Dengleterre esteant en presence du Roy.

N. 115.  
Rot. parl. 1.  
Hen. 4. n. 73.

**J**oesdy le xxiii jour d'Octobre Lercevesque de Canterbirs chargea de par le Roy toutz les Seigneurs Espirituelx & Temporelx & toutz autres y esteantz sur leur ligeance que ceo que lors serroit monstrez ou parlez illoques serroit tenuz conseil & quil ne serroit ascunement discoverez a null vivant. Et puis apres demandez fust par le Cont de Northumb. par le Suertie du Roy & de toutz estatx du Royalme coment leur semble que serroit ordeigne de Richard nadgaires Roy pur luy mettre en sause Garde sauvent sa vie, que le Roy voet que luy soit saurez en toutes maneres, sur quoi responduz fust par toutz les Seigneurs Espirituelx & Temporelx ent se veralment examinez dont les noms si ensuent que leur seuble quil serroit



*serroit mys en fause garde & secrete garde & en tiel lieu ou nul concours des Gentz y ad, & quil soit gardez par seures & sufficientz persones, & que null quad est familiar du dit nadgaires Roy soit aucunement entour la persone & que ceo soit fait en la plus secrete manere que fire se purra.*

Les Noms des Seigneurs demandez & assentuz sur la Question suif-  
dit cy ensuant, Cest assavoir,

A	Lercevesq; de Canterbirs.	Le Sire de Roos.
	Lercevesq; Deverwick.	Le Sire de Grey de Ruthyn.
	Levesq; de Londres.	Le Sire de Cherlton.
	Levesq; Dely.	Le Sir de Bardolf
	Levesq; de Nichol.	Le Sir de Willoyby.
	Levesq; de Norwiz.	Le Sir de Furnivall.
	Levesq; de Rouchestre.	Le Sir de Ferrers.
B	Levesq; de Sarum.	Le Sir de Beamont.
	Levesq; d'Excestre.	Le Sir de Berkely.
	Levesq; de Cicestre.	Le Sir fitz Wauter.
	Levesq; de S. Asaph.	Le Sir de Mauley.
	Levesq; de Cestre.	Le Sir de Scales.
	Levesq; de St. David.	Le Sir de Morley.
	Levesq; de Landaff.	Le Sir de Burnell.
C	Levesq; de Durham.	Le Sir de Lovell.
	Labbe de Westminster.	Le Sir de Camoys.
	Labbe de St. Alban.	Le Sir de Seymore.
	Labbe de St. Austin.	Le Sir de Crombwell.
	Labbe de Bury.	Le Sir de Cobham.
	Labbe de St. Mary Deverwick.	Monfieur Henry Percy.
	Labbe de Gloucestre.	Monfieur Richard Scrop.
D	Labbe de Battaile.	Le Sir fitz Hugh.
	Le Prince.	Le Sir de Bergaveny.
	Le Duc Deverwick.	Le Sir de Lomley.
	Le Count de Arundell.	Le Baron de Graystock.
	Le Count de Warrwick.	Le Baron de Hilton.
	Le Count de Stafford.	Monfieur Thomas Erpingham
	Le Count de Northumberland.	Chamberlain.
E	Le Count de Suff.	Monfieur Matthew Gurnay.
	Le Count de Worcestre.	

**E** **H**enicus Dei Gratiâ Venerabili in Christo patri Thome eadem gratia Archiepiscopo Cantuar. totius Angliæ Primati Salutem. Satis informati estis qualiter inimici nostri Francie & alii sibi adhaerentes facinora sua erga nos & ligeos nostros licet indirecte de Die in Diem circumquaque ostendentes cum magna Classe navium cum maxima multitudine armatorum & Bellicorum supra mare congregati diversas villas super Costeris Regni nostri Angliæ invadere, ac nos & Regnum nostrum prædictum nec non populum nostrum per terram et per mare destruere, & Ecclesiam Anglicanam subvertere, cum omnibus viribus intendunt & proponunt, per quod volentes salvationi Dicti Regni & populorum nostrorum ac Ecclesie sanctæ contra malitiam ipsorum inimicorum opitulante Altissimo, providere, per diversas Commissiones assignavimus certos fideles nostros in singulis Comitibus regni nostri prædicti ad arraiandos & armari faciendos omnes homines defensibiles

N. 116.  
Registrum A.  
rundel parte  
ima f. 550. b.



biles, videlicet, quemlibet eorum juxta statum & facultates suas, & eos arraiatos, armatos, & munitos in Arraiatione hujusmodi teneri faciendos, sicque semper prompti sint & parati ad proficiscendum in Defensionem Regni nostri prædicti, ubi, & quoties et quando ex hostium incurfibus periculum immineat, aut necesse fuerit aliquale. Advertentes quodque vos & ceteri prælati ac totus Clerus dicti Regni, una cum aliis fidelibus nostris ad resistendum dictis inimicis pro salvatione sanctæ Ecclesiæ et ejusdem Regni manus tenemini apponere adjutrices, vobis in fide quibus nobis tenemini firmiter injungimus et mandamus, quatenus consideratis gravibus Damnis et periculis imminentibus per aggressus inimicorum nostrorum prædictorum omnes Abbates, Priores, Religiosos, et alias personas Ecclesiasticas quascunque vestra Dioceseos, quacunque dilatione postposita, armari, arraiari, et armis competentibus, videlicet quemlibet eorum juxta statum, possessiones, et facultates suas muniri. Et eos in Millenis, Centenis, & Vintenis poni faciatis. Ita quod prompti sint & parati ad proficiscendum ad mandatum vestrum una cum aliis fidelibus nostris contra dictos inimicos nostros infra dictum Regnum nostrum ad ipsos cum Dei adjutorio debellandos, expugnandos, et destruendos, et ad eorum malitiam et proterviam propulsandam, et conterendam, et hoc sicut nos, et honorem nostrum ac vestrum et salvationem sanctæ Ecclesiæ et Regni nostri diligitis nullatenus omittatis.

*Teste meipso apud Westmonast. 17. Die Januarii, Anno Regni nostri primo.*

*Confirmatio Treugarum inter Richardum Angliæ & Carolum Franciæ Reges.*

N. 117.  
in the Chapter  
House at West-  
minster.

Charles par la Grace de Dieu Roy de France, A tous ceulx qui ces presentes lettres verront, Salut. Comme l'an de grace Mil CCC.<sup>xx</sup><sub>iiii</sub> et xvi vivant lors feust nostre tres chere et tres amez filz Richart nagueres Roy d'Engleterre que Dieu absoile, certaines Treves Generales eussent estre prinſes sur certaine forme entre nous d'une parte et nostre ditz filz d'autre, les queles Treves feurent solennelment Jureez et promises a tenir d'une part et d'autre. Si comme es lettres sur ce faites est plus a plain contenue, Savoir faisons que nous qui en ce fait a tous autres voulons proceder de bonne foy n'entendismes oncques, ne entendons venir aucunement contre ce qui en ceste matiere avons promis & jure. Mais voulons tenir & faire tenir de nostre part sans enfreindre les dittes Treves leur Temps durant ainsi comme promis & jure l'avons. En Tesmoing de ce nous avons fait mettre a ces lettres nostre Seel. Donne a Paris le xxix jour de Janver. l'an de Grace Mil. CCC.<sup>xx</sup><sub>iiii</sub> xix. Et le xx. de nostre Regne.

*Par le Roy en son Conseil.*

J. de Sanctis.

Wil.



**W**illiam Evesq, de Cantirbirs baille avant une schedule en plein parlement contenant ces responses a certaines Articles de luy demandez & en la forme & paroles qu'ensuent.

N. 118.  
Rot. parl. 16.  
Ric. 2. n. 20.

**A** nôtre Tresdout Seigneur le Roy en cest present Parlement son humble Chappelein *William Ercevesque* de *Cantirbirs* a la petition baillez en le dit Parlement par les *Communes* de Roialme en la quelle Petition sont contenuz certaines Articles.

**B** Cestassavoir, Primerement par la ou nôtre Seigneur le Roy, & toutz ses Lieges de vient du droit & soleient de tout temps pursuer en la Court mesme nostre Seigneur le Roy, par recoverir leur presentmentz as Eglises, Provendres & autres Benefices de seint Eglise as queux ils ont droit a presenter, la connissance de plee de quele poursuite appartient seulement a Court mesme nostre Seigneur le Roy d'ancien droit de sa Corone, use & approve en temps de toutz ses progenitours Roys Dengleterre, & quant Juggement soit rendu en mesme la Court sur tiel plee & poursuite les Ercevesque, Evesques, & autres parsones espirituelles quont institution de tiel benefice deinz leur Jurisdiction sont tenuz & ount fait execution des tieux Juggements par mandement des Rois de tout le temps avantdit sanz interruption quar autre Lay persone ne poet tiel execution faire, & auxint sont tenuz de droit de faire execution de plusours autres mandementz nostre Seigneur le Roy, du quell droit la Corone Dengleterre ad este peissiblement seisi si bien en temps nôtre dit Seigneur le Roy come en temps de touz ses Progenitours tanque en cea mes, ore tard diverses processs sont faitz par le seint pier le Pape & censures discomengementz sur certains Evesques Dengleterre pur ceo quils ont fait execution des tieux mandementz en overte disheritance de la dit Corone & destruction de la Regalie nostre dit Seigneur le Roy, say ley & tout son Roialme, si Remedie ne soit mys. **C** A ceste Article le dit Ercevesque fesant protestation qu'il n'est pas sa entention de dire ne affermer que nostre seint pier le Pape ne poet excomenger Evesque solonc la Ley de seint Eglise, respoigne & dit, si ascuns Executions de processs soient faitz par ascune & censures d'escomengementz encontre ascunes Evesques d'Engleterre, ou ascun autre Lige de Roy pur ceo quils ont fait execution de tieux mandementz il tient que ceo est contre le Roy, si come est tenuz en mesme la Petition, & pur tant il voet esteer ove nostre dit Seigneur le Roy & ove sa Corone en la cause avantdit a son poair, & auxint par la ou dit est & contenue en la dite petition que come clamour y ad que le dit seint pier le Pape ad ordeine & purpos de translater ascuns prelates du mesme le Roialme, ascuns hors du Roialme, & ascuns d'une Eveschee a autre deinz mesme sanz assent & conisanz nostre Seigneur le Roy, & sanz assent du Prelat que ferroit ensi translate, queux prelatz sont molt profitables & necessaires a nostre Seigneur le Roy & tout son Roialme par que translations sils feussent suffitez les Estatutz du Roialme seront



front defaitz & angutez & ses sages Lieges de son Conseil sanz on assent & encontre sa volunte sustretz & esloignez hors de son Royalme & la voir & tresor du mesme le Royalme, serroit en porte et ensi mesme le Royalme destitut, sibien du conseil come de voir au finall destruction de mesme le Royalme, & ensi la Corone d'Engleterre qui est si frank de toutz temp, quele nad ceu nule terene Soverein mes immediat susgit a Dieu en toutes choses touchantes Regalie de mesme la Corone, & a nule autre serroit submis a Pape & les Leyes & Estatutz du Royalme par luy defaitz et anientiz a sa volunte en perpetuelli destruction de la Sovereintie nostre Seigneur le Roy, la Corone et la Regalie et tout son Royalme que Dieu defend, le dit Ercevesque fesant protestation quil nest la entention de dire ne affermer que nostre dit seint Pere ne poet faire translations des prelatz solonc la ley de seint Esglise, respoigne et dit qui si ascuns Executions de tielx translations soient faitz d'aucuns prelatz de mesme le Royalme queux Prelatz sont meulx profitables et necessaires a nostre dit Seigneur le Roy et a son Royalme suifdit ou que ses Sages Liges de son Conseil sanz son assent et encontre sa volunte soient sustretz et esloignez hors du Royalme et le avoir et le tresor purroit estre destruitz, le dit Ercevesque tient que ceo serroit contre le Roy et la Corone, et pur tant il voet estre ove le Roy en tel cas loyamment et sustenance de sa Corone et en toutz autres cas touchantz sa Corone come il est tenuz par sa Ligeance et pria au Roy que la dite Cedula soit entre de Record en Roll de parlement, et le Roy lottroia.

N. 118.  
Rendred in  
English.

**W**illiam Archbishop of *Canterbury* brought a Schedule into a full Parliament containing his Answers demanded to certain Articles, in the Form and Words following.

Rot. parl. 16.  
Ric. 2. n. 20.

**T**o our most redoubted Lord the King in this present Parliament his humble Chappellan *William Archbishop of Canturbury*, to the petition brought into Parliament by the Commons of the Kingdom, in which are contained certain Articles, that is to say, first, whereas our Lord the King, and all his Lieges ought of Right, and were wont in all times to proceed in the King's Court, to recover their Presentations to Churches, Prebendaries, and other Benefices of holy Church, to which they had right to present, the Cognisance of which Plea only belonged to that Court, by ancient Right of the Crown, used and approved in the Times of all the King's Progenitors, Kings of *England*, and when Judgment was given in that Court upon such Plea the Archbishops, Bishops, and other Persons Spiritual, who had Institution of such Benefices within their Jurisdiction were bound, and had made Execution of such Judgments by Command of the Kings for all the times aforesaid without interruption; for a lay Person could not make such Execution, and also are bound to make Execution of many other Commands of the King, of which Right the Crown of *England* had been in peaceable Possession, as well in this King's Time, as the Times of all his Progenitors, until this time. But of late diverse Processes have been made by the holy Father the Pope, and Censures and Excommunications published against certain *English* Bi-



Bishops, for that they have made Execution of such Commands in open Disheritance of the Crown, and Destruction of the King's Regalie, his Law, and his whole Realme, if Remedy be not had.

A To this Article the Archbishop making Protestation, that it was not his Intention to say or affirm, that our Holy Father, the Pope, could not Excommunicate a Bishop according to the Law of holy Church, answereth, and saith, that if any Execution or Proecesses, Censures, and Excommunications should be made by any Person against any Bishop of *England*, or any other of the Kings Lieges, because they made Execution of such Commands, he holds this is against the King, as it is holden or affirmed in the Petition, and therefore he will stand with the King, and with his Crown in the Case aforesaid, to his Power.

C And also whereas it is said and contained in the *same Petition*, that Clamour hath been made, that the holy Father the Pope, had ordained and purposed to Translate some Bishops of the Kingdom, some out of the Kingdom, and some from one Church to another within, without the Assent and Knowledge of the King, and without the Assent of the Prelate, which was to be Translated, which Prelates were much profitable to the King, and his whole Kingdom, by which Translations if they be suffered, the Statutes of the Kingdom would be defeated and straightened, and the wise Lieges of his Council without their Assent, and against their Wills withdrawn and removed out of his Kingdom, and the Riches and Treasure thereof exported, whereby the Kingdom will be destitute of Counsel, and Wealth, to the final Destruction of the Kingdom, and also of the Crown of *England*, which was so free in all times, that it had no earthly Sovereign, but immediately subject to God, in all things touching the Regalie thereof, and to no other: Should it be submitted to the Pope, and the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom by him be Defeated and Annulled at his Pleasure, it would be to the perpetual Destruction of the Kings Sovereignty, his Crown and Regalie, and of his whole Kingdom, which God forbid.

E The said Archbishop making Protestation, that it is not his Intention to say or affirm, that our holy Father cannot make Translations of Prelates according to the Law of holy Church, answereth, and saith, That if any Executions of such Translations of any Prelates of the Kingdom were made, who were very profitable and necessary to the King and his Realm, or that the Sage Lieges of his Council, without his Assent, and against his Will, should be withdrawn or removed out of the Kingdom, whereby the Wealth and Treasure thereof might be destroyed; The said Archbishop holds this would be against the King, and his Crown, and therefore he will be with the King Loyally in this Case, and in Sustenance of his Crown, as he is bound by his Ligeance, and prayed the King this Cedula might



might be entered on Record in the Parliament Role, which the King granted.

N. 119.  
Pat. 6. Ric. 2.  
Part. 1. m. 32.

**R**EX Cancellario & Procuratoribus Universitatis Oxonii, qui nunc sunt, vel qui pro tempore fuerint, Salutem. *Zelo fidei Christiane cuius sumus & semper esse volumus Defensores,* moti salubriter & inducti volentes summo desiderio impugnatores dicte fidei, qui suas pravas & perversas doctrinas infra regnum nostrum Angliæ seminare, & dampnatas conclusiones eidem fidei notorie obviantes tenere & predicare jam noviter pessime presumpserunt & conantur in perversionem Populi nostri, ut accepimus, antequam ulterius in suis procedant erroribus & maliciis, vel alios inficiant reprimere & condignâ castigatione coercere. Assignavimus vos ad inquisitionem generalem assistentibus vobis omnibus theologis Universitatis predictæ regentibus faciendam, ab omnibus & singulis graduatis Theologis & Jurisconsultis Universitatis ejusdem, si quos de jurisdictione Universitatis illius agnovérunt qui sint eis probabiliter suspecti de favore, credentia vel defensione alicujus heresis vel erroris & maxime quarundam conclusionum, per venerabilem patrem Wilhelmum Archiepiscopum Cantuariensem de consilio sui Cleri publice dampnatarum, vel etiam alicujus conclusionis alicui earundem consimilis in sententia vel in verbis, & si aliquos de cetero inveneritis qui quicquam predictorum heresium vel errorum vel quemcumque consimilem crediderint, foverint, seu defenderint, vel qui Magistros Johannem Wyclif, Nicolaum Herford, Philippum Reppingdon, vel Johannem Aston, vel aliquem alium de aliquo predictorum heresium vel errorum seu alio simili, in verbis vel sententia probabili suspitione notatum, in domos & hospicia ausi fuerint receptare seu cum eorum aliquo communicare vel sibi defensionem aut favorem prebere presumpserint aliqualem ad hujusmodi fautores, receptatores, communicantes & Defensores infra septem dies, postquam premissa vobis constituerit ab Universitate & Villa Oxonii banniendos & expellendos donec coram Archiepiscopo Cantuariensi pro tempore existente suam innocentiam manifestâ purgatione monstraverint. Ita tamen ut se purgare cogantur, ipsos tales esse nobis & eidem Archiepiscopo de tempore in tempus infra mensem sub Sigillis vestris certificetis. Mandantes insuper quod per Universas Aulas Universitatis predictæ diligenter inquiri & scrutari faciatis indilate si quis aliquem librum sive tractatum de editione vel compilatione predictorum Magistrorum, Johannis Wyclif vel Nicolai habuerint, & quod librum illum, sive tractatum ubicunque contigerit inveniri, arrestari, capi, & prefato Archiepiscopo infra mensem absque correctione, corruptione, seu mutatione quacunque quo ad ejus sententiam vel verba presentari faciatis. Et ideo vobis in fide & ligeantia quibus nobis tenemini, & sub foristacturâ omnium singulorum libertatum & privilegiorum Universitatis predictæ, & omnium aliorum que nobis forisfacere poteritis, injungimus & mandamus quod circa premissa bene & fideliter exequenda diligenter intendatis & ea faciatis et exequamini in forma predicta

A

B

C

D

E

F



predictâ et quod prefato Archiepiscopo et ejus mandatis licitis et honestis vobis in hac parte dirigendis pareatis prout decet. Damus autem Vicecomiti et Majori Oxoniensi pro tempore existentibus ac universis et singulis Vicecomitibus, Majoribus, Ballivis, Ministris, et aliis fidelibus et subditis nostris tenore presentium in mandatis quod vobis in executione premissorum auxilientur, pareant et intendant. In cujus, &c. Teste Rege apud Westmonasterium tercio-decimo die Julii.

A

*Per Consilium.*

B

C

D

*F I N I S.*

E

F







